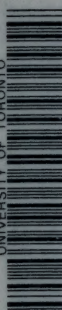


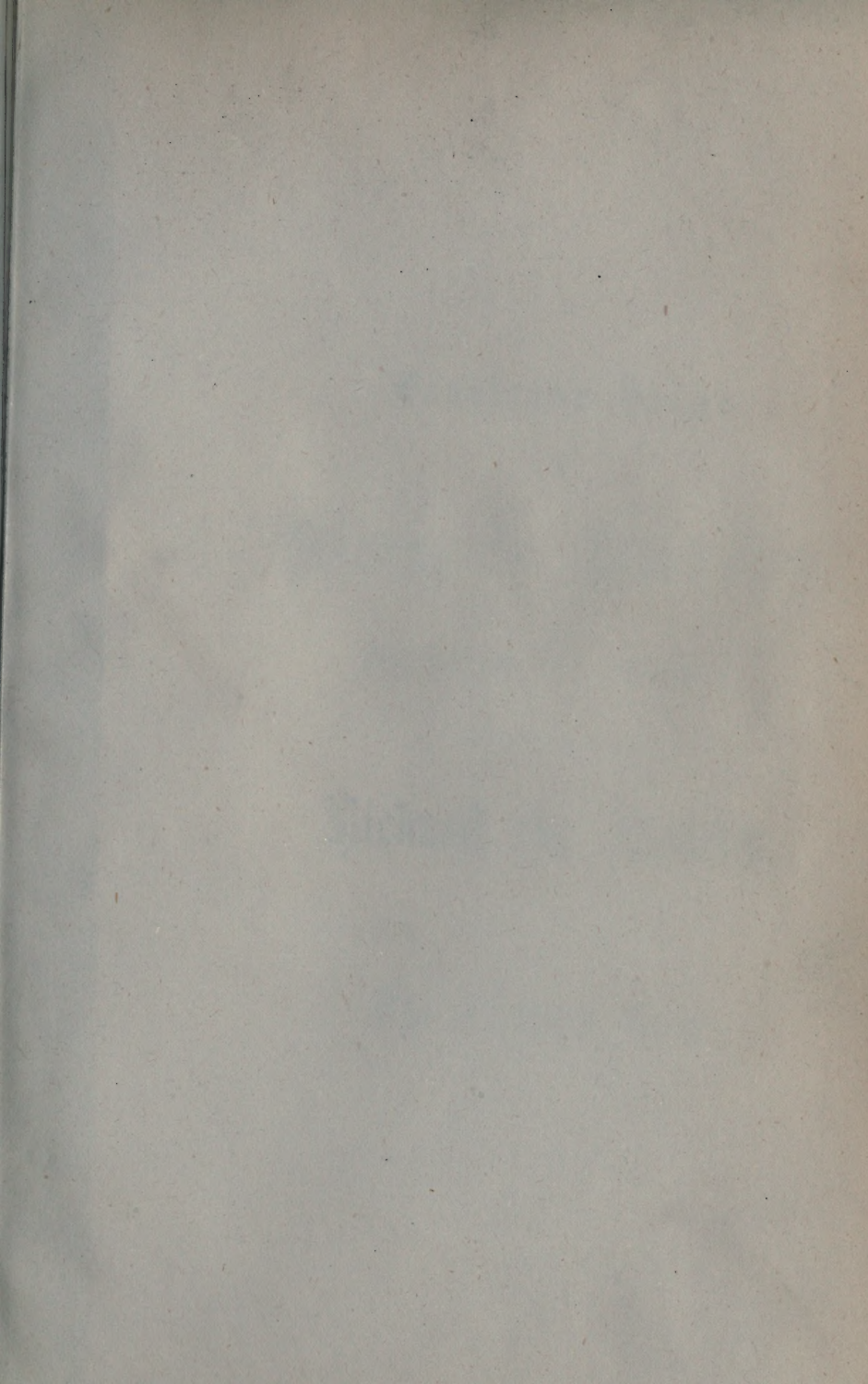
UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO

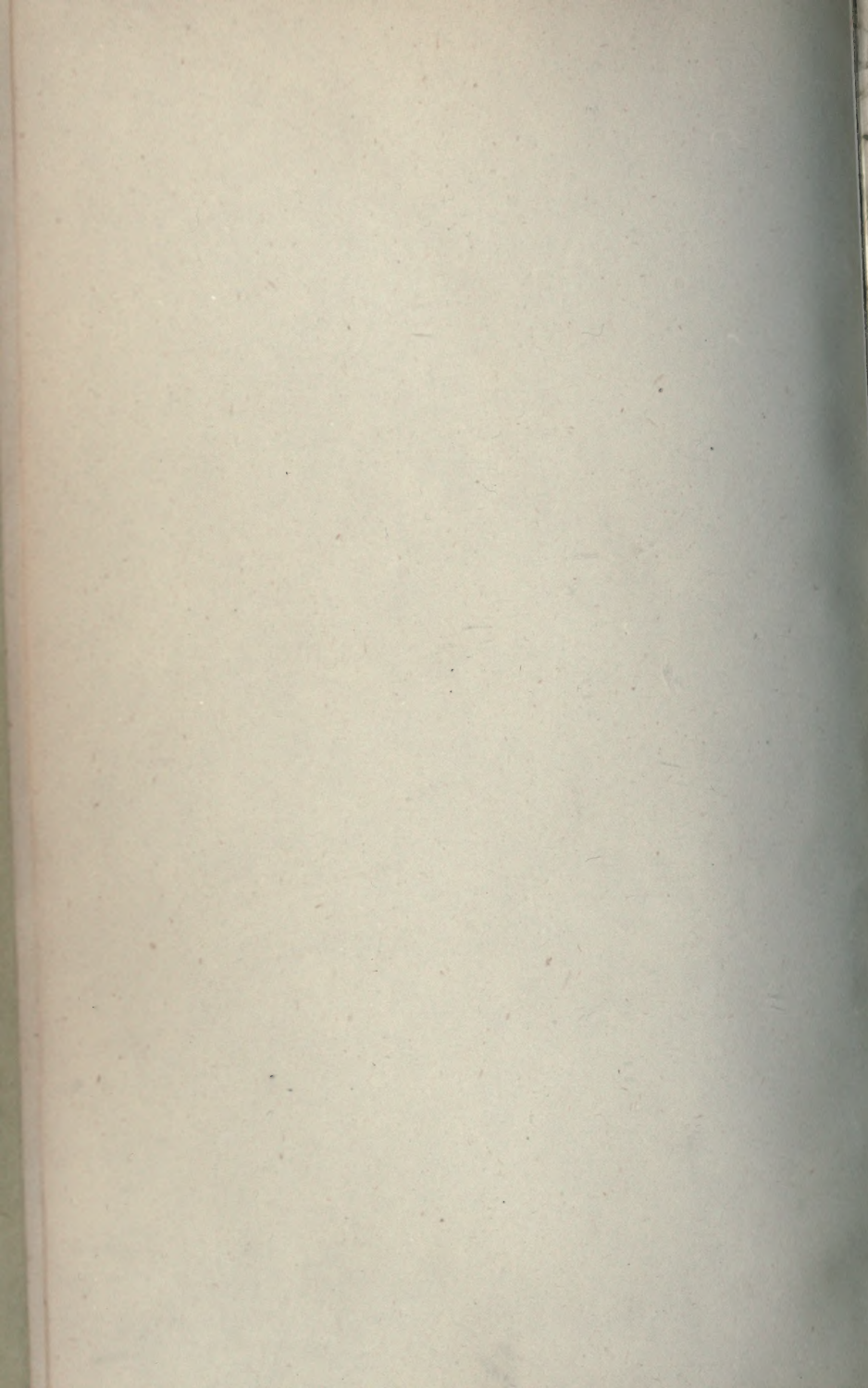


3 1761 00359967 7

UNIV. OF
TORONTO
LIBRARY

54





UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY

Langland's Vision


of

Piers the Plowman.

The Whitaker Text; or Text C.

Richard the Redeles.

The Crowned King.



BERLIN: ASHER & CO., 53 MOHRENSTRASSE.
NEW YORK: C. SCRIBNER & CO.; LEYPOLDT & HOLT.
PHILADELPHIA: J. B. LIPPINCOTT & CO.

Anne came conetise i can nocht from dyspene
 so boneliche & so holthe. Kynge hit out of bed
 he was brial hoked & habeshaped. & the blyss open
 & no Alaxen pors. tolled he chales
 Del oneday in he chon. vchynched for afde
 as bondme barborn. he beyde was yshmo
 hit he hode on he hed. & his hatter bop
 in atoyen tabyn. of thesse bynt ago
 I ame be conetonsa go ye carter. jeh bylnoch hit boy
 for so tyme ich ned. o tyme at ye fite
 & was he pnter vphgt. he pnter to wyte
 fnyst i larned to he. Alaxen op thes
 Dickadich to thes. was my fnyst lesoun
 op he & to byschop. i wende to ye fany
 & many man maychmndys. as my manst fyt
 he hadde ye gra of gile. son amonge my
 hit hadde ben vnfolded y some gay. so me god helpe
 ich dyde me amonge dyspene. my donat to kyne
 so dyde ye larm. Alonge. ye larm hit seemed
 Amonge ye nyche janes. ich jendred Hafforn
 so bychan he hit a batte nede. & bonde he to gadys
 jeh pnter in ppasson. & pnter he y tyme
 & it ten zades of thesse. tilled he pnter
 op hit was adde. & bollen clon made
 so opale to ye opnestyes. to opner hit ant
 ye pnter hit so pnter he by. pnter agnapt
 op y a myn amical. Ehan ich bared tyme
 jeh byt hit byschop. so byde hit to orle
 pnter ale & pnter ale. so pnter to gadys
 for laborn & for the folke. y larm by hit orle
 ye best larm in my bon. & in my balle chymby
 & so bonned hit. he byt hit ynter
 agalen for agyote. & jnt no styme mesyn
 Ehan hit came in cappe meste. y jnter my byt vnt
 for ye jentom. was jnt namo
 so larm vnter hockys. y allene dynt
 pnterest y nent pnterance. he jenturcion madest
 & no onys go y was vnter. & an hope of chymie
 jeh was & jnter hit makas. Ehan ynter in jnter byt
 y was jentur jentur. go jentur for jnter
 y bollen honge he ynter. byt op in halle
 vnter en y vnter. in al y hit tyme
 Alax jentur he sede. oaf in my zongre

~~Period.~~
~~Philol.~~
~~Soc.~~

The Vision of William

concerning

Piers the Plowman,

TOGETHER WITH

Vita de Dowel, Dobet, et Dobest,

Secundum Wit et Resoun,

BY WILLIAM LANGLAND.

(ABOUT 1362—1393 A.D.)

EDITED FROM NUMEROUS MANUSCRIPTS, WITH
PREFACES, NOTES, AND A GLOSSARY,

BY THE

REV. WALTER W. SKEAT, M.A.,

LATE FELLOW OF CHRIST'S COLLEGE, CAMBRIDGE; EDITOR OF "LANCELOT OF THE LAIK,"
"THE ROMANS OF PARTENAY," "WILLIAM OF PALERNE," "HAVELOK," ETC.;
AND TRANSLATOR OF THE "SONGS AND BALLADS OF UHLAND."

In Four Parts.—Part III.

LONDON:

PUBLISHED FOR THE EARLY ENGLISH TEXT SOCIETY,
BY N. TRÜBNER & CO., 57 & 59, LUDGATE HILL.

MDCCCLXXIII.

(
40652
27/6/11
6

PR
1119
A2
no. 54

The Visions of William
concerning
Piers the Plowman,
Dowel, Dobet, and Dobest,

BY WILLIAM LANGLAND.

(1393 A.D.)

FROM MS. PHILLIPPS 8231, COLLATED WITH MS. LAUD 656, A MS. BELONGING TO THE
EARL OF ILCHESTER, MS. COTTON VESP. B. 16, MSS. FF. 5. 35 AND Dd. 3. 13 IN THE
CAMBRIDGE UNIVERSITY LIBRARY, MS. CORP. CHR. CAMB. 293, MS. BODLEY 814,
MS. R. 3. 14 IN THE LIBRARY OF TRINITY COLLEGE, CAMBRIDGE, ETC.

THE "WHITAKER" TEXT; OR TEXT C.

Richard the Redeles,

BY THE SAME AUTHOR.

(1399 A.D.)

The Crowned King,

BY ANOTHER HAND.

(1415 A.D.)

EDITED BY THE

REV. WALTER W. SKEAT, M.A.,

LATE FELLOW OF CHRIST'S COLLEGE, CAMBRIDGE.

LONDON:

PUBLISHED FOR THE EARLY ENGLISH TEXT SOCIETY,
BY N. TRÜBNER & CO., 57 & 59, LUDGATE HILL.

MDCCCLXXIII.

CONTENTS.

* * The autotype facsimile prefixed to this volume represents a page of MS. E (Laud 656), which differs but slightly from MS. Philipps 8231, the basis of the text. For a full explanation of the contents of the facsimile, see the Preface, p. xxviii.

| | |
|--|-------------|
| <p>PREFACE III. § 1. The five shapes of the Poem. § 2. The mixture of C- and B-texts in MS. Bodley 814. § 3. The mixture of A- and C-texts in MS. T. § 4. Date of the C-text. § 5. Description of MSS. xxviii. MS. Philipps 8252 (described in the footnote); xxix. MS. P; xxx. MS. E; xxxi. MS. Z; xxxii. MS. I; xxxii. (B) MS. T; xxxii. (C) MS. Harl. 6041; xxxii. (D) MS. Digby 145; xxxii. (E) MS. B; xxxiii. MS. M; xxxiv. MS. F; xxxv. MS. S; xxxvi. MS. G; xxxvii. MS. K; xxxviii. MS. Douce 104; xxxix. MS. Digby 102; xl. MS. N; xli. MS. Dublin D. 4. 1; xlii. MS. Bibl. Reg. 18. B. xvii; xliii. MS. Philipps 9056; xliv. Marquis of Westminster's MS. § 6. Comparison of the MSS., and their sub-classes. § 7. Description of Dr Whitaker's edition; London, 1813. § 8. Brief Notice of Dr Whitaker. § 9. Character of the C-text. § 10. Allusions in the C-text. § 11. Dialect of the C-text. § 12. Method of printing the Text. § 13. Method of printing the Footnotes. § 14. Explanation of the Sidenotes. § 15. Reference to the Editions by Wright and Whitaker. § 16. Comparison of the Three Texts, by Passus. § 17. Additional Passages in the C-text. § 18. Argument of the Poem (C-text) ... ix</p> <p>PREFACE IV. RICHARD THE REDELES. § 1. The two former editions. § 2. Alteration of the title. § 3. Description of the MS. § 4. Latin quotations never before rightly printed. § 5. Date of the poem. § 6. Authorship of the poem; (1) external evidence; (2) internal evidence. § 7. Argument of Richard the Redeles. § 8. THE CROWNED KING ciii</p> | <p>ciii</p> |
|--|-------------|

PIERS THE PLOWMAN :

| | PAGE |
|---|------|
| PASSUS I. (231 lines) | 1 |
| PASSUS II. (205 lines) | 15 |
| PASSUS III. (252 lines) | 27 |
| PASSUS IV. (501 lines) | 42 |
| PASSUS V. (196 lines) | 71 |
| PASSUS VI. (201 lines) | 82 |
| PASSUS VII. (441 lines) | 94 |
| PASSUS VIII. (308 lines) | 120 |
| PASSUS IX. (355 lines) | 139 |
| PASSUS X. (351 lines) | 158 |
| PASSUS XI., OR PASSUS I. DE DOWEL (310 lines) ... | 179 |
| PASSUS XII., OR PASSUS II. DE DOWEL (313 lines) ... | 196 |
| PASSUS XIII., OR PASSUS III. DE DOWEL (247 lines) | 215 |
| PASSUS XIV., OR PASSUS IV. DE DOWEL (249 lines)... | 230 |
| PASSUS XV., OR PASSUS V. DE DOWEL (217 lines) ... | 246 |
| PASSUS XVI., OR PASSUS VI. DE DOWEL (310 lines)... | 260 |
| PASSUS XVII., OR PASSUS VII. DE DOWEL (371 lines) | 280 |
| PASSUS XVIII., OR PASSUS I. DE DOBET (322 lines)... | 307 |
| PASSUS XIX., OR PASSUS II. DE DOBET (293 lines) ... | 328 |
| PASSUS XX., OR PASSUS III. DE DOBET (332 lines) ... | 346 |
| PASSUS XXI., OR PASSUS IV. DE DOBET (479 lines) ... | 366 |
| PASSUS XXII., OR PASSUS I. DE DOBEST (483 lines)... | 399 |
| PASSUS XXIII., OR PASSUS II. DE DOBEST (386 lines) | 426 |
| CRITICAL NOTES | 449 |
| RICHARD THE REDELES: PROLOGUE (87 lines) ... | 469 |
| RICHARD THE REDELES: PASSUS I. (114 lines) ... | 473 |
| RICHARD THE REDELES: PASSUS II. (192 lines) ... | 478 |
| RICHARD THE REDELES: PASSUS III. (371 lines) ... | 486 |
| RICHARD THE REDELES: PASSUS IV. (93 lines) ... | 500 |
| NOTES TO RICHARD THE REDELES | 504 |
| THE CROWNED KING | 523 |
| GLOSSARIAL INDEX, ETC., TO THE CROWNED KING ... | 530 |

PREFACE III.

TEXT C.

§ 1. BEFORE discussing the MSS. of the C-type, it is necessary to refer once more to the fact already twice mentioned (Pref. I. § 2; Pref. II. § 1) that the poem of *Piers the Plowman* assumes five different shapes in the MSS. Three of these are *real*, and due to the author, whence the three texts which have been separately published; whilst the other two are *apparent* only, and due to the mixture of parts of different texts by the scribes. Indeed, some MSS. present texts which are still further confused, and belong exactly to none of these, although they can easily be accounted for. It is necessary thus to draw attention once more to the five apparent well-defined shapes, because the C-text MSS. require peculiar care. With respect to them, we are concerned with three of the above-mentioned shapes. We find (1) MSS. of the true C-type throughout; (2) MSS. containing a mixture of A- and C-texts, as exhibited in the Trinity MS. R. 3. 14 (described in Pref. I. p. xviii), MS. Harl. 6041 (described at p. xx of the same volume), and MS. Digby 145 (described at p. xxiv of the same); and (3) MSS. containing a mixture of B- and C-texts, as exhibited in MS. Bodley 814 (described in Pref. II. p. xxv), MS. Addit. 10574 (Pref. II. p. xxvi), and MS. Cotton Calig. A. xi (Pref. II. p. xxvii).

§ 2. Taking the last of these first, it is only necessary to observe that MS. Bodley 814, Addit. 10574, and Calig. A. xi resemble each other so closely that *one* may be taken to represent all three. The one chosen for collation in the present volume is the same one as

before, viz. MS. Bodley 814, denoted by the letter B. This MS. exhibits a C-text during the first two Passus, and down to the end of l. 128 of Pass. iii.;¹ and is therefore available for collation near the beginning of the present version of the poem. Hence the letter B, so often found in the footnotes to the B-text, figures occasionally in the footnotes to the first 34 pages in this volume. But I have not cited it very often, for two reasons. The first is, that it is by no means a very good MS.; and the second, that its readings are in general almost exactly coincident with those of the far superior Ilchester MS., denoted by the letter I. It has, I believe, been cited as much as it deserves, and perhaps received even more than its fair share of attention in the footnotes to the B-text. In a word, it can only be used for a small portion of the text, and is not of much use even there. For a few further notes upon the character of it, see the description of MS. XXXII (E).

§ 3. We will next consider the shape of the poem in which the A- and C-texts are mixed together; a shape which is of considerably more importance and interest. Here, also, it is sufficient to take *one* MS. only as a guide, viz. the Trinity MS. R. 3. 14, often cited in the footnotes to the A-text, and always denoted by the letter T. It is far better than the other two MSS. of the same shape, which have now been neglected, although one of them (Harl. 6041) was cited for the A-text, with H₂ for its symbol. Collation with T begins at the point of junction of the A- and C-texts, i. e. at l. 297 of Passus xii., p. 213; see the observation in the footnote. As the readings from it turned out to be often useful, the collation with it was continued down to the end of the text; so that, after p. 213, the letter T occurs in the footnotes throughout, down to p. 447. This MS. also proved to bear a close resemblance to the Ilchester MS., and this fact has proved of great assistance; since it supplies the probable readings of that MS. in the numerous places where portions of lines are missing, owing to its imperfect state of preservation. Hence, in the footnotes, the letters IT often occur together; whilst the letter T alone (in all probability) often truly

¹ See the passage quoted at length from this MS. in Critical Notes to B-text, p. 392.

denotes the same combination (IT) in passages where MS. I is imperfect. It represents the C-text in an early stage of revision, as explained in the description of the Ilchester MS. below.

The descriptions of the MSS. which are wholly of the C-type will be found further on, in sect. 5.

§ 4. DATE OF THE C-TEXT.

In Pref. II. sect. 3, I have shewn that we must place the B-text at least as late as A.D. 1377, from which we may at once conclude that the C-text is almost sure not to be earlier than A.D. 1380, considering the many variations between the two texts. It is, however, as well to shew, first of all, that the C-text is really later than the B-text; in other words, that no mistake has been made in the order of the recensions of the poem. On this point the internal evidence is most conclusive; given the B-text, it is not difficult to see how the C-text was formed from it, by various omissions, additions, transpositions, and corrections. But it is hardly possible to turn the C-text into the B-form, without the most improbable and contradictory suppositions. The transition in one direction is simple and natural, but in the other direction is difficult and unlikely. This will appear so clearly upon a careful perusal of the two texts that it is hardly worth while to go into particulars. The only reason for considering the question at all is that Dr Whitaker was of the contrary opinion, and this may in some measure account for the difficulty which he had in seeing his way clearly, and for the extraordinary views, founded upon no premises whatever, which he formed respecting the respective merits of the two later versions. The one sole reason which he offers for the supposed lateness of the B-text, is that it contains an allusion to the burning of heretics, and must therefore be later than the second year of Henry IV., when the statute "empowering the diocesan alone to commit heretics to the flames" was enacted. This point I have discussed already (Pref. II. p. v), giving the reasons, (1) that some of the B-text MSS. are considerably older than A.D. 1400; and (2) that heretics were sometimes burnt, at any rate abroad, before the above-mentioned statute was passed. But I

am now enabled considerably to strengthen the latter of these reasons, viz. by asserting that there is evidence to shew that heretics were burnt, *even in England*, at least as early as in the fourteenth century. When Mr Arnold, in his Introduction to his edition of Wyclif's Works, came to consider the question of the date of some of Wyclif's treatises, he found that the common opinion, viz. that no one was burnt for his religion in England before 1401, is directly opposed to the statements found in his MSS., and can no longer be sustained. Thus, in Wyclif's Sermon No. LXV (ed. Arnold, vol. i. p. 205) he complains that "symple men, þat been clepid eretikes . . . ben sommyned and reprovyd many weies, and after put in prison, and *brend* or kild as worse þan þeves;" whilst in Sermon CII (p. 354), i. e. in a later sermon belonging to the same set, Richard II. is referred to in a manner which implies that he is still alive;—"men þat spoken of oure kyng leeven to clepen him kyng Richard." To this Mr Arnold adds (Intro. p. x) the following important note. "Mr Bond, keeper of the MSS. at the British Museum, was good enough to point out to me a passage in the Chronicle of Meaux, lately edited by him for the Master of the Rolls, which is much to the purpose of the present inquiry. Abbot Burton says (vol. ii. p. 323) that the Franciscans, or a section of them, opposed certain constitutions of Pope John XXII., who thereupon caused many of them to be condemned and burnt, some in France in 1318, others at various places in France, Spain, Italy, and Germany, in 1330; and that among the severities practised on this last occasion, 'in Angliâ, in quadam silvâ, combusta (*sic*) sunt viri quinquaginta quinque, et mulieres octo, ejusdem ordinis et erroris.' This is indefinite, certainly, but there seems no possibility of questioning its substantial truth; and if it be true, then men and women were burnt in England for heresy before 1401." Mr Arnold also points out the passage in Walsingham (ed. Riley, ii. 189), which relates how the Bishop of Norwich threatened to *burn* or behead the Lollards, A.D. 1389.

It would probably not be difficult to multiply instances of such allusions. Thus, Pierce the Ploughman's Crede is generally considered as not later than A.D. 1394. Yet the allusion in it to the persecution of the Lollards is plain-spoken enough; for we find the

anonymous author alluding to the prosecution of Walter Brute in 1393, and declaring that, though those in power did not actually burn him, they would gladly have done so.

“þei pursueþ the pouere · & passeþ pursutes,
 Boþe þey wiln & þei wolden · y-worþen so grete
 To passen any mans miȝt · to morþeren þe soules ;
 First to *brenne þe bodye* · in a bale of fjr,
 And syþen þe sely soule slen · & senden hyre to helle” ;
P. Pl. Crede, ed. Skeat, l. 664.¹

And there is yet another allusion in the poem called the Plowmans Tale (written, as I hold, about A.D. 1395, by the same author) to the severity with which religious persecution was carried out, in the passage—

“Thou shalt be *brent* in balefull fire;
 And all thy sect I shall destrie ;
 Ye shall be hanged by the swire.”

We may depend upon it that these and similar passages refer to actual and not imaginary events. The allusions to *brenning* in Wyclif's Sermons, in Piers the Plowman, in Walsingham, in the Ploughmans Crede, and in the Plowmans Tale, may fairly be taken to be no mere rhetorical flourishes, but to refer to such things as are mentioned in the Chronicle of Meaux, where the burning of fifty-five men and eight women at once is mentioned quite casually. The fact is, that the famous statute of Henry IV. seems to be generally misunderstood. It did not in any way provide for the burning of heretics as a *new* remedy for heresy ; it merely provided, as Mr Arnold well points out, for the application of the remedy ‘uberius et celerius.’ It is easy, moreover, to shew how this was effected, viz. by empowering the *diocesan*, as Dr Whitaker says, to act on his own responsibility. Before the passing of the statute, the punishment could be inflicted (and was inflicted) only by means, as it seemed to some, of an unnecessarily round-about procedure. If a bishop, as for instance the Bishop of Norwich in 1389, wished

¹ My note on this passage says—‘Such a threat was not *carried out* till a few years later, when William Sautre was burnt in Smithfield, Feb. 26, 1401.’—(*P. Pl. Crede*, p. 52.) That is, I adopted the common opinion at the time of writing the note ; but now believe that such an opinion has arisen from inattention. No doubt the threat *was* sometimes carried out.

to burn a heretic, he had to go through the process of formally handing over the said heretic to the secular arm; and the secular arm could dispose of the criminal in any way that was deemed advisable. The statute did away with this troublesome necessity, and was passed, to use the very words of it, because the bishops ‘*per suam iurisdictionem spiritualem dictos perfidos et peruersos absque auxilio dictae maiestatis regiae sufficienter corrigere nequeunt.*’ The whole matter has been made clear to me by the kind help of C. H. Pearson, Esq., author of the *Early and Middle Ages of England*, who pointed out to me a decisive case in point, viz. the account given by Bracton of a man who, for the crime of wishing to marry a Jewess, was handed over to the secular arm and *burnt*, as early as in the reign of Henry III.¹ So that, as a net result, we find that the somewhat vague allusion to *burning* in the B-text, upon which Dr Whitaker so confidently relied as proving that version of the poem to be later than 1401, proves no more than that it was later than the time of Henry III.; and, as to deciding between the claims of the B- and C-texts to priority, it proves just nothing at all; but rather did, in effect, induce Dr Whitaker to decide wrongly.

There remains, however, one argument more, which I have hitherto purposely kept out of sight. Neither Dr Whitaker, nor even Mr Wright, seems to have been at all aware of the existence of an A-text. It is mentioned in Warton (ii. 63, ed. 1840) in his remarks upon MS. Harl. 6041; but no one else seems to have noticed it. Now, when we proceed to place the *three* texts side by side, it is at once apparent that the B-text is *intermediate* in form between the other two; so that the order of texts must either be A, B, C, or C, B, A; but the A-text so evidently comes *first*, that the C-text can only come *last*; and this settles the question. The

¹ Bracton's language is very explicit, and his authority is decisive. “Cum autem clericus sic de crimine conuictus degradetur, non sequitur alia poena pro vno delicto, vel pluribus ante degradationem perpetratis. Satis enim sufficit ei pro poena degradatio, quae est magna capitis diminutio, nisi forte conuictus fuerit de apostasia, quia tunc primo degradetur, et postea *per manum laicalem comburatur*, secundum quod accidit in concilio Oxon., celebrato a bonae memoriae S. Cantuarien. Archiepiscopo, de quodam diacono qui se apostatauit pro quadam Iudea, qui cum esset per Episcopum degradatus, statim fuit igni traditus per manum laycalem.” Bracton, de Legibus Angliæ, lib. iii. tract. ii. c. 9; ed. 1569, fol. 124.

opening lines of the poem will suffice to shew this, if the three forms be compared. I cite a short passage by way of example.

Text of A.D. 1362.

In a somer sesun · whon softe was þe sonne,
 I schop me in-to a schroud · a scheep as I were ;
 In habite of an hermite · vn-holy of werkes,
 Wende I wydene in þis world · wondres to here.
 Bote in a Mayes morwnynge · on Maluerne hulles
 Me bi-fel a ferly · a feyrie, me þouhte ;
 I was weori of wandring · and wente me to reste
 Vndur a brod banke · bi a bourne syde,
 And as I lay and leonede · and lokede on þe watres,
 I slumberde in a slepyng · hit sownede so murie.

A-text ; prol. 1—10.

Text of A.D. 1377.

In a somer seson · whan soft was the sonne,
 I shope me in shroudes · as I a shepe were,
 In habite as an heremite · vnholy of workes,
 Went wyde in þis world · wondres to here.
 Ac on a May mornynge · on Maluerne hulles
 Me byfel a ferly · of fairy, me thouȝte ;
 I was very forwardred · and went me to reste
 Vnder a brode banke · bi a bornes side,
 And as I lay and lened · and loked in þe wateres,
 I slombred in a slepyng · it sweyued so merye.

B-text ; prol. 1—10.

Text of A.D. 1393.

In a somere seyson · whan softe was þe sonne,
 Y shop me into shrobbis · as y a shepherde were,
 In abit as an ermite · vnholy of werkes,
 Ich wente forth in þe worlde · wonders to here,
 And sawe meny cellis · and selcouthe þynges.
 Ac on a may morwenyng · on Maluerne hulles
 Me byfel for to slepe · for weyrynesse of wandryng ;
 And in a launde as ich lay · lenede ich and slepte,
 And merueylously me mette · as ich may ȝow telle.

C-text ; Pass. i. 1—9.

Now that all three texts are in the reader's hands, he can prosecute the comparison of them as far as he pleases, in a way that could never have been done before.

It will be observed that I have here assigned the date 1393 as

suitable to the latest version. I now proceed to adduce some reasons for this.

We have already seen that, as it comes last, it must be later than 1377; and any one who observes the great care with which the poem has been revised, the curious changes in the arrangement of many passages, and other similar indications, will be prepared to allow several years as a not unlikely interval between the two later versions; especially as an interval of fifteen years exists between the two earlier ones. It must be observed also, that the poem printed in this volume, with the title of "Richard the Redeles," belongs obviously to the year 1399; and it will be shewn presently what conclusive reasons there are for assuming that poem to have been written by the author of *Piers the Plowman*. This at once places the C-text between 1377 and 1399, with a probable interval of several years between it and the former of these dates. We thus at once assign the year 1390 as being probably not more than five or six years from the true date.

But a closer examination may bring us much nearer than this. Notwithstanding the occasional anachronisms which occur, owing to the poet's reluctance to alter some passages—a peculiarity which has already been explained (Pref. II. § 4)—we find trustworthy indications of the date in some of the *additional* passages which occur in the C-text for the first time. In particular, there is a very remarkable indication of the change of popular feeling towards King Richard. The traces of respect are fewer, and it is clear that he was rapidly sinking in the estimation of his subjects. Here, for instance, is a bold and outspoken passage, too plainly expressed to admit of doubt as to the poet's feelings. Addressing the king, and speaking of the prevalence of Meed or Bribery, he says—

Religion hue al to-reueþ · and oute of ruele to lybbe.
 Ther nys cite vnder sonne · ne so riche reome
 Ther hue is loued and lete by · þat last shal eny while,
 With-oute werre oper wo · oper wicked lawes,
 And customes of couetyse · þe comune to distruye.
 Vnsyttynge suffraunce · hure suster, and hure-selue
 Haue maked al-most · bote marie þe helpe,
 þat no lond loueþ the · and ȝut leest þyn owene.

C-text; iv. 203.

Here he plainly tells the king that “unseemly Tolerance (of evil men), which is own sister to Bribery, in combination with Bribery herself, have almost brought it about, except the Virgin Mary help thee, that *no land loveth thee, and least of all thine own land.*” Now, after Richard really took the government into his own hands in 1389, he was at first in considerable favour for some little time; but in 1392, there was a very great quarrel between himself and the Londoners, as related by Walsingham, and the feeling against him seems to have been very strong. The king’s prodigality was beginning to make his exactions severely felt, and the quarrel turned, naturally enough, upon the question of money. Under the title “De transgressionibus Londinensium, et ira Regis,” Walsingham (ed. Riley, ii. 207) relates the story thus. “Sub eodem tempore, misit Rex ad cives Londiniarum, petens ab eis mutuo mille libras; cui procaciter, et ultra quam decuit, restiterunt, et pecuniam se non posse præstare petitam unanimiter affirmaverunt; sed et quemdam Lombardum, volentem accommodare Regi dictam summam, male tractaverunt, verberaverunt, et paulo minus occiderunt.” This is the very story, I suppose, to which our author alludes in the passage—

“And ich dar legge my lyf · þat lone wol lene þe suluer,
 To wage thyne, and help wyne · þat þow wilnest after,
 More þan al þy marchauns · oper þy mytrede bisshopes,
 Oper *lumbardes* of lukes · þat lyuen by lone as Iewes.”

C. v. 191.

Here he tells the king that, if he wants money, he must not apply to the Lombards, but cultivate the love of his people. If this and the former allusion be considered, we may see grounds for placing the C-text later than 1392.¹ These are my reasons for selecting the year 1393 as a sufficiently approximate date, although I should not object to the opinion that the true date is later still. How it can be earlier, I cannot see; the long additional passage explaining the difference between Bribery and Wages (iv. 287—415) shews that this difference was considered as especially deserving of notice, and the whole tone of Pass. iv. indicates the poet’s opinion as to the pre-

¹ Hardly in 1392; as the passage occurs also in the *early draught* of the C-text, in MSS. of sub-class *b*.

valence of gross misgovernment, which he here lays to the king's charge more directly than he had previously done. The very same tone is prevalent in the poem of "Richard the Redeles," the date of which is so clearly 1399.

From all this it will be seen that, although the year 1393 is only assigned as a conjectural date, there are some good reasons for supposing that it is not far wrong. I believe that we may safely assume the dates 1393 and 1398 as the extreme limits between which the date of the C-text can vary.

Whilst discussing this subject, it may be added that, although Pierce the Ploughmans Crede is an obvious imitation of the Vision, it is not perfectly clear from which text it was imitated. It probably appeared about 1394, and may have been immediately evoked by the fact of its author meeting with a copy of the C-text, but this is mere conjecture. The only passage I know of in which the Crede resembles the C-text more than any other version of the Vision is the following, in which the resemblance is not sufficiently close to make us feel certain upon the point.

"Now mot ich soutere his sone · setten to schole,¹
 And ich a beggers brol . on þe booke lerne . . .
 So of þat beggers brol · a bychop schal worþen . .
 þey [viz. *lords*] schulden maken bichopes · her owen breþren
 childre,
 Oper of some gentil blod · & so it best semed . . .
 For her kynde were more · to y-clense diches," &c.

P. Pl. Crede; 744—760.

This may be compared with the following:—

"For-thi lefte þei here laboure · þese lewede knaues,
 And cloþed hem in copes · clerkus as it were . . .
 Ac sith bondmenne barnes · han be mad Bisshopes,
 And barnes bastardes · han ben archidekenes . . .
 Thuse by-longeþ to labour . and lordes kyn to seruen
 Bothe god and good men · as here degree askeþ . . .
 Hit by-comeþ for clerkus · crist for to seruen,
 And knaues vncrowned · to cart and to worche," &c.

P. Pl. C. x. 209, 210; vi. 70, 71, 66, 67, 61, 62.

¹ My note on the line (*P. Pl. Crede*, p. 53) requires amendment; the line obviously means—"Now must each cobbler set his son to school."

I have merely quoted the most striking lines. In both poems, the whole context should be observed. In any case, the passages are worth comparing; and, if it should appear to the reader that the passages are really connected, this will be an argument for placing the C-text before 1394, i. e. about 1393, as before.

§ 5. DESCRIPTION OF THE MSS.

XXIX.¹ MS. Phillipps 8231, formerly MS. Heber 973; mentioned in Heber's Catalogue of MSS., part xi., p. 101. This MS. is

¹ Twenty-seven MSS. have been already described. MSS. I.—X. in Pref. I., pp. xv—xxiv; MS. XI. in Part i., at p. 142*; MS. XII. in footnote to Pref. II., p. vi.; and MSS. XIII.—XXVII. in Pref. II., pp. vi—xxx. The twenty-eighth MS. must be described here in a footnote, as it belongs rather to the B-class than to any other.

XXVIII. MS. Phillipps 8252, formerly MS. Heber 1088. Dr Whitaker (Pref. to his edition of *Piers the Plowman*, p. xxxii) speaks of it thus. "This MS. is a thick octavo volume, bearing the autographs of Sir Henry Spelman, Dr Taylor, the editor of Demosthenes, Mr Gough, and Mr Heber, its successive and distinguished owners. From the handwriting it may probably be assigned to the reign of Richard the Second [or rather Henry the Fourth]; but in addition to the present work, it contains the 'Travels of Sir John Maundevyle', the poem of 'Susanna', already quoted; a short story in prose, entitled 'Joseph'; 'Troilus', in five books; and a strange satirical proclamation from 'Lucifer, Prince of the depe Dominion of Darknesse'." Here 'the poem of Susanna' means the piece commonly known as the 'Pistyl of Sweet Susan', or the Apocryphal story of Susanna and the elders, printed from another MS. in the *Select Remains of Scottish Poetry*, by D. Laing, 1822. The piece called 'Joseph', in prose, relates to the visit of Joseph and Mary to Egypt, with a relation of the origin and virtues of the rose of Jericho, and an account of the growth, virtues, and gathering of 'Bawme'; in fact, the same story as that told in the legend of the Three Kings, printed from MS. Harl. 1704 in an Appendix to Mr Wright's edition of the *Chester Plays*, p. 290. The 'Troilus' is Chaucer's. The proclamation of Lucifer has been printed from MS. Cotton Vesp. B. 16 (described below; see account of MS. XXXIII.), in the *Political, Religious, and Love Poems*, ed. F. J. Furnivall (E. E. T. S.), p. 12.

The MS. is on paper, with a few vellum leaves bound in. The copy of *Piers the Plowman* contained in it may be said to be chiefly of the B-text, but it is in fact a mixed text, considerably confused in order, and entirely misleading, having several interpolations from the C-text. Dr Whitaker made some small use of it, calling it his 'MS. B', but it probably tended rather to confuse than to help him. He printed an extract from it (not worth the reprinting) which sufficiently shews the confusion of matter in it. This extract is 39 lines long. The first 19 lines are equivalent to B. v. 134—152; the next 14 are equivalent to C. vii. 105—118; and the last six are a bad copy (imperfect) of C. vii. 119—128.

The divisions of the Poem are also in some disorder, though they mostly follow the order of the B-text. *Passus xiii.*, however, is made into two, so that the

denoted through this volume by the letter P, and is printed in full as being the best representative of Text C. It is an excellent MS., of strong vellum, written, I should suppose, *before* 1400, and contains 89 leaves, in eleven quires of eight leaves, and one over. The size of each leaf is about $11\frac{1}{4}$ by $7\frac{1}{8}$ inches (very nearly the size of MS. Laud Misc. 581), and each page contains about 43 lines; excepting the last, which contains 23. The scribe's name is thus recorded—"Explicit Peeres Plouheman, scriptum per Thom. Dankastre." Amongst the various notes scribbled upon it is the note—'Iohannes Meade me possedet (*sic*): Pretij iij. iiij*d*.' It is certainly worth in these days more than 3*s*. 4*d*. At the top of the first page is a note in a late hand—'Homo Sine pecunia est quasi corpus Sine anima. A man without mony is as a bodie without shoul.' Most of the Latin quotations, and a large number of the proper names, are written or painted in vermilion. It was long before I discovered the exact value of this MS.; and, as the history of my experience may be instructive to others, I shall give it.

This MS. is, in fact, the very one which Dr Whitaker printed in full in 1813, at which time it was in the possession of Richard Heber, Esq., of Hodnet, in Shropshire, who lent it to Dr Whitaker for the purpose. His plan was to represent the MS. *exactly*, by printing it just as it stood. He accordingly adopted a black-letter type, as coming nearer than Roman type to the characters of the MS., and printed the Latin quotations in red. He did not punctuate the text, because there is, of course, no punctuation in the MS. He also endeavoured to print every mark of abbreviation just as it is written, so that there was no reason why his edition should not have been an exact representation of the original in all points, and

Passus xiii. of this MS. ends at B. xiii. 214, and Passus xiv. begins at B. xiii. 215, and is made to end at l. 457, just three lines too soon. Hence its Passus xv. begins thus:—

Thus haukyn þe actif man · had foulyd his cote,
 Til conciens chalenged hym þer· of · in curteys manere,
 Why he nad wasshyn hit · or wipid hit with a brusshe.
 "I have but one hole hatre," quod haukyn · "y am þe las to blame," &c.

Of course this MS. counts accordingly XXI. Passus instead of XX. Taken altogether, it is one of those MSS. which are best avoided. A *few* notes from it are cited (from Whitaker's edition) in my Critical Notes.

such I accordingly supposed it to be. When considering which of the numerous MSS. I should take as the best representative of the C-text, I thought it would be well to avoid printing the same one as had been printed already, because I considered that it would be a distinct gain to have *two* MSS. printed in full instead of one, and I rather disliked the look of Dr Whitaker's text, as seeming to indicate a faulty source. Having decided to put it aside for a while, I tried what would be the effect of taking another MS. as the basis of the work, and the result of my experiment was curious. The most obvious one to select, *at first sight*, was the beautifully written Cotton MS. Vesp. B. 16, in the British Museum, and accordingly a transcript was made of the entire MS. by the kindness of Mr Rossiter, head-master of South London School, author of a Treatise on Trigonometry, Mr Brock, editor of the Alliterative Morte Arthure, and Mr Wood. Taking this as the text, I began to collate it with other copies. But this plan soon broke down, as I found that it was continually requiring emendation, or else that the readings were frequently inferior to those of Whitaker's edition. My next experience was with the Ilchester MS., of the existence of which I was kindly apprised by the Rev. C. W. Bingham, of Bingham's Melcombe, Dorchester. The value of this MS. was apparent at once, and, as the Earl of Ilchester was so kind as to lend it to me for three months, I was enabled to make a transcript of it, with the aid of Mr D. Hall, of the Cambridge University Library. But this MS. would not do to print from, on account of its incompleteness; see the description of it below. I was next attracted by the beautifully written MS. marked Ff. 5. 35, in our University Library, and, in order that there might be no mistake this time, the whole of Passus II. was set up in type from this MS., and the resulting text collated with almost every other MS. known to me. Then the whole truth came out at last; it became clear that MS. P was the best of the series, in spite of a few peculiarities in the scribe's spelling, which will be noticed below; whilst at the same time the conviction was *forced* upon me, that it was incredible that Whitaker's printed copy of it could be always correct. Several odd readings could hardly be other than misprints or misreadings, and there could be no way of

settling this but by going all over his text so as to compare it with the original throughout. I accordingly applied to Sir Thos. Phillipps, who kindly permitted Mr Brock to collate my copy of 'Whitaker' with the MS.; a task which Mr Brock accomplished, with great care, as far as Pass. x. l. 34, or the end of p. 148 in Whitaker. At a subsequent period I had the opportunity of visiting Cheltenham, and finishing the collation myself, carefully looking at all the more important readings with additional attention, and thus obtaining exact information as to the spelling of every word throughout the poem. From this *corrected* copy of Whitaker the present text has been printed, and the result is sufficiently satisfactory. Most of the absurd readings turned out to be Dr Whitaker's mistakes; some others were due to some marked peculiarities in the scribe's spelling, easily removeable; and the rest have been amended by collation with six or seven other MSS. The resulting text is a peculiarly good one, and is, at any rate, ascertained on sufficient grounds to be the best that can be procured from the existing materials. For a long time, the state of the text was a great puzzle to me, and it has been a great satisfaction to be able to find so full and clear a solution to that puzzle. I think it must have been nearly two years before I saw my way quite clearly; and I have no doubt that the chief part of the difficulty arose from my assuming that Dr Whitaker's print, so obviously *intended* to be correct, really *was* so. Certainly experience has taught me, as an editor, to put no trust in editors, but always to verify their work by a reference, where possible, to the originals which they profess to represent.

In printing the MS., I found a few errors of misspelling by the scribe of such glaring impropriety, that I have not hesitated to alter them, *always*, however, making a note of the alteration in a footnote at the bottom of the page, but *not* marking them by square brackets, because it would have disfigured the look of the text. The square brackets, however, are invariably used where the alteration involves any real difference in the *sense*; it is only where nothing could be gained by retaining them that I have ventured to dispense with them. The chief error of this nature consists in the use of initial *wh*. Although the scribe often spells such words rightly, he almos-

as often spells them wrongly. Thus in Pass. i. 186, he writes *Wer* for *Wher*; and conversely, in ii. 71, he writes *whitterly* for *witterly*. Little could be gained by retaining such spellings,¹ and they were not worth a square bracket; yet they will be found duly noted in the footnotes, and I do not suppose that many readers will deem the liberty thus taken a very bold one.² His other chief error, a not uncommon one with scribes at many periods of English, is the use of *o* for *e*, as in *Lornede* for *Lernede*, xiv. 159; and, conversely, the use of *e* for *o*, as in *bepe* for *bope*, xiii. 73. This also is a *personal* error, i. e. it is not often found in the other MSS.³ Another peculiarity is seen in his use of the initial *h* in such words as *his* and *is*, as in 'Who-so *his* trywe of *ys* tonge,' xi. 78. This would have been remarkable, if he had shewn any consistency with himself in the matter, but since he quite as often writes *his* as *is* when the possessive pronoun is meant, it degenerates into a mere carelessness unworthy of much notice; yet the error is always recorded. The greatest liberty taken is in the substitution of *trew*e (the spelling of *all* the other MSS., including E) for *trywe*, the spelling most often found in P, and denoting, no doubt, a peculiarity in the scribe's pronunciation. This will be better understood when the description of MS. E (below) has been read over.

But when the scribe makes a downright blunder, as in *venturum* for *neutrum* in i. 152, the use of square brackets has been resorted to, as absolutely necessary.

This is the best place to notice at least two other peculiarities of the scribe Dankastre's writing. When he writes *sitte*, he makes the first *t* very short, so that, at a hasty glance, the word looks like *sute*. Hence Dr Whitaker has printed *sute* for *sitte*, *suthe* for *sitthe*, and the like, over and over again. But the error is Whitaker's, not

¹ The only gain is that the fact may have some significance; and by calling special attention to it in the preface, I have probably brought it into prominence even more than I should otherwise have done. It seems to imply that, to some ears at least, the *h* in *wh* (like initial *h*) was silent even in the fourteenth century.

² Especially if it be borne in mind that this error, very frequent in MS. P, does not occur, except perhaps very rarely, in *any other* MS. which I have consulted.

³ This use of *e* for *o* is an error in the act of writing; the letters are so formed as to be very much alike; just as the *n* and *u* are at times confused.

Dankastre's. Also, when he wished to write a capital *c* in the middle of a line, he always wrote it of rather a small size, so that it has a slight resemblance to an *s*. This is why, in Whitaker's edition, the word *Coket* (ix. 328) is misprinted *soket*; with a few more similar instances.

The redeeming merit of this MS., for which many small faults may be overlooked, is that its mistakes are commonly of a very transparent nature; we can easily see through them, especially with the aid of collation of other MSS., and hence perceive clearly enough that Dankastre *made his copy from a very good original*, probably from an early copy of the poet's own *autograph* copy,¹ and that we are thus brought as near to that original as is *now* possible. This is especially interesting, both as proving the *general* integrity of the text, and because Dankastre's copy of the true text is not the *only* one, since there are two others. These two others are the two which are next described.

For further remarks upon MS. P, see the account below of Dr Whitaker's edition of it. See also the Critical Notes, pp. 449—466.

XXX. MS. Laud 656, in the Bodleian Library, Oxford; denoted throughout this volume by the letter E.

The character of this MS. may be best perceived by turning to the fac-simile of a page of it, obtained by the autotype process, and prefixed to this volume. The contents of that page will be explained presently. It is a neat MS. on vellum, containing 124 leaves, each measuring about $8\frac{1}{2}$ by 6 inches, with about 40 lines on a page. The contents of the MS. are as follows:—

(a) A poem on the Destruction of Jerusalem, called by Warton (*Hist. Eng. Poetry*, vol. ii. p. 105; ed. 1840) *The Warres of the Jewes*. Begins (fol. 1 b.)—*In tyberius tyme · þe trewe emperour*; ends (fol. 19)—*& hom riden to rome · now rede ous oure lord. Hic terminatur bellum Iudaicum apud Ierusalem*. Other copies of this

¹ But not from the autograph itself, as *may* have been the case with MS. XXXI. There is one passage which is corrupt, viz. Pass. i. ll. 107—123 (see footnote on p. 7), and which seems to have been filled in by guess-work in every MS. except Lord Ilchester's. MS. P also occasionally omits lines, one of the most remarkable instances being l. 206 of Pass. xiii., of which the former half only is preserved in the Ilchester MS., the latter half having been devoured by the rats!

alliterative poem are to be found in MS. Cotton Calig. A. ii., MS. Camb. Univ. Lib. Mm. 5. 14, and MS. No. cxxx in the possession of Lord Ashburnham, described in P. Pl. Pref. II. p. xxi.

(b) *Piers the Plowman*; begins (fol. 9 b)—In a somere seson · whan softe was þe sonne; ends (fol. 114)—& siþ he grade after grace · til ich gan awake. Explicit *passus secundus* de dobest · incipit *passus tercius*.¹

(c) On fol. 115, a couplet, repeated in another place at the very end of the MS., which runs as follows:—

He that In yowught no vertu wyll vse
In age all honour wyll hem refuse, &c.—

The next two leaves being blank.

(d) On fol. 118 (wrongly called 117), a sermon, beginning—gen. 15 c°. Abraham bileued in god, &c.

(e) on fol. 124 b, some sentences of scripture in *English*, which I here print at length on account of the interest that attaches to such early translations.

Hit is writen in þe boke of machabeus, þe viij. c°.; þe wrap of god for soþ now is tourned in-to mercy. [2 *Mac.* 8. 5.]

proverbiorum .xviij. c°.; who so answerþ to a man, or þat he haþ herd hym speke, he schewith hym-silf a fool & worpy to confusion. [*Prov.* 18. 13.]

Ecclesiasticorum .xj. c°.; blame þou no man or þat þow haue herd hym speke; & þen blame hym riȝtfulliche. [*Eccles.* 11. 7.]

ysaie .x. c°.; wo be ȝou þat maken wicked lawes, & writen vn-riȝtwisnesse for to oppresse with fadirles children, and modirles & widewes. [*Isa.* 10. 1, 2.]

Isaie .v. c°.; wo be to ȝou þat bynden houses to houses, & couplen feldes to feldes, & seyn þat riȝt is wronge, & wronge is riȝt. [*Isa.* 5. 8, 20.]

Thobie .iiij. c°. al þat þou hatest þat any man scholde do to þe, be wel ware þat þou do þat no tyme to non oþer man. [*Tob.* 4. 15.]

Isaie .xlvij. c°.; þy wisdom & þy knowyng haþ disceyued þe. [*Isa.* 47. 10.]

proverbiorum .x. c°.; þere myche speche is, lackeþ no synne. [*Prov.* 10. 19.]

proverbiorum .xxix. c°.; who so euer norisचेþ lecherie, he schal lese his heritage þerby. [*Prov.* 29. 3.]

¹ An error of the scribe. There is no indication of any *third* Passus of Do-
best in any MS. but this; and even here, the lower half of the page is blank.

*Ecclesiasticorum*¹ .ij. c°. ; I se þat also myche wisdom passeþ folie, as list passeþ derknesse. [*Eccles.* 2. 13.]

Sapiencie .j°. c°. ; In a wicked saule may entre no wisdom, ne dwelle in þe body þat is seruauant to synne. [*Wisd.* 1. 4.]

Ecclesiasticorum .xiiij°. c°. ; he þat is wicked to hym-silf, to what oþer man schal he be goode. [*Ecclus.* 14. 5.]

Ecclesiasticorum .xxvii°. c°. ; þe stroke of þe tonge forsoþe brekeþ bones. [*Ecclus.* 28. 17.]

Ecclesiasticorum .xxix°. c°. ; close þyn almes in þe pore mannes bosom, & hit schal fize for þe vpon þy scheld & vpon þy spere in þe day of bataile. [*Ecclus.* 29. 12, 13.]

Sapiencie .i°. c°. ; þe mouþe þat lieþ sleeþ þe soule. [*Wisd.* 1. 11.]

Isaie .xxiiij°. c°. ; such as þe peple is, suche is þe preste ; & suche squyere, suche lord ; & suche damysel, such lady. [*Isa.* 24. 2.]

Jeremie .xlvij. c°. Cursed be ze þat don þe workes of oure lord gilyngliche & disceyuyngliche. [*Jer.* 48. 10.]

Jeremie .ix. c°. No wisman Ioie hym in his wisdom, ne no stronge man in his strengþe, ne no riche man Ioie hym in his richesse ; bot for to wite & knowe me, seiþ oure lord. [*Jer.* 9. 23.]

Michie .vj°. c°. I schal schewe to þe, man, what is god, & what god secheþ of þe ; also þat þou do riȝtwisnesse, & loue mercy, & bisili loue god. [*Mic.* 6. 8.]

Prouerbiorum .xxj°. c°. ; who so stoppeþ his ere fro a poure mannes crie, whan he crieþ to god, god wol noȝt heere hym. [*Prov.* 21. 13.]

Prouerbiorum .xvij°. c°. who þat Ioieþ hym of an oþer mannes meschef, he schal noȝt be vnpunschid. [*Prov.* 17. 5.]

Prouerbiorum .xxij. c°. ; who so accuseþ a poure man for to bynnyen hym his goodis, for to adden hem to his richesse, a richere man þan he is schal take hit fro hym, & he schal falle to meschef. [*Prov.* 22. 16.]

Prouerbiorum .xxiiij°. c°. Take noȝt away þe techyng fro a child, & þoȝ þou smyte hym with a ȝerde, he schal noȝt deie, bot þou schalt smyte hym with a ȝerde, & delyuere his soule fram helle. [*Prov.* 23. 13, 14.]

Prouerbiorum .xiiij. c°. ; he þat spareþ þe ȝerde, hateþ his sone ; & he þat loueþ his sone, wole bisily teche hym. [*Prov.* 13. 24.]

Ecclesiasticorum .xvj°. c°. ; beter hit is to haue o child dredyng god þan a þousand wicked & noȝt dredyng god ; & beter hit were to deye with-out children þan to leene wicked children byhynde hym vntauȝt. [*Ecclus.* 16. 3.]

Prouerbiorum .xiiij°. c°. ; who so haþ reuþe on a poure man, he schal be blessed, & who so bileueþ in god, he loueþ to do mercy. [*Prov.* 14. 21, 22, 31 ?]

¹ Read Ecclesiastes.

Prouerbiorum .xxvii^{jo}. c^o.; who so þat ȝyueþ to a poure man, hym ne schal noȝt nede; he þat dispiseþ hem þat praien hym, he schal falle to meschef. Also in þe same chapitre; he þat boweþ away his eren, & wole noȝt hure goddes comaundementes, his praiers ben acorsed. Also in þe same chapitre; who so takeþ away any þyng fro his fadere oþer fro his modire, & seiþ þat is no synne, he is partynere of manslauȝt. [*Prov.* 28. 27; 9; 24.]

Prouerbiorum .xxvij. c^o.; a fals tonge loueþ noȝt soþfastnesse, & a slipire mouþ worcheþ myche sorwe. [*Prov.* 26. 28.]

Prouerbiorum xx^{jo}. c^o.; he þat kepeþ wel his mouþ & his tonge, he kepeþ his soule fram anguysche. [*Prov.* 21. 23.]

Exodij .xxxiii^{jo}. *Numeri* .xiii^{jo}. c^o. & *Ionas*. Tu domine es paciens benignus & innocens, clemens deus & multum misericors. [*Ex.* 34. 6; *Num.* 14. 18; *Jon.* 4. 2.] Expliciunt proueria salamonis.¹

On a flyleaf at the beginning is written—

Ete, drynke, slepe lasse;
Wake, wepe, bide, faste;
Loue masse;
Lete lustes passe;
Be man, noȝt hors noþer asse.

Also this Latin astrological note—

Mercurius habet iii^{or} condiciones; regit cum virgine, dominatur aque, loquitur facunde, manet cum sole.

On the last flyleaf is written—

Hafe y of My owne lambenes botte on, dere y nowte fore þe wylde wolfe to grene wood.

Also this note—*Sciant presentes et futuri quod Ego Ioh. cembe parochia de ticeherst in comi. Kancie*—which seems to indicate that the MS. was once at Ticehurst in Kent.

The most interesting point about this MS. is that it is almost a duplicate of MS. P just described. It must have been a close copy from the same original. Hence the letters PE are often found together in the footnotes. This may be best understood by comparing the passage in the facsimile with *Pass.* vii. ll. 196—240; pp. 106—108. In order to assist those who are not very familiar with the MS. characters, I here print the exact contents of the facsimile; denoting, however, the contractions by italic letters.

¹ *Indistinct.*

Confessio auaricie

þ anne camē couetise¹ · ich can noȝt hym discreue
 so hongriliche & so holwe · heruy hym silf lokēd
 he was bitel browed & baberlipped · with two bleri eyen
 & as a leperen pors · lolled his chekes
 Wel sydder þan his chyn · ychyueled for elde
 As bondmen bakoun · his berde was yschaue
 With his hode on his hed · & his hatte bope
 In a toren² tabard · of twelfe wynter age
 Ich haue be couetouse *quod* þe caytif · Ich byknowe hit here
 For³ som tyme ich serued · symme at þe stile
 & was his prentys yplyȝt · his profite to wayte
 Furst ich lerned to lye · a lesyng oþer twey
 Wickedlich to weye · was my furst lesson
 To wy & to wynchestre · ich wende to þe faire
 With many maner marchaundises · as my maister hiȝt
 Ne hadde þe grace of gile · gon amonge my ware
 Hit hadde ben vnsolde þis seuē ȝere · so me god helpe
 Ich drowe me amonge drapers · my donet to lerne
 To drawe þe lesure alonge · þe lengur hit semed
 Amonge þe riche raies · ich rendred a lessoun
 To brochen hem with a batte nelde · & bonde hem to gedres
 Ich putte in pressours · & pynned hem þer Inne
 Til ten ȝerdes oþer twelfe · tilled hem þrittene
 My wif was a webbe · & wollen cloþ made
 ȝo spake to þe spynnestres · to spynnen hit out
 þe pounde þat ȝo paied hem by · peised a quarter
 More þan myn auncel · whan ich weied truþe
 Ich boȝt hire barlich · ȝo brewe hit to sille
 Peny ale & poddyng ale · ȝo poured to gedres
 For labourers & lowe folke · þat lay by hym silue
 þe best lay in my boure · & in my bedde chambre
 & so bommed þer of · he boȝt hit þer after
 A galon for a grote · & ȝut no graipe mesure

¹ Properly 'couetise,' with long *s*. But I have throughout neglected the distinction between the long and twisted *s*, because the printed long *s* is too close to an *f*, and only gives trouble. The twisted *s* occurs at the beginning and end of words, the long *s* in the middle.

² Written 'atoren,' the *a* being generally joined on to its noun. So also *alesyng*, &c.

³ The capital *F* in Early English has *two* downstrokes, just as in the black-letter *ſ*. By a singular error, this symbol is frequently printed *ff*, as if the *f* were doubled. Yet I have allowed *ff* to stand in the poem of 'Richard the Redeles,' because the scribe uses it so constantly that he seems to have attached some *special* importance to it. See the remarks on the MS. of that poem.

Whan hit came in coppe mele · þis crafte my wif vsed
 Rose þe regratoure · was ^{hire} riȝt name
 3o haþ yholde hoekerie · þis elleue wynter
 Repentest þou neuer *quod* repentaunce · ne restitution madest
 3us onys *quod* 3o ich was yherborwed · with an hepe of chepmen
 Ich aros & rifled here males · whan þei in reste were
 þat was a reuful restitution · *quod* repentaunce for soþe
 þou wolt honge hey þerfore · here oþer in helle
 Vsedest euer þou vsurye · in al þy lif tyme
 Nay soplich he sede · saf in my 3ougþe.¹

This extract sufficiently exemplifies the close *general* resemblance between MS. E and the text. The chief points of interest arising from collation are all duly noted in the footnotes. Thus, in l. 200, MS. E reads *Wel*, correctly. It agrees with P in omitting ll. 204, 205. In l. 206, it has *þe* for *þis*. In l. 211, it has *wende* for *wente*. In l. 212, it supplies the word *maner*, and corrects *maistres* to *maister*. In l. 216, it has *lesure* for *lisure*. In l. 219, it omits the first *hem*. In l. 220, it correctly has *3erdes* for *3orde*; also *hem* (wrongly) for *out*. In l. 227, it has *hym-silue* for *hem-selue*. In l. 229, it agrees with P in wrongly omitting *who*. In l. 233, it has *elleue* for *eleuene*. In l. 236, it has *in* for *a*. In l. 238, it has *honge* for *hongy*. The remaining chief variation is an evident peculiarity of the scribe himself; he uses *3o* to signify *she*, although that form is found in no other MS., the spelling of that word in P being almost always *hue*. The most remarkable instance of its agreement with P is in l. 235, where the scribe of P has accidentally put *hue* for *he*, an error easily rectified by comparing l. 240 below. Here the scribe of E actually follows suit by substituting his favourite form *3o*, not noticing that *hue* is wrong.

The close resemblance of this MS. to the text has made it very useful to me, and enabled me to see my way more clearly in many places. It is worthy of remark that three of the best representatives of the poem of Piers the Plowman in its various forms are all to be

¹ This extract may serve many purposes. It will shew how Early English used to be actually written, and how the various contractions are to be expanded. Observe the difference between 'þ' and 'y,' the latter being curled to the right at the bottom; note also the shape of the metrical mark in this MS., the shape of *3*, large and small; the use of the *same* symbol (an *n*) for *n* and *u*; the running together of *a* and *toren*; the separation of *to-gedres*, and many other things.

found in the Bodleian Library at Oxford; viz. the Vernon MS., printed by me as the basis of the A-text, the Laud MS. Misc. 581, the basis of the B-text; and the Laud MS. 656, which is practically almost a duplicate of P, the basis of the C-text.

XXXI. MS. Bodley 851; not regularly collated, and not mentioned in the footnotes, yet of considerable importance, as will here be shewn. It may, for convenience, be denoted by the letter Z.

The contents of this MS., which is of vellum, and measures 10 inches by 7½, may be ascertained from the Catalogue of the Bodley MSS. The copy of Piers the Plowman begins on fol. 124, and was entirely unknown to me till quite recently. This oversight arose in the most natural way possible. When making my collection of "Parallel Extracts" (E. E. T. S. 1866), Mr Coxe, Bodley's Librarian, whose kindness to me from first to last has been of the greatest service to me, himself sent me copies of the passage I had selected from the various MSS. of Piers the Plowman under his charge. But he sent me no copy of it from this MS. Z, for the sufficient reason that the passage is not to be found in it; whilst at the same time it never occurred to me to make further inquiry, because no other MS. omits the passage, and I did not suppose that any MS. *could* omit it. When however I at last lighted upon the MS. and examined it, this mystery was soon cleared up. The text it contains is a *mixed* one, consisting of two parts entirely distinct from each other and of different types, written out in very different hands. The first part exhibits an extremely corrupt text, mere rubbish, as it seems to me, and written out from imperfect recollection; but the latter part exhibits, though in a late hand, a copy of the C-text which is remarkable for the extreme general *correctness* of its readings, and may have been copied from an autograph or from an early copy of it. It is difficult to trace the exact point of junction of the texts, as the handwriting changes more than once, and the C-text portion does not settle down into its true form just at first. The net result is this, that the confusion of texts takes place near the end of B. Pass. vii., or C. Pass. x., i. e. near the end of the Vision of Piers the Plowman, *properly so called*, which winds up with two additional *spurious* lines in the following fashion—

At þe doom þat we deden · al as he vs bad & tawthe.
 And þat it so mote be · to god preye we alle
 To vs & alle cristin · god leue it so be-falle. Amen.

This miserable attempt at rime is a clear indication of the impossibility that the two added lines can be genuine. Hence the C-text in Z is of no value before we begin Pass. xi., or the Vision of Do-wel; but after that point its value is considerable, and will be explained more at length presently.

The former part of the MS. approaches rather to the B-text than the A-text, as, for instance, in the line—

Ant a-vowed faste · for eny hungur or furste—

which is like

And avowed to fast · for hungur or for thurst (B. 5. 388).
 rather than

For hungur oper for Furst · I make myn A-vou (A. 5. 218).
 But the text is greatly corrupted, abridged, transposed, and in every way altered for the worse; so that it is worthy of no attention except as a curiosity. It will be sufficient to illustrate this by giving the very odd form in which four of the deadly sins, viz. Envy, Wrath, Gluttony, and Avarice, are described. The passage is abridged from B. 5. 76—391, by cutting down the 216 lines to 19, a considerable liberty.

[*Fol.* 133.] Enuye ant yre · ayther wep faste,
 Preyude furst to pouel · ant tho (*sic*) petur also
 To gete grace for here gult · of god that hem boughte,
 That nere wyked wyлле · ne wrath hem ouere-come,
 But sende hem grace to suffre · ant synne to lete,
 And for to louye ant be by-loued · as charite wolde.
 Thenne com couetyse · knoked ys brest,¹
 A haued a northfolk nose² · y noem ful god hede,
 Ant swor by ‘so theyk!’³ · that synne scholde he lete,

¹ B. 5. 188.

² This description of Covetousness having ‘a Norfolk nose’ contains some covert satire that is lost upon me. Having resided two years in Norfolk, I may be allowed perhaps to observe that I never remarked any peculiarity in the noses of the people there. But as they are, in these days at least, remarkably hospitable, this may account for my difficulty!!

³ I. e. *so thee ik*, so may I thrive; O.E. *thee*, G. *gedeihen*, to thrive, prosper; cf. B. 5. 228—231.

Ant nere wolle to weye · ne worstedes¹ make,
 Ne morgage manere · *with* monye that he haued,
 But wenden to walsingham · ant my wyf alse,
 Ant bydde the rode of bromholm · brynge vs out of dette.
 Thenne gan gloten to grete · ant gret sorwe hadde²
 Al for ys luyther lyf · that a lyued hadde,
 Ant a-vowed faste— ‘for eny hungur or furste
 Schal nere fysch vp-on the fryday · defyen in my wombe
 Ar abstinence myn aunte · haue yf me leue,
 And yut hath he hated me · al my lyf-tyme.’

So much for the first part of the MS. But on comparing my printed C-text with the latter portion of it, I made the very satisfactory discovery that this MS., representing as it does a very pure text in spite of its rather late spellings, tended greatly to confirm the various emendations which I had made in the text after collation with other MSS. It was, as it were, an unexpected and satisfactory testimony to the correctness of my text, confirming many results of careful thought, and shewing me that I had been working upon right principles.

I give some examples of this from Passus xviii.; see pp. 309—320, especially noting the words enclosed within square brackets.

In l. 34 (p. 309), Z reads *g*. L. 38; Z. *he*. L. 50; Z. *holy-kyrke*. L. 55; Z. *3e*. L. 66; Z. *godes*. L. 70; Z. inserts *pat*. L. 80; Z. *pe*. L. 81; Z. inserts *pe*. L. 109; Z. *versyfye*. L. 112; Z. *a* (2nd time). L. 119; Z. *pow*. L. 127; Z. *A loue-knotte*. L. 133; Z. *diuersep*. L. 135; retained in Z. L. 143; Z. *pi*. L. 150; Z. *Where*. L. 169; Z. *soteled*. L. 177; Z. *knelede*. L. 188; Z. *prelates*; Z. *pope*. L. 198, quotation; Z. *nobis*. L. 211; Z. *pan*. L. 218; Z. *pe*. L. 220; Z. *kerke*.

Nearly all the alterations throughout pp. 309—320 are thus confirmed. Yet I do not hold the MS. to be always right, probably owing to its being a late and hurried copy. The satisfaction lies in its pointing to the former existence of better MSS. than any of those

¹ Another Norfolk allusion; insinuating, apparently, that the makers of the worsted fabrics at Worsted did not put in good wool and workmanship. It is too bad to suppose that the convenient proximity of the shrine at Walsingham caused them to be careless of their commercial integrity.

² Cf. B. 386—391; observe that lines 232—385 are omitted at one long jump.

now extant. Valuable as it is as furnishing collateral evidence, it did not seem worth consulting much further, since it contributes no *new* results, but merely confirms the old ones. Besides, there are the usual clerical errors in it, such as *byden* for *byten* in l. 29, p. 308; and in l. 76, p. 311, it has *here prent ful ofte ys trewe* (much like the reading in F), which is obviously false in the alliteration, and caught from the line preceding. It also omits line 116, p. 314. One reading, in l. 49, p. 309, is especially noteworthy, viz. *cheld* for *child*, which, placed beside the *scheld* of MS. G, looks as if the spelling *cheld* was the original one; and may, at any rate, certify to us that the sense of the word is *chilled*, not *child*. The line clearly means—"And charity, that is chilled now, should grow warm (lit. chafe) of himself."

XXXII. A MS. now in the possession of the Earl of Ilchester; imperfect, but collated throughout, and denoted in the present volume by the letter I. This is a well-written, early, and important vellum MS., which no doubt once contained 126 leaves, of which several are now lost. The size of the page is about 9 inches by $6\frac{1}{2}$, and each page contains about 31 lines. Perhaps no MS. could be better devised for completely puzzling a critic unfamiliar with the poem. The text has been made up from two imperfect texts, an A-text and a C-text; some of the matter comes twice over; several leaves have been lost; the remaining ones have been numbered wrongly, and then bound up in the wrong order. Supposing the MS. *complete* and the leaves rightly numbered throughout, what has happened is this. Leaves 63, 81—88, 95, and 113—120 have been lost. Leaves 73—80 have been inserted after leaf 32; leaves 89—96 follow leaves 97—104; and the last six leaves have been placed in the order 122, 123, 121, 125, 124, 126. Leaf 126 was once blank, but bears a very distinct impression (reversed of course) of the concluding lines of the poem on leaf 125, back. The MS. has been somewhat spoilt, particularly at the end, by damp, and much injured by the rats, which have eaten away, in some places, nearly half the leaf, so that sometimes the last half, sometimes the first half of a line is entirely gone, and many lines are more or less imperfect. The hardest case is in xiii. 206,

where a line required to complete the sense occurs in this MS. only, and the rats have eaten the last half of it, so that so much of it has disappeared past recovery. The order of the leaves being thus accounted for, we may pass on to consider the order of the subject-matter. Leaf 1 contains about the first 60 lines of the Poem, probably of the A-type, but now quite illegible except the large initial *I*. Next follows a C-text piece (C. x. 75—254), which fills up leaves 2, 3, and a part of leaf 4. Leaf 4 (marked 3) contains, immediately after this, an A-text piece (A. prol. 55—76, 80—83); but on the back of the leaf the former C-text piece is continued, so that we thus get a second piece (C. x. 255—281) filling up the rest of leaf 4 and part of leaf 5. In like manner we find successively, next after this, the following passages, viz. A. prol. 84—95, C. i. 91—152, A. prol. 96—109; after which the C-text fairly begins to be consistent and consecutive, from C. ii. 1 to C. xii. 273. Next, leaf 63 is lost, so that the MS. fails from C. xii. 274 to xiii. 20; it then gives C. xiii. 21 to xvi. 295; fails from xvi. 296 to xviii. 58; gives C. xviii. 59 to xix. 101; fails from xix. 102 to xix. 162; gives C. xix. 163 to xxii. 78; fails from C. xxiii. 79 to xxiii. 81; and then gives the conclusion of the poem, of which very little is legible except a few words here and there sufficient to identify the text by. It thus appears that the passage which occurs twice over is C. x. 75—281, viz. once in its proper place, and once in the middle of the A-text prologue. Strange to say, this second copy of the passage, a few readings from which are given in the footnotes, and denoted by the *italic* letter *I*, varies considerably from the passage as it stands in the body of the text. Here, for instance, is a passage, which greatly varies from the text (C. x. 128—140) as it stands in all the other MSS.; see p. 165.

Alle maner menstrals · men wot wel

To vnderfonge hem faire · falles for þe

And al for loue of þe lorde · to whom þat þ

What þay . . . misdo · al is [in] merþe taken, 4

And soeffre . . for her lordes sake · al þat þay . . .

And ther-to golde men hem gyfe · wiþ a glad chere,

In worschip of þat worþy lorde · þat þay . . .

Right so ȝe riche do · and rapen, I rede, 8

Bring in goddes bourdyours · and at ȝour b . . .
 His oghne mery menstrals · makeþ hem
 þe leedes þat ben lunatyk · and lepers aboute ;
 For with our saueours seal · her synnes 12
 Ne bere þay no bagges · ne botels vnder . . .
 þe which is lolleres lif · and lewed

These lines do not read to me as spurious; it is just possible that they represent the poet's first cast of this curious passage, peculiar as it is to the C-text.

The succeeding lines are very imperfect; but the alternative reading in l. 144 (see footnote) is not a bad one; for whether we read

Reste hym, and roste hym · and his ryg turne,

or, Reste hym, and roste hym · by þe rede gledes,

we get a capital line either way, and one in Langland's best manner.

The following passage is also too good to be omitted; especially as it is a very remarkable one. It answers to C. x. 203—281; see p. 169.

Bot hermits þat howsen¹ now · by þe hie weye
 Werkemen bifore were · webbesters and tay[lours],²
 Clerkes connyngles of scole · and carters [knaues],
 þat somtyme were at mysese · of mete and [of drynke], 4
 Laboured longe for lite good · and atte last aspid
 How freres and oþer faytours · hadden fatte chekes;
 And þan þay left þair labour · þese lewed lither knaues,
 Cloped hem in Copes · right as þay clerkes were, 8
 And þus agayn þe lawe lyuen · if latyn be trewe;

Non licet nobis legem voluntati, sed voluntatem coniungere legi.

Kyndely, by holy crist · ben suche cleped lollers
 By heryng of oure eldres · of olde mennes tech[ynge];
 For he þat lolleþ is lame · his leg is out of [ioynte], 12
 Or maymed on som membre · þat makþ him at [misesese].
 So þise lewed lollers · as lame men þey walken;
 þey lollen al agayn þe leue³ · and lawe of holy chirche.
 For holy kirke comandep · al þe comun peple 16

¹ Surely William was ill-advised, if he altered *howsen* to *edefyen*; so too, two lines below, *connyngles of scole* is well said.

² The words or parts of words supplied between square brackets are conjectural.

³ I. e. belief.

In obedience to be · and buxum to þe lawe ;
 þe reule of religioun · he redeþ it be holden.
 On serkyn¹ wys þes seculers · it certefiez also,
 Lewed men, by labour lyue · and lordez, go to hunt 20
 In frith and in forest · boþe þe fox and oþer bestes,
 þe wolues wilde þat wirye scheep · boþe wommen and children,
 Saue þe sonday to cesse · þe seruice to heere,
 First matyns and masse · and after noon also 24
 Ententifely her euesong · euery man so aghte.
 þus it longeþ for lordes · to lered men and lewed
 [Eche ho]ly-day to here · þe holy seruice,
 And fast al þat our fader biddeþ · but in Infirmite, 28
 Or but if preue penaunce · or pilgrimage it make.
 Vnder þis obedience · ere we echone,
 [And w]ho-so brekeþ it, be war · but if he repent
 [Amende] him and mersy aske · and mekely him schryue 32
 [I drede] me sore, if he dye · it bees ful dere boght
 [And acoun]ted before crist · but conscience him excuse.
 [Loke] now þise lollers · and lewed heremytes
 [But] if þay breke obedience ? · þay ben fer fro chirche ! 36
 [Wher] se we hem on sondays · þe seruice to here,
 [Or meten] by þe morwen · to messe be bygonne ?
 Bot sekerly at euesong · se we right fewe,
 Or labour for her lifelode · as þe lawe wolde. 40
 [Ac at] mydday, at mete-tyme · I mete wiþ hem ofte,
 [Comyng] wiþ her copes · right as þey clerkes were.
 A bacheler, a beaupere · best him bysemes ;
 Bot for þe cloþ þat couereþ him · called he is a frere ; 44
 He wasscheþ and wyþeþ · and wiþ þe ferste sitteþ.
 But whil he wroght in þis world · and wan his mete in troupe,
 He satte at þe syd-bord · atte secound table ;
 þer cam no wyn in his wombe · þorgh þe woke long, 48
 Ne no blanket on his bed · ne whit bred biforn him.

The rest of the passage, to the end of l. 281, differs from the text but slightly, and most of the variations are given in the foot-notes. But for ll. 259 and 260 we find—

For many waker wolues · walken² in the feeldes,
 And þe barkers arn blynde · þat bringe forþ þe lambes.

Line 268 runs thus—

þat schulde þe wilde wolf wiry · þat þe wolle fouleþ.

¹ *Serkyn* = *sere kyn*, i. e. divers kind. On *serkyn wys*, in various sorts of ways.

² This preserves the alliteration, which is deficient in the text.

And instead of ll. 275—278, we have but this single line—

[Thy] moebles, and more · may not quite þy dettes.

Returning to the consideration of the principal part of the text of this MS., it is necessary to say a few words as to its general character. It is, on the whole, *not quite the same text* as that given by MSS. P and E. Just as MS. R (see Pref. II. p. xii) differs from the true B-text in being of somewhat later date and thus embodying a few after-thoughts, so MS. I differs from the true C-text, but in the other direction; for it is clearly an *earlier* draught of the C-text, and does not contain quite so many alterations of the text as do most of the other MSS. Its readings, in consequence, sometimes *point back* to the B-text. Thus, in Pass. iii. 83, I alone reads *feffep* for *feffed*, and the B-text has *feffeth*; and in l. 99, I alone (like the B-text) prefixes *And* at the beginning. These are but slight matters, but such is, in general, the case nearly throughout. Sometimes, indeed, this MS. rightly preserves some reading where all the other MSS. are corrupt. Thus, in Pass. xviii. 94, even MS. Z, which is usually, as has been said, so correct, has the absurd reading *Wonderwyse*; I alone keeps the right reading *Wederwise*, found also in the B-text. From such an example as this, the value of the MS. may be better understood. My best thanks are due to the Earl of Ilchester for his great kindness in lending me the MS. for three months.

There is one peculiarity in this MS. which is of considerable importance, as it may give some help in tracing the author's history. The surname most commonly assigned to the author is Langland; but in MS. I, at the end of Passus x., we find the entry—"Explicit visio Willelmi .W. de Petro le Plowman. Et hic incipit visio eiusdem de Dowel." There can be no mistake about this, as I have since found the same entry in two other MSS., viz. in MS. Douce 104, fol. 39 *b*, and MS. Digby 102, fol. 35. All three of these MSS. belong, not only to the C-text, but to the same sub-class of C-text MSS.; see § 6. The signification of this mystic "W" is still to seek. Professor Morley suggests "Wychwood," in allusion to the note in the Dublin MS., printed in Pref. I. p. xxxv. My own guess is "Wigorniensis," from the connection between Great Malvern and

the see of Worcester. But I fear that both guesses are wide of the mark.

XXXII (B) = III. MS. T, in the library of Trinity College, Cambridge, marked R. 3. 14, already once described, in Pref. I. p. xviii. A few more words about this MS. are here required. It contains, as there explained, the whole of the A-text, except Passus xii., followed by a portion of a C-text, viz. C. xii. 297—xxiii. 386. My first intention was to collate this MS. from C. xii. 297 to the end of Passus xii. only, as intimated in the footnote to xii. 297, p. 213. But it turned out better than I had expected, and I therefore continued the collation with it down to the end of the Poem. Its chief value is that it is almost a duplicate of the MS. last described, and hence supplies, very frequently, the matter which is lacking in I owing to the very numerous lacunæ in that MS. Hence the combination IT is of frequent occurrence in the footnotes; and the letter T standing alone has frequently a similar significance, the reading of I not being given because it is wanting, and so cannot be *certainly* known.

XXXII (C) = V. MS. Harl. 6041, already described in Pref. I. p. xx. It has been explained that this MS. is little else than an inferior and later copy of T, and hardly worth consulting. It belongs, accordingly, to the same sub-class as the Ilchester MS. The C-text portion begins, as in T, at xii. 297.

XXXII (D) = X. MS. Digby 145, already described in Pref. I. p. xxiv. A late MS. (dated 1534), to which similar remarks apply. The C-text portion begins at xii. 297.

XXXII (E) = XXIII. MS. B, i. e. Bodley 814, already described in Pref. II. p. xxv, with further remarks in the Critical Notes to the B-text, p. 392, and in § 2 above. The C-text portion ends at C. iii. 128, and the B-text portion goes on without any break in the sense and at a right point of junction, at B. ii. 121. Though it approaches in character the Ilchester MS., and may be put in the same sub-class, it does not give much assistance. Thus, in the corrupt passage, C. i. 107—123, it does not greatly differ from the text, although in l. 110, it has

And chastised hem not per-of · and nolde not rebuke hem,

where *chastised not* comes nearer to MS. I. As this MS. cannot be much depended on, very few readings have been cited from it.

XXXII (F) = XXIV. MS. Additional 10574, in the British Museum. Already described in Pref. II. p. xxvi; which see.

XXXII (G) = XXV. MS. Cotton Calig. A. xi. Already described in Pref. II. p. xxvii; which see.

XXXIII. MS. Cotton, Vespasian B. xvi., in the British Museum; the earliest¹ and best of the MSS. of the poem (in whatever shape) in the British Museum, written on vellum, before 1400; collated throughout, and denoted by the letter M. Each leaf measures about 10 inches by 7½, and the MS. consists of 95 leaves. Each page contains about 40 lines. The copy of *Piers the Plowman* begins on leaf 6, and ends on leaf 95 *recto*. The metrical pause is denoted throughout by a large red dot. The poem is divided into paragraphs, which are denoted by paragraph-marks (¶) prefixed, coloured red and blue alternately, and every paragraph ends with a waved red line.² All the Latin quotations are written in red letters. On the first five leaves, and on the last page, are written various pieces, some of them imperfect, in a later hand, probably about A.D. 1416, or later, as that date is found on leaf 5. These pieces are printed in Mr Wright's edition of *Political Songs*; Camden Society, 1839. One of them, a Satirical Proclamation, will be found in Mr Furnivall's *Political, Religious, and Love Poems* (E. E. T. S., 1866), pp. 12 and 13. This is the piece which is dated A.D. 1416, but there are reasons for supposing this date a mere mistake for 1436; see the note in Mr Furnivall's volume. But all these pieces have clearly been written in afterwards, and the date of them does not affect the date of the copy of *Piers the Plowman*. As I was unable to give up my time to visiting the British Museum very frequently, my collation has been made by help of the transcript made for me, as I have already mentioned, by Mr Rossiter, Mr Brock, and Mr Wood. My thanks are also specially due to Miss L. Toulmin Smith, who

¹ Unless, as regards the date, preference be given to the curious MS. H (Harl. 875) of the A-type.

² I regret that the beginnings of the paragraphs are not marked in this text, but it was not easy to do so. Most MSS. omit the marks, and those that have them do not always agree.

compared the revises of this volume once more with the MS., in order to eliminate any small errors that might otherwise have arisen. Every reading of M that is of any consequence has been recorded in the footnotes.

The MS. is not so good, as regards the character of its readings, as might have been expected. My attempt to make it the basis of the text entirely broke down. In many places where it differs from MS. P, the variations are certainly for the worse, although it has always proved worth consulting, and is the only MS. which gives l. 116 of Pass. xviii., thus completing the otherwise imperfect sentence. In the course of my work, I discovered a fact which no one seems to have suspected, viz. that one leaf is missing, which ought to contain the passage C. xix. 245—xx. 30; and in another place, the subject-matter has been misplaced in a very puzzling manner: so that, on these accounts also, it is very fortunate that it was not taken as the basis of the text. After C. xviii. 186, M inserts xviii. 288; then comes xviii. 187; then xviii. 259—287; then xviii. 188—258; after which comes xviii. 289, and all the rest of the Passus. Nothing is lost by this arrangement, but it is not easy to follow or to explain, and it considerably injures the sense. The completeness of the collation with M renders it hardly necessary to say more; but it may be remarked that this MS. should not be put in the same sub-class with P, E, and Z, nor with I, T, and B, but in a third class, along with F and S. An account of the sub-classes will be found below, in sect. 6.

XXXIV. MS. in the Cambridge University Library, marked Ff. 5. 35, and denoted in this volume by F. This is a neatly written vellum MS., of the beginning of the fifteenth century, formerly containing 152 leaves, but now imperfect through the loss of two quires of eight leaves each. Each leaf measures about $9\frac{1}{2}$ inches by 7, and each page contains about 37 lines. It contains a copy (a) of the Travels of Sir John Maundeville, commencing on fol. 1 a, and ending on fol. 49 a, and (b) of Piers the Plowman, commencing on fol. 49 b, and ending on fol. 152 a, about half way down the page, the rest of the page being blank. The missing leaves are foll. 81—88, and 105—112. The missing passages are C. viii. 265—

x. 181, and xiv. 94—xvi. 178. Notwithstanding its imperfect state, I was at one time under the impression that it might perhaps be made the basis of the text, and, in order to test this matter thoroughly, the whole of Passus ii. was set up in type from a transcript of the MS., and about fifteen copies printed, to enable me to collate this piece with all the other MSS. Then it came out that the readings of F are frequently peculiar to itself, and that its apparent smoothness of metre and diction must be due to the text having been touched up. This is a point which cannot very well be exemplified by special instances, as it is necessary to collate or observe the readings of a long passage, at least 400 or 500 lines, before the exact character of the MS. can be clearly apprehended; the reader will be content, perhaps, to accept the fact as the result of my experience, since I have collated it with the text throughout, and give every variation in the footnotes that is worth giving. Indeed, I believe that it has received more than its fair share of attention, since, on account of its peculiarities, the letter F appears oftener in the footnotes than any other, as may easily be perceived if a sufficiently long passage be examined. Where its readings are not peculiar, they most often agree with those of S, and frequently with those of M, so that the letters FS or MFS are often found in conjunction. It may be further observed here, once for all, that the plurals of substantives in F commonly end in *us*, a peculiarity I have not always noticed, though many instances of it will be found in the footnotes. For the feminine personal pronoun, nominative case, the forms used are *sche* and *scheo*, instead of the *hue* of MS. P. Except when supported by other MSS., its readings are, in general, to be regarded with suspicion.

XXXV. MS. in the library of Corpus Christi College, Cambridge, now marked No. 293, formerly R. 17; imperfect, but collated as far as it goes, and denoted in this volume by S. There are three passages wanting, of which one has been lost through the loss of a leaf, but the others seem to have been missed by the scribe in making his transcript. It now contains 64 vellum leaves, each measuring 10 inches by 6½. It is not quite clear whether it is all in one handwriting, as the size of the writing is variable, and the

number of lines on a page varies from about 33 to about 44. It probably originally consisted of 74 leaves, 10 of which have disappeared. One of these, the last of the third quire of eight leaves, must have been cut out purposely at first, as there is no gap in the poem there. Another, the first of the eighth quire, is also gone, and with it the passage C. xvi. 80—156. Besides this, there is a gap from C. ix. 268—xi. 94,¹ which may always have been missing, and another involving the loss of the whole of Passus xvii. to **xxi.**, which seems to have been accidental, since the colophon (in S) to Passus xvi. is 'Explicit passus sextus'; and the title to Passus xxii. is 'Incipit passus septimus de dowel', as if that Passus were really the next in order. Later still, comes a gap of 316 lines (C. xxii. 8—323), which is probably due to the loss of a quire of eight leaves. The lost passages are therefore ix. 268—xi. 94, xvi. 80—156, xvii. 1—xxi. 479, and xxii. 8—323. But what there is of the text is good; the writing is probably not much later than 1400, or may be earlier, and the readings do not vary much from the text. The Latin quotations are all in red, and the initial letter of every line has a red dab upon it. The metrical pause, on the other hand, is never marked. On a flyleaf, in a later hand, is written 'God spede the plowgh And sende vs corne ynowgh', as in MS. T; see Pref. I. p. xviii. Where the gaps in it occur, I have collated MS. G (the next described) instead of it, on account of the close similarity between these MSS. Its text abounds with plurals of substantives in *-us*; other common forms are *bup* for *bep*, *ous* for *us*; besides its shewing a fondness for the letter *u* in terminations, as in *graypust* for *graypest*, *bryngup* for *bryngep*, and the like. When it differs from the text, it commonly agrees with G, M, or F.

XXXVI. MS. in the Cambridge University Library, marked Dd. 3. 13; sometimes collated, especially where S fails, and denoted by the letter G.

This MS. is also imperfect, and is written in a somewhat irregular

¹ The footnote to ix. 268 (p. 153) says—Here S has lost eight leaves. I do not now feel quite so sure about this; the missing piece, about 533 lines, would hardly fill a quire, except at the low rate of 27 lines to the page, and the catchword immediately below C. ix. 267 is "Lordus pat lyuep," as if nothing were the matter.

hand, though probably of early date, not far from the year 1400. It is of vellum, and once contained at least 100 leaves, of which some are now lost, viz. two at the beginning, at least five at the end, and two others elsewhere. The missing passages are i. 1—153, xiv. 227—xv. 40, xvi. 288—xvii. 41, and xxiii. 40—386. But, besides this, the scribe had a wonderful faculty for missing lines; he has frequently slipped a line, or two or three lines at a time, as if he only strove to reach the end of his task in the quickest way. Thus, turning to Passus xvii., we see that he omits ll. 56, 57, 69—71, 75, 79, 89, 90, 125, 130, 134, 143, 171, 172, 176, 187, 190, 208, 216—218, 227, 237—240, 245, 246, 249, 250, 257, 262, 266, 281—283, 301—312, 325, 326, 351, 365, 366; as is easily verified by looking at the footnotes. Of course these frequent omissions make sad havoc of the sense. This is the more extraordinary, because, at the time of writing, the copy was revised by a corrector, who has frequently written 'cor.' at the bottom of the page. Yet the text, as far as it goes, is a good one, and differs from the text but slightly. It also bears a close likeness to S, and has therefore been collated in passages where S fails. In other passages, it has been collated *occasionally* only, and chiefly where there has been some slight doubt about the best reading. In this way it has proved of considerable service, and quite as much use has been made of it as seemed to be advisable.

The poem is divided into paragraphs, but not, as it would seem, with much correctness. The dialectal forms are much the same as those in P and S, and the spellings of words often agree with the spellings of P in a somewhat remarkable manner. In some instances, its readings tend to agreement with I. The collation of the text with G must not be taken to be *complete*, even where S fails; as I have frequently omitted to record readings from it that seemed of no particular value.

XXXVII. MS. Digby 171, in the Bodleian Library, Oxford. Imperfect, and only partly collated; denoted always by the letter K. This is an excellent MS. as far as it goes; it now consists of 60 vellum leaves, and is well and clearly written in a bold large hand on quires of eight leaves each, when complete. The metrical

pause is denoted by a mark like a colon (:), and there are marks shewing where each paragraph commences. Each page measures about $10\frac{1}{2}$ inches by $7\frac{1}{4}$, and contains about 34 lines. At least eight leaves have been lost at the beginning, and in place of them four paper leaves have been inserted, of which the two last are blank. On the first is written—"Bowght this book anno 1578, of harvy in gras street, the 14 october," followed by a price, erased; also, in a large hand—"precium xvj d." On the second paper leaf, in the handwriting of Stephen Batman, once a member of Trinity College, Cambridge, to whom the book doubtless once belonged, is written:—"This Booke is clepped: Sayewell, Doowell. Doo better. & Doo Best / Souche a booke az diserueth the Reeding. Bookes of Antiquti are wel be-stowed one those whose sober staided mindes can abyde the reding; but commonly ffrantike braines suche az are more readye to be pratlers than parformers, seing this book to be olde, Rather take it for papisticall then else. & so many bookes com to confusion. S. B. Minister." Beneath this is a carefully executed drawing of a man sowing seed broadcast in a field; at the side of which is written—"Esaye 53; vers. 10"—probably with reference to the clause—"the pleasure of the Lord shall prosper in his hand." The extant portion of the Poem begins—

Drede stod atte dore : and pat deone herde ; C. iii. 217 ;
and ends—

For a doctor at þe heie deys : drank wyn faste ; xvi. 65.

It is remarkable that the scribe ended his work here; no more was ever written, as the next page is left blank. "S. B." attempted to finish off the work, as it were, by an epigrammatic remark, the first line of which is meant to rime with "faste." It runs thus:—

I wolde this vers were not y^e laste ;
Although this worke be harde to finde,
Yet it is good for a christian minde.

The owner evidently read the book carefully, and duly appreciated it. My collation with this MS. begins with Passus xii., from which point onwards all the readings worth noting are given as long as the

MS. holds out. I did not at first perceive the full value of it, or I would have collated it sooner; the general character of its readings may be considered to resemble that of the Ilchester MS. I have nevertheless read over the former part of the poem with K, and now supplement my work by here noting down the few readings which are most worthy of record.

PASS. IV. 106. K *clemynge*. 224. K *knowep*, *as in text*. 376. K *omits*. 416. K *reuth*. 424. K *retains*.

PASS. VI. 159. K *has*—Lederes of lawedaies · and londes purchased.

PASS. VII. 204, 205. K *retains*. 408. *thrumbled*] throbed K.

PASS. VIII. 251. K *has*—A ful lel lady · vnleke hit of grace. 278—280. K *retains what P omits*. 301. K *synegen*.

PASS. IX. 98, 99. K *retains*. 103. K He is holdyng. 351. K *vm*.

PASS. X. 187. K *has*—And alle holy heremytes · hauen schulle þe same. (So that, though this line is said in the footnote to be found in I only, it is really in K also.) 194. K *bolleres*. 195. K *has*—Of lygnage ne of lettrure, &c.

PASS. XI. 166. K *retains*.

It will be seen that these readings confirm or help out my results in almost every instance. Indeed, I may say that further collation with this MS. will, I believe, be found merely to confirm my results, and not to give new information. It possesses, on this account, more interest for myself than for the reader.

XXXVIII. MS. Douce 104, in the Bodleian Library, Oxford. Apparently perfect; a MS. on vellum, written A.D. 1427. It contains 112 leaves, each measuring about 8½ inches by 6. Each page contains about 34 or 35 lines. At the end, on fol. 112 *b*, is scrawled—Explicit liber de Petro ploughman. Anno r. henrici sexti sexto; et finitum (?) ante festum (?) Michaelis, Inceptum tamen assum:—scarcely legible. Below this is written, in a later hand, a few lines about “Tutiullus,” printed in *Reliquiæ Antiquæ*; i. 257. The chief peculiarity of this MS., which is wholly of the C-type, is that it abounds with very rudely drawn coloured pictures, some hardly finished, inserted in the margin wherever room could be found for

them. A few of them are curious, and all seem to have been directly suggested by a perusal of the passage opposite to which they occur. Thus, there are pictures of Lady Meed, on foll. 8, 10, 11, and 11 *b*; of Tom Stowe with his two staves (C. vi. 131), on fol. 23; of Pride, fol. 24; Envy, fol. 25; Wrath, fol. 26; Lechery, fol. 26 *b*; Avarice, fol. 27; Gluttony, fol. 29; Sloth, fol. 31; a Palmer, fol. 33; the Castle of Truth (C. viii. 232, &c.), fol. 34; and so on. The later ones are very poor; a few only are at all characteristic, and even these are but sketched in outline. In many places the leaves are considerably discoloured. As I have not collated this MS., I cannot give its peculiarities with certainty; but it is obviously an inferior MS. of the same sub-class with I and T. Thus, in Pass. ii. the following readings of this MS. will be found duly entered in the footnotes, marked I; or else closely resembling the readings so marked. 122. Euen þe. 134. toure. 147. to abate. 150. hit fyrst. 161. And in. 162. For of. 164. Lokep on vs. 177. chideþ neþer. 186. lewed þyng. 190. And *omitted*. 191. Thei *omitted*. 192. crep oute. 195. And a; as for. 199. carful. 202. saide ere. All these readings are more or less peculiar, and leave little doubt as to the general character of the MS.

XXXIX. MS. Digby 102, in the Bodleian Library, Oxford. This is a copy of the C-text, on vellum, of perhaps about the middle of the fifteenth century, measuring about 9 inches by 6½, and forming rather a thick volume; it contains many other pieces besides *Piers the Plowman*, which comes at the beginning, and ends on fol. 98. The striking peculiarity of this MS. is that our poem is written all across the page, like prose, obviously with the view of economising space. But each line is well marked out, as the metrical mark, somewhat like an inverted semicolon (:), comes in the middle of every line, and a down stroke (/) at the end of each; with several paragraph-marks, alternately red and blue, in fitting places. Unfortunately several leaves have been lost at the beginning, so that it commences near the end of l. 156 of Pass. iii., thus:—"of notaries / To fette Fauel forth: floreyne y-nowe / And bad Gyle to gyue: gold al aboute /" &c. The readings of this MS. have a striking resemblance to those of MS. I (Ilchester MS). Thus it

agrees with I in Pass. iv. 140—142 (see footnote). So also in iv. 389, it has—

Such imparfit peple · repreueth al reson.

And again, in iv. 331, it has the curious reading *Si ne is the glose*.¹ We may safely put it in the same sub-class with I and T.

XL. MS. Harl. 2376, in the British Museum. A MS. of thin vellum, containing 124 leaves, apparently perfect; size of leaf, about 8½ inches by 5½; contains about 31 lines in a page. Written about A.D. 1440 or earlier, in clear, good writing. Red lines are drawn round all the Latin quotations, and round proper names, &c. In some places it looks a little greasy, as if it had been well thumbed. On the top of the first leaf is a date—‘13 August 1724.’ The title is—‘Here by-gynneþ þe boke of Pyris Plowman.’ The poem ends on fol. 124*a*, the rest being blank. It is a most disappointing MS., as it looks so promising, and is yet so unsatisfactory. I had intended to collate it, denoting it by the letter N; but so many readings seemed to be corrupt that it proved to be no sure guide, and is, indeed, best neglected. Mr Furnivall collated the whole of Passus ii. with a printed copy from MS. F, and I here give a few corrupt readings by way of example.

PASS. II. 12. toppe (*for* toft). 17. made he (*for* he het). 25. tyme (*for* lyue). 29. dronkkehede (*for* glotenie). 43. byfanges (*for* by-longeþ). 78. teche (*for* kenne). 85. grefe (*for* ylle). 88. teche (*for* kennen). 101. take (*for* lacche). 116. spare (*for* lacke). 178. trewly (*for* leelliche). 200. rest (*for* lysse). It is, in fact, clear that the scribe has, as it were, *glossed* his words, by substituting easy ones in the place of hard ones, regardless of alliteration. Nor has he always done this correctly; for, in l. 116 for example, the word *lacke* means *to blame*, not *to spare*. He was clearly thinking of the other *lacke*, which answers to our modern *lack*, and even then his would be a poor rendering. The reader who takes the trouble

¹ As the line stands in the text, it means that ‘God gives nothing without a clause of revocation on account of *sin*’; the other reading means ‘God gives nothing without an *if* (in Latin, a *si*).’ This is so much simpler that it may probably be right. In any case, the MSS. of the same sub-class as the Ilchester MS. shew an earlier draught of the C-text, as has been already observed; and in this particular case, the readings of MSS. of any other sub-class may be corrupt.

to look up the above references will easily satisfy himself that the MS. is utterly worthless as regards its readings ; since it fails in the case of all the harder words, just where help is most wanted. On account of these alterations, it is the more difficult to tell to what sub-class it belongs ; but it probably was copied from a MS. closely agreeing with P. Thus, in ii. 4, it has *pat castel*, as P has ; and therefore varies from I and F. In l. 5, it has the interesting variation *william*, for *wille* ; where I has *son*. In l. 4, it also has *by name*, as in P only. These and similar instances tend to shew its exact origin.

XLI. MS. marked D. 4. 1, in the library of Trinity College, Dublin. On vellum, written in the fifteenth century, not very early. This MS. I have never seen, but it is of the C-type, and I am indebted to Professor Dowden, of Dublin, for a careful collation of Passus ii. with a printed copy of the Passus as it stands in F. This analysis of the text shews that it probably belongs to the same sub-class as P, and therefore differs but little from my printed text. Any small variations from the text are chiefly such as are found in S and G, particularly, perhaps, the latter. There are several glosses written above the harder words, in a later hand ; but they are of no importance, since they are as often wrong as right. Thus, over *nempnen* in ii. 21 is written *take* ; but it means *to name* ; the glossator was thinking of *nimen*. In ii. 29, the reading *cheorles* (i. e. churls) occurs ; against this is the note '*chereles, without chere.*' This shews that some one has long since read over this copy of the poem, and attempted to make out the sense of it, but with indifferent success. Taken as a whole, the MS. is not a very good one, though it belongs to a good type or sub-class.

XLII. MS. marked 18 B xvii, in the Royal Library in the British Museum. A vellum MS., containing 123 leaves, the last of which is blank. Each leaf measures about $11\frac{1}{2}$ by $8\frac{1}{2}$ inches, and each page contains about 38 lines on a page. Written not long after 1500. This is a very interesting MS., as it also contains a copy of *Pierce the Ploughman's Crede* ; and I have shewn, in the Preface to my edition of that poem, that there is no reason for putting this copy later than the printed copy of 1550, as Mr Wright

has done; neither is it, as he says, on paper, but on vellum. In fact, it contains, as I shewed further, five additional lines which were *afterwards suppressed* in the printed copy, because they were not acceptable to the readers of the day.¹ The Crede is contained on leaves 1—13; and is followed by Piers the Plowman, which ends on leaf 122. The Latin quotations are written in larger characters than the rest. It is wholly of the C-type, and the text, though late, is not a bad one. The thorn-letter (þ) does not occur, *th* being written instead; nor does the symbol ȝ occur either. I am indebted to Miss L. Toulmin Smith for a careful collation of Passus ii. with a printed copy of that Passus as it stands in MS. F. This shews that its readings hardly differ from those of MS. P, i. e. from the printed text, though the spellings of the words are of later form. In ii. 123, for example, it has *meuen*, as in the text. When it varies from P, it tends to agreement with S. On the whole, it tells us nothing new, but helps generally to confirm the text. The scribe, unlike the scribe of MS. N (Harl. 2376), seems to have understood his work; so that in ii. 18, for example, whilst discarding *bylyue* as obsolete, he substitutes *lyflode* for it, and so at any rate contrives to preserve the sense of it.

XLIII. MS. No. 9056, in the collection of the late Sir Thos. Phillipps. A thin MS. on vellum, about the same size as MS. P, a good deal spoiled and out of condition; many leaves much injured by damp. It contains 91 leaves, and is neatly bound in russia. It has several notes here and there in later writing, and in several places the old writing has been inked over, not always correctly. It is clearly wholly of the C-type, but not much can be made of it, and I have therefore set it aside. The last page is scarcely legible, and a note states (correctly) that the last 42 lines are wanting. I doubt if it was ever a very good copy.

It is perhaps worth while to notice here that the three MSS. formerly in the possession of Richard Heber all passed into the

¹ The only other MS. of the Crede is the MS. marked R. 3. 15 in the library of Trinity College, Cambridge, which furnishes an excellent text, and is the one upon which my edition of the Crede was based. Various readings are given throughout from MS. Bibl. Reg. 18. B. xvii, and are denoted by the letter B.

hands of Sir Thos. Phillipps, and are still all together. Thus the Heber MS. No. 973,¹ formerly in the possession of Sir R. Smyth, is now MS. Phillipps No. 8231, and described at p. 125 of Sir Thos. Phillipps's Catalogue; this is our MS. P, or MS. XXIX. Secondly, the Heber MS. 974, formerly in the collection of Martin, of Palgrave, appears as No. 1003 in Thorpe's Catalogue of MSS. for 1836, and was sold to Sir Thos. Phillipps Feb. 16, 1836; it is now MS. Phillipps 9056, the one just described above. Thirdly, the Heber MS. 1088 is now MS. Phillipps 8252, and is our MS. XXVIII. These MSS. are further interesting from their having been in the hands of Dr Whitaker.

XLIV. A MS. in the possession of the Marquis of Westminster. Reference was made to this in an article in "The Academy," abstracted from the Report of the Historical MSS. Commission, where it was further stated that the MS. differs considerably from the texts as yet published by the Early English Text Society. This perhaps means that it is of the C-type. The news of the existence of this MS. has come too late to be of any service to me; and if it is, as has been stated, of the fifteenth century, it is probably of later date than most of those which I have collated.²

Lastly, it may be observed that numerous extracts from a B-text copy of *Piers the Plowman* may be found at p. 149, and the following pages, of MS. James 2, in the Bodleian Library, Oxford. They are rather curious than valuable.

§ 6. COMPARISON OF THE MSS., AND THEIR SUB-CLASSES.

In order to exhibit the relation of the MSS. to each other, and by way of recapitulation of the above descriptions, I here add a sketch of the sub-classes into which they are divisible. As in the case of the B-text, the agreement between MSS. in the same sub-class is often very close.

(a) 1. Phillipps 8231 (P). Here printed.

2. Laud 656 (E). Almost a duplicate of P.

¹ See Heber's Catalogue of MSS. part xi. p. 101.

² On application to the Marquis of Westminster, I am courteously informed that his MSS. are at present inaccessible, being packed away whilst considerable alterations are being made in the house.

3. Bodley 851 (Z). Even more correct in its readings than P, but of later date, and imperfect at the beginning.
 4. Corpus Christi College, Cambridge; No. 293 (S). Imperfect, but an early copy.
 5. Camb. Univ. Lib. Dd. 3. 13 (G). Imperfect.
 6. Trin. Coll. Dublin, D. 4. 1.
 7. Bibl. Reg. 18 B. xvii., Brit. Mus. Late, but not a bad text.
 - (b) 1. Ilchester MS. (I). Imperfect.
 2. Digby 102. Imperfect.
 3. Douce 104. With pictures.
 4. Trin. Coll. Camb. R. 3. 14 (T). Last part only
 5. Harl. 6041 (H₂). Last part only.
 6. Digby 145 (?). Last part only.
 7. Bodley 814 (B). Only near the beginning.
 8. Addit. 10574. Only near the beginning.
 9. Cotton, Calig. A. xi. Only near the beginning.
 - (c) Digby 171 (K). Imperfect. A very fair text, intermediate to that of sub-class (a) and sub-class (b).
 - (d) Cotton, Vesp. B. xvi. (M). Nearly perfect; much nearer to sub-class (a) than to sub-class (b).
 - (e) Camb. Univ. Lib. Ff. 5. 35 (F). Imperfect; varies more widely from sub-classes (a) and (b) than any other MS.
- Not classed are (1) Harl. 2376 (N); (2) MS. Phillipps 9056; (3) the Marquis of Westminster's MS.

It must be observed that the MSS. of sub-class (b) represent a slightly *earlier* cast of the poem than those of sub-class (a); as has been already explained. But the texts of MSS. M and F are *later*.

§ 7. DESCRIPTION OF THE PRINTED EDITION (C-TEXT).

The only edition of *Piers the Plowman* which exhibits the C-text is Dr Whitaker's. The Title-page of the volume is as follows:—

"*Visio Willi de Petro Plouhman, Item Visiones ejusdem de Dowel, Dobet, et Dobest. Or The Vision of William concerning Piers Plouhman, and The Visions of the same concerning the Origin, Progress, and Perfection of the Christian Life. Ascribed to Robert Langland, a Secular Priest of the county of Salop; and written in, or imme-*

diately after, the year MCCCLXII. Printed from a MS. contemporary with the author, collated with two others of great antiquity, and exhibiting the original text; together with an introductory discourse, a perpetual commentary, annotations, and a glossary. By Thomas Dunham Whitaker, LL.D. F.S.A., Vicar of Whalley, and Rector of Heysham, in Lancashire. [Motto] *Vatis hic noster in seculo suo doctissimus, et acerrimus morum vindex, clericis, quos in omnibus satyris, ipso summo pontifice non intacto perstringit; clericis inquam utriusque nominis, quid propter peccata eorum, hypocrisin, avaritiam, luxum, terrenorum cupidinem, defectum charitatis, beneficiorum et redituum abusum, desidiam et turpem gregum neglectum in postero tempore eventurum erat, prædixit.* HICKES.¹—London: printed for John Murray, Albemarle Street. MDCCXIII.”²

The Dedication runs thus:—“To Richard Heber, Esq. of Hodnet, in the County of Salop, this edition of the first English Satirist, his old and spirited countryman, is inscribed,” &c., &c. The Contents of the book are:—Introductory Discourse, pp. i—xlviii; Errata, p. xlix; additional Note, p. li; Text, in black letter, with Paraphrase below it, pp. 1—412 (pp. 265 and 266 being unrepresented, owing to a mistake in the pagination; since sheet Ll ends with p. 264, and sheet Mm begins with p. 267); Notes, pp. 1—18; Glossary, pp. 21—31. Printer’s name, John Harding, St John’s Square, London.

It will be necessary to say a few words more upon the various parts of the book.³

¹ Hickesii Thesaurus, i. 107.

² Together with the particular copy of the work in my possession there came into my hands several additional particulars, including prospectus, printer’s bills, &c. It thus appears that it was published by subscription, the number of subscribers (whose names are given) being two hundred, at five guineas apiece; increased to seven guineas for such copies as came into public sale. It was got up in so expensive a manner that the mere cost of printing, exclusive of woodcuts and binding, was £401 6s. 7d. It is of quarto size, and printed on very stout paper.

³ The following mendacious and spiteful note upon Whitaker’s edition appears (as a quotation) in Lowndes, and has been reprinted in booksellers’ catalogues over and over again, and will probably often be reprinted in the future whenever a copy of Crowley’s edition occurs for sale. “The value of the old editions is not at all lessened by the reprint of Dr. Whittaker (*sic*), as he carefully suppressed all the passages relating to the indecent lives and practices of the Romish clergy.” The fact is that Dr Whitaker suppressed nothing but a very few coarse lines which have no special reference to the ‘Romish clergy.’ Neither is the implied charge against

Title-page. This contains several errors. There is little reason for calling the author Robert, since he so often calls himself William. Again, the text written in or soon after A.D. 1362 was the A-text; the C-text must be some thirty years later. Consequently, Whitaker's edition does not exhibit "the original text," but the text as it stood after two recensions. Neither is Whitaker's text really "collated" with two other MSS.; the readings cited in the Notes from his 'MS. B' are not more than fifty, and those from 'MS. C' not more than twenty.

Introductory Discourse. The general contents of this may be thus summarised. State of England in the reign of Edward III., pp. i, ii; Chaucer and Langland, pp. iii—v; Dialect of Langland is 'Mercno-Saxon', pp. vi, vii; Alliterative poetry, pp. viii—x; Runic prosody, pp. xi, xii; Cædmon's metre, pp. xiii, xiv; Runic rhyme, p. xv; Ormulum and 'Moral Ode', p. xvi; 'Pistill of Susan', p. xvii; Langland not a Wickliffite, p. xviii; Date of Piers the Plowman, p. xix; Brief abstract of the Poem, pp. xx—xxx; MSS. of the Poem, pp. xxxi—xxxiii; Parallel Extracts from MS. A [Phillipps 8231],¹ MS. B [Phillipps 8252],² MS. C [Oriell MS.],³ and Crowley's print of 1550, the passage chosen being the description of Wrath [C. vii. 103—128], pp. xxxiv, xxxv; Langland's powers as a satirist, pp. xxxvi—xxxix; Extreme obscurity of Langland's diction, p. xl; Concluding Remarks, p. xli; Testimonies of Authors concerning Langland, pp. xlii—xlvi; Errata, p. xlix; Note on the Ormulum and Jack Upland, p. li.

Of this discourse, there is not much that is still of value; the remarks on the Dialect have been superseded by the labours of Dr Morris and others; those on Alliterative Poetry by Dr Guest's History of English Rhythms, Mr Sweet's Sketch of the History of Anglo-Saxon Poetry, prefixed to Hazlitt's edition of Warton's English

Langland a fair one; he certainly would have had no sympathy with prurient hunters up of filth.

¹ The correct version of this extract will be found in the text of this volume; Pass. vii. 103—128.

² The extract shews that this MS. is a mere jumble of texts, and almost without any value; it is not worth reprinting.

³ Correctly printed in Pref. II., p. xviii; which see.

Poetry, my own Essay prefixed to vol. iii. of the edition of the Percy Folio MS. by Hales and Furnivall, &c.; whilst a great deal more than was known to Whitaker can be learnt from the since-published editions of the *Ormulum*, the *Moral Ode*, the *Pistill of Susan*, and the like. The *date* of the Poem he put down as 1362, though that is really the date of the A-text only; and, in considering his own text as of earlier date than Crowley's, he is now easily seen to have been wrong. His remarks on the extreme obscurity of Langland's diction are of a piece with his own evident difficulty in understanding it, and were caused, in a great measure, by his misreadings of the MS. The passages that are *really* obscure are singularly few. His concluding remarks contain the following interesting passage:—

“He [the editor] wishes to conciliate no favour to the work, by lamenting that it was undertaken in the languor of bad health, or that it was only prosecuted in the intervals of leisure which an active and occupied life allowed: both the facts, indeed, are true; but these, if likely to have injured the work in any material degree, were reasons why it ought not to have been begun; if otherwise, they will not contribute to lessen its actual defects. In short, he is ready to confess that, for the space of two years, it has received from him attention sufficient to have rescued it from very gross imperfections, and consequently, that its faults of this degree, whether more or fewer in number, are to be ascribed to a cause more humiliating than the indolence or carelessness of the editor.”

The marks of an evident anxiety to represent the MS. with extreme exactness are indeed most apparent on every page; how then are we to account for the frequent amazing variations from the true text of the old scribe? Only, I believe, by the old observation that the eye only sees that which it has been *trained* to see. It is clear that, as a scholar, he frequently misunderstood his author; and that, as a transcriber, he often failed in deciphering the not very difficult characters in which the MS. is written. The two causes together are quite sufficient to account for such mistakes as, despite all his care, are certainly to be found in his edition.

The most interesting and by far the best remarks in Whitaker's

Introduction are those which relate to Langland himself and to the general character of his poem. Whether we entirely agree with him or not, these passages are certainly worthy of perusal, and I therefore reprint them here without further apology.

“During the reign of Edward the Third, one of the most splendid, but not the most refined in our annals, yet equally removed from both these extremes, arose in this country two poets, the writings of one of whom contributed to enlarge the minds, and of the other to improve the moral feelings of their contemporaries in a degree unfelt since the æras of the great Roman satirists. The first of these, a man of the world and a courtier, at once informed and delighted the higher orders by his original and lively portraits of human nature in every rank, and almost under every modification, while he prevented or perverted the proper effect of satire by the most licentious and obscene exhibitions. The latter, an obscure country priest, much addicted to solitary contemplation, but at the same time a keen and severe observer of human nature; well read in the scriptures and schoolmen, and intimately acquainted with the old language and poetry of his country, in an uncouth dialect and rugged metre, by his sarcastic and ironical vein of wit, his knowledge of low life, his solemnity on some occasions, his gaiety on others, his striking personifications, dark allusions, and rapid transitions, has contrived¹ to support and animate an allegory (the most insipid for the most part and tedious of all vehicles of instruction) through a bulky volume. By what inducement he was led to prefer this vehicle, it is not difficult to conjecture. From his subordinate station in the church, this free reprover of the higher ranks was exposed to all the severities of ecclesiastical discipline: and from the aristocratical temper of the times he was liable to be crushed by the civil power. Everything, therefore, of a personal nature was in common prudence to be avoided. The great were not then accustomed, as a licentious press has since disciplined them, to endure the freedoms of reprehension:—authority was, even when abused, sacred; and rank, when united with vice, was enabled to keep its partner in countenance. Above all, the great ecclesiastics were as vindictive as they

¹ Printed ‘continued’; but surely a misprint.

were corrupt: and hence the satirist was compelled to shelter himself under the distant generalities of personification.

"But, unfortunately, by this means, whatever he gained in personal security, he lost in the point and distinctness of his satire. Mere personifications of virtues and vices, however skilfully and powerfully touched, are capable of few strokes: the quality is simple, but different individuals, who partake of it in a degree however pre-eminent, combine and modify it in such an infinite variety of ways, with other subordinate traits and features of character, that while the abstract property is one and the same, in its actual existence, as part of the moral nature of man, it is capable in skilful hands of infinite diversities of representation. It is indeed far from being necessary that the characters be real, but, for the purposes of satirical painting, they must be *persons*.

"From this uniformity of appearance in his abstract qualities the author has been betrayed, by the necessity of combination in some way or other, into the fault of mixing his personifications with each other; as, *ex. gr.* avarice and fraud, qualities which, though nearly akin, have no necessary co-existence;¹ and, for the same reason, wherever he deviates into personality, as in the coarse but striking scene of 'Glutton's' Debauch, where the characters, though imaginary, are persons, not personifications, he paints with all the truth and distinctness of a Dutch master.

"Wherever born or bred, and by whatever name distinguished, the author of these Visions was an observer and a reflector of no common powers. I can conceive him (like his own visionary William²) to have been sometimes occupied in contemplative wanderings on the Malvern Hills, and dozing away a summer's noon among the bushes, while his waking thoughts were distorted into all

¹ I believe this expresses a misapprehension. I suppose that the idea of connecting avarice and fraud is none of Langland's, but that he was merely following the conventional description of Avarice considered as one of the seven deadly sins. We find the same thing in Chaucer's *Persones Tale*:—"of avarice cometh eek lesynges, *theftes*, and fals witnesses and *fals othes* The synne of thefte is in borwyng of thin neighebores catelle in entent never to pay, and in semblable thynges."

² His 'William' is not 'visionary' at all; it is simply and solely *his own name*.

the misshapen forms created by a dreaming fancy. Sometimes I can descry him taking his staff, and roaming far and wide in search of manners and characters; mingling with men of every accessible rank, and storing his memory with hints for future use. I next pursue him to his study, sedate and thoughtful, yet wildly inventive, digesting the first rude drafts of his Visions, and in successive transcriptions, as judgment matured, or invention declined, or as his observations were more extended, expanding or contracting, improving and sometimes perhaps debasing his original text.¹ The time of our author's death, and the place of his interment, are equally unknown, with almost every circumstance relating to him. His contemporaries, Chaucer and Gower, repose beneath magnificent tombs, but Langland (if such were really his name) has no other monument than that which, having framed for himself, he left to posterity to appropriate.

“The Reformers of the sixteenth century claimed as their own the Author of these Visions; but surely on no good grounds. That he believed and taught almost all the fundamental doctrines of Christianity has no tendency to prove him a Wickliffite or Lollard. The best and soundest members of the church of Rome have done the same. It is not defects but redundancies which we impute to them. Of the predestinarian principles afterwards professed by Wickliff, Langland seems to think with disapprobation; and when his visionary hero speaks of himself as belonging to the Lolleres, he evidently means, not the religious party distinguished by a similar name, but, in the usual strain of his irony, a company of idle wanderers.² Yet in the midst of darkness and spiritual slavery, his acute and penetrating understanding enabled him to discover the multiplied superstitions of the public service, the licentious abuse of

¹ In spite of the fact that Dr Whitaker did not perceive *which* was the oldest text, he yet here expresses the true state of the case with great clearness. Even the charge of ‘debasing’ the text may be sustained; there certainly seem to be several passages in which the C-text, by being altered, has been weakened. But other passages have been much improved.

² But it may also be said, that he tries to shew that the term *loller* might be applied with more fitness to others than the followers of Wyclif. Though not quite a Wycliffite, his sympathies were mostly with that party.

pilgrimages, the immoral tendencies of indulgences, the bad effects upon the living of expiatory services for the dead, the inordinate wealth of the papacy, and the usurpations of the mendicant orders, both on the rights of the diocesans and of the parochial clergy. These abuses Langland, with many other good men who could endure to remain in the communion of the church of Rome, saw and deplored; but though he finally conducted his pilgrim out of the particular communion of Rome into the universal church, he permitted him to carry along with him too many remnants of his old faith, such as satisfaction for sin to be made by the sinner, together with the merit of works, and especially of voluntary poverty; but, above all, the worship of the cross; incumbrances with which the Lollards of his own, or the Protestants of a later age, would not willingly have received him as a proselyte.

“Neither was he an enemy to monastic institutions themselves: on the contrary, he appears to have sighed for the quiet and contemplative life of the cloister, could it have been restored to its primitive purity and order.

“On the nature and origin of civil society, as on most other subjects, he thought for himself; and, at a period when mankind had scarcely begun to speculate on such subjects at all, he boldly traced the source of kingly power to the will of the people, and considered government as instituted for the benefit of the governed. Indeed a strong democratic tendency may be discovered in many passages of his work.

“Crowley’s editions of the *Visions* are printed from a MS. of late date¹ and little authority, in which the division of the *passus* is extremely confused, and the whole distribution of the work perplexed.² Still, it must be confessed, that, with the advantage of better MSS.,³ the investigation of the general plan of these *Visions*

¹ “He describes it as bearing date A.D. 1409. Advert. to ed. 1550.”—*Whitaker’s note*. But this calmly begs the whole question. Crowley’s words (to be found in Pref. II. p. xxxii) distinctly imply that the date A.D. 1409 appeared in an ‘auncient copye’ which ‘it chaunced him to se’ rather than in the one which he chose to print from. Besides, the B-text was not written till A.D. 1377.

² All pure assertion and assumption. I find nothing of the kind.

³ For ‘better’ read ‘later’, rather; since the C-text is later than the B-text. Besides, Whitaker’s ‘MS. B’ (Phillipps 8252) is really late, confused, and bad.

is not without its difficulties. The work is altogether the most obscure in the English language, both with respect to phraseology,¹ to the immediate connection of the author's ideas, and to the leading divisions of the subject. . . .

"All these varieties [of text], however, bear marks, not of the same spirit and genius only, but of the same peculiar and original manner, so that it is scarcely to be conceived that they are interpolations of successive transcribers. Whatever be the cause, however, it may confidently be affirmed, that the text of no ancient work whatever contains so many various readings, or differs so widely from itself.

"To account for this phenomenon, however, in the penury, or rather in the absence of original information relating to the author, we are at liberty to suppose that the first edition of his work appeared when he was a young man, and that he lived and continued in the habit of transcribing to extreme old age. But a man of *his* genius would not submit to the drudgery of mere transcription; his invention and judgment would always be at work; new abuses, and therefore new objects of satire, would emerge from time to time: and as a new language began to be spoken, he might, though unwillingly, be induced to adopt its modernisms, in order to make his work intelligible to a second or third generation of readers.² In this last respect, however, it is not improbable that his transcribers might use some freedoms; for while we deny them invention to add, we may at least allow them skill to translate.³

"The writer of these Visions had the first, though perhaps not the most splendid, qualification of a moral poet, an acute moral sense, with a vehement indignation against the abuses of public and the vices of private life; to this was added a keen sarcastic humour, and a faculty of depicting the manners of low life with an exactness and felicity, which have never been surpassed, but by the great

¹ Not often in *phraseology*; Langland is plain-spoken enough. The meanings of nearly all the harder words which he uses have been well ascertained.

² This is rather a bold suggestion, but it deserves consideration. There certainly seem to be indications of avoidance of unusual forms in the latest version. Thus, the word *trieulich*, which occurs in B. prol. 14, is avoided by a change in the text; and *jerne* in B. vi. 299 becomes *deynteusliche* in C. ix. 324.

³ See, for example, the description of MS. Harl. 2376 above.

satirist of the present day.¹ His conscience appears to have held the torch to his understanding, rather than the reverse. He judges of actions by feelings, more than by induction. His casuistry is sometimes miserably perplexed, and his illustrations very unhappy. The first of these defects is to be ascribed to his acquaintance with the schoolmen, the second to his ignorance of classical antiquity; in his views of morality an understanding naturally perspicuous was clouded by the one, while in his powers of adorning a subject, a taste perhaps naturally coarse was left wholly unpolished by the other. He often sinks into imbecility,² and not unfrequently spins out his thread of allegory into mere tenuity. But, on other occasions, when aroused by the subject, he has a wildness of imagination, which might have deserved to be illustrated by the pencil of Fuseli, and a sublimity (more especially when inspired by the great mysteries of revelation) which has not been surpassed by Cowper.

“He had a smattering of French, but no Italian. I have endeavoured in vain to discover in these Visions any imitations of Dante, whose *Inferno* and *Purgatorio*, in some respects, resemble them. But the boldness of those works, which the familiarity of the Italians with the vices of their Popes rendered tolerable, and even popular, beyond the Alps, would have appalled the courage of a tramontane satirist, and shocked the feelings of his readers, in the fourteenth century.

“To the author of these Visions has been ascribed by some Protestant writers an higher inspiration than that of the muse, and his famous prediction of the fall of the religious houses has invested him with the more sacred character of a prophet.³ . . . There is just enough in this celebrated prediction, compared with its supposed fulfilment, to excite a momentary surprise.

“The erudition of Langland, if such were really the author's name, besides his Saxon literature, consisted in a very familiar know-

¹ A footnote explains that the reference is to “Dr Crabb.”

² Not “often.” There is a long passage in C. iv. 336—409, which we should now call very stupid; it may once have been highly thought of.

³ B. x. 317—327; cf. Pref. II. p. xxxiv.

ledge of the Vulgate, and the schoolmen: the first of which he appears to quote from memory, as he frequently deviates from the letter of that version. . . . His citations from the schoolmen I am unable to trace."

Text and Paraphrase. The text is printed in black letter, without punctuation, the marks of contraction not being expanded, but represented as they occur in the MS. It follows his 'MS. A' (the very one here reprinted, and called P) throughout, without any editorial emendations. The numerous mistakes (many of them of slight moment) are due to his having understood the text but imperfectly, and to his not always understanding the scribe's characters. Despite his evidences of care, there are some strange instances of inaccuracy. For example, some of the proper names and all the Latin quotations are written in *red* characters in the MS. In Whitaker's text, most of the proper names and all the Latin quotations are printed in *red* letters. I confess I was much surprised to find that, in the case of the proper names, the words *printed* in red letters are no sort of guide to the words *written* in red letters; indeed, the deviations of the print from the MS. are so frequent in this respect that the task of rectification became irksome; and as no good result came of it (for the scribe is very capricious, and even writes words in red which are not names at all), I had no choice but to abandon all notice of this peculiarity. In a similar way, Dr Whitaker's use of capital letters is no guide to the scribe's use of them. He also frequently puts *v* for the *u* of the MS., and *vice versâ*. He also frequently (by a misreading) turns *itt* into *ut*, *n* into *u*, *u* into *n*, *ni* or *ui* into *m*, or *m* into *ni*. All this may be sufficiently illustrated by the line ending—"per comsep a myghte" (C. ii. 162); the signification being—"there commenceth a might." This, in Whitaker's edition, appears in the form—"per coniseþ Almyghte;" where the *m* has become *ni*, the small *a* a capital *A*, an *l* has been inserted, and the new formation *Almyghte* printed in red letters, whereas the MS. reading *a myghte* is in black letters. The more important errors in Whitaker's text are pointed out in the Critical Notes below, pp. 449—466; the rest can be ascertained by collating his text with the text here printed.

The *Paraphrase* occupies the lowest quarter of each page. It is a very full one, and might easily, by a little more expansion, have been turned into a verbal translation. As it is, however, the side-notes to the present edition give very nearly as much help, and it is, from the nature of the case, rather poor reading as compared with the original. Some of the explanations in it are truly amazing, as is pointed out in my Critical Notes. I shall only quote here, as an illustration, the explanation of the phrase “*per coniseþ Almyghte*,” which has just been cited. The paraphrase here actually recognises the words *a myghte* of the MS., and says accordingly—“there teacheth a mighty one.” There is an entry in the *Glossary* to the effect that *conise* means “to teach, i.e. to cause to con or know.”

The *Notes* occupy only 18 pages. The most valuable ones are those which give readings from his ‘MS. B’ (Phillipps 8252) and ‘MS. C’ (Oriental MS.). Many remarks in them are wrong, as is shewn in the Critical Notes in this volume. The explanatory hints in them are very few.

The *Glossary* is by far the worst part of the book. It extends to little more than 10 pages, double columns, of not very close type, and explains about 350 words; but the mistakes in spelling and interpretation are very numerous. Moreover, there are no references given. The entry “*Sælsam*, probably a bag or purse,” for example, completely baffles me; I can find no such word in Whitaker’s text, nor, indeed, elsewhere.

I cannot, however, close my notice of this edition without observing that it is, in its way, a great work. The attempt to represent the MS. so exactly was well meant, and sometimes, even in the more obscure passages, is closely carried out; whilst the *Paraphrase* well brings out the *general* sense of the poem. However deficient Whitaker’s edition may seem to others, I can truly say that *to me* it has been invaluable; and but for the help it has afforded me, the difficulty of my task would have been at least doubled. From the first moment of undertaking the comparison of the three texts, I have always had it at hand to refer to, and have referred to it hundreds of times; and many are the difficulties which a mere reference to it has solved. If there are numerous inaccuracies, the desire to

be accurate is none the less clear ; and it is frequently in the hardest passages that the print is most correct. I cannot conclude this paragraph without acknowledging, in the fullest and most thankful manner, my very great obligations to Dr Whitaker's edition. To have succeeded in putting forth a book in so expensive a form and involving so many difficulties in the printing, at a time when the general interest in philology was so slight, must have required a high degree of energy and perseverance ; two qualities for which Dr Whitaker was certainly remarkable.

§ 8. BRIEF NOTICE OF DR WHITAKER.

A biographical memoir of Dr Whitaker has lately been written by Mr J. Gough Nichols, who has kindly made me a present of a copy of the same. The short notice of him here given is compiled from that work, to which I refer the reader for further information.¹

Thomas Dunham Whitaker was born in the parsonage-house of Rainham, Norfolk, June 8, 1759. His father, the Rev. William Whitaker, was at that time curate of Rainham, but removed in 1760 to an estate at Holme, near Burnley, in Lancashire. He commenced residence at St John's College, Cambridge, in Nov., 1775, took the degree of LL.B. in 1781, and commenced studying civil law. But in 1782, on the death of his father, he succeeded to the paternal estate, and turned his attention to divinity. He was ordained deacon in 1785, priest in 1786, and in 1797 was licensed to the perpetual curacy of Holme on his own nomination. In 1799, he qualified as a magistrate for the county of Lancaster, and in 1801 as a magistrate for the West Riding of Yorkshire. In 1809 he was presented to the Vicarage of Whalley, and in 1818 to the Vicarage of Blackburn ; both of which appointments he held till his death, which took place on the 18th Dec., 1821, in the 63rd year of his age.

His writings are very numerous, and some of his works are on a large scale. He was the author of many published sermons, a list of

¹ Biographical Memoirs of Thomas Dunham Whitaker, by J. Gough Nichols, prefixed to a new edition of Whitaker's History of Whalley. See also an excellent notice of Whitaker in the English Cyclopædia.

which is given by Mr Nichols (p. iii, note 2); also of numerous articles in the *Quarterly Review*, from 1809 to 1819; see Mr Nichols' list (p. xxix). One work of his is in Latin, in the style of Tacitus, who was his favourite author; it is entitled "*De Motu per Britanniam Civico*," and treats of the famous rebellion of 1745; it was published in 1809. Amongst the works edited by him are "*The Life and Original Correspondence of Sir Geo. Radcliffe, Knt, LL.D., the friend of the Earl of Strafford*," 4to. 1810; the *Sermons of Dr Edwin Sandys, formerly Archbishop of York, with a life of the author*, 8vo. 1812; *Piers the Plowman (C-text)*, 4to. 1813; and *Pierce the Ploughmans Crede* (a mere reprint of Wolfe's edition of 1550), 4to. 1814. But his fame must rest rather on his antiquarian works, collections, and editions, such as '*A History of the original parish of Whalley and the honour of Clitheroe, in the counties of Lancaster and York*,' 4to. 1801, reprinted in 1806, and again in 1818; '*History of the Deanery of Craven*,' royal 4to. 1805, reprinted in 1812; a new edition of Thoresby's '*Ducatus Leodiniensis, or the Topography of Leeds*,' fol. 1816; '*Loidis and Elmete*'; or, an attempt to illustrate the Districts described in these words by Bede,' viz. Airedale, Wharfedale, and the vale of Calder, in Yorkshire, 4to. 1816; *Appendix to the same*, 1821; also a part of the *History of Yorkshire, comprehending Richmondshire and Lunedale*, published after his death, 2 vols. fol. 1823. It is worthy of remark that the last of these, and some others, contain plates from landscapes by no less an artist than Turner.

It is clear that Dr Whitaker attempted far too much; his projected designs were always on a grand scale, and the performance fell short of what he intended. The most defective of his topographical works is the *History of Richmondshire*, but this may fairly be attributed to its having fallen, after his death, into incompetent hands.

He was remarkable for great warmth and enthusiasm, and for restless energy and activity in all his duties, whether clerical, magisterial, or editorial. He formed and carried out many plans for the benefit of the clergy in his district,¹ and it is recorded that "his

¹ *Gent. Maga.* 1820, vol. xc. pt. ii. p. 402.

extempore eloquence in the pulpit was rapid, energetic, and impressive." A speech of his, delivered at Blackburn, Monday, Feb. 10, 1817, is printed in the *Gentleman's Magazine*, vol. lxxxvii., pt. i. p. 213; and strongly expresses his conservative opinions. He received a testimonial for his services as a magistrate in April, 1821, not long before his death. Of his behaviour in troublous times Mr Nichols records the following anecdote.

"Scarcely a year before his death there was a turn-out of the colliers of Altham, Padiham, and Hapton, who assembled in large numbers at Padiham, threatening to march riotously into Burnley. Many parties recommended that they should not be allowed to approach the town, but that they should be dispersed by the military. Dr Whitaker, although an invalid, drove into Burnley on the day when the colliers were expected, and declared that he would not order the military out, until he had tried, in person, to persuade the mob to return.¹ Accordingly he met them near Gannow, a mile out of the town, in a post-chaise; he was there helped into the driver's seat, from whence he harangued them so successfully that they agreed to go home quietly; and such was the respect paid to him when he had finished, that the strong rough men lifted him down, like a child, and told him, 'Doctor, put your foot here; we will take care that you shall not be hurt.'"

It was this effort that helped to bring on the attack of paralysis from which he never recovered.

His chief amusement was in superintending plantations. His son records that "he came into the possession of a tree-denuded estate, where there were not above six or seven acres of wood upon it, and he left it covered with thriving plantations of all sizes, and trees of various growth. It was the finest larch in the Old Clough, planted by himself, that was felled to form his coffin, which was hewn out from its bulk like a canoe, according to his own directions given to his bailiff William Edmundson." Mr Edmundson thus narrates the story. "On the 21st Aug. 1821, the doctor sent for me from the hay-field, to go with him into the wood—and when

¹ This reminds one of Algernon Mordaunt in Lord Lytton's novel of 'Disowned.'

we got there, he walked to the side of a larch-tree, and said, 'William, I planted this tree with my own hands, and intend to have my coffin made of it; have you your two-foot in your pocket?' I said I had. 'Then,' says he, 'measure it.' Afterwards he turned his back to the said tree, closed his arms up, and said, 'Will it hold my body when it is hollowed out of the solid?' I replied, 'It will be little enough;' and he immediately observed—'The tree is growing bigger, and I am growing less.'"

I hope this brief account of a good and worthy man will not be deemed out of place here. It seemed to me unbecoming to re-edit the latest text of *Piers the Plowman*, partly by help of the materials which he has supplied, without some tribute to his evident enthusiasm for his author,¹ or without an expression of sincere respect for his memory.

§ 9. CHARACTER OF THE C-TEXT.

The following remarks (like those in Pref. II. p. xxxix) apply only to the *form* of the poem, not to its *subject-matter*. The A-text shewed the poem as originally sketched, the last or twelfth Passus being extant in one MS. only. The B-text is frequently found perfect in the MSS., and is distinguished by the closeness with which all the best MSS. agree. The C-text MSS. are frequently imperfect, some at the beginning, some at the end, and some in the middle. It is just possible that, in the case of the MSS. from which leaves have been torn out, there may have been some passage which particularly attracted notice; but this is not clear. Passus xiv.—xviii. seem to have suffered most in this way. The agreement between the MSS. of the C-text is not so close, apparently, as in the case of the B-text; but this is chiefly owing to the numerous variations in MS. F., and to the distinction between the MSS. of sub-class *a* and those of sub-class *b*. If we consider those of sub-class *a* only, we thus have several MSS. agreeing even in very minute par-

¹ A letter proposing a new edition of *Piers the Plowman* appeared in the *Gentleman's Magazine*, for November, 1787, dated Nov. 12, and signed T. H. W. I have no doubt, from its contents, that it is Whitaker's, in spite of the misprint in the second initial.

ticulars ; and it is, on the whole, true for this text also, that “conjectural emendations” are, as a rule, entirely out of the question, and that the readings I have given are, as a matter of fact, supported by much stronger evidence than I have actually adduced. Those who venture to question a reading will of course, in the first instance, examine the readings of the MSS. which I have not cited, especially of the better ones, and will commonly find, as I believe, that the few corrections introduced in the text are more strongly supported than they had supposed. Besides which, reference must be made to the two former texts wherever they furnish parallel passages. It may sometimes happen that a line stands the same in all three texts, and that there is no footnote recording any variation in it. The reader should endeavour to realise what this means. On the face of it, it means that the line occurs in the same form in some twenty MSS. ; but it really means much more. For, in such cases, the uncited MSS. commonly agree with the rest, and thus the said line rests on the authority of *nearly forty* rather than of twenty MSS. only. In other words, there can be no doubt in such cases of the true reading, however obscure it may seem. Wherever difficult words occur, I have frequently recorded the spellings of several MSS., even though they do *not* materially differ, in order to make it clear to the reader that the reading given is no misprint ; and I have also often consulted other MSS. which I have not cited. Thus, if any one should suppose the word *eythes* in C. xxii. 273 is a mistake for something else, he is requested to observe that it is spelt *eythes*, *eipes*, *aithes*, or *aypes* (all much the same) in six MSS. at least ; and my impression is that it is also so spelt in at least six MSS. more. The best way in such cases is to accept the reading as genuine ; and instead of saying, with Whitaker, that “this word nowhere occurs, and the alliteration requires ¹ that we read *teyth*s, meaning, perhaps, teeth ; i. e. of harrows,” I should prefer to suggest that it seems to throw some light on the mysterious word “*Aither*, a ploughing,”

¹ The alliteration requires, on the contrary, that the word should begin with a vowel, or a diphthong ; the ‘chief-letter’ is the *o* in *olde*. Cf. O.Fries. *eide*, a kind of harrow or hoe ; O.H.G. *egida*, a harrow, G. *egge*, a harrow. See *eide* in Richtofen.

which is recorded in the Whitby and Cleveland Glossaries. The text of MS. P is peculiarly good; and it is most satisfactory to be able to point to many pages in which none but the most trifling emendations occur; as the reader may easily discover for himself. I believe that a sufficient number of MSS. (and those the best that can be had) have been consulted to render the text perfectly firm and certain. There are scarcely half-a-dozen passages in which any doubt can be said to occur.

The C-text is inferior to the B-text in general vigour and compactness. On the other hand, it is the fullest of the three texts, and the most carefully finished. It contains the author's last corrections after a most careful revision, and is evidently intended as a final form, requiring no further touches. This is best seen in the last two Passus. *At first sight*, they stand almost alike in the two latest texts; but closer inspection shews that the author has gone over them word by word, making a few slight but clear corrections here and there, down to the very end. Only the eighth line from the end (B. xx. 377; C. xxiii. 379) has been almost entirely recast, in order to improve the alliteration. It is most satisfactory to perceive that he completed his revision with a high degree of care and attention, that he survived the work, and that in all probability was satisfied with it, as there is no trace whatever of any later revision. If we prefer the B-text as a whole, we must never forget that the C-text is the best possible commentary upon it, and is often, indeed, much more, as it contains some additional passages which it would be a pity to have lost, and to which I shall more particularly direct attention presently.

§ 10. ALLUSIONS IN THE C-TEXT.

It is remarkable that some of the B-text passages, which contain allusions to places and events, have been expunged in the revision; but we gain, on the other hand, a most interesting autobiographical passage.

Allusions to himself. Of the allusions to himself in the B-text, he retains the allusion to his name "Wille;" see VII. 2. He speaks of his wife Kitte and daughter Calote, XXI. 473. He shews

himself acquainted with the mode of drawing up a legal document. XIV. 117—120. But he omits, probably by intention, the allusion to his nickname of “Long Wille;”¹ the mention of his age; his outward bearing; his knowledge of French.

On the other hand, he now tells us that he lived in London many long years, XVII. 286; viz. in a cot on Cornhill, VI. 1. He has a new allusion to his wife Kitte, VI. 2. Lady Holychurch no longer addresses him merely as her *son* (B. i. 5), but calls him by his name “Wille,” II. 5; concerning which substitution it should be noted that MSS. I and B retain the “sone,” in accordance with the remark already made, that MSS. of sub-class *b* are earlier *in form* than those of sub-class *a*. And in more places than one he shews a knowledge of the law, particularly in his explanation of a particular point of “Westminster law,” XI. 239. But most of all are we indebted to the long passage at the beginning of Passus VI, wherein he tells us that, when he was young, his father and friends put him to school, VI. 36; and that since his friends died, he has found no life so pleasant as one in the “long clothes” of an ecclesiastic, VI. 41; he lives not only *in* London, but *upon* London, VI. 44; his tools of labour being his *Paternoster* and *Primer*, his *Placebo* and his *Dirige*, his *Psalter* and his *Seven Psalms*, VI. 47. Thus he sings for the souls of them that help him, living now with one, now with another, welcomed wherever he comes, so that he begs, as it were, without the bag and bottle such as beggars generally carried, having no receptacle for food but his stomach only, VI. 52. He adds, that clerks should not be made to do the work of knaves, and that no clerk ought to receive tonsure unless he be the son of a franklin or free man, VI. 54—64. He regrets the time he has misspent, VI. 93. The whole passage (VI. 1—108) deserves to be read carefully.

Allusions to places. Of the places enumerated as referred to in the B-text, he retains his allusions to Malvern hills, I. 6, 163; X. 295; to Walsingham, I. 52; Winchester fair, VII. 211; the pass of Alton, XVII. 139; Hertfordshire, VII. 413; St Thomas’s shrine, VIII. 201; Dunmow, XI. 276; Chester, VIII. 11; London, I. 83,

¹ For references to the B-text, see Pref. II. p. xl.

89; III. 148, 169; VII. 96; Cock Lane, Smithfield, VII. 366; Tyburn, XV. 130; Southwark, VII. 83; Westminster, III. 174; IV. 13; XXIII. 284; Westminster Hall, XXIII. 133; Court of Arches, III. 61; XXIII. 136; the river Thames, XV. 104; Avignon, XXII. 424; Lucca, IX. 109; besides allusions to Rome, Galicia, Bruges, Prussia, Babylon, Alexandria, &c.; to which complete references will be supplied hereafter.

But it is noticeable that he has omitted several of the more particular allusions, as if he had some design of rendering his words of less particular application. He no longer mentions Norfolk, or Bromholm (at least not in the same connection), Stratford, Cheapside, Garlickhithe, Shoreditch, Normandy, Calais, Roquemadour. Instead of Buckinghamshire, he has Banbury, III. 111; and instead of Abingdon, the vague term "Engelonde," thus considerably spoiling his famous prophecy, VI. 177.

But he has a new allusion to Tyburn, VII. 368; to Winchester fair, XIV. 52; to St Giles's down, the hill on the east side of the city whereon the said fair was held, V. 51; and to the Court of Arches, III. 186; also a particular allusion to London, XVII. 286. He also mentions Corfe Castle, IV. 140.

Allusions to circumstances. The allusion which, in the A-text at least, was meant for Edward II., is now made almost equally applicable to Edward III.; see IV. 163. References are retained to the use of nobles, IV. 47; the battle of Crécy, XV. 50; the pestilences, VI. 115; the storm of wind, VI. 117; and to Wycliffe's translation of the Bible, XI. 88.

But the particular reference to the treaty of Brétigny is done away with; and so likewise is the reference to John Chichester as mayor of London. The allusion to the fourth pestilence is accordingly made more vague, by turning the words "*pe pestilence*" (B. xiii. 248) into "*pestilences*," XVI. 218. The retention of the phrase '*yf ich regne eny whyle*' (B. iv. 177; C. v. 171) deserves notice.

On the other hand, there appears what I believe to be an allusion to the quarrel between the king and the Londoners, V. 194; an allusion to certain forms of injustice, V. 189; a clear and bold

rebuke of the king's folly, IV. 203—213; hints on the iniquity of selling a kingdom or duchy, IV. 245;¹ an attack on false miracles,² I. 100; and on the worship of images, I. 119.

It deserves to be added here, that the C-text MSS. speak sometimes of *five* orders of mendicant friars, instead of the usual four orders of the previous texts. The fifth order is, I suppose, that of the *Crutched* Friars; but why they should have been counted in at this period rather than at any other is a problem which still remains unsolved. For references, observe "alle fyue ordres," X. 343; "pe fyue mendynauns," XVI. 81. Yet we also find "alle pe foure ordres" in a passage very near the beginning of the poem; I. 56.

§ 11. DIALECT OF THE C-TEXT.

The various MSS. of the C-text fully bear out the opinions I have already expressed (Pref. II. p. xli) about the dialect of the poem. They enable us to ascertain, beyond all reasonable doubt, that the dialect of the Vernon MS., chosen as the basis of the A-text because it was on the whole the best MS. of its class, is not the dialect of the author, but has been Southernized by the scribe. Thus the Vernon MS. is, compared with all the rest, far too uniform and regular in its grammatical forms, and represents an "improved" text, in a dialect superior to that which the poet himself would have used. I can now repeat, with increased confidence, that he certainly used a mixed dialect, one peculiarity of it being that the endings *-en* and *-eth* both occur in the plural indicative, the former being the more common. The following are instances of plurals in *-en* which occur, not only in MSS. L and W of the B-type, but in MS. P of the C-type also. Plurals in *-en* in Passus i; *holden*, 30, *marchen*, 61, *parten*, 79, *lyen*, 89, *seruen*, 90, *tellen*, 90, *sitten*, 94, *demen*, 94. Plurals in *-eth*, at the end of a line, *destroyeþ*, 24, *þryueþ*, 34, *conneþ*,

¹ The language is too vague for the particular allusion to be determined. In 1393, according to Walsingham, Cherbourg was restored to the king of Navarre, who had pledged it to Richard for 22,000 marks, but had then repaid the sum borrowed. In reality, Richard thus only received back a sum which he had lent, but it may easily have seemed to his disaffected people as if he was selling Cherbourg for so much money.

² Walsingham narrates the performance of miracles at Wymundham, Bridlington, Ely, Cambridge, and St Alban's, all about A.D. 1389.

35. We also find *-en* cut down to the simple final *-e*, as in *choppe*, 64. The third person singular of weak verbs ends in *-ede*, as in *lenede*, 8, *waitede*, 16; but also in *-ed*, as in *preched*, 66, *chasted*, 110, *costned*, 209. In the plural, we find the endings *-eden*, as in *likeden*, 70, *kneleden*, 71; often shortened to *-ede*, as in *lyuede*, 70, *pleynede*, 81; and sometimes even to *-ed*, as in *assented*, iii. 68, *parailed*, iii. 224; although plurals in *-ed* are less common in this MS. than plurals in *-ede*. It may be doubted, however, when the plural ends in *-ede*, if it is meant that the last *-e* is to be sounded; for it is a common fault in this MS. P only (very seldom in other MSS. of the C-type) that the past *participle* is made to end in *-ede* instead of *-ed*; a fault which I have often not hesitated to correct, when all the other MSS. exhibit the true ending in *-ed*. See, for instance, the form *makede* (in MS. P), iii. 73, where all the other MSS. correctly have *made*, a reading which I have accordingly adopted. For examples of past participles in *-ed*, observe *awaunsed*, ii. 189, *encombred*, ii. 192, *hasped*, ii. 193, &c. Sometimes we find the ending *-id*, as in *amaistrid*, iii. 167; or *-yd*, as in *ytermenyd*, ii. 93, *lackyd*, iii. 21. In past tenses of strong verbs, we find the long vowel denoted sometimes by its being doubled, as in *ouerleep*, i. 169; *leep*, iii. 69; but sometimes by the addition of *e*, as in *shope*, iii. 177. Sometimes the lengthening of the vowel-sound is not indicated, as in *lep*, iii. 225. In a similar manner, we find *fote* for *foot*, ii. 119; but also *fet* instead of *feet*, iii. 193. I may here observe that the forms *calde*, *calden*, for “called,” are very common in the C-text MSS. It deserves to be noticed that the endings of weak verbs in the past tense are, in Old English, various, and depend in a great measure on the form of the stem. If we take *-edē* (disyllable) as the standard ending of the third person singular in the past tense of a weak verb, this ending may be abbreviated into *-ed*, or into *-de*, or may disappear altogether. In both the former cases, the termination is often *written* in the form *-ede*, even when only one of the *ees* is sounded, and it is not always easy to say which. Thus *callede* may be a disyllable, but we cannot, as it stands, say which *e* is to be ignored. But when some scribes continually write *called* or *callid* or *callyd* or *callud*, as well as

callede, we know, that, to them, it is the final *e* that disappears; and when other scribes write *callede* or *calde* indifferently, we may infer that, to them, it is the medial *e* that disappears. Even in the case of the same scribe, the practice varies with the stem; we may sometimes fairly infer that the scribe who was familiar with the sound *lov'de* (for *louede* = loved) may, in the case of some other verb (say *callede*, for example) have preferred *callēd*. In some cases, the termination tends to disappear. Take, for example, such a stem as *command*. The past tense, normal form, is *comaund-e-de* or *comand-e-de*, which could be abbreviated either to *comaunded* or to *comaund-de*. The former is the form found in *Piers the Plowman*; see, e. g. *comaundid*, C. ii. 20. But the latter seems to have been current also, and on account of its inconvenient shape, soon became abbreviated to *comaund* simply, as in l. 2557 of the alliterative *Troy-Boke*. See, on this point, Sir F. Madden's note to *William of Palerne*, l. 347. I have purposely thrown out this hint because I believe the question requires a much further investigation of a careful character; it is not enough to give *-edē* as a past-tense ending; we have to consider also the ways in which this *-edē* can be abbreviated; and I believe it will be found that the method of abbreviation is very various, depending as it does on three variable elements, viz. (1) the stem, (2) the dialect, and (3) the date.

Just as in the B-text, we find the contractions *ryt* for *rideth*, *rest* for *resteth*, i. 186; and the like. One very noteworthy contraction is that of *rat* or *ret* for *redeþ*, iv. 410; a contraction which actually puzzled the scribes in one passage, where two of them have turned *rat* into *þat*, xiv. 5. We also frequently find infinitives in *-ie*, *-ye*, or *-y*, as *closye*, i. 133, *sauny*, ii. 80, *hongy*, vii. 238. I do not recall instances in which the prefix *I-* or *y-* is used with a past tense, but it is common with past participles; yet these are also used *without* the prefix, as *tried*, ii. 81. The present participle almost always ends in *-yng* or *-ing*; yet, just as in the B-text, a few stray examples of the ending *-ind* or *-ynd* are found; as *closynde*, i. 132, the infinitive being *closye*, i. 133. We still find plural adjectives (of French origin) in *-es*, as in *cardinales*, i. 132.

But there is one peculiarity of some at least of the C-text MSS. which deserves special notice, and that is, the tendency to the Western forms in *-us*. Some MSS., as F and S, abound with them; and they occur even in the text, as *clerkus*, i. 141. They are also conspicuous in MS. H, of the A-type. Even from this we may conjecture something. It seems not improbable that, just as the author once came from the West of England up to London, so later in life he returned from London to the West of England. This supposition explains (1) his mention of the Malvern hills; (2) his familiarity with London; and (3) his language in the C-text, in which he speaks of his residence in London as if it were a thing of the past. Hence, also, we are not surprised to find that, in 1399, he passed through Bristol; see Richard the Redeles, prol. 2. The present text abounds also with the use of *hus* for *his*, and *hue* for *she*. The forms of the feminine personal pronoun are singularly diverse in the MSS. MS. P almost always has *hue*; E invariably has *so*; I has *sche*; F has *sche*, *scheo*, *heo*; G commonly *heo*; see ii. 10, footnote.

On the whole, the dialect of MS. L (the basis of the B-text) and that of MS. P (that of the C-text) do not much differ, and both probably represent, with sufficient approximation, the dialect of the author; which MS. V (the basis of the A-text) certainly does not.

§ 12. METHOD OF PRINTING THE TEXT.

The Text is, as has been explained, mainly from MS. P (Phillipps 8231), but has a few alterations and additional lines from other MSS., enclosed within square brackets. The rejected readings of MS. P will be found in the footnotes. A few *slight* variations in spelling have been made without the constant use of square brackets, but it is only in such cases as have been pointed out in the description of MS. P above, and there also the rejected spellings of P will be found in the footnotes. The additional lines from other MSS. are very few. The contractions that appear in P are not at all frequent; they are denoted by the use of italic letters, as in "*somere*" in the first line, where the MS. has "*som'e*," with the usual upward curl representing *er* between the *m* and *e*. All the Latin words

and quotations, and one or two French quotations (xiv. 205, 206; xviii. 163, 164) are printed in italics, but the contractions in the Latin quotations are not expressed by any alteration of type, as there can be no doubt about the readings.

The metrical mark which occurs in the middle of each line in the MS. is denoted in this edition by an "inverted" full-stop. It marks the place where a slight pause occurs in reading, and is frequently equivalent to a comma. In the Cotton MS. (M), it is denoted by a large red dot. See also the facsimile prefixed to this text.

The lines in each Passus are numbered separately. The Latin quotations are not reckoned as lines, except when in verse; otherwise they are "set back." When reference has to be made to them, they are denoted, in the latter case, by the number of the English line which precedes them. The punctuation is wholly my own. Dr Whitaker's edition, intended as a close imitation of the MS., is not punctuated at all.

§ 13. METHOD OF PRINTING THE FOOTNOTES.

The list of MSS. quoted in the footnotes may be briefly repeated. They are P (Phillipps 8231, the text); E (Laud 656); I (Ilchester MS.); M (Cotton or Museum MS.); F (Camb. Univ. Lib. Ff. 5. 25); G (Camb. Univ. Lib. Dd. 3. 13); S (Corpus 293); B (Bodley 814); K (Kenelm Digby 171); T (Trin. Coll. Camb. R. 3. 14). Besides which the italic *I* occurs, referring to the passage which appears a second time in the Ilchester MS., as noted in the description of that MS. Of these, E, I, M, F, S have been collated throughout, except where gaps occur in them. The collation with B ceases at iii. 128, and even before that only *occasional* readings are cited from it. The collation with T begins at xii. 297. The collation with K extends from xii. 1 to xvi. 65. Readings from G are cited only occasionally. The number of MSS. on which the text is based varies from five to nine, the most usual number being six or seven. The readings of least importance are those of G. The MS. which differs from the text most frequently is F. The principles upon which the various readings are given have been fully explained in Pref. I. p. xxix.

§ 14. EXPLANATION OF THE SIDE-NOTES.

The thick numbers (Clarendon-type) in the margin refer to the *pages* of vol. i. and vol. ii. Those which refer to vol. i. have **A** prefixed to them; but they necessarily cease to occur after p. 212, as the A-text extends no further. Those which refer to vol. ii. have **B** prefixed to them as far as to the end of Pass. xii. p. 214. After this, the single number is of course sufficient, as the A-text has considerably less than 170 pages, and there can therefore be no doubt as to which is meant. For example, if this volume be opened at p. 119, the mark **B 231** opposite l. 430 signifies that the parallel passage to ll. 430 and 431 occurs on p. 231 of the B-text; the mark **B 77** opposite l. 432 signifies that the parallel passage to l. 432 and the lines following occurs on p. 77 of the B-text; whilst the mark **A 64 B 78** opposite l. 438 signifies that the corresponding line occurs *at* the top of p. 64 in vol. i., and *near* the top of p. 78 in vol. ii. It is impossible always to fit the marks so as to indicate the *first* lines on the pages, but this has been done where practicable.

These numbers furnish a ready way of referring from volume to volume, and can be used for any pair of volumes, or for all three, starting from any one of them. For example, let vol. i. be in hand, and let it be required to compare the confession of Envy on p. 55 with the same confession as it stands in the other texts. Open vol. ii. and look for **55**; the number occurs on p. 60, and the confession of Envy is a few lines lower, on p. 61. Next open vol. iii., and look for **A 55**; this occurs on p. 98, at the place sought.

Again, let vol. ii. be in hand, and let it be required to compare the description of Lady Meed, at p. 21, with the other texts. Here the numbers **17** and **18** in the margin *at once* refer back to the pages of the A-text. Next, open vol. iii. and look for **B 21**, which is soon found in the margin of p. 27.

Lastly, if vol. iii. be in hand, then, wherever it be opened, the numbers in the margin *refer back* to the other volumes, as has been explained. The principle of this arrangement is that of *referring back* to what has preceded; but it will work both ways, and furnishes as ready a method of comparison between the texts as can

well be arranged. It is easy enough in practice, except where the variations between the texts are wide or total, so that no comparison can well be instituted. In such cases, the reader will find a further very convenient guide by observing whether or not an obelus (†) is prefixed to the side-note, as this invariably indicates the appearance of *new matter*. Thus, in vol. iii. p. 96, the obeli prefixed to the first three side-notes give warning that this passage has not occurred before, and it is useless to look for it in the B-text or A-text, though just the one word *wilnyng* does happen to occur in the B-text, at the page indicated by the **B 225** on p. 95. In the A-text, there is nothing like it at all. So also, in vol. ii. p. 22, the obeli prefixed to the last six side-notes give warning that the passage has not occurred before, i. e. that it is not in the A-text. This simple plan of marking new matter will be found very useful in practice.

I have only to add that, when a number, as **B 43** on p. 65, is enclosed between marks of parenthesis, it means that it is *repeated* (see also p. 59); or sometimes it denotes that the page indicated is the nearest that can be assigned.

I have also endeavoured, where practicable, to preserve *the same words* in the wording of the side-notes and head-lines; as this expedient greatly facilitates the finding of parallel passages. For example, turning to p. 40, the same head-line occurs in vol. ii. at p. 31, and in vol. i. at p. 27; whilst the side-notes are repeated in the same form of words as far as possible, the *fifth* side-note in vol. iii. p. 40 being a new one, as indicated by the obelus; whilst the last side-note on the page is an old one.

The only difficulty that can occur arises from the *transposition of matter*; though it is here also that the marginal numbers are of most use. Thus, on p. 124 of this volume, the marginal notes direct the reader who compares this page with the B-text to turn from p. 82 to p. 232 on reaching l. 70. But for this hint, he would be a very long time in finding out for himself what to do. In order to save trouble as far as possible, a brief account of the transposition of matter in the course of the double revision is here subjoined.

We may first of all remark, in comparing the B-text with the preceding A-text, that no real transposition of matter occurs, as the

numbers in the margin of the B-text are all consecutive, though the numbers **115**, **116** do not occur, owing to the matter on those A-pages being omitted. The only number out of place is the **132** on p. 163; but this merely refers to the Latin quotation *Super cathedram moysy*.

But, in comparing the C-text with the texts preceding it, transpositions occur in several places. Looking at the B-numbers in the marginal notes to vol. iii., we observe this to be the order of them.

Consecutive; **B 1—B 59**. *Insertion (a)*; **B 158—B 160**,¹ vol. iii. pp. 90—92. *Consecutive*; **B 59—B 60**. *Insertion (b)*; **B 225—B 227**, vol. iii. pp. 95—97. *Consecutive*; **B 61**. *Insertion (c)*; **B 227—B 228**, vol. iii. pp. 98, 99. *Consecutive*; **B 63—B 67**. *Insertion (d)*, from matter previously omitted, **B 60—B 61**, vol. iii. p. 104; immediately followed by *insertion (e)*, **B 228—B 229**, vol. iii. p. 105. *Consecutive*; **B 67—B 72**. *Insertion (f)*; **B 229—B 231**, vol. iii. pp. 109, 110. *Consecutive (nearly)*; **B 71—B 72**. *Insertion (g)*; **B 82—B 83**, vol. iii. pp. 112, 113. *Consecutive*; **B 72—B 77**. *Insertion (h)*, only a couple of lines, **B 231**; vol. iii. p. 119. *Consecutive*; **B 77—B 82**. *Insertion (i)*; **B 232—B 234**; vol. iii. pp. 124—127. *Consecutive*; **B 83—B 135**, all but a break of a single B-page, viz. **B 118**; then comes another break of one B-page, followed by **B 137—B 139**; then a slight recurrence to **B 138** (vol. iii. 191); after which comes **B 140—B 147**; then a break of a couple of B-pages, followed by **B 150—B 152**; then a break of a page, followed by **B 154—B 155**. *Insertion (k)*; **B 168—B 170**, vol. iii. pp. 205—207. *Consecutive*; **B 162—167**, and **B 170—B 192**, with a slight transposition of the matter in **B 172** and **B 173**; then, after a break of three B-pages, follows **B 195—B 224**; after which a considerable break; then follows **B 237—B 239**; after which a break of about a page, the matter on **B 240** bearing a slight resemblance to that a little further on in the C-text; see vol. iii. p. 281; next follows **B 241—B 272**; then a slight break; next **B 274—B 277**; another break; next **B 281—B 283**, followed by a few lines from **B 281**; next **B 283—B 308**; a slight break; next **B 310—**

¹ Which involves the insertion **A 132** after **A 54**.

B 385, where the poem ends ; so that after page 208, in vol. iii., the order of matter in the B-text and C-text is much the same.

On looking at this analysis more closely, we see that the principal passages inserted (all but one) in an *earlier* part of the poem than before are those marked as *insertions* (a)—(i). Looking at the *subjects* of these, the result is as follows.

Insertion (a). The saying of Pope Gregory about a fish out of water ; the prophecy that a king shall one day come and reform religion. This is now made to form part of Reason's sermon, instead of part of Scripture's discourse. It shortens the latter, and comes in much more naturally as a part of the former. The change is a considerable improvement, and skilfully managed.

Insertions (b)—(i). These can be all explained together. It is quite clear on what principle the poet made them ; and, if they be carefully examined, they will be found to be *so skilfully adjusted as quite to exclude the supposition that any one but himself could have done it*. This is a very important matter, as it assures us that the double revision of the poem is *all his own work* ; and, although this might have been inferred from the style and character of the writing, it is most satisfactory to have the proof of it brought home to us in a way that cannot well be mistaken. It is also the more necessary, because there certainly are indications that the poet inclined, at the last, to the softening down and modification of some of his sentiments. Mr Wright has drawn attention to this in one instance, where he prints two short passages side by side, and draws the inference that "in this instance the doctrine is stated far more distinctly and far more boldly in the first text than in the second ;" Wright's edition, Pref. p. xxxv. That is to say, the poet grew more conservative in his ideas and more careful in his expressions as he grew older ; a result so common and natural that it is not to be wondered at, but may be accepted as the fact. Let it not be supposed, however, that he in any way lost his vigour of expression when he chose to exert it ; observe his graphic description of the life of the poor in London, C. x. 71—161 ; and his fine attack on the revellers of Richard's court and his humorous description of the packed parliament, *Rich. Redeles*, iii. 190—238, iv. 1—73. The reader may

pardon this digression, as it is necessary to enable him to see his way more clearly. We can now return to the consideration of the *insertions* (b)—(i), and easily understand them.

The fact is, that in his B-text, the poet did, to some extent, enlarge upon the favourite and common subject of the Seven Deadly Sins *twice over*; once in the proper place, and a second time, in describing at length the character of Haukyn, the active man, a representative of the character of that *Actiua-Uita* which it was formerly so much the fashion to contrast with the *Uita-Contemplativa*, in order to bring out the great dangers of a life in the world as compared with the life in a cloister. But, on revising his work, the poet saw how much could be gained by combining his two sets of descriptions into one, at the same time making a few alterations and additions; and he has succeeded, upon the whole, in considerably bettering this important and characteristic portion of his poem. The mere statement of these alterations will *now* suffice to bring out and prove these points.

Insertion (b); a description of Haukyn's *pride*, now placed so as to form part of the description of the allegorical character of Pride. The result is that the poet now gives *two* examples of Pride; one, Pernel Proud-heart, a *female* character, and a second, named simply Pride, a *male* character.

Insertion (c); a description of Haukyn's *envy*, now made to form part of the description of Envy.

Insertions (d) and (e). The former of these is a mere removal of the description of Lechery to a later place among the Seven Sins; the latter is a description of Haukyn's *lechery*, which is now made to supplement the previously very short description.

Insertion (f); a description of Haukyn's *cheating tricks*, now made to form part of the description of Avarice.

Insertion (g). This is a removal. A passage which formerly formed part of the character of Sloth, but which is rather a description of Avarice, is now placed so as to form part of the character of Avarice. It comes in very much better in its new place.

Insertion (h). A few lines only, formerly descriptive of Haukyn's *gluttony*, are now made to form part of the character of Glutton.

Insertion (i); a description of Haukyn's *sloth*, now made to form part of the character of Sloth.¹

The continuous design in all these changes must now be evident. Perhaps I may add here, that, though the B-text will probably remain, *as a whole*, the favourite form of the poem (owing, perhaps, in some measure, to the fact of its being better known), there are several passages in which the C-text far surpasses it. See the section below on the Additions in the C-text. c

To return once more to the subject of reference from volume to volume, for the purpose of comparing the texts. I have already shewn how the comparison can, in general, be made. It remains to add a few remarks on the difficulty arising from the transposition of the subject-matter.

When vol. iii. is in hand, the difficulty does not occur, as the marginal numbers are then a sufficient guide. Neither does much difficulty occur when vol. i. is in hand, if it be remembered that the A-text passage about "the fish out of water" (vol. i. p. 132), not shifted in the B-text, *is* shifted in the C-text so as to come on p. 90 of vol. iii. All the rest of the A-text remains unshifted.

But when vol. ii. is in hand, it may sometimes be troublesome to find the corresponding passage in the C-text. The best way of doing this is just to bear in mind what the shiftings mean, viz. (1) that Haukyn's failings are now made to amplify the characters of the Seven Sins; and (2) that Lechery is made the *fourth* instead of the *second* of the Sins. In fact, the only references which really cause trouble have been already supplied, in the description of the *insertions* above. I repeat them here, *in the B-text order*.

(d) B. pp. 60, 61; cf. C. p. 104.

(g) B. 82, 83; cf. C. 112, 113.

(a) B. 158—160; cf. C. 90—92.

(h) B. 168—170; cf. C. 205—207.

(b) B. 225—227; cf. C. 95—97.

(c) B. 227, 228; cf. C. 98, 99.

(e) B. 228, 229; cf. C. 105.

¹ The character of Wrath has been amplified also; but it is by means of *entirely new lines*.

(f) B. 229—231 ; cf. C. 109, 110.

(h) B. 231 ; cf. C. 119.

(i) B. 232—234 ; cf. C. 124—127.

This is all the help that can well be given, and will perhaps suffice. Yet it may very well appear, hereafter, that some portion of a B-text line has been again used, in the C-text, in a different position and connection. The process of revision can only be truly described by saying that the poet took his poem *all to pieces*, and *reconstructed it*. Even where he retains the same subject-matter, he varies the language ; whilst, on the other hand, he sometimes uses old expressions when dealing with new subject-matter. The number of minute differences between the versions is past all counting.

§ 15. REFERENCE TO THE EDITIONS BY WRIGHT AND WHITAKER.

Before referring to Mr Wright's edition, the place should be found in vol. ii. The reader may then find his way out of vol. ii. into Mr Wright's by help of the directions already given in that volume ; see Pref. II. p. xxxviii.

Another very simple plan is to add to the number of the page in vol. ii. its *sixth part*, omitting fractions ; this will give the page in Wright's edition very nearly. Example : the quotation *Si hominibus, &c.*, occurs in vol. ii. p. 227 ; but $227 + 37 = 264$, which is the page of Wright's edition required.

In Whitaker's edition the name of the Passus is at the head of every page. Only he keeps to the separate divisions into "Piers the Plowman," "Dowel," "Dobet," and "Dobest." The following table will serve as a help.

PIERS THE PLOWMAN : Pass. i.—x. ; the same as in this volume.

DOWEL. Pass. i.—vii. ; called in this volume Pass. xi.—xvii., which may be obtained by adding *ten*.

DOBET. Pass. i. = Pass. xviii. ; Pass. ii. = Pass. xix. ; Pass. iii. = Pass. xx. ; Pass. iv. = Pass. xxi.

DOBEST. Pass. i. = Pass. xxii. ; Pass. ii. = Pass. xxiii.

§ 16. COMPARISON OF THE THREE TEXTS, BY PASSUS.

The division into Passus in the C-text differs considerably from that in the B-text, and, owing to the numerous variations it is not possible to shew the *precise* points at which the texts are equivalent at the commencement of each Passus. The following scheme is as near a representation of the parallelism of the texts as can well be made. Note that the *straight* lines shew that the texts are almost identical at the points indicated, but the *waved* lines shew that they are only approximately similar.

| A-TEXT. | B-TEXT. | C-TEXT. |
|------------------------------------|---------------------------|--------------------|
| Prologue. ————— | Prologue. ————— | Pass. i. |
| Pass. i. ————— | Pass. i. ————— | Pass. ii. |
| Pass. ii. ————— | Pass. ii. ————— | Pass. iii. |
| Pass. iii. ————— | Pass. iii. ————— | Pass. iv. |
| Pass. iv. ————— | Pass. iv. ————— | Pass. v. |
| (<i>Not in A-text.</i>) | (<i>Not in B-text.</i>) | Pass. vi. 1—104. |
| Pass. v. 1—42 ————— | Pass. v. 1—60 ~~~~~ | „ 105—201. |
| „ 43—221 ——— | „ 61—391 ——— | Pass. vii. |
| „ 222—end ~~~~ | „ 392—519 ——— | Pass. viii. 1—157. |
| Pass. vi. ————— | „ 520—end ——— | „ 158—306. |
| Pass. vii. 1, 2 ——— | Pass. vi. 1, 2 ——— | „ 307, 308. |
| „ 3—end ——— | „ 3—end ——— | Pass. ix. |
| Pass. viii. ————— | Pass. vii. ————— | Pass. x. |
| (Here begins the Vision of Dowel.) | | |
| Pass. ix. ————— | Pass. viii. ——— | Pass. xi. 1—126. |
| Pass. x. ————— | Pass. ix. ————— | „ 127—end. |
| Pass. xi. ————— | Pass. x. ————— | Pass. xii. 1—162. |
| Pass. xii. (<i>peculiar</i>) | Pass. xi. 1—42 ——— | „ 163—end. |
| | „ 43—265 ——— | Pass. xiii. 1—166. |
| | (<i>Not in B-text.</i>) | „ 167—end. |
| | (<i>Not in B-text.</i>) | Pass. xiv. 1—100. |
| | „ 278—end ——— | „ 101—end. |
| | Pass. xii. ————— | Pass. xv. |
| | Pass. xiii. 1—260 ——— | Pass. xvi. 1—231. |

A-TEXT.

B-TEXT.

C-TEXT.

| | | |
|--------------|------------------------|--|
| Pass. xiii. | 276—end | ~~~~~(Several pieces inserted in Pass. vii., viii.) |
| Pass. xiv. | 1—27 | (Not in C-text.) |
| „ | 28—131 | —Pass. xvi. 236—end. |
| „ | 132—end | —Pass. xvii. 1—157. |
| | (Here begins Do-bet.) | |
| Pass. xv. | 1—262 | ~~~~~ „ 158—end. |
| | | (Here begins Do-bet.) |
| „ | 263—end | ~~~~~Pass. xviii. |
| Pass. xvi. | ~~~~~ | Pass. xix. |
| Pass. xvii. | ———— | Pass. xx. |
| Pass. xviii. | ———— | Pass. xxi. |
| | (Here begins Do-best.) | (Here begins Do-best.) |
| Pass. xix. | ———— | Pass. xxii. |
| Pass. xx. | ———— | Pass. xxiii. |

This table will be found useful for reference, and may serve to give some idea of the trouble taken by the author in revising his work.

§ 17. ADDITIONAL PASSAGES IN THE C-TEXT.

Most of the passages which are peculiar to the C-text will be found in the Notes to Mr Wright's edition of *Piers the Plowman*; but as they are there printed in small type, it may be doubted whether they have received anything like the attention which they deserve. Moreover, they read much better in their right place, with their own proper context. These additional passages may best be found by observing the numerous side-notes to which an obelus (†) is prefixed in this volume. To enumerate them all would be a long task, as some are but one or two lines long; I here call attention to some of the more remarkable ones only.

Pass. i. 95—124.¹ The author introduces Conscience as accusing the priests of idolatry or image-worship and of proclaiming false miracles; they are warned to take example from the evil fate of Hophni and Phineas. The following are remarkable lines, and I

¹ See the observation in the first footnote on p. 7.

give them in a modernized form. Where words are printed in italics, I have slightly altered the language.

“Conscience came and accused them · (and the commons heard it),
And said—‘Idolatry ye suffer · in sundry places many ;
And boxes are brought forth · y-bound with iron
To *receive*¹ the toll · of untrue sacrifice.
In meaning² of miracles · much wax there hangeth ;
All the world wot well · it *may* not be true.
But, for it profits you to purse-ward · ye prelates suffer
That laymen in misbelief · live and die ;’” &c.

Pass. ii. 108—125. Some curious observations on the fall of Lucifer, with speculations as to why he made his seat in the north (Isaiah xiv. 14).

“‘Lord, why would he then · that wretched Lucifer
Leap [so] aloft · in the North side,
Nor³ sit on the sun’s side · where the day gloweth ?⁴
Were it not for Northern men⁵ · anon would I tell [you],
But I will *blame* none living’ · quoth that lady soothly.
‘It is *safer* by South · where the sun reigneth
Than in the North, by many notes · let none believe otherwise.
For thither where the fiend flew · his foot for to set,
There he failed and fell · and his fellows all ;
And hell is where he is · and he there [is] bound ;’” &c.

Pass. iii. 28, 29. “A briar cannot bear berries as a vine ;” &c.

120—128. This passage is a good deal altered.

129—136. A curious allusion to the martyrdom of St Lawrence, who is here said to have claimed heaven as his due, on account of his sufferings.

181—189. Civil and Simony are to ride on the backs of rectors, and notaries on the backs of parsons that permute often, &c.

243—248. A passage directed against appeals to the pope.

Pass. iv. 86—114. ‘Regraters’ or retail-dealers are pitiless, and expect full payment for short measure ; they provoke God to send

¹ Orig. *vnder-take*, here used in the sense of *receive*.

² Orig. *menynge* ; which may bear the sense of either (1) signification, or (2) remembrance, memory.

³ *Wolde þan* = chose rather than.

⁴ *Roweth*, i. e. grows red, gleams, glows : cf. xxi. 128.

⁵ Which insinuates that the author is *not* a Northerner ; and that he *could* have spoken to their disadvantage.

fevers and fire. Often fires happen in a town through the carelessness of brewers, or from a neglected candle. Surely mayors ought to enquire carefully into the characters of those whom they make free of a city.

140—145. Meed is threatened with imprisonment in Corfe Castle.

203—213. An important passage, addressed to Richard II., already cited and discussed in sect. 4 above; p. xvi.

236—258. Another important passage, on the duty of a king towards his people.

292—415. A passage of that subtle and simile-seeking character which was no doubt once highly esteemed, but to us seems tedious and puerile. The author undertakes to establish parallels between the two kinds of Meed and the two kinds of grammatical relation. In tone and style it is much like another tedious passage in which the mystery of the Trinity is exemplified by reference to a man's hand or to a blazing torch, which first appears in the B-text (xvii. 135—249). Any one who carefully compares these passages (i. e. if he thinks it worth his while) may easily see that the writer of one of them would be just the man to write the other. In other words, we cannot well put aside this passage as not genuine, because the author has already previously committed himself by penning a passage equally dull.

Pass. v. 50—55. Contains an allusion to St Giles's down, Winchester, where a great fair used to be held.

187—196. An attack upon certain modes of injustice, and an allusion to the king's attempt to borrow money of the Lombards; already cited and discussed in sect. 4 above; p. xvii.

Pass. vi. 1—108. The autobiographical passage already mentioned in sect. 10 above; p. lxix.

187—197. There was perfect unity in heaven till Lucifer rebelled; so also men who dislike unity cause trouble to a realm. The pope is entreated to have pity upon holy church.

Pass. vii. 14—29, 33—40. An amplification of the description of Pride.

65—68. An amplification of the description of Envy.

106—118, 143—150. An amplification of the description of Wrath. Note the allusion to *pews*, perhaps the earliest one in English literature.

“ Among wives and widows · I am wont to sit,
Y-parked in pews ; · the parson knows it,
How little do I love · Letice at-the-Stile ;
Because she had holy bread ere I · my heart began to change ;
· Afterward at meat · she and I chid ; ” &c.

176, 177 ; 190—195. An amplification of the description of Lechery.

258, 259 ; 291—293 ; 309—315 ; 331—333. On the sin of Avarice.

Pass. viii. 145—149. An addition to the prayer of Repentance.

257—260. God will “ charge Charity to make a church in thy heart, wherein to harbour truth ; ” &c.

292—306. Sinners begin with one accord to make excuse ; one says, ‘ I have bought a farm ; ’ another, ‘ I have bought five yoke of oxen ; ’ a third, ‘ I have married a wife.’

Pass. ix. 136—138. “ Your prayers might help, if ye were perfect ; but God wills that no deceit should be found in folk that go a-begging.” An important passage, because it shews that the modern phrase to “ go a-begging ” was represented in Old English by “ gon a-begged,” “ gon abeggeth,” or “ gon and beggen.” It is probable that the form *abegged* is not really a past participle, but a corruption of the earlier form *abeggeth* (which occurs in MS. I, i. e. in the earlier draught of the C-text), and that this form is an imitation of the form *a hunteth* in the phrase *gon a hunteth* or *riden an hunteth*. Cf. the line (numbered 387) from Robert of Gloucester, in *Specimens of English ; Part ii ;* ed. Morris and Skeat, p. 14.

“ As he *rod an hontep* · & par-auntre is hors spurnde.”

But this form *hontep* is the dat. case of a substantive, viz. of the A.S. *huntað* or *huntoð*. This substantive would easily be mistaken for a part of a verb ; and particularly for the past participle of a verb ; just as many people at this day are completely unable to distinguish between the verbal substantive *hunting* and the same form when used as a present participle. This mistake once

established, the ending *-ed* would be used freely after the verb *to go* and similar verbs. Hence the phrase in Chaucer “gon a blake-beryed,” which has hitherto puzzled every reader to explain, is a mere variation of “gon a blake-berying,” i. e. “go a-gathering blackberries,” a synonym for “go a-wandering the Lord knows where.” This solution of a long-standing difficulty has already been printed by me in *Notes and Queries*. Cf. “goop afaytyng” in C. x. 170.

198—202. Various kinds of agricultural work :—

“In daubing and delving · in dung-afield-bearing,
In threshing, in thatching · in thwiting¹ of pins,” &c.

279—290. The parable of Dives and Lazarus, and its moral.

350—352. The “mysterious prophecy” here takes a new shape, as was remarked more than three hundred years ago by Crowley; see Prof. II. p. xxxiv.

Pass. x. 71—280. Nearly all new, and very curious. The subjects are: the poor of London, poor lunatics, sham beggars and true ones, false hermits and true ones, ‘lollers’ and ‘lolling’ friars, and unfaithful pastors. Compare the quotation from the supplementary passage in the Ilchester MS., in the description of MS. XXXII. above; p. xxxiv.

Pass. xi. 39, 40. When the righteous man sins, he falls only as a man who falls *within* a boat.

51—55. Free-will and Free-wit enable a man to row himself out of sin.

94—98. Bishops should take courage and dare to proceed against wealthy lords.

158—169; 175—181; 187—201. Sin hides God from man, whence arises despair. Wicked men believe more in wealth than in God. The folly of Lot, Noah, and Herod “the daft,” who

“Gave his daughter for a dancing · in a dish the head
Of the blessed Baptist · before all his guests.”

We should love our enemies, and remember that the highest aim of man is to help in bringing about the Unity of Mankind, when all

¹ Whittling; i. e. pointing wooden pegs with a knife.

lands shall love each other, and believe in one law. Especially should this be the aim of bishops.

“The chattels that Christ had · three cloths were they,
Whereof he was rifled · and robbed ere he died ;
After that, he lost his life · that Law might *turn to Love*.
Prelates and priests · and princes of holy church
Should *fear* no death · nor dear years,
But wend as wide · as the world *extends*,
To till the earth with [the] tongue · and teach men to love.
For whoso loveth, believe it well · God will not let him starve
In *mishap*, for lack of meat · nor for missing of clothes.”

208—210 ; 214—219. Illegitimate children. How Cain was conceived in sin.

239—244. A point of Westminster law.

“For though the father be a franklin · and for a felon be hanged,
The heritage that the heir should have · is at the king’s will ;” &c.

259—269. A rich man will not marry a pretty girl, if she be poor ; but any squire or knight will marry the lowliest born, or the ugliest hag ever seen, if known to be rich or well-rented ; and then wish, on the morrow,

“That his wife were wax · or a wattle-ful of nobles¹.”

309, 310. Two lines in William’s best manner, such as should be engraved on the hearts of all true men :—

“For the more a man may do · *if only* he do it,
The more is he worth and worthy · of wise and good [men]
praised.”

Ah ! that admonitory clause—“by so þat he do hit !”

Pass. xii. 21—25. On successful cheats.

61, 62. “For God is deaf now-a-days · and deigneth not to
hear us,
And good men, for our guilts · he grindeth all to
death.”

76—80. None now follow Tobit’s counsel (Tobit iv. 9).

¹ If his wife were turned to *wax*, she would be useful for making wax-candles for offering at the altar. A “wattleful” of nobles means a basketful of the coins so named.

142—148 ; 161, 162. Various alterations are made here.

200—203 ; 224—227 ; 233, 234. Recklessness is introduced instead of the “Loyalty” of the B-text ; which involves several changes in the language.

Pass. xiii. 17, 18. William here reveals the plea which the friars put forward for not complying with the conditions of their letters of fraternity. They used to ask for an additional sum in order to enable them to *make restitution* for the evil winnings of their clients.

154—247. Nearly all new. William sings the praises of poverty, and likens all men to seeds sown in the ground. Those seeds are most worthy which can best stand the severest weather ; so is it also with God’s saints. Fruits that contain sweet juice will not keep long ; so is it with those who are rich in this world only. Foulest weeds grow on the fattest lands ; so likewise vices spring up out of riches. Wealth often excites the cupidity of robbers, who murder their victims ; and so both murderers and murdered come to perdition.

Pass. xiv. 1—100. But Poverty may walk in peace, and fear no thieves. Abraham and Job were rich men, whom God tried and found patient. Yet Wealth is not evil in itself, though surely Poverty commonly reaches heaven the sooner. If a merchant and a messenger go the same way, the former must needs be detained longest by his business at every resting-place. And whilst they are on the journey, the messenger may take a short cut across a wheat-field, as he is privileged to do ; but if the merchant attempt to do the same, the hayward catches him and takes a pledge from him. If both go to the fair together, the merchant goes the slower, having more to carry ; and goes with the heavier heart, having more to lose. Yet the merchant may reach his home safely at last. So likewise may rich and poor both reach heaven.

188—192. Men are more immoderate in their desires than any other animals.

Pass. xv. 3—27. Altered and abridged from the B-text.

30—32. A curious admission of the author’s belief in astrology.

“Clergy [Learning] cometh but of sight · and *Common Sense*
[comes] of Stars,
As, to be born or begot · in such a constellation
That Wit waxeth thereof · and other weirds *also* ;” &c.

37—42 ; 72—74 ; 215, 216. Altered from the B-text.

Pass. xvi. 78, 79.

“It is loath to me, though I Latin know · to *blame* any sect,
For all we are brethren · though we be diversely clothed.”

138 ; 149—152. In the B-text, a speech which is put into the mouth of Patience is now put into the mouth of Piers the Plowman, who is described as suddenly vanishing immediately after he has uttered it. The object is clearly to draw more attention to the opinions expressed in ll. 138—148 ; besides which, the emphatic direction that we are to love our enemies is very properly attributed to Piers the Plowman, i. e. to Jesus Christ.

154—157. Christian love and true Patience might win all France without bloodshed. L. 162 is a singular addition.

306—309. Rich men, after death, are often poor indeed.

Pass. xvii. 21—37. Altered and abridged from the B-text.

158—182. Altered from the B-text ; with the substitution of *Liberum-Arbitrium* in the place of Reason.

Pass. xviii. 1—8 ; 12. Altered from the B-text.

37—40. A curious quotation from the book of Tobit.

. 47—52. “If religious [men] would refuse · the alms of raveners,
Then Grace would grow yet · and green-leaved wax,
And Charity, that is chilled now · should chafe of
himself,
And comfort all Christians · if holy church would
amend ;” &c.

58—71. The poet drives home forcibly the doctrine that “charity begins at home.” The following lines are good and weighty.

“For God bade His blessed [ones] · as the book teacheth,
Honour thy father and mother, &c. :
To help thy father foremost · before friars and monks,
And ere priests or pardoners · or any people else.
Help thy kin, Christ bids · for there begins charity ;

And afterwards await¹ · who hath most need,
And there help, if thou hast [aught] · and that hold I charity !”

82—93. Altered from the B-text.

124—158. A discussion of the hope that Saracens and Jews may be saved.

233—249. The poet charges the pope, whose mission is peace, with maintaining war. He argues that the pope ought to promote Christianity by peaceful measures, just as Mahomet promoted his religion by means of a dove. The line

“Not through manslaughter and man’s strength · had Mahomet
the mastery”

involves an odd mistake, as the contrary fact is sufficiently notorious.

289—294. Just as a king’s duty is to defend his people, fighting at their head at the risk of his life, so should a good pastor be ready to lay down his life for his flock.

Pass. xix. 4—30 ; 53—108 ; 118—120. Altered from the B-text. The two descriptions should be compared.

163, 164. “The Jews told the justice · how that Jesus said [it] ;
But the over-turning of the temple · betokened the
resurrection.”

228—234 ; 238—240. Adam, Eve, and Abel represent the Trinity. Eve was formed from Adam, and Abel proceeded from both.

Pass. xx. 232—246. An amplification of the parable of Dives. If Dives, who won his wealth *without* guile, was condemned, what will be the fate of those rich men who have won their wealth deceitfully? Make to yourselves friends with the mammon of unrighteousness, by spending your wealth wisely and liberally.

Pass. xxi. 214, 215 ; 218, 219. The fact that things can often be best perceived from observing their contrasts is thus enforced.

“Who could kindly² · with colours describe,
If all the world were white · and swan-white [were] all things?”
“If God had not suffered from some · other than Himself,
He had not wist *verily* · whether death were sour or sweet.”

¹ i. e. look round to see.

² naturally.

283—296. This additional passage is a great curiosity ; because, in representing Satan as opposing our Lord's entrance by the aid of *guns*, our author has anticipated Milton's use of them in *Paradise Lost* ; vi. 470.

" But rise up, Ragamuffin · and reach me all the bars
That Belial, thy bel-sire · beat, with thy dam ;
And I shall let¹ this lord · and His light stop !
Ere we through brightness be blinded · bar we the gates.
Check we and chain we · and each chink stop,
That no light leap in · at loover nor at loop-hole.
And thou, Ashtaroth, hoot out · and have out our knaves,²
Colting, and all his kin · our chattels to save.
Brimstone boiling · burning out cast it
All hot on their heads · that enter nigh the walls.
Set bows of brake³ · and brazen guns,
And shoot out shot enough · His squadron⁴ to blind.
Set Mahomet at the mangonel⁵ · and mill-stones throw ye,
With crooks and with calthrops⁶ · clog⁷ we them each one."

319—322. Additional lines about the temptation of Adam and Eve.

329—330 ; 334—337. Altered from B-text with additions.

353—361. A digression, for which the author apologizes, on the awful punishment that awaits liars.

386—388. The law requires an eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth.

Pass. xxii. This Passus contains eight new lines, viz. 56—59, 152, 237, 336, and 439. On the other hand, lines 247, 366, and 371 of B. xix have disappeared.

Pass. xxiii. This Passus contains but two new lines, viz. 36 and

¹ i. e. hinder.

² servants, lads.

³ A "brake" is an old term for various implements which permit great force to be employed ; *bows of brake* almost certainly refer to such huge crossbows as those employed by the Genoese archers, which required a crank or winch to wind them up or "set" them.

⁴ Orig. *shultrom* or *schiltrom*, from A.S. *scýld-truma*, lit. a troop-shield, and hence an armed company or battalion.

⁵ A war-engine for throwing vast stones.

⁶ Instruments formed by inserting four (or more) spikes into a ball. However thrown on the ground, one spike at least sticks up, and they much impede the enemy's approach.

Orig. *acloye*, i. e. *cloy*, clog, or impede.

261. But there are several minute alterations, shewing that the work of revision has been carried out to the very end of the poem.

§ 18. ARGUMENT OF THE POEM. (TEXT C.)

The poem is distinctly divisible into two parts, the "Vision of Piers the Plowman," and the "Visions of Do-well, Do-bet, and Do-best." Of these, the former is again divisible into two distinct visions, which may be called : (1) The Vision of the Field full of Folk, of Holy Church, and of Lady Meed, occupying Passus I.—V. ; and (2) The Vision of the Seven Deadly Sins and of Piers the Plowman, occupying Passus VI.—X., preceded by a discourse between the author and Reason. The latter consists of three parts, viz. The Visions of Do-well, of Do-bet, and of Do-best. Passus I.—VII. of Do-well form Passus XI.—XVII. Passus I.—IV. of Do-bet form Passus XVIII.—XXI. Passus I. and II. of Do-best form Passus XXII. and XXIII. But some of these parts contain more than one vision, the number of visions in the whole poem amounting to *eleven*.

1. Piers the Plowman.

I. VISION OF THE FIELD FULL OF FOLK, OF HOLY CHURCH, AND OF LADY MEED.¹ *Passus I.* The author describes how, weary of wandering, he sits down to rest upon the Malvern Hills, and there falls asleep and dreams. In his vision, the world and its people are represented to him by a field full of folk, busily engaged in their avocations. The field was situated between the tower of Truth, who is God the Father, and the deep dale which is the abode of the evil spirits. In it there were ploughmen and spendthrifts, anchorites, merchants, minstrels, beggars, pilgrims, hermits, friars, a pardoner with his bulls, and priests who had deserted their cures. [Conscience² appears, and accuses the priests of permitting idolatry and the worship of images ; warning them of the fate that befel Eli and his sons.] There was also a king, to whom Common-sense spake words of advice. Then was seen suddenly a rout of rats and mice, conspiring to bell the cat, from doing which they were dissuaded by

¹ See the argument of the B-text, vol. ii. p. xlvihi.

² The passages within square brackets are not in the B-text.

a wise mouse. There were also barons, burgesses, tradesmen, labourers, and taverners touting for custom.

Passus II. Presently, the poet sees a lovely lady, of whom he asks the meaning of the tower. She tells him it is the abode of the Creator, who provides men with the necessaries of life. The deep dale contains the castle of Care, where lives the Father of Falseness. He next asks her name, and she tells him she is Holy Church, and instructs him how great a treasure Truth is, how Lucifer fell through Pride, [with a passing remark on Lucifer's seat being in the North,] that Love is the treacle for sin, and that the way to heaven lies through Love.

Passus III. He asks how he may know Falsehood. She bids him turn and see Falsehood and Flattery. Looking aside he sees, not them alone, but a woman in glorious apparel. He is told she is the Lady Meed (i. e. Reward) who is going to be married to Falsehood on the morrow. Holy Church then leaves him. The wedding is prepared, and Simony and Civil read a deed respecting the property with which Falsehood and Meed are to be endowed. Theology objects to the marriage, and disputes its legality, [referring to the Legend of St Lawrence ;] whereupon it is agreed that all must go to Westminster to have the question decided. All the parties ride off to London, Meed being mounted upon a sheriff and Falsehood upon a 'sisour.' Thus all come to the King's court, who vows that he will punish Falsehood and his crew if he can catch them. On hearing this, Liar flees to the friars, who pity him and house him for their own purposes.

Passus IV. Lady Meed is arrested and brought before the king. The justices assure her all will go well. To seem righteous, she confesses and is shriven, offering to glaze a church-window by way of amendment ; and immediately afterwards, advises mayors and judges to take bribes. [Here the author takes occasion to warn all false dealers of the vengeance of God that awaits them.] The king proposes that Meed shall marry Conscience, and she is willing to do so ; but Conscience refuses, and exposes her faults ; [adding an attack upon the king (Richard II.) for his bad government.] She attempts to retaliate and to justify herself ; but Conscience refutes her argu-

ments. [Here a long and subtle passage is inserted in which the *two kinds* of Meed, viz. Lawful Wages and Rewards given for no good reason, are distinguished. An attempt is made to draw a parallel between them and the Direct and Indirect Relations in Grammar. Hire (i. e. Lawful Wages) resembles the Direct Relation, as when, e. g. an adjective agrees with its substantive in gender, case, and number. But Bribery or Needless Reward is like the Indirect Relation, in which there is no agreement in case.] Conscience then quotes the example of Saul to shew the evil of covetousness; and declares that Reason will one day reign upon earth, and punish all wrongdoers. Then shall men think that Messiah has come, and the reign of Peace shall begin. Conscience concludes by advising Meed always to read texts in connection with the context.

Passus V. Acting upon the advice of Conscience, the king orders Reason to be sent for; who comes, accompanied by Wiseman and Wilyman. At this moment, Peace enters, with a complaint against Wrong. Wrong, knowing the complaint is true, gets Wisdom and Wit on his side by Meed's help, and offers to buy Peace off with a present. Reason, however, is firm and will shew no pity, but advises the king to act with strict justice. The king is convinced, and prays Reason to remain with him for ever after. [Reason reminds him that Love will give him more money than the Lombards will lend him. The king dismisses all his corrupt officers.]

II. THE VISION OF THE SEVEN DEADLY SINS AND OF PIERS THE PLOWMAN. *Passus VI.* [This *Passus* opens with a curious and interesting discourse between Reason and the author, in the course of which the author refers to his own history and mode of life.] The author goes to church, and soon falls asleep again, and has a second vision, in which he again sees the field full of folk, and Reason¹ preaching to the assembled people, reminding them that the late storm and pestilence were judgments of God. Here² Reason introduces the remarkable prophecy that a king would come and reform religion, when the abbot of England³ should receive from him a knock, and incurable should be the wound.

¹ In the A-text, it is *Conscience* who preaches.

² See B-text, x. 317.

³ In the B-text (x. 326) it is the abbot of *Abingdon*.

Passus VII. Repentance seconds the efforts of Conscience, and many begin to repent. Of these the first is Pride,¹ who makes a vow of humility. The second is Envy, who is described with much particularity, and who confesses his evil thoughts and his attempts to harm his neighbours. The third is Wrath, a friar, whose aunt was a nun, and who had been cook to a convent, and incited many to quarrel. The fourth is Luxury, who vows to drink only water. The fifth, Avarice, who confesses how he lied and cheated, and taught his wife to cheat; and, not understanding the word *restitution*, thought that it was another term for stealing. Robert the robber also repents, and prays earnestly for forgiveness. The sixth, Gluttony, who (on his way to church) is tempted into a beer-house, of the interior of which the author gives a life-like and perfect picture. He too repents, though not till he has first become completely drunk and afterwards felt the ill effects of drinking.

Passus VIII. The seventh is Sloth, a priest who knows rimes about Robin Hood better than his prayers, and can find a hare in a field more readily than he can read lives of saints. Repentance makes intercession for all the penitents. Then they all set out in search of Truth, but no one knows the way. Soon they meet with a palmer, who has met with many saints, but never with one named *Truth*. At this juncture Piers the Plowman "put forth his head," declaring that he knows Truth well, and will tell them the way, which he then describes. [Some of the sinners begin to make excuse.] The pilgrims think the way long, and want a guide.

Passus IX. Piers says he will come himself and shew them, when he has ploughed his half-acre. Meanwhile, he gives good advice to rich ladies and to a knight. Before starting, Piers makes his will, and then sets all who come to him to hard work. Many shirk their work, but are reduced to subordination by the sharp treatment of Hunger. Next follow most curious and valuable passages respecting the diet of the poor, striking for higher wages, and the discontent caused by prosperity. A mysterious prophecy is appended.

Passus X. At this time Truth (i. e. God the Father) sends Piers

¹ Cf. B. Pass. XIII. for the *supplementary* passages.

a bull of pardon, especially intended for kings, knights, bishops, and the labouring poor, and even for some lawyers and merchants, in a less degree. [Here is introduced a curious description of the poor of London, of "lollers," and of false hermits.] A priest disputes the validity of the pardon, and wants to read it. The dispute between this priest and Piers becomes so violent that the dreamer awakes, and the Poem of Piers the Plowman (properly so called) ends with a fine peroration on the small value of papal pardons, and the superiority of a righteous life over mere trust in indulgences, at the great Day of Doom.

2. Visio de Dowel

III. THE VISION OF WIT, STUDY, CLERGY, AND SCRIPTURE.

Passus XI. In introducing a new poem,¹ the "Visio de Dowel," the author begins by describing a dialogue that passed between himself and two Minorite friars concerning the doctrine of free-will. After this, he again falls asleep, and perceives in a dream a man named Thought. He asks Thought where Do-well, Do-bet, and Do-best live, and Thought gives him some account of these, but says that the best person to give him further information is Wit. After wandering for three days, the dreamer and Thought meet with Wit.

Wit² tells the dreamer that Do-well dwells in a castle called *Caro*, wherein also is enclosed the Lady *Anima*, and they are guarded by the constable Inwit (Conscience), and his five sons (the senses). [Here follows a discourse upon the effect of Sin in hiding God from man], the duty of the church to protect idiots and helpless persons, [and upon the value of Love.] Next follow discussions upon the good that there is in well-assorted and lawful wedlock, and the evil of mercenary or ill-advised marriages, and of adulterous connections.

Passus XII. The dreamer applies to yet one more adviser, viz. Dame Study, the wife of Wit. She laments that wicked men most

¹ Though this Vision, like the others that follow it, is, in its form, altogether a new poem, the author no doubt intended it from the first to be a continuation of the former Vision.

² Here, in the B-text, begins Pass. IX.

frequently obtain this world's wealth. She inveighs with great justice and force against the way in which shallow would-be theologians cavil about the mysterious things of God, and unworthily amuse themselves with vain quibbles. She laments the lack of charity, and the increase of pride. At last, she commends the dreamer to Clergy and Scripture, from whom he may hope to learn yet more. Accordingly, he seeks these, and receives some instruction from Clergy, which is soon cut short by Scripture, who so scorns the poet that he weeps and falls into a new dream.

IV. THE VISION OF FORTUNE, NATURE, RECKLESSNESS, AND REASON.¹ In a new vision, William sees Fortune, with her attendant damsels named Lust-of-the-flesh and Lust-of-the-eyes, who bid him rejoice in his youth. Here Recklessness is introduced, who discourses upon predestination in language similar to that in the conclusion of Pass. X. in the B-text.

Passus XIII. But at the approach of old age, William finds that the friars, once his friends, avoid him, because he wished to be buried in his parish church. Loyalty and Scripture give him good advice, and he is told why Trajan was released from hell. Recklessness² cites Christ's example of humility, declares poverty to be like a walnut, enlarges upon the value of poverty, [compares men to various seeds and their vices to weeds, and declares that riches bring men to perdition.]

Passus XIV. [Here the praise of poverty is continued, with the examples of Job and Abraham. Recklessness narrates the parable of the merchant and the messenger, signifying the rich and the poor;] and concludes his harangue by saying that priests unfit for their office are as bad as a notary who knows not how to draw up a charter. William's dream continues, and he sees Nature, who shews him how all animals except man follow Reason. He asks why this is; Reason rebukes him, and he awakes.

V. THE VISION OF IMAGINATIVE. The dreamer beholds one who rebukes him for his impatience. He asks the stranger's name.

¹ Here, in the B-text, begins Pass. XI.

² The long speech of Recklessness extends from XIII. 88 to XIV. 128. In the B-text, the speaker is *Loyalty*.

Passus XV. The stranger says his name is Imaginative, exhorts him not to despise learning, instructs him as to the relative chances of salvation of the learned and the ignorant, and tells him why wealth is like a peacock's tail. After distinguishing between three kinds of baptism, Imaginative suddenly vanishes, upon which the dreamer awakes.

VI. THE VISION OF CONSCIENCE, PATIENCE, AND ACTIVA-VITA. *Passus XVI.* In the sixth vision, Conscience, Clergy, Patience, and the dreamer go to dine with Reason.¹ At the high dais is seated a doctor of the church, who astonishes all by his gluttony. After dinner, the doctor, being well primed with wine, is ready to expound theological subtleties. Conscience and Patience bid farewell to Clergy and Reason, and set out as pilgrims in company with the poet. Soon they meet with one Activa-Vita, who is a minstrel and seller of wafers. Patience instructs Activa-Vita, and declares that beggars shall have joy hereafter.

Passus XVII. Patience laments that riches should rob man's soul of God's love, praises poverty, and enumerates its nine advantages.

VII. THE VISION OF FREEWILL² AND OF THE TREE OF CHARITY. The poet next observes one Liberum-Arbitrium, who reproves him for presumption. William next inquires the nature of Charity, which Free-will defines.

3. Visio de Dobet.

Passus XVIII. Free-will quotes the Lives of the Saints, and shews that the friars are now far from being charitable. He alludes to the story of Mahomet's pet dove, to the fatal gift of Constantine, and to the miracles of Christ, ending with the charitable wish that Saracens and Jews may be saved.

Passus XIX. William is then shewn the tree upon which Charity grows, supported upon three props, the meaning of which is

¹ In the B-text, they dine with *Clergy*.

² In the B-text, *Anima* or *The Soul*. This is really a *new* vision, although, in the C-text, it is immediately subjoined to the preceding, without mention of the dreamer's awaking and again falling asleep. The poet also makes the "Visio de Dobet" begin further on, instead of here as in the B-text.

explained by Free-will.¹ Next follows a part of the history of Christ, His incarnation, miracles, and betrayal by Judas Iscariot. At this point the dreamer suddenly awakes. In his anxious search after Free-will,¹ he meets with Abraham or Faith.

VIII. THE VISION OF FAITH, HOPE, AND CHARITY. Faith (Abraham) explains how he became God's herald. and shews William the leper (Lazarus) lying in his lap.

Passus XX. Next William beholds *Spes*, or Hope, who, like Abraham, is in search of Piers. *Spes* and William journey towards Jerusalem, and behold a Samaritan riding near them. Soon they find a wounded man lying in the way. Faith and Hope pass by him, but the Good Samaritan (i. e. Charity or Christ Himself in the garb of Piers the Plowman) has compassion upon him, and takes care of him, leaving him at an inn called *Lex-Dei*.² The dreamer asks for instruction, and learns from the Samaritan how the Holy Trinity is symbolized by a man's hand, or by a blazing torch. The sin against the Holy Ghost is alluded to ; also the three things which drive a man out of his own house. Once more the dreamer awakes.

IX. THE VISION OF THE TRIUMPH OF PIERS THE PLOWMAN. *Passus XXI.* This, the finest *Passus* in the whole poem, is entirely occupied with the history of Jesus. With growing power and vividness, the poet describes the crucifixion, with the healing of Longeus, the struggle between Life and Death and between Light and Darkness, the meeting together of Mercy and Truth, Righteousness and Peace, whilst the Saviour rests in the grave ; a triumphant description of His descent into hell, [where Satan attempts to oppose Him with "brazen guns,"] and His victory over Satan and Lucifer, till the poet wakes in ecstasy, with the joyous peal of the bells ringing in his ears on the morning of Easter day.

4. Visio de Dobest.

X. THE VISION OF GRACE. *Passus XXII.* But alas ! the poem of Dobest reveals how far off the end yet is. The Saviour, having earned the names of Do-well, Do-bet, and Do-best, leaves earth,

¹ In the B-text, not Free-will, but Piers the Plowman.

² In the B-text, *Lex-Christi*.

upon which Antichrist is soon to descend. Piers *henceforth* denotes the whole Christian body, upon whom Grace or the Holy Spirit bestows various gifts. Grace makes Piers His ploughman, and gives him four oxen (the four evangelists), and four “stots” (the four chief Latin “fathers”); also four seeds, which are the cardinal virtues. Pride and his host attack the Church of Unity. All men are invited by Conscience to partake of the eucharist, but an impenitent brewer refuses to do so, and an ignorant vicar reviles the cardinals whom the pope sends from Avignon. A lord and a king are introduced, who justify their own exactions. Then the dreamer awakes.

XI. THE VISION OF ANTICHRIST. *Passus XXIII.* Before falling asleep once more, William encounters Need, who rebukes and instructs him. He then dreams once more how Antichrist assails the Church of Unity, which is defended by Conscience against Pride and all his host. Diseases assail all mankind; Death “pashes” to the dust kings and knights, emperors and popes, and many a lovely lady. Life, with his mistress Fortune, indulges in all kinds of excesses. He becomes the father of Sloth, who marries Wanhope. Old-age appears as the enemy of Life. The dreamer takes refuge in the castle of Unity, which is beleaguered by many foes, especially by Sloth and Avarice. The friars craftily offer to aid Conscience. At last one Flattery, a friar, gains admission to the castle, offering to salve Conscience of all hurts with soothing but deadly remedies, till Conscience, hard beset by Pride and Sloth, cries out to Contrition to help him; but Contrition slumbers, benumbed by the deadly potions he has drunk. With a last effort Conscience arouses himself, and seizes his pilgrim’s staff, determined to wander wide over the world till he shall find Piers the Plowman. Again the dreamer awakes, and here ceases the still unfinished history of the religious life of man.¹

¹ For a more detailed and exact analysis of the poem, as it stands in the B-text, see Professor Morley’s *English Writers*, vol. i. p. 758.

PREFACE IV.

RICHARD THE REDELES.

§ 1. THIS poem is now printed for the third time. It has already been twice printed by Mr Wright, viz. for the Camden Society, 1838, and in 'Political Poems and Songs,' 1859, vol. i. p. 368, with the title of a 'Poem on the Deposition of Richard II.' The edition of 1838 is the one which I have most consulted, and is alone referred to in the Footnotes and General Notes.

§ 2. I have purposely altered the title, because it is somewhat misleading. It is clear from the internal evidence that the poem was written *before* Richard was formally deposed; whilst the title given by Mr Wright is calculated to give the impression that it was written afterwards. The title 'Richard the Redeles' (i. e. Richard devoid of counsel) is simply taken from what is really the first line of the Poem, since the Prologue may be looked upon as a sort of preface.¹ In that line—

“Now, Richard þe redeles · reweth on ȝou self”—
the poet very happily strikes the keynote of the whole poem, which is entirely concerned with the 'redeles' character of the king and his favourites.

§ 3. The MS. from which the text is printed is, unfortunately, unique. It is MS. XIX. of the 'Piers Plowman' MSS., i. e. MS. Ll. 4. 14 in the Cambridge University Library, which has been already described in Pref. II. p. xx, to which the reader is referred. On observing the striking similarity between this MS. and the Oriel

¹ Cf. the Note to Pass. i. 1.

MS. described in Pref. II. p. xvi, I had at first a slight hope that some trace of another copy of the poem might appear in that MS. also, which is of earlier date. But the only trace discoverable is the somewhat significant one that a considerable number of leaves have been torn out of the MS., just where the poem ought to have appeared. There remained therefore nothing to be done but to reproduce the text of the Cambridge MS. as carefully as possible, although it is, unfortunately, a rather late copy, written, perhaps, towards the middle of the fifteenth century. A few obvious corrections have been made, but the actual readings of the MS. have been always recorded in the footnotes in such cases. I have also carefully collated Mr Wright's edition of 1838 with the MS., in order to correct the few errors which appear there. Thus I have corrected *ffordyd* to *ffondyd*, prol. 50; *y-lyste* to *y-lyfte*, i. 4; *gestis* to *gostis*, i. 25; *neft* to *nest*, i. 51; *caringe* to *curinge*, i. 96; *the* to *þat*, i. 103; *mals* to *maters*, i. 111; *And* to *As*, ii. 4; *roune* to *ronne*, ii. 5; *3iste* to *3ifte*, ii. 96; *and to in*, ii. 106; *rabeyn* to *raveyn*, ii. 159; *woves* to *wones*, ii. 180; *hic* to *homo*, iii. 32; *broud* to *brond* (or rather, *bond*, as explained in the footnote), iii. 94; *mouside* to *monside*, iii. 105; *cloped* to *cloped*, iii. 106; *hone* to *houe*, iii. 326; and *bouet* to *bonet*,¹ iv. 72; with a very few other slight alterations in spelling, not worth mentioning. I have also inserted the five Latin quotations (viz. at i. 8; ii. 52, 139; iii. 32, 128), which Mr Wright unfortunately omitted, owing to a peculiarity in the arrangement of the text by the scribe which requires careful attention, as will appear from the following explanation.

§ 4. The copies of *Piers the Plowman* and of *Richard the Redeles* in MS. XIX. are in the same handwriting, and are similarly arranged; and this arrangement can only be rightly understood by examining the former carefully. By turning to it, we at once perceive that the scribe adopts the singular plan, apparent in no other copy of the poem, of writing the Latin quotations *in the margin* of the MS., instead of leaving them in their proper place in the text. They thus have the *appearance* of being supplementary, or added as a commentary; they look like detached annotations instead of

¹ Mr. Wright makes this correction (but no other) in his edition of 1859.

forming an integral part of the text. Not observing this peculiarity, Mr Wright unfortunately considered them as comments, and omits to mention any but one, which he quotes in his Preface with a misreading that led him to take a wrong view of the scribe's sentiments, as will be shewn further on. If, however, these five quotations be considered, it will be seen that they all suit the context, and drop into their right places. Thus, the quotation from 1 Tim. vi. 10 is correctly cited as authorising the assertion in i. 8; that from Luke xi. 17 clearly refers to the word *deseueraunce* in ii. 50; that from Psalm x. 17 comes in well enough after ii. 139; the quotation following iii. 32 is clearly led up to by the words "as clerkis me tolde;" and lastly, the quotation from Mat. xi. 8 completes the sentence to which it is subjoined. These appeals to Scripture or to the writings of "clerks" are exactly in Langland's usual manner, and the quotations are to be ascribed to the author, and not to the scribe. The only remark by the scribe is at iii. 281, where "*nota, nota, nota,*" appears in the margin. This remark Mr Wright interprets as expressing surprise or dissent on the part of the scribe. It expresses, in my opinion, the converse, viz. admiration or approbation, and may have been simply copied along with all the rest. The remark "*nota,*" expressing particular approbation, abounds in MSS. of *Piers the Plowman*, and is not uncommon even elsewhere.

There are, however, a few marginal notes *in a later hand*, which really *are* marginal notes and nothing more; such as "Overwatchynge" against iii. 282; "Kew-kaw" against iii. 299, and the like. But all these were written in many years afterwards, and have nothing to do with the original text except as valueless comments.

§ 5. DATE OF THE POEM.

The internal evidence enables us to settle the date of the poem almost within a fortnight. The following lines in the Prologue—

"I had pete of his passion · þat prince was of Walis
And eke oure crowned kynge · till crist woll no lenger;
And ffor I wuste not witterly · what shulde fall,

Whedir god wolde ȝeue him grace · sone to amende,
To be oure gioure aȝeyn · or graunte it anoþer, &c."

shew clearly that it was written after Richard had been taken prisoner, Aug. 18, 1399, and before he had been formally deposed, Sept. 30 in the same year. Other indications of date are in the allusion to the execution of Lord Scrope at Bristol, July 29, and to the release of the Earl of Warwick, who almost immediately after is heard of at Newcastle-under-Lyne, August 25 ; see Notes to ii. 152 and iii. 94. Allowing a few days for news to travel, and observing the author's boldness in rebuking Richard, as if his chances of escape seemed but small, we see that the date is restricted very nearly to the first three weeks in September. We may therefore put it down as belonging to September, 1399, without fear of error.

The poem probably took at least some days to compose ; and so quick was the progress of events at that time, when everything was in the hands of Bolingbroke, who could act, when he chose, with amazing promptitude and unerring rapidity, that we may fairly trace an increasing boldness in the poet's language as he proceeds. In fact, the course of events must have considerably interfered with the poet's plans. He begins by addressing the poem to Richard personally, whose hand he intended it to reach (prol. 53), declaring that he would not publish it till it had been approved of (prol. 61) ; but he afterwards declares that a day of reckoning had come, and that God had judged evil-doers and restored peace (iii. 352—371). I here throw out the suggestion for what it is worth, that the unfinished state of the existing copy of the poem may be due to the fact that the poem itself never *was* finished ; that the course of events, in fact, cut it short in the middle. The news of Richard's formal deposition would naturally put an end to it ; the announcement of this fact would shew that it was quite useless to persevere in addressing a poem to a sovereign whose power was at an end. The lines

"And if ony word write be · þat wrothe make myghte
My souereyne, þat suget · I shulde to be" (prol. 76)

would already be out of date ; and we may well suppose, further, that the poem never was published after all, i. e. that copies of it

were not then multiplied. It is fortunate that the present unique copy has survived at all. Well might the poet exclaim, with creditable sagacity—

“It passid my parceit · and my preifis also,
How so wondirfull werkis · wolde haue an ende !” (prol. 17.)

§ 6. AUTHORSHIP OF THE POEM.

As to the authorship of the poem, I have not the slightest hesitation in ascribing it to William, the author of *Piers the Plowman*. That it must be his, and his only, was suggested to me years ago, on the first perusal of it ; and after considering the question with the utmost care, from every point of view, not once only, but many times, I am not only entirely satisfied on this point in my own mind, but considerably surprised to think that there could ever have been a moment's doubt about it, or any place for a contrary opinion.¹ I think it is fair to say, in addition, that I should be the very last person to admit as William's any lines which are not his ; and that, considering the number of times which I have read over his famous poem in one manuscript after another, I should be the very first person to distinguish between his original style and any imitation of it. In describing the various MSS. of *Piers the Plowman*, for example, I have often pointed to spurious lines, which are easily detected. Yet it is well known that Mr Wright, through the editor both of *Piers the Plowman* and of the present poem, failed to see their common authorship, and has, indeed, given his opinion on the other side. I think I shall best meet this difficulty by shewing how he came to be misled upon this point. I attribute it all to the fact mentioned above, viz. that he mistook a quotation to be a scribe's comment, which really forms an integral part of the text ; and, in addition to this, he entirely misread and misconstrued that quotation. Since this was his chief reason, if not his sole reason, for deciding *against* William as the author, the very same quotation, interpreted in a very different manner, *now* furnishes an argument in William's favour rather than otherwise. The quotation in question is that on

¹ I claimed the poem of “Richard” for William seven years ago, in Pref. I. p. xxxvii.

p. 487. The author says that the White Hart (Richard), in attacking the Horse (the earl of Arundel) and others, had acted unnaturally. "No man," he says, "ought to desire to do harm to them that are near of kin to themselves, or to wish to take measures that an ally of theirs should bleed. Such conduct is contrary to nature, as learned writers have told me :—*Propter ingratitude liber homo reuocatur in seruitutem, ut in stimulo compuncionis et in lege Ciuili*; i. e. on account of ungrateful behaviour a freed man is degraded to a state of slavery, both according to the sting of compunction¹ and in the civil law." The allusion is not quite clear, and I do not profess to make it so; but we can see the general drift of it. The poet is citing some author to prove his point, viz. that unnatural or ungrateful conduct is deserving of punishment, and that a man who does not know how to make good use of his liberty ought to be again enslaved. Of one thing, at any rate, I am quite sure, that the words *liber homo* can only be rightly translated by a *free man* or a *freed man*. And now see to what a curious result Mr Wright's misreading of the sentence led him. It just so happens that the word *homo* is written "h^o," by way of abbreviation, the *o* being perfectly clear, smooth, round, and regular. This he read as "h^c," an abbreviation for *hic*. But this alters the sense of *liber*, which is no longer an adjective but a substantive; we now get *liber hic*, meaning *this book*. Next, because the quotation, like all the rest, (amounting to several hundreds in the course of the volume) happens to be written at the *side* of the page, as already explained, he takes the whole remark to be a comment by the scribe, expressing condemnation of the book he was copying, as thus :—"On account of the author's ingratitude, this book is hereby recalled into slavery ;" whatever that may mean. And being thus once turned into the wrong track, he seems, as far as I can follow him, to have put a distinction between a supposed unpopular poem like the present, and such a popular one as *Piers the Plowman*. It is singular that the difference between the two readings "h^o" and "h^c" occupies no

¹ Can this be a reference to Hampole's 'Pricke of Conscience'? I think it probable. See ll. 53—64, 117—122, 161—168 in that poem, ed. Morris. Perhaps the exact reference may be found hereafter.

more space than might easily be covered by a pin's head ; nevertheless this variation makes *all* the difference, and shews how careful one has to be.

Having thus cleared the way by getting rid of this troublesome mis-reading, we may now consider what grounds there are for supposing the present poem to be William's.

And here, my only fear is that of overstating the arguments ; of producing, that is, so many, that the reader may suspect that I am conscious of a weakness in some of them. The fairest way of stating the case is by declaring that there is not a single point of *disconnection* between the poem of Richard and that of Piers the Plowman. In every point of evidence, whether internal or external, there is not, that I can see, a trace of suspicion. If, for example, this poem had been found *detached* from Piers the Plowman, or in the handwriting of another scribe from that of the one who wrote out Piers the Plowman ; if it had been in different metre, or not divided into *Pas-sus* ; if it had shewn a difference in the rhythm or ring of the lines, or any variation in phraseology, or style, or mode of illustration by quotations, or in any other point, then in that point or respect something might be said on the other side. I know very well how these arguments can be met. It is easy to say, for example, what is quite true, viz. that the mere fact of the two poems appearing together in the same handwriting in the same MS., proves no real connection between the two. But the right answer to this is, that, so far at least, it bars the disconnection ; that it is an indication which, however weak, is yet right as far as it goes, and, *taken in connection with all the other reasons*, is really of some slight weight, inasmuch as it answers the suspicion of disconnection that might, under another arrangement, have arisen. So also, with respect to the internal evidence ; here I am reminded that mere resemblance of phraseology proves no more than that one poem is an *imitation* of the other ; to which I only shall reply that such resemblances are at times far more minute than any mere imitator could have attained to. With these preliminary remarks, I proceed to shew what sort of evidence we have for connecting the poems.

First of all, I bring forward one argument which ought to decide

the whole question, viz. that the author of Richard *distinctly claims to have written* the Vision. This very important point has hitherto been completely overlooked.

He says (iii. 315)—

For, as reason and right · *rehearsed to me once*,
‘ Tho ben men of this molde · *pat most harme worchen.*’

The former of these lines is merely a poetical way of saying—“as I have already remarked elsewhere ;” whilst the latter is a quotation, verbatim, from Piers the Plowman, A. 3. 71, or B. 3. 80. Very nearly as significant is the expression in the Prologue, 82, 83—

The story is of no estate [of men] · that strive against their lusts,
But [of] those that follow their flesh · and their frail thoughts.

This may very well mean, “this story is not like my former one, the subject of which was Do-well, Do-bet, and Do-best, or the gradual perfection of the Christian life ;” for we could hardly better describe the *general drift* of Piers the Plowman than by using this terse summary by its author, that it is “a story of the estate of mankind, represented as striving against all worldly lusts,” and attaining to perfection in one instance only, viz. in the case of Piers the Plowman, i. e. Jesus Christ.

Of course this evidence was easily overlooked as long as it was not perceived that iii. 316 is quoted verbatim from the older poem ; but now that I have once given the reference, I do not see how this very convincing argument can be met.

I shall now arrange the different points of evidence under the two headings, (1) external and (2) internal.

(1) *External evidence.*

(a) P. Pl. is in alliterative verse. So is *Richard*.

(b) Both poems are divided into *Passus*.

(c) These *Passus* are of variable length, yet not dissimilar in length in the two poems.

Rich. prologue contains 87 lines ; this is rather short ; but the *Prol.* to A-text is not much longer, viz. of 108 lines.

Rich. Pass. I. contains 114 lines ; only 4 lines less than *P. Pl. A. 9*, which has 118 lines.

Rich. Pass. II. has 192 lines ; just 4 lines less than *P. Pl. C. 5*, which has 196 lines.

Rich. Pass. III. has 371 lines. So has *P. Pl. C. 17*.

(d) The first line of the Prologue to *Richard* begins with the word *And*. It contains also the pronoun *I*. The last line of *P. Pl.* also contains the pronoun *I*, and the one poem reads right on, as a continuation of the other. Thus :—

“And suthe he gradde after grace · til *ich* gan awake.

And, as *I* passid in *my* preiere · þer prestis were at messe.”

The words about “passing in my prayer” are clearly suggested by the lines in which Conscience declares he will become a pilgrim, wandering wide all over the world, and never resting till he finds Piers the Plowman.

(e) *P. Pl.* is written in a mixed dialect, so that the present tense plural commonly ends in *-en*, but sometimes also in *-eth*. Again, the past participles sometimes have *y-* prefixed, and sometimes want that prefix. These and other peculiarities appear in *Richard*. Thus we find the plurals *feblen*, *harmen*, in iii. 16, 18 ; but *steleth* in iii. 21. So, also, we find the p.p. *filled*, *Ioyned*, in i. 35, 38 ; but *ygraue*, *ydoutid*, in i. 40, 42. In *P. Pl.* we sometimes find *I-* or *y-* prefixed to past tenses ; cf. *I-knewe*, *Rich. i. 92*. The dialect depends somewhat on the scribe, it is true ; but we can see the scribe is right in some at least of these points, by the rhythm of the lines. It is hardly worth while to discuss the dialect further ; it is sufficient to observe that it is precisely the same as that employed in most of the MSS. of Piers the Plowman.

(f) In *P. Pl.* we find occasional Latin quotations cited as adducing authority for certain statements in the text. In *Richard* we find five such, as has been already explained. But I doubt if a single quotation, introduced in William’s manner, can be found in any other *alliterative* poem extant. Other authors introduce quotations by making them fall into the alliterative rhythm. William alone introduces quotations in *Latin prose*, just as freely as Hampole introduces them amongst his rimed verses. In *P. Pl.* the majority of these quotations are from the Bible ; in *Richard*, four out of the five are from the Bible.

Thus, in every external point, in the form of verse, the division into Passus, the length of the Passus, the linking together of the Poems as consecutive, in the dialect, and in the introduction of quotations, the two poems have every symptom of connection, and in each and every of these points disconnection is barred.

(2) *Internal evidence.*

(a) William must have been an old man at the time of writing *Richard*. He seems to have been forty-five years old in 1377 or thereabouts; and if we put his birth in 1332, he would be 67 in 1399. But he distinctly intimates his old age in the lines—

“For it falleth as well to fodes¹ · of four and twenty years,
Or young men of yesterday · to give good redes,²
As becometh a cow · to hop in a cage!” (iii. 260).

In his eyes, a man of 24 years old was but a young man of yesterday, whose counsel was to be despised.

(b) At the time of writing the C-text, William seems to have retired to the West of England again, and may probably have seen once more his “Malvern Hills.” We are *not* then surprised to find him at Bristol (*Rich.* prol. 2); though, had we heard of him at Norwich or York, we might indeed have wondered what took him there.

(c) The peculiarities of metre in both poems are the same. Such peculiarities afford close, cogent, and positive evidence, of a character that it would prove very difficult to demolish. I shall not take the trouble to carry this evidence very far, though it admits, at the expense of tediousness, of considerable accuracy. Some of the peculiarities are these.

(a) William seems hardly to care a rush for any rules, and at times daringly introduces lines in which the alliteration is imperceptible, as, e. g. in the line—

“And plastred hem so esyly · þei drede no synne;”
P. Pl. B. 20. 377.

Just so in *Rich.* 3. 137, 162:—

“Out of þe domes carte · as he þat þroff neuere.”
“But now þer is a gyse · þe queyntest of all.”

¹ children; lit. persons *fed*.

² pieces of advice.

(β) William often omits the chief-letter of the alliteration, contrary to all rule, as in *P. Pl. B.* 2. 42—

“And al is lyeres ledyng · þat she is þus ywedded.”

So also in *Rich.* 3. 113—

“Cursidnesse and combraunce · amenge þe yonge lordis.”

A few similar instances of careless alliteration may be found in other alliterative poems, as, e. g., in the first line of the *Crede*, unless *begynnyng* be, as I suspect, an error for *comsynge*; but they are *unusually* frequent in the two poems we are comparing.

(γ) William alliterates *f* with *v*. This is a very curious point, since similar instances *in other authors* are, at any rate, very few in number. I may observe that it was by observing this peculiarity that I first felt *sure of my ground*, as I then felt that I had laid hold of an argument which is a very strong one indeed, and will puzzle any one to set aside. Every critic must see the force of this.

I accordingly give several instances; the list, however, is not exhaustive. This peculiarity serves the further purpose of linking *all the three texts* of *Piers the Plowman* together.

Examples from the A-text.

And fetten vr vitayles · of þe fornicatours; 2. 155.

Till Vigilate þe veil · fette water at his eizen; 5. 223.

And made a-vou bifore god · for his foule sleupe; 5. 230.

Beop þreo faire vertues · and beop not fer to fynde; 9. 70.

Add to these two remarkable examples where the chief-letter is omitted or misplaced :—

Whi þat veniaunce fel · on Saul and his children; 3. 245.

And þe vernicle bi-fore · for men schulde him knowe; 6. 14.

Examples from the B-text.

Amonges foure vertues · þe best of all vertues; prol. 103.

But fet hym al with venesoun · defame we hym neuere;
prol. 194.

Forgoers and vitailleurs · and vokates of þe arches; 2. 60.

þan for ani any vertue or fairenesse · or any free kynde; 2. 76.

And avowed to fast · for hunger or for thirst; 5. 388.

I haue made vowes fourty · and forzete hem on þe morne; 5. 404.

I visited neuere fieble men · ne fettered folke in puttes; 5. 412.

Bothe flesche and fissche · and many other vitailles · 5. 443.

And made avowe to-fore god · for his foule sleuthe ; 5. 457.
 Veniaunce, veniaunce · forþiue be it neuere ; 17. 287.
 Tyl þe vendage falle · in þe vale of iosephath ; 18. 367.
 And alle þo faire vertues · as vyces þei semeth ; 19. 453.

And the following, in which the chief-letter is omitted or misplaced :—

And vigilies and fastyng-dayes · alle þise late I passe ; 5. 416.
 And the vernicle bifore · for men shulde knowe ; 5. 530.

Examples from the C-text.

Amonges foure vertues · most vertuose of vertues ; 1. 131.
 The ferst of tho ys fode · and vesture þe secounde ; 2. 23.
 And þo þat fynden me my fode · vouchen saf, ich trowe ; 6. 49.
 Freres folowen my vore · fele tyme and ofte ; 7. 118.
 The vylynye of my foule mouþe · and of my foule mawe ; 7. 433.

And the following, in which the chief-letter is omitted :—

Venged me fele tymes · oper brend my-self with-ynne ; 7. 74.

Examples from Richard the Redeles.

So full was it filled · with vertuous stones ; 1. 35.
 For venym on þe valeye · hadde foule with hem fare ; 2. 150.
 And fedith him on þe venym · his felle to anewe ; 3. 24.
 And þey folweth þe vois · at þe frist note ; 3. 56.
 At iche movinge fotte · venaunce þey asked ; 3. 108.
 So vertue wolde flowe · whan vicis were ebbid ; 3. 206.
 Devourours of vetaile · þat fouȝten er þei paide ; 3. 371.

This alliteration of *f* with *v* furnishes a simple and convenient test of William's workmanship. I must ask all who deny his claim to the poem of "Richard" to produce frequent instances of similar alliteration in poems by other authors before they can be entitled to any reply to their arguments.¹

¹ Lines in which *v* occurs throughout are very scarce. The following is an example :—

Thus veniaunce, veniaunce · verrey charite asketh ; B. 17. 289 ; C. 20. 271.
 But, in other poems, such is the regular form. Observe, for example, the following :—

In devoydyng þe vylanye · þat venkquyst his þewes ;

Allit. Poems, ed. Morris ; B. 544.

þis watȝ a uengaunce violent · þat voyded þise places ; *id.* 1013.

For more instances in the same volume, see B. 199, 544, 574, 664, 744, 863, 1151, 1280, 1288, 1311, 1358, 1548, 1713 ; and C. 71, 165, 333, 370 ; the only line which I observe to run upon *f*, *v*, *v*, is C. 331. In William of Palerne, we

Whilst treating of this point, it may be remarked here that the scribe of the unique copy of the poem uses *ff* nearly throughout instead of initial *f*. This *ff* is merely the way of writing the capital letter, and is therefore invariably used at the beginning of a line; see note 3 on p. xxviii. I have retained the scribe's use of it, because it has been suggested that he may have meant something by it; but I believe it to have been a mere freak, as it is used by the same scribe in his copy of *Piers the Plowman*. Some scribes have a special fancy for the use of capital letters; the "Romans of Partenay," for example, abounds with words beginning with capital *a* (*A*) to such an extent as to have caused serious inconvenience in the printing. If it be absolutely necessary to assign a positive value to the form *ff*, the most likely value is that of the Welsh *ff* as distinguished from *f*, that is, of the sound *f* as distinguished from the sound *v*. If so, the practice of the scribe differed, possibly, from that of his author; for William seems to have considered the *f*-sound as sufficiently near to the *v*-sound for the purpose of alliteration. In other words, he seems to have inclined to the Southern English pronunciation of *f*, for which *v* (*u*) is written so frequently in Robert of Gloucester, John de Trevisa, and the *Ayenbite of Inwyt*.

(δ) But a still stronger argument remains, viz. in the use of curious words, phrases, and expressions. Many of these have been pointed out already in the footnotes to the poem, pp. 469—503. Who but William ever used the word *culorum* (Rich. prol. 72; 4. 61)? Who else talks of *construing a clause* (1. 83), of *moving a matter* (1. 84), or of *comsing* [i. e. *commencing*] *words* (4. 35)? find lines founded on *f*, *v*, *f* (1. 1685), and *v*, *v*, *f* (1. 5197); but *v* occurs throughout in l. 639, and we have the curious linking together of *w*, *w*, *v*, in l. 1121. In the 'Alexander' fragment in the same volume, we find *v* throughout in l. 281; but my impression is that the author of these two poems avoided the use of *v* as being an awkward letter to manage.

Respecting the *Morte Arthure* and the *Troy-boke*, I am indebted to Mr Donaldson for some valuable notes. It hence appears that *v* in *Morte Arthure* is common throughout the line, as in ll. 41, 353, 1982; see especially ll. 2047-51 and 2570-3, where several lines running have *v* for the rime-letter. So also in the *Troy-boke*; see ll. 49, 339, 1249, 2140, 2145, 2432, 3502, 4017, 7030, 7045, 7092, 7121. But examples of *f* alliterated with *v* are very scarce; it is doubtful if any appear in the *Troy-boke*, and in the *Morte Arthure* ll. 772, 1983 seem the best examples; and perhaps we may add ll. 867 and 910.

Where else are we to look for *mischief is up* (1. 29), for *wroth as the wind* (3. 153), for *yhote truss* (3. 228), or for *bald reasons* (4. 70)? Even such words as *for-wene* (1. 27), and *y-luggyd* (3. 336), are not particularly common elsewhere. I quite admit that some of the resemblances are almost *too* close, as, e. g. in 1. 9, 1. 33, 2. 97, 2. 139, 3. 253,¹ where nearly the whole of the lines in Richard are merely copied from Piers the Plowman. These instances are such as an imitator would easily have achieved, and they would on that account induce suspicion, but for our knowledge of the fact that it had for years been William's practice to rewrite much that he composed, working up old material and new together. But when we come to some of the other instances, in which the verbal resemblances are only to be discovered by one who, like myself, happens to know thousands of lines of Piers the Plowman almost by heart, the case is altered; we then have internal evidence for a common author of the two poems of the strongest kind. Such, for instance, is the alliteration of *bragging* and *boasting* in C. 9. 152; *Rich.* 2. 80, 3. 186; of *clothing* and *quaintly*, A. pr. 24; *Rich.* 3. 176; of *reume* and *rain*, B. 3. 207; *Rich.* 3. 248; of *stumble* and *stand*, C. 11. 35; *Rich.* 2. 82; of *run* and *ride*, C. 4. 271; *Rich.* 2. 58; and of *rightfully* and *reason*, C. 2. 50; *Rich.* prol. 48. Other striking instances are these, which are rather beyond the reach of a mere imitator, who would hardly have thought such imitations to be worth his while.

Two *rysen rapliche* · and rounede to-geders; C. 7. 383;
And *ros* with him *rapely* · to riztyn his wronge; *Rich.* pr. 13.

Musynge on þis meteles · a myle-wey ich ȝeode;
And *meny tymes* this meteles · *made me* to studie; C. 10. 296.
This *made me* to muse · *many tyme* and ofte; *Rich.* pr. 30.

On god, whenne me greued ouht · and *grucched of hus sonde*;
C. 7. 111.
And not to *grucchen* a grott · aȝeine *godis sonde*; *Rich.* pr. 35.

Ther treuthe is, þe trone · þat *trinite* ynne sitteþ.
Lere it þus lewede men · for lettrede hit knoweþ,
That treuthe and trewe loue · ys no *tresour* bettere;

C. 2. 134-6.

¹ Excepting, of course, 3. 316, which professes to be, as it is, a quotation.

For all is *tresour* of þe *trinite* · þat turneth men to gode ;
Rich. pr. 46.

To whom but William should *tresour* have thus suggested itself
in connection with *trinite* ?

Or Poule þe apostle · þat no *pitee* hadde ;
B. 10. 424 ; C. 12. 268.
By preysinge of polaxis · þat no *pete* hadde ; *Rich.* l. 17.

Here the recurrence of a not very striking half-line is well worth
notice.

In like manner we may see great force in such a coincidence as
the following.

Lawe *withouten loue* · leye þere a bene ; B. 11. 165.
For legiance *without loue* · litill þinge availith ; *Rich.* l. 24.

There is nothing remarkable in a couple of words like *without
love*. But there is an extraordinary coincidence in the fact that
they come into the line *in exactly the same place*, and that they are
followed by half-lines of *almost exactly the same significance*. The
phrase *leye þere a bene* means "lay or stake a bean upon it, for it is
worth no more ;" with which *litill þinge availith* is a synonymous
expression.

It seems hardly worth while to pursue this argument further ;
since any one who wishes to see more examples of such coincidences
has only to look up the references given in the footnotes. It deserves
to be added that the finding of these references was a tedious and
difficult task. They may be obvious enough now that they are
given, but they were hard enough to find in the first instance.

(η) The last argument I shall adduce is by appealing to the
evidence of originality in the poem of "Richard." An imitator of
William might have copied his phrases, but how was he to attain to
his genius? It is a great satisfaction to find, moreover, that
William's power did not fail him in his old age. There are some
passages in his last poem which exhibit him almost at his best. I
shall merely give the references to some of these ; the reader may
then form his own opinion. See, e. g. Pass. i. 1—19 ; 25—59 ; ii.
162—167 ; 186—192 ; iii. 116—243 ; 324—337 ; 352—371 ; iv.
31—82. In particular, the passage iii. 116—189 is a well-wrought

piece of lively and sustained satire, whilst the contrast between the fashionable courtiers and Wisdom in his homely garb "of the old shape" (iii. 211—238) is excellent. The supposition of such passages being written by a poet of less power than William is like supposing that there may have been two Shakespeares. Few better things have ever been said than in his marvellous and bold substitution of the fashionable dresses of the courtiers for the courtiers themselves, as if the only part of the courtier that was worth mention was the dress which he wore. When Wisdom's life was threatened, it was not by creatures that could be called *men*, it was by the *sleeves themselves*! The severe and supreme contempt of the satire almost evaporates when we analyse it thus critically, but take the passage as it stands, and what could be better? Wisdom attempts to come near Richard's court, and what happens?

He was hallooed [at] and hunted · and yhote truss,¹
 And his dwelling ydemed² · a bow-draught from them,
 And each man was charged · to chop at his crown,
 If he nighed them any nearer · than they had him named.³
 The porter with his pikes · then put him outer,
 And warned⁴ him the wicket · whilst the watch dured.
 "Let's slay him!" quoth *the sleeves · that slid upon the earth*,⁵
*And all the beardless burns*⁶ · bayed on him ever,
 And scorned him, for his slaveyn⁷ · was of the old shape.
 Thus Malapert was mightful · and master of [the] house,
 And ever wandered Wisdom · without the gates.

Such was the end of Wisdom's attempt to insinuate himself into Richard's court.

Almost equally good is the description of the packed parliament of Sept. 1397, in iv. 31—82. When we read that "some argued against *right*" (iv. 45), it is clear that the poet, with consummate irony, means that "they *pretended to argue against wrong*," viz. against the wrongful imposition of inordinate taxes; though this actual *wrong* was a theoretical *right* on the part of the king who expected acquiescence. The king demands an extravagant sum of

¹ bidden to pack off. ² assigned.

³ him nempned = named for him, assigned for him.

⁴ forbade him, warned him away from.

⁵ Alluding to the long sleeves then worn, which even trailed upon the ground.

⁶ men. ⁷ mantle, cloak.

his people ; whereupon their representatives in parliament, knowing very well what they are about (for they will receive a bribe from the king on the sly) reply indignantly that they know their duty, that they are sent there to protect the people, that they can only grant money for a war or for some such emergency, and that, if they are false to their constituents, they will not receive their salary for attendance in parliament. But, alas ! all this virtuous talk was only “ for the manner, to make men blind ” (iv. 44) ; and the result was that they were paid both ways, by the people for their services, and by the king for *not* pressing their opposition too far ! And as for the members themselves, we might apply some of the lines, I fear, to men of our own time. What says the satirist ?

Then sat some · as a cipher in arithmetic,
That noteth ¹ a place · but nothing availeth
And some slumbered and slept · and said but a little ;
And some mumbled with their mouth · and knew not what
they meant . . .
And some were so solemn · and sad, of their wits,
That, ere they came to the close · encumbered they were . . .
And some were so fierce · at their first coming,
That they bent on a bonet ² · and bore a top-sail
Before the wind freshly · to make a good fare ³ . . .
Some wist well enough · how it would end . . .
Some held with the more ⁴ · however it went . . .
And some dreaded dukes · and Do-well forsook.

For my own part, I wish there were more of it ; and so commend it to the reader's consideration.

§ 7. ARGUMENT OF RICHARD THE REDELES.

*Prologue.*⁵ And as I [i. e. the author of *Piers the Plowman*] was passing through Bristol, I came to Christ Church, where I heard strange news. For whilst king Richard was warring in the west against the wild Irish, Henry entered England on the east side, whom all the land loved, and rose with him to right his wrongs. For myself, I had pity upon our lawful king, and, not knowing what would be the end of the matter, determined to write him a poem of

¹ marks. ² spread an extra sail. ³ journey. ⁴ majority.

⁵ The argument of the Prologue can only be well described by using the *first* person.

advice, recommending him to take God's visitation in patience. If it may please him to read over what I have written, I shall rejoice if it does him some good; and I will undertake to say that any prince in Christendom might learn from it, if he can understand English. If then, my liege, my book reaches your royal hand, deign to peruse it; for it shall not be published as yet, till wiser men have revised it. I hope it may profit both young and old; and if any word displeases my sovereign, I pray him not to mistake my good intentions towards him.

Passus I. Now, Richard the Redeles [counsel-less], have pity on yourself! Learn that allegiance is secured by conduct quite different from your own; not by exactions, robberies by your purveyors, or imposition of heavy taxes. Your courtiers are graceless "ghosts," that never wore armour nor felt a shower of hail. You came to your crown under most auspicious circumstances. Your crown was, as it were, adorned with pearls, rubies, gems, diamonds, and sapphires; it was powdered over with pity, and adorned with truth. But who can now tell what became of this crown? Your courtiers usurped the power that should have been yours; your people dared not complain. Men might as well have hunted a hare with a tabor, as have expected redress. Yet it was said of old time—'Where grooms and nobles are all equally great, wo be to that kingdom, and to all the dwellers therein!' Thus was your crown broken, by the power you deputed to your favourites. Had it been preserved whole, we should not have heard of murders amongst the great. But your counsellors were young and giddy men, who selfishly misled you to their own advantage; they cajoled you into setting aside your true friends, and loving false deeds. Had you but done as a prince should do, you would have hung the first suggester of falsehood high upon the gallows, yea, though he had been your own brother. But you encouraged knaves, and this greatly emboldened them.

Passus II. The worst matter was, that you dispersed so widely your badges of the "white hart." The wearers of this badge, your retainers, ran rife throughout your realm. But some of them stood in awe of the Eagle [Bolingbroke]; and, moreover, the moulting-

time of these harts was drawing nigh ; it was nearly time for them to lose their horns. It amazes me to think that you should have suffered your harts [retainers] to be so numerous as to be a plague to your people. They skinned the poor mercilessly, and displayed their badges to silence complaints. So that, as the townspeople used to say, for every *hart* that you marked on a badge, you missed ten score of faithful *hearts* of subjects. These badges of yours spoilt all the broth, and upset the pot amongst the coals. Hence, when you wished to lean upon your limbs [the commons], they failed you. Though Reason warns me to speak respectfully, I must yet say that, in my opinion, no upstart of a retainer ought ever to wear a mark or badge ; these should be reserved for good and great men, as, e. g. a just judge. I fear you have sought merely to multiply the number of your badge-wearers, and to attach them to yourself personally. Had the good Greyhound [the earl of Westmoreland ?] been cherished as a chieftain, you might have had 'white harts' enough in your service. But no wonder though 'head-deer' failed you, since you had no pity on the 'rascals' or lean deer. Meanwhile the Eagle [Bolingbroke] was fostering nestlings of his own, watching over them whilst their wings were growing. Then did this bird batter on the *bushes* [i. e. punish Bushy], and gather men as they walked on the *green* [i. e. seize and imprison Green], till all the 'scruff' and 'scrope' [an allusion to Scrope] was torn asunder. He so moulded the metal with his hand-mould, that these men lost the dearest limbs they had, viz. their heads. Even then this Falcon [also meaning Bolingbroke] was not fully fed. But the blear-eyed scoundrel who stole the *bag* [i. e. Bagot] made the Falcon flush for anger ; and, ere long, this rascal was caught. Still the Eagle continued his hawking, till he had soon subdued every kite and crow. Many snares and gins were set in all directions, catching men wherever they went ; and evermore the Eagle hovered on high, and clearly saw all the privy projects of the pies below.

Passus III. I return now from the Eagle, to speak once more of the harts, and how they came at last to misfortune. The worst of all faults are those committed against nature. Let me shew how this applies to the harts. When a hart comes to be a hundred years

old, he adopts this plan for renewing his youth. It is his wont to catch and kill an adder, and to feed upon his venom, by which means he succeeds in renewing his skin.¹ It is natural, then, for the hart to prey upon the adder; but it is unnatural for him to attack a Colt [Thomas Fitz-alan], or a Horse [the earl of Arundel], or a Swan [the duke of Gloucester], or a Bear [the earl of Warwick]. It is therefore because of their unnatural conduct that the harts failed of success. Now hear the story of the partridge. The partridge lays her eggs and sits upon them; but very soon another partridge comes and takes her place whilst she is off the nest, and hatches the young ones. Then the right mother-bird returns, and, at the sound of her call, the young birds desert the intruder and follow her.¹ In like manner, when the Eagle returned to his young ones, they forsook the king who had oppressed them for two-and-twenty years, and returned to their true father. The Swan [the duke of Gloucester] had failed [was dead]; the Horse [the duke of Arundel] was sore hurt; but the Eagle released the bear [the earl of Warwick] and all his 'bearlings.' Then did they 'gaggle' on the *green* [i. e. attacked Green]; they cursed the Earl Marshal [the duke of Norfolk]; and followed the Eagle everywhere, ready for vengeance. To return to Richard and his misdeeds. One great fault amongst his courtiers was in the tyranny of fashion and the expense of dress. Such men keep no money that comes to them, yet they clip the king's coin and make it scarce. Except their sleeves slide upon the ground, they curse the robe-maker. They even follow a fashion which may be described as cutting the clothes to pieces, so that they have to pay for the piecing of the cloth together nearly twenty times the price of the cloth itself. Surely such followers of the fashion are not the men to be trusted. Yet we find that lords bestow liveries on such men, and choose them, not for any goodness or worth, but for their bragging and boasting. If lords would drive away the 'dagged' clothes and the 'Dutch' coats, and reprove robbers, and choose worthy men, the world would mend. Then I beheld how Wisdom presented himself at court,

¹ These accounts of the habits of the hart and partridge express the received opinions of the period.

seeking admittance ; wondering, as well he might, at the number of the household retainers. But as soon as ever his true name became known, he was warned off the ground. "Let's slay him," quoth the sliding sleeves ; and all the beardless boys mocked him. Then was Wisdom wroth, and said they should never win grace. Counsellors, Warriors, and Labourers are the true pillars of a realm ; but lads of twenty-four years are not those whence Counsellors should be chosen. Rulers are chosen to uphold the law, not to spend the night in wakeful debauchery. But, fortunately, such misrule and riot cannot last for ever. Sooner or later comes a 'kew-kaw,' i. e. a change of fortune, when the robbers at last go to prison. Yet even then Bribery favours the bad, and mighty lords abet their evil followers. Fighting men from Chester pleaded in the courts in their own way, viz. with violence and intimidation ; and those who dared to complain were in extreme danger. But at last the Lord of heaven arose in His righteous anger, summoned His archangels and angels, His barons and His bachelors, and rode against evil-doers in royal array. Then fell a deep calm, and the heavens waxed clear ; and every man might see the moon move at midday, and the very stars pursuing after evildoers.

Passus IV. Where was ever a king who kept so large a household as Richard did ? So great were his expenses, that not even his unprecedented taxations could repay the poor for what his purveyors had exacted from them. But for credit, his men would have been drawn to the devil for the debts they owed. At last, when nothing was left but the bare bags, he determined to summon a submissive and corrupt parliament. When this venal assembly had come together, a clerk stood up, and asked them to vote supplies. Then some members pretended that they knew their duty, and made a shew as if they could not grant them ; others sat in their places like mere ciphers ; others were tale-bearers ; others slumbered ; others talked nonsense, or lost themselves in argument. Then there were others, newly elected, who were for dashing on at full sail ; but the mast bent, and they were glad to strike sail to escape shipwreck. Some 'knew how it would all end ;' others held always with the majority ; whilst another set could talk of nothing but the

money which the king owed to themselves. Others feared the lords, and forsook Dowell. [*Here the poem breaks off.*]

§ 8. THE CROWNED KING.

A sufficient account of this poem will be found in the preliminary remarks on p. 523. It is an early imitation of *Piers the Plowman*, written at Southampton, probably in June, 1415, and addressed, as I suppose, to Henry V. shortly before his famous campaign in France.

NOTICE.

THE "Parallel Extracts from twenty-nine MSS. of Piers the Plowman" (E. E. T. S. 1866) will be reprinted, with additions, in Part IV. of the present edition.

The method by which it is easily possible to refer from one text of "Piers the Plowman" to another is fully explained in pp. lxxvi—lxxxii of *this* volume. If, when the B-text is in hand, there be any difficulty in finding the corresponding passage in the C-text, see especially the table at the foot of p. lxxxii. For the comparison of all three texts by Passus, see p. lxxxiii.

Part I. This part, published in 1867, contains the Poem in its earliest form (A.D. 1362), called the "Vernon" Text, or A-text. It contains a Prologue and twelve Passus; but the reader is requested to observe that Pass. xii was *issued separately, at the end of Part II.*, on pages numbered 137* to 144*. In binding, these pages should be inserted between pages 136 and 137 of Part I. The MSS. used for Part I. are V = Vernon MS., the text; T = Trin. Coll. Cam. R. 3. 14; H = Harl. 875, Brit. Mus.; U = Univ. Coll. Oxford; H₂ = Harl. 6041, Brit. Mus.; D = Douce 323; and others, described in Pref. I. pp. xv—xxiv. Pass. XII. is found only in MS. Rawl. Poet. 137, and (partly) in U.

Observe that the text of the Vernon MS. (the best on the whole) does not represent the *true dialect* of the poem. The scribe has introduced many *Southern* forms which do not belong to it. The true dialect appears in the two later texts; which see.

Several extracts from this text, with Notes and Glossary, will be found in "Specimens of Early English, A.D. 1298—1393;" by Dr.

Morris and Rev. W. W. Skeat, Clarendon Press, 1872. These extracts comprise the Prologue, Pass. i., Pass. ii. 158—212; Pass. iii. 1—162; Pass. v. 1—263; Pass. vi. 1—45; Pass. vii. 234—311.

A few Errata have been detected in Part I. The only one of much consequence is at p. 66, l. 263, where *lene* should be *leue*. The following is a list of the Errata, several of which are trifling.

Page xxx. l. 16. For *rime-letter* read *chief-letter* or *chief rime-letter*.

Page xxxiv. l. 4. For *begins read* begin.

Page xxxvii. l. 8 from the bottom. The metrical dot should follow *ffodis*; see Part III., p. 495, l. 260.

Page 4, footnote to l. 69. For *him*] DH *om.*, read *him*] DH2 *om.*

Page 5, l. 78. Insert the metrical mark after *he*.

Page 9, l. 43. Insert the same after *whom*.

Page 25, footnote to l. 172. For *wola loke H*, read *wole loke H*.

Page 38, footnote to l. 192. For *I batride on þe bak UD*, read *I batride hym on the bak UD*.

Page 50, footnote to l. 133. Read & declyne it aftir U.

Page 51, l. 154. For *liue read* lyue.

Page 62, l. 185. The central dot is "inverted."

Page 66, l. 263 (both text and footnote). For *lene read* leue.

Page 68, fourth sidenote. For *cannot read* cannot tell.

Page 75, footnote to l. 29. For *see U 221, 259*, read *see ll. 221, 259*.

Page 77, fourth sidenote. For *jongleur read* jougleur.

Page 79, l. 98. Insert the metrical mark after *pilgrimes*.

Page 80, l. 122. The initial letter is not illuminated; it should have been printed the same as the first letter in the next line.

Page 93, footnote to l. 26. Read *hem* (1)] hym T.

Page 99, footnote to l. 135. For *catonistris U read* catonistris H.

Page 99, l. 129. Add a full stop at the end of the line.

Page 100, footnote to l. 144. Insert a long hyphen between *men* and *hadden*.

Page 100, l. 157. Add a full stop at the end of the line.

Page 102, footnote to l. 180. Insert a hyphen in *I doubled*.

Page 103, fifth sidenote. For *at times, read* at all times.

Page 107, l. 80. Read *þat þe* [Erl] Auerous, &c. The word *Erl* should no doubt be inserted, though the Vernon MS. omits it.

Page 108, footnote to l. 98. The words "*him V*" belong to the end of the footnote to l. 96.

Page 113, footnote to l. 62. The promised note to this line was accidentally omitted. It was merely intended to draw attention to the fact that the omission of the Latin words in MS. U is easily accounted for. They were to have been inserted (in that MS.) in red letters, and a space was left for the purpose; but the rubricator forgot to insert them.

Page 114, footnote to l. 78. For *lo—þe*, read to *Rooten in þe*.

Page 126, *footnote to l. 79.* For *see ll. 73, etc.*, read *see ll. 74, etc.*

Page 133, *first sidenote.* For *Where as read Whereas.*

Page 139, headline, and l. 4. For 75 read 76.

Page 146, *note to l. 68.* Add, the quotation is from Ps. lxxviii. 29 (Vulgate).

Page 146, *note to l. 85.* Transfer *heo*, so as to follow "have."

Page 153, l. 11 *from the bottom.* Insert the *in the vacant space.* Three lines above, for *commended read commended.*

Page 154, *note to l. 303.* Subsequently to writing this note, *the whole of Pass. xii* was discovered, and printed as soon as practicable, viz. on pp. 137*—144*, issued at the end of Part II.

Part II. This part, published in 1869, contains the poem in its *second shape* (A.D. 1377), and does not greatly differ from the text as printed by Mr Wright; but it is printed from a different MS. and contains more than 170 additional lines. The variations of Mr Wright's text from the present one are denoted in the footnotes by the letter W. The old text printed by Crowley also exhibits the poem in this second form.

Numerous notes and a full glossary to the first seven Passus in this volume will be found in my smaller edition of "*Piers the Plowman*," published in the Clarendon Press Series, 1869.

For notes and a glossary to the whole poem, consult Mr Wright's edition, and Dr Stratmann's *Old English Dictionary*.

The MSS. used for Part II. are L = Laud 851, the text; W = MS. printed by Wright (Trin. Coll. Cam. B. 15. 17); O = Oriel 79; R = Rawl. Poet. 38; C = Camb. Dd. 1. 17; B = Bodley 814; C2 = Camb. Ll. 4. 14; Y = Mr Yates Thompson's MS.; and others, described in Pref. II. pp. vi—xxx.

The pages at the end, numbered 137* to 144* belong to Part I, and should be inserted between pp. 136 and 137 of that volume.

The following is a list of Errata.

Page 5, l. 93. *Dele* full stop at the end of the line.

Page 36, l. 89; and p. 39, l. 161. For *presentz read presentz.*

Page 41, l. 214. For *presentz read presentz.*

Page 217, fourth sidenote. For *Clergy read Conscience.*

Page 289, l. 25. Insert *marks of quotation before to.*

Page 360, l. 363. Put a full stop at the end of the line.

Page 398, *note to l. 168.* In the quotation from Crowley, for *tell read tel.*

Part III. This part, now published, contains the poem in its *third* shape (A.D. 1393-4), and is printed from the same MS. as that from which Dr Whitaker's edition was taken. Hundreds of corrections have been made in Whitaker's text.

The MSS. used for Part III. are P = Phillipps 8231, the text; E = Laud 656; I = Ilchester MS.; M = Museum MS. (Cotton Vesp. B. 16); F = Camb. Ff. 5. 35; G = Camb. Dd. 3. 13; S = Corpus 293; B = Bodley 814; K = (Kenelm) Digby 171; and others, described in Pref. III. pp. xix—l.

For a reading of the contents of the autotype facsimile, see Pref. III. p. xxviii.

This part also contains the poem of Richard the Redeles (A.D. 1399), by the same author; also a short imitative piece by another hand (A.D. 1415), entitled *The Crowned King*.

The following is a List of Errata, as far as known.

Page 31. *Dele* † at the beginning of the first side-note.

Page 32, l. 88, text and footnote. *For* hym *read* hem.

Part IV. This part, now in course of preparation, will contain a General Preface, General Notes, and a full Glossarial Index. It will take, perhaps, two or three years to complete it.

Cambridge; Sept. 15, 1873.

THE VISION OF WILLIAM CONCERNING

"PIERS THE PLOWMAN."

Hic incipit visio Willelmi de Petro Ploughman.

[PASSUS I.]

IN a somere seyson · whan softe was þe sonne,
 Y shop [me] in-to shrobbis · as y [a] shepherdc were,
 In Abit as an Ermite · vnholý of werkis,
 Ich wente forth in þe worlde · wonders to hure,
 And sawe meny cellis · and selcouthe þynges.
 Ac on a may morwenyng · on Maluerne hilles
 Me byfel for to slepe · for weyrynesse of wandryng;
 And in a launde as ich lay · lenede ich and slepte,
 And Merueylously me mette · as ich may ȝow telle;
 Al þe welpe of þis worlde · & þe woo boþe,
 Wynkyng as it were · wyterly ich saw hyt,
 Of tryuþe & of tricherye · of tresoun and of gyle,

(Pages of Texts)

A I B I

One summer
 season, clothed as
 a hermit, I went
 abroad in the
 world to hear
 wonders.

4

On Malvern hills,
 tired of wander-
 ing, I [†] lay
 down in a lawn],
 where I soon
 fell asleep.

8

Then dreamt I a
 wondrous dream,
 that I [†] saw all
 the world, and

12

OBS. P = MS. Phillips (the text);
 E = MS. Laud 656; I = MS. Il-
 chester; M = MS. Cotton (Brit.
 Museum); F = MS. Camb. Ff. 5.
 25; G = MS. Camb. Dd. 3. 13; S =
 MS. Corpus (Camb.); B = Bodley
 814, &c. See Preface.

A dagger (†) in a sidenote marks
 passages peculiar to the C-text.

1—55. missing in I; 1—153. miss-
 ing in G.

2. [me MFS] PE om. shrobbis]
 schrubbes FS. [a MFSE] P om.
 as—were] a schepard as I were F.

3. Abit] an abijt M. as] of M. of]
 of his F.

4. Ich wente] Wente i M; Ich
 wende E. worlde] miswritten worle P.

5. And] I M. cellis] celles E;
 selles MF; sellys S.

6. on] in MF.

7. for] M om. wandryng] walk-
 yng M. F has—Me be-fel a ferly · a
 fayr-eye me þouȝt (cf. B-text).

8. And] M om. lenede ich] i
 lenede a-doun M.

9. And] M om. Merueylously]
 meruayles F. me mette] i mette M;
 mette of F. may] schal M.

10. Al] Of al MF. F transposes
 welpe and woo. worlde] so in E;
 world MF; wordle PS. See note to
 l. 13.

12. tricherye—tresoun] tresoun ·
 trichery F. of tresoun] treson SM. of
 gyle] gile MFS.

behold] on the
east side a tower,

Al ich saw slepyng · as ich shal ȝow telle.

Esteward ich byhulde · after þe sonne,

And sawe a toure, as ich trowede · truthe was þer-ynne ;

† and on the
west a deep dale,
where Death
dwelt.

Westwarde ich waitede · in a whyle after, 16

And sawe a deep dale · deþ, as ich lyuede,

Woned in þo wones · and wyckede spiritus.

A 2 B 2

There was also a
fair field, full of
all manner of
folk.

A fair feld, ful of folke · fonde ich þer bytwyne,

Alle manere of men · þe mene & þe ryche, 20

Worchyng and wandryng · as þe worlde askeþ.

Some of them
ploughed, sowed,
and worked hard ;

Somme putte hem to plow · and pleiden ful seylde,

In setting and in sowyng · swonken ful harde, 23

And wonne þat þuse wasters · with glotenye destroyeþ.

but some were
clad in gay
apparel.

Somme putte hem to pruyde · & parailede hem þer-after,

In contenance & in clopyng · in Meny kynne gyse ;

Others prayed,
and led an
austere life, like
anchorites.

In praiers & in penaunces · putten hem Manye,

Al for þe loue of oure lorde · [lyueden] ful harde, 28

In hope to haue a gode ende · & heuene-ryche Blysse ;

[As ancre & Eremites · þat holden hem in hure cellys,

Coueytyng noȝt in contrees · to carien a-boute

For no lykerouse lyfode · hure lykame to plesse. 32

Some chose
merchandise,

And somme chosen cheffare · þey [cheuede] þe betere,

13. *This line follows l. 10 in M.*
telle] schewe M.

14. *byhulde]* lokede M. *after]* an
hy to F.

15. *And]* I M. *trowede]* trowe F.

16. *waitede]* awayted E ; bihuld
M. *whyte]* written wyle P.

17. *deþ]* with deþ F. *lyuede]* leue
MFS.

18. *Woned]* þat woned F. *þo]*
þat MF ; þe S. *and]* with F. *spiri-*
tus] gostus F.

19. *ful]* so in l. 23 ; *here (and in l.*
22) written fol.

20. *Alle]* Of al MF.

22. *putte]* so in E ; putten M ; put
F ; *written pute P ; cf. l. 25. ful]*
but F.

23. *sowyng]* so in ESM ; sowing F ;
written sawyng P. in] F om.

24. *with]* written wit P. *de-*
stroyeþ] destroyeth F ; destruyeþ ;

distryeþ P ; destreizen M ; destreyen S.
25. *þ]* F om. *parailede]* appa-
railed F ; a-pareileþ M.

26. *contenance]* so in M ; cun-
tynance F ; contenance P. *þ in]*
& F ; of MS. *kynne]* kin F ; kynnes M.

27. *praiers—penaunces]* penaunce
and preieres M. *in penaunces]* pe-
naunce F.

28. *Al]* & F ; M om. *[lyueden*
ES] liueden M ; leuede F ; lyuend P.

29. *a]* MFS om. *gode]* so in F ;
goode E ; god M ; goud P.

30. *As]* And F. *ancre]* ankryes
M ; hankers E. *hure]* here EF ; M om.

31. *Coueytyng]* Coueytyng E ; þei
coueiten M ; & coueiteth F ; Coueyten
S. *carien]* karien E ; cayren F ;
caren S.

33. *þey]* and M. *[cheuede]* cheffede
P ; *but observe* cheued S ; cheueued
(sic) E ; cheuyd F ; preueden M.

As hit semeþ to oure syght · þat soche men þryueþ.
 And somme murthes to make · as mynstrals conneþ,
 þat wollen neyþer swynke ne swete · bote swery grete
 opes,

whilst some were
minstrels,

36

And fynde vp foule fantesyes · and foles hem maken,
 And hauen witte at wyll · to worche yf þey wolde.
 þat Paul prechij of hem · prouen hit ich myghte,
Qui turpiloquium loquitur · ys lucyfers knaue.

against whom
St Paul preaches.

A 3

40 B 3

Bydders and Beggars · faste a-boute zoden,
 Tyl hure bagge and hure bely · were bretful ycrummyd,
 Faytynge for hure fode · and fouhten atten Ale.

There were
beggars, too,
dissembling
knaves, who lived
in gluttony, sleep,
and sloth.

In glotenye, [god wot] · goth þey to bedde,
 And aryseþ with ribaudrie · tho Roberdes knaues;
 Slep & synful sleuthe · seweþ suche euere.

44

Pylgrimis & palmers · plyzhten hem to-gederes,
 To seche seint Iame · and seyntyys of rome,
 Wenten forth in hure way · with meny vn-wyse
 tale[s],

Pilgrims and
palmers were
there, who went
to Rome, and
had leave to lie
ever after.

48

And hauen leue to lye · al hure lyf-tyme.

Æremytes on an heþ · with hokede staues,
 Wenten to walsyngham · and hure wenches after;
 Grete lobies and longe · [þat] loth were to swynke,
 Clopede hem in copis · to be knowe fro opere,

Hermits, too,
went to Walsing-
ham, and their
wenches with
them; great long
lubbards were
they, and loath to
work.

52

34. *to*] in M. *þryueþ*] schulde M.
 35. *as—conneþ*] mynstralles be-
comyth F.

beddes F.

36. *þat*] M *om.* *wollen*] nollen E.
neyþer] nouzt M; nauzt F. *ne*] no
F. *swery*] swerie E; swere MFS.

45. *aryseþ*] rysen F; rysuþ S.
with] with FSE; vp wip M; wit P.
ribaudrie] ribaudize M; ribawdie F.
tho] þes M; as F.

37. *And*] þei M. *foule*] M *om.*

46. *seweþ suche*] foleweþ hem M.

39. *þat*] And þat M. *prouen*] preuen MFSE.

47. *plyzhten*] putten F.

48. *To*] For to F. *seche*] *written*
siche P; sechen E; seke MF. *of*]
at M.

40. *turp. loq.*] transposed in MF.

41. *zoden*] zede MF; zeden SE.
 42. *bagge*] bagges M. *were*] was
MS. *bretful*] MFE] bredful P; bre-
ful S. *ycrammyd*] i-fulled M.

49. *Wenten*] þey wente F; þei gon
M. *with*] wit P. *vn-wyse*] wise M.
tales] MF] talus S; tale PE.

43. *atten Ale*] atte nale FSE; at þe
ale M.

50. *hauen leue*] goten a licence F.
lyf-tyme] lif aftur M.

44. [*god wot* MF] tho gomes PS;
 tho wrecches E. *goth*] gon MFS; go
E. *goth—bedde*] þei gon to here

53. *Grete*] Large M; Lothly F.
 [þat M] & PFSE.

54. *Clopede*] þei clopid F. *knowe*]
i-knowe MF; yknowe E.

I found friars
there, of all four
orders, glozing
the Gospel,

A 4

covetous cheats,
whose traffic had
much to do with

B 4

money.
For since charity
has taken to
trading, many
strange things
have happened.

There preached a
pardonor, and
shewed a bull,
saying he could
assoil everyone.

And made hem-selue Eremytes · hure eise to haue.

Ich fond þer frerus · alle þe foure ordres, 56

Prechyng þe peple · for profit of þe wombe,

And glosyng þe godspel · as hem good lykede;

For couetise of copes · contrariede som doctors.

Meny of þis maistres · of mendinant freres, 60

Hure monye & marchaundise · marchen to-gederes;

Ac sutth charite hath be chapman · and chef to shryue
lordes,

Many ferlies han fallen · in a fewe 3eres;

Bote holy church & charite · choppe a-down swich
shryuers, 64

þe moste myschif [on] molde · Mountep vp faste.

Ther preched a pardonor · as he a prest were,

And brouzte forþ a bulle · with bisshopis seles,

And seide þat hym-selue · myzte asoillie hem alle 68

Of falsnesse of fastinges · of vowes to-broke.

Lewede men lyuede hym wel · and likeden hus
wordes,

Comen & kneleden · to kyssen his bulles;

55. *selue*] silue P; silf E; self MF.

56. OBS. *Here begins the Ilchester MS. (I). Ich—þer*] þer fond i M. *frerus*] þe freres FE; of freres IS. *ulle*] of alle M.

58. *And glosyng*] þay glosen I; And glosen M; & glosede F. *godspel*] so in E; gospel IMFS. *good lykede*] self lyken M; good liken I.

59. *som*] here F. *contrariede, &c.*] construed as þay wolde I.

60. *of—freres*] may cloþe hem ful warme I; ben meinteinours of freres M.

61. *Hure*] For heore M; þan I. *marchen*] meten ofte I; marchaundeþ M.

62. *Ac sutth*] & sup E; Seth F; Sith I. *hath be*] was I.

63. *ferlies*] merueiles M; wondres E.

64. Bot charite and holy chirch · halde hem bet togideres I. *choppe*

a-down] chaste F.

65. [*on* IFS] of PME. *molde*] þis world M. *Mountep*] is mountyng IF.

66. *Ther preched*] þo prechede þere F.

67. *And*] I om. *brouzte* M] brouzt F; broght IS; brozte E; broute P. *bulle*] brod bulle I.

68. *And*] He MFSE. *þat*] surely I. *hym-selue*] he M. *myzte*] myzthe P.

69. *fastinges*] fastyng IF; faityng M. *of*] and of I. *vowes*] fous S. *to-broke*] I-broke F; broken I.

70. *Lewede—hym*] þe lewed folc it lened I. *wel*] Som. *wordes*] speche IM.

71. *Comen—kneleden*] þei comen vp knelende I; Comen knelyng M; & comen vp knelyng F. *to kyssen*] and kissed IF; and cussedden M.

He blessede hem *with* hus [breuet] · and blerede hure
 eye[n], 72 Men came and
 kissed it; and he
 blinded their eyes
 with it, and got
 rings and
 brooches.

And raghte *with* hus rageman · rynges and Broches.
 Thus 3e 3eueþ 3oure golde · glotones to helpe,
 And lenep it to loreles · þat lecherie haunten.
 Were þe bisshop blessid · oþer worth boþe hus eren, 76 Were the bishop
 worth his ears,
 that would not be
 suffered.

Hus sele sholde noȝt be sent · in deceit of þe puple.
 Ac it ys noȝt by þe bysshop · þat þe boye precheþ,
 þe parsheprest and þe pardoner · parten þe seluer,
 þat poore puple in parshes · sholde haue, yf þei ne were.
 Persones & parsheprestes · pleynede to þe bisshop, 81 Parish-priests
 complain that
 their parishioners
 are poor now
 since the pesti-
 lence, and so they
 go to London.

þat hure parshen[s] ben poore · sitthe þe pestelence
 tyme,
 To haue licence & leue · in londone to dwelle,
 And synge þer for symonye · [for] seluer ys swete. 84

Bisshopes and bachilers · boþe maisters and doctors,
 þat han cure vnder cryst · and crownynge in tokne,
 Ben chargid with holy church · charyte to tulie,
 þat is, leel loue and lif · a-mong lered and lewed ; 88 Bishops and
 others having
 cure of souls live
 in London, even
 in Lent. (Cf. A.
 prol. 90.)

72. *blessede*] bunched I. [breuet
 IM] blasts F; bulles (*prob. repeated
 by accident*) PE; bulle S. *eyen* F]
 eyzen M; yen S; eye PE.

73. *And*] He M. *hus*] þat M.
rynges—Broches] brochus & rynges
 FS. *and*] an P.

74. *3e—3oure*] now gif 3e 3our I;
 3e 3euen 3oure M; gaf good men here
 F.

75. *lenep*] lenes I; leued F.
loreles] losels I. *haunten*] hauntes
 I; hauntede F.

76. *Were*] But were F. *oþer*] or
 IFS; and M. *eren*] so in SM; eres
 IF; eyen E.

77. *sholde*] ne schulde M; were I.
be—of] set so to ceyue I; be sende
 in the sizt of E.

78—80. I omits.

78. *Ac*] F om.

79. *þe*] Bute þe M. *parsheprest*]
 prest F. *pardoner*] he M. *parten*]
 departen M.

80. *poore—parshes*] þe pore peple
 in þe paressches S; þe pore peple in
 parshes E; þe pore in the parsche M;
 þe peple F. *yf*] hit ȝif M.

81. *& parsheprestes*] þer pressed
 fast and I; & prestus F. *pleynede*]
 playnep M.

82. *parshens*] parschones M; pares-
 schenes S; parischenes E; parissches
 I; parische F; parshen P. *ben*] bep
 E; were IM; was F. *þe*] IMF om.

83. *To—leue*] My lorde, graunte
 vs license I. *in*] at IM.

84. *And*] To IM; For to E. *þer
 for*] by F. [for IMF] þe wyle P; þe
 whyles E; whyle S.

85—94. I omits.

85. *boþe*] M om. *doctors*] oþere F.
 86. *crownynge*] ben crowned M.
and—tokne] cristendome to kepe F.
in tokne] to kenne S.

87. *Ben*] Bep E; & F. *with*] wit
 P; in F.

Some serve the
king in his
exchequer.

Thei lyen in londone · in lentene, and elles.

Somme seruen þe kyng · and hus seluer tellen,

In þe chekkere and þe chauncelrie · chalengynge hus
dettes,

Of wardes & of wardemotes · wayues and strayues. 92

Some are
stewards to lords.

Somme aren as seneschals · and seruen opere lordes,

And ben in stede of stywardes · and sitten & demen.

Conscience cam & acusede hem · and þe comune hit
herde,

† Conscience said
to them, "Ye
permit idolatry,
and false
miracles.

And seide, "ydolatrie 3e soffren · in sondrye places
menye, 96

And boxes ben [brought] forþ · [I-]bounden with yre, 100

To vnder-take þe tol^r of vntrewe sacrifice.

In menyng of miracles · muche wex [þer hangeþ]; 100

Al þe world wot wel · hit myzte nat be trywe: 100

Ac for it profitiþ 3ow to porswarde · 3e prelates soffren

þat lewede men in mysbylyue · leuen & deien.

Ich lyue wel, by oure lorde · for loue of 3oure couetyse,

† All the world
is the worse for
your covetous-
ness.

þat al þe world be þe wors; · as holy wryt telleþ 104

What cheste, & meschaunce · to [þe] children of israel,

Ful on hem þat free were · þorwe two false preestes.

89. *lyen* FS] *lien* E; *leyen* P;
liggen M. *in* (1)] at F.

90. *Somme*] And *summe* F.

91—157. *Most of these lines occur*
in I, folios 5 and 6; cf. note to l. 159.

91. *In þe*] At þe M; In F. *and*]
and in M. *þe* (2)] FS om. *chaleng-*
ynge] *challengeþ* M.

92. *þe*] M om. of] FS om. *strayues*]
so in MFE; *strayuus* S.

94. *And ben*] *Summe* arn M. *and*
(1)] M om.

95. *þe*] F om. *cam þe*] I om. *þe*
—hem] to þe kyng M. *acusede*]
cursed E. *hit herde*] *herde* hit PE;
but MFS have hit herde.

97. *And—ben*] 3oure boxes be F.
[*brought* I] y-set PME; sette F; set
S. *Ibounden*] ybounden E; i-bounde
MF; bounden PSI. *yre*] so in FE;
iren M; *ire* S; *Irne* I.

98. *tol*] so in IMFS; *tolle* E; *tool*
P.

99. [þer hangeþ MFI] *hongeþ þere*
PSE.

100. *world* MFEI] *wordle* P.

101. *Ac—3ow*] But hit *profijte* 3ow
M; Ac for it *profitiþ* FS; For *profyt*
in I. *soffren*] it *suffre* F; of holi
chirche (badly) M.

102. *þat*] *þat þe* E. *leuen*] *boþe*
leuen F.

103. *wel*] M om. *3oure*] *owre* S;
F om.

104. *world*] so in MF; *worlde* ISE;
miswritten wolde P. *wryt* IS] writ
F; *wryzt* P; *wrizt* M; *write* E.

105. *to*] come to M. [þe IMFS]
PE om.

106. *Ful*] Fil F; Fel E. *þorwe*]
for FS.

For þe synne of ophni · and of finéés hus brother,
 þei were disconfit in bataille · and losten *Archa dei*;
 And, for hure syre sauh hem syngen^{sin} · and soffrede hem
 don ille, 109

† Remember the
 fate of Hophni
 and Phineas (cf.
 B-text, p. 157),

And nozt chasted hem þer-of · and wolde nozt rebukie
 hem,
 A-non, as it was ytold hym · þat þe children of
 israel

† and how Eli
 fell from his
 chair, and brake
 his neck,

Weren disconfit in bataille · and *Archa dei* ylore, 112
 And hus sones slayen · anon he fal for sorwe
 Fro hus chaire þare he sat · and brak hus necke
 a-tweyne.

And al was for veniaunce · þat he but nozt hus chil-
 dren; 115

† because he did
 not beat his
 children.

And for þey were preestes · and men of holychurche,

OBS. *The want of alliteration
 shows that the true form of ll. 107—
 123 is lost; but we may conjecture
 what it was from the portion of it
 preserved in Lord Ilchester's MS.,
 which is as follows:—*

For þe synne of Offyn · and Fyneés
 his broþer,
 þat beten were in bataile · and
 losten *archa domini*;
 And for þair sire soeffrede · þe
 sennes þat þey wrought,
 And chastised not his children · of
 her euel chekkes,

[Two lines lost?]

He stombled down fro his stool · in
 stede þer he sat,
 And brak his nekke-bon in tuo ·
 for so þe book telleþ.

[One line lost?]

For þay were prestes vnpure · peres
 of holy chirche,
 Wrong on þe wrecches · wroken
 was þe harder.
 For-þy þou prelates I preche · and
 peres of holy chirche,
 þat soeffre men do sacrifice · and
 sory mawmets [honoure]
 And ȝe her ȝyours vnder god ·
 schulde don hem go[od worchen,]

Beþ war I warne þow witterly · for
 god wol wr[apþen hym,]
 And sende sorwe on þour-self · sad-
 lier to falle
 þan fel on Offyn or Fyneés · or on
 her fader awther.

107. þe—*ophni*] ophines sunne M;
 ofnyes synne FS. of (2)] MFS om.
finées] phynyes E.

108. *disconfit*] discunfited M; discumfytud S; discumfort F.

109. And] M om. for] fore P.
syre] fader (*wrongly*) M. *sauh*] si
 M; sawe F; say S. *syngen*] synge
 F; synne M; synny E; synewe S
 (*syngen* = *sin* is not uncommon in
 O.E.). *don*] to do S.

110. *wolde*] nolde M. *rebukie
 hem*] hem rebuke M.

112. *disconfit*] discunfited S; discunfited M; discumfit F.

113. *slayen*] weren i-slayn M; boþe
 sleyn F; yslayn E. *anon—sorwe*]
 for sorwe he fil to grounde F.

114. *chaire*] se F (*but chaire, pro-
 nounced shair, answers the allitera-
 tion*). *brak*] barst F. *a-tweyne*] on
 twynne M; a-twey E.

115. þat] M om. but] so in M;
 bet F; beet S; bete E. *but nozt*]
 ne bete E.

† I tell you
priests, who
permit men to
worship idols,
that God will
take vengeance
upon you,

God was wel þe wroþer · and tok þe rapere veniaunce.
For-þi ich seȝe, ȝe preestes · and men of holychurche,
þat soffren men do sacrifice · and worshepen Mau-
mettes, 119

† greater than
that which fell
upon Hophni,
Phineas, and Eli.

And ȝe sholde be here fadres · and techen hem betere,
God shal take veniaunce · [on] Alle swiche preestes
Wel harder and grettere · on suche shrewede faderes,
þan euere he dude on ophni · and finées, or [on] here
fader, 123

(B 5)

For ȝoure shrewede suffraunce · and ȝoure owene synne.
ȝoure masse & ȝoure matynes · and meny of ȝoure
houres 125

St Peter
deputed his power
of the keys to the
four cardinal
virtues;

Aren don vndeutlich · drede ys at þe laste
Leste crist in hus constorie · of ȝow a-corse meny.
Ich parceuede of þe power · þat peter hadde to kepe,
To bynden and vnbynden · as þe boke telleþ,
How he [hit lefte] with loue · as oure lorde wolde, 130
Amonges foure vertues · most vertuose of vertues,
That cardinales ben callid · and closynde ȝates,
Ther crist is in kyngdome · to closye with heuene.

117. *wel*] M *om.* It greued god
more greuously · veniaunce gret to
take F.

118. *For-þi* FS] For-whi M; For
þat E; For þei P. *seȝe*] seȝe M;
seye FS; sey E. *ȝe*] ȝow M. *men*]
prelatus F (*which improves the allite-
ration*).

119. *worshepen Maumettes*] sewe
mawmetrye F; mawmetes honoure M.

120. *And*] M *om.* F *varies*; see
note below.

121—125. F *omits*. The *whole
passage* (117—126) is *shorter and
better* in F, as follows:—

For-þi I seȝe, ȝe prestus · & prelatus
of holy church,

þat suffre men do sacrifice · & sewe
mawmetrye,

& ȝe schul fader hem fro þe fende ·
to folwe goddus wille,

For ȝe do nat ȝoure deuer · drede is
at þe laste, &c.

121. [*on SM*] in PE. *preestes*]
fadres M.

122. *faderes*] prestes M.

123. *euere*] M *om.* *and*] or M.
[*on MS*] in PE.

124. *shrewede*] wickede M.

125. *masse*] masses M.

127. *Leste*] F *om.* *a-corse*] a-curse
M; acorsy E. *of—a-corse*] curse of
ȝow I.

128. *Ich—of*] þo parceyued I of F.
of] þer M.

129. *To*] For to F. *and*] and to
IMSE.

130. [*hit lefte* M] it lefte F; lofte
PE; hit lost S; lefte it I. *with*] wit
P.

131. *vertues* (2)] oþere F.

132. *ben*] beþ F; hem M. *clos-
ynde*] closyng IFE; closede þe M;
closynge þe S.

133. *in*] in his M. *closye*] so in
E; close SMF. *heuene*] þe heuene F.

Ac of þe cardinales at court · þat [cauȝt] han such a name,
 And power presumen in hem-self · a pope to make,
 To haue þe power þat peter hadde · repugnen ich nelle;
 For in loue and in letterure · lith þe grete eleccion;
 Countrepleide it noȝt," quath Conscience · "for holy
 churches sake."

but as to the power of the men now called *cardinals*—I will not deny it."

134

þanne cam þer a kyng · knyȝt-hod hym ladde,
 The muche myȝte of þe men · made hym to regne; 140
 And þanne cam kynde witte · & clerkus he made,
 And conscience & kynde wit · and knyȝt-hod to-gederes
 Caste þat þe comune · sholde hure comunes fynde.
 Kyndewit & þe comune · contreuede alle craftes, 144
 And for most [profit] to þe puple · a plouh þei gonne
 make,

Next I beheld a king.

B 6

[† Conscience and Common-Sense] said the commons must support them. The commons provided a plough to till the soil.

With leel labour to lyue · whyl [lif] and londe lasteth.
 Than kynde wit to þe kyng · and to þe comune seide,
 "Crist kep þe, [sire] kyng · and þy kynryche, 148
 And [leue] þe lede so þy londe · þat leaute þe louye,
 And for þy ryȝtful ruelyng · be rewardid in heuene."

Then [† Common-Sense] cried aloud and said, "Christ grant, sir king, that you may rule well."

Conscience to clergie · and to þe kyng saide, 151

"*Sum rex, sum princeps* · [*neutrum*] fortasse deinceps; [† Then Conscience] ad-

134. þe] M *om.* at] at þe M; of FE. þat—han S] þat chaut han P; han cauȝt hem M; þat cauȝt haue FI; þat kaȝt hem E. a] F *om.*

135. And] An P. to] for to IFE.

136. þe] M *om.* repugnen] in-pugnen FS; repayne hem M.

137. and in] and M; as F. þe grete] þe lawe of þat F.

After l. 137 I insert—And he þat tolde me þis tale · to clergie was named.

138. quath] written quaht P; quod IMF. churches] chirche M; churchre E.

140. muche MF] meche P; moche S; myche E. þe] þo E. men] man F.

141. And þanne] þanne F; þer M. kynde] miswritten a kynde P; but see next line.

142. And] MF *om.* S omits last half of l. 141, and first half of l. 142.

144. Kyndewit] þe kynde wit F.

145. And for] And as for þe S. [profit F] profijt M; profite E; profytable PS. to—puple] of þe comune M. for—puple] so for profit and prow I.

146. With] Wiþ MF; Wit P. whyl] wyl P. [lif MFS] lyue PE.

148. kep] saue M. [sire MI] PFSE *om.* þy] þe F.

149. [leue ISMFE] lyue P (lyue = leue = permit). so þy] to þe S. londe] reme F.

150. þy] M *om.*

151. I omits. Conscience] þo conscience F. clergie] þe clergie M.

152. [*neutrum* IMFSE] miswritten venturum P.

dressed the king
in Latin.

*O qui iura regis · christi specialia regis,
Hoc vt agas melius · iustus, & esto pius !
Nudum ius a te · vestiri vult pietate,
Qualia vis metere · talia grana sere ;* 156
Si seritur pietas · de pietate metas."

(A 5) (B 9)

There were a
hundred ser-
geants in silk
hoods, law-
pleaders, who
never spoke till
they saw their
money.

B 10

Conscience and þe kyng · in-to þe court wenten,
Where houede an hondred · in houes of silke,
Seriauntes hij semede · þat seruen atte barre, 160
To plede for penyes · and poundes þe lawe,
And nat for [loue of oure lord] · vnlose hure lyppe[s]
ones.

þow myzt bet mete þe myst · on maluerne hules,
þan gete a mom of hure mouth · til moneye be hem
shewid. 164

B 7

Then a rout of
rats and mice ran
together to take
counsel.

Thanne ran þer a route · of ratones, as it were,
And smale mys with hem · mo þan a þousand,
Come to on counsail · for hure comune profit ;
For a cat of a court · cam whan hym lykyde, 168
And ouer-leep hem lyztlyche · and lauhte hem at wille,
And pleide with hem periloslich · & putte hem þer
hym lykyde :—

"We are all
afraid of the cat."

"And if we grucche of hys game · he wol greue ous
sarrer,

154. Here MS. G begins.

158. Conscience] þe conscience F.
and þe] to S. in-to] & to S. þe]
EFG om.

159. Here MS. I begins again, but
is a mere jumble down to end of the
Passus ; it contains lines 84—95 of
A-text, followed by 91—157 of C-text ;
and ends with lines 96—109 of A-text.

159. Where] so in SMFGE ; Wer P.

160. hij] hit MG. þat] to F. atte]
so in GE ; ate S ; at þe MF ; atte þe
(wrongly) P.

162. And] M om. [loue of oure
lord SMFGI] oure lordes loue PE.
vnlose] open M. lyppes] so in MFGI ;
lyppe PSE.

163. myzt] might I ; myzttest FGS ;

mitest M. bet] betere MFIG. þe] IF
om.

164. mom] word S. be] were G.
hem] ISMFG om. shewid] i-schewed
MG.

165. it were] i wene M.

166. with] a-mong M. smale—
hem] with hem smale mys F.

167. Come] þat come F. on] o S ;
a MFG.

168. whan] so in SMFE ; wen G ;
wanne P.

169. lyztlyche] lyztlyche P. at]
at his M ; alle atte G.

170. hem] some SFG.

171. And] M om. of] M om.
sarrer] so in S ; sarre M ; sorre G ; þe
sorere E ; alle F.

To hus clees clawen ous · and in hys cloches holde, 172
 þat ous loþeth þe lyf · er he lete ous passe.

Myȝte we with eny wyt · hus wil with-sette,

We myȝte be lordes aloft · and lyue as vs luste." 175

The saide a raton of renoun · most resonable of tonge,

"Ich haue yseie grete syres · in Cytees and in tounes

Bere byȝes of bryȝt gold · al aboute hure neckes,

And colers of crafty werke · boþe knyȝtes and squiers.

Were þer a belle on hure byȝe · by iesus, [as] me

þynkeþ,

180

Men myȝte wite wher þei wenten · and hure wey roume.

Ryȝt so," quap þe raton · "reison me shewith,

A belle to byggen of bras · oþer of bryȝt seluer,

And knytte it on a coler · for oure comune profit, 184

And honge aboute þe cattys hals · þanne hure we mowe

Wher he ryt oþer rest · oþer romyþ to pleye.

And yf hym luste for to layke · þanne loke we mowe,

And appere in hus presence · [whyle] hym pleye lykeþ,

And yf he wratthe, we mowe be war · and hus way

roume."

189

A rat of renown said, "I have seen sires in cities wear collars on their necks.

A bell might be hung on to such a collar.

B 8

Let us put a collar and bell on the cat's neck.

When he is playful, we can stay; when wrathful, we must get out of his way."

172. *To*] In-to M; And with S; & to F. *clees*] cleon S; cleos M; claws FE. *clawen*] clawy G; clochen F. *cloches*] clawes G; campus F.

173. *loþeth*] shal loþe M. *þe*] oure M. *er*] or FES; ar G. (*ous* or *ows* = *us*.)

174. *Myȝte*] But myȝt F. *with*] wiþ MFG; with ES; *miswritten* wit P. *wyt* SMFG] witt E; *spelt* wyȝt P. *with-sette*] to with-sette PEFS; but MG omit to. Cf. B-text.

175. *myȝte be*] were M. *and*] to M. *luste* MF] leste G; lusten (*wrongly*) PES.

176. *resonable*] resnable G; renable F.

178. *bryȝt*] grete S. *al*] G om.

180. *on*] yn G. [*as* SMFG] PE om.

181. *Men*] Me M. *wite*] i-wite M; wete F. *wher* M] where FGE; wer PS.

182. *þe raton*] þat rat M. *shewith*] þinkeþ M.

183. *A—byggen*] To bygge a belle G. *oþer*] or SMF.

184. *knytte*] honge M.

185. *honge*] binde hit M; honge hit S. *hals*] nekke (*with hals above it*) S. *hure*] here M; heere F; hyre G; huire S. *þanne hure*] heere þanne F.

186. *Wher*] Where SGE; Wheper MF; Wer P. *ryt*] ritt E; rijt M; ryȝt G; rist F. *oþer* (1)] or S. *oþer* (2)] or SMF.

187. *for*] M om. *layke*] walke E. *loke*] here M.

188. *appere—presence*] in his presence appere F. [*whyle* SE] whil F; þe while MG; wil P.

189. *he*] hym G. *wratthe*] wreþ-þuþ G; wrethe M; wrap hym E. *roume*] rowmye E. *hus—roume*] of hys wey renne G.

But when the
bell was bought,
never a rat durst
hang it on the
cat's neck.

Al þe route of ratons · to þys reison a-sentede,
Ac þo þe belle was ybouzt · and [on] þe byze honged,
Ther was no raton of al þe route · for al þe reame of
fraunce, 192
[þat durste] haue bounde þe belle · a-boute þe cattes
necke,
Ne haue it hongid a-boute hus hals · al engelond to
wynne;

So theirs was
labour lost.
A mouse ad-
dressed the rout,
saying,

And leten hure labour ylost · and al hure longe trauail.
A mous þat muche good couthe · as me þo pouzte, 196
Strok forþ sturneliche · and stod by-for hem alle,
And to þe route of ratones · rehercede þuse wordes,
"Thauh we hadde yeullid þe catte · ȝut sholde þer
come anoþer,

"If we kill the
old cat, a young
one will come;

To cracchen ous & al oure kynde · þouh we crepe vnder
benches. 200

For-þi ich consaile, for comune profit · lete þe cat
worthe,

And neuere be we so bold · þe belle hym to shewe.

and it is very
bad for the court
B 9
where a kitten
reigns.

For ich hurde my syre sayn · seuen ȝer passed, 204
'Ther þe cat nys bote a kyton · þe court is ful
elynge;'

Witnesse of holy wryt · who so can rede—

190. þe] þis MG. ratons] þe
ratons PS; but MFGE omit þe.

191. þo] M om. ybouzt] spelt
ybouzth P. [on SMFG] in E; P om.
honged] hongede P.

192. was] ne was M. of] in SMF.
al þe (1)] þat M.

193. [þat durste M] þat durst F;
þat dorste S; þat derste GE; þa
þerste P. bounde] honget M.

194. Ne—hongid] No hongut hit
M; Ne hangid hit F. engelond]
engelondnd P.

195. And] þei M; And þanne S;
þo þey G. leten] letun hy S; letten
al M. al] M om. trauail] studize
MG; tyme F.

196. good] G om. couthe] coude
MF. pouzte MFG] spelt þouth P;

þoȝt E.

197. forþ] forþ þo M.

198. þe] þis M.

199. yeullid] culde F; culd SG.
þe] a F.

200. cracchen] so in M; chracchen
P; cracche SFG; cracchy E. crepe]
crope E.

201. For-þi F] For-þy SG; For-
whi M; For þei P. worthe] y-worþe
GM.

202. neuere—ne] be we neuer F.

203. passed] a-passed MG; I-passid
F

204. nys] is SMFG. ful] wel M.

205. Witnesse] Withnesseþ M;
Witnessith F. of] hit M; hit wel
F; þerwith G; at S. rede] hit rede
M; wel rede F.

Ue terre ubi puer est rex: Salamon.

Eccles. x. 16.

Ich sigge it for me," quap þe mous · "ich seo so
muchel after,

Shal neuere þe cat ne þe kyton · by my consail, be
greued,

Ne carpen of hure colers · þat costide me neuere ; 208
And þauh it costned me catel · by-knowe ich ne
wolde,

I do not pay
my share for the
collar.

Bote soffren and sigge nouht · and so is þe beste,

Tyl myschief amende [hem] · þat meny men chastep.

[For] meny mannys malt · we mys wolde distrye, 212
And 3e, route of ratons · of rest men a-wake,

Mice and rats are
a nuisance as
well as cats."

Ne were þe cat of þe court · And 3onge Kytones to-
warde ;

For hadde 3e ratones 3oure reed · 3e couthe nat ruelie
3ow-selue."

What this metals by-meneþ · 3e men þat both
murye,

216

Diuine 3e, for ich ne dar · by dere god almy3ty !

3ut mette me more · of mene and of ryche,

As barouns & burgeis · and bonde-men of þroupes,

Al ich sauh slepyng · as 3e shullen hure after ; 220

Bope bakers and brywers · bouchers and oþere,

A G B I O

I saw too barons,
burgesses, bond-
men,

206. *sigge*] seye SG ; sei MF. *it*]
M *om.* *seo*] se MFGE.

207. *þe—þe*] no cat ne M. *þe* (2)]
E *om.* *þe—kyton*] noþer þe cat þe
kitoun noþer F. *greued*] greuede P.

208. *costide*] costed E ; costned S ;
costnede F ; costunde M ; costnyþ G.

209. *costned*] coste F.

211. *Tyl*] Tyl þat G. *myschief*]
god M. *amende* SMFG] amenden
PE. [*hem* SMFGE] hym P.

212. [*For* SMFG] And PE. *man-
nys*] mannes E ; a *mannus* F ; menes
M. *mys* MFG] myse E ; muys S ;
myes P.

213. *3e route*] þe rowtus F. *awake*]
wake S.

214. *Ne were*] Nere F.

215. *ratones*] *rattus* al F. *ruelie*]
ruly E ; rule SG ; rewele M ; rewle F.

216. *What* SMFE] Wat PG.
metals] metels M ; metelus SF ;
metaus E. *by-meneþ*] menyþ G.
both] buþ S ; beþ E ; byþ G ; ben
M ; be F ; *miswritten* but P.

217. *Diuine*] Deme E.

218. *3ut*] And 3ut M ; & 3it F.
mette SMFGE] mete P. *me*] i MF.

219. *As*] Of M. *þe burgeis*] of
burgeises M. *þroupes*] þropus SF ;
þropes ME ; thorpys G.

220. *ich sauh*] saw I F. *hure*]
i-here M ; here F. *3e—hure*] I schal
telle S.

221. *Bope*] M *om.*

bakers, butchers,
brewers, and
others; and
ditchers who lead
ill lives, and sing
idle songs.

Webbesters and walkers · and wynners with handen,
As taylours and tanners · and tyliers of erthe,
As dikers and deluers · þat don here dedes ille, 224
And dryueþ forþ hure daies · with ‘*deux saue dame
emme!*’

Cooks were cry-
ing “hot pies,”
and taverners
were praising
their wine.

Kokes and here knaues · crieden ‘hote pyes, hote!
Good goos and grys · go we dyne, gowe!’
Tauerners ‘a tast for nouht’ · tolden þe same, 228
‘Whit wyn of oseye · and of gascoyne,
Of þe ruele and of þe rochel wyn · þe roste to defye.’
Al pis ich sauh slepynge · and seuene sythes more.

Explicit passus primus.

222. *Webbesters*] As *websterus* F.
and] an P. *handen*] so in E; *honn-*
dus S; *hondes* M; *handes* F; *handys*
G.

223. *As*] M *om.* *tanners*] *tauer-*
nerus S. *of*] þe (*sic*) SF.

224. *As*] M *om.* *dikers—deluers*] *deluers*
and *dykers* G. *þat*] þei M.

225. *hure daies*] þe longe day M;
þe deerne day F. *saue*] vous saue G.

226. *crieden*] crien M.

227. *goos—grys*] griis and gees
M. *go we*] with gowe F. *dyne*] to

dyner S.

228. *tolden*] þei tolde F. *þe*] þat
M; me þe G.

229. *Whit*] With M; With white
F. *of* (2)] eke of M.

230. *Of*] & of F. *ruel*] ruel E;
rule SG; rewle M; ryne F. *of*] *SMF om.* *þe rochel*] rochel SMF.
wyn] MG *om.* *þe* (3)] E *om.*

COLOPHON. So in other MSS.;
Explicit Passus primus de visione
Petri le plouhman G.

PASSUS II.

Incipit passus secundus.

WHat þe montayne by-meneþ · and þe merke dale,
And þe feld ful of folke · ich shal 3ow fayre
shewe.

A loueliche lady of lere · in lynnyn y-clopid,
Cam doun fro þat castel · and calde me by name,
And seide, “wille, slepest þow · syxt þow þis puple,
How busy þai ben · a-boute þe mase?”

The most partie of þe puple · þat passeþ on þis erthe,
Haue thei worship in þis worlde · þei willen no betere; 8
Of oþer heuene þan here · þei holden no tale.”

Ich was aferd of hure face · thauh hue faire were,
And saide, “mercy, ma dame · what may þys be to
mene?”

A 7 B 11

I now tell the
meaning of the
mountain, the
dale, and the
field.

A lovely lady
came down from
a castle, and
bade me look at
the people;

most of whom
seek only worship
in this world (here
imaged by a
field).

I was afraid, and
asked what it all
meant.

11

TITLE. *So in IFES; Hic incipit secundus passus de uisione Willelmi de petro plouhman M.*

1. *by-meneþ*] meenes I.

2. *þe*] al þe I.

4. *Cam*] Com hir I. *doun*] a-doun M. *fro*] of G. *þat castel*] a castel M; þe clif FS; þat hul I. *calde*] clepede M. *by name*] my name E; faire MIFS.

5. *wille*] sone IB. *syxt*] sixst FS; seest M; seist E. *syxt þow*] seestow I. *þow*] þou nat F.

6. *How*] & how F. *þai*] þat þei MIF. *a-boute*] al a-bouȝte M; and al aboute I; ryȝt a-boute G.

7. *partie*] part F. *þe*] þis MG.

þis] I om.

8, 9. F transposes these lines.

8. *Haue*] *so in* IFEG; Hadden SM; Haued P. *in*] on G. *worlde*] erþe G. *þei—betere*] wolde þey no betre I; þei wesche no more F. *wil-len*] wilneþ MB.

9. *here*] here is IF. *þei holden*] holden þei MIF.

10. *hue*] sche MIFS; heo G; 3o E.

11, 12, 13. And seide, merci, madame · For mariȝe loue of heuene, Þe tour on þe toft · what mai it bi-mene?

þat tour, quod þat ladi · treuþe is þer-inne M.

11. *what*] wat P.

"In the tower,"
she said, "is
Truth, i. e. God
the Creator,

"The tour vp-on toft," quap hue · "treuthe ys þer-ynne,
And wolde þat 3e wrouhte · as hus word techep.

For he is fader of faith · and formour of alle ;

To be faith-ful to hym · he 3aue 3ow fyue wittes

For to worshepen hym þer-with · while 3e lyuen here. 16

Wherefore he het þe elementes · to helpe 3ow alle tymes,

And brynge forth 3oure bylyue · boþe linnen and
wollen,

And in mesure, þouh hit muche were · to make 3ow
at ese. 19

Three things are
really needful,—

B 12
meal, clothes,
and drink.

He comaundid of his cortesy · in comune þre þynges,
Aren non nudful bote þo þre · nempnen hem ich þenke,

And rekene hem by rewe · reherce hem wher þe lykep.

The first of þo ys fode · and vesture þe secounde,

And drynke þat do þe good · ac drynk nat oute of
tyme. 24

But beware of
drink, and re-
member Lot's
sin,

Lo ! loth in hus lyue · þorw lecherouse drynke

Wikkydlich wroghte · and wratthede god al-mygthig.

which was caused
by drunkenness.

In hus dronkenesse a day · hus douhtres he dighte,

And lay by hem boþe · as þe bok telleþ. 28

In hus glotenie [he] by-gat · [gerles] þat weren churles,

12. *vp-on*] vpon þe ISG ; on þe
MF. *hue*] sche IFS ; heo G ; 3o E.

13. *And*] He M. *as—techep*] as
his wille were M ; after hys wordes G.

14. *faith*] fey G.

15. *faithful*] feyful G. *to*] wyth G.

16. *For*] M *om.* *while*] so M ;
whyte S ; þe whiles I ; whil þat F ;
wile P. *lyuen*] be F.

17. *Wherefore*] Werfore P ; þerfore
E. *þe elementes*] so MB ; þelementz
I ; þe element FS ; þe elemens PE ;
þat element G. *to*] schold G ; M *om.*
alle] at al E.

18. *bylyue*] byleue FEG. *lynnen*
—*wollen*] wollen & linnen SF.

19. G omits. *And*] MF *om.* *hit*
I *om.*

20. *He*] I *om.*

21. *Aren*] Ben M ; Were G. *nud-
ful—þre*] so nedful as þo M. *þre*
F *om.* *nempnen*] and nemene M ; &

nemne I ; & nempne F ; nemme S ;
nemny G.

22. *wher*] wer P.

23. *The*] Ther P. *of þo*] of hem
M ; I *om.* *and*] an P.

24. *do þe*] doth þe I ; it dooþ F.
ac] and IG ; but MF. *drynk*] do
hit M.

25. *Lo*] Loke how M ; I *om.*
loth] loot S. *drynke*] drenke P.

26. *wroghte*] he wrouzte M. *Wik-
kydlich wroghte*] Wrouzt wikkede-
liche F.

27. *drunkenesse*] so MI ; drunken-
esse F ; dronknesse PSG ; derknesse
(!) E. *a*] on a FB. *douhtres*] doutren
M ; douȝtryn G.

29. [*he* MFS] PIEG *om.* *by-gat*
gat MF. [*gerles* I] gurles MG ; gur-
lus FS ; PE *om.* *weren*] *miswritten*
wereren P. *churles*] þrallus F.

And al he wited þe wyne · hus wikked dede.

*Inebriamus eum uino et dormiamus cum eo, ut
seruare possimus de patre nostro semen.
Genesis.*

Thorgh wyn and þorw wommen · þer was loth encom-
bred ;

Thus was Lot
encumbered.

For-þy dred dilitable drynke · boþe day and nyȝtes. 32

Mesure is medecyne · þauh þou muche wylne.

Moderation is
wholesome,
though the
appetite be keen.

Al is noȝt good to þe gost · þat þe gut Askeþ,

Ne liflode to þe licame · þat leof is to þe saule ;

Leue noȝt þy licame · for a lyere hym techeth,

36 Believe not thy
body, which is
A 9
leagued with the
fiend ; therefore
beware."

þat is þe wrecchede worlde · þat wolde þe bygyle ;

For þe fend and þy flesh · folwen to-gederes,

And þat [seep] þe saule · and [seith] hit the in herte,

And wisseþ þe to be ware · and what wolde þe de- **B 13**
ceyuye."

40

"A ma dame, mercy," quap ich · "me lykeþ wel ȝoure
wordes,

I thanked her,
and asked her to
whom the
treasures of the
world belonged.

Ac þe moneye of þis molde · þat men so faste kepeþ,

Telle ȝe me now to wham · þat tresour by-longeþ ?"

"Go to þe gospel," quap hue · "and see what god
sayde,

She bade me go
to the gospel, and
read how Christ
was tempted by

44

Whanne þe puple aposed hym · of a peny in þe temple,

30. *wited*] witte hit M; wyted hit
S; witte I; wyste (*over erasure*) G.
hus] þat F; þys G. *et dormiamus*
dormiamusque I. *seruare*] reseruare
FS.

31. *wommen*] womman MI. *loth*]
lot SE. *encombred*] y-comeryd G.

32. *For-þy*] For-whi M; F *om.*
day] so IFEG; daies M; dayuns S.

33. *is*] is a P; *but* MIFSEGB omit
a. *wylne*] ȝerne I.

34. *gut*] so MFSEB; gout P; got
G; gost (*by mistake*) I.

35. *to* (2)] I *om.*

36. *Leue* FE] Lyef P; Leef IS;
Loue M.

37. *þat*] Which I. *is*] G *om.*
þe (1)] þis MSEG. *þat*] MISG *om.*

39. *þat*] F *om.* [*seep* EB] seþ S;
seyþ PG; sleþ M; sickith F (*þat seep*
= Moderation looks after). [*seith*
F] seiþ EB; seyþ SG; saith I; sette
M; setth P. M *has*—And þat sleþ
þi soule · and þow sette hem in þin
herte.

40. *and*] IG *om.* M *has*—I wisse
þe þat þou be i-war · leste þei þe dis-
seieue.

42. *of*] on M. *kepeþ*] biholden
M.

43. *Telle*] Telleþ MI; Tellith F.
ȝe] MIF *om.* *by-longeþ*] apendeþ M;
befallith F.

44. *hue*] sche MIS; scheo F; heo
G; ȝo E.

45. *Whanne*] Wanne P. *of*] with F.

being shown a
penny.

And god askede of hem · whas was þe coygne.

‘Cesares,’ þei seiden · ‘sothliche we knowen.’

“Render unto
Cesar,” &c. (Matt.
xxii. 21).

‘*Reddite cesari*,’ seide god · ‘þat to cesar by-falleþ, 48

Et que sunt dei, deo · *oper* ellys 3e don ille.’

“Reason and
common sense
should rule you.”

For ryhtfulliche reson · sholde ruele 3ow alle,

And kynde wit be wardeyn · 3oure welþe to kepe,

And tutour of 3owre tresoure · and take [hit] 3ow atte

nede ;

52

For hosboundrie and he · holdeþ to-gederes.”

Then I asked her
what the deep
dale meant.

Ich fraynede hure faire þo · for hym þat hure made,

“The dupe dale and durke · vn-semely to see to,

What may hit by-mene · madame, ich by-seche ?” 56

A 10

“That is the
castle of care,”
she said, “the
abode of Satan,

“That is þe castel of care · who-so comeþ þer-ynne

May banne þat he bore was · in body and in soule ;

Ther-ynne wonyþ a wyȝt · þat wrong is his name,

Fader of falshede · fond hit furst of alle ;

60

who deceived
Adam and Eve,
B 14
and Cain, and
Judas,

Adam and Eue · he eggede to don ille,

Consailde cayme · to cullen hus broþer ;

Iudas he by-Iapede · þorgh Iewene seluer,

And afterward he heng hym · hye on an ellerne. 64

46. *god*] he M. *of*] at IF. *whas*] so G ; whos IS ; whose M ; hoos F ; what E.

47. *we knowen*] to say F.

48. *seide*] quod MF. *to*] IFSG *om.* *by-falleþ*] bi-longeþ M ; be-houeth F.

49. *ellys*] I *om.*

50. *ryhtfulliche*] rithful M. *ruele*] ruly E.

51. *welþe*] soules M.

52. *tutour*] detour S. *and*] to M. [hit MIG] hym S ; PE *om.* 3ow atte] out atte S ; at 3oure M.

53. *holdeþ*] holden boþe M ; hald-ith hem F.

54. *hure* (2)] me M.

55. *The—durke*] þat derke dale and deop M. *durke*] þe derke IG. *vnsemely*] so vnsemely I. *to—to*] of siȝt M. *vnsemely—to*] so dredful to syȝt F.

56. *by-mene*] be to mene F. *ich*]

I 3ow FG ; i þe M.

58. *bore was*] was boren M. *and*] or F.

59. *þat*] MFSG *om.* *his name*] i-hote M.

60. *Fader*] He is fader F. *fond*] he fond M ; & founded F.

61. *Eue*] eue with enuye F. *eggede*] egede P. *to*] G *om.* *don*] IF *om.*

62. *Consailde*] He conseilede M ; And counceilede I ; & conseil (*sic*) cursede F. *cullen*] killen IF.

63. *he*] G *om.* *by-Iapede*] iapede M. *þorgh*] wiþ MF. *Iewene*] þe iewes M.

64. *And*] An P. *afterward*] aftur F. *he heng*] anhangd I ; heo hongede G. *hym*] him-self MS. *on*] vp-on IF. *ellerne*] eller I ; elrene S ; helderne F ; elnerene G ; hillier-tree B.

He ys lettare of loue · and lyeth alle tymes ;
 þat tryst in erthely tresour · he by-traieþ sonnest,
 To en-combrye men *with* couetyse · that is hus kynde.”
 Thanne hadde ich wonder in my wit · what womman
 hue were,
 þat suche wyse wordes · of holy wryt shewede ;
 And [halsede] hure on þe heie name · er hue þennys
 wente,
 What hue were witterly · þat wissede me so and
 tauhte.

He hinders love,
 and deceives all
 that trust in
 earthly treasure.”

Then I wondered
 who she was, and
 conjured her to
 tell me her name.

“Holychurche ich am,” quap hue · “þow oghtest me
 [to] knawe ;
 Ich vnder-feng þe formest · and fre man þe made.
 þow broghtest me borwes · my byddyng to fulfille,
 To leue on me and louye me · al þy lyf tyme.”
 Thanne knelede ich on my knees · [and] criede hure
 [of] grace,
 And preiede hure pytously · to preie for me to amende,
 Al-so to kenne me kyndelich · on crist to by-leue,
 “And teche me to no tresour · bote telle me þys ilke,
 How ich may sauý my saule · þat seynt art yholde.” 80

“I am Holy
 Church, who
 received thee in
 infancy; thou
 broughtest me
 then pledges, to
 work my will.”

Then I prayed
 her to teach me
 to believe in
 Christ,

for I wished for no
 treasure but my
 soul's salvation.

65. *ys*] *ys* a PE; but MIFGSB omit a. *lyeth*] *ligere* M; *lieþ* in E.

66. *erthely tresour*] *tresour* of *erþe* MIG. *sonnest*] *soneste* E; *sonest* I.

67. *encombrye*] *combe* I; *comere* G; *encombe* FSM. *is*] *his* P.

68. *Thanne*] *þo* MFG. *hue*] *sche* MIFS; 30 E; yt G.

69. *þat*] And F. *wryt*] *wryȝt* P.

70. [*halsede* MIFB] *halsenede* SE; *hanslede* P; *halsesde* G. *on*] in MIF; vpon G. *heie*] *holi* M. *er*] or MIFSE; ar G. *hue*] *sche* MIS; *heo* FG; 30 E. *þennys*] *þennes* MIE; *þenne* F; *þanne* G.

71. *hue*] *sche* MISF; *heo* G; 30 E. *witterly* IFEG] *wyturly* S; *whit-erly* P. *and tauhte*] *faire* F. M has —To telle me what *sche* were · þat me so faire tauȝte.

72. *hue*] see l. 71. [*to* MIFSEGB]

P om.

73. *vnder-feng*] *vnder-fong* MFG. *formest*] *furst* M.

74. *byddyng*] *wil* M.

75. *Tv*] I om. *leue*] so MIFSEG; *lyue* P. *on*] MF om. *louye*] *loue* MIF. *lyf* SG] *lif* MFE; *lyfe* I; *lyue* P.

76. *knelede ich*] i *knelede* MIG. [*and* MIFSEG] P om. *hure*] to here S. [*of* MIFSG] PE om. *hure of*] of *heor* M.

77. *hure*] to here FS. *pytously*] *pytosly* P; *mekly* G. *to—for*] M om.

78. *Also to*] And also I. *Also—kenne*] And *kenneþ* M. *to by-leue*] for to leue E. *by-leue*] *by-lyue* P.

79. *And*] I om. *teche*] *techeþ* M. *telle me*] *telleþ me* M; how I may F.

80. *saury*] so EG; *saue* MIFS. *art*] *ert* PE.

"Truth is the
best of treasures ;

"Whanne alle tresours ben tried," quap huc · "treuþe
is þe beste ;

Ich do hit on *Deus caritas* · to deme þe soþe.

Hit is as derworthe a druvery · as dere god him-selue.

whoever is true
in word and work

B 15

is like our Lord.

For he, is trewe of hus tonge · and of hus two handes, 84

And doþ þe werkes *þerwith* · and wilneþ no man ille,

He is a god by þe gospel · and graunty may hele,

Luke viii. 21.

And like oure lorde also · by seynt lukys wordes.

Clerkus þat knowen þys · shoulde kennen hit a-boute,

For cristene and vncristene · cleyment it echone. 89

Kings and knights
should govern
rightfully, and
bind trans-
gressors ;

Kynges and knyȝtes · shoulde kepen hit by reson,

Ryden and rappe a-doune · In reames a-boute,

And take trespassours · and tyen hem faste, 92

Til trewþe hadde ytermenyd · here trespas to þe ende ;

And holde *with* hym and *with* hure · þat han trewe

accion,

And for no [lordene] loue · leue þe trewe partye.

and to do so is
the true duty
of knights.

Trewely to take · and treweliche to fyȝte, 96

Ys þe profession and þe [pure] ordre · þat apendep to
knyȝtes ;

Who-so passeþ that poynt · ys apostata of knyȝt-hod.

81. *Whanne*] *so* F; *Whan* MIE; *When* SG; *Qwenne* P. *quap huc*] ISFG *om.*

82. *on*] *vpon* I.

83. *a*] S *om.* *druvery*] *druri* M; *drury* FE; *druerie* IG. *him*] *hem* P.

84. *he*] *so also* SEG; *whoso* M; *ho so* F; *who* I. *trewe*] *trywe* P; *but see* ll. 95, 96.

85. *þe*] *his* M. *wilneþ*] *willeþ* F.

86. *a*] M *om.* *graunty*] *so in* G; *graunte* MIFSE.

87. I *puts also before* like. *like*] *liȝk* to MI.

88. *þys*] *hit wel* M; *it is þus* I. *shoulde*] I *om.*

89. *vncristene*] *vncrestine* P.

91. *reames*] *reemes* M; *reumes* I; *rewmus* F; *reumus* S; *remes* G.

92. *And*] *so in* I; *And to* PESG; & *titly* F; *Forte* M. *trespassours*]

transgressores IG.

94. *trewe*] *þe trewe* MF; *spelt* *triwe* P; *but see* l. 95. *accion*] *cause* F.

95. *And*] S *om.* [*lordene* I] *lordyne* G; *lordes* ME; *lordayne* P; *mordyne* (*sic*) S (*lordene is gen. pl.*). *And—lordene*] *Ne for no* *disordeyned* F.

96. *Trewely*] *For trewly* F. *take*] *take trauaile* F. *fyȝte*] *fyȝete* P; *but see* l. 100.

97. *Ys*] *Dis is* S. [*pure* MFESGB] *poure* PL. *þe* (1)—*ordre*] *þe pure* *profession* F.

98. *Who-so* E] *Wo-so* P; *Ho-so*⁹ S; *And who-so* IG; *And whose* M; & *ho-so* F. *apostata*] *aposteta* PG. *of knyȝt-hod*] *in his ordre* M; *in þe ordre* F.

[For þei shoulde nat faste · ne for-bere sherte ;
 Bote feithfullich defende · and fyȝte for truthe, 100
 And neuere leue for loue · In hope to lacche seluer. **A 12**
 Dauid by hus daies · dobbede knyȝtes, For David dubbed
 And dude hem swerye [on] here swerde · to serue truthe Knights to serve
 euere. Truth.

[Whanne god by-gan heuene · in þat grete blysse, 104 And God, too,
 He made knyȝtes in hus court · creatures ten, knighted
 Cherubin and seraphin · suche seuene [and] another ; Cherubim and
 Lucifer louelokest þo · ac lytel while it [durede.] 107 Seraphim, and
 He was an archangel of heuene · on of godes knyȝtes ; + Lucifer was an
 He and oþer with hym · þat hulde nouȝt with treuthe, archangel of
 Lopen out in loþliche forme · for hus false wille ; heaven, till he
 He hadde lust to be lyke · hus lord god almyghty. sought to be
 equal with God.

Ponam pedem meum in aquilone, & ero similis altissimo. **B 16**
 Isaiah xiv. 14.

[Lord ! why wolde he þo · þulke wrechede lucifer, 112 + Why should
 Lepen a-lofte · in þe north syde Lucifer seek to
 [þan] sitten in þe sonne side · þer þe day rowep ? have a seat in
 the north ?
 Ne were it for norþerne men · a-non ich wolde telle ; + But for offend-
 Ac ich wolle lacke no lyf" · quap þat lady sothly ; 116 ing Northern

99. nat] noþer IG. sherte] serke I.
 100. fyȝte—truthe] feithfulli fyȝte
 M. IB have only the imperfect line
 —But fighte and fende troupe.

101. In] ne M. seluer] ȝiftes F.
 102. Dauid] For dauyd F. by] in
 IF. daies] lijfdaies M; day S. dobbede
 dubbete MF.

103. And dude] Dede I. [on
 MIFSG] in PE. here] his MG.

104. Whanne] Wanne P. Whanne
 god] And god whan he I.

105. He] I om. ten] so MIB;
 tenne F; tene PESG.

106. [and MIFSEB] P om. an-
 other] on oþur FS; oþere M; oþer
 E.

107. ac] and M. while] wile P.
 [durede MIFSB] laste PE.

108. on] and on MF; & E.

109. He] But he F. þat] IMFSG

om. hulde] helde FESG; helden
 MI.

110. Lopen] þei lepton M; & lopen
 F. hus] heore M; here F.

111. lust] a lust F. be] haue be
 F. He—lust] þat lust hadde I.
 hus] oure M. god] þat was I.

112. E omits. wrechede] wikked
 ISG; false M. he—lucifer] lucifer ·
 þat lurdeyn of helle F.

113. a-lofte SB] a-luft I; on
 a-lofte PE; so a-lofte F; out on lofte
 M. in] in-to M.

114. [þan IB] To PEMFS. (This
 is clearly right; wolde þan = chose
 rather than. To meet the difficulty,
 M has—To sitte in þe norþ half; F
 has—To sitte aȝe þe sunne; cf. ll.
 117, 118.) rowep] rewep E.

115. telle] ȝow telle MI; schewe F.

116. sothly] sotthly P; þanne F.

men, I would
tell you.

† In the north
fell the fiend, and
there also is hell.

† Psalm cix. 1
(Vulg.).

† Peasants seek
the fire on holi-
days, but care
not how cold it
is when they
work.

Lucifer, for his
exceeding pride,
lies lowest in
hell; with him all
wrongdoers shall
dwell.

But they that do
well may be sure

A 13
of heaven."

"Hit is sykerer by southe · þer þe sonne regneth
þan in þe north by meny notes · no man [leue] oþer.
For pider as þe fend flegh · hus fote for to sette,
Ther he failede and ful · and hus felawes alle; 120
And helle is þer he ys · and he þer ybounde.
Euene contrarie sitteþ criste · clerkus knowen þe sothe;
Dixit dominus domino meo, sede a dextris meis.
Ac of þis matere no more · meuen ich nelle;
[Hewes] in þe halyday · after hete wayten, 124
þey care noȝt þauh it be cold · knaues, when þei worchen.
In wonderwyse holy wryt · tellith how þei fullen;
Somme in erþe, somme in aier · somme in helle dupe,
Ac lucifer lowest · lith of hem alle; 128
For prude þat hym pokede · hus peyne hath no ende.
Alle þat worchen þat wikkede ys · wenden þei shulle
After hure dep-day · and dwelle þer wrong ys;
And alle þat han wel y-wroght · wenden þey shulle 132
Estwarde to heuene · euere to abyde,
Ther treuthe is, þe trone · þat trinite ynne sitteþ.
Lere it þus lewede men · for lettrede hit knoweþ,
[Than] treuthe & trewe loue · ys no tresour bettere." 136

117. *sonne*] day S.

118. *þan*] For M. *by*] ben M.
[*leue* IFSEBG] loueþ M; *miswritten*
loyne P.

119. *as*] þat SE. *flegh*] fly FSG;
fli M; fley E.

120. *and*] þo he F. *ful*] spelt fuel
P; but M has ful, and I has fulle,
miswritten for ful; fil F; fel SG;
felle E.

121. *ys*] S om. *þer* (2)] þer-inne
MF.

122. *Euene*] & euene F; Euen þe
I. *known*] witeþ I; kenne F.

123. *no*] F om. *meuen*] so in E;
meue PG; *the other readings are*
corrupt, viz. nemene M; nemnen I;
nempne F; neuene S. *nelle*] ne
þenke M.

124. [*Hewes* I] Hewen B; Hebbus
FS; Hynen M; He was (*sic*) PE;
Hyne hewys (*sic*) G. *hete*] *miswrit-*

ten heten P; meten E.

125. *þey*] Ac þey I. *when*] wen P.

126. *In*] I om. *fullen*] fillen IF.

127. *in*] in-to M (*thrice*). *erþe*]
þerþe I. *aier*] þeir I; þe eir M; þe
eyre S. *somme* (3)] & summe F.

129. *prude*] pride MIF. *þat*] þere
I. *peyne*] penaunce F.

130. *Alle*] And alle I. *þat wik-*
kede ys] wikkidnesse F.

131. *þer—ys*] wiþ þat schrewe M.

132. *alle*] þo M.

133. *Estwarde*] Euene estward F.
to] til IEG. *euere*] þere euer FS.

134. *þe*] in (*sic*) M. *trone*] tour
IB. *trinite*] þe trinite MFS; treuþe
IG. *ynne sitteþ*] sitteþ ynne F.

135. *Lere*] Lerne E. *it*] M om.
it þus] þis S.

136. [*Than*] þan S; That PMFIE
(*perhaps* That is right, but it is ob-
scure). *ys*] þere is F.

"Ich haue no kynde knowyng," quap ich · "3e mote
kenne me bettere,
By what wey hit wexith · and [wheder] out of my men-
yng." 138

B17
"But I have no
natural know-
ledge of it," said I.

"Thow dotede daffe," quap hue · "dulle aren þy
wittes,

"Thou fool," said
she, "it is thy
natural
conscience,
teaching you
to love God,
and leave deadly
sin."

Ich leue þow lernedist to lyte · latyn in þy 3owthe ;

Heu michi, quod sterilem · duxi uitam iuuenilem !

Hit is a kynde knowyng · þat kenneþ in þyn herte

For to louye þy lord · leuest of alle,

And deye rapere þan to do · eny dedlich synne ; 144

Melius est mori quam male uiuere.

And þis ich trowe be treuthe · who so can teche þe
betere,

If any can teach
you better, let
him !

Loke þow soffrie hym to say · and so þow myght
lerne.

For treuthe telleþ þat loue · ys tryacle for synne,

Truth says that
Love is the
treacle for sin.

And most souereyne salue · for saule and for body. 148

Loue is þe plonte of pees · and most precieuse of ver-
tues ;

For Love is the
plant of Peace.

For heuene holde hit ne my3te · so heuy hit semede,

Heaven could
not hold it, and
it fell to earth.

Til hit hadde on erthe · 3oten hym-selue.

Was neuere lef vp-on lynde · lyghter þer-after, 152

137. *mote*] *moste* M. *3e mote*] *3it*
mote 3e I. *kenne me*] *me teche* M.

138. *what*] *wat* P. [*wheder* I]
whider B; whodur S; wider M;
wonder PE. *my menyng*] *menynges*
IB. *wheder—menyng*] *whedurward*
he draweþ F.

139. *dotede*] *dotest* M; *dosen* (sic)
I. *hue*] *sche* MIS; *scheo* F; 3o E.
dulle] *dolle* P. *aren*] *arn* M; *are* IS;
be F; byþ G. *þy*] *3owre* S.

140. *leue*] *so* IFSEGB; *lyue* P;
trowe M. *lernedist*] *lernest* M. *to*] *ful*
M. *lyte*] *litel* MIF. *þy*] *þe* S.
3owthe G.] *3ouþe* MISB; *spelt* *3oweþe*
P; *3ougheþ* E; F *has* liue.

142. *kenneþ*] *knoweþ* M; *cumseth*
F. *in*] M *om.*

143. *leuest*] *luuest* P.

144. *deye*] *to deye* S. *to*] MIS
om.

145. *And*] *As* E; M *om.* *ich*
trowe] *trowe* i F. *so*] M *om.*

146. *þow* (1)] *to* E. *þow myght*] *myght*
þou IG; *mith þou* M; *maistow*
F.

147. *for*] *to abate* I.

148. *for* (1)] *boþe* for F. *saule—*
body] *bodi* and for soule M. *for* (2)]
F *om.*

149. *plonte*] *so* ESG; *plante* MIF.
and] MIFs *om.*

150. *For*] M *om.* *hit*] *it* first I.

151. *on*] of I. *3oten*] I-3otun I;
3eten EG. *hym-selue*] *hit-selue* IS.

152. *lef*] *placed after* *lynde* in PE
only. *vp-on*] *on* MF. *lyghter*] *lygheter*
P; þat was *litere* M.

But having
taken human

BIS
nature, it
was as light as a
linden-leaf.

Love is a leader
of the angels, and
a mediator.

As whanne hit hadde of þe [folde] · flesch and blod ytake;
Tho was it portatyf and pershaunt · as þe poynt of a
nelde,

May non Armure hit lette · noþer hye walles; 155

For-þy is loue ledere · of oure lordes folke in heuene,
And [a] mene, as þe meyere is · by-twyne þe kyng &
þe comune,

Ryzt so is loue a ledere · and þe lawe shapeþ;
Vp man for hus mysdedes · þe mercement he taxeþ.
And for to knowe it kyndeliche · hit comseþ by
myghte, 160

In þe herte, þer is þe hefd · and þe hye welle.
Of kynde knowyng in herte · þer comseþ a myghte,

A 14

Love began with
God the Father,
who let His Son
die for us;

That falleþ to þe Fader · þat formede ous alle.
On ous he lokyde with loue · and let hus sone deye, 164
Meekliche for oure mysdedes · to amendy ous alle.

And ȝut wolde he hem no wo · þat wroght hym al þat
tene,

even as Christ
prayed for His
enemies,

Bote myldeliche with mouthe · mercy he by-souhte,
To haue pyte on þat puple · þat paynede hym to deþe.
Her myzt þow see ensample · In hym-self one, 169

153. *As*] And M; Ac S. *whanne*] wanne P. [*folde* IB] fold M; fiod PS; flode E; flood F; *see* B-text.

154. *Tho—it*] Hit was M. *per-shaunt*] persaunt FG; persound M; persende I. *þe*] FGS *om. nelde*] so M; nedle EFS; nede IG.

155. *May*] þer ne mai M. *hit lette*] him wiþ-sitte M. *noþer*] ne none IF.

156. *For-þy*] For-ghi M; For he E. *is loue*] loue is FMS. *in*] of MISG.

157. [*a* MIFSGB] PE *om. þe—* is] as a meir MF. *& þe*] & F.

158. *a*] I *om. and*] whan F. *shapeþ*] shappeþ PE.

159. *Vp*] Vp-on MS; Of F. *mysdedes*] mysdede F. *taxeþ*] axeth F.

160. *it*] hym SG. *comseþ*] comeþ MI. *by myghte*] in þe herte M.

161. *In*] And in I. *þer*] M *om. hefd*] heued IG; hede F; hed M; hefe S; hefte E.

162. *Of*] For of I. *knowyng*] wit M. *comseþ*] of comeþ M; comeþ I.

163. *þat*] And þat I. *te*] so IFSGB; in-to PEM; *see* B-text. *ous*] us MF; vs IE.

164, 165. M *omits. On—and*] Loked on vs with loue I. *amendy*] amende IFS.

166. I *omits. ȝut*] S *om. nolde*] ne wolde M. *he*] S *om. tene*] teune P.

167. *myldeliche*] mekeli MIG. *he*] hem he F; he þe (*sic*) E.

168. *on þat*] of þe I. *paynede*] pyned SG.

169. *Her*] þer E. *myzt*] may F. *ensample*] ensamples I.

That he was myghtful & meke · and mercy gan graunte,
 To hem þat henge hym hye · and hus herte þerlede.
 For-þy ich rede þow ryche · haue reuthe of þe poure ;
 þauh 3e be myghty to mote · beep meke in þoure workes ;
 þe same mesure þat 3e metep · amys oper ellys, 174
 3e shulleþ be weyen þer-with · whanne 3e wenden hennes ;

granting mercy to
 them that pierced
 his heart.

Therefore I advise
 the rich to have
 pity on the poor ;
 for 'with the
 same measure,'
 &c.

Eadem mensura qua mensi fueritis, remecietur Matt. vii. 2.

uobis.

Thauh 3e be trewe of þoure tonge · and trewelich wynne,
 And be as chast as a chyld · þat noþer chit ne fyghtep,
 Bote yf [3e] loue leelliche · and lene þe poure,
 Of such good as god sent · goodliche parte,
 3e haue no more meryt · in masse ne in houres, 180
 Than malkyn of hure maidenhod · wham no man
 desireþ.

For though ye be
 true in word and
 deed, except ye
 love the poor, and
B 19
 give alms,

A 15
 ye have no merit
 in your prayers.

For Iamys þe gentel · [Iuggeþ] in hus bokes,
 þat feith with-oute fet · ys febelere þan nouht,
 And ded as a dore-nayle · bote yf þe dede folwe ; 184

St James tells us
 that Faith with-
 out works is
 dead ;

Fides sine operibus mortua est.

Jam. ii. 20.

Chastite with-oute charite · worth cheynid in helle ;
 Hit is as lewede as a lampe · þat no lyght ys ynne.
 Meny chapelayns aren chast · ac charite hem faileþ ;

so chastity
 without charity is
 but an unlighted
 lamp.

170. *meke*] meuk P.

171. *hem*] hym P. *henge*] hangede
 M; hengen IB. *hym*] I om. *þerlede*]
 so ES; þerlden M; þrillede F; þorlede
 PL.

172. *For-þy*] For-whi M. *haue*]
 haueþ M; ha F. *reuthe*] merci MSG.
of] on MFS; vpon I. *þe*] E om.

173. *mote*] mete E. *meke*] meuk P.

174. *þe*] For þe I.

175. *weyen*] i-weied M. *whanne*]
 wanne P. *remecietur*] remicietur PS.

176. *trewe*] trywe P. *tonge*]
 tonges IS. *trewelich*] triwelich P.

177. *noþer chit*] chit neþer I.
chit] chid M. *ne*] no F. *fyghtep*]
 striueþ M.

178. [*3e* MIFSEGB] P om. *lene*]
 lene to PE; but MIFSEGB omit to.

179. *sent*] sent þow I. *goodliche*]

& goodliche it F; and trewliche M.
parte] to parte S.

180. *in*] of M (*twice*). *masse*]
 massus F.

181. *wham*] so SE; wam P; whom
 F; þat M. *wham—man*] whan no
 man hir I.

182. [*Iuggeþ*] so ISEB; *miswritten*
suggeþ P; iugged F; Iugede M.

183. *fet*] feet MF; þe feet I; feto
 E.

184. *ded*] as ded I. *a*] I om. *yf*]
 FSG om.

185. *Chastite*] For chastite F.
cheynid] i-chained M; schrined F.

186. *as* (1)] M om. *lewede*] lewed
 þing I. *ys*] nys E.

187. *aren*] ben M. *ac*] but M.
hem faileþ] is a-weize M.

Many chaplains
are chaste, but
have not charity

Aren none hardur ne hongryour · þan men of holy
churche, 188

they eat up what
they should give
away, and ask for
more, and are
encumbered with
avarice.

Auerouse & eucl-willed · whanne thei ben auansed,
And vnkynde to hure kyn · and to alle crystine ;
Thei chewen here charite · and chiden after more ;
And encombred with couetyse · þei conne nat out crepe,
So harde hath aueryce · hasped hem to-gederes. 193
And þat ys no treuthe of þe trinite · bote trecherie
and synne,

This treachery
sets the laity a
bad example.

And luper ensample, leue me · to þe lewede puple.
For thees aren wordes · wryten in þe euangelye, 196
Date et dabitur uobis · [for I dele 3ow alle.]

A 16
See what is in the
Gospel (Luke vi.
38).
Love comforts
Christians.
Love is the
readiest way to
heaven;

And þat is þe lok of loue · þat vnloseþ grace,
þat conforteth alle cristine · encombred with synne.
So loue ys lech of lyue · and lysse of alle peyne, 200
And þe graffe of grace · and grayþest [wey] to heuene.
For-þy ich may say, as ich seide · by syght of þe tixt,
Whenne alle tresours ben tryed · treuth ys þe best ;
Loue it," quap [þat] lady · "lette may ich no lengere
To lere þe what loue ys" · and leue at [me] hue lauhte.

B 20

and Truth is the
best of all
treasures."

Explicit passus secundus.

188. *Aren*] *per* *arn* M.

189. *eucl*] *written* *veuele* P. *will-*
ed] *i-willed* M; *ywilled* E. *whanne*
wanne P. *thei ben*] *hy buþ* S; *þei*
beþ FE.

190. *And*] *I om.*

191. *Thei*] *I om.*

192. *And*] *þei ben* M; *And ben* I;
FS om. *with* þor; S. *þei*] *and* M.
out crepe] *crepe* out I.

193. *hasped*] *hapsed* I. *to-gederes*
to-gedderes P.

194. *And þat*] *þat* M; *Hit* F.

195. *And*] *And a I.* *leue me*
leueth he F; *leueþ* me E; *leyf* me P.
to] *as for* I.

196. *aren*] *ben* M; *beþ* F. *wryten*
i-wriþten M; *y-writen* I; *Iwrite* S.

197. [*for—alle*] *from* MIFSGB;
PE om.

198. *lok*] *book* (*wrongly*) I. *þat* (2)]

and I. *vnloseþ*] *vnlowketh* F.

199. *conforteth*] *confortetth* P.
cristine] *carfulle* I. *encombred*] *ac-*
combred I; *acombred* F.

200. *So*] *So þat* F. *peyne*] *peine*
MIE; *payne* SGB; *peynes* F; *pyne* P.

201. *and*] *an* P; *I om.* *grayþest*
so IF; *grayþust* S; *grayþost* P; *gra-*
cioust M; *growith* E. [*wey* S] *wei*
MF; *way* IB; *PE om.*

202. *For-þy*] *For-whi* M. *may*
M om. *seide*] *seide* ere I. *þe tixt*
þis tixt E; *þese textus* F; *þis tixes*
(sic) M; *þis textestes (sic)* I.

203. *Whenne*] *Wenne* P. *ben*
beth F. *tryed*] *I-tryed* F.

204. [*þat* MIFEGB] *þe* P. *may*
ich] *i ne mai* M.

205. *lere*] *lerne* M; *E om.* [*þe*] S
om. *what*] *wat* P. [*me* MIFSEGB]
P om. *hue*] *sche* MIFS; 3o E.

PASSUS III.

Incipit passus tercius.

And þanne ich knelede on my knees · and cryede to
 hure of grace, A 17 B 21
Then I prayed
her
 And seide, “mercy, madame · for marye loue of heuene,
 þat bar þat blessedde barn · þat boughte vs on þe rode,
 Kenne me by som craft · to knowe þe false.” 4 to teach me how
to know
Falsehood.
She bade me
turn and see him.
 “Loke vpon þy lyft half,” quath hue · “lo whar he
 standiþ,
 Boþe fals and fauel · and fykel-tonge lyere,
 And menye of hure maners · boþe men and wommen.”
 Ich lokid on my lyft half · as þe lady me tauhte, 8 I looked, and,
first of all, beheld
a woman very
richly clothed,
 And sauh a womman as yt were · wonderlich riche
 cloped.
 [Hue] was purfild with peloure · non purere in erthe,
 And coroned [with] a corone · þe kynge hath no betere ; decked with a
crown

RUBRIC. *So in PES.* Hic incipit tertius passus de uisione M; Passus secundus de uisione, vbi prius I; Incipit tercius F.

1. *And*] M *om.* *to—of*] of hure M. *of*] F *om.*

3. *þat* (1)] þe FS. *blessede*] blisful MI. *þe*] E *om.*

4. *Kenne*] As kenneth F. *me*] S *om.* *knowe*] kenne M.

5. *vpon*] on MF. *half*] hand M. *hue*] sche MFS; 30 E. *quath hue*] I *om.* *lo*] and lo I; & se F. *whar*] war P.

6. *Boþe*] I *om.* *and fykel-tonge*] fikeltonge and M.

7. *boþe*] of I.

8. E *omits.* *Ich lokid*] þo loked I F. *on*] vpon IS. *half*] hand M.

9. *sauh*] I *om.* *womman*] wommon P. *riche*] IF *om.* *cloped*] i-cloped MIFG.

10. [*Hue* S] *miswritten* He P; *but see* l. 5; Sche ISM; Heo FG; 30 E. *with*] wit P; in I. *in*] on MES.

11. *coroned*] coronede P. [*with* F] wiþ G; in PEMIS; *but cf.* B-text. *no*] non I.

and costly rings. On alle hure fyue fyngres · rycheliche yrynged, 12
 She wore rubies And þer-on rede rubies · and oþer riche stones.
 and other gems. Hure robe was ryccher · þan ich rede couthe,
 (A 18)
 I cannot describe For to telle of hure atyre · no tyme haue ich nouth.
 her array. Hure a-raye with hure rychesse · rauesshede myn
 herte, 16

B 23

"Who is this?"
 I asked.
 "That is Meed
 (Bribery)," she
 said, "who has
 done me much
 evil.

"Whas wyf hue were · and what was hure name,
 Leue lady," quap ich þo · "layn nat yf 3e knowen."
 "þat ys mede þe mayde," quap hue · "þat hath noyed
 me ofte,
 And lowen vp-on my lemman · þat leaute ys hoten, 20
 And lackyd hym to lordes · þat lawes han to kepe,
 In kynges court & in comune court · contrarieþ my
 techyng.
 In þe popes paleys · hue is pryuy as my-selue,
 Ac soþnesse wold noȝt so · for hue is a bastarde; 24
 On fauel was hure fader · þat hath a fykel tonge,
 And selde soth seith · bote [if] he souche gyle;
 And mede ys manered after hym · as men of kynde
 karpen,

Her father was
 named [Flat-
 tery]; and she
 is like him.

[Qualis] pater, talis filius.

† A briar bears For shal neuere breere bere · beries as a vyne, 28

12. On] M om. rycheliche] ful MIF. lemman] lemman P. hoten]
 richeli MI. i-hote MF; I-hotun S.

14. robe] robyng I. was] was 21. lackyd] lackeþ M; lakkeþ I.
 ribaned F. couthe] coude MF. 22. ȝ] IS om. in] MF om.

15. nouth] now E. court (2)] F om. techyng] lone F.

16. Hure] þe M. with] wit P. 23. hue] sche MS; he I; heo F;
 with hure] of þat M; for F. 30 E. pryuy] as preuei M.

17. Whas] so SG; Whos IE; Whose 24. soþnesse] sothfastnesse F. is]
 M; Hoos F; miswritten Was P. was F.

18. Leue] so MES; Leeue I; Leef 25. On] Oon I; Of (sic) E; Sire
 hue] þat sche M; sche IS; scheo F; F. hath] had F.

19. hue] sche MFS; 30 E. quap 26. selde MIEG] seilde P; seelde
 hue] I om. þat] MIFS om. hath] F; ful selde S. [if IFEB] MPS
 had S. noyed] i-noied M; nuyed S. om. souche] so IBE; suche S; seche
 nat] lay nat F; lie not E; telleþ me FG. bote—souche] bute hit sowne to
 M.

19. hue] sche MFS; 30 E. quap 27. ys] E om. kynde] miswritten
 hue] I om. þat] MIFS om. hath] kynden P. [Qualis FESB] Talis
 had S. noyed] i-noied M; nuyed S. PIM. filius] filia IE.
 nat] lay nat F; lie not E; telleþ me 28. beries] bery I.

20. lowen] I-lowe I. vp-on] on

Ne on croked kene þorne · kynde fygys wexe ;

Bona arbor bonum fructum facit.

29 not grapes, nor a
thorn figs.
Matt. vii. 17.

Ich ouhte be herre þan hue · ich kam of [a] betere,

The fader þat me forth brouhte · *filius dei* he hoteþ,

þat neuere lyede ne lauhwede · in Al hus lyf-tyme. 32

My father is the
[Son of] God.

Ich am hus dere douheter · duchesse of heuene ;

What man þat me loueþ · and my wille folweþ,

Shal haue grace to good ynow · and a good ende ; 35

† Whoever loveth
me shall find
grace.

And what man þat loueþ mede · my lyf ich dar wedde,

He shal lese for hure loue · a lappe of trewe charite.

That most helpeþ men to heuene · mede most letteþ,

Ich do hit vpon dauid · þe doumbe wol nozt lye ;

*Domine, quis habitabit in tabernaculo tuo, et
cetera.*

See what David
says of men who
take Meed.
Psal. xiv. 1
(Vulgate).

Dauid vn-doþ hit hym-self · as þe doumbe sheweþ, 40

Et super innocentem munera non accepit.

† Psal. xiv. 5.

To-morwe worth mede wedded · to a mansed wrecche,

To on fals faithles · of þe feendes kynne.

Fauel þorgh his flatelyng speche · hath mede foule
enchantid,

B 23

To-morrow shall
Meed be married
to Falsehood, by
help of Flattery.

And al is lyers ledyng · þat lady is þus ywedded. 44

29. *Ne*] apparently miswritten No
P. *on*] on a MIFS. *kene*] kynde
(*sic*) S. *fygys*] figge I. *facit*] affert
M.

30. *be*] to be M; ben I. *herre*] so
E; *miswritten* herrer P; heyhere I;
heiere F; hyur S; bet M. *hue*] sche
MS; he I; heo F; 30 E. *ich*] for i
M. [*a* IFSB] þe M; kynde PE;
cf. B-text.

31. *me*] on (*sic*) I.

32. *lyede*] ne lei M. *lauhwede*]
lawhede IF; lawede E; lauzede S;
lauhed M. *Al*] M *om.*

33. *Ich am*] And I am I. *dere*
MIFEB] dure P. *duchesse*] & duch-
esse F.

34. *What*] þat what I. *þat*] MI
om. *loueþ*] louye M. *folweþ*]
folewe M. *my—folweþ*] wole my wil
holde F.

35. *Shal*] He schal F. *to*] of M.

grace—good] good riȝt F.

36. *what*] wat P. *þat*] M *om.*
loueþ mede] mede louye M; mede
loueþ IG. *ich dar*] dar i MFG.

37. *lese*] luse P. *a lappe*] and
lippe (*sic*) I. *a—charite*] þe liȝt of
conscience F. *trewe*] trywe P.

38. *most—men*] helpeþ men most
M; helpeþ man most I. *men*] man
IF. *most* (2)] ofte M.

39. *doumbe*] dombe IEG.

40. *hit*] M *om.* *doumbe*] so MSFB;
dombe IEG; dumbe P.

41. *wedded*] married ISFG; i-
married M.

42. *To*] Til F. *feendes*] deueles
MG.

43. *his*] so IFSEG; is P; M *om.*
speche] F *om.* *foule*] ful F.

44. *And*] F *om.* *is*] þurw F; þorȝ
S. *þat*] þis IS; þat þat E; þe F.
is þus] schal þus be M; ys F.

To-morrow you
may see [Meed's
marriage];

but let her friends
alone.

A 19
I now commend
thee to Christ."

Thus she left
me lying asleep.
Afterwards, I
beheld the bridal.

Thither were
assembled
knights, clerks,
sheriffs, beadles,
advocates, and
many others.

B 24

Soffre now and þow shalt see · suche as ben apaiede,
þat mede ys þus ymaryed · to-morwe þow shalt asprie.
Know hym wel, yf þow kanst · and kep þe fro hem alle
þat louyep hure lordsheps · lasse oper more. 48

Lacke hem noȝt, bote lete hem worthe · tyl leaute be

Iustice,

And haue power for to punyshe hem · þen put forþ þy
reson.

For ich by-kenne þe crist," quap hue · "and hus clene
moder,

Encombe neuere þy conscience · for couetyse of mede."

Thus left me þat lady · lyggynge a slepe. 53

And ich sauh how mede was married · metyng as it
were ;

And al þe riche retynaunce · þat roteþ hem on fals
lyuyng

Were bede to þat brudale · on boþe half þe contreie,
Of many maner men · þat were of medes kunne ; 57

Of knyȝtes, of clerkes · of oper comune puple,

As sysours and somners · shereyues and here clerkes,
Budels and bailifs · and brokours of chaffare, 60

[Forgoers] and vytailers · and vokettus of [þe] Arches,

45. *now*] I *om.* *suche*] for *suche* F.

47. *wel*] MI *om.*

48. *þat*] For her þat M. *lordsheps*] lordschepe MF; lordeschipe I; wor-schip E. *oper*] so IES; *miswritten* oper þe P. *lasse oper*] oper lasse or M; boþe lasse and F.

49. *Lacke*] Loue F. *bote*] & F. *be Iustice*] by maystre S.

50. *haue*] haued M. *for*] MIFSG *om.* *put*] put þou F.

51. *Fbr*] M *om.* *hue*] sche MIS; scheo F; ȝo E; heo G.

52. *Encombe*] And acombre þou I.

53. *a slepe*] as a slepe I; in my slepe F.

54. *And*] M *om.* *And—was*] þo saw I mede F. *it were*] I were F.

55. *And*] MIG *om.* *hem*] M *om.* *on*] of I; in FE. *þat—on*] roteþe

in F.

56. *bede*] i-bede M; beden I; boden E. *þat*] þe IFG. *brudale*] bridale MIEG; bruydale S; bredale F. *on*] a I.

57. *men*] of men MIFS. *kunne*] kynne MIESG; kyn F. *were—kunne*] of medes kynne were I.

58. *of* (2)] & S. *of* (3)] and MS; & of F. *oper*] þe F.

59. *As*] M *om.* *here*] oper M.

60. *Budels*] Budeles M; Bodelus S; Bedeles I; Bedellus F; Bedels E. *and* (1)] S *om.* *chaffare*] chaffares MIF.

61. [*Forgoers* IE] Vorgeours P; Voregoerus S; & foragers F. *Forgoers and*] Alle maner of M. *vokettus*] voketts I; vocates E; a-uoketes M; felawes F. [*þe* FESGI] PM *om.*

Ich kan noȝt rekenye þe route · þat ran a-boute mede.

Ac symonye and ciuile · and sisours of contreis 63 † Of these, Simony

Were most pryue with mede · of eny men, [me principal.

þouȝte].

Ac fauel was þe ferste · þat fette hure [out] of chambre, Then Flattery led

And as a brocour broghte hure forth · to be ioynid with Meed to

fals. Falsehood.

Whanne symonye and cyuyle · sauh here boþeres wil,

Thay assented þer-to · at seluers praier. 68

Thenne leep liere forþ, and seide · “lo! here a chartre, (A 20)

That gyle hath gyue to falsnesse · and graunted to Then Liar leapt
mede,” forth with a
charter.

And preyþ cyuyle it to see · and symonye it to rede.

þanne symonye and cyuyle · stoden forth boþe, 72 Simony and Civilly

And vnfeelde [þe] feffement · þat fals hadde maked; unfold the deed.

þanne sayde symonye · þat cyuyl it herde,

“Alle þat louen & byleuen · vp lykyng of mede,

Leueþ hit leelly · thys worth hure laste mede, 76

þat folwen falsnesse · fauel, and lyere,

And me, and swiche men · þat after mede wayten.

Sciant presentes et futuri: et cetera.

CARTA. “Know

63. *Ac*] And I.

64. *with*] wit P. *eny*] meny S.
[*me þouȝte* MFSEBG] me þoghte IE;
of þe route P.

65. *Acþ* & sire F. *fette*] brouȝte
M. [out MIFBG] oute S; PE om.

66. *And as*] As M; And I.
broghte] he brouȝte M. *with*] wit P;
to þe I.

67. *Whanne*] Wanne P. *sauh*] sien M. *here boþeres*] heore boþe M;
þer boþe I; here beþer F; here boþe
SG; here boþers E.

68. *þer-to*] it were so IB (*which
improves the alliteration*).

69. *Thenne*] þo M. *leep*] lepte M;
luppe I; lepe F; lept S; leepe E.

70. *gyue*] i-zeue M. to (1)] M om.
to (2)] also MIG.

71. M *transposes* symonye and
cyuyle. *it—see*] to se it I. *it—rede*]

to rede it IFS.

72. *stoden*] so MFG; stode E;
standen I; stod P; stop (!) S.

73. *And*] F om. *vnfeelde*] so E;
vnfelde SG; vnfeeld P; vnfoldeþ IB;
Vnfoldede FM. [þe MIFSEGB] þat
P. *maked*] made P.

74. *þanne*] þo M. *þat*] and M.

75. *louen*] liuen M. *byleuen*] so
EMFSG; bylyuen P; bilieueþ I.
vp] so MEFG; vppe I; vpon S.

76. *mede*] ende M. *thys—mede*]
wo is here last drynke F.

78. *And*] I om. *me*] Meede I.
swiche] so MS; suche IE; *miswrit-
ten* shiche P. *And—men*] As beth
þese mysterus men F. *þat*] as M.
Carta] so PEG; Incipit carta F (*see
margin*); I *adds*—The feoffament of
Meede. *futuri*] futuri, quod ego M.

all men that
Meed is married
for her goods;

[Witen] alle and witenen · þat women here on erthe,
þat mede ys y-mariet · more for hure richesse 80
þan for holynesse oþer hendenesse · oþer for hye kynde.
Falsnesse is fayne of hure · for he wot hure riche,
And fauel hath *with* fals speche · feffed hem by þis
lettere

and Flattery
grants her and
her husband

To be prynces of prude · and pouerte to dispice, 84
To bakbyten and to bosten · and bere fals witenesse,
To scornie and to scolde · sclaundres to make,
Boþ vnboxom and bold · to breke þe ten hestes.

the earldom of
Envy,

The erldom of enuye · and yre he hym graunteþ, 88
With þe castel of cheste · and chatering-out-of-reson;

and the county of
Covetousness;

B 25

The countee of couetise · he consentep to boþe,
With vserye and Auerice · and oþer false sleithes 91

also the lordship
of Lechery.

In bargeyns and in brocages · *with* þe borghe of þufþe,
And al þe lordshep of lecherye · in lengþe and in
Brede,

As in workes and in wordes · [and] waitynges of eyes,
In wedes and [in] wisshynges · and *with* ydel þouhtes,
þer þat wil wolde · and werkmanshup faileþ. 96

79. [Witen I] Wyten B; Witten E; Wetyen P; Weten S; Wetith F; Wite 3e M. *alle*] MI *om.*

80. *hure*] hure mechel P; hire mychel E; *but* MIFSG *omit* mechel; *cf.* B-text.

81. *for* (1)] F *om.* F *transposes* holynesse and hendenesse. *kynde*] kynne M.

82. *is*] his P. *not*] fynt F.

83. *And*] M *om.* *hath with*] þat haþ a I. *feffed*] feffeþ I. *fals—lettere*] falsnesse · feffed hem to-gedere F.

84. *prynces*] princesse M; prince F; pruyse (*sic*) I. *and*] M *om.*

85. *bakbyten*] so S; bacbite MIF; bagbyten PE. *bosten*] boste wel F. *and*] and to M. *witnesse*] whitnesse P; withnesse M.

86. *scornie—scolde*] scolde & to scorne S. *sclaundres*] & sclaundres FS; and sclaundre I.

87. *Boþ*] MIG *om.* *vnboxom*] boxom F.

88. *and yre*] euer F. *he hym*] hem he S. *graunteþ*] graunte (*sic*) I.

89. *cheste—reson*] care · & of vnkynde speche F.

90. *countee*] cuntesse FS. *The countee*] They countep I. *he*] and I; F *om.* *to*] to hem IF; S *om.*

92. *and*] S *om.* *in*] IF *om.* *brocages*] burgages FG. *þe*] E *om.* *borghe*] bourh M; borwe I; box F; bor; ES. *þufþe*] so EG; þeffe M; þeffe IFSB.

93. F *omits.* *And*] With I. *al*] in E.

94. *and* (1)] F *om.* *in* (2)] M *om.* [*and* M] and in I; in FESG; P *om.* *waitynges*] waytynges EG; waityng MIFS; waitenges P.

95. *and*] MFS *om.* [*in* MFSEGB] PI *om.* *wisshynges*] wisshenges P; wissching M. *with*] in M.

Glottenye he geueþ hem · and grete oþes to-gederes,
 Al day to drynke · at dyuerse tauernes,
 Ther to Iangle and to Iape · and Iuge her emeristine,
 And fastingdayes to frete · by-for noon, and drynke 100
 With spicerie, spek ydelnesse · In veen speche, and spene,
 And suwye forþ swych felaushep · tyl þei ben fallen in
 slewþe,

Gluttony is
 also granted to
 them,

And a-wake with wanhope · and no wil to amende,
 For he leyueþ be ylost · when he hus lyf leteþ : 104
 This lif to folwie falsnesse · and folk þat on hym leueþ,
 After hure deþ [a] dwelling · day with-uten ende
 In luciferes lordshup · as þys lettere sheweþ,
 With al þe portinaunce of purgatorye · And þe payne
 of helle." 108

and all kinds of
 Sloth;

and they are to
 dwell in hell
 after death."

In witnesse of þis þyng · wrong was þe ferste,
 And Peres þe pardoner · of paulynes queste,
 Bette þe budele · of banneburies sokne,
 Reynald þe reue · and Redyngkynges menye, 112
 Munde þe mylnere · and meny mo oþere.
 In þe date of þe deuel · þis dede ys a-seled,
 By syght of syre symonye · and cyuyles leue.

A 21 B 26

The witnesses
 were Wrong,
 Piers the
 Pardoner,
 Bette the beadle,
 and many others.

The deed was then
 sealed and signed.

Thanne [tened] hym theologie · whenne he þys tale
 herde, 116

But Theology was
 wroth, and said

97. *he geueþ*] i ȝeue M; a gyueþ I.
hem MIFEB] hym P.

98. *drynke*] drynk depe F. *at*] in MF.

99. *Ther*] And þer I. *Iangle*] Iangly P. *to* (2)] M om.

100. *And*] M om. *byfor*] a-fore F. *and*] an P.

101. *spek*] and speke M. *and*] to F. *spene*] spende MI.

102. *surge*] suwe MF; sewe S; sue I; suweþ E. *swych*] wip M.

104. *leyueþ*] loueþ M. *be*] to be MI. *when*] wen P.

105. *lif*] F om. *to*] is to MF. *leueþ*] so IFSE; leued M; lyueþ P.

106. [*a* MFSEG] þay I; P om. *dwelling*] duellen I.

107. *luciferes lordshup*] lordschipe

with lucifer I. *þys*] þe MF.

108. *al*] F om. *þe portinaunce*] þaportenances I. *And*] in M; & al F. *payne*] pyne F.

111. *Bette*] Bot I. *budele*] bedil I; bedel E; bedeþ F. *banneburies*] banburi MF; Bannebury I. *sokne*] soke M.

112. *and*] and þe PE; but IFSE om. þe; M has of. M *transposes* II. 111 and 112.

113. *Munde*] Mondy F; Mundy SG. *mylnere*] mullere M; myllere I; millward F. *mo oþere*] anoþer I.

114. *ys*] was M.

116. *Thanne*] þo M. [*tened* IFSE] tenede MG; tene E; tuemed (for tuenede) P. *whenne*] wenne P. *tale*] tales I.

to [Simony],
"We betide thee!

And seyde to syre symonye · "now sorwe mote þow
haue, 117

Such a weddyng to worche · þat wrathe myghte
treuþe.

And er þis weddyng be wroughte · wo to al þoure con-
sail!

† For Meed's
mother is
Amends,

For mede is moillere · amendes was here dame; 120
þouh fals were hure fader · and fykel-tonge hure syre,
Amendes was hure [moder] · by trewe [mennes]
lokyng.

† and she may
not be wedded
without her
mother's leave.

With-oute hure moder amendes · mede may noght be
wedded,

For treuth plyghte hure treuthe · to wedde on of hure
douhteres, 124

And god grauntede it were so · so þat no gyle were,

† But thou hast
given her as Guile
taught thee.

And þow hast ygeue hure as gyle taughte · god þyue
þe sorwe!

For cyuyl and þy selue · selde fulfilleth

þat god wolde were ydo · with-oute som deceite. 128

Ich theologie þe tixt knowe · and trewe dome wyt-
nesseþ,

† Lawrence,
lying on the
gridiron, claimed
heaven as his
due reward.

þat laurens þe leuite · lyggynge on þe gredire,

Loked vp to oure lorde · and a-loud seide,

'God, of þy grace · heuene gates opene, 132

117. *syre*] MIFS *om.* *symonye*
ciuile MF. *now*] M *om.* *mote þow*
so IE; þow mote P; þow M. *mote*
—*haue*] on þi bokus F.
118. *þat*] to F. *wrathe*] tene M.
myghte] mai M; with þe F. *treuþe*
treuhþe P.

119. *And*] M *om.* *al*] M *om.* *al*
—*consail*] þow alle F.

120. *is*] is a MF. *moillere*] moillere
IFS; moiller M. *was*] I *om.*

121. *þouh*] Al-þogh I. *syre*] bel-
sire MIG.

122. [*moder* MIBG] dame PEFS.
[*mennes* MI] men PEFS.

123. *With-oute*] And wiþoute IB.

124. *hure*] þoure E. *douhteres*]

doutren M.

125. *F omits.* *grauntede*] *graunte*
IS. *it*] þat it S. *þat*] MI *om.*

126. *ygeue*—*taughte*] gon here after
gyle F. *god*] now god I.

127. *selde*] ful selden þe F.

128. *som*] M *om.* *deceite*] de-
ceytes F.

129. *See note in B-text, p. 392.*
tixt] trewþe F. *and*] ȝif I. *trewe*
dome] trewþe M; *textus* it F.

130. *lyggynge*] þat lay I. *þe* (2)]
M *om.* *gredire*] fyre F.

131. *a-loud*] al þis he M. *seide*]
cride F.

132. *opene*] þow opene M.

- For ich, man, of þy mercy · mede haue deserued !' 133
 And sythþe man may an hey · mede of god deserue,
 Hit semeþ ful sothly · ryght so on erthe,
 That mede may be wedded · to no man bote to treuthe ; Meed should be
 And þow hast feffyd hure with fals · fy on suche lawe ! wedded to Truth.
 For þorw lesynges 3e [lacchen] · largeliche mede. 138 Thou livest by
 þat 3e nemeþ & notaries · to nauht by-gynneþ brynge lying.
 Holy church, and charite · 3e cheweþ and deuoureþ.
 3e shulle a-bygge boþe · bote 3e a-mende þe sonnere. **A 22**
 For wel 3e wyten, wernardes · as holy wryt telleþ, But ye shall
 þat fals ys faithles · þe fend ys hus syre, abide it here-
 And as a bastard ybore · byzute was he neuere. 144 after.
 And mede ys moillere · a maiden of goode, Ye well know
 Hue myghte cusse þe kyng · as for hus kynswomman. Falsehood is a
 For-þy worcheþ by wisdom · and by witte al-so, **B 27**
 And ledeþ hure to londoun · wher lawe may declare, 148 traitor ;
 Yf matrimoine may be · of mede and of falshede. but Meed
 And þow Iustice[s] en-ioynen hem · þorgh Iurers oþes, (Reward) might
 3ut be war of þe weddyng · for wytty is treuthe, kiss the king.
 And conscience is of hus consail · and knoweth 3ow
 alle ; 152
 And yf he fynde 3ow in defaute · [and] with þe false If Conscience
 holde, find this out,

134. *man*] a man M.
 135. *ful*] rízt F; I *om.* *on*] here
 on M.
 136. *to* (2)] IG *om.*
 137. *fy*] now fy F. *suche*] þi F;
 swich a M.
 138. *þorw*] bi MI. [*lacchen* MIFS]
 lauhite P; lazt E.
 139. *þ*] and þe I. *by-gynneþ*] hit
 wole 3ow M; gynneþ I; gynneth to
 F; 3e gunnuþ S.
 141. *a-bygge*] abeggen it I.
 143. *fals*] foule fals F.
 144. *as*] is M. *ybore*] born M.
byzute] byzete IS; bigete M; be-3e-
 ten F.
 145. *ys*] is a M; was a F. *a*]
 and I.
 146. *Hue*] Sche MS; Scheo F; 3o

- E; And I. *myghte*] may F. *as*] M
om. *hus*] F *om.*
 147. *For-þy*] For-whi M; For hy
 EG. *al-so*] boþe M.
 148. *londoun*] londen P. *wher*]
 wer P; here IG.
 149. *If*] Wheþer M; Where IG.
may be] be may F. *falshede*] fals F.
 150. *þow*] þogh I; þauz S; trewe
 M. *Iustices*] so IFSE; Iustice PM.
en-ioynen] an-ioynen I; ioynē F.
oþes] lawe F.
 151. *3ut*] But 3ut M. *þe*] MF *om.*
weddyng] wedyng P. *treuthe*] sir
 trewþe F.
 152. *And*] M *om.* *is*] F *om.*
 153. *And*] M *om.* *in*] in eny S.
 [and MI] PEFS *om.* *þe*] M *om.*
holder] to holde FS.

it will go hard
with you at the
last."

A 23

Then Flattery
fetched out
florins, and bade
Guile give it to
the notaries.

Great were the
thanks for these
bribes.

B 28

Meed consents to
go to London.

Then were Flat-
tery and False-
hood glad, and
bade all be ready
to go to West-
minster.

Hit shal sitte ȝoure soules · ful soure at þe laste."
Her-to a-sentyd cyuyle · ac symonie ne wolde,
Tyl he hadde seluer for þe seel · [and] sygnes of notaries.
Tho fette fauel forþ · floreyne y-nowe, 157
And bad gyle "go gyue · gold al a-boute,
Nameliche, to notaries · þat non of hem faille;
And fesse falsnesse · with floreyne ynowe, 160
For he may mede amaistren · with hus myry speche."
Tho þis gold was gyuen · gret was þe þonkyng
That fals and fauel hadde · for here faire ȝyftes,
And comen ful courteislich · to conforte þe false. 164
Thei seide to hym softeliche · "cesse shulle we neuere;
Til mede be þy wedded wyf · we wolle nouht stynte.
For we han mede a-maistrid · þorw oure myrye tonge,
þat hue graunteþ to go · with a good wille 168
To londoun, and loke · yf lawe wol Iuge;
To be maried for monye · mede hath a-sented."
Than was fauel fayne · and falsnesse blyþe,
And leten sompne alle segges · In eche syde a-boute,
And bed hem alle ben boun · beggeres and oþere, 173
To wenden with hem to westemynstre · hus wedding
to honoure.

154. *soules*] soule I. *soure*] sore I.

155. *a-sentyd*] assenteþ I. *ac*] bute M; & FS.

156. *seluer*] F om. [and MIFSE] a P. *sygnes* — *notaries*] notaries signes M. *of*] & S.

157. *Tho*] To I.

158. *go*] goo & F; to MI.

159. *Nameliche*] And *nameliche* IE. *to*] to þe F; þe I. *faillle*] ne fayle S; no faile F.

160. *falsnesse*] falswittnesse MG; fals witnesses I. *with*] wit P.

161. *amaistren*] maistrize M.

162. *Tho*] Ac þo F. *was*—*þonkyng*] were þe þankes M; game þei hadde F.

163. I *transposes* fals and fauel. *That*—*hadde*] & þonked fals & fauel F. *faire*] grete S.

164. *to*—*þe*] and comfortede M.

165. *Thei*] & FI. *to hym*] I om. *softeliche*] sopli MS; sopely I. *shulle*] schulde M.

166. *we wolle*] wile we M; wille we I; wole we F. *nouht*] neuere S.

167. *han*] I om. *mede*] here F. *tonge*] speche M.

169. *londoun*] london P. *and*] and to I. *yf*] wheþer þe F. *wol*] wil it F.

170. *mede*] for mede F.

171. *Than*] þo M; But þanne F.

172. *alle*] alle her I; alle þe F *segges*] sisours M.

173. *bed*] so PG; bad MIF; bydde S; bede E (but bed hem = bed' hem = bede hem).

174. *hem*] him ISG. *hus*] þis M; the F.

- Ac hakeneyes hadde þei none · bote hakeneyes to hyre ; Then they all
 Thenne gan gyle þorwe hors · at meny grete maistres, wanted horses.
 And shope þat a shereyue · sholde bere mede 177 **A 24**
 Softliche in saumbury · fram syse to syse. Meed was set on
 Fals and fauel · sholde fecche forth sisours, a sheriff's back,
 And ride on hem & on reues · ryght faste by mede. and Falsehood
 Symonye and cyuyle · seiden and sworn 181 on an assizer's.
 That prestes and prouisours · sholde prelates seruen, † " Priests and
 " And ich my-self cyuyle · and symonye my felawe provisors are to
 Wollen ryden vp-on rectours · and riche men 184 serve as horses
 deuoutours, I (Civil) and
 And notories [on] persons · þat permuten ofte, Symony will
 And on poure prouysors · & on a-peles [in] þe arches. ride on rectors.
 Somenours and southdenes · þat *supersedeas* takeþ, † Summoners
 On hem þat louyeþ lecherie · lepeþ vp and rydeþ, 188 shall ride on
 On executores and suche men · comeþ softliche after. men of unclean
 And let cople þe comissarie · oure cart shal he drawe, life.
 And fecche forth oure vitailles · of *fornicatores*. **A 25 B 29**
 Makeþ of lyer a lang cart · to lede alle þese opere, Yoke our
 As fobbes and faitours · þat on hure fet rennen." commissary,
 and make of Liar
 a long cart."

175. *hakeneyes* (1)] horsyng M ; horsus þo F.

176. *Thenne*] þo M. *gan gyle*] gile bigon M. *borre*] to borwen IM. *at*] of M ; & F. *grete maistres*] a gret maystre S ; grete sires F.

178. *in saumbury*] in his Sambury S ; in chaumbre M ; in chambre IE ; I-sadeled F.

179. *Fals*] Fals schulden M ; And fals I. *sholde*] IM *om.* *fecche—sisours*] forþ sisoures fette F.

180. *And*] To M. *on—reues*] riht in þe reve F. *ryght*] MF *om.*

181. *and*] an P. *seiden*] þo seiden F.

182. *prelates seruen*] be prelates E.

183. *ich*] F *om.* *felawe*] fere F.

184. *Wollen*] Schulle M. *deuoutours*] so IM ; deuoutours S ; deuoutours E ; of *propus* F.

185. *And*] M *om.* [on IE] upon F ; and PMS.

186. *on* (2)] vpon I. *a-peles*] apele E ; pelours M. [in EI] of MS ; on P. *þ—in*] þat peleth to F.

187. *Somenours*] & sumnours F. *southdenes*] sopdenes E ; sodenes IFS ; denes M. *þat*] I *om.*

189. *On*] þe E. *executores*] secutours I ; secatours F. *comeþ softliche*] & comyth soft F.

190. *let cople*] late cope IFS ; cart-sadeleþ M. *þe*] oure M. *oure*] þe F. *drawe*] dryue S.

191. *forth*] I *om.* *of*] of alle M ; and I. *fornicatores*] so I ; fornicators P ; fornicatours MFSE (*but it is the Latin form ; see B-text*).

192. *Makeþ*] And make M ; And makeþ I. *of*] a F ; of a I. *lang*] long IS. *þese*] þise I ; þis ME ; þes PS.

193. *As*] M *om.* *fobbes*] so IES ; fobberus F ; Freres M. *þat—fet*] let hem on fote M.

Thus all ride
forth together.

Thanne fals and fauel · ryden forth to-gederes,

And mede in þe myddes · and alle þuse men after.

Ich haue no tome to telle · þe tail þat hem folweþ, 196

Of many manere men · for medes sake sent after;

Gaile led the
way; but soon
Soothness spurred
on, and went and
told Conscience.

Ac gile was forgoere · to gyen al þe puple,

For to wisse hem þe weye · and with mede a-byde.

Sothnesse seih hem alle · and seide bote a lytel, 200

And priked forth on pacience · and passede hem alle,

And cam to þe kynges court; · to conscience he tolde,

And conscience to þe kyng · carped it after.

"If I could but
catch Falsehood,
or Flattery,"
said the king,
"I would hang
them both.

"Now by cryst," quath þe kyng · "and ich cacche
myghte 204

Fals oþer fauel · oþer here felawe lyere,

Ich wolde be wreke on þo wrecches · and on here
werkus alle,

And do hem hongy by þe hals · and alle þat hem
maynteneþ. 207

Shal neuere man on þis molde · maynpryse þe leste,

[But] ryght as þe lawe lokeþ · let falle on hem alle!"

I command the
constable to
attach them,
fetter Falsehood,
A 26

He comaundyd a constable · þat cam at þe furste,

"Go atache þo tyrauns · for eny tresour, ich hote,

Let feterye fast falsnesse · for eny kynnes ȝiftes, 212

194. *ryden*] *thei riden* F.

195. *And*] M *om.* *and*] *with* F.
alle] MS *om.* *þuse*] *þese* MIFS.

196. *tome*] *time* MES; *tonge* F.
folweþ] *folwede* MIS.

197. *manere*] F *om.* *men*] *of men*
MS. *for—sent*] *þat mede sent* M;
for mede · þat suyd fast F.

198. *to gyen*] *to bigile* M; & *giede*
F. *þe*] *þis* I.

199. *hem*] *men* E. *and—mede*] *wip*
mede þat wolde M.

200. *seih*] *si* M; *sey* S; *seþ* E;
seith I; *seeth* F. *alle*] *wel* MF. *a*]
MFSE *om.*

201. *And*] *He* M; *But* F. *priked*]
prikith F. *and*] *an* P.

202. *And*] *He* M. *to* (2)] *and* MIF.
he] MIF *om.*

203. *And*] *þo* F.

204. *and*] *if* F.

205. *oþer—lyere*] *or felawes of þat*
route F.

206. *wreke*] *a-wreke* M. *on* (1)] *in*
S. *þo*] *þat* M; *þe* ES. *on* (2)] F *om.*
alle] *ille* F; *boþe* M.

207. *do—hongy*] *hange hem hy* F.
þat] M *om.* *hem*] *þey* S.

208. *man*] *no man* M.

209. [*But* MIF] *And* PES. *ryght*]
ȝit I; M *om.*

210. *He*] *And* I; *þo* F. *a*] *he* a
F. *at þe*] *atte* EI; *ate* S.

211. *Go*] *To* IF. *þo*] *þe* EMF.
tyrauns] *tyrautes* MFS; *tyrauntz*
I.

212. *feterye*] *fetere* MFS; *fecche*
I. *fast falsnesse*] *fals faste* M; *fals-*
nesse faste I. *kynnes*] *kynne* S.

- And gurd of gyles hefd · and lete hym go no wyddere, **B 30**
 And brynge mede to me · maugre hem alle. and cut off Guile's head.
- And if 3e lacche lyere · let hym nat a-skapie 215 Let not Liar
 Er he be put on [þe] pullery · for eny preier, ich hote!" escape."
- Drede stod at þe dore · and al þat dene herde, Dread was at the
 What þe kynges wil was · and wyghtlyche he wente, the [din], and
 And bad falsnesse to flee · and hus feren alle. bade Falsehood
 flee.
- Falsnesse for fere [þo] · flegh to þe freres, 220 Then fled
 And gyle dud hym to gon · agast for to deye; Falsehood and
 Ac marchauns metten with hym · and made hym abyde, but tradesmen
 And shuten hym in here shoppes · to shewen here prayed Guile to
 ware, keep their shops
 for them.
- And parailed hym lyke here prentys · þe puple to 224
 seruen.
- Lyghtliche lyere · lep a-way þennes, Liar leapt away
 Lorkynge þorw lanes · to-logged of menye. through by-lanes,
 He was nawher welcome · for hus meny tales, being nowhere
 welcome.
- Ouer-al houted out · and yhote trusse, 228
- Til pardoners hadden pitte · and pullede hym to But pardoners
 house. took him in,

213. *gurd*] *gurdeþ* MI. *hefd*] *hed*
 EMS; *heede* F. *and*] MIFS *om.*
wyddere] *widere* E; *whider* F.

214. *brynge*] *bringeþ* MIFS.
maugre] *malgre* I.

216. *Er*] Or FSE. *put*] i-put M.
 [þe MI] PEFS *om.* *preier*] *preior*
 P. *ich hote*] M *om.*

217. *stod*] *stond* þow M. *al þat*] *al þis* S; *al þe* F; *þat þe* M; I *om.*
dene I] *deon* M; *done* F; *dune* S;
duene P; *duende* E (*duene* = *dene*
 = *din*).

218. *þe—was*] *was þe* *kinges wille*
 I. *and*] I *om.* *wyghtlyche*] *whyght-*
lyche P; *wittliche* I.

219. *bad*] I *om.* *falsnesse*] *fals*
 M. *to*] *forte* M; F *om.* *feren*] *feeres* I;
ferus FS.

220. *Falsnesse*] And *falsnesse* F.
 [þo IF] PEMS *om.* *flegþ*] *fli* M;
fly] S; *he fleþ* F; *fleþe* E.

221. *dud*] *doth* I.

222. *hym* (2)] *hem* F. *made—*
abyde] *him abide made* M. *abyde*] *to*
abyde S.

223. *shuten*] *bischetten* I. *in*] F
om. *shoppes*] *schoppe* I.

224. *parailed*] *aparailede* M.
hym] F *om.* *lyke here*] *as a* M; *lik*
a F.

225. *Lyghtliche*] *Tho liztliche* F.
a-way] *a-way þo* fro PE; *but* MIFSG
omit þo fro; *cf.* B-text.

226. *þorw*] in M.

227. *was*] E *om.* *nawher*] *nawer*
 P. *welcome*] *wolcome* P.

228. *Ouer*] But *ouer* F. *houted*] *I-*
hunted F; *i-honted* M; *hountyd* S;
cf. B-text. *out*] I *om.* *trusse*] *so*
 IESG; *to* *trusse* MF; *trosse* P.

229. *Til*] M *om.* *pitte*] *pite* of
him M; *pitee* on *him* I. *pullede*] *so*
 EG; *pulled* I; *pulde* M; *pellyd* S;
putten F; *pollede* P. *to*] *in-to* I.

A 27

washed him,
clothed him,
and sent him to
church with
pardons.

Thei woshe hym and wypede hym · and wonde hym
in cloutes,

And sente hym [on] sonnedayes · with seeles to
churches,

And ȝaf pardon [for] pans · pound-meel a-boute. 232

B 31

Then leeches
begged him to
dwell with them;
and spicers asked
him to be
shopkeeper.

Thanne lourede leches · and letters þei senten,
þat lyer shold wony with hem · waters to loke.

Spicers to [hym] speke · to asprie here ware, 235

For he can on here crafte · and knoweþ meny gomme.

Minstrels
entertained him
half a year;

Ac mynstrales and messagers · mette with lyere one[s],

And with-helde hym half a ȝere · and elleue dayes.

but Friars fetched
him thence, and
clothed him as a
Friar.

Ac Freres þorw fayre speche · fetten hym þennes; 239

For knowynge of comers · þei copyde hym as a Frere;

Ac he hath leue to lepen out · as ofte as hym lykeþ,

And ys welcome whanne he comeþ · and woneþ with
hem ofte.

† Symony and
Civil appealed
to the Pope;
but Conscience
opposed them.

Symonye and cyuyle · senten to rome,

And putte hem þorw a-peles · in þe popes grace. 244

Ac conscience to þe kyng · a-cusede hem boþe,

And seide, “syre kyng, by cryst · bote clerkus amende,

Thi kyngdom þorw here couetyse · wol out of kynde

wende, 247

And holy church e þorw hem · worth harmed for euere.”

Thus all fled into
corners for fear,

Alle fledden for fere · and flowen in-to hernes;

230. *woshe*] woschen E; wuschen IS; wessche M; wuschen F. *wypede*] wrongen F. *cloutes*] cloþus F.

231. [*on* MIFSG] in PE. *churches*] chirche ML.

232. *ȝaf*] ȝaf hym P; ȝaf hem E; but MIFSG omit hym. [*for* MIFSEG] of P. *pans*] penes M; pens IF.

233. *Thanne*] þo M.

235. *Spicers*] And spicers PE; but MIFS omit And. [*hym* EMIFSG] hem P.

237. *Ac*] M om. *ones*] so MIG; onus FS; one PE.

238. *with-helde*] of-helden I. *half*] oþer half F. *a*] MIFS om. *elleue*]

endleuen I.

239. *þorw*] with here E. *fetten*] fecchen I.

240. *Fbr*] And for I. *comers*] cuntrees (*sic*) I.

241. *Ac*] M om. *ofte as*] F om.

242. *And*] He M. *welcome*] wol-come PF. *whanne*] wanne P. *comeþ*] wole F.

243. *senten*] þo · þei caired F.

244. *þorw*] in E.

245. *Ac*] And IS.

247. *here*] F om. *wende*] weynde P; but see iv. 19.

249. *fledden*] felden E; fledde þo F. *in-to*] in-to þe F.

Saue mede [þe] mayde · no mo dorste a-byde.

Ac treweliche to telle · hue tremblede for fere, 251

And boþe wrang and wepte · whanne hue was a-tached.

and only Meed
durst stay; and
even *she* wept
when taken
prisoner.

Hic explicit passus .iiij^{us}.

250. [þe IFSEG] þat PM.

251. *treweliche*] tryweliche P; truli
M. *hue*] sche MS; scheo F; he I;
30 E. *tremblede*] tremelede E; trem-
led F; tremelde M.

252. I *transposes* wrang and wepte.

And—wrang] Wrong hure honden
M. *wepte*] wepe E. *whanne*] wanne
P. *hue*] see l. 251. *a-tached*] a-
tachede P.

COLOPHON. *So* in E; *and* in GSF,
omitting Hic.

PASSUS IV.

*Incipit passus quartus.***A 28 B 32**Now is Meed, all
alone, brought to
the king.

Now is mede þe mayde · and no mo of hem alle
þorw bedeles and bailifs · brouht by-fore þe
kyng.

The kyng kallid a clerk · ich can nouht hys name,
To take mede [þe] mayde · and make here at ese ; 4

"I shall ask her,"
said the king,
"whom she
wishes to wed ;
and perhaps I
may forgive her."

"Ich shal asaye hure my-self · and sothliche apose,
What man of þys worlde · þat hure is leuest haue ?
And yf hue wirche wisliche · by wys [mennes] counsail,
Ich wolde for-gyue hure alle hure gultes · so me god
helpe !" 8

So a clerk
brought her to
the chamber.

Cortesliche þe clerk þenne · as þe kynge hyghte,
Toke mede by þe myddel · and myldeliche here broughte
| In-to boure with blysse · and by hure gan sitte.

Ther was myrthe [and] mynstralcy · mede to plesen ; 12
That wenden to westmynstre · worshupde hure meny.

TITLE. *So in* EFS ; Hic incipit
quartus passus de uisione M ; Passus
Tercius de visionē, vt prius I.

1. þe] þat M. and] MFS om.
2. þorw] Wiþ MF. by-fore] to F.
3. kallid] clepede M. hys] ys P.
4. [þe IFSEG] þat PM.
5. hure] at hir I. sothliche] soft-
liche M.
6. What] Wat P. þat—leuest] she
is leuest to M ; here is leuust to S ;
þat sche were leuest to F. is—haue]
leuest hadde I.

7. hue] sche MIS ; heo F ; 30 E.
by] and by I. [mennes F] menes M ;

men PEIS. counsail] rede F.

8. alle—gultes] þat gilt F. hure]
IS om.

9. þenne] þo MF.

10. myddel] mydel P. broughte]
ladde F.

11. boure] þe boure F. blysse]
muche blisse F. gan] gan he F.

12. Ther] Ac þer I. [and MIFSE]
of P. mede] þat maide for F.

13. wenden to] wonen in M ; wente
to F. worshupde] wurschepede F ;
honouren M ; worschepe I ; worschup
S ; worschopieþ E.

Gentelich *with ioye* · Iustices *somme*

Buskede hem to þe boure · ther þis berde dwellyd,

Confortynge hure as þei couthe · by þe clerkus leue, 16 **A 29 B 33**

And seyde, “morne nat, mede · [ne] make þow no
sorwe;

Gladly the
Justices went to
see her, and said,

“Mourn
not, Meed, we
will get thee
clear off.”

For we wollesse þe kyng · and þy wey shape

For to wende at þy wil · wher þe luf lykep,

For alle consciences cast · [and] craft, as ich trowe!” 20

Mildeliche mede þo · merciede hem alle

Of hure grete goudnesse · and gaf hem echone

Coupes of clene gold · and coppes of seluer,

Rynges *with rubies* · and oþer riche ȝiftes, 24

Then Meed
thanked them all,
and gave them
silver cups and
ruby rings.

The leste [man] of here meyne · a moton of golde.

Whenne thei had lauht here leue · at þys lady mede,

Thenne comen clerkus · to comfortye hure samen,

And beden here be blythe · “for we ben þyn owne, 28

Then came clerks
and said, “Be
blithe, Meed, we
will work thy
will.”

For to worche þy wil · þe while we mowe dure.”

And mede hendiliche · by-hyht hem þe same,

To louen hem leellich · and lordes hem make,

She promised to
love them, and
make them lords.

“And porchace ȝow prouendres · while ȝoure pans

lastep, 32

14. *Iustices*] þe iustises MI. F
has—And iustices *with ioye* · gentel-
liche *somme*.

15. *þe*] þat M; S *om.* *boure*] borw
M. *þis*] þat M; þe F. *berde*] burde
ME; buyrde I; beorde F; brede S.
dwellyd] dwelleþ E; was ynne F.

16. *Confortynge*] And comfortede
MI. *hure*] hem F. *þe*] E *om.*

17. [*ne* MIF] PES *om.*

18. *wey*] weies E. *shape*] shappe
P.

19. *wende*] wedde I. *luf*] leef
MF; lef S; leue I.

20. *consciencis*] conscience S. *cast*]
craft FS. [*and* IFSE] or MG; a P.
craft] cast FS.

21. *merciede*] þankede M; ouer-
ȝede I.

22. *and*] a M.

23. *Coupes*] Cloþus F. *and*] MI
om.

25. *leste*] menest F. [*man* I] PE
MFS *om.*; but see B-text. *meyne*]
men M.

26. *Whenne*] Wenne P; And whan
F. *here*] MF *om.*

27. *Thenne*] þo M. *comen*] com
comly F. *samen*] same M; þe same
I; sone F; in same S; same man
(*sic*) E.

28. *owne* FMS] oghne I; owen E;
owe PG.

29. *þe*] MFS *om.* *while*] wile P.
we mowe] þou might I. *dure*] en-
dure MS.

30. *And*] Ande P; þo F. *mede*
hendiliche] hendeliche mede F; mede
mildeliche M. *þe*] þat M.

31. *and*] as E. *hem* (2)] to IF.

32. *And*] To F. *ȝow*] F *om.* *pro-
uendres*] so MIFSE; prouenders P.
while] wile P. *ȝoure*] here F. *pans*]
penes M; pens I.

[And bigge 3ow benefices · pluralite to haue,
 And in constorie atte court · do calle 3oure names.
 "Naught shall prevent one whom I love from being
A 30 advanced." Shal no lewednesse lette · þe clerk þat ich louye,
 þat he ne worth ferst auanced · for ich am [biknowe], 36
 Ther connyng clerkus · shulleþ clocke by-hynde."
 Thenne com þer a confessor · coped as a Frere,
 To mede þat mayde · myldelich he sayde,
 "Though learned And Thauh lered men and lewede · had layen by þe boþe,
 and lay had all falskede yfounded þe · al þis fourty wynter, 41
 lain by thee, I Ich shal a-soily þe my-selue · for a seem [of] whete,
B 34 And 3ut be þy bedman · and brynge a-doun conscience
 for a load of wheat." A-mong kynges and kny3tes · and clerkus, if þe lyke." 44
 Then Meed knelt Thenne mede for hure mysdedes · to þis [man] knelyd,
 to him, and Shrof hure of here synnes · shameles, y leyue,
 shrove her, and Told hym a tale · and took hym a noble
 gave him a noble. For to be hure bedman · and bere wel hure erende, 48
 Among kny3tes and clerkus · conscience to turne. 49
 And he [as]soiled hure sone · and setthen he seide,
 "We haue a wyndow a worchyng · wol stonden ous
 ful hye ;

33. 3ow] hem F. pluralite] pluralitez I; here bonchef F (*which improves the alliteration, but is ill supported*).

34. in] in þe I. atte] at MIF; of þe E. do] to I. calle] knowe F.

36. [biknowe MIG] I-knowe FS; knownen PE. F has—We wole auauncen him wel · for we beþ I-knowe.

38. Thenne] þo M. coped] i-coped MFS; ycoped EI.

39. To] & to F. þat] þe IFSE. sayde] loutede M.

40. lered] lewed IFS. lewede] lered men I; lered FS. had] haue I. boþe] echon M.

41. falskede] falsnesse F; folke sede (*by mistake*) E. yfounded] i-folowed M; folwed F; hy founde E.

42. [of MEFS] PI om. whete] wete P.

43. And—bedman] þi bede-man to be F. and—conscience] concienso to

felle M.

44. kny3tes] kny3thes P. if] and I. lyke] likeþ EM.

45. Thenne] þo M. þis] þat M. [man MIFSG] frere PE. knelyd] loutede M.

46. Shrof] And schrof MFE; Sche schrof S. synnes] synne I. leyue] leue ES; leuee I; wene M; trowe F.

47. Told] Sche tolde MS; Heo tolde F. tale] mery tale F.

48. bere] to bere I. erende EI] arende F; erunde S; ernde M; ernede P.

50. And] MF om. assoiled IFE] assoiled MS; soiled P. Cf. l. 42. sone] sone þerof S; þo ful sone F. setthen—seide] seide þat F.

51. We haue] placed at end of l. 50 in PEMFS; but here in I; cf. B-text. a] in M; on I. worchyng] worcheng P.

Wolde 3e glase þe gable · and graue þer 3oure name, 52 *she should be a sister of the order.*

In masse and in matyns · for mede we shulleþ syngē

Solenliche and sothlich · as for a sustre of oure ordre."

Louelich þat lady · lauhynge seyde, 55 *She said that she would always be his friend.*

"Ich shal be 3oure frende, frere · and faille 3ow neuere,

The while 3e louyep þuse lordes · þat lecherye haunten,

And lackieþ noȝt þuse ladies · þat louyep þe same.

Hit is bote frelete of flesch · 3e fynden wel in bokis, 60 *"Lechery," said she, "is a frailty of the flesh."*

And a cours of kynde · wher-of we comen alle. 60

Ho may a-scapie þe sclaunderē · þe scape may sone be

mendyd,

Hit ys synne as of seuene · non soner relesed.

Haue mercy," quath mede · "on men þat hit haunten, *Be not hard on those who practise it, and I will glaze your windows."*

And [ich] shal keuery 3oure [kirke] · and 3oure cloistre

maken,

64

Boþe wyndowes and woves · ich wolle a-menden & glase,

And do peynten and portreyn · who paide for þe mak-ynge,

þat euery seg shal see, and seye · ich am sustre of 3oure **B 35** ordre."

Ac god to alle good folke · suche grauyngē defendeþ, *But God forbids*

To wryten in wyndowes · of eny wel-dedes, 69 *A 31 such painting of windows.*

52. *þe*] *þat* EI. *þer*] *þer-inne* M.

53. *we shulleþ*] *wolde* we M; *moste* we F; *we wolleþ* E.

54. *Solenliche*] *Solempneliche* IS F; *Sollempliche* M. *sothlich*] *softe-liche* MI. *for*] IF *om.* a] F *om.*

55. *lady*] *lady þo* · *with* F.

56. F *omits.*

57. *The while*] *The wile* P; *Whiles* M; *þer whiles* I. *þuse*] *þese* FS; M *om.* *þuse lordes*] *þis lorde* I. *haunten*] *haunteþ* IF.

58. *þuse*] *þese* F; *þise* IS; M *om.* *louyep*] *loueth* wel F.

59. *is*] *nys nouȝt* M; *nys* E. *in*] *by* I. *wel in*] *hit* be M.

60. *wher-of*] *wer-of* P.

61. *Ho*] *Who* IE; *Whose* M; *Ho* so S. *may a-scapie*] *a-schapud* M.

may—be] *is* sone MF; *myght* sone be I. *mendyd*] *amended* EMSF.

62. *as of*] *of* M; *of alle þe* F. *non soner*] *sennest* M. *relesed*] *rele-sede* P.

63. *Haue*] *Ha* muche F. *on*] *in* S. *men*] *hem* M.

64. [*ich* E] i MIFSG; P *om.* *keuery*] *couere* IF. [*kirke* IMFS] *churche* PE; *observe the alliteration.*

66. *do*] I *om.* *who*] *wo* P; *ho* FS. *who paide*] *and paie* M. *for—mak-ynge*] *þerfore* F.

67. *euery—seye*] *eche sisour* shal i-seo M; *eche a segh schal* I-see F. *and seye*] MFI *om.* *sustre*] *a suster* IM. *3oure ordre*] *3oures* M; *þat ordre* F.

68. *Ac*] *But* F. *folke*] *men* M.

69. *in*] *on* I. *wel*] *goode* M.

For God knows
thy conscience.

Cease, therefore,
to write on win-
dows.

Remember the
text, Matt. vi. 3.

† But Meed
pleaded with
those who had
power to punish
butchers and
bakers on the
pillory.

(These men
defraud the poor

A 32
that buy by
retail.

Were they true
men, they would
not be so rich.

Leste prude be peyntid þere · and pompe of þe worlde.
For god knoweþ þy conscience · and þy kynde wille,
Thi cost and here couetyse · and who þe catel ouhte.

not A

For þy leue lordes loue · leueþ suche wrytinges; 73
God in þe gospel · such graunye noȝt a-loweþ,

Nesciat sinistra quid faciat dextera.

Let nat þy lyft half · oure lord techen,
Ywite what þow delest · with þy ryht syde. 76

Ȝut mede myldeliche · þe meyre [hue] bysouhte—
Bothe shereues and seriauns · and suche as kepeþ lawes
To punyshen on pillories · and on pynyng-stoles,
As bakers and brewers · bouchers and Cokes— 80

(For þese men doþ most harme · to þe mene puple,
Richen þorw regratrye · and rentes hem byggen
With þat þe poure puple · sholde putten in hure
womben;

For toke þey on triweliche · they tymbrid nat so heye,
Noþer bouhten hem burgages · be ȝe ful certayn: 85

70. *Leste*] An aunter I. *peyntid*] predated (*sic*) E; i-peinted M. *be—þere*] peynte him þerwith F.

71, 72. IE omit last half of l. 71, and first half of l. 72. *here*] hure M.

73. *For þy*] For-þi I; For-whi M; For þat F; For þe S. *loue*] IM om. *leueþ*] leue F. *wrytinges*] wrytyng M; writtus F.

74. *noȝt a-loweþ*] defendith F; cf. l. 68. *sinistra*] dextera I. *faciat*] facit F. *dextera*] sinistra I; dextera tua M; dextra manus F.

75. *half*] so E; hande IMFS. *tocheþ*] telleth F.

76. *Ywite*] Wite M; Wete F.

77—85. *This is the passage printed in Parallel Extracts from 29 MSS.* (E. E. T. S. 1866); *which see.*

77. *Ȝut*] But ȝit F. *myldeliche—meyre*] þe mayr · myldeliche I. *myldeliche*] þat maide M. [hue] *mis-written* hure P (*but see* l. 115); sche M; heo F; he I; ȝo E; and note that other MSS. have she, scho, heo, &c. S has—ȝut men scholde leue

mede · & do þat resoun askup.

78. *seriauns*] sergeantz I. *kepeþ lawes*] kepeþ þe lawes I; lawes kepen M.

79. *on* (1)] vpon I. *on* (2)] in MS; vpon I.

80. *As*] F om.

N.B. The whole of lines 77—118 is a single long sentence, including two parentheses, viz. ll. 78—80, and ll. 81—114; the sentence begins again with l. 115, a repetition of l. 77. *By-souhte* in l. 77 governs *to take* in l. 116; whilst *To punyshen* in l. 79 depends on *kepeþ* in l. 78.

81. *þese* MFIS] þees P. *men*] F om. *mene*] commune FS.

82. *byggen*] beggeþ I.

83. *With*] Whit P. *womben*] wombe MIFS; women (1) E.

84. *on*] al F; so S; M om. *tym-brid*] stieden M.

85. *Noþer—hem*] Noþer bigge F; And bouȝten hem no M; Ne boghten none I; Noþer boȝten ES. *ful certayn*] wel sure M.

Thei haue no [pite] of þe puple · þat parcel-mele mote † Such men are
biggen ; without pity.

þauh þei take hem vntydy þyng · þei hold hit no
treson,

And þauh þei fulle nat ful · þat for lawe [is seled], 88 † They expect
He gripeþ þer-for as grete · as for þe grete treuthe. full payment for
short measure.

Meny sondry sorwes · in cyte[es] fallen ofte,

Boþe þorw fuyr and flod · and al for false puple,

That by-gylen good men · and greueþ hem wrongliche, † These false
The whiche cryen on hure knees · þat crist hem auenge, dealers provoke
God's vengeance,

Here on þys erthe · oþer elles on helle, 94

That so by-gyleþ hem of here good ; · and god on her
sendeþ

Feueres oþer fouler yueles · oþer fur on here houses, † which brings
Moreyne oþer opere meschaunce · and menyne tyme hit fevers, fire, and
falleþ, raurrain. 97

That innocence ys yherde · In heuene a-monge seyntes,

That louten for hem to oure lorde · and to oure lady
boþe,

To graunten gylours on erthe · grace to amende, 100 † Sometimes they
And haue here penaunce on pure erthe · and noȝt þe are punished in
pyne of helle. this world.

86. [pite MIFEG] pyte S; puteye
P. of] on MS. puple] pore peple
M. mote biggen] biggeth F; biggen
M.

87. þauh] And þogh I. hem] F om.
þei—treson] no tresoun þey ne halde
it I; no tresoun þei hit holden M; no
tresun þey holden hit S; no trespae
þei holdeþ F.

88. lawe] þe lawe M. [is seled
MIFE] is selyd S; miswritten y
seelde P.

89. He gripeþ] þei gripen M. He
—þerfor] þerfore gripeth he F. þer-
for—grete] asgrete þerfore S. as (2)]
E om. grete (2)] graith I.

90. cytees] citees IFE; cyteus S;
cites MG; cyte P. ofte] ful ofte I.

91. flod] þurgh flood IF. and (2)]
I om. for] þurgh I; þorw M; þorȝ

S.

92. That] þey S. good] so goode E.
wrongliche] wrongfulli M; with wrong
F.

93. whiche] wiche P; whiche þat I.

94. F omits. on (2)] in IS.

95. and—sendeþ] þat god hem
wolde senden I. and] MF om.

96. Feueres] Feuer I. yueles] so
E; hyueles P; eueles M; euelys S;
euelus F; euel I. fur] fyr IF; feor
M; fuyre S.

97. meschaunce] meschances IM;
myschaunses S. tyme] tymes I.

98. seyntes] þe seintes I.

100. To] I om.

101. And] To F; And to M. pure]
M om. þe] to I; in þe P; but MFS
EG omit in.

And þenne falleþ þer fur · on false menne houses,
 And good men[ne] for here gultes · gloweþ on fuyr
 after. 103

† Some fires begin at a brewer's, Al þys haue we seyen · that som tyme þorw a brewere
 Meny burgagys [ben] ybrent · and bodyes þer-ynne ;

† or from a candle that falls down. And þorw a candel, clomyng · in a corsed place,
 Fel a-down, and for-brende · forþ al þe rewe.

For-þy mayres þat maken free men · me þynkeþ þat þei
 ouhten 108

For to spure and aspye · for eny speche of seluer
 What manere mester · oþer merchaundise he vsede,

† Before a man is made "free" of a city, his character should be examined into.) Er he were vnder-fonge free · and felawe in þoure rolles.
 Hit ys noȝt semly forsoþ · in cyte ne in borwton, 112
 þat vsurers oþer regratours · for eny kynne ȝyftes,

Be fraunchised for a free man · and haue [a] fals name) —

B 36

But Meed advised
 the mayor to take
 bribes,

Ac mede þe mayde · þe meyre hue by-souhte
 Of alle suche sellers · suluer to take, 116
 Oþer presentes with-oute pans · and oþer pryueye ȝyftes,
 And haue reuthe of þe regratours · þat han ryche
 hondes ;

† Ps. xxv. 10
 (Vulg.).

*In quorum manibus iniquitates sunt: dextera
 eorum repleta est muneribus.*

102. And] M om. þer] þe E. fur]
 fyre F; feor M; fuyr S. menne] so
 also S; men FE; mennes I; menes
 M.

103. menne] men PE; mennes I;
 menes M; mennus SF; but see last
 line. on] a F.

104. Al] And F. haue we] we
 han M.

105. [ben] suggested by han be M;
 beth F; PEIS om.

106. clomyng] clemyng EG; cleu-
 ynge I; glemyng F; cleuyng or clen-
 yng SM.

107. a-down] down I. for-brende]
 forbrent IF; forbrente S; fur-brente
 M.

108. For-þy] For-whi M. mayres]
 E om. men] F om. þynkeþ] mis-
 written þynken P. þat (2)] M om.

109. spure] spere IF; sperize M.
 and] and to I.

110. oþer] of FS. vsede] vseth F.

111. Er] Or EFS. þoure] oure MS.

112. cyte] citees F. borwton]
 borwtoun M. burgh-toun I; borȝ-
 town S; burwus F.

113. vsurers] vsurie I. oþer] & FM.
 eny kynne] eny skyns (sic) I (for
 enys kynnes). ȝyftes] miswritten
 ȝeftes P; but see ll. 117, 126, 162.

114. haue] bere S. [a MIFSG] PE
 om.

115. meyre] meyre P; but see l.
 77.

117. pans] pens I; penes M. and]
 or S.

118. And] I om. of þe] on þis I;
 on MFS. dextera, &c.] IG om.

"Loue hem for my loue" · quath this lady mede,
 "And soffre hem som tyme · to sulle a-zens þe lawe."

and to suffer
 them to cheat.

Salamon the sage · a sarmon he made 121
 In amendement of meyres · and opere stywardes,
 And witnessyth what worth of hem · þat wollen take
 mede :

But Solomon
 thus speaks
 against all
 receivers of
 bribes.

*Ignis deuorabit tabernacula eorum qui libenter
 accipiunt munera.* Job xv. 34.

A-mong þese lettrede lordes · þis latyn ys to mene, 124
 þat fur shal falle and for-brenne · al to blewe askes
 The houses and þe homes · of hem þat taken ȝyftes.

This Latin
 means, that fire
 shall consume
 the tabernacles
 of bribery.

The kyng fram consail cam · and callyd after mede,
 And sente for to see hure · ac ich say nat hym þat
 ladde hure. 128

A 33
 Then the king
 sent for Meed,

Corteisliche þe kyng tho · as hus kynde wolde,
 Lackede here a litel wyht · for þat hue louede gyle,
 And wilnede to be wedded · with-oute hys leue,
 Tyl treuth hadde tolde hure · a tokne fram hym-
 selue ;

and courteously
 spake thus :

And seyde, "womman, vnwittylich · wrouȝt hast þow
 ofte ; 133

† "I have often
 forgiven thee, in
 hope thou wouldest
 amend.

Ich haue for-gyue þe meny gultes · and my grace
 graunted

Bope to þe and to þyne · in hope þow sholdest a-mende ;

119. *this*] þat M.

120, 121. *S omits.* *he*] hue P.

123. *what*] wat P.

124. *þese IFMS*] þes P.

125. *þat*] I *om.* *fur*] Feer I; fire
 F; feor M; fuyre S. *for-brenne*] to-
 brenne S; eke brenne F. *blewe*] blo
 IFM; broun S. *askes*] asches I.

126. *ȝyftes*] mede M.

127. *fram*] þo fro S. *fram—cam*]
 cam fro þe consail M. *cam and*] I
om.

128. *for*] I *om.* *ac*] but M. *ac—
 hym*] I myght not se I. *ladde hure*]
 heore ladde M. *ac—hure*] for here
 sory name F.

129. *Corteisliche*] For cortaysliche

I; Ful curteisli M. *tho*] I *om.*

130. *Lackede*] Lokede on M. *litel*
 EIFM] lytul S; lytil G; lyte P.
þat] M *om.*

131. *to*] forte M. *hys*] ys P.

132. *Tyl*] And til I. *fram*] of E.

133. *womman*] wommen (*by mis-
 take*) P. *womman vnwittylich*] vn-
 treweliche woman I; vnwithli wom-
 man M; woman wikkidly F.

134. *gultes*] a gult SM; a gilt IF.
Ich—gultes] And many a gilt I haue
 þe forgyue I. *graunted*] ygraunted
 E.

135. *Bope*] IM *om.* *sholdest*]
 woldest MF.

Never hast thou
done worse than
now; but do so
no more;

† lest thou be
imprisoned in
Corfe Castle, or in
some still worse
place.

I have a knight
named Con-
science; wilt thou
marry him?"

B 37

"Yes," said she,
"I will do your
will."

A 34

Then was
Conscience called,
who knelt and
asked the king's
will.

"Wilt thou wed

And ay þe lenger ich lete þe go · þe lasse treuthe ys
with þe; 136

For worsse wrouhtest þow neuere · þan þo þow fals toke.

3ut ich for-gyue þe þis gult · godes for-bode eny more
þow [tene me and] treuthe; · and þow mowe be y-take,

In þe castel of corf · ich shal do þe close 140

Ther as an anere · oþer in a wel wors wone,

And marre þe with myschef · by seint marye my lady,
þat alle wommen wantowen · shulleþ be war by
þe one, 143

And biterliche banne þe · and alle þat bereþ þy name,

And teche þe louye treuthe · and take consail of reson.

Ich haue a knyzt, hatte conscience · cam late froo by-
3onde,

Yf he wilneþ þe to wyue · wolt þow hym haue?"

"3e, lord," quath þe lady · "lord it me for-bede 148

Bote ich be holly at þyn heste; · let honge me ellys!"

Thenne was conscience cald · to come and apeere

By-for þe kyng and hys consail · as clerkus and oþere.

Conscience knelynge · to þe kyng loutede, 152

To wite what hus wil were · and what he do sholde.

"Wolt thou wedde þis maide · yf ich wol assente,

136. *ich*] *pat* i S.

137. *þo*] M *om.* *fals*] to fals I.

138. *3ut*] 3if M. *ich—þis*] forgif
I þe þi F. *þis*] þy S. *godes for-bode*] *god forbode* I. *eny*] a (*sic*) F.

139. *þow*] *þat þou* F. [*tene—and*
IFMSG] *miswritten* tene & E; tuene
on P.

140—142. I *has—*

In þe castel of Corff · I schal do
close þe as an anker,

Or yn a wal worse won · by seint
mary my lady.

141. *as*] to be as F. *oþer—wel*] *or ellus* in F; or in wel M. *wone*] *wones* M.

143. *alle*] F *om.* *wommen wan-*
tonen] wantowne wymmen I; wanton
wymmen M. *shulleþ*] *schulle* MS;
schul I; F *om.* *war*] *i-war* M.

145. *þe*] *þe* to IM. *of*] at FS.

146. *hatte*] *hat* F; *me calleþ* M; I
om. *cam late*] *þat late* cam F.

148. *þe*] *þat* ME. *lord* (2)] *god* M.

149. *holly*] *so* IMFS; *a better*
spelling than holiche P; *holich* E.
let honge] *hangeþ* F.

150. *Thenne*] *þo* M. *cald*] I-called
I; *i-cald* M. *to*] I *om.* *and*] & to S.

151. *kyng—hys*] *kingus* F. *hys*] *ys*
P. *as*] of F; M *om.*

152. *Conscience knelynge*] *Knelynge*
conscience I. *knelynge—loutede*] *cam*
to þe kyng · & knelyng lowted F. M
has—Knelyng to þe kyng · concience
a-louyted; *so also* G.

154. *maide*] *meede* I; *wyt, quod*
he F. *ich*] *heo* F. *wol*] *so* IS; *bet-*
ter than wolle PE; *wile* M; *wole* F.

For hue ys fayne of þy felaushēp · and for to be þy this woman? "
make? " said the king. 155

Quath conscience to þe kyngē · "Crist it me for-bede! " Nay, Christ
Er ich wedde suche a wif · wo me by-tyde! forbid," quoth
Conscience.

For hue ys freel of hure faith · and fikel of hure "She is frail and
speche, sickle, and makes
men sin.

And makeþ men mys-do · meny score tymes.

In trist of hure tresour · hue tenēþ ful menyē; 160

Wyues and wodewes · wantownesse hue techēþ,

She teaches
women
wantonness.

And lereþ hem to lecherie · þat louyēþ here ȝyftes.

ȝoure fader hue felde · fals and hue to-gederes;

She caused your
father's fall; and
harms holy
Church.

Hue haþ a-poisoned popes · hue apeireþ holy churchē;

Ys nauht a betere baude · by hym þat me made! 165

By-twyne heuene and helle · alle erthe þauh me souhte.

For hue ys tykel of hure tail · talewys of tonge,

She is frail, and a
tale-bearer; as
common as a
cartway to every
A 35
knave.

As comune as þe cart-wey · to knaues and to alle, 168

To monkes and to alle men; · the meseles in heggys

Lyggeþ by hure whenne hem lust · lered and lewed.

Sysours and somners · suche men hure preyseþ,

Assizers and
summoners
and sheriffs
praise her.

Shereues of shires · were shent yf hue ne were. 172

For hue doþ men lese here londe · and here lyf boþe;

She makes men
lose both land

Hue leteþ passe prisoners · and paieþ for hem ofte,

B 38
and life, and
releases prisoners

And geueþ þe gailer gold · and grotes to-gederes,

155. *For*] M om. *þy* (1)] F om.
and] FSM om.

156. *it*] M om. *for-bede*] for-bude
P; but see l. 148.

157. *Er*] Ar IF; Or EM.

158. *speche*] tonge M.

160. *trist*] trust F. *hue*] mis-
written he P; see next line. *tenēþ*
IFME] tenup S; tuenēþ P. *ful*] wel
M.

161. *Wyues*] And wyues F. *hue*] F om.

162. *lereþ*] lerneþ M. *to*] M om.

163. *felde*] afeide I.

164. *a-poisoned*] so IFES; better
than a-poisoned P. *haþ a-poisoned*] enpoisenēþ M. *hue*] & FM. *apeireþ*] peyred F.

165. *Ys*] þer nys M.

166. *alle*] and I. *me*] so also FG;
men ISME.

167. *For*] E om. *tykel*] fikul S.
talewys SI] tale-wis F; tale-wise E;
talewijs M; talwys P. *of*] of hire E.

168. *As*] And M.

169. *and*] S om. *and—men*] to
masours F. *the*] to M. *the—heggys*] sche moseles in hegge (*sic*) I. *in*] in
þe S.

170. *Lyggeþ*] þer ligge F. *whenne*] wenne P. *hem*] here F. *lust*] likup S.

172. *Shereues*] miswritten Shereue
P. *ne were*] nere IFEG.

173. *lese*] to lese F.

174. *leteþ*] lette M. *and*] I om.

175. *þe*] to F. *gailer*] gaiolers I;
gaylerus F.

by bribes.

She ties true men
fast, and hangs
the innocent.

She is assoiled
when she pleases.

She is intimate
with the pope,
and seals bulls.

She maintains
priests in
concubinage.

A 36

She corrupts
judges with
jewels.

To vnfetery þe false · and fle where hem lykeþ ; 176

And takeþ trewe by þe top · and tieþ hem faste,

And hongep [him] for haterede · þat harmede neuere.

To be corsed in constorye · hue countep nauht a rusche ;

Hue copeþ þe comissarie · and coteþ hus clerkus, 180

Hue is assoilid þus sone · as hure [self] lykeþ.

Hue may ney as moche do · in a mounthe one

As þoure secret seel · in sexscore dayes.

Hue ys priuy with þe pope · prouiscours it knowep, 184

For symonye and hure-self · seelep hure bulles.

Hue blessep þese byshopys · þauh þei be negh lewede,

Hue prouendrep persons · and prestes hue menteynep

To holde lemmanes and lotebyes · al here lif-dayes, 188

And bryngeþ forþ barnes · a-zens for-boden lawes ;

Sunt infelices · quia matres sunt meretrices.

Ther hue ys wel wyth eny kynge · wo ys þe reome,

For hue ys fauerable to fals · that defouleþ treuthe. 192

By iesus, with hure iewels · þe Iustices hue shendeþ ;

Hue lyth a-zen þe lawe · and letteþ hym þe gate,

þat faith may nat haue hus forþ · hure floreines goth so

thycke ; 195

176. *vnfetery*] so E ; *better than vn-*
fetery P ; IFMS *have vnfetere. and*
to F. *where*] were P. *hem*] him IFM.

177—181. F *omits*.

177. *takeþ*] so ME ; *takþ* I ; *takup*
S ; *miswritten take* P. *trewe*] þe
trewe E ; *treuwe* I. *tieþ—faste*
techeþ him falste I.

178. *And*] Sche M. [*him* IMG]
PES *om.* *harmede*] harmede hure
M ; *but* PISE *omit* hure.

179. *constorye* SG] þe constory I ;
constoriþe M ; constory E ; *badly*
written constarye P. *hue*] I *om.*
countep] *acompteþ* I ; *a-countep* M.

180. *Hue*] For he I. *comissarie*]
so IMES ; *comessarie* P.

181. *Hue*] And M. *assoilid*]
asoilid P ; assoylled in dede E. *þus*]
as M. *as*] ase P. [*self* SMG] silf
E ; selue I ; lef P ; *see* B-text.

182. *ney*] myd hym E ; F *om.*

one] ones IM.

183. *secret*] secree M ; secre S.
sex] seuene MF.

184. *it*] hure M.

185. *seelep*] selleth I ; a-selen M.

186. *blessep*] benefiseth F. *þese* IM
FS] thees P. *þei*] þat þei M. *negh*]
ny I ; nyȝ S ; riȝt F ; noȝt E ; M *om.*

188. *lemmanes*] so M ; *lemmanu-*
FS ; *lemmans* EI ; *miswritten* *lem-*
menes P. *dayes*] tyme F.

189. *bryngeþ*] bringen M ; brynge
S. *a-zens*] with F. *lawes*] lawe I.

191. *eny*] þe F. *þe*] þat I. *reome*]
reume S ; rewme F ; Reaume I.

192. *that*] þe which I ; and M.

193. *þe*] þoure F ; S *om.* *Iustices*]
Iustice I.

194. *lyth*] liȝt ofte F.

195. *may*] ne may PE ; *but* IFSMG
omit ne ; *see* B-text. *hus*] hire E.
forþ] cours F. *thycke*] wide E.

And ledeþ þe lawe as hure lust · And louedayes makeþ,
þoruh · which loueday ys lost · þat leaute myȝte wyne,
The mase for [a] mene man · þauh he mote euere. 198

She directs the
law as she likes,
and appoints
love-days.

B 39

The lawe ys so lordlich · and loth to maken ende,
With-oute presentes oper pans · hue pleseth ful fewe.

Law will not
make an end
without bribes.

Trewe burgeis and bonde · to nauht hue bringeþ ofte,
And al þe comune in care · and [in] couetyse ;

She brings
burgesses to
naught.

Religion hue al to-reueþ · and out of ruele to lybbe.

Ther nys cite vnder sonne · ne so riche reome 204

Ther hue ys loued and lete by · þat last shal eny while,

† She causes wars
and wicked laws.

With-oute werre oper wo · oper wicked lawes,

And customes [of] couetyse · [þe] comune to distruye.

Vnsyttynge suffraunce · hure suster, and hure-selue

Haue maked al-most · bote marie þe helpe,

209

† No land loves
thee; and least of
all thine own.

þat no lond loueþ the · and ȝut leest þyn owene.

For mede hath knyȝt clerkes · and couetyse to-geders,

þat al þe wit of þis worlde · ys woxen in-to gyle. 212

Thus þis lady ledeþ [þy] londe · now lord ȝeue hure

Such is her evil
power.

sorwe !

For pore men der nat pleyne · ne here pleinte shewe,

The poor cannot

196. *And*] Sche M; Hue S. *ledeþ* lett I. *þe*] F om. *as*] at I.

197. *which*] wiche P. *loueday*] louedaies E.

198. [*a* IMFES] þe P.

199. *The*] I om. *loth*] is loth I. *maken*] make eny I; make an SM.

200. *With*] Wit P. *pans*] pens I; penes M. *ful*] wel F.

201. *Trewe*] Bope S. *burgeis*] so M; burgeys F; burges I; burgeysus S; borgeises E; *looks like* burgers in P; but see B-text. *bonde*] bolde F. *to—bringeþ*] ȝhe bringeþ to noght I.

202. *al*] cast F; Som. [*in* IMFSE] P om.

203. *and*] M om. (*Perhaps* and should be omitted, but the other MSS. retain it.) *to lybbe*] dryueth F.

204. *nys*] ne is I. *ne*] ne non IM; ne noon S; *apparently* written no P; but FE have ne.

205. *loued*] allowed I; alowed FS;

lady (!) E.

206. *oper* (1)] or oper M. *lawes*] lawe I.

207. *customes*] custemes P. [*of* IMFSE] and P. [*þe* IMFSE] þat P.

208. *suffraunce*] sustenance I.

209. *maked almost*] almost I—made I.

210. *no lond*] no londe ne londe ne (so, by mistake) I; no lond ne F. *the*] F om.

211. *knyt*] knyȝt so F. *and*] wiþ M. *couetyse*] couetyce P; see l. 202. I has—For clerkes and couetise · meede haȝ knet to-gidres.

212. *wit*] so MF; witt E; wyt S; witte I; whit P. *þis*] þe IFM. *ys woxen*] wox is F.

213. *þis—ledeþ*] lereth þis lady I. [*þy* EG] þi IFMS; þys P. *now*] oure M. *lord*] crist E.

214. *der*] dar IF; dur S; dor E; derre M. *pleyne*] plede S. *here*] no I.

make their
complaints
known."

Then Meed was
sorry, and asked
leave to speak.

The king bids her
excuse herself.

A 37

"Disbelieve
Conscience," said
she;

"for well knowest
thou, Conscience,
thou hast hung
on my neck
eleven times, and
taken money
from me,

and hast defamed
me. And yet I

B 40
never killed any
king.

Suche a maister ys mede · a-mong men of goode."

Thanne mornede mede · menyng hure to þe kyng, 216

To haue space to speke · spede yf hue myghte.

The kyng graunted hure grace · with a good wyll;

"Excuse [þe] yf þow canst · ich can no more seggen;

For conscience acuseþ the · to congie þe for euere." 220

"Nay, lord," quap þat lady · "leyueþ hym þe werse,

When 3e wyten witerliche · in wham þe wrong lyggeþ.

Ther [þat] myschief ys gret · mede may helpen.

And þat knoweþ conscience · ich cam noȝt to chiden,

Ne to deprauē [þi] persone · with a prout herte. 225

Wel þow wost wyterly · bote yf þow wolle gabbe,

Thow hast hanged on myn hals · elleuen tymes,

And al-so grypen of my gold · and gaf it where þe
lykede. 228

Why þow wratthest [þe] now · wonder me þynkeþ,

ȝut ich may, as ich myghte · menske þe with ȝyftes,

And menteyny þy manhod · more þan þow knowest.

Ac þow hast famede me foule · by-fore þe kyng here;

For culde ich neuere no kyng · ne consailed so to done;

Ac ich saued my-self · and sixty þousand lyues, 234

Boþe her and elles wher · in alle kynne londes.

216. *menyng*] monyng F; and
mened I.

217. *to*] for to F.

218. *with*] wit P.

219. [þe IFMG] PES om.

220. *to congie*] to cunge FS; and
cungeþ M.

221. *Nay*] Leue F. *leyueþ*] leueþ
FME; leeueþ I; leuþ S.

222. *When*] Wen P. *wham*] wam
P.

223. [þat IMSEG] as F; þe P.
Ther—gret] For þer as gret meschef
is F. *helpen*] muche helpe F.

224. *knoweþ*] knowest þou IF. *to*]
for to F.

225. [þi FME] þy GS; þe PI.
prout] proute E; proud MIFS.

226. *Wel*] For wel F. *wyterly*]
weye I. *nolle*] woldest M.

227. *hals*] half IM. *elleuen*] en-
leuen I; enleue S.

228. *of*] I om. *and*] an P. *gaf*]
ȝaf E; gyue IMS; ȝoue F. *it*] M
om. *where*] were P. *lykede*] likeþ
IM.

229. [þe IMFSE] P om.

230. *ȝut*] & ȝit F. *ich may*] mai
i M. *menske*] a-uauance M.

232. *Ac*] & F. *kyng here*] kyngus
ere F.

233. *For culde*] Forgulte E.
culde] killede M. *no*] M om.

234. *saued*] haue saued I; haue i-
saued M. *and*] IMFS om. *lyues*]
tymus S.

235. *Boþe*] M om. *wher*] wer P.
alle kynne] alle kynnes M; many
kyngus F.

Ac þow þy-self sothliche · ho [so] it segge dorste, 236
 Hast arwed meny hardy men · that haddén wil to
 fyghte,

† But thou hast rendered slothful many hardy fighting men.

To brennen and to bruten · to bete a-doun strengthes.

In þe contreis þer þe kyng cam · conscience hym lette,
 þat he ne felde nat hus foes · þo fortune it wolde, 240
 And as hus werdes were ordeined · by wil of oure lorde.

† It was Conscience that prevented the king from defeating his foes.

Caytiflyche þow, conscience · consailedist þe kyng leten
 In hus enemys honde · hys heritage of fraunce.

Vnconnyng ys þat conscience · a kyngdome to sulle,
 þat ys conqueryd þoww comune helpe; · a kyngdome
 oper duche 245

† It is wrong to sell a kingdom or a duchy.

May nat be sold soply · so meny here part asken
 Of folk þat fauht þer-fore · and folwed þe kynges wil.

þe lest lad þat longep to hym · be þe lond wonnen,
 Lokeþ after lordshep · oper opere large mede, 249

† Every lad in the army expects his share of the conquered land.

Wher-by he may as a man · for euere-more lyue after.

And þat ys þe kynde of a kyng · þat conquereþ of hys
 enemyes,

To helpe heyeliche al hus host · opere elles to graunte
 Al þat hus men mowen wynne · to do þer-myð here
 beste. 253

† A king ought to provide for all his followers.

236. [so MFSEG] IP *om.*

237. *arwed*] so I; *arewyd* S; *i-arewed* M; *arwad* E; *i-had* F. *meny*] F *om.* *hardy*] an *hardi* M.

238. *and-bruten*] and to *bresten* M; & to *breke* F; in *Britaigne* I. to (3)] and IMF.

239—241. M *omits.*

239. *þe*] IF *om.* *contreis*] *contre* F. *conscience*] þow *conscience* F. *lette*] *lettest* F.

240. *ne*] F *om.* *felde*] so IE; *fulde* S; *fuld* PF. *þo*] þogh I; þe E.

241. *werdes*] *wirdus* F; *wordes* I. *ordeined*] I-þouȝt F. *by*] at þe I. *oure*] *houre* P. *oure lorde*] *god almyȝty* F.

242. *þe kyng*] *him* F. *leten*] to *leten* I; to *letun* S; to *lete* F.

243. *honde*] *hend* E; *handes* I.

hys] *ys* P.

244. *þat*] *it* F. *þat conscience*] þi *consail* M. *sulle*] *fulle* E.

245. *þat*] For þat I. *ys conqueryd*] *conquered* is F. *þoww*] bi MF. *a kyngdome*] F *om.* *duche*] *duchie* I; *a duche* EMS; *a ducherye* F.

246. *May*] *It may* IF. *here*] I *om.*

247. *folk*] *fewe folk* F. *fauht*] *folowede* S. *þe*] FS *om.*

248. *þe*] But þe F. *longep*] *lieth* F. *to*] *wiþ* I.

249. *oper*] or FSM. *opere*] I *om.*

250. *Wher*] *Wer* P. *for*] M *om.* *more*] FM *om.* *after*] *þer-after* F.

251. *of* (2)] on MIFS. *hys*] *ys* P.

252. *heyeliche*] *hoygeliche* F; *hugeli* M. *to*] *for* to F.

253. *to*] I *om.* *do*] E *om.* *myð*] *wiþ* MIFS.

† I would never
have made
Conscience my
marshal.

A 39

Had I been
marshal then, he
should have been
lord of all the
land!

But *thou*,
Conscience, didst
counsel him to
leave that
lordship.

A king should
reward them that
serve him.

B 41

Thus emperors
and earls get
their yeomen.
Thus, too, the
pope gives
rewards to men.

Forþy ich counsayle no kyng · eny counsayle aske
At conscience, yf he coueyteþ · to conquere a reome.
For sholde neuere conscience · be my constable, 256
Were ich a kyng ycoroned · by marye," quap mede,
"Ne be mareschal of my men · þer ich moste fyghte.
Ac hadde ich, mede, be hus mareschal · ouer hus men
in fraunce,
Ich dorst haue leid my lyue · and no lasse wedde, 260
He had be lord of þat londe · in lengthe and in brede,
And al-so kyng of þat cuth · hus kyn to haue holpen,
The leste brol of hus blod · a barones pere.
Vnkyndely þow, conscience · consailedest hym þennes,
To lete so hus lordshup · for a lytel moneye. 265
Hyt by-comeþ for a kyng · þat shal kepe a reame,
To ȝeue men mede · þat meklyche hym seruēþ,
To alienes, to alle men · to honoury hem with ȝyftes;
Mede makeþ hym [be] by-loued · and for a man yholde.
Emperours and erles · and alle manere lordes
þoruh ȝyftes hauen ȝemen · to rennen and to ryde.
þe pope and alle prelates · presentes vnder-fongen, 272
And ȝeuen mede to men · to menteynye here lawes.

254. *Forþy*] For-whi M; For S.
aske] to aske M.

255. *yf he*] þat I. *coueyteþ*] coueite MFESG. *conquere*] conquere IMES; wynnē F. *reome*] reume IS; reme F.

256. 257. I *has* one line—For schulde neuer conscience be my counstable · were I a king, quod mede.

257. *ycoroned*] I-crowned F; i-crowned M; ycoroned ES; ycorononed P. *marye*] al þis croys F.

258. *of*] ouer IFES.

259. *ich*] F om.

260. *leid*] so MFS; leide IE; led P. *my*] þer-to my FM. *lyue*] hed M.

261. *He*] ȝe M. *had be*] schold haue ben I.

262. *cuth*] kith FS; coyn M. *hus*] ȝoure M. *to—holpen*] for to helpe I.

263. *brol* F] brolle I; broþil S; *miswritten* brel P; bral E; M om. *hus*] ȝoure M. *pere*] fere E.

264. *Vnkyndely*] Vncunnyngliche I. *þow*] I om. *þennes*] þanne IF.

265. *moneye*] mede F.

266. *for*] to F.

267. *meklyche*] mecklyche P.

268. *to alle*] and to alle IM. *honoury*] honoure IMS; honour FE. *ȝyftes*] ȝeftes P; but see ll. 162, 230.

269. *Mede makeþ*] þanne makith mede F. [*be* IFES] PM om. *yholde*] so ES; Iholde FM; be holde I; *miswritten* yolde P.

271. *ȝemen*] so EFS; ȝomen I; ȝimmen M; ȝemmen P. *rennen*] ȝerne I.

273. *to menteynye*] to meyntheyne F; to mayntene I; to meyntene E; to mentayne S; þat meyntheyneþ M.

Seriauntes for here seruice · mede þey asken,
 And taken mede of here maistres · as þei mow a-corde.
 Beggars and bedmen · crauen mede for here prayers.
 Mynstrals for here mynstraleye · a mede þei asken. 277
 Maistres þat techen clerkes · crauen hure for mede.
 Prestes þat prechen · and þe puple techen
 Asken mede and masse-pans · and here mete boþe. 280
 Alle kyne crafty men · crauen mede for here aprentys,
 Marchaundise and mede · mote nedes go to-gederes.
 Is no lede þat leueþ · þat he ne loueþ mede,
 And glad for to grype hure · gret lord oþer poure." 284

A 39

Servants receive wages.

Beggars ask for gifts, and so do minstrels.

Priests expect mass-pence.

Trade and payment go together; none can live without reward."

Tho quath þe kyng to conscience · "by Cryst, at my knowynge,

"Then Meed is worthy to rule," said the king.

Mede ys worthy, me þynkeþ · þe maistrye to haue."

"Nay," quap conscience [to þe kyng] · "clerkes wyten þe soþe,

"Nay," said Conscience, † "clerks know Meed to be a maintainer of guile. † See Ps. xxv. 10 (Vulgate).

þat mede ys euermore · a meyntenour of gyle, 288

As þe sauter sheweþ · by suche as ȝeuen mede,

þat vnlawfulliche [lyuen] · hauen large honden,

To ȝeue mede to men · more oþer lasse. 291

Ac þer ys mede [and] mercede · and boþe men demen † But, besides

274. *Seriauntes*] Seruantz I; Seruauntes M.

276. *Beggars*] Boþe beggers I. *bedmen*] bedemen IFMS; bedred E.

277. *Mynstrals*] And mynstrallus F.

278. *Maistres*] Men F. *techen*] kenne I. (*which improves the alliteration*). *hure—mede*] hyure for heore mede M; here mede SF; þerfore mede I.

279. *þe—techen*] techeth þe lawe F. 280. *pans*] pens F; penes M. *here*] his M.

281. *crafty*] craftus S. *aprentys*] prentis E; prentes M; prentises I; hyre F.

282. *nedes*] nede EFS. *go*] I om.

283. *Is*] þer is F; þer nys M. *he*] so EIFMS; hue P (*by mistake*).

284. *hure*] hire EI; here F; heore M. *gret—poure*] boþe grete & smale

F; gret lord and oþer M.

285. *Tho*] Now F; I om. *Cryst*] *miswritten* Cryest P. *at—knowynge*] as me þenkeþ I; as me semeth F.

286. *me*] as me F.

287. *Nay*] Certes F. [*to—kyng*] FIMS] PE om. *wyten*] witeþ I; know F.

289. *sheweþ*] saith I. *as*] þat ES.

290. *þat*] & E. [*lyuen* ISG] liuen M; leueth F; PE om. (cf. Lat. quotation, l. 118 above). *large*] large of E (*wrongly*). *honden*] hondus F; handes IMS.

291. *To*] Forte M. *mede—men*] men mede IS; men of mede F. *to men*] M om. *more—lasse*] þe more or þe lasse F.

292. *ys mede*] meede is I. *mede*] a mede M. [*and* IF] and a M; a PES. *men*] of hem me F.

Meed, there is
Hire, which men
get for what
they do.

† Yet no one
should be paid
till he has earned
his pay, nor
should he under-
take another's
prepaid work.

† Men who ask
for pre-payment
are over-bold.

† Good men do
not pay till the
work is done.

† The payment is
then no *Meed*,
but *Hire*, and a
debt due,

† which should
not be kept back.

A desert for som doynge · derne oþer elles. 293

Mede meny tymes · men ȝeuen by-for þe doynge ;

And þat ys noþer reson ne ryht · ne no reame lawe

þat eny man mede toke · bote he it myghte deserue,

And for to vndertake · to trauely for anoþer, 297

And wot neuere witterly · wher he lyue so longe,

Ne haue hap to hus hele · mede to deseruen.

Ich halde hym ouer-hardy · oþer elles nouht trewe,

þat *pre manibus* ys payed · oþer elles paye askeþ. 301

Harlotes and hores · and al-so fals leches,

Thei asken hure huyre · er þey hit haue deserued.

And gylours gyuen by-fore · and goode men at þe
ende,

When þe dede ys ydo · and þe day yendyd. 305

And þat ys no mede · bote a mercede,

A maner dewe dette · for þe doynge ;

And bote if yt be payed prestliche · the payer is to
blame, 308

As by þe bok, þat bit · no body to with-holde

þe hure of hus hewe · ouer eue til a morwe :

293. *doynge*] dede F. *derne*] so
IMS; deorne F; durne E; deerne or
doerne P.

294. *meny—ȝeuen*] ȝeue many men
F. *þe*] here F.

295. *ys*] nys M. *no*] in no IFS.
reame] reomes M.

296. *mede toke*] schal mede take F.
myghte] may F.

297. *And—to*] Or trewly F.
trauely] trauaile IM; trauayle ES;
trauayl F.

298. *witterly*] so EI; witturly F;
withturli M; wyturly S; whiterly P.
wher] so MI; wer PE; wheþer FS.

299. *Ne*] Or F.

300. *ouer*] so IMES; to F; *badly*
spelt ouere P. *nouht trewe*] vntrewe
F; out of truwþe E.

301. *payed*] ypaid E; I-payd F.
elles] his IMFS.

302. *Harlotes*] As harlotus F.

303. *deserued*] deseruede (*badly*) P.

304. *And*] For M. *and*] ac F.
at—ende] at þende I; atte neende
F.

305. *yendyd*] so PE; I-edyd S;
i-ende M; endede F; endeth I.

306, 307. *One line in FI*; þat is no
mede but *mercede* · & dette for doynge
F; And þat is no mede but a *mercede* ·
a maner due dette I. *And þat*] Ac
what M. *no*] M om. A] & a E.
maner] maner of M. *dewe*] so M;
diwe P; due S; þywe (*sic*) E. *þe*]
þi M.

308. *if*] ȝif E; IMFS om. *be—*
prestliche] be prestliche payd FS;
prestly be payd I.

309. *As—þat*] For as þe holy book
F. *to*] schuld F; IMS om. *with-*
holde] wit-holde P.

310. *hure*] huyre M; hire F.
here] so I; hywe P; hyne EFMS.
ouer—a] til it be oþer F.

*Non morabitur opus mercenarij [tui] apud te † Levit. xix. 13.
usque mane.*

And þer is reson as a reue · rewarding treuthe,

And boþe þe lord and þe laborer · ben leelliche yserued.

The mede þat meny prest[es] takeþ · for masses þat þei
syngen, 313

Amen, amen, Matheu seyth · mercedem suam recipiunt.

In marchaundise ys no mede · ich may it wel avowe ;

Hit is a permutacion a-pertelich · o pene-worth for
anoþer. 316

And þauh þe kyng of hys cortesy · kaiser, oþer pope,

3eue lond oþer lordshup · [or] oþer large 3iftes,

To here leelle [and] lyge · loue ys þe cause.

And yf þe leelle and þe lyge · be luther men after, 320

Boþe kyng and kayser · and þe coroned pope

May desauowe þat þey dude · and douwe þer-with
oþer, † and he may

And a-non by-nymen hym hit · and neuere [more] after

Noþer þei ne here Ayres · hardy to cleyme, 324

That kyng oþer cayser hym gaf · catel oþer rente.

For god gaf to salamon · grace vp-on erthe,

Rychesse and reson · whyle he ryht lyuede, 327

A 40 B 42
Priests that take
money shall have
the reward St

B 43
Matthew speaks
of (Matt. vi. 5).
In trading is no
Meed, but only

barter.

† If the king give
away lands, he
does it out of
love,

† and he may
revoke the gift,
and give it to
another.

† Thus God gave
Solomon riches
while he lived
well,

*mercenarij EMS] spelt mercennarij
PF. [tui FS] PEMI om.*

311. *as] M om. rewarding] to re-
warde F. treuthe] proz (!) E.*

312. *And] Pat IMFS.*

313. *prestes ME] prestis I; prestus
S; men F; prest P. masses—
syngen] here massus syngyng F.*

314. *Matheu] Matheus M. suam]
F om. recipiunt] receperunt MFS.*

315. *ys] þer is F; nys E.*

316. *apertelich] F om. o] so PEI;
a MF; on S. pene-worth] peny F.*

317. *hys] F om.*

318. *[or IMFSG] PĒ om. 3iftes]
3eftes P; see l. 230.*

319. *leelle] I om. [and M] and
to I; PEFS om. (but see next line).
lyge S] lige M; lege PIE (but see
next line); lyge-men F. ys] I om.*

320. *þe (1)] þo M. þe (2)] IME
om. lyge] liege I; liche E.*

322. *desauowe] disalowē FS.
douwe] dowe E; dewe F; do IMS.
þer-with] þer-whit P. oþer] an oþer
IFS; a noþer M.*

323. *anon—hit] bynyme it hem
anon I. hym hit] hem hit S; hit
hem M; it hem F. [more IFMG]
PES om. after] þer-aftur F.*

324. *þei ne] eny of I. hardy] be
hardy hit F.*

325. *That] Of þat þe F. hym]
hem IS; F om. catel oþer] of catel
& of F.*

326. *to] IM om. grace] gret grace
F. erthe] þe erthe P; but EIMFS
omit þe.*

327. *Rychesse] Boþe richesse F.
whyte] þer-whil I. ryht] wel F.*

† but afterwards
took them away,
and he is now in
hell.

And as sone as god seih · he suwed nouht hus wille,
He reuede hym of hys richesse · and of hus ryht mynde,
And soffrede hym lyue in mysbyleue · ich leyue he be
in helle ;

So þat god geueþ no þyng · þat synne ne ys þe glose.

† So likewise both
king and pope
may both grant
and revoke.

And so ryght sothliche · may kyng and pope 332
Boþe gyue and grauntye · þer hus grace likeþ,
And eft haue hit a-ȝeyn · of hem þat don ille.

† So are Meed
and Reward like
two Relations,
viz. *Direct* and
Indirect,

Thus ys mede [and] mercede · as two manere relations,
Rect and indyrect · rennyngþe bothe 336
On a sad and a syker · semblable to hym-selue—

† like Adjective
and Substantive
in grammar."

[As] adiectif and substantyf · vnite asken,
Acordaunce in kynde · in cas and in numbre, 339
And ayþer ys operes help— of hem comeþ retribucion,
þat ys þe ȝifte þat god ȝyueþ · to alle leelle lyuyngþe,
Grace of good ende · and gret ioye after ;

*Retribuere dignare, domine deus, omnibus [nobis],
et cetera."*

† "What do
Direct and
Indirect Relation
mean ?" said the
king.

Quaþ þe kyngþe to conscience · "knownen ich wolde
What is relacion rect · and indyrect after, 344
And þanne adiectyf and substantif · for englich was it
neuere."

328. *seih*] sey EF; si M; seiþ S.
329. *reuede*] reft I. *hys*] S om.
330. *lyue* SEI] liue M; leue P.
leyue] trowe M.
331. *þat*] IMFS om. *synne*] si
(sic) I. *þat—þe*] with-uten any
F.

332. *may*] so may I; may þe F.
333. *grauntye*] graunte MIES;
graunt eke F.

334. *eft*] so IMS; eftþe E; eft-sone
F; *miswritten* eftþe P. *hem—don*]
men þat do riȝt F.

335. [*and* IFG] a PEMS. *manere*]
maner of M; F om.

336. *Rect*] Wheche beþ recte F.
Rect—indyrect] Ryght & vnryght S
(and in l. 344).

337. *and*] & on F. *semblable*]
semeliche F; semblance I. *hym*—

selue] hem-seluen I; hem-self F;
hem-selue S.

338. [*As* MS] Ac PEIF (*As makes
the better sense*). *asken*] þei asken F.

339. *Acordaunce*] And accordance
IFS; And a-corden M.

340. *retribucion*] rewardyng F.

341. *þat ys*] And þat I. *ȝifte*] so
E; ȝifte IMF; ȝefte P; ȝefte S.
leelle lyuyngþe] gode lyues F.

342. *Grace of*] Þe grace of god
with F. *after*] þer-aftur F. [*nobis*
MS] PEIF om. F omits all the Latin.

344. *What*] Wat P. *relacion rect*]
recte relacioun F. *after*] þeraftur
F.

345. *And*] I om. *þanne*] þe M;
F om. *substantif*] þe sustantijf M;
sustentif (*here and in l. 338*) F.

"Relacion rect," quath conscience · "ys a recorde of treuthe, † "Direct Relation," said Conscience,

Quia antelate rei est recordatium,

Folwyng and fyndyng out · þe foundement of strenthe,
And styuelyche stonde forth · to strengthe of þe
foundement, 348

In kynde and in case · and in cours of noumbre ;
As [a] leel laborer · þat by-leuyþ with hus maistre
In hus paye and in hys pyte · and in hus pure treuthe,
To paye hym yf he performeþ · and haue pyte yf he
faylleþ, 352

† "Is an agreement in gender, case, and number,

† as when a labourer is regularly employed by a master.

And take hym for hus trauaile · al þat treuthe wolde.
So of hol herte comeþ hope · and hardy relacion
Sekeþ and suweþ · hus [substantif] sauacion,
That ys [god], þe grounde of al · a graciouse antecedent.

And man ys relatif rect · yf he be ryht trewe ; 357
He a-cordeþ with crist in kynde · *uerbum caro factum est ;*

† So also Man agrees with Christ in gender, case, and number ; the gender being Human Nature ; the case, Belief in the church ; and the number, Remission of sins.

In case, *credere in ecclesia* · In holy [kirke] to by-
leyue ;

In numbre, rotie and aryse · and remyssioun to haue,

346. a] F om. a recorde] acorde (sic) I. recordatium] so IFEG ; apparently recordantium P.

347. fyndyng] a fyndyng PE ; but IMFSG omit a. þe] of þe I. foundement] fundament F. of] of a IM. F omits the last three words of l. 347, and all l. 348.

348. stonde] to stonde M. of] ISM om.

350. [a IMFSEG] P om. þat] MF S om. by-leuyþ] leeueth F. þat—with] bileueþ þat I.

351. and] E om. in (2)] MF om. hys pyte] pitaunce F. in (3)] M om.

352. performeþ] performe I. haue] F om. faylleþ] falleþ M ; faile F.

354. So] F om. hol] holy I ; M

om. hardy relacion] holy relatius F.

355. Sekeþ] þat sekith F. [substantif IS] substantif E (as in l. 345) ; sustentif P ; sustantijf M. hus—sauacion] here souerayn by kynde F.

356. [god IMFSG] PE om. See next line.

357. And] A M. trewe ISE] triue P ; in treweþ F.

358. acordeþ] acorde (sic) I. kynde] ys kynde P ; but EIMFSG omit ys. uerbum] is uerbum F. est] F om.

359. credere—ecclesia] with corsesyntus F. [kirke I] church PEF MS. to] F om.

360. rotie] rotize M ; to rote F. and (2)] with S ; F om.

Of oure sory synnes · asoiled and clansed, 361
And lyue, as oure crede ous kenneþ · with crist with-
outen ende.

† This is like
Adjective and
Substantive.

Thus is relacion rect · ryht as adiectif and substantif
A-cordeþ in alle kyndes · with his antecedent. 364

† Indirect
Relation is when
there is no agree-
ment in gender or
number.

Indirect þyng ys · as ho so coueited
Alle kynne kynde · to knowe and to folwe,
With-oute [case] to cacche [to] · and come to bope
nombres ;

In which beþ good and nat good · and graunte here
noþers wil. 368

† It is no Direct
Relation if I
refuse to use my
father's surname.

þat is [nozt] reisonable ne rect · to refusy my syres sor-
name,

Sith y, his sone and seruaunt · suwe for his ryghte.
For who so wol haue to wyue · my worldliche daughter,
Ich wol feffe hym with hure fayre · and with hure
foule taylende. 372

† Indirect
Relation covets to
agree in all

So indirect þyng ys · Inliche to coueyte
To a-corde in alle kyndes · and in alle kynne nombre,

361. *Of*] & of F. *sory*] seuene M. *synnes*] sennes P. *asoiled*] to be asoiled I. *clansed* M] clansede P; clansid ES; I-clansed F; y-clensed I.

362. *lyue*] bileue M. *crede*] apparently credo in P; but crede in EIMFS. *ous*] vs EFIS; us M. *kenneþ*] telleþ F.

363. *Thus*] This I. *as*] I om. F *has*--And þus suweþ relacion rect · re (*sic*) rewle of sustentyuus.

364. *A-cordeþ*] Acordyng F. *with his*] whit is P.

365. *coueited*] coueiteþ M; coueyte S. F *has*--Indirect is contrarius · inliche to coueyte; cf. l. 373.

366. *kynne* IES] kyne P; kyn MF. *kynde*] kyndes F.

367. *With-oute*] And wiþoute I. [case MF] cause PEISG. [to MFG] two PES; I om.

368. *which*] wich P; þe whiche S. *beþ*] buþ M; ben IS; be F. *here*] M om. *noþers*] noþeres M; neyþer

I; neþer S. *and*--wil] grace to forsake F.

369. *þat*] Hit F; And þat I. *is*] nys M. [nozt E] nout M; nat FSG; not I; noþer P. *ne*] M om. *rect*] right IS. *refusy*] refuse EMIFS. *syres*] sire MIS. *sorname*] surname E; sirename M; name I. *to--sorname*] surname to refuse F.

370. *y*] I am I; F om. *his* (1)] is P. *and*] and his MI.

371. *who* EMI] wo P; ho FS. *haue*] haue me (1) M; S om. *worldliche* IES] wordliche F; *miswritten* worliche P; *worschepeful* M.

372. *wol*] wolde I; F om. *hure*] al hir I. *fayre*] fair face F. *taylende*] tailende IMEG; tail-eende F (*wrongly*).

373. *indirect þyng*] relacion indirect F. *þyng*] IS om.

374. *kyndes*] kynde IMFS. *and*] M om. *in* (2)] F om. *kynne* MFSE] kyne P; kyns I.

With-oute cost and care · in alle kynne trauaile,
[With-oute resoun to rewarde · nauȝt recching of þe
peple]. 376

genders and
numbers.

Ac relacion rect · is a ryhtful custome,
As, a kyng to cleyme · þe comune at his wille
To folwe hym, to fynde hym · and fecche at hem hus
consail, 379

† Direct Relation
is that which
exists between
the king and his
commons.

That here loue þus to [him] · þorw al þe londe a-corde.
So comune cleymeþ of a kyng · thre kynne þynges,
Lawe, loue, and leaute · and hym lord antecedent,
Boþe here hefd and here kyng · haldyng with no partie,
Bote stande as a stake · þat stykeþ in a myre 384
By-twyne two londes · for a trewe marke.

† The king is the
Antecedent, their
head and king,
standing like a
fixed land-mark.

Ac þe moste partie of þe puple · pure indirect semeþ,
For þei wilnen and wolde · as best were for hem-selue,
Thauh þe kyng and þe comune · al þe cost hadde. 388
Al reson reproueþ · such imparfit puple,
And halt hem vnstedefast · for hem lackeþ case.

† Yet many of
the people wish
for Indirect
Relation.

[As] relatifs indirect · reccheþ þei neuere
Of þe cours of þe case · so þey cacche suluer, 392
Be þe pecunie y-payed · þauh parties chide.
He þat mede may lacche · makeþ litel tale,
Nyne he a nombre · of nobles oþer of shullenges ;

† Indirect
Relatives care
nothing about the
case; all they
care for is to get
money.

375. *and*] or M. *in*] and IM.
alle] eche F. *kynne* MFSE] kynde
P; kyn I.

376. *In F only*.

377. *a—custome*] ryȝte leuyng F.

378. *his*] is P.

379. *to*] and M; and to I. *fecche*]
seche I. *and—consail*] at him coun-
seil to fette F.

380. *þus*] is E. *þus—him*] to his
lawe I. [*him* MFS] hem PE.

381. *comune*] comunes M. *of*] at
S. *kynne*] kyne M; kynnus S.

382. *loue*] & leue (*for* & *loue*) I.

383. *here* (1)] I *om.* *hefd*] hed
EM; heued I; heed F. *haldyng—
partie*] with no party to holde F.

384. *stande*] standyng IS; stande
stif F. *a* (2)] þe IF.

385. *Bytwyne*] Euen bitwix F.
londes] lordes I.

386. *þe* (2)] þis M; I *om.* *pure*]
nowe pure I.

387. *wilnen—wolde*] wesche &
wyllen F.

389. Ac resoun redily reproueth ·
such reccheles peple F; Such inper-
fyt poeple · repreueþ alle resoun I.

391. [*As* EIFS] Ac P; As þe M.
relatifs] relatiyf ME; relatyuus FIS.
392. *þe* (1)] S *om.* *þe* (2)] here
FS; I *om.*

393. *pecunie*] so IFS; pecunize
M; peccunie P; peccunye E. *þauh*]
þauȝ þe S; þaw þe M.

394. *makeþ*] telleþ M.

395. *oþer*] or IMFS. *shullenges*]
schullynges ES; schillynges IMF.

† But Adjective and Substantive agree in *case*, *gender*, and *number*;

† signifying that all men should agree in one *gender* or *Nature*, should have Belief in holy church, and should covet Remission of sins.

† The *gender* (as I said) is our Lord's Human Nature.

† 1 Jo. iv. 16.

† Thus is mankind a Substantive, requiring an Adjective.

† Men may read, in Kings, how Meed caused

How þat clyentes a-corde · mede a-counteþ lytel. 396

Ac adiectif and substantif · ys as ich er tolde,

þat ys, vnyte, acordaunce · in case, gendre, and numbre;

And ys [to] mene in oure mouth · more ne mynne,

Bote þat alle manere men · wommen, and children,

Sholde conformye to on kynde · on holy [kirke] to by-leyue, 401

And coueite þe case · when þei couthe vnderstonde,

To [sike] fore hure synnes · and suffre harde penaunce,

For þat ilke lordes loue · þat for oure loue deyde,

And coueited oure kynde · and be cald in oure name, *Deus homo*, 405

And nymen hym into oure numbre · now and euere more;

Qui in caritate manet in deo manet, et deus in eo.

Thus is man and mankynde · in manere of a substantif,

As *hic & hec homo* · [askyng] an adiectif 408

Of þre trewe termysons · *trinitas unus deus*;

Nominatiuo, pater & filius & spiritus sanctus.

Ac ho so rat of *regum* · rede me may of mede,

Hou hue absolon · to hongyng brouhte;

396. þat] þe M. mede acounteþ] acounteþ mede I.

397. ys] F om. er tolde] here telle I.

398. þat] And þat M; Ther I. vnyte] clene F. gendre] & gendre I.

399. ys] M om. [to EIFMSG] no P. mene in] nempne on I.

400. children] childre I; childur F.

401. conformye] conforme FES; conforme hem IM. on (1) o IFS. [kirke] I] church PEFS; chirche M.

402. coueite] to coueite F. when] wen P.

403. [sike EIG] siken M; syke FS; asky P. suffre] do M. harde] scharp F; miswritten arde P. penaunce] penances I.

404. ilke] I om.

405. and] sup (sic) E.

407, 408, 409. F has—And þanne ys man-kyn I-made · a sustentyf of trewþe, Acordyng with his adiectif · of *trinitas vnus deus*.

407. man] he man I. a] IS om.

408. As] Ac I. [askyng IMSG] and a kyng P (which gives no sense); E has—& adiectif & a kyng.

409. þre] þe E. trene EIM] trew S; trywe P. termysons] so ES; termisouns I; terminours M.

410. Ac] And M. ho] who IME. Ac—so] þat renk þat F. rat] so I; ret S; rate F; raat M; þat (wrongly) E. of] in M. me] so IES; he MFG.

411. hue] he I; sche M; 3o E; þat hore F. hongyng] hontyng M; hongement F. brouhte] a-brouhte F.

- And sitthe, for saul · sauede a kyng for mede 412 Absalom to be
 A-geyn godes comaundement · god toke suche ven- hung (2 Sam.
 iaunce, xviii. 9);
- þat saul for þat synne · and hus sone deyde, † and how Saul's
 And gaf þe kyngdome to hus knaue · þat kept sheep kingdom was
 and lambren : given to a keeper
 of sheep.
- [As] men [rat] in *regum* · after [Ruth], of kynges, 416 **A 41 (B 43)**
 Hou god sente to saul · by samuel þe prophete, Hast thou not
 þat agag of amalek · and al hus lyge puple read, in Kings,
 Sholde deye delffulliche · for dedes of here eldren, how God told
 Saul to slay Agag
 for Amalek's sin
 against Israel?
- 'Saul,' quath samuel · 'god hym-self hotep 420 (1 Sam. xv.;
 To be boxome at my bidding · hus bone to fulfyllen. Exod. xviii. 8).
 Haste þe with al þyn ost · to þe lond of amalek, Samuel said to
 Saul,
- And al þat lyueþ in þat londe · oure lord wol þat þow
 slee hit, 423
- [Man, woman, and wif · child, widowe, and bestes];
- Mebles and vnmebles · man and alle þynges, 'Go to Amalek,
 Bren hit, ber nouht away · be hit neuere so riche, and burn all
 thou findest
 there.'
- For eny mede of moneye · al þat þow myght spille ;
- Spar hit nat · and þow shalt spede þe betere.' 428
- And for he coueited hyre catel · and þe kyng
 spared,

412. *sitthe*] sethe I; seþþen M; sup E; suppe S. *for*] S om. *saul*] sir saul F. *kyng*] knyȝt E.

413. *toke suche*] took such a I; gaf on him F.

414. *deyde*] deyede EI; dide F; deieden M.

415. *hus*] a F. *þat*] and I. *kept*] kepe I. *lambren*] lambre I; lambus F.

416. [*As* IMFG] And PE. [*rat*] *miswritten* þat PES (*but see* l. 410); redeþ MG; rette I; rede F. [*Ruth* I] reupe MS; þe reugthe F; rewep P; redeþ E (*it means the Book of Ruth*).

418. *of*] & F. *al*] M om. *lyge*] liege I.

419. *delffulliche*] deilfulliche E; ful delfulli M; ful dredfully F; derf-

ly I. *eldren*] eldres IM; eldrus F.

421. *To*] F om. *bone*] loue IF.

422. *al*] F om. *to—of*] in-to F.

423. *in*] on I. *slee hit*] hem sleo M.

424. *From* I; *also in* MFSG; PE *omit*. I *has*—and woman; *but* MF *omit* and. *childe widowe*] wedewe child FS; widewe child M.

425. *Mebles*] *Before* moebles I *inserts*—þat duelleþ in amalek; *which is not wanted*.

426. *Bren*] Bern I. *ber*] I om.

427. *myght*] may F. *spille*] I *omits*, *but has* Spille it at beginning of next line.

428. *nat*] nauȝt I; nouȝt M. *þe*] soueraynly þe F.

429. *hyre*] F om. *þe*] here F.

But because he
did not so,

For-bar hym and hus beste bestes · as þe byble wit-
nesseþ,

God sent to say
that he should
die.

Oþerwise þan god wolde · by warnyng of þe prophete,

Thus did Meed
make God hate

God seide to samuel · þat saul sholde deye, 432

B 44

him.

A 42

And al hus for þat synne · and shendfulliche ende.

Thus was kyng saul ouercome · for couetyse of mede,

That god hatid hym for euere · and alle hus ayres after.

The *culorum* of pis cas · kepe ich nat to shewe, 436

An aunter hit nuyede me · non ende wol ich make.

But now-a-days,
a truth-teller is
blame I.

For so ys þe worlde went · with [hem] þat han þe
power,

That he þat seith most sothest · sonnest ys y-blamed.

I, Conscience,
well know that
Reason shall
reign.

Ich conscience knowe pis · for kynde witt me tauhte,
þat reson shal regne · and reames gouerne, 441

And ryht as agag hadde · happen shulleþ somme.

Saul shall be
blamed, and
David diademed;

Samuel shal sle hym · and saul shal be blamed,

And dauid shal be diademyd · and daunten alle oure
enemyes,

And on cristene kyng · kepen ows echone. 445

Shal no mede [be maister] · neuere more after,

and there
shall be Love,

Ac loue and lounnesse · and leaute to-gederes

430. *byble*] bille S. *witnesseþ*] so
EI; whitnesseþ P; telleþ MF.

431. *by—of*] and warned him by
I; warnyng F.

432. *God*] So god I. *seide*] sente
M.

433. *and*] IMFSG *om.* *shendful-
liche*] schenfulliche M; schamfullich
F. *ende*] aneende F.

434. *kyng*] F *om.* *for*] þor; S.
for couetyse] þurw schentful schame
F.

435. *hatid hym*] I *om.* *hus*] here I.

436. *The*] Ac þe F. *culorum*] colour M; consequent F. *to*] S *om.*

437. *hit*] 3if hit M; leste hit S.
nuyede] noiede M; anoied F; mighte
noyen I. *me*] I *om.* *non*] an IMS.
wol] wolde E.

438. *ys*] is now F. *went*] i-wend
M; schent F. *with*] wit P. [hem

IMFG] hym S; þulke E; P *om.* *han*
—*power*] power haue F. *þe*] S *om.*

439. *most sothest*] men sopest IS;
men here soþe F. *seith—sothest*] of-
test seiþ soþ M. *sonnest ys*] is sen-
nest M; some is F.

440. *þis*] it wel F.

441. *shal*] 3it schal F. *and reames*] rewmus to F.

442. *happen*] hap · so F. *shulleþ*
somme] so MFES; schal come I.

443. *Samuel*] For samuel F.

444. *shal be*] F *om.* *diademyd*] I-diademed FM. *and*] ande P; to
F. *daunten*] a-daunte M. *alle*] F
om.

445. *on*] o I; a F. *ows*] ous S;
vs IF; us M.

446. [be maister MIFSG] PE *om.*

447. *Ac*] & F. *lounnesse*] leel
lownes F.

Shullen be maistres on molde · trewe men to helpe ; Humility, and
And ho so takeþ azen treuthe · oþer transuerseþ azens shall punish
trespassers.
reson, 449

Leaute shal do hym lawe · and no lif elles.

Shal no seriaunte for þat seruyse · were a selk houe,

Ne pelour in hus paueylon · for pledyng at þe barre.

Muchel yuel is þorw mede · meny tyme suffred,

And letteþ þe lawe · þorw here large 3yftes. 454

Ac kynde loue shal come 3ut · and conscience to-gederes,

And make of lawe a laborer · suche loue shal aryse,

And such pees among þe puple · and a parfyt treuthe,

þat Iewes shal wene in here witt · and wexe so glade,

That here kyng be ycome · fro þe court of heuene, 459

Moyses oþer messias · þat men be so trewe.

For alle þat bereþ baselardes · bryght swerde, oþer
launce, B 45

Axe, oþer acchett · oþer eny kynne wepne, 462

Shal be demed to þe dep · bote yf he do hit smythie

In-to sykkel oþer into sithe · to shar oþer to culter ;

Conflabunt gladios suos in uomeres, & lanceas suas in falces ; Isaiah ii. 4.

Ech man to pleye with a plouh · a pycoyse oþer a spade,

Spynnen, and spek of god · and spille no tyme : 466

Prestes and persons · *placebo* and *dirige*,

Priests shall

448. *Shullen*] þo scholle I.

449. *oþer*] or IFM. *transuerseþ*] so ES; *trauerseþ* IMF. *azens*] F om.

451. *þat*] such F; his M; I om. a] S om. *selk*] selken IS.

452. *Ne*] so FMES; Ne no I; Ne (or No?) P. *in*] on S. *hus paueylon*] partye F; his pauloun IM. *pledying*] pletyng F. *at þe*] atte I; ate S.

453. *Muchel*] For muche F. *yuel*] I om. *meny*] ofte S. *tyme*] tymes I.

454. *And letteþ*] Heo letteth lithurly F.

455. *Ac*] But F; As I. *loue*] lome (!) I.

456. *lawe*] F om. a] and I; E om.

457. *and*] with F.

458. *shal*] schulleþ E. *so*] ful F.

460. *Moyses*] þe which moyses (sic) I. *messias*] messie IMF. *þat*] S om. *men—trewe*] be so trewomen F.

461. *bereþ*] berth I; beren M; bere F. *baselardes*] baselard I.

462. *kynne*] kynnes M.

463. *yf*] F om.

464. *into*] to S; MF om. *to* (1)] or M. *oþer to*] oþer MF; or in-to E. *suas*] I om.

465. *pycoyse*] pikois M; pikcoyse E; plow (by mistake) F.

466. *and* (1)] or IFS.

467. *placebo*] with placebo F.

hunt with
placebo only,
or lose their
benefices.

Kings and
knights shall not
oppress the
commons.

The king's
court and the
commons' court
shall be one.

War shall cease.

Isaiah ii. 4.

Signs and
wonders will
be seen."

Here sauter and here seuene psalmis · for alle synful
preyen.

Haukyng *oper* hontyng · yf eny of hem hit vsie,
Shal lese *per*-fore hus lyue-lode · and hus lif paraurenture.
Shal *noþer* kyng ne knyzt · constable ne meyre 471
Ouer-cark *þe* comune · ne to *þe* court sompne,
Ne putte men in panell · ne do men plighte here
treuthe;

Bote after *þe* dede þat ys ydo · the dome shal recorde,
Mercy *oper* no mercy · as most trewe a-corden. 475
Kynges court and comune court · constorie and chapitre,
Al shal be bote on court · and on berne be Iustice;
That worth trewe-tunge a [tydy] man · þat tenede me
neuere.

Batailles shulle neuere eft be · ne man bere eg-tool,
And yf eny man [smyþie] hit · be smyte *per*-with to
deþe; 480

*Non leuabit gens contra gentem gladium, nec
exercebuntur ultra ad prelium.*

Ac er þis fortune by-falle · fynde me shal *þe* worste,
By syx sonnes and a ship · and half a shef of arwes.
And *þe* myddell of a mone · shal makye *þe* Iewes
turne,

468. *alle synful*] synful to F.

469. *oper*] or IF; and M. *vsie*
vse IMFES.

471. *meyre*] *oþur* F.

472. *Ouer-cark*] Ouer-care I.
sompne] hem somene M.

473. *panell*] paulyoun F. *men* (2)]
hem MF.

474. *after*] as F. *þat*] MF om.

475. *trewe*] treweþ S. *trewe
acorden*] truþe asentep M.

476, 477. M *has*—Kynges court
and comune court · al schal be but on
court, Constorie and chapitle · and on
barn Iustice. *chapitre*] chapitle M;
chapitle F. *berne*] bayren I; baren
F; barn M.

478. *That*] And þat MI. *north*]

schal be F. *a*] & E; F om. [*tydy*
ISG] tyde F; teþyng M; trewe PE.
tenede EG] tened IFM; teunede P;
tenup S. *me*] me 3it F.

479. *ne—tool*] no egge-tool man
bere F.

480. *And*] F om. *yf*] but 3if S;
I om. [*smyþie*] smithie R (B-text);
smythi F; smeþi M; smythe I;
smyþen (*badly*) PESG; see l. 463. *be
smyte*] be smete MF; þe smyþe (*sic*)
E. *leuabit*] leuabunt M. *nec*] non I.

481. *er*] or EF. *by-falle*] falle I.
me] men M. *þe worste*] furst F.

482. *and* (1)] in I. *ship* MS]
schippe I; schip EF; shup P. *half*]
halwe I. *arwes*] barwes E.

483. *And*] But M. *myddell*] I om.

And sarasyns for þat syght · shullen synge *credo in* **B 46**
spiritum sanctum. 484

For makamed and mede · shullen myshappen þat tyme,

For *melius est bonum nomen quam diuicie multe.* Prov. xxii. 1.

As wroth as þe wynd · [wex] mede þer-after—

“Lo what salamon seith,” quath hue · “in sapience þe
 byble, 487 Meed replies
 by quoting
 Scripture,

‘þat 3eueþ 3yftes, take 3eme · þe victorie he wynneþ,

And moche worshep þer-with’ · as holy writt telleþ :

Honorem acquirit qui dat munera.”

Prov. xxii. 9
 (Vulgate).

“Ich leue þe, lady,” quap conscience · “[for þat latyn
 is trewe:]

Thow art lyke a lady · þat a lesson radde,

Was, *omnia probate* · [þat] plesed hure herte; 492

That [leef] was no lengere · and at þe leues ende.

Ac hadde hue loked on þe lift half · and þe leef turned,

Hue sholde haue yfounde folwyng · fele wordes after,

Quod bonum est tenete · a tyxte of treuthes makynge.

So he þat secheþ sapience · fynde he shal þat folweþ

Tristilich a teneful tixt · to hem þat takeþ mede, 498

“You are like
 a lady,” said
 Conscience,
 “who read but
 half a text
 (1 Thess. v. 21);
 the rest of it
 was over the leaf.

And what says
 the rest of *your*
 text? It
 condemns you.”

484. *sarasyns* E] *saresyns* P; *sari-*
syns I; *sarsyns* M; *saracenus* F.
syght] S *om. for—synge*] syng for
 þat siȝt F. *credo, &c.*] M *om.*

485. *makamed*] *makameth* I; *ma-*
kemete MS; *makameet* F. *mede*]
mede boþe F. *shullen*] and (*sic*) I.
For] *Quia* I.

486. *as*] *y-wis* as F. *þe*] *eny* S;
 I *om.* [*wex* G] *so in* B-text; *badly*
spelt *waxe* PEIS; *wax* MF. *þer-*
after] *after* F.

487. *salamon seith*] *seip* *salamon*
 M. *hue*] *sche* IM; *she* S; *scheo* F;
 30 E. *in sapience*] *sapiens* in F;
insipience in I; *in sapience* in S.

488. *3eueþ 3yftes*] *3eue 3iftus* F;
3iftes 3yueþ I. *take*] *takeþ* IMFS.
he] 30 F.

489. *worshep*] *worschepe* M; *wur-*
schepe F; *worschipe* I; *worship* ES.
þer-with] *þer* with al F. *acquirit*]
adquirit F; *adquiret* IS; *quiret* M.

490. E *omits.* *leue* IMFS] *leyue*

P. *þe*] *wel* F. [*for—trewe* IMFSG]
 as holy writt telleth P; *cf.* l. 489.

491. *art* IMFS] *ert* PE. *radde*]
redde F.

492. *Was*] That was PE; *but*
 IMFS *omit* That. [þat IMFSG]
wiche P; *whuch* E.

493. [leef IFSG] PME *om.*; *the*
right word is *lyne*; *see* B-text. *wus*]
ne was M. *and*] *but* M. *þe*] a M.
and—leues] *for* *hue* was at S.

494. *Ac*] But M. *loked*] *i-loked*
 M. *on*] to E. *on—half*] in þe luft
 half I; *on þat oþer half* M; a *lef-*
hald (*sic*) F. *turned*] *i-turned* MF.

495. *yfounde*] *founde* IFSE.

496. *tyxte*] *text* IF. *treuthes*]
trewe I.

497. *he—secheþ*] *who-so techeþ* I.

498. *Tristilich a*] *Trustilich* a F;
 A *ful* I. *teneful* ISE] *tenful* M;
teonful F; *tenful* P. *tixt*] *text* IF.
to] of M · for S.

The whiche hatte, (as ich haue rad · and oþer þat conne rede,)

H 47

Prov. xxii. 9
(Vulgate).

Animam aufert accipientium :

‘Worshup [he] wynneþ · þat wol 3eue mede,

Ac he þat receyueþ oþer recetteþ hure · ys recettor of gyle.’”

501

Hic explicit passus quartus.

499. *whiche*] *wiche* P. *hatte*] *þat* hatte I; *hiȝt* F. *The—hatte*] *þei* schulle happe M. *rad*] *i-rad* M; herd F. *and—conne*] *of hem þat* cowde F.

500. *Worshup*] *Muche wurschepe* F. [*he* IMFSEG] *hue* P. *he wynneþ*] *may he wyne* F.

501. *he þat*] *ho so* F. *oþer*] *or* IMF. *receyueþ*] *receyueþ hire* I. *recetteþ*] *resetteþ* M; *recheþ* I. *hure*] *hire* IE; *heore* F; *hit* M. *recettor*] *recettoure* EI; *recetur* M; *rectur* S.

COLOPHON. *So* PG; *MI omit.* *Hic*] *FSE om.*

PASSUS V.

Incipit passus quintus.

CEssep," saide þe kyng · "ich soffre ȝow no lenger ; **A 43 B 49**
 ȝe shulleþ sauhtne for soþe · and serue me boþe. **"Be reconciled,"**
 Kus hure," quap þe kyng · "conscience, ich hote." **said the king,**
"and kiss her,
Conscience."
 "Nay, by crist," quap conscience · "conge me rather ! **"Not unless**
 Bote reson rede me þer-to · rappe wol ich deye." **5 Reason advises**
me so to do."
 "And ich comaunde," quap þe kynge · to conscience **"Then ride and**
 þenne, **fetch Reason**
here," said the
king.
 "Rape þe to ryde · and reson þat þow fecche ;
 Comaunde hym þat he come · my consail to hure, **8**
 For he shal rulye my reame · and rede me þe beste, **"He shall give us**
 Of mede and of oþer mo · and what man shal hure **good advice."**
 wedde,
 And a-counte with þe, conscience · so me crist helpe,
 How þow ledest my puple · lered and lewede." **12**
 "Ich am fayn of þat forwarde · in fayþ," þo quap con- **Conscience gladly**
 science, **rode off,**

TITLE. So FSEG; Hic incipit quintus passus de uisione M; Passus quartus de uisione vt prius I.

1. Cessep] Seceth now F; Setthe (sic) I. saide] seip S.

2. shulleþ] schulle M; schal IF. sauhtne] saughten I; sauhte M; sauhte S; sauhtne F.

3. Kus] Kisse I; Kys MF.

4. conge] congeie I; congeþ M; cunge S. rather] are I.

5. rede] radde F. þer-to] þertille I. wol] wolde IF; wilde M.

6. ich] M om.

7. Rape IMFSE] Rappe P. and —þow] and reson þow M; resoun to F.

8. Comaunde] & comaunde F. hure] here MIF.

9. rulye] reule IS; rewle F; rewele M; rule E.

10. oþer mo] mo oþer I. what man] ho F. wedde] haue S.

11. a-counte] counte E.

12. puple—lewede] lond · & þe leue peple F.

13. Ich—fayn] Fayn am IF. in fayþ] M om. þo] F om.

and gave
Reason the king's
A 44
message.

And rod forth to reson · and rouned in hus ere,
And seide hym as þe kyng saide · and sitthe tok hus
leue.

“Ich shal a-raye me to ryde,” quap reson · “rest þow
a while :”— 16

Reason bids his
knave Cato saddle
his horse called
Suffer-till-I-see-
my-time.

And called caton hus knaue · corteys of speche,
And al-so tomme trewe-tonge · telle-me-no-tales-
Ne-lesynges-to-lauhen-of · for-ich-louede-hit-neuere—

B 49

“And sette my sadel vppon soffre · til-ich-see-my-tyme,
Let warroke hym wel · with a-vyse-[þe]-by-fore, 21
For it is þe wone of wil · to wynse and to kyke ;
Let peitrel hym and pole hym · with peyntede wittes.”

Then Conscience
and Reason rode
to the king, and

Thenne conscience on hus capel · comsed to prykie, 24
And reson with hym ryzt · rounyng to-geders
Which a maister mede was · a-mong poure and riche.

Wiseman and
Wilyman followed
them, for they
wanted Reason's
advice.

Then waryn wysman · and wyly-man his felawe
Fayn were to folwen hem · and fast ryden after, 28
To take red at reson · þat recorde sholde
By-fore þe kyng and conscience · yf þei couthen pleyne
On wily-man and wittiman · and waryn wrynge-lawe.

Conscience knew
these two were
covetous,

Ac conscience knew hem wel · and carped to reson : 32
“Here comeþ,” quap conscience · “þat couetyse seruen ;

14. *And*] He MF.

15. *sitthe*] synnes he I; sup E.

16. *shal*] F *om.* *to—reson*] quod
resoun to ride F. *rest*] now rest F;
restep E. *þow*] þe IF; MSE *om.* a]
I *om.* *whyte*] wyle P.

17. *And*] He M. *corteys*] was
curteys F.

18. *no* MIFS] none P; non E.

19. *Ne*] Nor F; No M. *lesynges*
IME] lesyngus FS; lesenges P.
louede] ne louede M.

21. *Let*] And let I; & F. *war-
roke* EIMSG] warrok F; worrok P.
hym wel] þat with wel F; wil I.
with] F *om.* [þe IFSG] PEM
om.

22. *is*] his P. *kyke*] so EIS; kike
MF.

23. *Let—hym*] For-þy let peytrel

wil I. *pole*] pul I. *with*] wit P.
wittes] woordus F.

24. *Thenne*] Now F. *conscience*
—*capel*] on his capul concience M.
comsed] becomseth F; biginneþ M.
prykie] prike I.

25. *ryzt*] ritte I (cf. B-text); riit
M; but EFS have riht or ryght.

26. *Which*] Wich P; Swich M.

27. *Then*] On I. *wyly*] wyle P;
wily IFSE; wili M. *felawe*] broþur
F.

28. *fast ryden*] riden faste M.
ryden] wenten F.

29. *at*] of IMSE.

30. *þei couthen*] þe comune I.

31. *wily-man* IMFSE] williman
P.

32. *to*] þo to F.

Ryd forth, syre reson · and recche nat of here tales,
 For þer wratthe and wranglyng ys · ther þei wolle
 a-byde; 35

Ac þer loue and leaute ys · hit lykeþ nat here hertes :
Contricio & infelicitas in uis eorum, & uiam
pacis non cognouerunt ; non est timor dei ante
oculos eorum.

and shunned
 Love and
 Loyalty.
 Ps. xiii. 7
 (Vulgate).

Thei geueþ noȝt of good faith · god wot þe soþe ;
 Thei wolde don for a dyner · oþer for a dosene capones
 More þan for oure lordes loue · oþer oure lady hus
 moder." 39

"They will do
 more," said he,
B 50
 "for a dozen
 chickens than for
 our Lord's sake."

Thanne reson rod forth · and tok reward of no man,
 And dude as conscience kenned · til he þe kyng mette.
 Corteslich þe kyng þen · cam and grette reson,
 And by-twene hym[*self*] and his sone · sette þo syre
 reson, 43

The king receives
 them courteously.

And spoken þo wise wordes · a long while to-gederes.
 Thenne cam pees in-to parlement · and (*putte*) vp a
 bylle, 45

A 45
 Enter Peace, with
 a plea against
 Wrong.

How þat wrong wilfullich · hadde hus wif for-leyen,
 And how he rauyschede rose · þe riche wydewe, by
 nyghte,
 And margarete of here maidenhod · as he mette hure
 late. 48

34. *syre*] quod sire I; quod M; rȝt F. See l. 40. *nat*] þow nouȝt M.

35. *In* I, *ys follows* þer; *in* F, *it follows* wrap. *þei wolle*] wol þey I.

36. *In* I, *ys follows* þer; *in* F, *it follows* loue. Cf. l. 35.

38. *Thei*] For þey I. *wolde*] wole F. *for* (2)] fore P; IF om.

39. *oþer*] or for M. *hus*] goddes I. *lady—moder*] ladies owþer F.

41. *And*] But IF. *kenned*] him kennede IM; him kynde S; him kende F; kende E.

42. *þen*] þo MF. *grette*] cussede F.

43. *And*] MF om. *by-twene* EM FS] bituen I; by-twine P. [*self* IM] PEFS om. *his*] is P. *sette*] he sette IM; settith F. *þo*] M om. *þo—reson*] him þanne F.

44. *þo*] IMFS om. *while*] wile P.

45. *Thenne*] And þanne I; þo M. *Thenne—pees*] Til pees cam F. *bylle*] bulle M.

46. *þat*] I om. *hadde—wif*] his wif had F.

47. *rauyschede*] rauysede P; rauysched E; raueschede S; i-raueissed M. *by nyghte*] be myȝte M; douȝtur F.

"Wrong (said he) "Bope my [gees] and my grys · and my gras he takeþ,
has stolen my Ich dar nouht for his felaweshepe · in faith," pees seide,
geese and pigs.

† I dare not go
to the fair on St
Giles's down.

"Bere sikerlich eny seluer · to seint gyles doune ;
He waiteþ ful wel · whanne ich [seluer] take, 52

What wey ich wende · wel ȝerne he aspief,
To robbe me and to ryfle me · yf ich ryde softe.

Ȝut he is bold for to borwe · and baddelich he payeþ ;

He has stoen my
horse Bayard ;

He borwede of me bayarde · and browte hym [hom]
neuere,

Ne no ferþyng þer-fore · for nouht ich couthe plede. 57

He menteyneþ hus men · to morthre myn hewes,

murdered my
men, stolen my
wheat, and given
me but a tally
for ten quarters
of it."

And for-stalleþ myn faires · and fyghteþ in my chep-
ynges,

And breke[þ] vp my bernes dore · and bereþ away my
whete, 60

And takeþ me bote a taile · for ten quarters oþer twelue.

Ȝut he manasceþ me and myne · and lyth by my mayde,
Ich am nouht hardy for hym · [vnneþe] to loke."

The kyng knew þat he seide soþ · for conscience hym
tolde, 64

B 51

How wronge was a wickede man · and moche wo
wrouhte.

49. [gees IMEG] goos PF; gos S.

50. his] is P. in—pees] by my
faith he F.

51. sikerlich—seluer] siluer si-
kurly F.

52. He] And he I. waiteþ] a-
waiteþ MF. whanne] wanne P.
[seluer MG] siluer IE; siluur S; sul-
fere P. Cf. l. 51. whanne—seluer]
what seluer i M; wynnynge whan i
F.

53. What] & what F. wende]
wynde S. wel] ful I. wel ȝerne]
ful wel S.

54. me (1)] F om. and] or I.
me (2)] ME om.

55. Ȝut] F om. he is] is he I.
baddelich] apparently baldelich P;
but we find baddeliche IM; badliche
FSE.

56. He] For he I. [hom IFS] PE
om. hym hom] me him M.

57. ferþyng MEIF] ferþeng P;
ferþyn S. nouht] ouȝ þat (sic) S.

58. He] & F. hus] my (!) S.
myn] men E. hewes IG] hywes PE;
hynus F; hynnus S; hinene M.

59. And] F om.

60. And] He F. brekeþ IMF]
brekuþ S; brekyþ G; breke PE.
bernes dore] berne-dores I; bern-
dorus F. whete] wete P.

61. takeþ] tak I. oþer twelue]
ootus F; otes I; of otes M.

62. Ȝut] And ȝit IMF. he] I om.

63. [vnneþe IMFSG] vneþ E;
owneþe P.

64. þat] IMF om.

65. How] þat F.

Tho was wrong a-fered · wysdome he by-souhte ;
On men of lawe wrong lokede · and largelich hem pro-
frede,

Then was Wrong
afraid, and tried
to bribe Wisdom
to plead for him.

And for to haue of here help · handy-dandy payede. 68

“Had ich loue of þe lorde · litel wolde ich recche
Of pees and of hus power · thauh he pleynede euere !”

A 46

Thoruh wrong and hus werkes · þer was mede yknowe,
For wysdome and wit þo · wenten to-gederes, 72

Then Wrong
begged Wisdom
and Wit to take
Meed with them.

And toke mede myd hem · Mercy to wynne.

3ut pees putte forth hus hefd · and hus panne bloody,

Peace shows the
king his bloody
head.

“With-oute gult, god wot · gat ich þys scape ;

Conscience knoweþ hit wel · and alle þe trewe comune.”

But Wiles and
Wit try to over-
come the king.

Ac wyles and wit · weren a-boute faste 77

To ouercome þe kyng · þorw catel, yf þei myghte.

A 47
The king swears
Wrong shall
suffer, and shall
be cast into irons.

þe kyng swor þo by crist · and by his corone bothe,

That wrong for hus workus · sholde wo þolie, 80

And comaundede a constable · to caste wrong in

yrenes,

Ther he ne sholde in seuen 3ere · see fet ne hondes.

“God wot,” quap a wis on · “þat were nat þe beste ;

A wise one offers
bail, and says

Yf he may amendes do · let meynpryse hym haue, 84

B 52

66. *was wrong*] wrong was F. *a-fered*] aferd MFSE; aferde I. *wysdome*] and wisdom IF. *by-souhte*] soghte I.

67. *On-lokede*] & lowtede to men of lawe F. *hem*] F om.

68. *of*] IM om. *handy-dandy*] handeli he M.

69. *ich*] I quod he F. *þe lorde*] lordes M. *wolde*] wul S.

70. *and*] or F. *of*] IM om. *hus power*] powere E; pouerte F. *he*] þei MFS. *pleynede*] pleyne I.

71. *þer*] þo F.

72. *wit þo*] wrynglawe F. *wenten*] wenten þo F.

73. *myd*] with SI. *myd hem*] þat maide M.

74. *3ut—putte*] þo put pecs F. *hefd*] heued I; hed ME; heed F.

75. *gult*] gilte I; gilt FS. *gat*

ich] was 3eue me I. *þys*] þis ilke F.

76. *knoweþ*] knew F. *trewe comune*] commune trewe I; trewe folkus F.

77. *wit*] wrong wit F.

78. *To*] Forte M. *kyng*] curteys kyng F. *þorw*] þor; SEI; þurw F; wiþ M; *miswritten* þow P; cf. l. 138.

79. *þo*] I om.

80. *þolie*] þole F; dolye (!) S.

81. *And comaundede*] He comaundep M. *wrong*] him MF. *yrenes*] iren E; stokkus F.

82. *ne sholde*] ne schal M; schulde not I. *in*] þis M. *fet*] his feet IF; fot M; fote E; foot S. *ne* IMSE] no or ne P. *ne hondes*] onus F.

83. *on*] oon F; man E.

84. *may amendes*] amendes may I. *do*] make F.

- Wrong will pay damages. And be borw of hys bale · and byggen hym bote,
And a-mende þat ys mys-do · and euere-more þe betere.”
- Wit seconds this. Wit a-corded her-with · and witnessede þe same ;
“ Betere ys þat bote · bale a-doun brynge, 88
Than bale be [y]bete · and bote neuere þe betere.”
- Then Meed proffers Peace a present of gold, Thanne gan mede meken here · and mercy by-souhte,
And profrede pees a present · al of pure golde ;
- and engages that Wrong shall keep the peace. “ Haue þis, man, of me,” quath hue · “ to amende þy
scape ; 92
For ich wol wage for wrong · he wol do so no more.”
- Peace begs Wrong off, and forgives him, since Meed has made amends. Pytouslich pees þo · preyede þe kyng
To haue mercy on þat man · þat meny tyme greuede
hym— 95
“ For he hath waged me wel · as wisdom hym tauhte ;
Mede hath mad myne amendes · ich may no more asken,
So alle myne claymes ben quyt · by so þe kyng asente.”
- A 48 But the king swears that Wrong shall not get off so lightly. “ Nay, by crist,” quath þe kyng · “ for consciences
sake,
Wrong goþ nat so away · ar ich wite more ; 100
Loupe he so lyghtlich · lauhē he wolde,
And eft be þe boldere · to bete myne hewes ;
Bote reson haue reuthe of hym · he shal reste in stockes

85. *And*] þat F. *of*] for IFSE. *hys*] ys P. *and*] to F. *byggen*] bringen I; bringe M.

86. *þe*] be þe M.

87. *a-corded*] acordeþ IM; acorde S. *her-with*] þerwith I. *witnessede*] withnesseþ M; witnesse S.

88. *Betere*] þat better F.

89. *ybete* I] i-bete FS; i-beten M; bete PE.

90. *meken* SE] meke M; mekene F; to meken I; muken P. *mercy*] merci sche MI.

91. *pure*] pured M; oure pure E.

92. *þis* IMFSE] þus P. *of me*] S om. *amende*] mende F. *þy*] þe S.

94. *preyede*] bi-souhte M.

95. *tyme*] tymes IS. *greuede*] haþ greued M; greuyþ S. *greuede hym*]

hym greued I; greued E. *þat— hym*] had greued him so oft F.

96. *hath*] I om. *wel*] F om.

97. *Mede*] And meede I. *myne*] my I; me F. *amendes*] mendes I.

98. *So*] And M; But F. *quyt*] I- quyt F. *by so*] be so I; so þat MF.

99. *consciēces*] conscience E.

100. *ar*] or MFE; er S.

101. *Loupe*] Lope IM; Lupe S; Lepe E; For lepe F. *After lyghtlich* PE insert a-vey, repeated from l.

100. *wolde*] wolde aftur M.

102. *eft*] zeft S. *be—boldere*] þe boldere be I. *hewes* I] hywes PE;

hynus FS; hynen M.

103. *of*] on IMFS. *shal reste*] schal M; resteth 3it F. *in*] in-to M; in my I; on SE.

As longe as ich lyue · for hus luther werkes." 104

Somme radde reson þo · to haue reuthe on þat shrewe,

And for to consail þe kyng · on conscience þei loked ;

þat mede myghte be menepernour · reson þei by-souhte.

"Red me nat," quap reson · "no reuthe to haue, 108

Til lordes and ladies · louen alle treuthe,

And haten alle harlotrie · to huyren oþer to mouthen

hit ;

And purneles porfil · be put in þe whucche,

And children cherissing · be chastet with ȝerdes, 112

And harlotes holynesse · be an hey ferye ;

Til klerken couetise · be cloth for þe poure,

Here pelure and here palfrayes · poure menne lyflode,

And religious out-ryders · reclused in here cloistres,

And be as benit hem bad · domenik and fraunceis ;

Tyl þat lerede men lyue · as þei lere and techen, 118

And til þe kynges consayl · be al comune profit ;

Tyl bisshopes [ben] bakers · brewers and taylours, 120

For alle manere men · þat þei fyndeþ nedfol ;

Tyl seynt Iame be souht · þer poure syke lyggen,

In prisons and in poore cotes · for pilgrymages to rome,

So þat non go to galys · bote it be for euere ; 124

Then some
advised Reason
to take pity on
Wrong.

B 53

"Nay," says
Reason, "not till
all lords and
ladies love truth,

rioters are holy,
clerks charitable
to the poor,

115

A 49

and priests
practise what
they preach ;

till men go no
more to Galicia,

104. *As*] Also F. *ich*] y may S.

105. *haue reuthe*] rewe F. *on*] vpon I.

106. *þei*] sche I.

107. *menepernour*] meynpernour MI. *reson*] Meede I.

108. *Red*] Bid M.

110. *huyren*] heren it IM; heere F; huren E; herun S. *oþer*] or IMF. *hit*] M om.

111. *And*] And til I. *porfil*] purfil MFS; purfiel I. *in þe*] in-to M; in hir IFS. *whucche*] wucche P; whicche FS; whoche E; hucche IM.

112. *children*] childres M. *cherissing*] chëssing P; chirsyng E; chersyngge S; cherissching I; cheresschyng M; chersching F; cf. B-text. *chastet*] chastyng S.

114. *Til*] And til S.

115. *Here*] And here SI. *here* (2)] I om. *poure*] be pore S. *menne*] men SE; mennes IMF. *lyflode*] foode F.

116. *reclused*] be reclused S; be reclus I; be closed M.

117. *benit*] benet MIFE.

119. *til*] E om.

120. *Tyl*] And til I. *bisshopes*] apparently bisschepes P. [*ben* IM] be F; beo G; and PES. *brewers*] & brewrus (sic) S.

121. *men*] of men IMF. *þei fyndeþ*] me fynt I. *nedfol*] nedy F.

122. *Tyl*] And til I.

123. *in*] M om. *cotes*] cottis E. *for*] pe (sic) I. *pilgrymages*] pilgrimage FI; pilgrimes M.

124. *it be*] he go IS; ȝif he go F; ȝif hit be M.

and Rome-seekers
no more bear the
king's coin over
the sea,

And alle rome-renners · for robbers in fraunce
Bere no suluer ouer see · þat kynges sygne sheweþ,
Neiper graue ne vngraue · of gold ne of suluer,
Vp forfeiture of þe fee · ho so fynt hym ouerwarde, 128
Bote it be marchaunt oþer hus man · oþer messenger
with lettres,
Prouisour oþer prest · oþer penaunt for hus synnes.

unless they be
merchants,
messengers, pro-
visors, or priests.

B 54

I will have no
pity while Meed
is here.

And 3ut," quath reson, "by þe rode · ich shal no reuthe
haue,

Whyl mede hath þe maistrye · þer motyng is atte barre.
Ac ich may seye ensamples · as ic see oþere; 133
Ich seye it for my-selue," quath reson · "and hit so were,
þat ich were kyng with corone · to kepe eny reame,
Shold neuere wronge in þis worlde · þat ich wite
myghte, 136

Were I king, no
Wrong should go
unpunished, or
get grace by
bribes.

Be vnpunyssed in my power · for peril of my soule,
Ne gete my grace þorw eny gyft · ne glosyng speche,
Ne þorw mede do mercy · by marye of heuene!

A 50

No evil ought to
go unpunished,
nor good unre-
warded.

For man, *nullum malum* · mette with *impunitum*, 140
And bad þat *nullum bonum* · bee *irremuneratum*.
Lete þy confessour, syre kyng · construe þis in english,
And 3if 3e worchen hit in werke · ich wedde boþe myn
handes,

Were this rule
kept, Law might

That lawe shal be a laborer · and lede a felde donge,

125. *robbers*] ruyflers I.

126. *Bere*] To bere I. *see*] þe se
M. *kynges sygne*] signe of king I;
kynges coyne M.

127. *Neiper*] M om. *ne* (1)] nor
F. *ne* (2)] nor F; or I.

128. *Vp*] Vp-on M. *þe*] þat IF.
ho so] who I. *fynt*] fyndeþ I. *hym*] hem I.
ouerwarde] gilty F.

129. *it*] he I. *messenger*] messa-
gerus F.

130. *Prouisour*] Oþur prouisour F.
penaunt] penytaunt F.

131. *3ut*] I om.

132. *Whyl*] Wyl P; Whiles I. *is*] his P.
atte] at þe MSE; at I.

133. *seye*] seiþe M; sein I.

134. *it*] it nat I. *Ich—selue*] For
soþe I seie F.

135. *þat*] And IS. *eny*] my I.

137. *in*] by F; be M. *my*] I om.

138. *gete my*] graunte M.

139. *þorw*] for F. *do*] haue I.
marye] mary loue F.

140. *man*] no man E; scholde F.
man—malum] nullum malum man I.
mette] meete F.

141. *bad þat*] bad I; also F. *bee*] with F.

142. *in english*] to þe F.

143. *worchen*] *miswritten* worten
(for worcen = worchen) P.

144. *be*] be but I.

And loue shal lede þy land · as þe leef lykeþ." 145 go and cart
 Clerkus þat were confessours · couplede hem to-gederes, manure, and Love
 To construe this clause · kyndeliche what hit menede. should rule over
 Mede in [þe] mote-halle þo · on men of lawe gan wynke, Then Meed
 In sygne þat þei sholde · with som sotel speche 149 winked at the
 Reherce þo a-non ryght · þat myghte reson stoppe. lawyers.
 And alle ryghtful recordeden · þat reson treuthe seyde, **B 55**
 And kynde wit and conscience · cortesliche þanked; All true men
 Reson for hus ryght speche · riche and poure hym thought Reason
 louede, was right. 153
 And seiden, "we seth wel · syre reson, by þy wordes,
 That meknesse worth mayster · ouer mede atte laste."
 Loue let lyght of mede · and leaute 3ut lasse, 156 As for Love, he
 And cryed vp-on conscience · þe kynge hit myghte laughed Meed to
 yhure, scorn, and said,
 "Who so wylneþ hure to wyue · for welthe of hure
 goodes, "Whoever
 Bote he be knowe for cokewold · kut of my nose!" marries her will
 Mede mornede þo · and made heuy cheere, 160 surely prove a
 For þe comune called hure · queynte comune hore. cuckold."
 A sysour and a somner þo · softeliche forth 3eden A somner and
 With mede þe mayde · out of þe mot-halle. Meed. others comfort
 Meed.

145. *leef* MFSE] *leeue* I; *luf* P.

146. I *has only*—Clerkes couplede hem togidres. *couplede*] companiede M.

147. *this*] þat comly F. *clause*] cause I; case M. *what*] wat P. *menede*] meneth IS.

148. *Mede*] & mede F. [þe MFI SE] þat P. [þo] M om. *gan wynke*] wynkede M.

150. [þo] sumwhat F; þer I. [þat] what M. *stoppe* IMFSE] stope P.

151. *And*] Ac I. *recordeden*] recorden M.

153. *Reson*] & resoun F. *ryght*] rightful IMF. *riche—poure*] pore & riche S.

154. *seth*] seon M; see S; seeyne I; se F. *reson*] M om. [þy] þe S.

155. *worth mayster*] schal maister

be F. *atte*] at þe MFE; at S.

156. *Loue let*] Tho lete loue F. *lyght*] litel M. *lyght—mede*] of meede lighte I. *3ut*] wel M; muche F.

157. *vp-on*] to I. *hit myghte*] myght it I. *yhure*] hure E; huyre S; here MIF.

158. *wyue*] wyne F; wyne quod he I.

159. *knowe*] i-mad M. *for*] for a IS; M om. *kut*] cutteþ M; kytt E.

160. [þo] muche þo F. *made*] made an I.

161. *called* FSE] cald P; calde I; calden M.

163. [þe] þat M. *mayde*] mayde þo I; maide mournyng F.

{ A shereyues clerk cryede · “a! *capiatis* mede, 164
Et saluo custodias · sed non cum carceratis.”

A 51

The king decreed
 that Reason was
 right,

and reproves
 his lawyers;

—The kyng to his consail tho · tok conscience and reson,
 And [modiliche] vp-on mede · meny tyme lokede,
 And lourede vp-on men of lawe · and lightliche seide,
 “Thorȝ ȝoure lawe, ich leyue · ich lese meny escheytes;
 Mede and men of ȝoure craft · mucche treuthe letteþ.
 Ac reson shal [rekene] with ȝow · yf ich regne eny
 whyle, 171

B 56

and declares
 that justice shall
 be done.

And deme ȝow by þys day · as ȝe haue deseruyd.
 Mede shal nat meynprise ȝow · by marye of heuene,
 Ich wolle haue leaute for my lawe; · let be al ȝoure
 ianglyng; 174

Conscience says
 it is hard to
 govern thus.

By leel men and lyf-holy · my lawe shal be demyd.”
 Quath conscience to þe kyng · “with-oute [þe] comune
 help,

Reason declares
 it is easy.

Hit is ful hard, by myn hefd · þer-to hit to brynge,
 And alle ȝoure lege ledes · to lede þus euene.” 178
 “By hym þat rauhte on rode” · quap reson to þe kyng,
 “Bote ich rewely þus alle reames · reueþ me my syght;
 And brynge alle men to bowe · with-oute byter wounde,

164. *cryede*] þo cride F. *a*] aa F. *capiatis*] *capias* I; *capiatis nunc* M.

165. *Et—custodias*] In *salua custodia* F; *Et salua custodia* S. *cum*] S *om.* *carceratis*] *incarceratis* F.

166. *his*] þe M; I *om.*

167. [*modiliche* MFSEG] *moodiliche* I; *mydeliche (wrongly)* P. *meny*] many a F.

168. *vp-on*] up M.

169. *Thorȝ*] þorȝ SE; Thorgh I; þorw M; þurw F; Thorȝe P. *lame*] lawes S. *ich*] asi MIFS. *escheytes*] chetes I; cheetus F; cheytus S.

170. *Mede*] For mede F. *letteþ*] lette F.

171. [*rekene*] *rekene* I; *rikene* M; *regne* PEFS; cf. B-text. *regne*] *leyue* M. *whyle*] wyle P.

173. *marye*] Mary loue F.

174. *let*] and late I. *al*] I *om.*

ianglyng M] *ianglend (badly)* P; *iangle* EIFS.

175. *By—men*] And by leele I. *be* IMFSE] by (*by mistake*) P.

176. *Quath*] Tho carped F. *with-oute*] whith-oute P. [þe EIS] PMF *om.*

177. *hefd*] heued I; hed MSE; heed F. *þer-to*] herto I. *hit—brynge*] hit for to bringe F; to bringen it I.

178. *þus*] now þus F.

179. *rauhte*] reste MS; rest him F; deied E. *on*] on þe F; vp þe I.

180. *Bote*] But ȝif S. *ich rewely*] ich ruly E; I rewle F; I rule S; i lede M; ȝe reule I. *alle reames*] þi reme F. *reueþ*] elles reueþ M; by-reueth F.

181. *And brynge*] And but I bringe F. *wounde* IMFSE] wonde P.

With-oute mercement oþer manslauht · amenden alle
reames." 182

"Ich wolde hit were," quap þe kyng · "wel al a-boute. The king says he
For-þy, reson, redelyche · þow shalt nat ryden hennes, assents to
Bote be my chyf chaunceler · in chekyr and in par- Reason's counsel;
ment, and hopes he will
185 stay with him.

And conscience in alle my courtes · be as kynges
Iustice."

"Ich a-sente," seyde reson · "by so þy-self y-huyre, "I will stay if
Audi alteram partem · a-mong aldermen and comuners; † certain in-
And þat vnsittyngge suffraunce · ne seele 3oure pryueie justices are
letteres, redressed.
189

Ne sende *supersedeas* · bote ich asente," quath reson ;

"And ich dar legge my lyf · þat loue wol lene [þe] † Love will pro-
suluer, vide you with
more money than
the Lombards
can."

To wage thyne, and help wyne · þat þow wilnest after,
More þan al þy marchauns · oþer þy mytrede bisshopes,
Oþer lumbardes of lukes · þat lyuen by lone as Iewes."

The kyng comaunded conscience tho · to congie alle † The king bids
hus officers, Conscience dis-
miss all corrupt
officers.
195

And receyuen þo þat reson louede ; · and ryzt with þat
ich a-wakede. END OF THE
FIRST VISION.

Hic explicit passus quintus.

182. *mercement*—*manslauht*] man-
slauht or mercement F.

184. *For-þy*] For-why M. *ryden*]
wende M.

185. *chekyr*] *chesquier* I. *in* (2)]
F om.

186. *as*] a I; þe F. *kynges*] chef
M.

187. *by so*] so þat MF. *þy*] 3ou
F; 3owe I. *y-huyre*] yhure E; yhyre
S; i-here MI; wole here F.

188. *Audi*] Audias M; Audiatis I.
alteram] aliam M. *comuners*]
comunres M; oþure F.

189. *seele*] asele S.

190. *sende* IMSE] seynde P; sende
out F. *sende supersedeas*] no super-
sidias sende I. *bote*—*reson*] but stile

(or scile) assente with þe F.

191. *legge*] ley þanne F. *lyf*] hed
M. [þe IMFSEG] þat P.

192. *and*] I om. *wynne*] to wynne
M. *þat*] al þat M. *wilnest*] willest
F.

193. *oþer þy*] and F.

194. *Oþer*] Of I. *of*] or FS.
lukes] lukus S; lucus oþur F. *as*]
& F.

195. *congie*] congie I; conge M;
cunge FS. *alle*] F om. *hus*] M
om.

196. *louede*] loueþ E; wolde F.
with] wit P. *a-wakede*] wakede
MIF.

COLOPHON. MI omit. *Hic*] FSEG
om.

PASSUS VI.

Incipit passus sextus.

† Then I awoke,
and lo! I was
living in Corn-
hill, Kit my wife
and I, and I was
clothed like a
"loller,"
† yet not much
liked by "lollers,"
because I wrote
about them.

† One hot har-
vest, I met with
Reason, being
then sound in
health but lazy.

† Reason ques-
tioned me, say-
ing, "Can you
sing in a church,

Thus ich a-waked, god wot · whanne ich wonede on
cornehulle,

Kytte and ich in a cote · cloped as a lollere,

And lytel [y-lete] by · leyue me for sope,

Among lollares of london · and lewede heremytes; 4

For ich made of þo men · as reson me tauhte.

For as ich cam by conscience · with reson ich mette

In an hote heruest · whenne ich hadde myn hele,

And lymes to labore with · and louede wel fare, 8

And no dede to do · bote drynke and to slepe.

In hele and in vnite · on me aposede;

Romyng in remembraunce · thus reson me aratede.

"Canstow seruen," he seide · "oper syngen in a
churche, 12

Oper coke for my cokers · oper to þe cart picche,

TITLE. So ESFG; Hic incipit
passus sextus de uisione M; Passus
quintus de visione, vbi prius I.

1. *a-waked*] haue waked F. *god
not* MFE] wot god PSI. *whanne*
wanne P. *on*] in I.

2. *cloped*] y-cloped EI.

3. *And*] And a P; *but* IMSE omit
a; & ful F. [*y-lete* IMSG] late F;
miswritten ich let P; ich lete E.
leyue] leue ME; leueth IFG; by-
leuþ S.

4. *lollares*] lollers EI; lollardus
F; loreles M. *london* S] london or
london P; londen EM; londoun IF.
heremytes] hermites I; ermytes M.

5. *made*] rouzte F.

6. *For as*] & þo F. *with*] wit P;
M om. *ich*] me M.

7. *whenne*] wenne P.

8. *fare*] to fare MFS.

9. *to do*] for to doo F. *drynke*
to drynke S. *and to*] and S; wel
and F.

10. *vnite*] inwitte I; hete F.

11. *Romyng*] & romyng F; Rom-
blyng (= *rambling*) M.

12. *Canstow*] Canst þow MFS;
Can þou I. *a*] E om.

13. *coke*] coken M; loke (*wrongly*)
I. *my*] S om. *cokers*] cokares I;
cokerus FS.

- Mowe *oper* mowen · *oper* make bond to sheues,
 Repe *oper* be a repereyue · and a-ryse erliche,
Oper haue an horne and be haywarde · and liggen oute
 a nyghtes, 16 † or mow, or
 bind sheaves,
 or reap, or be a
 hayward, and
 keep corn from
 thieves,
- And kepe my corn in my croft · fro pykers and peeues?
Oper shappe shon *oper* cloþes · *oper* shep *oper* kyn kepe,
 Heggē *oper* harwen · *oper* swyn *oper* gees dryue,
Oper eny [*oper*] kyns craft · þat to þe comune nedeþ,
 Hem þat bedreden be · by-lyue to fynde?" 21 † or mend shoes,
 or keep cows,
 or drive swine
 or geese?"
- "Certes," ich seyde · "and so me god helpe,
 Ich am to waik to worche · with sykel *oper* with sythe,
 And to long, leyf me · lowe for to stoupe, 24 † "I am too
 weak to work,"
 said I, "and too
 tall to stoop."
- To worchen as a workeman · eny whyle to dure."
 "Thenne hauest þow londes to lyue by" · quath reson, † "Then haue
 you lands or
 rich kindred?"
- "*oper* lynage riche
 That fynden þe þy fode? · for an ydel man þow
 semest,
 A spendour þat spende mot · *oper* a spille-tyme, 28
Oper beggest þy bylyue · a-boute at menne haches,
Oper faitest vp-on frydays · *oper* feste-dayes in churches,
 The whiche is lollarene lyf · þat lytel ys preysed,

14. *mowen*] mouwen M; muwe F; mywen I (*mov* = to put in a mow, to stack). *bond*] bend F. *to*] for M.

15. *repereyue*] repereue IF; rip-reue M; rippreue E; rype-reue SG. *erliche*] vp erli M.

16. *haue*] with F. *and*] F om. *be*] be an ME; be a S. *oute*] þer-oute I. *a*] on M.

17. *And*] To F. *fro*] for MF. *pykers*] priquieres M. *and*] or M.

18. *shon* — *cloþes*] cloþus opur schoon F. *cloþes*] cloþe MI.

19. *Heggen* IMF. *Eggen* PES. *harwen*] harewen MS. *swyn*] swyne · kepe E. *gees*] hogges M.

20. *eny*] E om. [*oper* MIFSG] PE om. *kyns*] kynnes MES; kyn F. *þe*] E om. *nedeþ* IME] nudeþ P.

21. *bedreden*] be-dradde F; in drede M. *by-lyue*] by-leue E; lijf-

lode M. I *has*—þey I be betered þe by · þat by-leue þe fynden.

22. *Certes*] Certes nai M; Certus sir F.

23. *waik*] woke E; wow M.

24. *leyf*] lef þow M. *for*] I om.

25. *a*] S om. *whyte*] wyle P.

26. *hauest*] hast IMFSE. *londes*] land M. *quath reson*] quod he F (inserted after þow).

27. *fynden*] fyndeþ MIFS. *þe*] þe þus F. *an*] F om. *ydel*] hydel P.

28. *spende*] spene I.

29. *bylyue*] bylyf E. *at*] ate P. *menne*] men ES; mennes IMF.

30. M omits.

31. *whiche*] wiche P. *lollarene*] lollerne I; lollerus F; a lollerus S; loreles M; *miswriten* sollarene E. *þat*—*ys*] and litel M. *preysed*] I-preysed IMFS.

þer ryghtfulnesse rewardeþ · ryght as men deserueþ, 32

† Ps. lxi. 13
(Vulgate).

Reddit unicuique iuxta opera sua.

Oþer þow art broke, so may be · in body oþer in
membre,

† Or are you
malmed ?

Oþer ymaymed þorw som mys-hap · wher-by þow myȝt
be excused ?

† “When I was
young,” said I,
“my father put
me to school ;

“Whanne ich ȝong was,” quath ich · “meny ȝer hennes,
My fader and my frendes · founden me to scole, 36

Tyl ich wiste wyterliche · what holy wryt menede,

And what is best for þe body · as þe bok telleþ,

And sykerest for þe soule · by so ich wolde continue.

† and, since my
friends died, I
like no life but
one in these long
clothes.

And ȝut fond ich neuere in faith · sytthen my frendes
deyden, 40

Lyf þat me lyked · bote in þes longe clothes.

Yf ich by labour sholde lyue · and lyflode deseruen,

That labour þat ich lerned best · þer-with lyue ich
sholde ;

† 1 Cor. vii. 20.

In eadem uocatione [in] qua uocati estis, [manete.]

And ich lyue in londone · and on londone bothe, 44

† The tools I
work with are
Paternoster,
Placebo, and
Dirige.

The lomes þat ich labour with · and lyflode deserue

Ys *pater-noster* and my prymer · *placebo* and *dirige*,

And my sauter som tyme · and my seuene psalmes. 47

† I sing for
men's souls.

Thus ich synge for hure soules · of suche as me helpen,

And þo þat fynden me my fode · vouchen saf, ich trowe,

32. *ryghtfulnesse*] as riȝt F. *Red-*
dit] *Reddet* MF.

33. *art* IMFS] ert PE. *broke*] *crokot* M.

34. *wher-by*] *wer-by* P ; *where-*
burgh F.

35. *Whanne*] *Wanne* P. *quath*
ich] I om.

37. *what*] *wat* P. *menede*] *bi-*
menede M.

38. *what*] *wat* P. *is*] *was* FS.

39. *And*] & also F. *by so*] so þat
MF.

40. *ȝut*] IF om. *ich*] I om.

41. *lyked*] *liked wel* F.

42. *Yf*] ȝif MFSE ; *Hyf* P ; And
ȝif I.

43. *best*] *furst* M. *þer-with*] *þer-*
whit P. *sholde*] *wolde* E. [*in* M]
PEIFS om. [*manete* M] PEIFS
om.

44. *And*] And so I. *londone* MSE]
londoun IF ; *londene* P. *on londone*
SE] *on londen* P ; *by londoun* F ; *out*
of londone M ; *vp-londe* I.

46. *Ys so in all. my*] F om.
dirige] *my dirige* F.

47. *seuene psalmes*] *psalmes seuene*
M.

48. *Thus*] þis I. *synge*] *sigge* I.
hure] þe FS. *soules*] *soule* S.

49. *me*] E om. *vouchen* M] *fouchen*
IS ; *vochen* PE ; *fouche* F.

To be welcome whanne ich come · oper-whyle in a
monthe,

Now with hym and now with hure · and þus-gate ich
begge

With-oute bagge oper botel · bote my wombe one. 52

And al-so more-ouer · me þynkeþ, syre reson,

Men sholde constreyne no clerke · to knaue ne werkes ; † No clerk should
be made to do
labourer's work,

For by lawe of *leuitici* · þat oure lord ordeynede,

Clerkes þat aren crowned · of kynde vnderstandyng 56

Sholde noþer swynke ne swete · ne swere at enquestes,

Ne fyghte in no vauntwarde · ne hus fo greue ;

† nor should
he fight.

Non reddas malum pro malo.

1 Thess. v. 15.
Levit. xix. 18.

For it ben aires of heuene · alle þat ben crowned, 59

And in queer [and in kirkes] · cristes owene mynestres,

Dominus pars hereditatis mee ; & alibi : Cle- † Ps. xv. 5
mentia non constringit. (Vulgate).

Hit by-comeþ for clerkus · crist for to seruen,

And knaues vncrowned · to cart and to worche.

For shold no clerk be crowned · bote yf he ycome were † No clerk should
receive the
tonsure unless
he be sprung
from a franklin
or free man.—*See* *med. loc.*

Of franklens and free men · and of folke yweddeds. 64

Bondmen and bastardes · and beggers children,

Thuse by-longeþ to labour · and lordes [kyn to] seruen

50. *welcome*] wolcome P. *whanne*
wanne P. *whyle*] wyle P. *oper-*
whyle] oonus F.

51. *and*] I om. *and—gate*] on þis
wise I.

52. *wombe*] bodi M.

53. *And*] F om. *more-ouer*] more-
ouer now F. *þynkeþ*] meeneth wel F.

54. *Men*] Me I. *knaue ne*] no
knaues I.

55. *lawe*] þe lawe IM. *ordeynede*] made F.

56. *þat aren*] I om. *aren*] arn
M; ben E; be F. *crowned*] i-crowned
MI.

57. *noþer*] nouȝt M.

58. *vauntwarde*] vandwarde M;
faumwarde I; famwarde S; fawarde
F. *hus fo*] here foos F. *reddas*] reddes F.

59. *it ben*] it beeth FS; þei ben
M. *aires*] eires ME; heires IF.
alle] and alle PE; but IMFS omit
and. *ben*] beþ F. *crowned*] crounede P; I-crowned IFMS.

60. *queer*] quere FIE; quer MS.
[and in kirkes I] and in churches
MS; in churches PE; in kirkus F.
owene] I om. *mynestres*] mene-
strales M.

63. *yf*] IFM om. *ycome*] come
IFS.

64. *and*] or F (twice). *yweddeds*] yweddeds P.

65. *Bondmen*] But bonde-men F.

66. *Thuse*] þese IMF. *by-longeþ*] longeþ M. [kyn to MF] to (kyn omitted) I; children sholde PES (which clogs the line); kyn scholde G.

- Bothe god and good men · as here degree askep;
 Some to synge masses · *oper* sitten and wryte, 68
 Rede and receyue · *pat* reson ouhte spende;
 [Ac] sith bondemenne barnes · han be mad Bisshopes,
 And barnes bastardes · han ben archidekenes,
 And *sopers* and *here* sones · for seluer han be knyghtes,
 And lordene sones here laborers · and leid here rentes
 † For, since bondmen's children have been made bishops,
 † and lords' sons have become labourers,
 to wedde, 73
 For þe ryght of þis reame · ryden a-ȝens oure enemys,
 || In confort of þe comune · and þe kynges worshep,
 † and monks' kindred are made knights,
 And monkes and moniales · *pat* mendinauns sholden
 fynde, 76
 Han mad here kyn knyghtes · and knyghtfees purchase[d],
 † popes and patrons refuse poor gentle blood.
 † Holiness and Love have long left us,
 Popes and patrones · poure gentil blod refuseþ,
 And taken symondes sone · seyntewarie to kepe.
 Lyf-holynesse and loue · han ben longe hennes, 80
 And wole, til hit be wered out · or *operwise*
 ychaunged.
 For-þy rebuke me ryght nouht · reson, ich ȝow praye;
 For in my conscience ich knowe · what crist wolde *pat*
 ich wrouhte.
 † Prayers and penance are the best labour."
 Preyers of [a] *parfyt* man · and penaunce discret 84
 Ys þe leueste labour · *pat* oure lord pleseþ.

67. *Bothe*] I om. *degree*] gre M; F.
 degreus S.

68. *oper*] & summe to F.

69. *ouhte spende*] auȝte dispende
 M; oweth to spene I; rewarde hadde
 F.

70. [Ac IMSG] And PEF. *bondemenne*] bondmens IF. *han—Bisshopes*] ha be mytred made F.

71. *bastardes*] bastard born F.

72. *sopers*] sory *soperus* F; schip-herdes I. *han be*] be made F.

73. *lordene*] lordes IMFS. *here laborers*] han be heore men M. *here*] F om. *rentes*] landes M.

74. *þis* IMS] þes P; þe EF.

75. *and*] & of F. *worshep*] honour

76. *mendinauns*] mendinaunt S.

77. *Han mad*] I-made I. *knyghtfees*] feus S. *purchased* EMFSG] y-purchased I; purchase P.

78. *gentil*] gentel men E. *refuseþ*] refused IF.

79. *seyntewarie*] sanctuarye F.

80. *and*] to F.

81. *or*] and M.

82. *For-þy*] For-whi M. ȝow] þe IM.

83. *þat*] IMF om.

84. *Preyers*] For preiers F. [a IMFEG] PS om.

85. *Ys*] see l. 45. *labour*] þyng M. *pleseþ*] askep M.

Non de solo," ich seide · "for soþe *uiuit homo*,

Nec in pane & pabulo · þe *pater-noster* witesnesþ;

† Matt. iv. 4;
vi. 10.

Fiat uoluntas tua · fynt ous alle þynges." 88

Quath conscience, "by crist · ich can nat see this lyeþ;

Ac it semeth nouht *parfytnesse* · in cytees for to begge, † "Few are
Bote he be obediencer · to pryour oþer to mynstre." privileged to
beg," said Con-
science.

"That ys soth," ich seide · "and so ich by-knowe, 92

That ich haue tynt tyme · and tyme mysspended;

† "I grant that
I have lost time;

And ȝut, ich hope, as he · þat ofte haueþ chaffared,

þat ay hath lost and lost · and [atte laste] hym happed

He bouhte suche a bargayn · he was þe bet euere, 96 † yet I hope
some day to
redeem all."

And sette hus lost at a lef · at þe laste ende,

Suche a wynnyngge hym warth · þorw wordes of hus

grace;

Simile est regnum celorum thesauro abscondito † Matt. xiii. 44;
in agro, & cetera: Luke xv. 9.

Mulier que inuenit dragmam [vnam], et cetera;

So hope ich to haue · of hym þat is al-myghty

A gobet of hus grace · and bygynne a tyme, 100

þat alle tymes of my tyme · to profit shal turne."

"Ich rede þe," quath reson þo · "rape þe to by-gynne † "I advise thee
to begin a holy
life," said
þe lyf þat ys lowable · and leel to þe soule"—

86. *de solo*] in solo pane M. *for*
soþe] M om. *for—homo*] uiuit home
forsothe F.

87. &] et in I; nec in MS. þe]
as F.

88. *Fiat*] For fiat F. *tua* EM]
Dei IFS; *miswritten* tuas P. *fynt*]
þat fynt I; it findeth F. *ous*] so S;
vs IFME.

89. *by*] þo by F. *ich—lyeþ*] I
know þat þu gabbes F.

90. *nouht*] no I. *parfytnesse*] sad
parfytnesse IFS. *for*] IS om.

91. *Bote*] And M. *obediencer*]
vnbediencer (*sic*) E; obedient F.
oþer to] or to oþer M. *mynstre*]
mynstre SM.

92. *ich* (2)] I am MF.

93. *tynt*] loste E. *mysspended*]
mysspende E; mysdespendyd F.

94. *And*] Ac MIF. ȝut] riȝt F.
he] dooth he F.

95. *þat*] And IME. *hath*] I om.
and lost] S om. [atte laste EIFS]
at þe laste MG; at þe latiste P.

96. *He bouhte*] Aboute I; þat he
bieth F. *was*] is F. *bet*] better
IM; bet for F.

97. *hus*] al his I. *lost*] los I. *at*
—lef] aloof E. *at þe*] atte IFS.

98. *hym*] þer F. *warth*] so PI;
worþ MSE; wurth F. *wordes* IFS]
wyrdes P; werkes M. *hus*] IMFS
om. [*vnam* M] PEIFS om.

99. *hope ich*] ich hope E. *is*] his
P.

100. *gobet*] good gobet F.

101. *alle*] alle þe F.

103. *lyf*] leef I. *lowable*] louable
I; loueable F. þe] þy EIF.

Reason;—"and to continue in it," said Conscience. "3e, and continue;" quath conscience · and to þe [kirke] ich wente. 104

† Then I went to church, and there prayed till I again fell asleep. THE SECOND VISION BEGINS. And to þe [kirke] gan ich go · god to honourie, By-for þe crois on my knees · knocked ich my brest, Sykinge for my synnes · seggyng my *pater-noster*, Wepying and wailing · tyl ich was a slepe. 108

A 52 B 57 Thenne mette me moche more · þan ich by-fore tolde Of þe mater þat ich mette fyrst · on maluerne hulles. Ich sauh þe feld ful of folk · fraim ende to oþer, And reson reuested · ryzt as a pope, 112

The sermon of Reason upon the pestilences and the violent wind of Jan. 15, 1362.

And conscience his crocer · by-fore þe kyng stande. Reson reuerentliche · by-for al þe reame Prechede, and prouede · þat þuse pestilences Was for pure synne · to punyshe þe puple; 116

A 53

And þe south-west wynd · on saterday at eue Was pertelich for prude · and for no poynt elles.

B 58

Pear-trees, plum-trees, beeches, and oaks were blown down.

Piries and plomtrees · were poffed to þe erthe 119 In ensample to syggen ous · we sholde do þe betere; Beches and brode okes · weren blowe to þe grounde, And turned vpward here tayl · in tokenyng of drede That dedlich synne er domys day · shal for-do ous alle.

104. [kirke IF] church PEMS. wente] wende E.

105. And to] Vnto M. [kirke IF] church PEMS. gan ich] I gan I. honourie] so E; honoure MFI; honour S.

106. knocked ich] knockyng M. brest] herte F.

107. Sykinge] Sizinge F; Syzyng S; Schryuyng I. synnes] senes P; cf. l. 116. seggyng] syngyng EM; & seide F.

109. Thenne] And þanne I. mette IMFSE] mete P; and in l. 110. me] i MFS.

110. þe] F om. ich] me I.

111. þe] a M. to] til IM. oþer] þe oþer P; but IMFSE omit þe.

112. reuested] i-reuested MI; reuesthed ryally F.

113. conscience his] so all. crocer] croser IM; croycer F; croyser SE. stande] stoden M.

114. Reson] Þanne resoun F. by-for] tofore I.

115, 116. Prechede and preued þat þis pestilence · was for pure synne I. þuse] þese MF; þes E. Was] so EIS; Weren M; It was F.

117. on] on a IM; or S.

118. prude] pride MF.

119. Piries] Puries E; Puryus S; Pere-trees I. poffed] puffed FS; possed IE; i-puffed M.

120. syggen] schewe M. to—ous] þat I. we sholde] forte M.

121. weren blowe] blewe I. blowe] blow F; i-blowe M.

123. er] ar I; or MSE. ous] hém I.

- Of þis mater ich myghte · momely [ful] longe, 124 The dreamer
Ac ich shal seye as ich seiþ · slepynge, as it were, gives an outline
How reson radde al þe reame · ryght for to lyuen. of Reason's
He bad wastours go worche · and wynne here sustin- sermon.
aunce Reason bids
wasters work,
- þorw som trewe trauail · and no tyme spille. 128
He preide purnele · here porfil to leue, and tells Pernel
And kepe hit in here cofre · for catell at hure nede. to put her finery
He tauhte Thomme stowe · to take two staues, away.
And fecche felice home · fram wyuen pyne. 132 Thomas is to fetch
He warnede watte · hus wif was to blame, home his wife
For hure hefd was worth half mark · and hus hod nat Felice; and Wat's
a grote. wife is to blame.
- He bad bette go kutte · a bowh oper tweye, Bette is to beat
And bete beton þer-myð · bote hue wolde worche. 136 lazy Beton.
He charged chapmen · to chasten here children, Chapmen are to
And lete no wynnyng for-wene hem · þe while þei ben chastise their
3onge; children.
- For ho so spareþ þe spring · spilleþ hus children; B 59
And so wrot þe wise · to wissen us alle, 140 Spare the rod,
Qui parcit uirge, odit filium. and spoil the
And sitthe he preide prelates · and prestes to-geders, A 54 child (Prov. xiii.
24).
124. *momely*] momele MF; ma- 134. *hefd*] hede IF; hed MES.
mele I; mene S. [*ful* IMFSEG] wel mark] a mark S. *hod*] F om. *nat*
P; cf. B-text. nouzt worþ M.
125. *seiþ*] si M; sy F. 135. *bette*] will E. *go*] to IFS.
126. *ryght for*] ríghtly F; I om. *tweye*] tweine M.
lyuen] heuene I. 136. *þer-myð*] þer-wiþ IF. *bote*]
127. *go*] to MI. *wynne*] gete M. but 3if IM. *hue*] *written* he P;
129. *He*] Also he F. *here*] of heo F; 3o E; sche IM; cf. Pass. v.
hure M. 92.
130. *at hure*] oper F. *nede* IMEF] 138. *And*] IF om. *for-wene*] for-
nude P. wanyen I. *þe while*] þe wile P; þer-
131. *stowe* E] stone P; stouue S; whil I; while þat MF.
stouue IF; of stowe M. *He—stowe*] 139. *ho so*] who I. *spring*] sprigge
Tomme stouue he taghte I. *two*] þe FI; 3erde E. *spilleþ*] he spilleþ
S. MS. *hus*] here I. *children*] heirus
132. *fecche*] fette IF. *fram*] fro F.
þe M. *wyuen*] wyfen E; wyuene 140. *wise*] wise man M. *wissen*
IMF. IMFSE] wisen P. *us*] hus P.
133. *hus—was*] waite · his wif F. *filium*] filium suum F.
to] S om.

Priests should
practise what
they preach.

That hij precheþ to þe puple · prouen hit hem-selue ;
“ Lyue 3e as 3e lereþ ous · we shulleþ leyue 3ow þe
bettere.”

Religion should
rule strictly.

And sitthe [he] radde religion · here ruele to holde, 144
“ Leste þe kyng and hus consail · 3oure comunes a-peyre,
And be stywardes of 3oure stedes · til 3e be [stewed]
betere.

A 132

B 158

Pope Gregory
says, ‘as fish die
out of water, so
does Religion
when out of a
convent.’

Gregorie þe grete clerk · gart write in bokes
The ruele of alle religious · ryghtful and obedient. 148
Right as fisshes in flod · whenne hem faileþ water,
Deyen for drouthe · whenne þei drye ligen,
Ryght so religion · roteþ and sterueth,
þat out of couent and cloistre · coueyteþ to dwelle. 152
For yf heuene be on þys erthe · oþer eny eyse for saule,
Hit is in cloistre oþer in scole · by meny skyles ich
fynde.

If heaven be on
earth, it is in a
cloister.

For in cloistre comeþ no man · to chide ne to fighte ;
In scole ys loue and lownesse · and [lykyng] to lerne.
Ac meny day, men telleþ · boþe monkes and chanouns
Han ride out of a-ray · here ruele vuel [y]holde, 158
[Lederes of louedaies · and landes purchassed,]

† But now monks
and canons do
not keep their
rule;

142. *hij*] 3e I. *hem*] 3ow I.
143. *Lyue*] Lyueth IM; & lyue F.
3e (1)] MF om. 3e (2)] þei F.
shulleþ] schulle M; schol S; schal
IF. *leyue*] leue ISE; loue M; leue
F.

144. [*he* IMFSEG] P om. *reli-*
gion] religious MF.

145. *kyng and*] kyngus F. *3oure*]
her F. *a-peyre* IMFSG] apeyere PE.

146. *stywardes*] steward FS. *of*]
ouer E. 3e] he F. [*stewed* F]
stuede PE; stuyd S; stowed I;
stywed G; turned M.

147. SEE B. x. 292. *gart*] lete E.
in] I om.

148. *alle*] F om. *religious*] re-
ligion MF; religious I. *and obedi-*
ent] to beholde F.

149. *Right*] þæt riȝt F. *in*] in a
M; on þe I. *whenne*] wenne P;

and in l. 150. *hem*] þay I.

150. *drouthe*] dreuthe or drouthe
P; drape E; drowpe M; droghpe I;
drouzte F. *drye*] miswritten dryen P.

151. *religion*] religious M.

152. *and*] and of I; or M.

153. *for saule*] to þe soule I; of
soule M.

154. *cloistre*] a cloistre P; but IM
FSE omit a; so also in l. 155. *meny*]
sundry F; E om.

155. *chide—fighte*] fize ne to
chide M.

156. [*lykyng* EIMF] lokyng PS.

157. *meny—men*] as many man F.

158. *ride*] riden F; i-ride M;
ridde E. *vuel*] euel IMF. *yholde*
EG] i-holde MIFS; holde P.

159. *From* M; also in IFSG; PE
om. *louedaies*] lawedayus FSG;
ladies I.

And priked a-boute on palfrais · fro places to maners,

An hepe of houndes at hus ers · as he a lord were ;

and each one
behaves like a
great lord.

And [but] hus knaue knele · þat shal hus coppé holde,

He lokeþ al louryng · and ‘lordein’ hym calleþ.

Lytel hadde lordes a-do · to 3eue londe fro here aires

Lords ought not
to give to monks,

To [religious], þat han no reuthe · þauh hit reyne [on]

B 149

here auters.

165

Land

*instead
of to Ke
haus*

In places þer þei persons beþ · by hem-self at ese,

Of þe poure han þei no pyte · þat is here pure charite.

3e leten 3ow alle as lordes · 3oure londe lyth to brode.

Ac 3ut shal come a kyng · and confesse 3ow alle, 169

But a king shall
come and reform
Religion.

And bete 3ow, as þe byble telleþ · for brekyng of 3oure

reule,

And amende 3ow monkes · moniales, and chanons,

And putte 3ow to 3oure penaunce · *ad pristinum*

statum ire.

172

And barons and here barnes · blame 3ow and reproue ;

Hii in curribus & hi in equis : ipsi obligati sunt, Ps. xix. 8, 9

(Vulgate).

& ceciderunt.

Freres in here freitour · shulle fynde þat tyme

Bred with-oute beggyng · to lyue by euere after,

And constantyn shal be here cook · and couerer of here

churche.

176

160. *priked*] i-priked M. *fro*] to S. to IM] & to ES; in-to P. *fro—maners*] to places aboute F.

162. [*but* MFS] but if I; bit PE. *hus*] þe M.

163. *louryng*] loureng P. *lordein* IME] lurdein FS; lorden P.

164. *aires*] heires IF; eires MES.

165. [*religious* IMFSE] religion P. *reyne*] ryne P. [*on* IMFSG] in PE.

166. *places*] place F; many places I. *þei*] þe I. *by*] ben M.

167. *Of*] On E. *þat*] and þat I. *is*] his P. *pure*] *miswritten* poure P. *þat—charite*] þogh þei pyne & sterue F.

168. *3e*] Ac 3e I. *lyth*] it lyth F. *to*] so IM.

169. *Ac 3ut*] Ac þer I; But 3it F; And 3ut M; 3it 3it (*sic*) E. *kyng*] cristene king F. *confesse*] chastise F.

170. *telleþ*] seyth F. *reule*] reules I.

171. *monkes*] mery monkus F. *moniales*] boþe monials I. *chanons*] alle F.

172. *penaunce*] pitaunce F. *statum*] gradum M.

173. *barnes*] baronasse (*sic*) E.

174. *freitour*] fretour P.

176. *constantyn*] costantyn P. *shal*] S om. *couerer*] keuerour FS; ceuerour M. *churche*] kyrke M; chirches IG; kykene S.

Then shall the
abbot of England
receive a knock.

For þe abbot of engelonde . and þe abbesse hys nece
Shullen haue a knock on here crownes · and in-curable
þe wounde ;

B 160

Isaiah xiv. 5, 6.

*Contriuit dominus baculum impiorum, uirgam
dominancium, plaga in-sanabili.*

Before that king
comes, [† clerks
shall be clothed
anew.]

(A 54) (B 59)

The king should
love the com-
mons.

Ac er þat kyng come · as cronycles me tolde,
Clerkus and holychurche · shal be cloped newe. 180
And sitthe he consailed þe kyng · hus comune to louye ;
For þe comune ys þe kynges tresour · conscience wot
wel,

And al-so," quath rescn · "ich rede 3ow riche,
And comuners to a-corden · in alle kynne treuthe. 184
Let no kynne consail · ne couetyse 3ow departe,
þat on wit and on wil · alle 3oure wardes kepe.

† In heaven
there was a holy
commonwealth,
till Lucifer
thought himself
above his
master.

Lo ! in heuene an hy · was an holy comune,
Til lucifer þe lyere · leyued þat hym-selue 188
Were wittyour and worthiour · þan he þat was hus
maister.

Hold 3ow in vnite · and [he] þat oþer wolde
Ys cause of alle combraunce · to confounde a reame."

The pope should
† promote love.

And sitthen he preide þe pope · haue pyte of holy-
churche, 192

And no grace to graunte · til good loue were
Among alle kynne kynges · ouer cristene puple :

177. þe abbesse] abbace F; abbas
M. hys] ys P.

178. knock] knotte F. on] vpon I.
here crownes] þe croune M. wounde
IFSE] wonde P. and—wounde] in-
curable schulle þei wende M.

179. I omits. er] er þan M; ar S;
or FE. þat] þis S.

180. churche] kirke would better
suit the metre.

181. to] S om.

182. For] F om. þe] F om. con-
science] as conscience F.

183. riche] þat be riche F.

184. And—a-corden] Acordeth with
þe comune F.

185. kynne] kynges M; careful F.

couetyse] conscience M. departe]
parte I; to parte M.

186. on] o IFS (twice).

187. heuene—hy] in þe heye heuene
F; heuen and in erþe I.

188. leyued] leued IMFSE.

190. Hold] Holdeþ M. Hold—in]
Holliche holduth F. [he IMSEG]
3e P. he þat] ho so F. oþer] hoþer
P. wolde] wille F.

191. alle] careful F. combraunce]
combrances I.

192. sitthen] þanne F. pope]
peple · to M. of] on IMFS.

193. to] ne I.

194. kynne] cristene M. ouer]
ouere P; of S.

"Comaunde þat alle confessours · þat eny kyng shryueþ, † Confessors
Enioynye hem pees for here penaunce · and perpetuel should enjoin
forþeuenesse kings to keep
the peace.

196

Of alle manere acciouns · and eche man loue oþer.

And ȝe þat secheþ seint Iame · and seyntes of rome,

Secheþ seint treuthe · in sauacion of ȝoure saules :

Qui cum patre & filio · þat faire hem by-falle

þat suweþ my sarmon " · and þus ended reson. 201

B 60

Pilgrims should
seek St Truth.

Hic explicit passus sextus.

195. *kyng*] kynges M.

196. *Enioynye*] Enioyne IMFS.
here] F om.

197. *Of*] For I. *eche*] eche a F.

198. *of*] at M.

199. *Secheþ*] Seicheþ P. *treuthe*]
trupe at hom M. *ȝoure*] here E.

200. *patre*] deo patre S. *hem*]
him mote M.

201. *suweþ*] sheweþ S. *and*] I om.
ended] endeþ IMFSE. *ended reson*]
resoun eendeth F.

COLOPHON. So PG; IM omit.
Hic] FSE om.

PASSUS VII.

Incipit passus septimus.

(A 54) (B 60) **W**ith þat ran repentaunce · and reherced hus teme,
And made wille to wepe · water *with* hus eyen.

I. PRIDE. Pernel
repents her pride,

Purnele proute-herte · platte hure to þe erthe,
Longe was er hue loked vp · and ‘lord, mercy,’ criede,
And by-highte to hym · þat ous alle made, 5

and vows to wear
a hair shirt,
and to be ever
humble.

Hue sholde vnsowen hure smok · and sette þer an
heire,

To afaiten hure flesch · þat fers was to synne.

“Shal neuere [heigh] herte me hente · bote holde me
lowe, 8

And suffre to be myssaide · and so dude ich neuere.

Bote now wolle ich meke me · and mercy by-seche

Of alle þat ich haue · yhated in myn herte.”

† Repentance
bids her repent.

“Repente þe,” quath repentaunce · “as reson þe tauhte,
And shryf þe sharpliche · and shak of alle pruyde.”—

TITLE. *So in* PSEFG; Hic incipit
passus septimus de uisione M; Passus
sextus de visione, &c., I.

1. *With*] Right wiþ I.

2. *eyen*] eyes I; eye F.

3. *Purnele*] And parnel F. *proute*] proud IS; prowd F. *platte*] flatte S.

4. *Longe*] And longe I. *was*] F
om. *er*] her P; or EMFS; ar I.
hue] so S; heo F; 3he I; 3o E; sche
M. *criede*] sche criede M.

5. *hym*] him an hy F.

6. *Hue*] þat heo F; 3o E; Sche
IM. *vnsowen* I] vnsowe F; unsewe

M; onsewe S; vnsuwe E; vnsywe P.
smok] serk IMF; scherte S. *þer*]
þeron I; on hure M. *an*] on S.

8. *neuere*] no F. [heigh I] hy
FS; hi M; hy3 G; my E; myn P;
cf. B-text.

10. *Bote*] & F. *wolle ich*] i wole
M. *meke*] muke P.

11. *alle*] alle hem F; alle þingus
S. *yhated*] hated IFMS.

12. *þe* (2)] me E.

13. *þe*] þe now F. *of alle*] away
þy F; away G. *pruyde*] pride IMF.

CONFESSIO SUPERBIE.

“Ich, pruyde, pacientliche · penaunce ich aske ;
 For ich formest and ferst · to fader and to moder
 Haue ybe vnboxome · ich biseche god of mercy ; 16
 And vnboxome ybe · nouht a-baissed to a-gulte
 God and alle good men · so gret was myn herte ;
 In-obedient to holy churche · and to hem þat þer
 seruen ; † I, Pride, [a
 male] was dis-
 obedient to my
 parents,
 † and to holy
 church,

Demed for hure yuel vices · and excited opere 20
 þorw my word and my wit · hure yuel workes to
 shewe ;

And scorned hem and opere · yf [ich] a skyle founde, † a scorner of
 Lauhyng al a-loude · for lewede men sholde others,

Wene þat ich were witty · and wyser þan a-nopere ; 24
 Scorner and vnskilful · to hem þat skil shewede,

In alle manere maners · my name to be yknowe ; † and always
 Semyng a souereyn on · wher-so me by-fulle putting myself
 forward.

To telle eny tale · ich trowede me wiser 28

To carpen oper to counsaile · þan eny lered oper lewede.

Prout of aparail · in porte amonge þe puple **B 225**

Oper-wise þan ich haue · with-ynne oper with-oute, I was proud of
 my apparel,

Confessio superbie] so in PEG; al. yuel] vuel P; but see l. 20.
 Superbia F. *yuel workes] wikkidnes F.*

14. Ich] In F. *pruyde] pride*
 IMFE. *pacientliche] pacientliche*
quod heo F. ich] I om.

15. to] to my I (*twice*). to (2)]
 F om.

16, 17. S has Haue vnboxum y-be,
omitting all words between.

16. ybe] be IF; ben M. of] EG
 om.

17. And] Ful F. ybe] i-be M;
 haue I be F. a-baissed] abasscht I;
 abassched M; a-baschid S; a-gaste
 E. nouht a-baissed] abesched me
 nat F. a-gulte] agilte I; gilte F.

18. God] To god F. alle] I om.

19. to (2)] F om.

20. Demed for her doynigus · &
 daunselde many opure F.

21. F repeats this line after l. 24.
 and] and al PE; but IMFS omit

al. yuel] vuel P; but see l. 20.
yuel workes] wikkidnes F.

22. opere] sum opur F. [ich E] i
 MIFS; y G; P om.

23. Lauhyng] With lawhing F.
 al] E om. men] F om.

24. Wene] FM put this at end of
 l. 23. witty] withtiere M; witytere
 S. a-nopere] oper E.

25. Scorne] As scornere F.

26. yknowe] knowe IFESG.

27. Semyng] Semeng P; To semen
 F. on] F om. wher] wer P. by-
 fulle] befille F; bi-felle M.

28. To] For to F. me] me þe
 EM; I was F.

29. lered] clerk IF. oper lewede]
 of skoole F.

30. Prout] Proud MSI; Prute E;
 & prowde F. in] & F.

31. haue] hadde F.

† anxious to be
supposed rich,

Me [wilnynge] þat men wende · ich were, [as] in aueyr,
Riche, and resonable · and ryghtful of lyuynges, 33
Bostynges and Braggynges · wyth meny holde oþes,
Auauntyng vp-on my veine glorie · for eny vnder-
nymynges ;

† always brag-
ging,

And ȝut so synguler by my-self · as to sight of þe puple,
Was non suche as my-self · ne non so [pope]holy, 37

† sometimes a
disciple of one
sect, and some-
times of another

Som tyme [in on] secte · som tyme [in] anoþer ;
In alle kynne couetyse · contreuēde how ich myghte
Be holde for holy · an hondred sithe, by þat encheison ;

B 226

Wilnede þat men wende · my werkes were þe beste, 41
And konnyngest of my craft · clerkes oþer oþere,

I boasted of my
strength,
good looks,

And strengest vp-on stede · and styuest vnder gurdell,
And louelokest to loken on · and lykyngest a bedde ;
And lykynges of such a lif · þat no lawe preyseþ, 45

fine voice,

Prout of my faire fetours · and for ich songe shulle.

and liberality.

And what ich gaf for godes loue · to god-sybbes ich
tolde,

Thei to wene þat ich were · wel holy and wel almesful,

32. *Me wilnynges*] such must be the true reading, though miswritten *Me wynnynge* I; *Me wilneþ* M; *Me wilned* PESG; *I willede* F. *It is merely a variation of Hym wilnynges* in B-text, xiii. 280 (footnote); cf. l. 41. [as IMFESG] P om. *aueyr*] auoir F (correctly); corrupted to an eyre E; noon oþur SG; maner I; i am nauȝt M.

33. *Riche*] Boþe riche S; Boþe riȝtful F. *ryghtful—lyuynges*] ryche with alle F.

34. *wyth*] wyt P.

35. *Auauntyng*] Vauntyng I. *vp-on my*] vp my I; in F. *vnder-nymynges*] vnder-nemynges P.

36. *synguler* I] syngeler P; syngler FS. *to*] to þe S. *þe*] I om.

37. [pope F] pop IMSEG; poppe E; pomp P. See B-text, xiii. 284.

38. [in on M] in o ISG; on an E; on oo F; on a P. *secte*] sith M. *som*] & sum FM. [in IFMSG] on PE.

40. *holde*] holden I; yholde EM.

for] hy & F. *an—sithe*] & honoured I. *an—encheison*] in hope to haue ȝiftus F.

41. *Wilnede*] Wilnynges I; And wilnede M.

42. *And*] And þe I. *of*] as of F. *clerkes—oþere*] of þe comune peple.

43. *stede*] stede-bac F; my stede P; but IMFSE omit my. Cf. B-text, xiii. 294. *styuest*] steffest I; steuest F; stiffest M.

44. *And louelokest*] Loueliest M. *on*] vp-on IMF. *lykyngest*] lykyngest P.

45. *lykynges of*] laiking in F. *þat*] as F.

46. *Prout*] Proude IEM; Prowd F. *fetours*] fetures IEM; feperus SF. *ich*] I om. *shulle*] schulle E; schille FS; shill M; schrille I.

47. *god-sybbes*] gossibbes IMS; gossipes F.

48. *Thei*] Þey IFMSEG; Ther or Thei P. *wel—almesful*] wellyng ful of almus F. *wel* (2)] MESG om.

And non so bold beggere · to bydden and craue ; 49 I was the boldest
Tales to telle · in tauernes and in stretes, of beggars,

Thyng þat neuere was þouht · and ȝut ich swor ich
sauh hit,

And lyed on my lykame · and on my lyf boȝe. 52

Of werkes þat ich wel dude · wittnesse ich take, boasting of my
And sygge to suche · þat sytten me by-syde, good deeds,

‘Lo, yf ȝe leyue me nouht · oȝer þat ȝe wene ich lye,
Aske of hym oȝer of hure · and þei conne ȝow telle 56

What ich soffrede and seiȝ · and som tyme hadde,
And what ich knew and couthe · [and] what kyn ich
kam of ;’—

Al ich wolde þat men wuste · when hit to pruyde B 227
sounede, wishing men to
know all about
me.

As to [be] preised a-mong þe puple · þauh ich poure
semede : 60

Si hominibus placerem, christi seruus non essem. Gal. i. 10.

Nemo potest duobus dominis seruire.” Mat. vi. 24.

“Now god of hus goodnesse · geue þe grace to
Amende,”

Quath repentaunce ryght with þat ; · And þenne roos
enuye.

49. *bold*] bold a I. *bydden*] beg-
gun S. *craue*] to craue IMF.

50. *to*] perfor to F. *in* (2)] M
om. *stretes*] strete F.

51. *Thyng*] Of þing F. *þouht*] þouhte P; y-thought I; i-wrouȝt M.
ich (1)] he (*wrongly*) I. *sauh*] say
IS.

52. *lyed*] M *om.*

53. *werkes*] dedus S. *wittnesse*] witnesses I. *ich take*] toke I; took
i S; to take MF.

54. *sygge*] sigge IF; syggen PM;
þan I seyde S. *suche*] suche folk F.
þat] as M.

55. *leyue*] leue IFSE; leueþ M.
me nouht] nouȝt me M. *oȝer—lye*] or þat I lie wenen I.

56. *Aske*] Askeþ IFS. *of*] at

IMFS (*twice*). *þei—ȝow*] þanne
cunne ȝe M.

57. *soffrede*] haue suffred F. *seiȝ*] si M; sayd S; seith I; y-seye F.
and] E *om.* *tyme*] tymes I.

58. *And*] M *om.* *knew—couthe*] couȝe and knewe I; knew & I cowde
F. [*and* MF] *and* of IS; of PE.
what] wat P. *kam*] com I.

59. *Al ich*] Of al he I. *sounede*
S] souned E; sownede F; sonede P;
souneth I; longeþ M.

60. M *omits.* & þus haue I lade
my lif · lord I cry þe mercy F. [*be*
ISEG] P *om.* *ich—semede*] he pore
seme I. *christi seruus*] seruus dei F.

61. *of*] for I.

62. *roos*] ros ES; aros IM.

A 55 B 61

CONFESSIO INUIDIE.

II. ENVY. Envy
confesses his
misdeeds.

† His clothes are
cursing and keen
words.

Enuye with heuy herte · asked after shrifte,
And criede ‘*mea culpa*’ · corsynge alle hus enemys. 64
Hus cloþes were of corsement · and of kene wordes ;
He wroth hus fust vp-on wratthe · hadde he wysshes
at wille,

Sholde no lyf lyuye · þat on hus londe passede.
Chidyng and Ianglyng · þat was hus chef lyfode, 68
And blame men by-hynde hure bak · and biðde hem
meschaunce.

B 227

He blamed men
behind their
backs.
He told Will’s
faults to Watkin.

Al þat he wiste by wyll · to watkyn he told hit,
And þat he wiste by watkyn · tolde hit wille after ;
And made foos of frendes · þorw fals and fykel tonge :
“Oþer þorw myghte of mouthe · oþer þorw meny
sleyghthes 73

B 228

“I fret myself
like a pair of
shears.

Venged me fele tyme[s] · oþer brend my-self with-ynne
Lyke a shappesters sheres · and shrewede myn em-
cristyne,

Aȝens þe consail of crist · as clerkes fynden in bokes :

Ps. x. 7.

*Cuius maledictione os plenum est & amaritudi-
tudine [& dolo]: sub lingua eius labor &
dolor.*

Ps. lvi. 5 (Vulg.).

*Filij hominum, dentes eorum arma & sagitte, &
lingua eorum gladius acutus.*

63. *heuy*] hi M.

65. *corsement*] curse-men I.

68. *wroth*] so also in IFMS; wrong
E. *hadde he*] he hadde M; hadde
I. *wysshes*] wysch F.

67. *lyuye*] lyue IE. *hus*] þis M.

68. *and*] or I. *Ianglyng* FM]
Iangleng P; Iangelyng S; yanglyng
E; chalangyng I. *þat was*] is M.

69. *biðde*] bad F.

70. *Al*] And M. *watkyn* IFSE]
watekyn P; wadekyn M; so in l. 71.

71. *þat*] al þat IE. *tolde*] he tolde
MFE. *hit*] hit to PE; but IMFS
omit to.

72. *foos—frendes*] of freendes foos

I. *fals—fykel*] fikel & fals I. *and*]
of E.

73. M omits. *Oþer*] & F. *mouthe*]
moneye F. *meny*] mannes I. *oþer*
—*meny*] & many mo F.

74. *fele*] vele I; many FG. *tymes*
IMSG] tyme PEF. *brend*] so E;
brent I; vrede F; vride S; wreþed
M; but the right word is fret; cf. B.
xiii. 330. *my-self*] me FMS.

75. *shappesters*] shapesters F;
shepsteres MI; schyppesteres ES.
sheres] shere MI. *emcristyne*] euen-
cristene IF.

76. [*& dolo*] FSM] PEI om.

Whenne ich ne may haue þe maistrie · suche malan-
colie ich take,

When I cannot
succeed, I catch
a cramp or an
ague;

þat ich cacche þe crampe · þe cardiacle som tyme,
Oper an ague in suche an angre · and som tyme a
feure,

þat takeþ me al a twelfmonthe · til þat ich dispice 80

Leche-craft of oure lorde · and leyue on a wicche,

And sigge þat no clerk can · ne crist, as ich leyue,

To þe souter of south-werk · such is hus grace.

and then I apply
for help to a
shoemaker of
Southwark.

For god, ne godes wordes · ne grace ne halp neuere, 84

Bote þow a charme hadde ich a chaunce · and my
chief hele.

Ich myghte nat ete meny 3er · as a man auhte,

B 63

For enuye and vuel wil · ys vuel to defye.

May no suger ne swete þyng · A-swage my swellynges, **A 57**

Can nothing
assuage my
indigestion?

Ne dereworthe drynke · dryuen hit fro myn herte, 89

Neyþer shame ne shrift · bote ho so shraped my mawe?"

"3us, redilyche," quath repentaunce · "and þow be
ryght sory,

Repentance bids
him be sorry.

For þy synne soueraynliche · by-sechyng god of
mercy."

"Ich am euere sory," sayde enuye · "ich am bote selde
oper;

A 58

"I am never
otherwise," said
he.

þat makeþ me so megre · for ich ne may me Auenge.

93

77. *Whenne*] And whan I; *Wenne*
P. *ne may*] mai nouȝt M. *ne—*
maistrie] may nat þe maistrie haue
I.

78. *þe* (2)] and þe M; & F.

79. *in suche*] with F. *an* (2)] I
om. som—feure] a feuour aftur F.

80. *twelfmonthe*] twelfmonnthe P.

81. *of*] or F. *leyue*] leue IFS;
bileue ME. *a*] E *om.*

82. *can*] ne can I. *leyue*] leue
IMFSE.

83. *To*] Bute M.

84. *ne* (1)] and M. *wordes*] worde
I. *ne halp*] halp me M; halp F; 3it
halpe me I.

85. *a* (2)] MIF *om.*

87. *vuel*] yuel IES; euel M; euyt
F.

88. *ne*] ne no I. *swellynges*] swell-
ing IF.

89. *Ne*] Ne no I; Ne non M.

90. *Neyþer*] Neneiþer I. *shraped*]
schrape F; schauded S.

91. *3us*] 3is F; Thus (*sic*) I. *and*]
3if F.

92. *synne*] synnes IMFS. *by-*
sechyng] and biseke IM. *of*] E *om.*
mercy] grace F.

93. *Ich—euere*] Euer am I F.
sayde] quod F. *am* (2)] nam I.

94. *þat*] And þat I. *me* (2)] F
om. Auenge] venge I.

3ut am ich brocor of bakbytynge · and blame mennes
ware 95

A-mong marchauns many tymes · nameliche in londoun ;

"I have often
lied against my
neighbour ; but
will try and make
amends."

Whanne he solde and ich noght · þenne was ich a-redy

To lye and to loury · and to lacke myn neghebores,

Here wërkes, here wordes · wher-so ich sete.

Now hit a-thynkeþ me in þouht · þat euere ich so
wrouhte ; 100

Lord, er ich lyf lete · for loue of þy-selue,

B 64

Graunte me, goode lorde · grace of amendement."

CONFESSIO IRE.

III. IRA. Wrath
comes, with two
white eyes.

Thenne a-waked wratthe · with to white eyen,

With a nyuylunge nose · nyppying hus lyppes. 104

† "I am Wrath,"
said he, "who
steal upon my
enemy."

"Ich am wratthe," quap þat wye · "wol gladliche smyte

Boþe with ston and with staf · and stele vp-on myn
enemy ;

For to slee hym slehliche · slehthes ich by-þenke.

Thauh ich sytte þys seuen 3er · ich sholde nat wel telle

The harme þat ich haue idon · with hand and with
tonge. 109

† I am often
impatient, and

Vnpacient in alle penaunces · and pleynd, as hit were,

95. 3ut] And 3ut M. *am ich*] i am
a M. *bakbytynge* SIMF] bagge-
bytynge PE. *blame*] to blame I.

96. *tymes*] tyme FM. *nameliche*]
and *nameliche* IMF.

97. *Whanne*] Wanne P. *he*] hy
E. *a-redy*] redy IFS.

98. *loury and*] loure on him F.
to lacke] lacke M. *myn neghebores*]
my neiebores M; ne3burhade F.

99. *Here*] & here F. *wërkes*]
werke I. *here*] and heore M; *with*
my F. *wher*] wer P. *so*] þat I.
sete] so also MFE; sette S; sitte I.

100. *in*] in my I.

101. *lyf*] þe lijf M. *lete*] leue I.

102. *of amendement*] to amende
F.

103. *with*] whit P. *to*] tweie I;
two ful F. *eyen*] eyhes I.

104. *With*] Whit P; And with
IMF. *nyuylunge*] nyuilinges I;
snyuelung SG.

105. *quap*] M *om. nye*] weie I;
weize M; wigt MF; wif (!) E. *wol*]
wolde M. *gladliche*] wilfulliche F.

106. *with*] whit P (*twice*). *and*
stele] stole S. *vp-on*] on M. *enemy*]
foman F.

107. *For*] & for F; I *om*.

108. *sytte*] sette S; sete IF. *sytte*
—3er] seune 3ere sete F. *wel*]
sothli F; M *om*.

109. *idon*] do IS. *with* (1)] wit
P. *with* (2)] whit P.

110. *Vnpacient*] Inpacient IS;
Nat pacient F. *alle*] F *om. pen-*
aunces] penaunce FS. *and*] but
F.

On god, whenne [me] greued ouht · and grucche[d] of repine at what
God sends.
 hus sonde,

As, som tyme in somer · and al-so in heruest, 112

Bote ich hadde wedir at my wil · ich wited god þe cause,

[In] alle manere angres · þat ich hadde oþer felede.

A-monges alle manere men · my dwelling ys som tyme,

With lered and with lewede · þat leef ben to hure 116

Harm of eny man · by-hynde oþer by-fore.

Freres [folowen] my vore · fele tyme and ofte,

And prouen vnparfit · prelates of holy church; ;

And prelates pleynen of hem · for þei here parshenes
 shryuen 120

With-oute lycence and leue · and herby lyueþ wratthe.

Thus þei speke and dispute · þat eche dispiseþ oþer.

Thus beggers and barouns · at debat aren ofte,

Til ich, wratth, waxe an hyh · and walke with hem
 bothe; 124

Oþer til boþe be beggers · and by spiritualte lybben,

Or alle riche þus ride · rest shal ich nauht, wratthe,

þat ich ne mot folwy þis folk · my fortune ys non oþer.

† I dwell with
men who delight
in harming
others, and with
friars and
prelates.

The prelates and
the friars are
wroth with one
another and
despise one
another.

B 65
I keep them
excited.

111. [me IMFEG] men PS.
greued] greueþ S. gruced IES]
gruchud M; gruchide G; grucche
PF.

112. As] And F. and—heruest]
in cesoun of heruest-tyme F.

113. wited] witte IM.

114. [In IMFSG] And PE. hadde]
abode F. felede] felte I; felde E;
hadde F.

116. With] Whit P. with] wit
P; IMFS om. lered—lewede] lewed
and lered I; lewed & lered boþe F.
leef FS] lef E; leue I; luf P. leef
ben] han wille M. hure] here
IMEF.

117. of eny] & hate of many F.
by-hynde] bi-hynde him M.

118. [folowen E] folowen M; fol-
wen I; folweþ SG; þei folwe F;
flowen P. vore] fore IS; foor F.
my vore] me forþ M; me by-fore
G.

119. prouen] profren E. vnparfit]
pure imparfit F.

120. of] on IMS. parshenes]
paresschenus S; parechenes E; paris-
chenes M; parisch F.

121. With] Whit P. and] oþur
F; or M.

122. eche] ichon I. þat eche] &
F. dispiseþ] spiseth IE.

123. beggers—barouns] beggers &
bischopus F; barouns and beggeres
M. at—aren] ben at debate F; at
þe bate buþ M; þe bate areren E.

124. ich] F om. walke] wagge S.

125. Oþer] F om. boþe] þai boþe
I; boþe of hem F. be] þe E. and
—spiritualte] and by spirituel I; or
spiritualiter F.

126. þus] and I. shał] ne schal
M. And or I ride on alle riche · I
reste me neuere F.

127. mot] moste M. þis] þat F.

One of my aunts
is a nun, and
another an
abbess.

Ich haue an Aunte to a nunne · and to an abbodesse ;
Hem were leuere swouny oþer swelte · þan suffry eny
peyne. 129

I was cook in
their kitchen.

Ich haue be cook in here kychene · And þe Couent
serued

Meny monthes with hem · and with monkes boþe.

Ich was þe prioresse potager · and oþer poure ladies,

I got up all
kinds of scandal.

And made here ioutes of iangles ; · ‘dame Iohane was
a bastarde, 133

And dame Clarice a knyghtes douhter · a cokewold
was hure syre,

Dame purnele a prestes file · prioresse worth hue neuere ;

For hue hadde a childe in the chapon-cote · hue worth
chalenged at eleccion.’ 136

The sisters
disputed till they
called each other
liars.

Thus þei sitte, þo sustres · som tyme, and disputen,

Til ‘þow lixt’ and ‘þow lixt’ · be lady ouer hem alle ;

And þenne a-wake ich, wratthe · and wold be auenged.

þanne ich crie and cracche · with my kene nailes, 140

Boþe byte and bete · and brynge forth suche þewes,

þat alle ladies me loþen · þat louen eny worschep.

† I sit in pews
with wives and
widows.

Among wyues and wodewes · ich am ywoned sitte

Yparroked in puwes ; · þe person hit knoweth 144

128. a] IMS *om.* *nunne*] *monchen*
E. *to* (2)] IF *om.* *abbodesse*] *abbesse* IFS; *abbasse* M.

129. *Hem*] *Hir* I; *Here* M.
leuere] *certus* *leuer* F. *swouny*] *sounye* P; *swony* E; *swowne* F; *swowe* I; *swoun* S; *to swoun* M.
oþer swelte] F *om.* *þan—peyne*] *ne*
suffre eny penaunce M.

130. *haue be*] *was* E.

132. *prioresse*] *prioresses* MS.

133. *here*] *hem* IF. *of*] *wiþ* M.
iangles] *iangelynge* IM. *dame*] *þat*
dame F. *Iohane*] *ione* IFM; *Ion*
S.

135. *Dame*] *And dame* IMF. *file*] *file* M; *sibbe* S; *pile* (!) E. *hue* S]
he PF; *sche* IM; 30 E.

136. a] IMFS *om.* *chapon*] *capoun*

EF; *capen* M. *hue — eleccion*] *chalanceable heo semeth* F.

137. *Thus—sustres*] *Before þe*
eleccioun þe sustrus sitte F. *þei—þo*] *sitte þey* I; *sitten to M.* *sustres*] *susteren* MS. *and*] & þus F.

138. *lixt* EIMFS] *luxt* P. *lady*] *ledere* F. *hem alle*] *boþe* M.

139. *And*] M *om.*

140. *þanne*] *And þanne* IMF.
kene] *longe* M.

141. *Boþe byte*] *Byte* I; *Bite boþe*
S. *bete*] *eke bete* F; *smyte* M.

142. *loþen*] *loþud* S. *worschep*] *hele* F.

143. *wyues*] *þe wyues* F. *ich am*] *am i* M. *ywoned*] *wont to* IFS;
wonet to M.

144. *þe—hit*] *as our parsoun* F.

How lytel ic louye · letice at þe style ;

For hue hadde haly bred er ich · myn herte by-gan to
chaunge.

† I fought with
Letice because
she received the
holy bread before
me.

After-ward after mete · hue and ich chidde,

And ich, wratth, was war · and wroth on hem boþ, 148

Til aiper [cleped opere 'hore'] · and of with þe cloþes,

Til boþe here heuedes were bar · and bloody here chekes.

A-mong monkes myght ich be · ac meny tyme ich
spare,

B 66
I rather shun
monks;

For þer beþ meny felle frekus · myne afferes to aspye ;

þat ys, þe priour and þe suppriour · and oure *pater*
abbas. 153

And yf ich telle eny tales · thei taken hem to-geders,

And don me faste fridaies · to bred and to water.

for priors and
abbots make one
do penance for
talebearing.

þut am ich chalenged in chapitele-hous · as ich a childe
were, 156

And baleysed [on] þe bar ers · and no breche by-
twyne.

Ich haue no lust, leyue me · to lenge a-mong monkes ;

145. *ic louye*] it is þat I loue F.
at þe] atte FI.

146. *by-gan*] gan IS.

147. *After-ward — mete*] After
mete aftirward I. *hue—ich*] Annot
& heo F.

148. *war*] i-war MF. *wroth*]
worþ M; warþ I; wax F.

149. [*cleped—hore* IMFSG] *cleped*
eiper opere (sic) E; *cliped opere* P.
of—cloþes] cast of here hoodus F;
on wiþ þe clawes I.

150. *here*] M om. *here* (2)] boþe
F.

151. *myght—be*] I mighte be I.
ich be] S om. *ac*] and M. *myght—*
spare] I am · many a tyme & ofte F.

152. *For*] M om. *þer beþ*] þer arn
IMS; þei ar F. *meny felle*] felle fers
F. *myne—to*] her ferus i F. *aspye*]
spie M.

153. *þe*] I om. (twice). *oure*] opere
M. F *has*—& put hem to þe priour ·
or ellus to pater abbas.

154—163. *For these*, F *has*—

With—oute loue or leaute · & lye
on hem with talus,
& make hem euer ete flesch · for
ech of hem ete opere.

þe wikkednesse þat I wiste · by
any of þe route,

I cowhed it up in our cloistre · þat
al þe couent wist it.

& ȝit I spak no speche · it swal so
my breste,

þat I chewed it as a cowe · þat
code chewith ofte.

þan was I chalenged in chapitre ·
as I childe were,

& balised on þe bare ers · & no
brech bitwene.

154. *yf*] ES om. *hem*] E om.

156. *chapitele*] oure chapitre I; þe
chapitele M; chapitre E.

157. *baleysed*] bylasched E; bete
G. [*on* IMFSG] in PE.

158. *leyue*] leue IME; lef S.
lenge] longe I; lyue M; dwelle E.

For hij eteþ more fisch þan flesh · and feble ale
drynken.

But when I can
get at the wine,
my tongue runs
fast indeed."

Ac oþer-while whanne wyn comeþ · and whenne ich
drynke late, 160

Ich haue a flux of a foul mouth · wel fyf dayes after.
Al þat ich wiste wickede · by eny of oure couent,
Ich cowede hit vp in oure cloistre · þat al þe Couent
wot hit."

"Repent," said
Repentance;

"Now repente þe," quað repentaunce · "and reherce
neuere 164

What counsail þat þow knowest · by contenaunce ne
by speche.

And drynk nat ouer delicatliche · ne to depe neiþer,
þat þy wil ne þy wit · to wratthe myghte turne.

B 67

"and keep your-
self sober."

Esto sobrius," he seide · and a-soiled hym after, 168
And bad hym bidde to god · be hus help to amende.

CONFESSIO LUXURIE.

A 55 B 60
IV. LECHERY.
Lechery repents,

Thenne seide lecherie 'alas!' · and to oure lady cryede,
"Lady, to þy leue sone · lowte for me nouth,
That he haue pyte on me putour · of hus pure grace
and mercy, 172

B 61

and vows hence-
forth to drink
only with the
ducks.

With þat ich shal," quath þat shrewe · "saterdayes, for
þy loue,

Drynke bote with þe douke · and dyne bote ones.

Ich, gulty in gost · to god ich me shryue

159. *hij eteþ*] I ete I. *drynken*]
drenken P; but see l. 166.

160. *while whanne*] wile wanne P.
whenne] wenne P. *drynke*] drenke
P. *late*] late an eue I.

161. *of*] or MS.

162. *Al*] And alle I. *wickede*]
wikke I.

163. *cowede*] coughede S; schewede
M; couþe I. *hit*] M om. *þe*] oure
MS.

164. *þe*] I om.

165. *What*] þat M; I om. *þat*] S
om. *ne by*] no F.

166. F omits. *depe*] dupe P.
neiþer] noþer ES.

167. FE omit.

168. *he*] y I. *hym*] hem S.

169. *be*] of M. *be—amende*] þat
he were amended F.

171. *to*] for M.

172. *putour*] putroure I; F om.
of] for MF. *grace and*] IMFS om.

173. *With*] Whit P. *saterdayes*]
saturday F. *þy loue*] þy moder loue
I; euere F.

174. *bote* (1)] M om.

175. *Ich*] For i F.

- As in lykynghe of lecherie · my licames gultes, 176 † He confesses
his many sins,
In wordes, in wedes · in waitynghe of eyen.
To eche maide *pat* ich mette · ich made hure a sygne **B 228**
Semynghe to synne-warde · and somme gan ich taste
A-boute *pe* mouthe, and by-nythe · by-gan ich to grope,
Til oure boþers wil was on ; · to werke we 3eden 181
As wel fastyngdaies [*as*] frydaies · and heye-feste euenes, **B 220**
As luf in lente as oute of lente · alle tymes liche—
Suche werkus *with* ous · were neuere out of seson— which with him
were never out
Til we myghte no more ; · *panne* hadde we murye tales of season.
Of puterie and of paramours · and proueden þorw
speches; 186
Handlynghe and halsynghe · and al-so þorw cussynghe
Excitynghe oure aiper oþer · til oure olde synne ;
Sotiledede songes · and sende out olde baudes
For to wynne to my wil · wommen with gyle ; 190 † “I won women
over with guile
or sorcery.
By sorcerye som tyme · and som tyme by maistrye.
Ich lay by *pe* louelokeste · and loued hem neuere after.
Whenne ich was old and hor · and hadde lore *pat* † In my old age,
I loved ribald
tales.”
kynde, 193
Ich had lykynghe to lauhe · of [lecherous] tales.
Now, lord, for þy leaute · of lechours haue mercy ! ”

177. *wordes*] worde and I. *in* (3)]
on I.

178. *To eche*] To eche a F; For
ich a I. *hure*] to hure P; but IMF
SE omit to.

179. *gan ich*] I gan I.

180. *pe*] F om. *by-gan*] gan S.

181. *oure boþers*] boþe oure IM.
boþers] beþur F; beyres E; boþe
IMS. *to*] & to S; and to þe I.

182. *As wel*] F om. [*as* IE] and
PFSG. *as frydaies*] M om. *heye*] eye P; heie I; hi M; hye F.
euenes] eues MFE.

183. *As*] And M. *luf*] lef E; lief I; leef FS; wel M. *tymes*] tyme IM. *liche*] yliche IMS.

186. and (1)] F om. *proueden þorw*] perelous F. *speches*] speche

IM.

187. *Handlynghe*] And handelyng
I. *also—cussynghe*] hory kysyngus
F.

188. *oure* (1)] ous S; IM om.
oure (2)] I om. *olde* IFSE] elde M;
holde P.

189. *sende*] sente IMF.

190. *For*] I om.

191. *som—maistrye*] alle suche
sleightus F.

192. *hem*] hir I.

193. *lore*] y-lore I; i-lorn M; lost
F.

194. *lauhe*] lauþe E; lauþe S;
liþe M; lithe I. [*lecherous* MF]
lecherye PIES; lecheryes G.

195. *for*] of S. *of*] on IMF.

A 58 B 67

CONFESSIO AUARICIE.

V. AVARICE.
Then came
Avarice,

Thenne cam couetyse · ich can nat hym diseryue, 196
So hongerliche and so holwe · heruy hym-self lokede.
He was bytelbrowed and baberlupped · with two
blery eyen,

And as a leperene pors · lollid hus chekus,
[Wel] sydder þan hys chyn · ychiueled for elde: 200

with a beard cut
smooth like a
bondman's piece
of bacon,
and a torn and
threadbare coat.

As bondemenne bacon · hus berd was yshaue,
With hus hod on his heued · and hus hatte boþe;
In a toren tabarde · of twelue wynter age;
[But 3if a lous coupe lepe · I leue hit, as y trowe, 204
He scholde not wandre on þat welch · so was hit
prede-bare.]

"I acknowledge I
am covetous, for
I once served Sim
at the Stile,

"Ich haue be coueitous," quap þis caityf · "Ich by-
know hit here.

For som tyme ich serued · symme at þe style, 207
And was his prentys yplyght · hus profyt to waite.

where I learnt
lying and false
weights.

Furst ich lerned to lye · a lesyng oper tweye;
Wickedliche to weye · was my furst lesson.

B 68

I went to
Winchester and
Weyhill fair, and

To wy and to winchestre · ich wente to þe faire
With many [maner] marchandises · as my [maister]
heghte; 212

196. *Thenne*] And þanne F.

197. *hongerliche*] hongri MF.
and] an P; I om. *so*] IMFS om.
heruy hym-self] sir heruy him I;
syr heruy he F. *heruy—lokede*] heruy was his name M.

198. *He nas*] F om. *bytelbrowed*] Bittur-browed F. *with*] whit P.
tweye] I. *blery*] blered IMFS.

199. *a*] S om.

200. [Wel IMFSEG] Al P. *hys*] ys P. *ychiueled*] he chyuelede F;
i-reueled M.

201. *As*] As a M; And as a I.
bondemenne] bedemones M.

202. *With*] Whit P.

204, 205. *From* S; also in IMFG;
PE omit.

204. *coupe*] I om. *hit*] IM om.

as] I om.

205. *not*] I om. *wandre*] walke
M. *on*] vp I. *welch*] walk I; welþe
F; cloþ G.

206. *þis caityf*] þat caitif M; þe
caytif E; heo F.

207. *at þe*] atte F; at S.

208. *his*] is P. *yplyght*] truþe-
plith M. *waite*] awayte S.

209. *lesyng*] lees I. *a—tweye*] and leuyng al truþe M.

210. *to*] for to F. *weye*] wyne
M. *furst*] S om.

211. *wy*] þe weo M. *ich wente*] went i F. *wente*] wende E.

212. [maner MIFSEG] P om.
marchandises] marchandise IF.
[maister MIFSEG] maistres P.

Ne hadde þe grace of gyle · gon among my ware,
Hit hadde ben vnsold þys seuen 3er · so me god helpe!

sold my wares by
cheating.

Ich drow me among drapers · my donet to lerne,

A 59

Then I went to
the drapers, and
learnt from them
false measure.

To drawe þe lisure a-longe · þe lenger it semed. 216

Among þe riche rayes · ich rendred a lesson,

To brochen hem with a batte-nelde · and bond hem to-
gederes;

There I learnt to
fasten pieces of
stuff together,
and press them
out till they
seemed longer.

Ich putte hem in pressours · and pynned hem þer-
ynne,

Tyl ten [3erdes] oþer twelue · tilled out þrettyne. 220

My wif was a webbe · and wollen cloþ made;

My wife made
woollen cloth,
and paid for it by
false weight.

Hue spak to þe spynnesters · to spynnen hit oute.

þe pound þat hue paiede hem by · peysed a quarter

More þan myn Auncel · whenne ich weied treuthe. 224

Ich bouhte hure barliche · hue brew hit to selle,

She brewed
barley, and
made mixed
drinks for poor
people,

Peny-ale and podyng-ale · hue pourede to-geders,

For laborers and lowe folke · that laye by hem-selue.

The beste laye in my bour · and in my bed-chambre,

And [who] so bommede þer-of · he bouht yt þer-after,

A galon for a grote · and 3ut no grayþ mesure,

B 69

and sold ale
at a groat a
gallon.
Her name is Rose
the regrater."

Whanne it cam in coppe-mel; · þis craft my wif vside.

Rose þe regratour · was hure ryght name;

232

Hue hath yholde hockerye · þis eleuene wynter."

213. þe] F om.

214. hadde—vnsold] nad be sold
F.

215. Ich drow me] þan drogh I
me I. among] to F. lerne] lere I.

216. lisure] lesure E; liste M.

218. hem (1)] S om. batte-nelde]
batnedele I; paknelde M; packe-
nedle SF. bond] bynde F; band I.

219. Ich] And S; IMF om.
hem (1)] E om. pressours] a pres-
sour I. pynned] pennede M; pynne
F. þer-ynne] with-ynne F.

220. [3erdes IMFSE] 3orde P.
twelue] miswritten twlue P; tewlue
S. tilled] so FMSE; tolde I. out]
hem E.

222. Hue] 3o E; Sche M; Heo F;

And I. spynnesters] spinnere M.
hit oute] here oute M; hit softe F.

223. hue] I F; cf. l. 222.

224. Auncel] auncer MIS. whenne]
wenne P. weied] way F.

225. hue] sche IMFS; 3o E; so in
ll. 226, 233. to selle] here selue F.

226. F omits. pourede] putte M.

227. F omits. lowe folke] loopfolde
M. hem-selue] hym-silue E.

228. The beste] Ac þe best ale I.

229. [who IMFSG] PE om.

230. grayþ] gret M.

231. Whanne] Wanne P. in] on I.

233. hath] hadde I. hockerye]
hukkerye F; huckustrye S. þis] al
þis F; þes P. eleuene] endeleyen I;
enleuene M; elleue E; enleue S.

"Have you never made restitution?" — "Repentest þow neuere?" quap repentaunce · "ne restitution madest?" said Repentance.

"3us, ones," quap he, "ich was yherborwed · with an hep of chapmen ;

"Yes; I once rifled some pedlars' packs." — Ich a-ros and rifled here males · whenne þei a reste were." 236

"þat was a reufol restitution" · quap repentaunce, "for soþe ;

Thow wolt hongy heye þer-fore · her oþer in helle !

"Did you ever lend on usury?" — Vsedest þow euere vserie · in al þy lyf-tyme?"

B 70 "Nay, sothliche," he sayde · "saf in my 3oupe. 240

"Only in my youth, when I Ich lerned among lombardes · a lesson, and of Iewes,

learnt to clip coin. To weie pans with a peis · and pared þe heuyeste, And lente for loue of þe wed · þe whiche ich let betere,

And more worth þan þe moneye · oþer men þat ich lenede. 244

I lent to such as were careless of their money. Ich lenede folk þat lese wolde · a lippe in eche noble, And with lombardes letters · ich lenede gold at rome ; So what bern of me borwed · he bouhte þe tyme."

"Lenedest þow euere to eny lorde · for loue of menteynaunce?" 248

"Ich haue ylent to lordes and to ladies · þat louede me neuere after.

234. *Repentest þow*] Rependestow I. *madest*] made F.

235. *he* IM] hue PS; 30 E; heo F. *with*] among M.

236. *a-ros*] ros IS; roos F. *males*] ware S. *a*] on M; at I; in E.

237. *a*] F om. *a reufol*] an vn-ristful M.

238. *hongy*] honge MES; hange F; be honged I.

239. *Vsedest þow*] Vsedestow I. *þow euere*] euer þou E; euere M.

240. *he* IME] hue PS; heo F.

241. *among*] of F; among þe M.

242. *pared*] pare MF. *heuyeste*] heuye F.

243. *lente*] lene F.

244. *lenede*] lenede or lonede P; lened ES; leened F; lente M.

245. *lenede*] lenede or lonede P; lonede or louede F; lene I; lened E; lenede S; lente M. *wolde*] wole I. *in eche*] of ich a I.

246. *ich*] IS om. *lenede*] lente FM; lene I. *at*] to I.

247. *bern*] so E; barn MSF; buyrn I. *borwed*] borwe M.

248. *Lenedest*] Lentest MFS; Lenest E. *þow*] I om. *to*] I om. *of*] of his I. *menteynaunce*] mayntenance I.

249. *ylen*] lent IFS. *to*] IM om. (*twice*). *and—ladies*] F om. *me*] M om.

Ich haue mad meny [a] knyght · boþe mercer and
draper, I have made
knights mercers
and drapers."

Payede neuere for here prentishode · nauht a payre
gloues ;

þat chaffared with my chyuesaunce · cheuede selde
after." 252

"Now redelich," quap repentaunce · "and by þe rode, **B 71**
ich leyue,

Shal neuere executor wel by-sette · þe suluer þat þow
hym leuest, "I believe that
your heirs will
have no joy with
your winnings."

Ne þyn ayres, as ich hope · haue ioie of þat þow wan.
For þe pope and alle hus penetauncers · power hem
faylleþ, 256

To a-soyle þe of þy synnes · *sine restitutione* ; **B 72**
*Nunquam dimittitur peccatum, nisi restituatur
ablatum."*

"With false wordes and wittes · ich haue wonne my
goodes, + "I made my
winnings by
guile," said he.

And with gyle and glosynge · gadered þat ich haue,
Meddled my marchaundise · and mad a good **B 229**
moustre ;

The werst lay with-ynne · a gret wit ich let hit. 261

And yf my neyh3ebore hadde an hyne · oþer eny best
ellys "If my neigh-
bour had what I
wanted, I stole it.

More profitable þan myn · ich made meny wentes,

250. *Ich—mad*] And i haue mad
MSF; And haue y-made I. [a
EIMS] PF om.

251. *Payede*] þat payede S; þat
made F. *neuere*] F om. *here*] his
I; M om. *nauht*] nat 3eue (!) F.
payre] payere P; paire I; peire
MFSE.

252. *chaffared*] chaffaren M.
chyuesaunce] cheuyssances I. *che-
uede*] þryuen M. *selde*] euel F.

253. *leyue*] leue IMFSE.

254. *executor*] secutour I; seke-
tour SF. *wel*] F om. *suluer*] siluer
IF; seluer ME. *hym*] MF om.

255. *ayres*] eyres EMS; heires
IF; ayeres P. *wan*] wonne MI;
weldest F.

256. *For*] F om. *alle*] MF om.

257. *synnes*] synne I.

258. *wittes*] weyhtes I; wyȝtus F.
ich haue] haue i I.

259. *gyle and*] S om. *gadered*] i-
gadered MI.

260. *moustre*] maystre S.

261. *a*] and M. *let hit*] hit lette
M; heeld hit S.

262. *And*] F om. *hadde*] haue S.
an] eny M.

How ich myght haue hit · al my wit ich caste. 264
And bote ich hadde hit by [oper wey] · atte laste ich
stal hit,

Oper pryuyliche hus pors shok · vnpiked hus lokes.
And yf ich zede to þe plouh · ich pynchede on hus
half acra,

B 230

In ploughing, I
took a piece of
his field.

þat a fot londe oper a forwe · fecchen ich wolde, 268
Of my neyh3eboris next · nymen of hus erthe.

And yf y repe, ouere-reche · oper 3af hem red þat repen
To sese to me with here sykel : þat ich sew neuere.

At mass, I only
mourned over
my losses.

In halydayes at holy churche · whenne ich hurde messe,
Ich hadde neuere [wil] witerlich · to by-seche mercy
For my mysdedes · þat ich ne mornede ofter 274
For lost of good, leyue me · þen for lycames gultes.
þauh ich dedliche synne dude · ich dradde hit nat so
sore 276

As whenne ich lenede and leyuede hit lost · oper longe
er hit were paid.

B 231

If I sent my
servants abroad,

And yf [ich] sente ouer see · my seruauunt to brugges,
Oper in-to prus my prentys · my profit to a-waite, 279
To marchaunde with monye · and maken here eschaunge,
Myghte neuere man comforty me · in þe meyn tyme,

264. *How*] & how F. *hit*] hym
S. *ich*] I om.

265. *And*] F om. *hadde hit*] it
hadde IFS. [*oper wey* IMFSG] *opes*
a-way PE; see B-text, xiii. 367.

266. *vnpiked*] and *vnpiked* IMS.

267. *And—þe*] & *atte* F. *on*] vp-
on F.

269. *nymen*] and *nymen* MF.

270. *And*] Or F. *repe*] so ES;
rope F; raape I; ripe M. *oper*] and
M. *þat repen*] so EMS; to *repe* I;
þat wrouzten F. (*But we should*
rather read rope, ropen, as in B-text,
xiii. 374.)

271. *sew*] ne sewe I.

272. *In*] On MS. *whenne*] wenne
P. *messe*] þe masse E.

273. [*wil* IMFSE] wit G; P om.
to] forte M. *to—mercy*] mercy to

beseche F.

274. *ofter*] after IES (*wrongly*).

275. *lost*] losse I. *leyue*] more
leeue I; leef MF; lef S. *leyue me*] by
loue (!) E. *lycames*] my licam F.

276. *þauh*] Whan M. *dude*] so
ESM; dede IF.

277. *lenede*] lente IMF. *leyuede*] leue
S; M om. *oper—paid*] or hit
were longe vnpaid M.

278. [*ich* ESIFG] PM om. *see*] þe
se M. *to*] in-to F. *brugges*] bruges
S; brigges MFE.

279. *in-to*] in I. *prus*] pruyys-lond
I; spruce FE; spruys M; spris S.
a-waite] auaille M.

280. *To*] So to I. *with*] with my
IF. *here*] þere M. *eschaunge*] es-
changez I.

281. *man—me*] me comforte I.

Neiper matyns ne masse · ne opere manere syghtes,
 And neuere penaunse performede · ne *pater-noster* seyde,
 That my mynde ne was · more in my goodes 284
 þan in godes grace · And hus grete myghte.

Ubi thesaurus tuus, ibi [g] cor tuum."

I kept thinking
 about my bar-
 gains at prayer-
 time."

Mat. vi. 21.

"Now redeliche," quap repentaunce · "ich haue reuthe
 of þy lyuynge.

Were ich a frere, in good faith · for al þe gold on erthe
 Ich nolde cope me with þy catell · ne oure [kirke]
 amende, 288

B 71
 "Were I a
 friar," said
 Repentance, "I
 would not touch a
 penny of yours.

Ne take a meles mete of þyne · And myn herte hit wiste
 þat þow were such as þow seist; · ich sholde rapere
 sterue:

Melius est mori quam male uiuere.

Ich rede no faithful frere · at þy feste sytte; 291

þut were me leuere, by oure lord · lyue by welle-carse[s]
 þan haue my fode and my fyndynge · of false menne
 wynnynge:

† I had rather
 eat only water-
 crasses than
 receive money got
 by cheating.

Seruus es alterius · cum fercula pingua queris,

Pane tuo potius · uescere, liber eris. 295

Thow art an vnkynde creature · ich can þe nat assoyle
 Tyl þow haue ymad, by þy myght · to alle men resti-
 tucion;

B 72
 I cannot absolve
 you till you make
 restitution.

For alle þat hauen of þy good · (haue god my treuthe!)

Beep holden at þe hye dome · to helpe the restitue. 299

All who touch
 your money must

282. *ne*] *noper* E. *opere*] no I.

283. *And*] Ne IM. *pater-noster*] M om.

284. *in*] on MF. *goodes*] goodes, in a dowte I.

285. *in*] on F. *godes grace*] þe grace of my god I. *And*] or in M; or of F; and in I. *myghte*] trewþe F. *Ubi*] Vbi est M. [*g*] MFE] PSIG om. *tuum*] tuum est M.

286. *ich*] I om. *ich—reuthe*] I rewe F. *of*] on I.

288. *nolde*] ne wolde IM. [*kirke*] IMF] churche PS; churches E.

290. *þat*] And F; I om.

291. *no*] þat no E. *faithful*]

faithful P.

292. *þut*] Hit M. *lyue*] leue al I. *carses* EG] *carsus* S; *carse* P; *kersus* F; *cresses* I. *lyue* — *carses*] ete water-crasses M.

293. *my* (2)] F om. *fyndynge*] fedyng M. *menne*] mannes I; menes M.

294. *fercula*] fercucula P.

296. *art* IMFS] ert PE. *þe nat*] nouzt þe M.

299. *Beep*] Ben EM; Is IFS. *holden*] i-holde M; haldyng I; holdyng F. *restitue*] to restitue S; restituere E.

make restitution
at the last day."

The preest þat þy tythe takeþ · trowe ich non oþer,
Shal parte with þe in purgatorie · and help paye þy
dette, 301

Yf he wist þow were suche · when he reseuyde þyn
offrynge.

Ps. li. 6
(l. 8. Vulg.).

What lede leyueþ þat ich lye · loke in þe sauter glosed
On *ecce enim ueritatem dilexisti*.

Ther he shal wite witerliche · what vsure is to mene,
And what penaunce þe prest shal haue · þat prout is of
[þi tythes]. 305

For an hore of hure ers-wynnynge · may hardiloker
tythe

þan an erraunt vsurer · (haue god my treuthe!)
And erest shal come to heuene · by cryst þat me made!"

A 65 B 82

† Then was there
a penitent
Welshman,
named Evan
Yield-again,

Then was þer a walishman · was wonderliche sory, 309

He highte 'zyuan ʒeld-aʒeyn · if ich so moche haue,
Al þat ich wickeddelich wan · sytthen ich [wit] hadde ;
And þauh my liflode lacke · leten ich nelle, 312
þat ech man shal haue hus · er ich hennes wende.

† who preferred
poverty to loss of
heaven.

For me ys leuere in this lif · as a lorel beggen,
þan in lysse to lyue · and lese lyf and soule.'

Robert the
robber thought
to make restitu-

Robert þe ryfeler · on *reddite* lokede, 316
And for þer was nat wher-with · he wepte ful sore ;

300. *The*] ʒe þe I. *takeþ*] took I.
trowe] ne trowe M.

301. *paye*] to paie MFS.

302. *þow*] þat þow M. *when*] wen
P. *he*] M om. *reseuyde*] receyueth
F.

303. *What*] And what I. *leyueþ*] leueþ MFSE. *On*] Lo I aleie F ; I
om.

304. *Ther*] And þer I. *he shal*] schal he I ; ʒe mowe M.

305. *what*] I om. *prout*] prut E ;
proud MFS. [þi *tythes*] þi tiþus F ;
þe tethes P ; þe teþs E ; his tiþes
MS ; cf. l. 300.

306. *For*—wynnynge] & for pu-
teynes of here yuel wynnyng E.
wynnynge] F om.

307. *an erraunt*] a comune E ; an
(*sic*) I.

309. *walishman*] walsch man IF ;
walsman M.

310. *He*] IMFS om. *zyuan*] ʒeuan
IMFS. *ich*] I om.

311. *wan*] gat M. [wit G] witt E ;
wyt S ; witte I ; hit PMF. *hadde*] haue F.

312. *And*] F om. *leten*] lyuen S.
nelle] ne wile M ; wille (!) F.

313. *þat*] & F. *shal*] ne schal I.

314. *this*] my F.

315. *lysse*] liking F ; blisse E.

316. *ryfeler*] riflere þo F.

317. *þer*] þat þer S. *was*] nas I.
ful] wonder I ; wel M.

And 3ut þat synful shrewe · seide to heuene,
 “Crist, þat on caluarye · on þe croys deidest,
 Tho Dismas my broþer · by-souhte þe of grace, 320
 And haddest mercy on þat man · for *memento* sake,
 So rewe on me, Roberd · þat *reddere* ne haue,
 Ne neuere wene to wynne · with craft þat ich
 knowe.

tion, and prayed
 to Christ, saying,
 “Christ, that
 saved Dismas
 on the cross,

have mercy upon
 me!”

For þy muchel mercy · mytigacion ich by-seche, 324
 Dampne me nouht at domys day · for þat ich dude **B 83**
 so ille.”

What by-fel of þis felon · ich can nouht faire shewe ;
 Wel ich wot he wepte faste · water with hus eyen,
 And to crist knowlechede · hus coupe 3ut eft-sone, 328
 þat penaunce hus pyk-staf · he wolde polische newe,
 For he hadde leye by *latro* · lucifers aunte.

What became of
 him I know not ;
 yet he wept sore,

A 66
 and vowed
 penitence.

“By þe rode,” quap repentaunce · “þow romest toward
 heuene, 331

† Repentance
 comforts him.

By so þat hit be in þyn herte · as ich hure þy tonge.
 Trist in his mochel mercy · and 3ut myght þow be
 saued.

For al þe wrecchednesse of þis worlde · and wickede
 dedes

B 72
 “Man’s sin is to
 God’s mercy like
 a spark of fire
 in the Thames.”

Fareþ as a fonk of fuyr · þat ful a-myde temese,
 And deide for a drop of water ; · so doþ alle synnes
 Of alle manere men · þat with good wille 337

318. *And 3ut*] Ac M; Ac 3it I.
seide to] saide to the I; criede vp to
 M. *to heuene*] with soor herte F.

320. *þe*] 3ou I.

321. *on*] vpon I. *memento*] me-
 mento his I.

322. *on—Roberd*] vpon Robert I.

323. *with*] wit P. *craft*] werk F.
knowe EIMFS] *miswritten* kowe P.

325. *þat*] M om.

326. *of*] on F.

327. *with*] wit P. *eyen*] yes I;
 yen S.

328. *to—knowlechede*] knowleched
 to crist I. *hus coupe*] in care F.
3ut] M om.

329. *penaunce*] repentance I. *he*]
 M om. *polische*] pulsche FS.

330. *lucifers*] was lucifers F.

332. *By*] MF om. *þat—be*] þow
 haue it F; hit be S. *hure*] here
 IMFS. *þy*] in þi F.

333. *and*] an P. *myght þow*] þow
 my3t MI; maistow F.

334. *wrecchednesse*] wrecchede F.

335. *a*] F om. *fonk*] flonke I.
fuyr] þe fuyre F. *ful*] fil IF.

336. *And deide*] Deieþ M. *for*]
 wiþ I. *of*] I om. *so*] and so M.

337. *men*] of men I; men of moolde
 F. *with*] with a F; wiþ a M.

Confessen hem and crien mercy · shullen neuere come
in helle.

B 73

*Omnis iniquitas quoad misericordiam dei est
quasi sintilla in medio maris.*

Repente þe anon," quap repentaunce · ryzt so to þe
vsurer,

"Give up your
trading," said
Repentance.

"And haue hus mercy in þy mynde · and marchaun-
dise, leue hit ; 340

For þow hast no good, by good faith ! · to bygge þe
with a wastell.

"That which you
won, you won
falsely.

The good þat þow hauest ygete · by-gan al with fals-
hede ;

As longe as þow lyuest þer-with · þow zeldest nat, bote
borwest.

If you know not
whom to repay,
give your money
to the bishop.

And yf þow wite neuere to wham · ne where [to]
restitute, 344

Bere hit to þe bischop · and bid hym of hus grace,
To by-setten hit hym-selue · as best be for þy soule ;

He shall answer
for you."

For he shal answer for þe · at þe hye dome,
For þe and for meny mo · þat man shal zeue rekenynge,
What he lerede þow to lyue with · and to lette þow fro
þufþe." 349

(A 60)**VI. GLUTTONY.****CONFESSIO GULE.**

Glutton goes to
church to confess,

Now by-gynneþ gloton · for to go to shryfte,
And kayres hym to-kirke-ward · hus coupe to shewe.

338. *crien*] *crien* him I. *crien*
mercy] *mercy* crie F.

339. *ryzt—vsurer*] & ryzt so go to
schrifte F. *so*] IG *om.* *to þe*] þou S.

340. PE *place* haue *after* mynde.
leue hit] þou leue F.

341. *hast*] ne hast M. *by*] in F.
bygge] gete I ; *this improves the*
alliteration, but appears rather to
belong to the next line. *þe*] S *om.*

342. *The*] For þe I. *ygete*] gete I ;
geten M. *falschede*] falsnesse M ;
false S.

343. *As*] And as I. *bote*] bote
þow P ; *but* IMFSE *omit* þow.

344. [*to* IMFSG] þow sholde P ;
þou shalt E.

345. *þe*] thy I ; þi M. *bid* IMF]
bide PS ; bidde E.

346. *be*] is M. *þy*] þe EM.

348. *þat—zeue*] he schal make F.
rekenynge] a rekenyng I.

349. *lerede*] lefte F ; lernede MS.
and to] & F ; to M. *þufþe*] þefte
IFS ; synne M.

351. *kayres*] carieb M ; caries I ;
karyuþ S. *kirke* IMF] church PES
(*which loses the alliteration.*) *coupe*]
synnes M.

Fastyng on a fryday · forth gan he wende 352 but on the way
 By betone hous þe brewestere · þat bad hym good
 morwe,
 Beton the
 brewster hails
 him.

And whederwarde he wolde · þe brew-wif hym asked.
 "To holy church," quap he · "for to hure masse, 355
 And sitthen sitte and be yshriuen · and synwe na-
 more."

"Ich haue good Ale, godsyb · gloton, wolt þow assaye?"

"What hauest þow," quap he · "eny hote spices?"

"Ich haue piper and pionys · and a pound of garlik,
 A ferthyng-worth of fynkelsede · for fasting-daies."

Thenne goþ gloton yn · and grete oþes after. 361
 Sesse þe sywestere · sat on þe benche,
 Watte þe warynere · and hus wif dronke,
 Thomme þe tynkere · and tweye of hus knaues, 364

Hicke [þe] hakeneyman · and houwe þe neldere,
 Claryce of cockeslane · the clerk of þe church,
 Syre peeres of prydie · and purnel of flaundes,
 An haywarde and an heremyte · þe hangeman of
 tyborne, 368

Dauwe þe dykere · with a dosen harlotes

Of portours and of pykeporses · and pylede top-drawers,

B 74
 She offers him
 ale; he asks if it
 is spiced; she
 says, yes.

Glutton goes in.
 There were Cis
 the sempstress,
 Wat the warrener,
 Tom the tinker,

A 61
 Hick the horse-
 dealer, Hugh the
 needle-seller,
 Clarice of Cock
 lane, the clerk
 of the church,
 Sir Piers of
 Pridie, Pernel of
 Flanders,

353. *betone*] *betone* or *betene* P; *betoun* E; *betouns* I; *betonus* FS; *betenes* M.

354. *brew-wif*] *goode wif* E.

355. *To*] Go to (*wrongly*) S. *he*] *he þo* F. *for—hure*] to here my I.

356. *yshriuen*] *yschreuen* P. *synwe*] *so in* PS; *synge* MF; *synny* E; *synne* I.

357. *godsyb—þow*] *quod heo þo* · *gode gossip* F. *þow*] M *om.*

358. *What*] *What herke* F; I *om.*

359. *pionys*] *pyonye* I; *pyonis* *quod heo* F. *of*] I *om.*

360. *ferthyng*] *fertheng* P. *fynkel*] *fenel* I; *fenel* MF; *fynel* S. *daies*] *dayes y boght it* I.

361. *Thenne*] & *þan* F. *and*] *an* P.

362. *Sesse*] *Cesse* IMS; & *sesse* F.

sywestere] *sowester* E; *sewestare* M; *sewestre* S; *soustere* F; *Souters* I.

363. *warynere*] *warnar* IMFSE.

364. *tweye—hus*] and his *twelue* M; & his *two* F.

365. [þe IMFSG] PE *om.*; see 1. 378. *houwe*] *howe* I; *huwe* M; *hue* E; *heruy* FS. *þe*] *hus* S. *neldere*] *nedelere* MFIS; *nedlere* E.

366. *cockeslane*] *coklane* E; *kuck-ustlone* M. *the*] and *þe* IM.

367. *peeres—prydie*] *peraunt þe* *proowe* F.

368. *and*] IF *om.*

369. I *omits.* *dosen*] *doseyn* of M.

370. M *om.* and (1)] F *om.* *of*] I *om.* *pykeporses*] *pykeporses* P; *pikporses* E; *pyke-purses* IS; *pike-purs* F. *and* (2)] of F; and of I.

a ribibe-player, a
ratcatcher, and
many others,
who all welcomed
Giutton.

A rybibour and a ratoner · a rakere and hus knaue,
A ropere and a redyngkyng · and rose þe disshere, 372
Godefray þe garlek-mongere · and griffyn þe walish;
And of vp-holders an heþ · erly by þe morwe
Geuen gloton with glad chere · good ale to hansele.

Clement the
cobler offers to
barter his cloak,
and Hick the
horsedealer his
hood.

Clemment þe cobelere · cast of hus cloke, 376
And to þe newe fayre · nempned hit to selle.
Hicke þe hakeneyman · hitte hus hod after,
And bad bette [þe] bouchere · to be on hus syde.
Ther were chapmen y-chose · þe chaffare to preise; 380
þat he þat hadde þe hod · sholde nat habbe þe cloke;
þe betere þyng, by arbytours · sholde bote þe werse.

B 75

Then two of
them rose
together, and
chaffered, and
disputed.

Two rysen rapliche · and rounede to-geders,
And preysed þe penyworthes · apart by hem-selue, 384
And þer were oþes an hepe · for oþer sholde haue þe
werse.

Robin the
roper is made
A 62
umpire,
who decided that
Hick should have
the cloak, and
Clement have
the hood and fill
the cup.

þei couthe nouht by here conscience · a-corde for treuthe,
Tyl Robyn þe ropere · aryse þei bysouhte,
And nempned hym a nompeyr · þat no debate were.
Hicke þe hakeneyman · hadde þe Cloke, 389
In couenaunt þat clemment · sholde þe coppe fylle,
And haue þe hakeneymannes hod · and hold hym
y-serued;

371, 372. E omits last half of l.
371, and first half of l. 372.

371. and (1)] IMF om.

372. ropere] ropere or repere P;
but see l. 387. and (1)] MF om.

373. þe (1)] F om. griffyn] grif-
fith IS. walish] walsche EFIM.

374. erly] herly P.

375. glad] good M. chere IMFSE]
chire P. good IME] goud PS. good
—hansele] galonus of ale F. han-
sele] ansele P.

376. Clemment] þo clement F.

377. newe IMFES] nywe P. hit]
forþ I.

379. [þe IMFSE] P om. to] MF
om.

380. Ther] Ðo F. þe] þis I.

381. he þat] who so I.

382. Þe] & þat þe I. arbytours]
arbitroures MIFS.

383. Two rysen] Ðo rysen two F;
Tweyne arisen M; To risen vp I.
rapliche] rape I.

384. þe] þise I.

385. And] M om. for oþer] for
on IS; for oon F; for þe oþer E;
wheþer M.

388. a] for a I. nompeyr] noun-
pere F.

389. hakeneyman] hostiler I.
hadde—Cloke] þe cloke scholde haue
E.

391. þe—hod] hickes hood þe
hostiler I.

And who repentyde rapest · shold aryse after, 392

And grete syre gloton · with a galon of ale.

þer was lauhyng & lakeryng · and ‘let go þe coppe!’

Bargeynes and beuereges · by-gunne to aryse,

And setyn so til euesong rang · and songe vmbwhyle,

Til gloton hadde yglobbed · a galon and a gylle. 397

Hus guttes gonne godely · as two gredy sowes;

He pissede a potell · in a *pater-noster* while,

And blew hus rounde rewet · atte rygbones ende, 400

þat alle þat herde þat horne · hulde here nose after,

And wusched hit hadde be wexed · with a wips of breres.

He myghte noþer stappe ne stonde · tyl he a staf
hadde.

Thanne gan he go · lyke a glemannes bycche, 404

Som tyme asyde · [and] som tyme a-rere,

As ho so laith lynes · for to lacche foules.

And whenne he drow to þe dore · þanne dymmed hus
eyen; 407

He [thrumbled] at þe preshefold · and þrew to þe erthe. He stumbled at

Then came m. tch
laughing and
drinking, till
Glutton had
swallowed more

than he could
well hold.

B 76
He could scarce
stand, and walked
all ways, like a
gleeman's bitch,

A 63
or a man setting
bird-catching
lines.

392. *who*] he þat E; who so I;
whome M. *rapest*] him raper I.

393. *with*] whit P. *of*] MFSE
om.

394. *lauhyng*] lauzyng E; lawyng
M; haulyng (*sic*) E. *lakeryng*] la-
kryng E; likeryng MS; lowring I.
& *lakeryng*] alowd F.

395. *to aryse*] þo to wake I.

396. *And*] þei M. *setyn*] so PE;
seten M; settun S; sete F. *rang*] I
om. *vmbwhyle*] vmbwyle P; vmbi-
while MIE; vnbiwhile F; eche
while S.

397. *hadde*] adde P.

398. *godely*] so PS; to gosely I;
godele M; to gopel E. *Hus—godely*]
þat his guttus godeled F. *two* FS]
tuo I; to (*for two*) PM; þe E.
gredy] grete E; hongry S.

400. *And*] He I. *hus*] þe E.
rewet EG] rywett P; ryuet IM;
ruet FS. *atte*] at þe E; at his
MIFS; atte þe P.

401. *þat* G] þan P; þe IMFE;
his S. *nose*] nosus F; nesus M.

402. *hit*] þat hit P; IMFSE *omit*
þat. *wexed*] i-wexed M; ywaxed E;
wasche I. *wips*] weps E; bosk M.

403. *myghte*] ne myzt E. *noþer*]
nat þo nowþur F. *ne*] so in IMSE;
ne or no P; no F. *stonde*] stonnde
P. *a*] his I.

404. *Thanne*] And þanne IF. *he*]
hue P (*wrongly*).

405. *asyde*] asyde a sail (!) F.
[and IMFS] PE *om.* *a-rere*] so in
the rest; a-ryre P.

406. *As*] Has P. *laith*] leid S.
lynes] lymes F. *lacche*] cacche M;
take F.

407. *whenne*] wenne P.

408. *He*] And I. [*thrumbled* I]
thromlide G; trobled F; trobelode
S; stomblede PE; stomlede M.
But see A-text. *preshefold*] pres-
wolde M; treshfold E. *þrew* SIF]
þreu P; þrew him M; drow E.

the threshold,
when Clement
caught him and
carried him,

for which service
he was ill repaid.

His wife put him
to bed, and he
slept all Saturday
and Sunday.

Then he woke
up, and asked
where the cup
was.

BB 77

His wife and
Conscience
rebuke him.

"I confess that
I have often used
oaths,

Tho Clement þe cobelere · cauhte hym by þe mydel,
For to lyfte hym on loft · he [leyde] hym on hus knees ;
Ac gloton was a gret cherl · and gronyd [in] þe lifynge,
And couhed vp a caudel · in clementes lappe ; 412
Ys non so hongry hounde · in hertforde-shire,
þat þorst lape of [þat] leuyng · so vnloueliche hit
smauhte.

With al þe wo of þe worlde · hus wif and hus wenche
Bere hym to hus bedde · and brouhte hym þer-ynne ;
And after al þis excesse · he hadde an accidie, 417
He slep saterday and sonday · tyl sonne ȝede to reste.
Thenne awakyde he wel wan · and wolde haue ydronke ;
The first word þat he spak · was "ho halt þe bolle ?"
Hus wif and hys inwit · edwited hym of hus synne ;
He wax a-shamed, þat shrewe · and shrof hym al-so
swithe 422

To repentaunce ryȝt þus ; · "haue reuthe on me," he
seyde,

"þow lord þat on loft art · and alle lyues shope !

To þe, god, ich gloton · gulty me ȝelde
Of my trespas with tunge · ich can nauht telle how
ofte, 426

409. *Tho*] And I.

410. *For*] And for I. *he*] I *om.*
[*leyde* I] leide MFG ; lede PES.
hus] E *om.*

411. *cherl*] clerk (!) S. *groned*] agreed I. [in IMSEG] on PE. *þe*] his E. *in—liftyng*] as he lifte F.

412. *And*] He M. *couhed*] couched FS ; cowed I. *clementes*] clement S.

413. *Ys*] þat þer is F. *hertforde*] herfordes E ; herforde M.

414. *þat*] IFS *om.* *þorst*] dorst E ; Dorste S ; durste IM ; Durst F. *lape*] so PIMFS ; lappe E. [þat IMFSEG] þe P. *vnloueliche*] vnsemelich S.

415. *þe* (2)] þis I. *hus* (1)] þe E.

416. *to*] in-to M. *þer-ynne*] with-ynne F.

417. *þis*] his M. *excesse* IMFSE] excessus P. *accidie*] accesse after I. *he—accidie*] an accidie he hadde F.

418. *sonne*] þe sonne I.

419. *awakyde he*] he awakede M ; gan he wake I. *wel*] ful F. *wan*] E *om.*

420. *þat he*] þe freek F. *halt*] hap M. *ho halt*] fil fil F.

421. *hys*] ys P. *hus*] F *om.*

422. *S omits.* *þat shrewe*] þerwith F. *and*] an P ; he I. *al-so*] as IM.

423. *haue*] ha F. *on*] of F.

424. *lyues*] þyng M.

425. *me*] ich me PE ; i me M ; but ISF omit ich, which seems superfluous.

426. *my trespas*] þat I haue trespast I. *with*] of my F ; wiþ my S.

Sworen 'þy saule and [þy] sydes' · and 'so help me,
God almyghty!'

When þat no ned was · meny tyme falsliche. 428

And ouer-sopede at my soper · and som tyme at nones and have been
gluttonous.

More þan my kynde · myghte wel defye;

B 231

And as an hounde þat et gras · so gan ich to brake,

And spilde þat ich [spele] myghte · ich can nouht **B 77**

speke for shame

432

The vylenye of my foule mouþe · and of my foule mawe.

On fastingdais by-fore none · ich fedde me with ale,

I drank before
noon on fasting-
days.

Out of reson, a-mong rybaudes · here rybaudrye to

huyre.

Her-of, good god · graunte me forþeuenesse,

436

Of al my luþer lyuyng · in al my lyf-tyme.

For ich a-vowe to verrey god · for longer oþer for

A 64 B 78

þurste,

I vow henceforth
to observe
abstinence."

Shal neuere fish on fryday · defye in my wombe,

Tyl abstinence myn aunte · haue ȝeue me leue, 440

And ȝut haue ich hated hure · al my lyf-tyme."

Hic explicit passus septimus.

427. *Sworen*] Swore by S. [*þy*
EG] þi M; PS *om.* *þy—sydes*] *goddes soule* and his sides I; *soule*
& sides F. *sydes*] side E. *and* (2)]
F *om.* *so*] also M. *me*] M *om.*

428. *When þat*] Þer I; Wen þat
P. *ned* MS] nede IFE; nud P.
was] ne was I. *tyme*] sithes I.
meny—falsliche] falsly many a tyme
F.

429. *nones*] onus SF.

430. *More*] Muche more F.
kynde] mawe F. *wel*] I *om.*

431. *et* M] ete (*a worse spelling*)
PE; eteth IFS (*et is contracted from*
eteth). *to*] M *om.*

432. *spilde*] spilte S. [*spele* IFS]
spelide P; spelyd G; aspelid E. *ich*

—myghte] i myȝte haue i-spared M.
speke] telle M.

434. *On*] And I. *by-fore*] afore S.
ich] I *om.* *with*] whit P.

435. *rybaudrye*] ribaudye IF.
huyre] here MFI.

436. *Her-of*] Now here-of F.
good] E *om.* *graunte*] gif F.

437. *al* (1)] S *om.* *lyuyng*] lif I.

438. *a-vowe*] vowe I; afowe E.
for (1)] for eny I. *oþer*] ne M.
for (2)] I *om.*

439. *on*] on þe I. *wombe*] mawe
M.

440. *ȝeue*] i-ȝeue M.

441. *haue ich*] ych haue S.

COLOPHON. ISM *omit.* *Hic*] EF
om.

PASSUS VIII.

Incipit passus octauus.

(B 78)

VII. ACCIDIA.

CONFESSIO ACCIDIE.

Sloth comes
asking for a seat,

Tho cam sleuthe al by-slobered · with two slymed
eyen.

“Ich most sitte to be shryuen,” quath he · “or elles
shal ich nappe.

being unable to
stand or stoop.

Ich may nouht stonde ne stoupe · ne with-oute stoule
knele.

Were ich brouhte in my bed · bete my taylende hit
made, 4

Sholde no ryngyngge do me ryse · tyl ich were rype to
dyne.”

He goes to
sleep over his
prayers.

Benedicite he by-gan with a bolke · and hus brest
knokede,

Rasclod and remed · and routte at þe laste.

“What a-wake, renk,” quap repentaunce · “rape the to
shryfte!” 8

TITLE. *So also in F*; Hic incipit
passus octauus de uisione M; Passus
septimus de visione L.

OBS. *From this point onward, only
occasional readings are given from F.*

1. *with*] wit P. *two* FES] tuo I;
to PM. *slymed*] slymy M.

2. *shryuen* E] shryue PSI; i-
schriuen M; cf. l. 28. *quath he*] I
om. *shal ich*] i schal M; schold i L.

3. *nouht*] nat wel I. *stonde*]
stonnde P. *with*] whit P. *stoule*]

stoole I; stool S; stole EF; stol M.

4. *bote*] but if I. *taylende*] so I;
tailende M; talende ES; tayl-eende F.

5. *ryngyngge*] þinge I; oþer þyng
E. *ryse*] to rise I.

6. *with*] wit P. *a*] M om.

7. *Rasclod*] Raxled I; He raxlede
M; Rasled E. *routte*] rutte M;
route IE; routede SF. *þe*] S om.

8. *What*] Wat P. *renk*] þenke E;
þenk M. *rape*] and rape I; rake E.

"Sholde ich deye," quath he, "by þis daye · ich drede
me sore, 9

Ich can nouht parfytlliche my *pater-noster* · as þe prest
hit seggeþ. **B 79**

Awaked, he
says he forgets his
pater-noster,
but he knows
rimes about
Robin Hood.

Ich can rymes of *robyn hode* · and of Randolf, erl of
chestre,

Ac of oure lord ne of oure lady · þe lest þat euere was
maked. 12

Ich haue a-vowed vowes fourty · and for-ȝut hem a
morwe;

Ich parfourned neuere penaunce · þat þe preest me
hihte,

"I never
perform my
penances rightly.

Ne ryȝt sory for my synnes · ich sey neuere þe tyme.

And ich bidde eny bedis · bote hit be in wratthe, 16

That ich telle with my tunge · ys ten myle fro my herte.

Ich am ocupied eche day · haly day and oþer,

I am always
occupied with
idle tales.

With ydel tales atte nale · and oþer-whyle in churches;

Godes pyne and hus passion · is pure selde in my
thouhte. 20

Ich visited neuere feble man · ne feterid man in
prisone;

Ich hadde leuere huyre of harlotrye · oþer of a lesyng
to lauhen of,

I had sooner
hear such things
than all that ever
Mark wrote.

Oþer lacke men, and lykne hem · in vnlykyng manere,

9. *Sholde ich*] If i schulde I. *quath*
he] I ne may E; I *om. me*] me so
P; me ful M; but IESF omit so or
ful.

10. *seggeþ*] seyþ E; syngþ IMSF.

11. *and*] MSF *om. erl*] þe erl
SF.

12. *ne*] or SF. *þe*] nat þe S
(which improves the grammar).

13. *a-vowed vones*] a-fowed fouwes
E. *a*] on M.

14—18. M omits.

14. *parfourned*] parformed ES.
penaunce] penances I.

15. *synnes*] synne E.

16. *bote*] but if I.

18. *eche*] ich a I; eche a F.

19. *atte nale*] at þe nale EF; at
þe ale M. *whyle*] wyle P. *in*] at
EM. *churches*] chirche M.

20. *pyne*] payne IM. *is*] his P.
selde IMSE] seilde P. *thouhte*] herte MF.

21. *visited* MFI] viseted P; visided
E. *feble*] seek M. *man in prisone*] fraik with gyues F.

22. *huyre*] hure E; here ISF; to
here M. *of* (1)] an I. *harlotrye*] harletrye P; see l. 76. *of* (2)] IMS
om.

23. *Oþer*] And M; Or to I. *men*] E *om. and*] or to I. *lykne*] likene
IM; liken E.

þan al þat euere marc made · matheu, Iohan, other
lucas. 24

Vigilies and fastyngdayes · ich can for-ȝete hem Alle.

In Lent, I lie
in bed till mass
is over.

Ich ligge a bedde in lente · my lemman in myn armes,
Tyl matyns and messe be don · þen haue ich a memorie
atte Freres.

R SO
I am shriven
about twice in
ten years.

Ich am nouht shryuen som tyme · bote syknesse hit
make, 28

Nouht twyes in ten ȝer · ȝut tel ich nauht þe haluen-
dele.

Though I am
a priest, I cannot
sol-fa;

Ich haue be prest and person · passyng þerty wintere,
ȝut can ich noþer solfye ne synge · ne a seyntes lyf
rede.

but I can find a
hare in a field.

Ac ich can fynde in a felde · and in a forlang an hare,
And holden a knyȝtes court · and a-counte with þe
reyue; 33

Ac ich can nouht constrye [catoun] · ne clergialliche
reden.

I forget what I
borrow.

Yf ich bygge and borwe ouht · bote hit be y-tayled,
Ich for-ȝete [hit] as ȝerne · and yf eny man hit askep,
Sixe siþe oþer seuene · ich for-sake hit with oþes; 37
Thus haue ich tened trewe men · ten hondred tymes.

I keep back my
servants' wages.

And som tyme my seruauuns · here salarye is by-
hynde;

24. *Iohan—lucas*] Luc or Ion M.
25. *for-ȝete* MSF] for-ȝeten I; for-
ȝyte E; for-ȝute P.
26. *Ich*] And IMSEF. *my*] and
my IS. *lemman* MIEF] lemmanus
S; *miswritten* lemen P.

27. *and*] or I. *don*] al don S.
ich] I om. *atte*] at M.

28. I omits, and transposes ll. 26
and 27. *shryuen*] yschryuen at E.
make] made ES.

29. *ȝut*] and þan I. *þe*] M om.

30. *passyng þerty*] almost twenti
M.

31. *noþer*] nout M. *solfye*] solfy
E; solfe IMS.

32. *forlang*] so PIE; forlong MS.

33. *a*] E om. *þe*] a E. *reyue*] reoue M; reue IESF.

34. *constrye*] construe IS. [catoun
MI] canon PES; F om. *reden*] hit
rede M.

35. *and*] or M. *ouht*] it I. *bote*] but ȝif S; but if I. *y-tayled*] entaylid SF.

36. *for-ȝete* IF] fur-ȝete M; for-
ȝyte ES; for-ȝute P. [hit MIFSG]
PE om. *askep*] aske ISF.

38. *Thus*] And þus I. *tened* MI
ES] tuned P. *haue—tened*] I tene F.

39. *som—seruauuns*] my seruauuntz
som tyme I. *salarye* SEIF] salerye
P; salariȝe M. *is*] his P.

Reuthe ys to huyre þe rekenyng · whenne we shulleþ
rede a-countes, 40

þat with so wicked wil · my werkmen ich paye.

If eny man doþ me a byn-fet · oþer helpeþ me at nede, I requite benefits
with unkindness.

Ich am vnkynde aʒeyns courtesye · ich can nat vnder- **BS1**
stonde hit. 43

For ich haue and haue had · somdel haukes maneres,
Ich am nat lured with loue · bote ouht lygge vnder
pombe.

þe kyndenesse þat myn emcristene · kydde me fern I forget the
kindnesses men
do to me. 46

Syxti siþe ich sleuthe · haue for-ʒute hit sitthe.

In speche and in sparyng of speche · yspilt [many]
tymes;

Boþe flesh and eke Fish · and vitaille ich kepte so longe,
Til eche lyf hit loþede · to lokye þer-on, oþer smylle
hit, 50

Boþe bred and ale · botere, melke, and chese I waste much
meat and drink."

For-sleuthe[d] in my seruice · [and] sette hous a fuyre,
And ʒede a-bowte in my ʒouth · and ʒaf me to no
þedom, 53

And sitthe a beggere haue y-be · for my foule sleuthe;

Heu michi, quod sterilem · duxi uitam iuuenilem!"

40. *ys*] hit is E. *huyre*] here IM.
þe] I om. *whenne*] wenne P.

41. *Pat—so*] So wiþ I. *werkmen*] miswritten workman P.

42. *bynfet*] bienfet I; benfeet M;
benefet S; benefet E. *nede* IMFSE]
nude P.

43. *aʒeyns*] aʒein his I. *ich*] and
I. *vnderstonde*] vnderstonnde P.

44. *had*] yshade E; i-had M.
maneres] ferus F.

45. *ouht lygge*] þer ligge oght I.
pombe] þe pombe IS.

46. *emcristene*] euencristen I. *fern*
ʒere] fer to ʒere M.

47. *haue*] E om.

48. [*many* FS] many a MG; myn

P; my E. *tymes*] time MG.

49. *flesh*] in flesch E. *Fish*] in
fische E. *vitaille*] vitayles IMS.
ich] ISF om.

50. *eche*] eche a P; *but* IMFSE
omit a. *hit*] S om. *smylle*] so PE;
smelle IMS; smel F. *oþer—hit*] or
at his nese smelle M.

51. *and*] an P. *melke*] & melke
E.

52. *For-sleuthe*d IF] For-slewped
M; For-slewpyd G; For-sleuthe PE
S; see B-text. [*and* MIFSG] PE
om. *hous*] þe hous S; an hous I;
houses M.

53. *þedom* MIFSE] þedam P.

A 64

Sloth falls down
swooning, but
Vigilate wakes
him,

"Repente þe," quap repentaunce · [and] ryȝt *with* þat
he swouned, 56

and bids him
repent.

Til *vigilate* þe veille · vette water at hus eyen,
And flatte on hus face · and fast on hym criede,
And seide, "war fro wanhope · þat wol þe by-traye.
'Ich am sory for my synnes' · seye to þy-selue, 60
And bet þy-selue on þe brest · and bidde god of grace ;
For þer [is no gilte so gret] · þat hus goodnesse ne ys
more."

B 82

Then Sloth sat
up and blessed
himself,

and vowed he
would always go
to church early
and regularly,

þanne sat sleuthe vp · and seynede hym ofte, 63
And made a-vowe by-for god · for hus foule sleuthe,
"Shal no soneday þis seuene ȝer be · bote sycknesse hit
make,

and attend
evensong.

B 232

The branches of
sloth.

þat ich ne shal do me or daye · to þe dere churche,
And huyre matyns and masse · as ich a monke were.
Shal no Ale after mete · holde me þennes, 68
Til ich haue hurd euesong · ich by-hote to þe rode !" *"*
Ac whiche be þe braunches · þat bryngeþ [men] to
sleuthe ?

Ys, whanne a man mourneth nat · for hus mysdedes ;
þe penaunce þat þe prest enioyneþ · parfourneth vuele,
Doþ non almys-dedes · and drat nat of synne, 73

56. *Repente þe*] Repentedest þe
nought I. [*and* MIF] PSE *om.*
swouned] swounede SI; swowenede
E; souned P. *he swouned*] i-sowe-
nede M.

57. *vette*] fette IMSE; but F also
has vette. at] for M. *hus*] þe E.

58. *flatte*] flatte it I.

59. *war fro*] ware þe for I; be war
of M. *wol*] wolde I.

61. *on*] vpon I; in M. *þe*] þi M.
god] him I. *of*] of his S.

62. *þer*] I *om.* [*is—gret* I] is guilt
noon so gret SG; is gilt noon so gret
F; nys no synne so gret M; nys non
so gret synne PE. *ne ys*] nys E; is
IMSF.

63. *vp*] him vp I. *seynede*] sygned
E; seyned (*with the gloss* i. signaut)
I; signed F.

64. *a-rowe*] a-fowe E. *by-for*] to-
fore IF. *god*] *miswritten* good P.

65. *þis—be*] be þis seuene ȝer I.
bote] but if I.

66. *or*] ar IS.

67. *huyre*] here IMF.

69. *hurd euesong*] euesong y-herde
I. *to—rode*] þe to rede I.

70. [*men* ISMFG] me PE.

71. *whanne*] wanne P.

72. *penaunce*] penaunces I. *en-
ioyneþ*] putteth F; Inneþ (!) E.
parfourneth] parformeth hit M; per-
formed I. *vuele*] euel I; euele M.
parfourneth vuele] performy he nelle
E.

73. *non*] now (!) E. *almys-dedes*] *almes-dede* IM. *and drat*] ne dret
M; drat him I; trete (!) E. *of*] to
E.

Lyueþ azens þe by-leyue · and no lawe kepeþ,

And haþ no lykyng to lerne · ne of oure lord hure,

Bote harlotrie oþer horedom · oþer elles of som

† The slothful
man has no wish
to learn.

wynnyng.

76

Whan men carpen of cryst · oþer of clenness of
soule,

He wext wroþ, and wol nat huyre · bote wordes of
murthe.

Penaunce and poure men · [and] þe passion of seyntes,

He hateþ to huyre þer-of · and alle þat þer-of carpen.

He hates to hear
the legends of
saints.

Thuse beþ þe braunches, be war · þat bryngeþ man to

wanhope.

81

3e lordes and ladyes · and legates of holy church,

þat feden fool sages · flaterers and lyers,

And han lykyng to lyþen hem · in hope to do 3ow

lawghe :

84

Ve uobis qui ridetis, [quia lugebitis,] et cetera : Luke vi. 25.

And 3eueþ suche mede and mete · and poure men

refusen,

In 3oure deþ-deynge · ich drede me sore

Lest þo manere men · to moche sorwe 3ow brynge ; 87 **B 233**

As god wole ; *Consencientes & agentes pari pena
punientur.*

Patriarkes and prophetes · prechours of godes wordes

Sauen þorgh here sermons · mannes soule fro helle ; 89

Ryzt so flaterers and foles · aren þe fendes procura-

tores,

Preachers save
men's souls,
but flatterers are
the fiend's
panders.

74. *Lyueþ*] And (*sic*) M. *by-
leyue*] bileue EMS ; bileue I.

75. *haþ*] hadde S. *oure*] heure P.
hure] here M ; to here IF.

76. *Bote*] Bot to I. *oþer* (1)] and
MI. *oþer* (2)] & I.

77. *Whan*] Wan P. *of* (2)] MF
om.

78. *wext*] wexiþ SF ; wexeþ M ;
wex F. *huyre*] here MI.

79. [*and* I] PMSEF omit ; but see
B-text, xiii. 419.

80. *huyre*] here MIF.

81. *þe*] E *om.* *war*] i-war M ; y-
war I. *man*] a man I ; men MES.

84. *lyþen*] liken I ; leuen E. *larghe*
I] lauþe E ; lauwe M ; *spelt* lawe

P. [*quia lugebitis* E] PISM *om.*

86. *sore*] ful sore MF.

87. *As—wole*] in P only.

89. *mannes soule*] many soules M.

90. *aren*] ben ME ; beþ S. *fendes*]
deueles M. *procurateurs*] hynus F.

Entysen men þorgh here tales · to synne and to
harlotrie.

Clerkus þat knowen þis · sholde kenne lordes, 92

What dauid seide of suche men · as þe sauter telleþ,

Ps. c. 7 (Vulg.).

*Non habitabit in medio domus mee qui facit
superbiam, qui loquitur iniqua.*

Sholde non harlot haue Audience · in halle ne in
chaumbre, 94

þer þat wise men were ; · (witnesses of godes wordes),

Noþer a mys-proud man · among lordes [be] a-lowed.

Clerks welcome
the king's
minstrels.

Clerkus and knyghtes · welcomeþ kynges mynstrales,

[And] for loue of here lordes · lithen hem at festes ;

So also the rich
should welcome
beggars.

Muche more, me þenkeþ · riche men auhte

Haue beggers by-fore hem · whiche beþ godes myn-
strales, 100

As he seith hym-self · seynt Iohan bereth witness,

Luke x. 16.

Qui uos spernit, me etiam spernit.

Ye rich, entertain
God's minstrels,
the poor,

Ther-for ich rede þow riche · reueles when þe maken

For to solace þoure soules · suche mynstrales to
haue ;

þe poure for a fol sage · syttinge at þy table, 104

have a learned
man to teach you,

With a lered man, to lere þe · what oure lord
suffrede,

For to sauþ þy saule · fram satan þyn enemye,

91. *Entysen*] To entise I ; Entys-
yng S ; & tisen E. *tales*] false tales
I. to (2)] EI om. *harlotrie*] har-
lettrie P ; but see l. 76.

92. *kenne*] kenne hit MS.

93. *seide*] saith IF. *qui* (2)] neque
qui M.

95. *wise men* IMSEF] written wys-
men P. *witness* E] whitnesse P ;
withnesse M. *of*] on MSF. *witness*
of] witnessþ I (as in B-text).

96. *Noþer a*] Ne a M ; Ne no I.
mys-proud IMSEF] mys-prout P ; mys-
proute E. [*be* MIF] PESG om. *a-
lowed* SM] a-louwed P ; loued IF ; &
lewed (!) E.

97. *welcomeþ* IMSEF] wolcomeþ
(?) P.

98. [*And* IMSFG] PE om. *here
lordes*] heore lord M ; oure lord (!)
IS. *festes*] heore festes M ; feste S.

100. *whiche*] þe which I ; þat M.
beþ] ben MS.

101. *Iohan*] Ion EMSF. *witness*
whitnesse P. *me etiam*] eciam me
E. *eciam*] IMSEF om.

102. *Ther-for*] For-þy I.

104. *fol* IM] foole E ; foul P ; fal
SF. *þy*] þe M.

105. *With*] Whith P. *lere*] lerne
M.

106. *saueþ*] saue ESIF ; haue M.

And. fipele the, with-oute flateryng · of goode fryday þe **B 234**

[geste],

And a blynde man for a bordiour · oþer a bedreden also a blind man
for a jester,
or a bedridden
woman to cry
womman, 108 largesse.

To crye a largesse by-fore oure lorde · ȝoure goode loos
to shewe.

Thuse þre manere mynstrales · maken a man to lauhe ;
In hus deþ-deyng · thei don hym gret comfort,
þat by hus lyue [litheþ] hem · and loueþ hem to huyre.

Thuse solaceþ þe soule · til hym-self be-falle 113 These solace the
soul.

In a wel good hope, for he wroghte so · a-mong worthy
seyntes ;

Ther flaterers and foles · with here foule wordes
Leden tho þat lithen hem · to luciferes feste, 116

With *turpiloquio*, a lay of sorwe · and lucifers fipele,

To perpetuel payne · oþer purgatorye as wykke ;
For he litheþ and loueþ · þat godes lawe despiceþ ;

Qui histrionibus dat, demonibus sacrificat.

Tho was repentaunce redy · and radde hem alle to knele,
“Ich shal by-seche for alle synfulle · oure sauour of
grace, 121 Peter Cantor ;
cap. 47.
B 83
Repentance prays
for all the
penitents.

To a-menden ous of oure mysdedes · do mercy to ous alle,
God, of þy goodnesse · þow gonne þe worlde make,
And of nouht madest ouht · and man lyke þi-selue,

107. *fipele* EF] fyþele S ; fitayle
P ; vitaille M. *with-oute*] wiþ a I.
flateryng] faillyng M. [geste F] feste
PEM ; beste S ; cf. storye in B-text.

109. *oure lorde*] ȝoure dere M.
110. *Thuse*] þese SM ; þise I ;
þis E. *mynstrales*] men M.

111. *In*] And in IMSF.

112. [litheþ] loueþ PEMS ; leued
I ; leeueth F (*all wrong ; for cf. l. 119,
and see B-text*). loueþ] likeþ M.
huyre] here MIF.

113. *Thuse*] þese SI ; þei M ; þis E.
befalle] bi-falle M ; be y-falle I.

114. *wel* IMSE] wele P. *good*]
IMSF om.

115. *with*] whith P ; and M.

116. *lithen*] leuen E ; liken S ;
lightede I. *feste*] halle M.

117. *turpiloquio*] I om. *fipele*
MISF] fitele P ; vipele E.

118. *nykke*] wicked MS.

119. *litheþ*] liþe E ; lithed I. *loueþ*]
loued I. *Qui—sacrificat*] Dare his-
trionibus MS ; Dare histrionibus est
dare demonibus F ; cf. B. xv. 336.

120. *redy*] aredy I ; al redy S.
hem] hym E.

122. *do*] and do M. *to*] on M.

123. *of*] þat of I. *þow gonne*]
gunne MF ; þow gannust S. *þe*] þy
I.

124. *of—madest*] madest of noght
I. *þi*] þe P ; but see l. 60.

"O God, who
didst suffer man
to commit sin,
for the ultimate
benefit of man-
kind,

Sitthe soffredest hym do synne · a syknesse to ous alle,
And for oure best, as ich by-leyue · what-euere þe book
telle ;

O felix culpa, o necessarium peccatum ade !

and wast made
man ;

For þow [þat] synne þy sone · sent was tyl erthe, 127
And by-cam man of [a] mayde · mankynde to a-mende,
And madest þi-selue with þy sone · oure soule and
body lyche ;

† (John xiv. 9,
10) ;

*Ego [in] patre, & pater in me est ; & qui uidet
me, patrem meum uidet.*

B 84
and didst die
upon Good
Friday ;
(Eph. iv. 8) ;
when the sun
was darkened at
noon-day ;

And sitthe in oure secte · as hit semed, þow deydest,
On a fryday, in forme of man · feledest oure sorwe ;

Captiuam duxit captiuitatem.

The sonne for sorwe þer-of · lees lyght for a tyme, 132
A-bowte midday whanne [most] lyght ys · and meel-
tyme of seyntes ;

(Isaiah ix. 2) ;

Feddest þo with thi fresshe blod · oure for-fadres in helle,
*Populus qui ambulabat in tenebris, lucem mag-
nam uidit.*

The lyght þat lemed out of þe · lucifer hit blente,
And broughte þyne blessedde fro þennes · in-to þe blysse
of heuene. 136

and on the third
day didst rise
again ;

The þridde day þer-after · thow ȝedest in oure secte ;
A synful marye þe seyh · er seynt marie þy moder,

125. *Sitthe*] And seþpe I ; Siþpe
þou S. *do*] to IM.

126. *oure*] þe IMS. *by-leyue*]
bileue M ; be-leue S. *euere*] so I.

127. [þat IMSFG] PE *om.* *tyl*]
to IM.

128. [a IMF] PSE *om.*

129. *madest*] medlet (!) E. *þi-
selue*] *written* þe-selue P. *body*]
oure body I. *oure—lyche*] boþe bodi
and soule i-liche M. [in IMSEFG]
P *om.* *uidet*] uidit (*twice*) S ;
(*second time*) I. *patrem—uidet*]
videt & patrem meum EMF.

130. *oure*] ȝoure I. *secte* ISF]
siȝte M ; siȝt E ; *miswritten* secke P ;
but see l. 137. *þow*] IMSF *om.*

131. *in*] in þe M. *feledest*] & fel-
dust S.

133. *whanne*] wanne P. [most
IMSFEG] P *om.* *meel-tyme*] a mul-
titude (!) M.

134. *þo*] E *om.* *fresshe*] flessch
and IE ; flesschly S. *for-fadres*]
forme-faderes MS. *Populus*] Populus
gencium S. IMSF *place* uidit *before*
lucem.

135. *lemed*] leepe I.

136. *fro*] S *om.*

137. *þer-after*] after M. *secte*]
siȝt M.

138. *seyh*] si M. *er*] or EMS ; ar
I. *moder*] dame I.

And al to solace synful · þow soffredest hit so were ;

Non ueni uocare iustos, sed peccatores ad penitenciam. Mat. ix. 13.

And al þat marc hath ymad · matheu, Iohan, and
lucas,

Of þyne douhtieste dedes · was don [in] oure secte ; 141

Uerbum caro factum est.

Jo. i. 14.

And by so moche hit semeþ · þe sykerloker we mowe **B 85**

Bydde and by-seche þe · yf hit be þy wil,

þat art first oure fader · and of flesh oure broþer, 144

And sitthen oure saueour · and seidest with þy tonge,

That what tyme we synful men · wolden be sory

† Thou who
didst promise to
forgive penitents,

For dedes þat we han don ille · dampned sholde we be

neuere,

147

Yff we knewelechid and cryde · crist þer-of mercy ;

*Quandocumque ingemuerit peccator, omnes ini-
quitates eius non recordabor amplius.* † Jer. xxxi. 34.

And for þat mochel mercy · and marie loue þy moder,

Haue reuthe of alle þuse rybaudes · þat repenten hem

we pray Thee,
have mercy on all
these penitents."

sore,

þat euere þei gulte aþens þe, god · in gost oþer in dede."

Thenne hente hope an horn · of *deus, tu conuersus*

uiuificabis nos,

152

Then Hope
seized a horn, and
blew it; (Ps. lxx.
20, and xxxi. 1;
Vulgate.)

And blew hit with *beati quorum · remisse sunt iniquita-*

tes, & cetera,

þat alle seyntes with synful men · songen with dauid,

139. *to*] so to I; forte M. *solace*] comferte þe S. *ad penitenciam*] IS om.

140. *Iohan*] Ion ESM. *and*] or S.

141. *douhtieste*] douhti MG; douhtyokest (*for* douhtylokest) I. *was*] þat was S. [*in* IMSFG] on PE; see l. 137. *secte*] sizte M. *Uerbum, &c.*] M om.

144. *art* IMSF] ert PE. *ferst*] formest E.

145. *seidest*] seidest it I.

147. *sholde*] schulle S.

148. *knewelechid*] knowelechen M.

cryde] crien M. *þer-of*] þer-of þi M; þer-fore I. *recordabor amplius*] recordabuntur MS; recordaberis F.

149. *þat*] I om. *mochel*] mochel or mechel P; mochlul S; mychel EG; muchel I; mykel M.

150. *of*] on IM. *þat repenten*] and repenteden I. *hem*] M om.

151. *gulte*] agulte MS. *þe*] S om.

153. *& cetera*] et quorum tecta sunt peccata IG; et quorum tecta M.

154. *with*] wit P; for ISF. *men*] man E; I om. *songen* IES] sungen F; songe MG; syngen P.

Ps. xxxv. 7;
(Vulgate.)

*Homines & iumenta saluabis, domine, quem-
admodum multiplicasti misericordiam tuam,
deus!*

Then a thousand
men thronged
together, hoping
to find Truth.

A þousend of men þo · þrongen to-gederes,
Crying vpward to crist · and to hus clene moder, 156
To haue grace to go to treuthe · god leyue þat þei mote!

A 67

But no one knows
the way.

Ac þer was weye non so wys · þat þe way þider couthe,
Bote blostrede forth as bestes · ouer baches and hulles,

At last they met
a Palmer in
pilgrim's weeds,

Til late was and longe · þat þei a lede mette, 160
A-paraild as a paynym · in pylgrymes wise.

a staff in his
hand, a bag and a
bowl by his side,

He bar a bordon ybounde · with a brod lystre,
In a weythwynde wyse · ywryþe al aboute;
A bolle and a bagge · he bar by hus syde, 164

ampulle in his
hat, and marked
with crosses and

And an hondred hanypeles · on hus hatte seten,
Signes of syse · and shilles of galys,

B 86

keys on his cloak.

And meny crouche on hus cloke · and keyes of rome,
And þe fernycle by-fore · for men sholde knowe, 168

A 68

They asked him
whence he came;
and he said,
"From Sinai, the
Sepulchre,
Bethlehem, and
Babylon."

[And se] by hus sygnes · wham he souht hadde.
Thys folke frayned hym furst · fro whennes he come?
"Fro sinay," he sayde · "and fro þe sepulchre.

In bethleem, in babilonie · ich haue ybe bothe, 172

In ermanie, in alisaundre · and in damascle.

þe may see by my sygnes · þat sitten on my cappe,

domine] I om.

156. *Crying*] Cried I. *vpward*] out-ward E.

157. *leyue*] leue IMSEG; graunte F.

158. *was*] ne was I. *weye*] wye G; wit E; wist F. *þider*] M om.

159. *baches*] balkes M; bankus S.

161. *in*] & in S.

163. *weythwynde*] weþ-wynde ES; weþe-wynde MI. *ywryþe*] i-wriþen MF; wryþe S.

165. *And*] I om. *hondred*] hondret of M; hundred of I. *hanypeles*] so also F; hanyples S; hanpers E; annpolles (*sic*) I; halfpenes (!) M.

166. *syse*] sysis S; sisile F. *shilles*] schelles IMS.

167. *And*] M om. *meny*] many a MSF. *and*] I om.

168. *fernycle*] vernycle EIS; vernacle M. *knowe*] yknowe EI.

169. [*And se* IFS] & seo G; And sen M; As PE; see l. 174. *hus*] þe I. *wham*] what MF. *hadde*] S om.

170. *frayned—furst*] furst frainden him M. *whennes*] wennes P; whanne þat M.

171. *sepulchre*] sepulchre of oure lord I.

172. *bethleem*] bedlem SI. *in*] and I. *ybe bothe*] be in boþe IMF; be in bode (*sic*) S.

173. *ermanie*] armonye I. *damascle*] so also in ES; damaske FG; damasch else M. *and—damascle*] I haue be in boþe (repeated from last line) I.

174. *my*] þe I; S om. *on*] in S.

Ich haue ysouht goode seyntes · for my soules helthe,
And walked ful wide · in wete and in drye." 176

"Knowst þow [ouȝt] a cor-seynt," quap ich · "þat men clepeþ treuthe ?

"Knowest thou a saint named Truth; where dwells he?"

Coutheþ þow wissen ous þe way · whoder out treuthe wonyeþ?"

"Nay, so god me helpe" · seyde þe gome þenne,

He answers that he cannot tell.

Ich seyþ neuere palmere · with pyk ne with scrippe

Asken after hym, er now · in þys ilke place." 181

HIC PRIMO COMPARET PETRUS PLOUHMEN.

Enter PIERS THE PLOWMAN.

"Peter!" quap a plouhman · and putte forth hus hefd,
"Ich knowe hym as kyndeliche · as clerkus don hure bokes.

"Peter!" quoth he, "I know him well.

Conscience and kyndewit · kende me to hus place, 184
And maked me sykeren hym sitthen · to seruen hym
for euere,

Conscience and Common Sense told me where he lives.

Boþe to sowe and to setten · þe whyle ich swynke myghte,

With-yinne and with-oute · to wayten hus profyt.

Ich haue yben his folwer · al þes fourty wynter, 188

And serued treuthe sothlyche · somdel to paye;

A 69 B 87
I have everywhere watched his profit; and I please him well.

In alle kynne craftes · þat he couthe deuyse

Profitable to þe plough · he putte me to lerne; 191

175. *soules helthe*] soule hele S.

177. *Knowst*] Knowest IMF; Knowist S. [ouȝt GS] auȝt F; oght I; out M; PE *om.* *cor-seynt* MISE FG] core-seynt P. *ich*] þey I. *men*] man E. *clepeþ*] calleþ IM.

178. *Coutheþ þow*] Coudestow I; Kanstou M; Knowist þow S. *wissen*] teche M. *þe way*] to-day I. *whoder*] woder P; whoþur S; wheder I. *whoder out*] þider þat M; whedur F. *wonyeþ*] woneþ I; woned E.

179. *so*] sone so M. *god me*] me god ISF.

180. *with* (1)] whith P. *scrippe* EIMSF] shrippe P; see ix. 60.

181. *er*] or EFG; but I. *ilke*] I

om. *Hic—Plouhman*] in PE only.

182. *a*] S *om.* *hefd*] heued IF; heed M; hed E; hese (*sic*) S.

183. *Ich*] Iich P.

185. *maked*] made EMF; maden SI. *hym*] I *om.* *seruen* ISF] serue MEG; *miswritten* seren P.

186. *whyte*] wyle P. *Here follows* —& to (Forte M) sowed his seed · & sewen his bestus FGIM; *which* (*though* in B. v. 550) is scarcely wanted.

189. *serued*] y serue I. *somdel*] & somdel E.

190. *he couthe*] i coude MF.

191. *Profitable* IMSEF] Proffit-able P. *to*] as for IG.

He pays me
well."

And þauh ich seye hit my-self · ich *seruede* hym to paye.
Ich haue myn hyre of hym wel · and oþer whyle more ;
He ys [þe] most prest paiere · þat eny poure man
knoweth.

The pilgrims then
offer Piers money,
which he refuses.

He with-halt non hewe · hus hyre ouere euen ;
He ys lough as a lombe · and leel of hus tonge, 196
And ho so wilneþ to wyte · wher þat treuthe wonyeþ,
Ich wol wissen ȝow wel · ryght to hus place."

"Ȝe, leue peers," quap þo pylgrymes · and profrede
peers mede.

"Nay, by þe peril of my soule" · peers gan swere, 200
"Ich nolde fonge a ferthing · for seynt Thomas shryne !
Were it told to treuthe · þat ich toke mede,
He wolde louye me þe lasse · a longe tyme after.

ALTA UIA AD FIDELITATEM EST OBSERUATIO .X. PRE-
CEPTORUM, UT DICIT PETRUS PLOUHMAN.

But he tells them
to go through
Meekness, till
they come to
Conscience.

A 70

Ac who so wol wende · þer as treuthe dwelleþ, 204
This ys þe heye weye pyderwarde · wyteþ wel þe soþe.
Ȝe most gon þorwe meknesse · alle men and wommen,
Tyl Ȝe come to *conscience* · knowen of god selue,
That Ȝe loue hym as lord · leelliche a-bouen alle ; 208
That ys to seye sothliche · Ȝe sholde rapen deye
Than eny dedliche synne do · for drede oþer for preyere.
And þenne ȝoure neghebores next · in none wyse a-
peyre,

192. *seruede*] *serie* I.

193. *whyle*] *wyle* P; *whiles* I.

194. [þe IMSG] PE *om.* *most*
prest] *presteste* I; *moste beste* M.

195. *hewe* I] *hywe* P; *hyne* EMS
FG.

196. *lough*] as *lowe* I.

197. *wher*] *wer* P. *wonyeþ*] *woneþ*
FIM.

199. Ȝe *leue*] I *leue* S. þo] *þise* I;
þe ES. þo *pylgrymes*] þat pilgrim M.

200. *peril* IG] *perel* EMF; *pereil*
P. *swere*] to *swere* IG; to *swerize* M.

201. *nolde*] *ne wolde* M; *ne wil* I.

202. *to*] ISF *om.*

203. *Alta—plouhman*] *so also* E;
Nota viam ad veritatem F; Decem
mandata G; IMS *om.*

204. *wol*] *wulde* S; *wolde* E.
wende] *wene* S. *as*] þat M. *as—*
dwelleþ] troupe is I. I *adds—þis* the
way *biderward*, and *omits* l. 205.

205. *heye*] IM *om.* *wyteþ*] *wite* þe
(*sic*) E. þe (2)] for M.

206. *most*] *mote* I.

207. *to*] in-to IS. *knowne—selue*]
I-knowe of god him-silue S.

208. *as*] as a S; as *ȝoure* F; I *om.*

211. *And*] M *om.* *neghebores*]
neghebour is I; *neihebore* M.

O^{per}-wyse þan 3e wolde · thei wroughte 3ou alle tymes. **BSS**
 And so goþ forth by þe [brok] · a brygge as hit were,
 Tyl 3e fynde a forde · ‘3oure-fadres-honoureþ;’ 214
 Wadeþ wel in [þat] water · and wascheþ 3ow wel

þere,

And 3e shulle lepe þe lyghtloker · al 3oure lyf-tyme;

Honora patrem & matrem, & eris longeuus super Exod. xx. 12.
terram.

þanne shalt þow [see] ‘swery-nat · bot-yt-be-for-nede-
 Nameliche-an-ydel · þe-name-of-god-al-myghty.’ 218
 þanne shalt þow come by a croft · ac com [þou] nat per-
 ynne,

Pass by Swear-
 not-in-vain and
 the croft called
 Covet-not;

þe croft hatte ‘coueyte-nat · mennes-catel-ne-here-wyues-
 Ne-non-of-here-seruans · þat-nuyen-hem-myghte.’ 221
 Loke þou bere nat þere aweye · bote [3if] yt be þyn
 owne.

Two stockes þer stonden · ac stynt þow nouht þere; also by the stocks
 Thei hatte ‘stel-net’ and ‘slee-nat’ · stryk forth by named Steal-not
 hem bothe, 224 and Slay-not.

And leue hem in þy lift hand · and loke nouht þer-
 after,

And hold wel þyn halyday · heye tyl euen.

212. *O^{per}*] And o^{per} PE; but
 IMFS omit And. *wroughte*] dude M.

213. *þe*] a MF. [*brok* M] brook
 SF; bok P; book IG; boke, altered
 to broke E; cf. B-text.

214. *Tyl*] For to I. *fadres*] fader
 I. *honoureþ* IMFE] honouruþ S;
 honourieþ P.

215. *nelin*] in at I. [*þat* IMFSE]
 þe P. *wascheþ*] wasche PE; wassh
 M; but wasshuþ S; wasscheþ IF.

216. *shulle*] shuld S. *Honora, &c.*
 M om. & *eris, &c.*] IS om.

217. *þanne*] And þanne I. [*see* I]
 go by F; PEMS om. (cf. B-text.
yt] 3if hit ES. *nede* EMFS] nude P.

218. *Nameliche*] And nameliche I.
Here M inserts—

þanne schalt þow come bi an hi
 hul · be war þer of þe wei3e,

þat me calleþ ‘halt þyn holidai ·
 fro alle liþer dedes.’

But this is interpolated; for see l.
 226.

219. *þanne*] 3ut M. *ac*] bute M.
 [þou EIF] þow M; PS om.

220. *hatte*] hatteþ M.

221. *seruans*] seruauuns M; ser-
 uauntes ESF; seruauantz I. *nuyen*
hem] hem noy3e M.

222. [*3if* MS] if IG; PEF om.
owne MSF] owe PE.

223. *stynt* ESF] stynte MI; stinte
 G; stunt P.

224. *hatte*] hatten M; hat SF.
and] ne M. *hem*] I om.

225. *in*] on MFG. *þy*] þe I.
loke] loke þou E. *nouht*] I om.

226. M omits. See footnote to l.
 218.

Turn aside from
the hill Bear-no-
false-witness,

Thenne shalt þou blenche at a bergh · ‘ber-no-fals-
wytnesse,’ 227

A 71

He ys friþed yn with floreyne · and oþer fees menye,
Loke þow plocke þer no plaunte · for peryl of þy soule.
þanne shalt þow [see] ‘seye-soþe · so-hit-be-to-done-
In-no-manere-elles-nat · for-no-mannes-preyere.’

B 80
and then shall ye
see Say-sooth.

So shall ye come
to a court, with
walls of Wit, and
battlements of
Christendom,

So shalt þow come to a court · as cleer so þe sonne, 232
The mot ys of mercy · in myddes þe manere,
Al þe wallynge ys of wit · for wil ne sholde hit wynne.
The kernels beþ of crystendome · þat kynde to saue,
And boteraced with ‘by-leyue-so · oþer-þow-[best]-
nat-saued.’ 236

with houses that
are roofed with
Love.

Alle þe houses beþ heled · halles and chambres,
With no lede, bote with loue · and with leel-speche.
The barres aren of buxumnesse · as breþeren of ou
wombe.

The bridge is
Pray-well.

The brigge hatte ‘bid-wel · the-bet-myght-þow-spede;’
Eche pyler ys of penaunce · and preyers to seyntes,
The hokes aren almys-dede[s] · þat þe 3ates hongen on.
Grace hatte þe gate-warde · a good man for soþe, 243
Hus man hatte amende-3ow · meny man hym knoweþ.
Tel hym pys ilke tokne · ‘treuthe wot þe sothe,

Grace is the gate-
keeper, and his
man is called
Amend-you, to
whom give a
token.

227. *bergh*] *berwe* I; *borw* M;
bor3 S; *borgh* G; *burgh* F. *ber*]
ber þow M. *wytnesse*] *wyttnesse* P.

228. *He*] *þis* E; *IMSF om.* *friþed*
MIG] *fryþud* S; *frefed* P; *yfrefed*
E. *witþ*] *wit* P.

229. *þer—plaunte*] *no plante þere*
I.

230. [*see* I] *go by* F; *PEMS om.*
Cf. B-text; *and see* l. 217.

232. *So*] *And so* I. *court*] *cot* I.
as] *so* MG. *so*] *as* MIS.

233. *in—manere*] *in þe middes* is
þe maner M; *þe maner* is (*sic*) *þe*
myddes I; *þe maner* in *þe middes*
G.

234. *Al*] *And al* I. *ys*] *hys* P.
wit] *witt* P.

235. *kernels*] *corneles* E; *carneles*
MIS; *caruellus* F.

236. *And*] *I om.* *boteraced*] *boter-*
asyd S; *I-betrased* (*for* *I-botrased*)
I. *by-leyue*] *bi-leue* MIE; *by-lef* S.
[*best* IM] *beest* G; *worsthest* (*sic*) P;
worst ES. *Cf.* B-text.

237. *Alle*] *And alle* I. *houses*]
hous I. *heled*] *y-heled* I; *i-heled* M.

239. *aren*] *ben* M; *beþ* E. *of*] *S*
om. *breþeren* IEF] *breþeryn* S; *bre-*
þerne M; *breþres* P.

240. *brigge*, EIMF] *brygge* S;
bregge P. *hatte*] *hatteþ* M. *bet*]
betere S. *þow*] *þe* I.

241. *Eche*] *Vche* a I; *On* M. *pen-*
aunce] *penances* I.

242. *aren*] *beþ* E; *arn* MF. *dedes*
IMEF] *dede* PS.

243. *hatte*] *hatteþ* M; *hat* SF.

244. *hatte*] *hatteþ* M; *hat* SF.
3ow] *how* (!) S.

Ich am sory for my synnes · and so shal ich euere, 246
 And parfourne þe penaunce · þat þe preest me highte.
 Rydeþ to a-mende-3ow · [mekeþ] 3ow to hus mayster
 grace,

To openen and vndo · þe hye 3ate of heuene, 249
 That adam and eue · azens ous alle shutte :

*Per euam ianua celi cunctis clausa est, et per
 mariam uirginem iterum patefacta est.*

A ful [leel] lady · [vn-leek] hure of grace ; 251

Hue haþ a keye and a clyket · thaue þe kyngs slepe,
 And may lede yn wham hue loueþ · as here luf lykeþ.

And yf grace graunte þe · to go yn in þys wise,
 þow shalt se treuthe sytte · in þy selue herte,

And solace þy soule · and saue þe fro pyne. 256

Al-so charge charyte · a churche to make

In þyn hole herte · to herberghwen alle treuthe,

And fynde alle manere folke · fode to hure saules,

Yf loue and leaute · and owre lawe be trewe : 260

Quodcumque petieritis in nomine meo, dabitur † John xvi. 23.
enim uobis.

Be war þenne of wratthe · þat wickede shrewe,

For he haþ enuye to hym · þat in þyn herte sytteþ,

And pokeþ forth pruyde · to preysy thi-selue. 263

247. *parfourne*] *parforme* EMS;
parformed IFG.

248. *Rydeþ*] *Redeþ* M. [*mekeþ* M]
 meek PS; meke G; & meke EF; to
 meke I. *mayster*] *maistres* I.

249. *and*] & to S. *3ate*] *3ates*
 PEMS; but IF *have* gate; see l. 251.

250. *ianua celi*] *IMSF om.*

251. [*leel* EMSFG] *lele* I; *bel* P.
 [*vn-leek* IS] *vnlek* G; *vn-lyke* P;
vnlike E; *vnloket* M; *vnlowked* F;
 (*vn-leek* = unlocked; of which *vn-*
like is a corruption). *hure*] *hire* E;
 hit MSG; it F; is I; (*hure* = her,
 i. e. the gate).

252. *Hue*] *Sche* M; 30 E; And he
 I. a (1)] þe EISFG; M *om.* a (2)]
 þe IG; MSF *om.* *clyket*] *clykett* I.

253. *wham*] þat I. *hue*] *sche* M;
 he I; 30 E. *here luf*] *hure leef* M;
 hire leef I; 30 hire-silf E.

254. *yn*] MIFG *om.*

255. *se-sytte*] *treuþe sette* E. þy
selue] þyn owne M.

256. *pyne*] *peyne* MI.

257. *Al-so*] And I.

258. *herberghwen*] *herberwe* I; her-
 berowe S; herborwen E; herborewe
 M. *treuthe*] *trewe* I.

259. *fode* EMS] *foode* I; *foude* P.

260. *owre*] *3oure* M. *trewe*] *trywe*
 P. *dabitur enim*] a *patre*, *dabit* S.

261. *Be*] Ac be I.

263. *pokeþ forth*] *poked out* E.
forth] for S. *preysy*] *preyse* EIMFS.

*that you will do
 the penance the
 priest has given you*

A 72

Go to Amend-you
 and pray his
 master to open
 the gates of
 Paradise.

B 90

Mary hath the
 key.

† Charity shall
 make a church
 within thy heart.

Take heed of
 Wrath,

lest ye be driven
out,

and the door be
closed and locked
against you.

But there are also
seven sisters
there at the gates,
called Abstinence,
Humility,
Charity, Chastity,
Patience, Peace,
A 73 B 91
and Bounty.

Without their
aid it is hard to
gain entrance at
that gate."

The cut-purse,
the ape-ward, and

The boldnesse of þy bynfet · makeþ þe blynde þenne,
So worst þow dryuen out as deuh · and þe dore closed,
Y-keyed and yclyketed · to close þe with-oute,
Hapliche an hondred wynter · ar þow eft entrie. 267
þus myght þou lese hus loue · to lete wel by þi-selue,
And geten [hit] a-geyn þorw grace · ac þorgh no [gifte]
elles.

Ther ben seuene sustres · that seruen treuthe euere,
And aren porters at posternes · þat to þe place longen;
þat on hatte abstinence · and humilite anoper, 272
Charite and chastite · ben hus chef maydenes,
Pacience and pees · mucche puple helpen,
Largenesse þat lady · lat yn ful menye;
Non of hem alle · helpe may yn betere, 276
For hue paieþ for prisons · in places and in peynes.
And ho is sybbe to þuse seuene · [so me god helpe!
He is wondirlich welcome · & fayre vndirfonge.
Ho is not sib to þese seuene] · sothly to telle, 280
Hit is ful hard, by myn heued · eny of þou alle
To geten ingang at eny gate · bote grace be þe more."
"By cryst," quath a kitte-pors · "ich haue no kyn þere."

264. þy] þe S. bynfet] benfet M; to þe place M.
benefet ES; benfetes I.

Here MS. F has lost eight leaves.

265. worst MS] worth PEIG; cf. l.
236, foot-note. deuh] so PS; dew
M; dewe I; deþ (!) E.

266. yclyketed] miswritten ycly-
keted P. with] wit P; þer M.

267. an] & E. ar] er IMS; or E.
entrie] so PE; entre IMSEG.

268. myght] myth M; myghtust S.
lese] leue S. to] and M. þi EM]
þy I; þe PS; cf. l. 263.

269. [hit MSG] it I; PE om. þorn
—þorgh] wiþ grace · and wiþ M.
[gifte EI] gift M; gefte S; gyse P.

270. Ther] Ac þer I. sustres]
sustren M.

271. aren] so PSI; arn M; ben E.
at] ouer þe I; and (!) M. to—long-
en] to þat place bilongen I; longen

272. hatte] hatteþ M. humilite]
humblete I.

273. maydenes IMS] maydones PE.

274. helpen] þey helpe I.

275. lat] so PIMS; lateþ E.

277. hue] sche M; þo E; he I.
prisons] prisoneres I.

278. ho] who EI; ho so S; whose
M. P omits latter half of l. 278, l.

279, and former half of l. 280, which
are supplied from S; found also in
IMEG.

279. He] IMEG om.

280. Ho] Who IG; Who so E;
Whose M. þese M] þis SIE.

281. heued] hed MES.

282. geten] gete eny S. ingang
ESG] ingange I; in-gate M; engang
P.

"Ne ich," quath an apewardē · "by ouht þat ich knowe!" wafer-maker
 "Wyte god," quap a wafrestre · "wist ich þe soþe, 285 declare they have
 Ich wolde no forþer a fot · for no freres prechingē." no kindred there;

"3us," quap peers plouhman · and pokede hem alle to but Piers tells
 goode; them Mercy
 dwells there also,
 who is of kin to
 all sinful men.

"Mercy is [a] mayde þere · hath myght ouer hem alle;
 And hue is sybbe to alle synful · and hure sone boþe.

And þorwe þe help of hem two · hope þow non oþer,
 Thow myght gete grace ther · so þow go by tyme." 291

"3e, villam emi," quap on · "and now most ich þudere, † One sinner says
 To loke how me lykeþ hit" · and tok hus leue at he has bought a
 farm; (Luke xiv.
 18);
 peers.

Anoþer a-non ryght · nede seyde he hadde † another, that he
 To folwen fif zokes · "for-þy me by-houeþ 295 he has bought five
 To gon with a good wil · and [greipliche] hem dryue; yoke of oxen;
 (Luke xiv. 19);

For-þy ich praye 3ow, peers · paraunter, yf 3e metep
 Treuthe, telleþ to hym · þat ich be excused."

Thenne was þer on heihte actif · an hosebounde he † another, named
 semed; Active, that he
 has just wedded a
 wife.

"Ich haue ywedded a wyf," quap he · "wel wantowen
 of maners; 300

Were ich seuenyght fro hure syghte · [synnen] hue
 wolde,

284. *by*] for S. *ouht*] nout M.

285. *Wyte*] By E. *wafrestre*] wa-
 frustere S; waferer M. *þe soþe*] for
 soþe SG; þis forsoþe I.

286. *Ich—no*] I wilde nout M;
 Wolde I neuer I. *a*] no I.

287. *3us*] 3is I. *peers*] peres þe I.
pokede EMSG] pukede P; plokede I;
cf. l. 263.

288. [*a* EMIG] PS *om.*

289. *hue—sybbe*] sibbe is 3o E.

290. *two* E] tuo I; to PMS.

291. *tyme*] tymes I.

292. *þudere*] so PE; þidere M;
 þider I; þeper S.

293. *me—hit*] hit likeþ me M. *at*]
 of E.

294. *nede* EMSG] ne (*sic*) I; nude
 P. *seyde*] he seide MIS.

295. *folwen*] falwe with I. *for-
 thy*] for-why M.

296. *with*] wit P. [*greipliche* M]
 graithliche I; grettliche PESG.

297. *Fbr—þy*] For-why M.

298. *to hym*] him þis I.

299. *Thenne*] Ðo M. *heihte*] hiȝte
 MI; hiȝt E; hyet S; heet G. *an*]
 & E.

300. *quap he*] I *om.* *wel*] ful I.
wantowen] wantoun I; wanton S.

301. *Were*] Where P. *seuenyght*]
 seue nyght IE; seuene nyȝt MS.
syghte] sith M; *miswritten* syghit P;
 I *om.* [*synnen* M] syngun S; sinege
 G; siggen E; seggen P; chiden I.
hue] he PS; sche MI; 3o E; *but see*
 l. 304.

The boldnesse of þy bynfet · makeþ þe blynde þenne,
 So worst þow dryuen out as deuh · and þe dore closed,
 Y-keyed and yclyketed · to close þe with-oute,
 Hapliche an hondred wynter · ar þow eft entrie. 267
 þus myght þou lese hus loue · to lete wel by pi-selue,
 And geten [hit] a-geyn þorw grace · ac þorgh no [gifte]
 elles.

But there are also seven sisters
 there at the gates,
 called Abstinence,
 Humility,
 Charity, Chastity,
 Patience, Peace,
A 73 B 91
 and Bounty.

Ther ben seuene sustres · that seruen treuthe euere,
 And aren porters at posternes · þat to þe place longen ;
 þat on hatte abstinence · and humilite anoper, 272
 Charite and chastite · ben hus chef maydenes,
 Pacience and pees · muche puple helpen,
 Largenesse þat lady · lat yn ful menye ;
 Non of hem alle · helpe may yn betere, 276
 For hue paieþ for prisons · in places and in peynes.
 And ho is sybbe to þuse seuene · [so me god helpe !
 He is wondirlich welcome · & fayre vndirfonge.
 Ho is not sib to þese seuene] · sothly to telle, 280
 Hit is ful hard, by myn heued · eny of 3ou alle
 To geten ingang at eny gate · bote grace be þe more.”
 “By cryst,” quath a kitte-pors · “ich haue no kyn þere.”

Without their
 aid it is hard to
 gain entrance at
 that gate.”

The cut-purse,
 the ape-ward, and

264. þy] þe S. bynfet] benfet M ;
 benefet ES ; benefetes I.

Here MS. F has lost eight leaves.

265. worst MS] worth PEIG ; cf. l.
 236, foot-note. deuh] so PS ; dew
 M ; dewe I ; deþ (!) E.

266. yclyketed] miswritten ycly-
 keded P. with] wit P ; þer M.

267. an] & E. ar] er IMS ; or E.
 entrie] so PE ; entre IMSE.

268. myght] myth M ; myghtust S.
 lese] leue S. to] and M. þi EM]
 þy I ; þe PS ; cf. l. 263.

269. [hit MSG] it I ; PE om. þorw
 —þorgh] wiþ grace · and wiþ M.
 [gifte EI] gift M ; gefte S ; gyse P.
 270. Ther] Ac þer I. sustres]
 sustren M.

271. aren] so PSI ; arn M ; ben E.
 at] ouer þe I ; and (!) M. to—long-
 en] to þat place bilongen I ; longen

to þe place M.

272. hatte] hatteþ M. humilite]
 humblete I.

273. maydenes IMS] maydones PE.

274. helpen] þey helpe I.

275. lat] so PIMS ; lateþ E.

277. hue] sche M ; 3o E ; he I.
 prisons] prisoneres I.

278. ho] who EI ; ho so S ; whose
 M. P omits latter half of l. 278, l.
 279, and former half of l. 280, which
 are supplied from S ; found also in
 IMEG.

279. He] IMEG om.

280. Ho] Who IG ; Who so E ;
 Whose M. þese M] þis SIE.

281. heued] hed MES.

282. geten] gete eny S. ingang
 ESG] ingange I ; in-gate M ; engang
 P.

"Ne ich," quath an apewarde · "by ouht þat ich knowe!" wafer-maker
 "Wyte god," quap a wafrestre · "wist ich þe sope, 285 declare they have
 Ich wolde no forþer a fot · for no freres prechinge." no kindred *there*;

"Ȝus," quap peers plouhman · and pokede hem alle to goode; but Piers tells
 them Mercy
 dwells there also,
 who is of kin to
 all sinful men.

"Mercy is [a] mayde pere · hath myght ouer hem alle;
 And hue is sybbe to alle synful · and hure sone bope.

And þorwe þe help of hem two · hope þow non oþer,
 Thow myght gete grace ther · so þow go by tyme." 291

"Ȝe, *villam emi*," quap on · "and now most ich þudere, † One sinner says
 he has bought a
 farm; (Luke xiv.
 18);
 To loke how me lykep hit" · and tok hus leue at
 peers.

Anoþer a-non ryght · nede seyde he hadde † another, that he
 has bought five
 yoke of oxen;
 To folwen fif ȝokes · "for-thy me by-houep 295 (Luke xiv. 19);
 To gon with a good wil · and [greipliche] hem dryue;
 For-þy ich praye ȝow, peers · paraunter, yf Ȝe metep
 Treuthe, telleþ to hym · þat ich be excused."

Thenne was þer on heihte actif · an hosebounde he † another, named
 Active, that he
 has just wedded a
 wife.
 semed;

"Ich haue ȝwedded a wyf," quap he · "wel wantowen
 of maners; 300

Were ich seuenyght fro hure syghte · [synnen] hue
 wolde,

284. *by*] for S. *ouht*] nout M.

285. *Wyte*] By E. *wafrestre*] wa-
 frustere S; waferer M. *þe sope*] for
 sope SG; þis forsope I.

286. *Ich—no*] I wilde nout M;
 Wolde I neuer I. *a*] no I.

287. *Ȝus*] ȝis I. *peers*] peres þe I.
pokede EMSG] pukede P; plokede I;
cf. l. 263.

288. [*a* EMIG] PS *om.*

289. *hue—sybbe*] sibbe is ȝo E.

290. *two* E] tuo I; to PMS.

291. *tyme*] tymes I.

292. *þudere*] so PE; þidere M;
 þider I; þeper S.

293. *me—hit*] hit likeþ me M. *at*]
 of E.

294. *nede* EMSG] ne (*sic*) I; nude
 P. *seyde*] he seide MIS.

295. *folwen*] falwe with I. *for-*
thy] for-whi M.

296. *with*] wit P. [*greipliche* M]
 graithliche I; grettliche PESG.

297. *For-þy*] For-whi M.

298. *to hym*] him þis I.

299. *Thenne*] Do M. *heihte*] hiȝte
 MI; hiȝt E; hyet S; heet G. *an*]
 & E.

300. *quap he*] I *om.* *wel*] ful I.
wantowen] wantoun I; wanton S.

301. *Were*] Where P. *seuenyght*]
 seue nyght IE; seue ne nyȝt MS.
syghte] sith M; *miswritten* syghit P;
 I *om.* [*synnen* M] syngun S; sinege
 G; siggen E; seggen P; chiden I.
hue] he PS; sche MI; ȝo E; *but see*
 l. 304.

And loure on me and lyghtliche chide · and seye ich
loue anopere. 302

For-þy, peers plouhman · ich praye þe telle hit treuthe,
Ich may nat come for a kytte · so hue cleueþ on me ;

† Luke xiv. 20.

Vxorem duxi, et ideo non possum uenire."

Quaþ contemplacion, " by crist · thauh ich care suffre,
Famyn and defaute · folwen ich wolfe peers ; 306

A 74 B 93

Contemplation
says, "the
pilgrims need a
guide."

Ac þe wey ys so wyckede · bote ho [so] hadde a gyde
þat myght folwen ous ech fot · for drede of mys-torn-
ynge." 308

Hic explicit passus octauus.

302. *And*] M *om.* *chide*] saie I.
seye] saide I. *loue*] loued EG.

303. *For-þy*] For-whi M. *peers*] peres þe I. *þe—hit*] þow telleþ M.

304. *for*] fro E. *a*] EI *om.* *hue*] 30 E ; sche MIS. *cleueþ* MISE]

clyueþ P ; cliueþ G. *cleueþ—me*] on me cleueþ M.

306. *folwen—wolfe*] i wole folewe M.

307. *so*] ful S ; wel G. [*so* EISG] se M ; P *om.*

308. *ech*] ich a I.

COLOPHON. *So* PG ; *so also* in ES, *omitting* Hic.

PASSUS IX.

Incipit passus Nonus.

THo seyde perken plouhman · “by seynt peter of (A 74 B 93)
 rome,

Piers says he will guide them, when he has ploughed his half-acre.

Ich haue an half acre to eren · by þe hye weye.

Hadde ich ered þat half acre · and sowen hit after,

Ich wolde wende with 3ow · and þe wey teche.” 4

“That were a long lettyngne” · quap a lady in a skleire,

“That were long to wait,” said a lady; “and what shall we women do meanwhile?”

“What sholde we wommen · worche þe whiles?”

“Ich praye 3ow, for 3oure profit” · quap peers to þe ladies,

“þat somme sewe þe sak · for shedyngne of þe whete; 8

And 3e worply wommen · with 3oure longe fyngres,

Piers tells them to sew chasubles,

þat 3e on selke and sendel · sewen, whenne tyme ys,

Chesybles for chapelayns · churches to honoure.

Wyues and widowes · wolde and flax spynneþ; 12

Conscience consaileþ 3ow · cloþ for to make

For profit of þe poure · and plesaunce of 3ow-selue.

TITLE. So PEG; Incipit nonus S; Hic incipit passus nonus de uisione M; Passus Octauus, vt prius I.

1. *Tho—perken*] Quod perkyn þe I. *perken*] peres M.

2. *to—weye*] an eryng · & mote sowen hit after E. Cf. l. 3.

3. *sowen* S] i-sowen M; y-sowe IG. and—after] by þe hey wey E; cf.

l. 2.

4. *witþ*] wit P.

5. *skleire*] chare I.

6. *þe*] þer M.

8. *whete*] wete P.

9. *worply*] worthely I; worþi MS. *witþ*] wit P.

10. *selke*] silke EI. *sowen*] to sewen PE; to sewe I; but MSG omit to. *whenne*] wenne P. *tyme ys*] hit is tyme M.

11. *Chesybles*] For chesyblus S. honoure IMESG] honore P.

14. *poure*] poeple I.

A 75 B 94 For ich shal lene hem lyfode · bote yf þe lond faile, 15
As longe as ich lyue · for oure lordes loue in heuene.

and to help the
poor labourers.

And alle manere men · þat by þis molde buþ susteyned,
Helpeþ hem to worche wyghtly · þat wyneþ þoure
fode."

A knight declares
he will help Piers
to labour.

"By cryst," quap a knyzt þo · "he kenneþ ous þe beste ;
Ac on þe teeme trewely · tauht was ich neuere ; 20
Ich wolde ich couthe," quap þe knyzt · "by cryst and
hus moder ;

Ich wolde a-saye som tyme · for solas, as hit were."

Piers says he will
work for both, if
the knight will
guard the church
from wasters,

"Sykerliche, syre knyzt" · seide peers þenne, 23

"Ich shal swynke and swete · and sowe for us boþe,
And laboure for þe while þou lyuest · al þy lyf-tyme,
In couenaunt þat þou kepe · holy [kirke] and my-selue
[Fro] wastours and wyckede men · þat þis worlde
struen.

and hunt hares
and foxes,

A 76

And go honte hardiliche · to hares and to foxes, 28
To bores and to bockes · þat brekeþ a-doune menne
hegges ;

B 95

and kill the wild
birds with
falcons.

And faite þy faucones · to culle wylde foules ;
For þei comen to my croft · my corn to defoule."

Corteysliche þe knyzt þen · comsede þese wordes ; 32

The knight gladly
consents.

"By my power, peers · ich plyghte þe my treuthe,
To defende þe in faith · fyghte þauh ich sholde."

15. *hem*] 3ow M. *yf*] I *om.*

16. *lyue* IMSEG] leue P; *but see*
l. 57. *oure*] I *om.* *in*] of IMSG.

17. *þis*] þe I. *molde*] land M.
buþ] beþ S; ben E; is Ml.

18. *hem*] him MIG. *to*] IS *om.*
wyghtly] whyghtly P; wytly S;
withly M; wittiliche I.

20. *on-teeme*] one tyme I. *trewely*] trywely P.

23. *knyzt*] knyȝt P; cf. l. 21.

24. *us*] hus P.

25. *for þe*] S *om.* *þe—lyuest*] þo
þou louest I. *lyuest* EMS] liuist G;
leuest P; cf. l. 57. *þy*] my ISG.

26. [*kirke* I] church PEMs. *my*

EIG] me PMS.

27. [*Fro* IMSG] For PE. *and*] and
fro I. *þis* IMSE] þys G; þus P.
struen] struyen E; stryen SG; stroyen
I; distryen M.

28. *hardiliche*] hardileche P.
foxes] uoxes M.

29. *bockes*] buckus S; bukkes lG.
a-doune] down MSE. *menne*] men
E; myn MG; my S.

30. *And faite*] And affaite I;
Afaite MSG. *þy*] þe S. *culle*] kille
þe I.

32. *knyzt*] knyȝt (*sic*) P; kinge
I. *þen*] þo M. *comsede*] conseyuede
M. *þese* MS] þise I; þes P; þis E.

"And ȝut on poynt," quap peers · "ich praye ȝow ouer-
more ; 35

Piers further bids
him to harm no
tenant, to take no
gifts from the
poor,

Loke ȝe tene no tenaunt · bote yf treuth wolte assente.

Whenne ȝe amercyn eny man · let mercy be taxour,

And meknesse þy maister · maugre mede chekes.

þauh poure men profre ȝou · presentes and ȝiftes, 39

Nym hit nat, an aunter · thow mowe hit nat deserue ;

For þow shalt ȝulde, so may be · and somdel a-bygge.

Mys-beede nouht þy bondemen · þe bet may [þou] to injure no
labourer,
spede ;

þauh he be here þyn vnderling · in heuene, paraunter,

He worth rapier receyued · and reuerentloker sette ; 44 remembering
the text, Luke
xiv. 10 ;

Amice, ascende superius.

At church e in þe charnel · cheorles aren vuel to knowe,

Oþer a knyght fro a knaue · oþer a queyne fro a

queene.

Hit by-comeþ to a knyght · to be curteys and hende,

Trewe of hys tonge · tales loth to huyre,

48 **B 96**
to be true of
tongue,

Bote þei be of bounte · of batailes and of treuthe.

Hald nat of harlotes · huyre nat here tales,

Nameliche atte mete · suche men eschewe ;

and to avoid
ribalds.

Hit ben þe deueles disours · to drawe men to synne. 52

35. ȝut] M *om.* *on*] o ES ; a I.
ouer SG] ouere P ; of I ; euer E ; M
om.

36. *tene* IMSEG] tuene P. *yf*] IS *om.* *wolle*] M *om.*

37. *Whenne*] Wenne P ; And whan I. *amercyn*] so PS ; amercen M ; *amerciþ* E ; mercien I.

38. *mede*] medes M.

39. *þauh*] And þogh I. *presentes*] presantes P. *ȝiftes* IMESG] ȝeftes P.

40. *Nym*] Nymeþ M. *thow mowe*] ȝe mai M ; þou myȝt EG.

41. *shalt*] may S. *ȝulde*] ȝelde MSEG ; ȝelden it I. *and*] or I. *a-bygge*] abuggen it I.

42. *þy*] þe M. *bondemen* ISE] boundemen P ; bondeman MG. *bet*] bettere M. *may*] myȝht S. [þou EMSG] þe PI. *may þou*] þow myȝt M.

43. *here*] þer-in E.

44. *sette*] sitte MISG. *Amice, &c.*] M *om.*

45. *in þe*] or in M. *cheorles*] cherles IMS ; chorles E. *aren*] beþ S. *vuel*] yuel E ; euyll S ; euel IM.

46. *knyght*] kyng M. *fro* (1) or I. *oþer*] MS *om.* *queyne*] queene EG ; quene IMS. *queene*] quene EG.

47. *to* (1) for M. *a*] þe ISG.

48. *hys*] þy IG. *huyre*] hure E ; here M ; heere I.

49. *and*] or I.

50. *of*] wiþ none I. *huyre*] hure E ; her M ; ne heere I.

51. *Nameliche*] Ac *nameliche* I. *atte*] at þe IM ; at S. *eschewe* IMSG] eschywe P ; eschiwe E.

52. *Hit*—þe] For it ben I.

Contreplede nat conscience · ne holy [kirke] ryghtes."

The knight again assents. "Ich assente, by seynt Gyle" · seyde þe knyght þenne,

"For to worche by þy witt · and my wyf boþe."

A 77

"Ich shal apaiaile me," quath perkyn · "in pylgrymes

wyse,

56

And wende with alle þo · þat wolle lyue in treuthe."

Piers says he will get ready to go, and take with him corn to sow,

He caste on hym hus cloþes · of alle kynne craftes,

Hus cokeres and hus cufes · as kynde witt hym tauhte,

And heng hus hoper on hus hals · in stede of a scrippe ;

A boussel of bred-corn · brouht was þer-ynne. 61

"For ich wolle sowe hit my-self · and sitthe wol y-wende

To pylgrimages, as [palmeres] don · pardon to wynne.

My plouh-fot shal be my pyk-staf · and picche a two

þe rotes,

64

And help my culter to kerue · and clanse þe forwes.

promising that all who help him shall have leave to glean in harvest,

And alle þat helpen me to eryl · oþer elles to weden,

Shal haue leue, by oure lorde · to go and glene after,

And make hym murye þer-myð · maugre ho by-grucche.

And alle kynne crafty men · þat conne lyue in treuthe,

B 97

and that he will find all their food,

Ich shal fynde hem fode · þat feythfullech lybben ;

except Jack the juggler, and Janet of the stews, and Robin the tale-

Saf Iack [þe] Iogelour · and Ionette of þe styues,

And danyel þe dees-pleyere · and denote þe baude, 72

And al-so frere faytour · and folke of [þat] ordre,

Daniel the dice player

53. *Contreplede*] Ne counterplede I. [kirke I] churche PES; chyrche M; churchis G.

56. *Ich shal*] And I schal I. *aparaile*] paraile I. *in*] in a M.

57. *witt*] wit P. *wolle*] wolden I.

58. *He*] And I. *hym*] M om.

60. *heng*] hyng M. *in*] in þe M.

61. *boussel*] buschel ESG; busschel M.

62. *ywende*] so PE; I wende IMS.

63. *pylgrimages*] pilgrimage M. [palmeres EIS] palmeres MG; pilgrymes P (by mistake).

64. *plouh-fot*] plowbat S. *picche* —two] putte a-wai M.

65. *forwes*] forewes MS.

66. *weden*] wende (wrongly) E.

67. *leue by*] loue of M; leue of G. to—and] forte M. *glene*] elene S. after] after me I.

68. *myð*] wiþ MS. *maugre ho*] malgre who I; whose euere M. *by-grucche*] by-grucche hit S; bygroch it I.

71. [þe IMG] PES om. *Iogelour*] gogeler M. *of þe*] of MG; at S. *styues*] stywes I.

72. þe (1)] E om. *denote* IMSEG] denete P; denyce E.

73. *al-so*] also þe M; I om. [þat IMSEG] þe P.

þat lollers and loseles · for leel men halden,
And Robyn þe rybaudour · for hus rusty wordes.

teller, a worthless
set.

For treuthe tolde me ones · and bade [me] telle [hit]
forthere, 76

Deleantur de libro uiuencium · Ich sholde nat dele with
hem,

Psaln lxviii. 29
(Vulgate).

For holy churche hotep · of hem to aske no tythe,

Quia cum iustis non scribantur.

A 78

Thei ben ascaped good aunter · now god hem amende !"

Dame worche-when-tyme-is · peers wyf hyhte ; 80
Hus douhter hihte do-ryght-so · oper-þy-damme-shal-
þe-bete ;

Piers' wife is
named Work-
when-time-is, his
daughter is Do-
as-you-are-bid,
and his son is
Obey-your-king.

Hus sone hihte suffre · py-souereynes-haue-here-wil,
Deme-hem-nouht-for-yf-þow-do · thow-shalt-dere-abigge.

"Consaille nat þe comune · þe kyng to displese, 84
Ne hem þat han lawes to loke · lacke hem nat, ich hote,
Let god worthe with al · as holy writ techep ;

Counsel not the
people to king
displese -

Super cathedram moysi sedent, et cetera ;

Mat. xxiii. 2.

Maistres, as þe meyres ben · and grete men senatours,
What þei comaunde as by þe kyng · contrepleide hit
neuere, 88

Al þat þey hoten, ich hote · heyliche, thow suffre hem ;
By here warnyng and worchyng · worch þow þer-after ;

74. þat] þat ben M. lollers]
lores M. for] þat M ; I om.

76. [me EIMSG] P om. [hit MS]
it I ; PEG om.

77, 78. Misarranged in all the
copies, which put *Deleantur—uiuencium*
in one line, Ich—hotep in a
second, and of hem—scribantur in a
third ; but see B-text.

77. After *uiuencium* E inserts &
cum iustis non scribantur (unneces-
sarily). Ich] I ne M. hem] him
E.

78. to aske] þat askep M. hotep
—tuthe] is hote of hem no tpe aske
I.

80. when] wen P. is] his P.
hyhte] hatte S.

81. hihte] heithe P (but see l. 82) ;
hizte MI ; hize E ; hatte S. damme]
so PM ; dame IESG.

82. hihte] hatte S.

83. for] I om. do] dost I. dere
abigge] it dere abegge I ; hit dere
a-bigge G.

84. nat] nat so I.

85. loke] kepe S. lacke] lawe (!)
S. hote] hote þe I.

86. worthe] I-worþe I ; worche S.
techep] techep þe I ; telleþ M. se-
dent] sedebant E ; S om.

87. ben] I om. men] M om.

89. þey IES] þei M ; miswritten
þe P ; cf. l. 88. hote] hote þe E.

90. By] And after I. and] and
heore M.

Mat. xxiii. 3.

Omnia que dicunt, facite & servate ;

Ac after here doynge do þow nat · my dere sone," quap
peers.

Piers says he is
old, and must
make his will.

"For now ich am old and hor · and haue of myn owene,
To penaunces and to pilgrimages · ich wol passe with
opere ; 93

For-thi ich wolle, er ich wende · do wryten my by-
quyste.

THE TESTAMENT.

TESTAMENTUM PETRI PLOUHMAN.

"I bequeath my
soul to Him that
best deserves it,

In dei nomine, amen · Ich make hit my-self.

He shal haue my soule · þat alle soules made, 96

And defende hit fro þe feende · and so is my by-leyue,
[Til ich come to hus acountes · as my crede telleþ,

B 98

and my body to
the church, that
takes tithe of my
corn.

To haue remissioun and relees · on þat rental ich leue.]

The [kirke] shal haue my caroyne · and kepe my bones,

For of my corn and catel · he crauede my tythe. 101

Ich payed hit prestliche · for peril of my soule,

A 79

He is holdinge, ich hope · to haue me in hus masse,

And menge me in hus memorie · among alle cristine.

My wife shall
have my lawful
winnings, for my
debts are all paid.

My wyf shal haue of þat ich wan · with treuthe, and
no more, 105

And dele hit among my douhtres · and my dere
children.

For þauh ich deyde þys day · my dettes ben quyted ;

Ich bar hom þat ich borwede · er ich to bedde ȝeode.

91. *do*] ne do I.

92. *old—hor*] bore & old S.

93. *with*] wiþ þis I.

94. *For-thi*] For-ghi M. *er*] or
MS. *do*] to M. *Testamentum, &c.*
in PE only.

97. *fro*] as fro I. *by-leyue*] bileue
EM; bileue I; beleue S.

98, 99. *From* IG; PEMS *om.*; cf.
B. vi. 91, 92.

98. *ich*] i I; y G (*so also in* l. 99);
cf. l. 95. *his*] his IG; cf. l. 103.
as G] ac I (*wrongly*). *my* I] þe G.

99. *and* G] a I. *relees* G] reles I.

100. [*kirke* IM] church PESG.

101. *and*] and of my I; and my M.
my tythe] me tipe I; me tepe S.

103. *is*] his P. *holdinge*] so PI;
holdyng EMS; holden G.

104. *menge*] mynge I.

106. *hit*] M *om.* *dere*] leue M.
children] childres I.

107. *deyde*] deied E; deye ISG;
deȝe M. *þys*] to IG. *dettes ben*]
dette is IG. *quyted*] y-quyted IS;
a-quitied G; quite M.

108. *ich* (1)] E *om.* *er*] or EMS.
ȝeode] ȝede EIMSG.

and said all they
could do was to
pray for him,

"Ac we prayeþ for 3ow, peers · and for 3oure plouh boþe,
þat god for hus grace · 3oure grayn multiplie, 132
And 3elde 3ow of 3oure almesse · þat 3e 3euen us here.

since they could
not work.

We may nayþer swynke ne swete · suche syknesse ous
ayleþ;

We haue none lymes to laborie with · lord god we
þonkeþ." 135

† "Your prayers
might help,
if ye were true
men," said Piers.

"3oure praiers," quath peers · "and 3e parfit were,
Myght help, as ich hope; · ac hye treuthe wolde
þat no faiterye were founde · in folk þat gon a-begged.
3e ben wastours, ich wot wel · þat wasten and deuouren
þat leel land-tylynge men · leelliche byswynken. 140

B 100

"But I fear ye
are wasters.

A 81

Truth shall teach
you to drive his
team;

Ac treuthe shal teche 3ow · hus teeme for to dryue,
Oþer 3e shulle ete barliche brede · and of þe brok
drynke,

Bote 3e be blynde oþer brokelegged · oþer bolted with
yren.

but those who are
really blind I will
help.

Suche poure," quap peers · "shullen partye with my
goodes, 144

Boþe of my corn and of my cloþ · to kepe hem fro
defaute;

Anchorites and
hermits I will
feed.

Ancres and heremites · þat eten bote at nones,
And freres þat flateren nat · and poure folke syke,
What! ich and myne · wollep fynde hem þat hem
needeþ." 148

Then one of the

B 101

Thenne gan wastour to wratth · and wolde haue fouhten,

131. *Ac*] And I. *for* (2)] fore P.
3oure] þi M.

132. *for*] of M. *multiplie* ESI]
multeplie P; multeplize M.

133. *3elde* EISMG] 3ulde P. *3euen*
us] *miswritten* 3eueue hus P.

134. *nayþer*] neyþer I; noþer EMS.

135. *We haue*] Ne I.

136. *praiers*] preiere M. *3e*] hy E.

137. *hope*] trowe S.

138. *faiterye*] faytrie IE; faitour
MS. *gon*] goþ IG. *a-begged*] so PG;
abegged E; a-beggyd S; abeggeþ I;
and beggen M.

139. *þat*] and I.

140. *tylynge*] tylyng S; telyngge
M. *leelliche*] leellich E; lelli MS;
lely I; leelleche P.

141. *for*] I om.

143. *3e*] if he I. *with*] wit P.

144. *partye*] parte EIMG. *with*]
wit P.

146. *Ancres*] And ankeres I.

147. *folke*] men and M.

148. *wolleþ*] wul S. *þat*] what IG.
hem þat] al þat M.

149. *wastour*] wastours M. *wratth*]
wreþþe hem M; wraþþe him I.

And to peers plouhman · proferede to fighte,
 And bad hym 'go pisse with hus plouh · peyuesshe
 shrewe !'

wasters began to
 resist,
 and threatened
 Piers,

151

A brytonere com braggynge · a-bosted peers al-so ;
 "Wolle þow, ne wolle þow · we wolleþ habbe oure wil, **A 82**
 Boþe þy flour and þy flessch · fecchen when ous lykeþ,
 And make ous myrye þer-myd · maugre ho by-
 gruccheþ !"

155

Peers þe plouhman þo · pleynede to þe knyght,
 To kepe hym and hus catel · as couenaunt was by-
 twyne hem :

who prayed the
 knight to keep his
 promise,

"Awreke me of þese wastours · þat maken þys worlde
 dere ;

Thei counte nat of cursyng · ne holy [kirke] dreden ;
 Ther worth no plente," quap peers · "and þe plouh
 ligge."

† since such men
 dreaded no
 curses.

160

Curtesliche þe knyght þen · as hus kynde wolde,
 Warned wastour · and wissede hym betere,
 "Oper ich shal bete þe by þe lawe · and brynge þe in
 stockes."

The knight
 sternly warns
 them.

"Ich was nat woned [to] wirche," quap wastour · "and
 ich wolle nat now bygynne,"

B 102
 But one of them
 cared nothing for
 Piers or the
 knight, and
 threatened them.

164

And let lyght of þe lawe · and lasse of þe knyght,
 And sette peers at a pese · pleyne hym wher he wolde.

150. I omits.

151. *peyuesshe*] peyuysche EMSG.

152. *com*] cam IMSG; came E. *a-bosted*] & bosted EG; and abostede MS; he bostede I.

153. *Wolle*] Wilt M; Wult S. *ne wolle*] ne wolt S; nylt M; nelle EI. *þow*] þou, quop he I. *nil*] willus S.

154. *Boþe*] And I. *when*] wen P.

155. *ho*] whose M. *bygruccheþ*] by-grucche SG; gruccheþ M.

156. *þo*] M om. *to*] him to I.

157. *bytwyne hem*] bi-fore M.

158. *of*] on M. *þese* S] þis ME; þise I; þes P. *worlde* EI] world MS; wordle G; worde P.

159. *counte*] a-counten M. *cursyng*] cursynges I. [*kirke* I] church PES; chirche M.

160. *Ther*] For þer I. *plente*] *miswritten* pleynte P.

162. *wastour*] wastours M. *hym*] hem M.

163. *þe*] þow M (*twice*). *in*] in-to M.

164. *woned* EIMG] wonyd S; wont (*altered to wond*) P. [*to* IMSG] PE om. *quap*] quod a M. *and*] MSG om. *ich—now*] now wil I not I.

165. *And—lyght*] He tolde litel M.

166. *a pese*] an ase I. *pleyne*] to pleyne I. *hym*] MG om. *wher*] wer P.

Piers swears he
will punish them
yet, and calls in
Hunger.

"Now, by crist," quath peers · "y shal apeyre 3ow
alle!"

And hopede after hunger · þat herde [him] at þe ferste.

"Ich praye þe," quath peers þo · "pur charite, sire
honger, 169

Awreke me of þese wastours · for þe knyght wol nat."

Hunger caught
Waster, and
A 83
wring and
buffeted him so,

Honger hente in haste · wastour by þe mawe.

And wrang hym by þe wombe · þat al waterede hus
eyen. 172

He buffated þe brutener · a-boute þe chekes,

þat he loked lyk a lanterne · al hus lyf after.

He bet hem so boþe · he barst neih hure guttes, 175

that Piers had to
interfere, and
pray Hunger to
cease.

Ne hadde peers with a peese-lof · prayede hym by-leue.

"Honger, haue mercy of hem," quath peers · "and let
me ȝene hem benes ;

And þat was bake for bayarde · may be here bote."

Then the shirkers
flew to the barns
to thrash ;

Tho were faitours a-fered · and flowen to peersses bernes,

And flapten on with flailes · fro morwe til euene, 180

B 103

þat hunger was nat hardy · on hem for to loke,

For a potful of potage · þat peersses wyf made.

Hermits seized
spades and dug.

An hep of eremites · henten hem spades,

Spitten and spradde donge · in despit of hunger. 184

Thei coruen here copes · and courtepies hem made,

And wenten as workmen · to weden and mowen ;

167. *peers*] peres þe ploweman I.

168. *hopede*] houped IESG ;

hopede M. *þat*] and I. [*him*
IMSG] PE *om.* at þe] atte I ; ate S.

169. *pur*] por S ; for M ; *cf.* l. 267.

170. *me*] I *om.* *of*] on M. *þese*] þese P.

171. *hente—haste*] in haste þo ·
hente I. *wastour*] a waster M.

172. *wrang*] wrong IMSG. *by*] so
by I.

173. *buffated*] so PIM ; buffeted
E ; bofeted S. *brutener*] bretoner
IS ; bretener M ; britonere E.

175. *hem*] S *om.* so boþe] boþ so
E. *neih*] ner I.

176. *with*] wit P.

177. *of*] on IMSG. *hem*] him IS
(*twice*).

178. *bayarde*] bayerde P ; but see
l. 192. *may*] it may I ; mayre (!) S.

179. *to*] in-to I. *peersses*] peres
IMG ; pers E ; perus S ; so also in l.
182.

180. *flapten*] flatten E. *with*] whit P.

181. *on—for*] ones on hem M.

183. *An*] And an S. *henten*] bouten M.

185. *coruen*] curuen IM. *copes*
EIMS] coppes (*wrongly*) P.

186. *weden—mowen*] weden & to
mowen E ; wedyng and to mowyng
IMS.

Al for drede of here deþ · suche dyntes ȝaf [hunger.]

Blynde and brokeleggede · he botnede a þousande, 188

And lame men he lechede · with longen of bestes.

Preestes and oþer peple · to peers þei drowen,

And freres [of] alle fyue ordres · al for fere of hunger.

For þat þat was bake for bayarde · was bote for menye
hungry, 192

Drosenes and dregges · drynke for menye beggeres.

þer was [no] lad þat lyuede · þat ne lowede hym to
peers, (A 84)

To be hus hole hewe · þauh he hadde no more 195

Bute lyf-lode for hus labour · and hus loue at nones.

Tho was peers ful proude · and putte hem alle to werke,

In daubyng and in deluyng · in donge a-feld berynge,

In þresshyng, in þecchyng · in thwytyng of pynnes, †

And alle kynne trewe craft · þat man couthe deuyse. †

Was no beggere so bolde · bote yf he blynde were, 201

þat dorst with-sitte þat peeres seyde · for fere of syre
hunger.

And peers was proud þer-of · and putte hem alle to
swynke, for which Piers
gave them meat.

And ȝaf hem mete and monye · as þey myght deseruen.

Tho hadde peers pite · of alle poure puple, 205

And bad hunger [in] haste · hyhe out of contre

187. *Al*] And I. [*hunger* IEMGS] P *om.*

189. *lame*] alle lame M. *lechede*] lechnede M. *with*] wit P. *longen*] loungen E; longes IMSG.

190. *to*] toward I.

191. *And*] M *om.* [*of alle* ESG] alle þe IM; and alle P. *fyue*] foure M. *al*] and al M.

192. *þat þat*] þat IMG.

193. *Drosenes*] Drowsen M; Drousin G. *drynke* MISG] was drynke E; drenke P.

194. [*was no* ISG] ne was no M; nas E; was P; see l. 201. *lad*] lede I. *ne*] he ne M.

195. *hole*] hool S; holde IEG;

hold M. *here* I] hywe P; hyne EMSG.

196. *loue*] mete M; lof G; PEIS seem to have loue, not lone; cf. l. 287.

197. G *omits.* *peers*] perkyn M. *ful*] I *om.* *to werke*] a-werke IS.

198. *and in*] and M. *a-feld*] afelde EI; on feld M.

199. *of*] S *om.*

200. *And*] In IM. *couthe*] can S.

202. *with-sitte*] wit-sitte P.

203. *swynke* IEMSG] swynge P.

205. *of*] vp-on I; on M. *alle*] alle þe M.

206. [*in* IEMSG] on P. *hyhe*] hye E; hiȝe M; hie him IS; hien G.

The blind,
bedridden, and
lame received
assistance.

† threshing,
thatching, and
cutting pins,

for which Piers
gave them meat.

Then had Piers
pity,

yet fears the
wasters will do ill
when Hunger
departs,

B 104

though they are
meek enough
now.

† They love me
not, though they
speak fair.

So he asks
Hunger to give
him advice.

A 85

Hunger tells him
to feed the able-
bodied beggars
with horses' bread
and beans,

Home in-to his owen erthe · and halde hym þer euere—

“For ich am wel awreke · of wastours þorw þy myghte.

Ac ich praye þe,” quap peers · “hunger, er þow wende,

Of beggers and of bydders · what best be to done? 210

For ich wot wel, be þou went · worche þei wolle ful ylle;

Meschief hit makeþ · thei ben so meke nouthe, 212

And for defaute þis folke · folwen my hestes.

Hit is no þyng for loue · thei labour þus faste, —

Bote for fere of famyn · in faith,” seide peers;

“Ys no final loue with þis folke · for al here faire

speche; 216

And hit [ben] my blody broþren · for god bouhte vs

alle.

Treuthe tauhte me ones · to louye hem echone,

And helpen hem of alle þyng · ay as hem nedep.

Now wolde ich wite, or þow wentest · what were þe

beste, 220

How ich myghte a-maistren hem · to louye and laboure

For here lyfode; · lere me, syre hunger.”

“Now herkne,” quap hunger · “and hold hit for a

wysdome;

Bolde beggeres and bygge · þat mowe here bred by-

swynke, 224

With houndes bred and hors-bred · hele hem when þei

hungren,

And a-bane hem with benes · for bollynge of here wombe.

207. *erthe*] *erd* S; *zerde* I. *þer*
euere] *þerinne* I.

208. *For*] I *om.* *awreke*] *awroke*
I. *of*] *on* M.

210. *and of*] and IM. *best be*] *be*
best S; is best M.

211. *þou*] *hungur* I.

214. *no—loue*] *noght for loue, leue*
it I. *thei*] *þat þey* S.

216. *Ys*] *þer* is IM. *final*] *so* PG;
fynel E; *feyþful* S; *filial* I; *lel* M.
with] *wit* P.

217. *hit*] *þei* M. [*ben* EM] *bep*
S; *aren* PG; *are* I; *see* l. 52.

219. *helpen*] to *helpe* I. *ay*] *euere*
M.

220. *wolde ich*] *y wulde* S. *wite*] *white* P.
wentest] *wendist* I. *what*] *wat* P.

221. *and*] and to IM.

222. *lyfode*] *owne lifode* S. *lere*] *lern* M.
me] *me now* I.

224. *Bolde*] And *bolde* P; *but*
IMSEG *omit* And. *and bygge*] *þat*
begge I.

226. *And*] ISG *om.* *bollynge*] *bolnyng* M.
wombe] *wombes* M.

And yf þe gromes grucche · bid hem go swynke, and to make them work.

And he shal soupe þe swettere · when he hath deserved.

And yf þow fynde eny folke · wham false men han Men who have been unfortunate should be comforted.
apaired, 229

Comforte hem with þy catel · for so comaundeþ treuthe ;

Loue hem and lene hem · so lawe of kynde wolde ;

Alter alterius onera portate.

And alle manere men · þat þow myght aspye 232 Gal. vi. 2. The wretched and diseased should be helped with money.

In meschief oper in mal-ese · and þow mowe hem helpe,

Loke by þy lyf · let hem nouht for-fare.

Yf þow hast wonne ouht wickeliche · wisliche dispende
hit ;

Facite uobis amicos de mammona iniquitatis."

B 105

Luke xvi. 9.

"Ich wolde nat greuye god," quapþ peers · "for al þe
good on erthe ; 236

Myghte ich synneles do as þou seist?" seide peers
plouhman.

A 86

Piers wants to know if it is right to make men work. Hunger refers him to the Bible ;

"3e, ich by-hote þe," quapþ hunger · "oper elles þe
byble lyep ;

Go to oure by-gynnyng · þo god þe worlde made,

As wise men han ywryte · and as wittnesseþ *genesis*,

That seith, with swynke and with swot · and swetyng
face 241

By-tylue and by-trauaile · treuly oure lyf-lode ;

In labore & sudore uultus tui uesceris pane tuo. Gen. iii. 19.

And salamon þe sage · with þe same acordeþ,

227. þe] þo S. go] go and IM.

228. þe] IMG om. when] wen P.
hath] it hap I ; hap hit MG.

229. And] Ac MIG. wham] wam
P ; þat I. men] folc M. han] hap
M ; haue SG.

231. so] and so I.

232. men] of men IMG.

234. Loke] Loke þow M.

235. hast] haue M. ouht] auzt S ;
I om. wickeliche] wickedlich EIG ;
wickedly S ; wrongfulli M. dispende
hit] þow hit spende M.

236. wolde—greuye] wul not greue
S. on] in IG.

237. synneles do] do synneles S.
peers] pieres þe I.

240. ywryte] ywritte E ; writen M ;
wrytun S ; y-writen I. as] I om.

241. seith] seip þat M. face] faces
M.

242. By-tylue] By-tylue S ; Bi-
telede M ; By tillyng E ; By-tyul G.
by-trauaile] bi-traueilede M. oure]
his M. & sudore] I om.

243—246. S omits.

The slowe caytyf for colde · wolde no corn tulye ; 244
 In somere for hus slewthe · he shal haue defaute,
 And gon abyrybē and beggen · and no man bete hus
 hunger.

Prov. xx. 4.

*Piger propter frigus noluit arare ; mendicabit
 in hyeme & non dabitur ei.*

The slothful ser-
 vant, Mat. xxv.
 28 ; Lu. xix. 22,
 24.

Matheu makeþ mencion · of a man þat lente

Hus seluer to þre manere men · and menyngē þat þei
 sholde 248

Chaffare and cheeue þer-with · in chele and in hete ;
 And he þat best laborede · best was alowed,
 And leders for here laborynge · ouere al þe lordes
 goodes.

Ac he þat was a wrecche · and wolde nat trauayle,
 The lord, for hus lacchesse · and hus luper sleuthe,
 By-nom hym al þat he hadde · and ȝaf hit to hus
 felawe

Mat. xxv. 29 ; Lu.
 xix. 26.

That leely hadde labored ; · and þenne þe lord seide,
 ‘ He þat hath shal haue · and helpe þer hym lykeþ ;
 And he þat nauht haueþ · he shal nauht haue, 257

A 87

And no man ȝut helpe hym ; · and þat he weneþ haue,
 Ich wolle hit hym by-reue · for hus rechelesnesse.’
 Lo ! what þe sauter seiþ · to swynkers with handes,
 ‘ Yblessed be alle þo · þat [here] by-lyue [by]swynken
 þorw eny leel labour · as þorgh lymes and handes ;’ 262

244. *nolde*] he wolde I. *tulye*] tily E ; telize M ; tilye I ; tylie G.

246. *abyrybē*] abribeth I ; abribed E ; a-bribid G ; a-boute M. *beggen*] abeggeth I ; a-begged G. *Piger*] I om. *hyeme*] estate (!) E.

248. *þre*] þe þre I. *and*] so PEIG ; in M ; S om. *þat*] I om.

249. *chele*] chelde E.

250. *laborede*] laboreþ E. *alowed*] alowede P.

251. *ouere*] of M.

253. *and*] and for M.

254. *to*] M om.

257—259. I has—

And he þat noght haþ schal noght

haue · & no man ȝit helpith hym,
 And þat he weneþ wel to haue · I
 wil it him byreue.

So M, which reads nout schal haue ·
 and no man him helpe, and omits wel.

257. *haueþ*] so PESG ; haþ IM.

258. G omits. *haue*] to haue S.

260. *Lo*] And lo I.

261. [*here* IG] heore M ; hure S ;
 he (by mistake) P ; E om. *by-lyur*] bileue IS. [*byswynken* E] byswyn-
 kuþ S ; bi-swynken M ; by-swinken G ;
 byswynkeþ I ; swynken P. *here*—
byswynken] lyueþ byswynken (sic) E.

262. *leel*] M om. *þorgh*] wiþ M.

Labores manuum tuarum quia manducabis; Ps. cxvii. 2

[*beatus es, et bene tibi erit:*] & *cetera.* (Vulg.).

These aren euydences," quath hunger · "for hem þat wolle nat swynken,

That here lyflode be lene · and lytel worth here clopes."

"By cryst," quap peers plouhman þo · "þese pro- 265 † Piers says he will tell idlers of these proverbs.

uerbes wolle ich shewe

To beggers, and to boyes · þat loth ben to worche.

Ac ȝut ich praye ȝow," quath peers · "pur charite, syre hunger,

ȝyf ȝe can oþer knowe · eny kynne þynge of fysyk?

For some of my seruauens · and my-selue boþe, 269

Of alle a woke worchen nat · so oure wombe groneþ."

"Ich wot wel," quath hunger · "what syknesse ȝow aileþ;

ȝe haue manged ouere muche · þat makeþ ȝow be syke.

Ac eet nat, ich hote · or hunger þe take, 273

And sende [þe] of hus sauce · to sauerie with thi lippes.

And kep som til soper tyme · and sitte nauht to longe

[At noon, ne at no time; · and nameliche at soper]

Let nat syre sorfait · sitten at þy borde, 277

And loke þow drynke no day · er þow dyne som-what.

þenk þat diues for hus delicat lyf · to þe deuæl wente,

And lazar, þe lene beggere · þat longed after cromes—

And ȝut had he hem nat · for ich hunger culde hym—

And sitthe ich sauh hym sitte · as he a syre were, 282

[*beatus—erit*] in S only.

263. *These*] Theese P (*and in l.* 265). *aren*] ben EMS. *nolle nat*] nylleþ nout M.

264. *be lene*] bileue E; bi-leuen M.

265. *peers*] peres þe I. *þo*] M om. *þese—ich*] þis prouerbe I wol I. *wolle ich*] M om.

266. *To*] For M (*twice*).

267. *Ac*] And M. *ȝow*] þe M. *pur*] for M.

268. *Here* S has lost 8 leaves, down to xi. 94. *This portion is collated with G throughout.*

268. *kynne*] MG om. *þynge*] þinges I.

272. *be*] to be M.

273. *or*] er IG; or ich E.

274. [þe IMG] PE om. *hus*] my E.

276. *From* M; also in IG; PE omit.

277. *nat*] no I.

278. *dyne*] ete M.

279. *þenk*] And þenke I. *hus*] M om.

281. *hem*] his (*sic*) I. *ich*] þulke E. *culde*] lette G.

282. *sitthe*] sup E. *a syre*] a-fuyre (!! E).

At alle manere ese · in abrahammes lappe.

† Give alms to
the truly needy,

And yf þow be of power · peers, ich þe rede, 284

Alle þat greden at þy gate · for godes loue, after fode,

Parte with hem of þy payn · of potage oper of souel,

Lene hem som of þy loof · þauh þou þe lasse chewe.

† but let liars and
lollers wait.

And þauh lyers and lacchedrawers · and lolleres knocke,

Let hem abyde tyl þe bord be drawe · ac bere hem none

cromes, 289

Til alle þyn nedy neihebores · haue none ymaked.

Were men thus
moderate, Physic
would sell his
cloak, and turn
farm-labourer.

And yf þow dyght þe þus · ich dar legge myn eres,

þat fysyk shal hus forrede hodes · for hus fode sulle,

And hus cloke of calabre · for hus comunes legge,

And be fayn, by my faith · his fysyk to lete, 294

And lerne [to] labore with londe · leste lyflode hym

faile.

Ther aren meny lujere leches · and leele leches fewe,

Thei don men deye þorgh here drynkes · er destyne hit

wolde." 297

Piers thanks
Hunger for such
advice.

"By seynt paul," quath peers þo · "thou poyntest neih
þe treuthe,

And leelly seist, as ich leue · lord þe for-ʒelde!

Wend now whenne þou wolt · and wel be þow euere,

For þow hast wel ywroke me · and also wel ytauht me."

Hunger says he
must dine ere he
goes away.

"Ich by-hote þe," quap hunger · "þat hennes nel ich

wende 302

Er ich haue y-dyned by pys day · and y-dronke bope!"

Piers says he has

"Ich haue no peny," quath peers · "polettes for to bigge,

283. *At*] In I. *in*] and in I.

284. *be—power*] þe pore (*sic*) I.
þe] M om.

285. *greden at*] grat in I.

286. *with*] wit P. *oper*] and M.

287. *loof*] lof EM; loue I.

288. *lolleres*] loreles M.

290. *none*] noon M; noen I.

291. *dyght*] diote M; diete G.

292. *hodes*] hood M.

295. [*to* IM] PEG om. *londe*]
hond G. *hym*] hem I.

296. *aren*] ben EM. *and*] ac IMG.

298. *þo*] IMG om. *treuthe*] sope
IM.

299. *þe*] it þe I; hit þe G.

300. *whenne*] wenne P; wher I.

be þow] þou be I.

301. *ywroke*] awroke M; I-wreke
I; awreke EG. *ytauht me*] me taut
M.

302. *nel*] ne wil I.

303. *y-dyned*] dyned EMG.

304. *polettes*] boteles M.

- Noþer* goos *noþer* grys · bote two grene cheses, 305 no geese or pigs,
 A fewe croddes and creyme · and a cake of otes, only cheese,
 And bred for my barnes · of benes and of peses. curds, cream, an
 And ȝut ich sey, by my saule · ich haue no salt bacon; oat cake, and
 Nouht a cokeney, by cryst · colhoppes to make, 309 **A 89 B 108**
 Ac ich haue porett-plontes · *perselye* and scalones, loaves of beans
 Chiboles and chiruylls · and chiries sam-rede, and pease,
 And a cow with a calf · and a cart mare, 312 also parsley,
 To drawe a feld my donge · þe whyle drouth lasteþ. onions, and half-
 By þis lyflode we mote lyue · tyl lammasse tyme; ripe cherries,
 And by þat, ich hope to haue · heruest in my crofte; which must last
 Thenne may I dyghte þy dyner · as me dere lykeþ.” out till harvest.
 Alle þe poure puple þo · peescoddes fetten; 317 The poor people
 Benes and baken apples · thei brouhte in here lappes, brought peascods,
 And profrede peers this present · to plese þer-with beans, and
 hunger. apples to feed
 Hunger. Hunger.
 Hunger eet al in haste · and askede after more; 320 Hunger wanted
 Poure folke for fere þo · fedde hunger ȝerne more, and they
 With creym and with croddes · with cارس and oþer brought † cream
 herbes. and curds.
 By that yt neiheid heruest · and newe corn com to
 chepyng,
 Thenne was þis folke feyn · and fedde hunger deyn- **A 90**
 uosliche, But in harvest-
 324 time they fed

305. *Noþer*] Ne *noþer* G. *noþer*
ne IM.

306. *A*] And a I.

308. *sey*] saide I.

309. *Nouht a*] Ne no IG. *colhop-*
pes] so PEMS; coloppes IG.

310. *porett-plontes*] porettysplontys
G. *perselye*] percile M.

311. *chiruylls* M] cheryuylls E;
chiruulles I; chirueyilles P; chiriuellles
G. *sam-rede*] sam-ripe M.

312. *with*] & G.

313. *þe*] G om. *whyte*] wyle P.
drouth] þe droghte I; deþpe M.

314. *By*] And by IG.

315. *crofte*] croftes I.

316. *þy*] my I.

317. *þe*] G om. *þo*] I om.

318. *baken apples*] bacon, appeles
G. *thei brouhte*] M om. *lappes*]
lappe IG.

319. *this*] þat M. *þer-with*] wiþ
MI; wiþ syre G.

321. *þo*] þey I.

322. *cارس*] crasses M; cresses I.

323. *neiheid*] neþhed neyh I. *chep-*
ying GEIMS] chipyng P.

324. *Thenne*] And þanne IG. *was*
þis] I om. *hunger*] hem M. *deyn-*
teuosliche] denteuosliche ME; deyn-
tifliche I; deyntfulliche G.

Hunger
plentifully,
B 109

and beggars
would eat only
the finest bread.

Labourers were
dainty,

and wanted fresh
flesh and fried
fish,

and grumbled
about wages,

(Cato. Distich.
i. 21.)

B 110
except when
hungry.

A 91
A warning to
workmen,

And gloton þo with good ale · gerte hunger to slepe.
Tho wolde wastour nat worche · bote wandrede aboute,
Noper beggere eete bred · þat benes were ynne, 327
Bote clerematyn and Coket · and of clene whete ;
Thei wolde non halpeny ale · in none wyse drynke,
Bote of þe best and Brounest · þat brewesters sellen.
Laboreres þat han no londe · to lyuen on bote here
handes 331
Deyned [nought] to dyne a day · nyght-olde wortes.
May no peny ale hem paye · ne a pece of bacon,
Bote hit be freesch fleesch oþer fysch · fried oþer ybake,
And þat *chaud* and *pluschaud* · for chillyng of here
mawe.
Bote he be heyliche yhyred · elles wol he chide, 336
That he was a werkman ywroght · waryen þe tyme ;
Corteis Catones consail · comseth he by-grucche,
Paupertatis onus · pacienter ferre memento.
And þenne he corseþ þe kyng · and alle þe kynges
Iustices, 340
Suche lawes to lere · laborers to greue.
Ac while hunger was here mayster · wolde non chide,
Ne stryue a-ȝens þe statute · he lokede so sturne.
Ac ich warne ȝow werkmen · wynne whyle ȝe mowe,
For hunger hyderwardes · hyeþ hym faste ; 345
He shal awake þorw water · wasters to chaste.

325. *gloton þo*] þan glotoun IG.
to] IM om.

326. *Tho*] And þo I. *wandrede*] wandren I.

327. *Noper*] Ne no IG. *were ynne*] inne were I.

328. *Bote*] But of I. *and*] and þat M.

329. *Thei wolde*] Ne IG.

330. *and*] and þe M ; & of þe I. *brewesters*] ale-wiuys G.

332. [*noght* I] PEMG om. Cf. B-text. *nyght*] of nyȝt G.

333. *paye*] serue E. a] no IG.

334. *freesch*] I om.

336. *Bote*] And but I.

337. *That*] And þat I. a] IMG om. *waryen*] warieþ I.

338. *Corteis*] Aȝens I ; G om. *comseth he*] bi-comseþ he to M. *by-grucche*] to grucche IG.

340. *And*] M om.

341. *lere*] lerne I.

342. *while*] wile P ; whiles I. *wolde*] þer wolde I ; þer ne wolde M.

343. *þe*] his IG. *statute*] stat G. *he lokede*] ne loke (*wrongly*) M.

344. *whyle*] whiles I ; wyle P.

345. *hyeþ*] hasteþ I. *hyeþ—faste*] fast hym hyeþ E.

Ar fewe 3eres be fulfilled · famyne shal aryse,
 And so seith *saturnus* · and sent 3ow to warne. 348
 þorwe flodes and foule wederes · frutes shullen faile,
 Pryde and pestilences · shal muche puple fecche.
 Thre shupes and a shaft · with an vm. folwyng, 351
 Shal brynge bane and bataile · on bothe half þe mone.
 And þanne shal deþ with-drawe · and derthe be Iustice,
 And dawe þe deluere · deye for defaute,
 Bote god of hus goodnesse · graunte ous a trewe. 355

and a prophecy of
famine.

ПРОФЕЦІЯ.
A mysterious
prophecy.

Hic explicit passus nonus.

347. *Ar*] Or E; Er M; And ar I.
 348. *And*] An P. *saturnus*] satur-
 nes M; saturne I. *3ow*] vs I; ous G.
warne] warnyng M,

349. *and*] and þorgh I.

350. *Pryde*] Prude E; Pride IM.
pestilences] pestelences P.

351, 352. G omits.

351. *shupes*] schypes I; schippes

M. *shaft*] schaeff I. *an vm*] a vin
 M. *vm*] so PE; I seems to have .viiij.
 Crowley quotes this line thus—Three
 shyppes and a shefe, wyth an eight
 folowynge; see Pref. B. xxxiv.

355. *Bote*] Bot 3if IG. *hus*] E
 om. *trewe*] truwe E; treuwe M.

COLOPHON. So PG; so also E,
 omitting Hic.

PASSUS X.

*Incipit passus decimus.***A 92****B 111**

Truth bids Piers
labour before the
famine comes,

and promises
pardon to all
who help him to
work.

Just kings and
knights pass
lightly through
purgatory.

Bishops who
observe the
commandments,

TReuthe herde telle here-of · and to peers sente
To take hus teeme · and tulye þe erthe ;
And purchased hym a pardon · *á pena et á culpa*,
For hym and for hus heyres · for euere to be asoiled ; 4
And bad [hym] halde hym at home · and erye hus
leyes,

And alle þat hulpe hym to erye · to setten oþer to sawe,
Oþer eny manere myster · þat myght peers a-vayle,
Pardon with peers plouhman · perpetual he graunteþ. 8
Kynges and knyghtes · þat holy [kirke] defenden,
And ryghtfulliche in reames · ruelen þe comune,
Han pardon þorw purgatorie · to passy ful lyghtliche,
With patriarkes and prophetes · in paradyse to sitte.

—Bisshopes yblessed · if þei ben as þei sholde, 13
Leel and ful of loue · and no lord dreden,
Merciable to meek · and mylde to þe goode,

TITLE. *So* PEG ; Hic incipit pas-
sus decimus de uisione M ; Passus
Nonus, vt prius I.

1. *here-of*] þer-of M.

2. *tulye*] tilie E ; tylien IG ; teliþe
M.

4. *for* (3)] G om.

5. [*hym* IG] PEM om. *at home*
a-tom G.

6. *alle*] þo M. *hulpe*] holpe I ;
holpen M ; helpiþ G. *hym*] E om.
sawe] sowe IMEG.

7. *myster* MEG] meester P.

8. *perpetual*] perpetuelly GI. *he*
I om.

9. [*kirke* I] churche PEG ; chirche
M.

10. *ryghtfulliche*] ryghtfulleche P.

11. *to passy*] passen M.

14. G omits. *no lord*] none lordes
M.

15. *meek*] þe meke G ; meke men
E.

And bytynge on badde men · bote yf þei wolde amende, † and boldly
And dredeþ nat for no deþ · to distruye, by here powere, reprove all bad
Lecherie a-mong lordes · and hure luper customes, 18 men,

And sitthen lyue as þei lereþ men · oure lord treuthe
hem graunteþ

To be peeres to a-posteles · alle puple to ruele, 20 **A 93**

And deme with hem at domes day · boþe quike and ded. **B 112**

Marchans in þe margine · hadden menye 3eres,

Ac *á pena & á culpa* · treuthe nolde hem graunte ;

For thei holden nat here halydaies · as hollychurche
techeþ, 24 **B 112**
sit with the
Apostles at
doomsday.
Merchants have
not plenary
pardon,
because they keep
not holidays, and
swear.

And for þei swere by here saule · and ‘so god me mote
helpe!’

A3ens clene conscience · for couetyse of wynnynge.

Ac vnder his secre seel · treuthe sente [hem] a lettere,

And bad [hem] bygge baldly · what [hem] best
lykede, 28

Truth bade them
trade fairly

And sitthen sellen hit a-3eyn · and saue þe wynnynges,

Amenden *meson-dieux* þer-with · and myseyse men fynde,

And wikkede weyes · with here good amende,

And brygges to-broke · by þe heye weyes 32

Amende in som manere wise · and maydenes helpen ;

Poure puple bedredene · and prisoners in stockes,

Fynde hem for Godes loue · and fauntekynes to scole ;

Releue religion · and renten hem bettere ; 36

and mend
hospitals,

repair broken
bridges, and
dower maidens,

A 94
and assist poor
scholars.

16. *bytynge*] biter G. *on*] to G ;
in I. *wolde*] wole GI ; wollen M.

17. *And*] I *om.* *nat*] MG *om.*
here] þi M.

18. *customes* MI] *custymes* PE ;
customes G.

20. *to*] of þe G ; M *om.* *a-posteles*]
þapostles I. *alle*] al þe MG.

23. *Ac a*] Ac no I. *treuthe nolde*]
no treuþe wolde I.

24. *daies*] day IG. *techeþ*] hem
hoteþ I.

25. *so*] I *om.* *god—mote*] mot god
hem G ; god mote hem I. *god—*
helpe] helpe hem god al-my3ti M.

27. *secre*] secrete IE. [*hem*
MIEG] hym P.

28. [*hem* MEIG] hym P (*twice*).

29. *sellen*] to sellen M. *saue*]
haue E.

30. G *omits.* *Amenden—dieux*]
And to amende þi mysdedes M.

31. *here*] 3ore G.

32. E *omits.* *to-broke*] to-brokene
I. *weyes*] weize M. *weyes*] weyes
amende P (*by mistake*) ; but IMG
omit amende ; see next line.

33. *maydenes* IMG] maydones PE.

34. *bedredene*] bedrede M.

‘And ich shal sende 3ow my-selue · seynt Michel myn
Angel,

That no deuel shal 3ow dere · ne despeir in 3oure
deyinge,

B 113

Then they would
reach heaven.

Then the
merchants wept
for joy.

And sende 3oure soules · þer ich my-self dwelle,
And þere a-byde body and soule · in blisse for euere.’ 40

Tho were merchauns murye · somme wepte for ioye,
And preyde for peers plouhman · þat purchasede hem
pis bulle.

Alle þe puple hadde pardon ynow · þat parfytliche
lyueden ;

Lawyers had
least pardon ; for
they take bribes.

Men of lawe hadde lest · that loth were to plede, 44
Bote þei *pre manibus* were payed · for pledyng atte
barre.

A 95

But he that
pleads the cause
of the poor

Ac he þat speneþ hus speche · and spekeþ for þe poure
That innocent and nedy is · and no man harme wolde,
And conforten suche in eny cas · and coueyteþ nat here
3iftes, 48

† shall gain the
grace of God
hereafter.

And for þe loue of oure lorde · lawe for hem declareþ,
Shal haue grace of God ynow · and a gret ioye after.

Beþ ywar, 3e wise men · and witty of þe lawe ;

B 114

For whenne 3e draweþ to þe deþ · and indulgence
wolde haue, 52

Hus pardon is ful petit · at hus partynge hennes,
That mede of mene men · for here motyng takeþ.

37. *Angel*] archangel I.

38. *despeir in*] despire 3ow in M ;
dispise G. *deyinge*] deyenge P ;
doyng G.

39. *sende*] sitthe sende I. *dvelle*]
sitte M.

40. *þere* M] *þer* EI ; *miswritten* þe
(for *þere*) P ; G *om.* *body*] in bodi
EM. *þere—blisse*] abide *þer* in my
blisse · body and soule I.

41. *somme wepte*] meny wepen I.

42. *peers*] peres þe I. *hem þis*]
þe G.

44. *lest*] leest G ; left (!) E.

45. *atte*] at þe MEG.

46. *speneþ*] spendeþ M.

47. *nedy* IMEG] nudy P.

48. G *omits.* *And*] *þat* MI.
3iftes IME] 3eftes P.

49. G *omits.* *hem*] hym E.

50. *God*] good M. *God ynow*]
good ende G ; a good ende I. *a*]
MIG *om.*

51. *wise men* IMEG] wismen P.
þe] G *om.*

52. *For*] M *om.* *whenne*] wenne
P. *indulgence*] indulgences MI.

53. *hus*] þe M.

54. *mene*] þe mene E ; meny G.

- For hit is symonye, to sulle · þat send is of grace ;
 That is, witt and water · wynd, and fuyr þe furthe, 56 Water, air, fire,
 These foure sholden be fre · to alle folk þat hit [nedeþ.] and wit ought
 Alle lybbynge laborours · þat lyuen with here handes bought.
 Leelyche and lawefulliche · oure lord treuthe hem Labourers that
 graunteþ live lawfully have
 the same pardon
 as Piers.
 Pardon perpetuel · ryght as peers ploughman. 60
 Beggars and bydders · beþ nat in [þat] bulle Beggars are not
 Bote þe suggestion be soth · þat shapeþ hem to begge. pardoned if they
 feign.
 For he þat beggeth oþer byddeþ · bote yf [he] haue nede, **A 96**
 He ys fals and faitour · and defraudeþ þe [nedy,] 64
 And also gyleþ hym þat gyueþ · and takeþ ageyns
 hus wyl.
 For he þat gyueþ for Godes loue · wolde nat gyue, hus Men should give
 þankus, to the neediest.
 Bote þer he wyste hit were · wel gret neede to gyuen, **B 115**
 And most meritorie to men · þat he zeueþ for. 68
 Caton a-cordeþ þer-with · *cui des uideto* ; Dion. Cato.
 Wot no man, as ich wene · who is worthy to haue. Brev. Sent. 23.
 The most needy aren oure neighebores · and we nyme † The most
 good hede, needy are
 As prisoners in puttes · and poure folke in Cotes, 72 prisoners and
 Charged with children · and chef lordes rente, poor cotters,
 That þei [wiþ] spynnyng may spare · spenen hit in
 hous-hyre,

55. *send*] sent I. *send—of*] is
 i-sent bi M.

56. *That*] And þat I. *wynd*] and
 wynde I.

57. [*nedeþ* IME] nedip G; needede
 P.

58. *lybbynge*] libbynde G; truwe
 M. *laborours*] laberours P.

59. *lawefulliche*] lawefulleche P.
hem] G om.

60. *peers*] peres þe I; to peres G.

61. [*þat* IMEG] þe P. *bulle*]
 bille I.

62. *suggestion*] sugestion P.
shapeþ] shappeþ P. *hem*] him I.

63. *he*] hy G. [*he* MI] hi G; þei
 P; þey E.

64. [*nedy* IMEG] neede P.

65. *And*] MGom. *gyleþ*] bi-gileþ M.

66. *þankus*] þonkes E; þankes
 IMG.

67. *hit*] I om. *wel*] G om. *to*
gyuen] to geue hit M; I om.

68. *most*] mest PE; but see l. 71.
for EG] fore PI; hit fore M.

71. *aren*] arn M; ar G; beþ E.

72. *folke*] men G.

74. [*wiþ* MIG] PE om. *spenen* E]
 spene IG; spende M; *miswritten*
 spynen P; but see l. 46. *in*] on IG.

† who make pap
to satisfy their
children,

† and rise at
night to rock the
cradle.

† It is piteous to
tell what poor
women suffer,

† whilst they
hide their wants
from their
neighbours.

† Some earn but
little, yet must
feed many.

Boþe in mylk and in mele · to make with papelotes,
To a-glotye with here gurlles · þat greden after fode. 76
Al-so hem-selue · suffren muche hunger,
And wo in winter-tyme · with wakyng a nyghtes
To ryse to þe ruel · to rocke þe cradel,
Boþe to karde and to kembe · to clouten and to wasche,
To rubbe and to rely · russches to pilie, 81
þat reuthe is to rede · opere in ryme shewe
The wo [of] þese women · þat wonyep in Cotes ;
And of meny oper men · þat muche wo suffren, 84
Boþe a-fyngrede and a-furst · to turne þe fayre out-
warde,
And beth abasshed for to begge · and wolle nat be
aknowe
What hem needep at here neihebores · at non and at
· euen.
This ich wot witerly · as þe worlde techep, 88
What oper by-houep · þat hath meny children,
And hath no catel bote hus crafte · to cloþy hem and
· to fede,
And fele to fonge þer-to · and fewe pans takeþ.
Ther is payn and peny-ale · as for a pytaunce y-take,

75—281. *This passage occurs a second time in MS. I, Foll. 2—4. Peculiar readings from this copy are marked I (italic). But see also the Critical Note.*

75. *in*] wiþ G (twice). *papelotes*] her papelotes I.

76. *To*] Forte M. *a-glotye*] glotye I.

77. *Al-so*] & al-so GM. *Al-so hem-selue*] And hem-seluen also I.

78. *in*] on G. *tyme*] tymes I. *with*] and I; on G. *wakyng*] walkyng G. *a*] in I; on MG I.

79. *ryse*] arisen M. *ruel*] so PM; rewel I; rule EG. *to*] and to M. *cradel*] childes cradel I.

80. *kembe*] combe wolle I.

81. *rubbe*] ribbe IMG. *and*] G om. *rely*] so PE; rele IG I; reole M.

russches] & rissches G; and resshes I. *pilie*] pilize M; pyl I.

83. [of IG] þat PEM; but see next line. *þese*] þeese P; and in ll. 96, 164, 183. *women*] women han E; woman haþ M. *wonyep*—Cotes] in Cote wonen I.

84. *men*] mo I.

85. *a-fyngrede*] a-fyngred E; a-fingred G; of-hungret M; an-hungred I. *a-furst*] so PG; aþurst EI; of-þerst M; in harde thirst I. *fayre*] fairest M I.

86. *and*] þey I. *aknowe* EMG] aknowen I; byknowen I; yknowe P.

87. *at* (1)] att P; of M.

90. *fede*] fooode G.

91. *pans*] pens IM.

92. *ale*] ale also E. *as*] M om.

Colde flessch and cold fyssh · for veneson ybake ; 93

Frydayes and fastyng-dayes · [a] ferthyng-worth of muscles † To them, a farthing's worth of muscles is a feast.

Were a feste for suche folke · oper so fele Cockes.

These were almes, to helpe · þat han suche charges, 96

And to comfortie suche cotyers · and crokede men and blynde.

Ac beggers with bagges · þe whiche brewhouses ben here churches, † But beggars, whose churches are brewhouses,

Bote þei be blynde oper broke · oper elles be syke, 99

þauh he falle for defaute · þat faiteþ for hus lyf-lode,

Reccheþ neuere, 3e ryche · þauh suche lorelles steruen. † may be left to starve.

For alle þat han here hele · and here eyen syghte,

And lymes to laborye with · and lolles lyf vsen, 103

Lyuen a-3ens godes lawe · and lore of holy church.

And 3ut arn þer oper beggers · in hele, as hit semeþ, † Some, however, are idiotic or lunatic,

Ac hem wanteþ here witt · men and women bope,

þe whiche aren lunatik lolles · and leperes a-boute,

And mad as þe mone sitt · more oper lasse. 108

Thei caren for no cold · ne counteþ of no hete,

And arn meuyng after þe mone · moneyles þei walke,

With a good wil, witlees · meny wyde contreys, † and wander far and wide,

Ryght as Peter dude and Paul · saue þat þei preche nat,

93. *M omits.* Colde] And colde I. cold] I om. for] as I. ybake] were y-bake I.

94. [a IMEG] P om.

95. for] wiþ I. folke] a folke P; but IMEG omit a. so fele] as fele of M. Cockes] so PEM; cokkys G; cokeles I.

96. were] are I. helpe—charges] ese · and also many oper I.

97. to] M om. cotyers] coterels IG. and—and] þe croke and þe I.

98. with] wiþ here G. þe whiche] þe wiche P; swiche M.

99. broke] to-broke IEG.

100. faiteþ—lyf-lode] for here foode fayten I.

101. Reccheþ] Recche 3e IG.

103. lolles] lorelles M.

105. And] Ac I. arn] ben E.

106. Ac] But M. here] I om.

107. whiche] wiche P. aren] ben E. lolles] loreles M.

108. mad] madden IM; E om. sitt] sitteþ G; sittes I.

109. Thei caren] Careth þey I. for] of G. counteþ] a-counten M. counteþ—hete] knowe but perils fewe I.

110. arn] ben E. meuyng IE] meuyng M; meoung G; meunge P.

111. a] I om. wyde contreys] a wilde cuntreize M.

112. saue—nat] if þat þey preche coupe I. þat] G om.

† uttering
prophecies,

Ne myracles maken ; · ac meny tymes hem happeþ 113
To prophecien of þe puple · pleyinge, as hit were,
And to oure sight, as hit semeþ · suthþe God hath þe
myghte

† even like God's
apostles.

To ȝeuene eche a [wyght] wit · welthe, and his hele, 116
And suffreþ suche so gon · hit semeþ, to myn Inwitt,
Hit arn as hus aposteles, suche puple · oþer as his
priuye disciples.

For he sente hem forth seluerles · in a somer garne-
ment,

† Luke xxii. 35.

With-oute bred and bagge · as þe bok telleþ, 120

Quando misi uos sine pane et pera ;

Barfot and bredles · beggeþ þei of no man.

And þauh he mete with þe meyre · [amyddes] þe
strete,

† Luke x. 4.

He reuerenceþ hym ryght nouht · no rapen þan anoþer ;

Neminem salutauer[it]is per uiam.

† Cf. Mat. x. 42 ;
xxv. 35.

Suche manere of men · matheu ous techeþ, 124

We sholde haue hem to house · and help hem when
thei come ;

† Isaiah lviii. 7.

Et egenos uagosque induc in domum tuam.

For hit aren murye-mouthede men · mynstrales of
heuene,

And godes boyes, bordiours · as þe bok telleþ, 127

† 1 Cor. iii. 18.

Si quis uidetur sapiens, fiet stultus ut sit sapiens.

113. *Ne*] Ne none I. *tymes*] time
M ; G *om.*

114. *þe*] þat G. *pleyinge*] pleigne
I ; pleynge E.

115. *hath*] ȝaf M. *þe*] I *om.*

116. *eche*] ows (*wrongly*) G.
[*ryght* G] whit P ; whiȝt E ; wythg
M ; body myght (*sic*) I.

117. *And*] He I. *so gon*] go so
IG. *to*] in M.

118. *arn*] ben E. *as* (1)] M *om.*

120. *bred—bagge*] bagge and brede
I. *bagge oþer bred* I. *and*] or M.

121. *beggeþ*] ȝit begge I.

122. *he*] þay I ; þey I. *mete*]
mette G. *meyre*] meyre P ; cf. iv.

77. [*amyddes* I] in-myddesse E ;
in-mydest P ; in-midde G ; in þe
midde M. *þe*] of þe IM ; *but* PEG
omit of, and it is not required ; cf.
Poem on Richard, l. 3.

123. *He*] And I. *no*] GM *om.*
rapen] more M. *salutaueritis* EMG]
salutaueris PI.

124. *of*] I *om.*

125. *haue hem*] hem haue G.
haue—to] hem do I ; hale to oure I.
hem (2)] II *om.* *que*] MG *om.*

126. *hit*] þei M. *aren*] ben EM.

127. *boyes*] owne M. *bordiours*]
bordours I. *fiet*] fiat M.

And alle manere mynstrales · men wot wel þe soþe,
 To vnder-fonge hem faire · by-falle[þ] for þe ryche,
 For þe lordes loue and ladies · þat þei with lengen.
 Men suffren al þat suche seyn · and in solas taken,
 And ȝut more to suche men · doth er þei passe, 132 † Men give gifts
 Gyuen hem gyftes and gold · for grete lordes sake. and gold to
 Ryght so, ȝe riche · rapen ȝe sholde, for sothe, minstrels.
 Welcomen and worsshepen · and with ȝoure goode

helpen

Godes mynstrales and hus messagers · and hus murye † So also should
 bordiours; 136 the rich help
 God's minstrels,
 viz. lunatics,

The whiche arn lunatik lollares · and leperes a-boute,
 For vnder godes sece seel · here synnes ben ykeuered.

For þei bereþ no bagges · ne none botels vnder clokes, † who are not
 The whiche is lollaren lyf · and lewede eremytes, 140 like lollers or
 hermits,

That loken ful louheliche · to lacchen mennes almesse,

In hope to sitten at euen · by þe hote coles,

Vnlouke hus legges abrod · oþer lygge at hus ese,

Reste hym, and roste hym · and his ryg turne, 144 † who roast their
 backs at the fire,

Drynke drue and deepe · and drawe hym þanne to
 bedde;

And when hym lykeþ and lust · hus leue ys to aryse;

128. *And*] *I om. men*] me I.
wot] witeþ; wyte G.

129. *by-falleþ* G] bifalleþ E; it
 falleþ I; falleþ M; falles I; by-falle
 P.

130. *and*] or þe I; or M. *lengen*]
 longen IMG; leuen or lenen E.

132. *doth*] me dop I.

133. *Gyuen*] Me gifþ I; Men
 ȝiueþ G. *and*] of G.

134. *rapen*] ȝit rapen I. *for sothe*]
 IG om.

135. *Welcomen*] Wolcomen P.
goode] gold M.

136. *hus* (1)] M om. *bordiours*
 EI] here written burdiours P; but see
 I. 127.

137. *whiche*] wiche PM. *arn*]
 ben EM. *lunatik*] lunatikes I.

lollares] loreles MI.

138. *sece*] secrete EI. *ykeuered*
 EG] couered MI; ykeuerede P.

139. *none*] MIG om. *botels*] botel
 M. *clokes*] clopes E.

140. *whiche*] wiche PM. *lollaren*]
 so PG; lollers I; lollerne E; loreles
 M.

141. *That*] I om. *ful*] wel G; I
 om. *louheliche*] lowliche MIG;
 lowȝlich E. *mennes almesse*] meny
 men almises G.

144. *and—turne*] by þe rede
 gledes I.

145. *drue*] drow E; dryue I;
 driue (altered to ofte riue) G; ȝurne
 M. *drawe—þanne*] þanne drawe
 him M; þenne drawe G.

146. *and*] or M. *aryse*] rise I.

† and expect to
receive a break-
fast.

When he ys rysen, romeþ out · and ryght wel aspieþ
Whar he may rapest haue a repast · oþer a rounde of
bacon, 148

† The beggars
who go about
with bags instead
of working

Suluer oþer sode mete · and som tyme boþe,
A loof oþer half a loof · oþer a lompe of chese ;
And carieþ it hom to hus Cote · and cast hym to lyue
In ydelnesse and in ese · and by oþers trauayle. 152

† are condemned
by God's law.

And what frek of þys folde · fiskeþ þus a-boute,
With a bagge at hus bak · a begeneldes wyse,
And can som manere craft · in cas he wolde hit vse,
þorgh whiche craft he couthe · come to bred and to ale,
And ouer-more to an hater · to helye with hus bones,
And lyueþ lyk a lollere · godes lawe hym dampneþ. 158
“Lolleres lyuyng in sleuthe · and ouer-londe strykers
Beep nat in þys bulle,” quap peers · “til þei ben
amendid,

B 116

Noþer beggers þat beggen · bote yf þei haue neede. 161
The bok blameþ alle beggerye · and banneþ in this
manere,

Ps. xxxvi. 25
(Vulg.).

*Iunior fui, etenim senui, non uidi iustum dere-
lictum, nec semen eius querens panem; et
alibi: Infirmata est uirtus mea in paupertate.*

† Ps. xxx. 11
(Vulg.).

Hit needeþ nauht nouthe · a-non for to preche, 163

147. *When*] And whan I. *romeþ*
out] rome forþ I. *aspieþ*] asprien I.

148. *Whar*] War P. *rapest*] rapereþ M. *a repast*] harpast (*sic*)
E. *rounde*] ronde IMG; pounce E.

149. *sode*] swete I.

150. *A*] IG *om.* (*twice*). *half*] alþ P. *oþer* (2)] or elles I. *of*] of a G.

152. *in*] on I; MEG *om.*

153. *what*] wat P. *of*] on I. *þys*] þy G. *fiskeþ*] so PE; fiscuþ G; fischith I; fleccþþ M. *þus*] so I; I *om.*

154. *a* (2)] on M.I. *begeneldes*] begenildys G; begenelles M; begenelde I; beggers E.I.

155. *som manere*] eny IG.

156. *whiche*] wiche PM. *craft*] E *om.* to (2)] I *om.*

157. *an hater*] haue hater E; haue hatren M.

158. *lollere*] lorel M.

159. *Lolleres*] Loreles M; For-þy lollers I. *lyuyng*] þat lyueþ I. *ouer-londe*] ouerlond MG; ouere-londe P.

160. *bulle*] bille I.

161. *Noþer*] Ne no I.

162. *blameþ*] banneþ I. *banneþ*] blameþ MEG (*wrongly repeated*); blameþ it I. *this*] his I. *non-panem*] IMG *om.* *et-paupertate*] E *om.* *in paupertate*] paupertate IM.

163. *nouthe*] now M; moche G; E *om.*

And lere þese lewede men · what þys latyn meneþ,
 For hit blameþ alle beggerie · be 3e ful certeyn.
 For þei lyue in no loue · [ne] no lawe þei holden ;
 Thei wedde non womon · that þei with delen,
 Bringep forth bastardes · beggers of kynde. 168
 Oper þe bak oper som bon · þei breken of here children,
 And goop afaytyng with here fauntes · for euere-more
 After.

(A 96)

They are love-
 less and lawless,
 and seducers of
 women.

Some break a
 child's bone, and
 beg ever after.

þer arn mo misshapen · a-mong suche beggers,
 Than of meny oper men · þat on þis molde walken. 172
 Tho þat lyuen þus hure lyf · leyue 3e non opere,
 Thei han no part of pardon · of preyers, ne of penaunces.
 Ac olde men and hore · þat helples beep and nedy,
 And wommen with childe · þat worche ne mowen, 176
 Blynde men and bedreden · and broken in here
 membres,

They are always
 meeting with
 accidents.

But the old and
 feeble, women
 with child, blind
 and maimed,

And alle poure pacientes · a-payd of godes sonde,
 As mesels and mendinauntes · men yfalle in myschef,
 As prisons and pilgrimes · paraunter men yrobbed, 180
 Oper by-lowe þorwe luthere [men] · and lost here catel
 after,

† unfortunate
 poor, prisoners,
 and sufferers by
 robbery or fire,

Oper thorgh fure oper þorwe flood · falle to pouerte,

164. *lere*] *lerne* M.

166. *loue*] *lawe* I (*wrongly repeated*). [*ne* IMEG] P *om.* *no* non M; E *om.* *þei* (2)] I *om.*

167. *Thei*] Ne IG. *womon*] *wymmen* IEG; *wemmen* M.

168. *Bringep*] *þei* bringen M.

170. *goop*] *gon* IEM. *afaytyng*] *faytyng* MG; and *fayten* I. *for*] G *om.*

171. *arn*] *ben* E. *misshapen*] *mis-chape* I; *myschappen* E; *mys-happed* M; *mishappes* G; *spelt* *mes-shapene* in P.

172. *on—walken*] *walkyþ* on þys *molde* G.

173. G *omits.* *Tho*] And þo I. *3e*] *3e* me PE; *but* MIG *omit* me; *cf.* B. v. 302.

174. *Thei han*] *3e* haue I; Ne

haueþ G. *pardon*] *prayeres* G. *of* (2)] *ne* of I. *preyers*] *pardone* G. *penaunces*] *penaunce* MIG.

175. *þat*] E *om.* *helples*] *heelples* P. *beep*] *beþ* E; *ben* MIG.

177. *men*] I *om.* *bedreden*] *bederede* M; *bedereden* I.

178. *pacientes*] *pacient* MIG. *a-payd*] *i-peyned* M. *of*] *wiþ* G.

179. *men*] and *men* MG.

180. *prisons—pilgrimes*] *pilgrimes* & *prisones* E. *paraunter*] and *per-aunter* IG.

181. *þorwe*] *þroz* E; by G. *luthere*] *lither* G; *false* M. [*men* IMEG] P *om.*

182. *Here* F *begins again.* *fure—þorwe*] G *om.* *falle*] *y-falle* I; *biþ* *falle* G. *to*] into IM. *pouerte* IMFEG] *pourte* P.

B 117

that are meek
and patient,

That taken þese meschiefes meekliche · and Myldliche
at herte ;

For loue of here lowe hertes · oure lord hath hem
graunted 184

A 97

have their
purgatory on
earth.

Here penaunce and here purgatorie · vp-on þys pure
erthe,

And pardon with peers plouhman · *a pena & a culpa.*

[And alle holy hermites · haue schal þe same ;] 1

† But false
hermits by the
high way,

Ac eremites þat en-habiten · by þe heye weyes,

And in borwes a-mong brewesters · and beggen in
churches ;— 189

Al þat holy eremytes · hateden and despisede,

As rychesse and reuerences · And ryche mennes
Almesse,

† though really
lollers, live like
cotters ;

These lolleres, lacchedraweres · lewede eremytes, 192

Coueyten þe contrarie · as cotiers þei lybben.

For hit þeþ bote boyes · [bollers] atten ale,

[Neyþer of lynage, ne of lettrure] ; · ne lyf-holy as
eremites,

† not like the
holy hermits
who dwelt
amongst bears
and lions,

That wonede [whilom] in wodes · with beres and
lyones. 196

Some had lyf-lode of here lynage · and of no lyf elles ;

And some lyuede by here lettrure · and labour of here
hondes ;

183. *þese*] þeese P ; and in ll. 192,
201, 203, 209.

184. I omits. *loue of*] G om.

185. *vp-on þys*] here on M. *pure*
IMEFG] miswritten poure P.

186. *peers*] þe IFG.

187. In I only ; but it seems
clearly required ; see next line.

188. PM insert hem after en-
habiten, which IFEG omit ; it is not
wanted. *weyes*] weye IG.

190. *hateden*] hateþ G.

191. *rychesse*] richesse I. *reuer-
ences*] reuerence IG. *menes*] men
IEG.

192. *lolleres*] lolleres M ; losels I.

193. *as*] for as I ; & as G. *cotiers*]

coterels II. *þei*] MG om.

194. *hit*] þei M. *þeþ*] ben IM.
[*bollers* IIM] lolleres PEF G ; but ob-
serve the alliteration. *atten ale*] at
þe ale IM ; at þe nale EG ; ate ale F.

195. [*Neyþer*] in I only ; but ab-
solutely necessary to the sense. [*of
lynage* EMIGF] here spelt of lynguage
P ; but see l. 197. [*ne* IMF] neþer
G ; PE om. [*of lettrure*] here spelt
of lettire P ; but see l. 198. P has
thus the corrupt reading—Of lyn-
guage of lettire.

196. *wonede*] wonieþ G. [*whilom*
IMF] wyle P ; while E ; G om. ; cf.
l. 204. *and*] & wiþ IG.

197. *here*] his I.

Some hadde foreynes to frendes · þat hem fode sente ;
 And bryddes brouhten to some bred · wherby þei † to some of
 lyueden. whom birds brought food.
 200

Alle þese holy eremytes · were of hye kynne,
 For-soke londe and lordshep · and lykynges of þe body.

Ac these eremytes þat edefyen thus · by þe hye weyes, † These false
 [Whilom] were workmen · webbes and taillours, 204 hermits were
 And carters knaues · and clerkus with-oute grace, once workmen
 and ill off,

Helden [ful] hungry hous · and hadde muche defaute,
 Long labour and lyte wynnyng · and atte laste † till they espied
 aspiden, that friars had false
 fat cheeks; *frais' ch*

That faitours in frere cloþyng · hadde fatte chekus.

For-thi lefte þei here laboure · þese lewede knaues,
 And cloþed hem in copes · clerkus as hit were, 210 † whereupon
 Oþer on of som ordre · oþere elles a prophete; they also began
 to wear copes.

A-ȝens þe lawe he lyueþ · yf latyn be trewe ;

*Non licet uobis legem uoluntati, sed uoluntatem
 coniungere legi.*

Now kyndeliche, by crist · beþ suche callyd 'lolleres,' † Such men are
 As by englich of oure eldres · of olde menne techyng. truly called
 He þat lolleþ is lame · oþer his leg out of ioynthe, lollers (idlers),
 since they lo'll
 Oþer meymed in som membre · for to meschief hit about like lame
 people.

sounep.

216

199. *Some*] And some I. *foreynes*] *so* PEI; *forynus* F; *florynes* MG.
M has—Summe florynes hadden · of
 frendes þat sente hem fode.

200. *to*] I *om.* *wherby* þei] þat
 þay by IG.

201. *Alle*] And IF. *þese*] þey I;
 þo M. *hye*] his (*wrongly*) I. *kynne*] *kynde* M.

202. *lykynges*] *likyng* MF; *alle*
likeyng I. *þe*] IMEGF *om.*

203. *weyes*] *weye* IG I.

204. [*Whilom* IMGF] *Wylen* P;
Whilen E; *see* l. 196. *webbes*] &
webbes E; as *webbus* F.

206. *Helden* EMG] *Heelden* P;
Holden IF. [*ful* IMFG] *PE om.*
muche] *gret* G.

207. *lyte*] *lite* EG; *litel* IM; *late*

F. *atte*] at þe IG. *aspiden*] þey
aspide I.

208. *faitours*] *fatayed* (*badly*) I.
frere cloþyng] *freres* *cloþes* M.

209. *For-thi*] *For-whi* M. *lefte*
þei] *þei* *leften* M; *þei* *left* F.

210. *cloþed*] *clokid* F. *clerkus*] *cherlys* G. *hit*] þey GF.

211. *M omits.*

212. *he lyueþ*] þei *lyuen* M; of
leuey [i.e. *Levi*] I. *trewe* IEF]
truwe MG; *trywe* P. *uobis* uobis
 or *nobis* P; *but* *vobis* EG.

213. *Now*] II *om.* *lolleres*] *loreles*
 M.

214. *by*] by þe I.

215. *is*] his P. *oute*] *is* *oute* II.
of] of þe P; *but* IEF G *omit* þe.

216. *sounep*] *semip* G.

And ryght so sothlyche · suche manere eremytes
Lollen aȝen þe byleyue · and lawe of holy church.

† Holy Church
expects all men
to submit to law.

For holy church hotep · alle manere puple
Vnder obedience to bee · and buxum to þe lawe. 220

Furst, religious, of religion · here ruele to holde,
And vnder obedience to be · by dayes and by nyghtes ;

† Lords should
hunt wild beasts
on week-days ;

Lewede men to laborie ; · [and] lordes to honte
In frythes and in forestes · for fox and oþer bestes
That in wilde wodes ben · and in wast places, 225

† but attend
divine service
on Sundays

As wolues þat wryep men · wommen and children ;
And vp-on sonedays to cesse · godes seruyce to huyre,
Boþe matyns and messe · and, after mete, in churches
To huyre here euesong · euery man ouhte. 229

† and on holi-
days,

Thus it by-longep for lorde · for lered, and lewede,
Eche halyday to huyre · hollyche þe seruice,
Vigiles and fastyngdayes · forthere-more to knowe,

† and keep all
fasts strictly.

And fulfille þo fastynges · bote infirmite hit made, 233
Pouerte [oþer] oþere penaunces · as pilgrymages and
trauayles.

Vnder þis obedience · arn we echone ;

† To neglect
such duties is
perilous

Who-so brekyþ þis, be wel war · bot yf he repente,
Amende hym and mercy aske · and meekliche hym
shryue, 237

Ich drede me, and he deye · hit worth for dedlich
synne

217. *And*] I *om.* *manere*] maner
of M.

218. *lawe*] þe lawe I.

219. *manere*] maner of M.

221. *religious of*] religious and
(*wrongly*) I. *here*] a I.

222. *nyghtes*] nyghte G ; nyth M.

223. [*and* MGF] PIE *om.*

224. *frythes*] frith M. *in*] oþer G.
forestes] forest M. *fox*] vox M ;
foxes G.

225. *and*] or I.

226. *wryep*] I] wyrhyep P ; wiriep
G ; werien M ; werriep E ; wery F.

227. *vp-on*] a F. *huyre*] here
IMF.

230. *by-longep*] bi-longed G.
for (1)] for a MG. *lewede*] for
lewed I.

231. *to*] forte M. *hollyche þe*] þe
holi MI.

233. *þo*] þe EM. *fastynges*] fast-
yng M. *infirmite*] siknes F.

234. [*oþer* E] or FG ; and IM ; P
om. *penaunces*] penaunce FG. *as*]
G *om.*

235. *arn*] er G ; ben E.

236. *Who-so*] And who-so I. *þis*]
þese M. *wel*] he wel M ; I *om.*

237. *Amende*] *miswritten* Amenden
P.

238. *and*] if F. *for*] ful I.

A-counted by-fore crist · bote conscience excuse hym.

Loke now where þese lolleres · and lewede eremytes,
Yf thei breke þys obedience · þat ben so [fer] fro
churche?

† But when do
we see these
lollers at church
on Sunday?

Wher see we hem on sonedays · þe seruyse to huyre,

As, matyns by þe morwe? · tyl masse by-gynne,

Oþer sonedays at euesonge · seo we wel fewe! 244

Oþere labory for [here] liflode · as þe lawe wolde?

Ac at mydday meel-tyme · ich mete with hem ofte,

Comynge in a cope · as he a clerke were;

† But at the
midday meal I
meet them often.

A bacheler oþer a beupere · best hym by-semeth;

And for þe cloþ þat keuereþ hym · cald is he a frere,

Wassheþ and wypeþ · and with þe furste sitteþ. 250

Ac while he wrought in þys worlde · and wan hus
mete with treuthe,

† And, because
he is a friar,
he sits with the
first,

He sat atte sydbenche · and secounde table; 252

Cam no wyn in hus wombe · þorw þe weke longe,

Noþer blankett in hus bed · ne white bred by-fore
hym.

† thought he once
sat at a side-
bench, and never
tasted wine.

The cause of al þys caitifte · comeþ of meny bis-
shopes,

† The bishops
are the cause of
all this.

That suffren suche sottes · and oþere synnes regne;

Certes, ho so þurste hit segge · *Symon quasi dormit*;

† Mark xiv. 37.

Vigilare were fairour · for þow hast gret charge. 258

† Mark xiv. 38.

240. *where*] were P. *lolleres*] *teþ*] set him F.
lores M.

241. [*fer* IIFG] PEM om.

243. *by-gynne*] beo bi-gunne G;
be bygonne I.

244. *Oþer*] On M. *wel* EFG] wol
P; ful IM; right I.

245. [*here* IMFEG] oure P.

246. *at*] a-boute IG. *meel*] at
meele I; at mete I.

247. *Comynge* MEFG] Come I;
miswritten Conynge P. a (1)] his
IG. *he*] G om.

248. *by-semeth*] bisemed IG.

249. *is*] his P. *he* MEFIG] *mis-*
written here P. *is he*] he is I.

250. *Wassheþ*] Whassheþ P. *sit-*

251. *with*] in IZ.

252. *atte*] at þe MEFGI. *syd-*
benche] *sidbord* MIJ. *and*] *atte* EI;
at þe FG; þe (*sic*) M; and at þe I.

253. *þorw*] in al M.

254. *Noþer*] Ne no IZG; Ne M.
in] on IMG.

255. *at*] FIG om. *caitifte*] caiteef-
nes F. *comeþ*] com G. *bisshopes*]
bisshepes P.

256. *sottes*] sectes EG.

257. *so*] G om. *þurste*] derst EG;
durste M; dorste I; durst FI. *hit*
segge] sigge it I; say I.

258. *Vigilare* IZMFEG] *Vigilate*
P. *gret*] a gret IMG.

At Le
Street
Censur
in his
Pulse
Rekord
rephoruch
thing - but for R
him -
"call
for

For meny waker wolues · ben broke in-to foldes ;
 Thyne berkeres ben al blynde · þat bryngeþ forth þy
 lambren, 260

† Zech. xlii. 7;
 Mark xiv. 27.

Dispergentur oues · thi dogge dar nat berke ;
 The tarre is vntydy · þat to þyne sheep by-longeþ,
 Hure salue ys of *supersedeas* · in someneres boxes ;

† The sheep are
 scabbed, and torn
 by the wolf.

Thyne sheep are ner al shabbyd · þe wolf shiteþ
 woolle :

*Sub molli pastore · lupus lanam cacat, et grex
 In-custoditus · dilaceratur eo.*

† Ho! shepherd!
 where is thy
 hound ?

Hoow! hurde! wher is þyn hounde · and þyn hardy
 herte,

For to wyrie þe wolf · þat þy woolle fouleþ? 268

† Thou locest
 many wethers.

Ich leyue, for þy lacchesse · þow leest meny wederes,
 And ful meny fayre flus · falsliche wasshe!
 When þy lord lokeþ to haue · a-louaunce for hus bestes,
 And of þe monye þow haddist *per-myð* · hus meoble
 to saue, 272

And þe woolle worth weye · woo ys þe þenne!

† Luke xvi. 2.

*Redde rationem uillicacionis tue · oþer [in] arerage
 falle!*

259. *waker*] wickede M. *ben—*
in-to] arn wroken vnto I. *foldes*] þy
 foldes EI; þi folde M; þe fold G.

260. *Thyne*] þy IG; þi MF.
ben] aren I. *lambren*] lambre I;
 lambus F.

261. *thi*] þe II. *berke*] IMFEG I]
 beerke P.

262. *The*] þi M. *þyne*] þi MF;
 þy E; þe IG I. *sheep by-longeþ*] tripe
 longeth F.

263. *of*] IIG om.

264. *are ner*] ben ny M; be ny F;
 ben almoste E. *shabbyd*] schabbed
 MII; scabbed EFG. *shiteþ*] schent
 M; bischit IF; shyt G. *woolle*] þi
 wolle MF; þe folde I.

265, 266. *lupus—eo*] IMF om.
In-custoditus—eo] IG om.

267. *Hoow*] How MFG; Howe I;
 O E.

268. *wyrie*] go wery I. *þy*] þe II.
fouleþ] defouleþ M.

269. *leyue*] leue MIEGI; leue F.
lacchesse] slaknesse E. *leest*] so PE;
 lest F; leest IM; lesist G; losest I.
wederes] weperes IMEFI; weperys G.

270. *ful meny*] many a I. *flus*] so
 PE; flees IFG; fleis M; wolle-flees
 I. *falsliche*] is falsliche I; ys ful
 falslyche GI. *wasshe*] ywasche EG;
 i-wassche M; waschen I.

271. *When*] þan F. *for*] of IMF G.
hus] þi M; þees F.

272. *myð*] wiþ GI. *meoble*] meobles I. *saue*] haue I.

273. *And*] And whan M. *weye*] ywey E; y-weie FG; i-weied M.
ys] wurþe F. *þenne*] þat time M.
ys—þenne] þe bitydeþ I.

274. *tue*] IFG om. [*in* IMFEG I]
 P om. *falle*] þow fallest M.

Thyn hyre, hurde, as ich hope · hath nouht to quyty þy
dette,

Ther as mede ne mercy · may nat a myte auayle, 276

Bote 'haue þis for þat · þo þat þow toke

Mercy for mede · and my lawe breke,

Loke now for þi lacchesse · whether lawe wol þe
graunte

Purgatorie for þy paye · oþer perpetuel helle? 280

For shal no pardoune praye for ȝow þer · noþer princes
letteres."

"Peers," quap a prest þo · "þy pardoune most ich rede, (A 97 B117)
Ich can construen ech worde · and kenne hit þe in see Piers' pardon.
englishe."

And peers at hus preyere · þe pardon vnfolded, 284

And ich by-hynde hem boþe · by-heeld al þe bulle.

In two lynes hit lay · and no lettere more,

And was ywryte ryght þus · in wisse of treuthe.

Qui bona egerunt ibunt in uitam eternam :

Qui uero mala, in ignem eternum.

"Peter!" quap þe prest þo · "ich can no pardon fynde,

Bote 'do wel and haue wel · and god shal haue þy

saule,

289

Do vuel and haue vuel · and hope þow non oþer

Bote he þat vuel lyueþ · vuel shal ende!"

The preest þus and perkyn · of þe pardon Iangled.

Throgh here wordes ich awook · and waitede aboute,

And seiþ þe sonne in þe south · sitte þat tyme. 294

† Since thou
didst break my
law, expect
purgatory or
hell.

Piers shows it; it
had but two lines,

quoted from Mat.
xxv. 46.

(INDULGENCIA
CONCESSA PETRO
PLOUHMAN.)

The priest says
it is no pardon
at all.

A 99 B119

They disputed so
that I awoke.

275. *Thyn*] miswritten Then P; þo vnfolded F; vnfoldeþ I.
cf. l. 267. *quyty*] quyte IMFEG. 285. *M omits. ich*] G om. *bulle*]
276. *ne*] & F. *may*] ne mai G. bille I.
277. *Bote*] For I. 286. *lynex*] lynex as I; lofes (!) E.
278. *breke*] brekes G; I-broke F. *no*] in no F; nat a IG. *Indulgencia*,
279. *lacchesse*] slaknesse E. *&c.*] in PM; see margin.
whether] what I; wher FG. 290. *Do*] And do I. *vuel*] vuel
281. *praye*] paye G. *ȝow*] ȝowe P. IEG; euele MF. *and* (2)] G om.
noþer] ne none G; ne no FI. 293. *Throgh—ich*] And I þorgh
283. *Ich can*] For I can I. *ech*] here wordes I. *waitede*] a-waitede
ech a F; icha I. *in*] on M. M.
284. *preyere*] prayers I. *vnfolded*] 294. *sitte*] sitting M.

Wandering over
Malvern hills,
I mused on this
dream

about Piers and
the priest.

Cato (Dist. ii. 31)
bids us despise
dreams.

A 100

Yet Daniel in-
terpreted that of
Nebuchadnezzar
(Belshazzar).

Joseph too had
a dream,

B 120

which his father
interpreted,

and so it came
to pass.

Meteles and moneyles · on maluerne hulles,
Musynge on þis meteles · a myle-wey ich ȝeode. 296
And meny tymes this meteles · made me to studie
Of þat ich seiȝ slepynge · yf hit so be myghte,
And of peers plouhman · [ful] pensyf in herte,
And which a pardon peers hadde · the puple to gladen,
And how þe preest inpuigned hit · thorwe two propre
wordes. 301
Ac men setten nat by songewarie · men seen hit ofte
faile,

Caton counteþ hit at nouht · and canonistres at lasse.
Ac for þe bok bible · bereþ good wyttnesse, 304
How daniel dyuinede · and vndude þe dremeles
Of kyng nabugodonosor · þat no peer hadde,
And sitthe after to hus sones · seide hem what þei
thouhte :—
And Ioseph mette meruelousliche · how þe mone and
þe sonne 308

And elleuene sterres · hailsede hym alle ;
Thenne Iacob Iuged · Iosephes sweuene :
“ Beau fitz,” quap þe fader · “ we shulleþ for defaute,
Ich my-self and my sones · seche [þe] for neede ;” 312
Hit by-fel as þe fader seide · in [pharaoes] tyme,
þat Ioseph was Iustice · egipte to saue ;

296. *on*] in M. *þis*] *miswritten*
þees P; *but see* l. 297. *ȝeode*] *ȝode*

I; *ȝede* MEFG.
297. *And*] IG *om.* *tymes*] *time*

IMF. *made*] *haþ* *maked* I.

299. *peers*] *peres* þe I. [ful IFG]

PEM *om.*; *cf.* B-text.

300. *which*] *wich* P. *a*] I *om.*

301. *thorwe*] *with* F.

302. *Ac*] And G. *men* (2)] *for*
men I; *miswritten* *mei* P. *hit*] M

om.

303. *counteþ*] *a-counteþ* M.

304. *bok*] *goode* G. *good*] I *om.*

305. *vndude*] *so* PM; *vndede* FG;

vndide I; *vnded* E. *dremeles*

dremes IF. I *adds* of *kynges*, *omit-*

ting kyng in l. 306.

306. *hadde*] *ne* *hadde* M.

307. *And*] G *om.* *to*] I *om.*

seide] and *saide* I; *told* F.

308. *mette* IMFEG] *mete* P.

309. *elleuene*] *þe* *enleuene* I; also

elleue F. *hailsede*] *heilede* M; *hei-*

sedem (*sic*) F; *hail seide* to G.

310. *Thenne*] And *þenne* G.

311. *Beau*] *Bew* M. *fitz*] *filtz* M;

fiz G. *ne—defaute*] *for* *defaute* *we*
schal I.

312. [þe IFMEG] P *om.*

313. *þe*] *his* F. [pharaoes MFE]

pharaoes G; *Pharao* I; *pharao* *hus* P.

314. *to*] *for* *to* EF.

Hus eleuene broþeres · hym for neede souhte,
 And hus fader Iacob · and al-so hus dame :— 316
 Al þis makeþ me · on meteles to studie,
 And how þe preest preuede · no pardon to do-wel ;
 And demede þat dowel · Indulgences passede,
 Byennals and tryennals · and bisshopes letteres. 320
 For ho so doþ wel here · at þe daye of dome
 Worth faire vnderfonge · by-for god þat tyme.
 So dowel passeþ pardon · and pilgrimages to rome ;
 3ut hath þe pope power · pardon to graunte 324
 To puple, with-oute penaunce · to passen in-to Ioye,
 As lettred men ous lereþ · and lawe of holy church :

Wherefore I often
 mused upon Piers
 and the priest,
 and I concluded
 that Do-well
 surpassed
 indulgences.

A 101

The pope, I fully
 believe, can grant
 pardon.

Quodcunque ligaueris super terram erit ligatum Mat. xvi. 19.

*& in celis; Et quodcunque solueris super
 terram erit solutum & in celis.*

And so ich by-leyue leelly · lordes forbode elles,
 þat pardon and penaunce · and preieres don saue 328
 Saule[s] þat han synged · seuene sithe[s] dedliche.
 Ac to trysten vpon triennels · troweliche me thynkeþ
 Ys nat so syker for þe saule · certys, as ys dowel.
 For-thi ich rede 3ow renkes · þat riche ben on þys erthe,
 Vp trist of 3oure tresour · tryennels to haue, 333
 Be 3e neuere þe boldere · to breke þe ten hestes ;

But to trust to
 Triennials is
 very unsafe. If you
 be never the better
 to break the
 commandment

315. *broþeres*] *breþeres* E; *breþeren*
 IF; *breþerne* M; *breþren* G.

316. *Iacob*] Isaac (I) I.

317. *meteles*] *metinge* G.

318. *preuede* IG] *prouede* MEF;
preued P. to] but M.

319. *demede* þat] þe mede of (I) E.
Indulgences] *indulgence* MF. *pas-*
sede] *passeþ* I.

321. *doþ wel* MEFG] *dowel* I; *wel*
doþ P.

323. *pilgrimages*] *pilgrimage* IM.
 to] of G.

324. *hath—pope*] *haþ* þe *popus* F;
 han þe *popes* E (*observe this read-*
ing). *pardon*] þe *pardone* G.

325. *puple*] þe *peple* EF. to] G
om. *in-to*] to F.

326. *lercþ*] *lered* I. *lawe*] *men*
 MG. *Et—celis*] MIFG *om.*

327. *by-leyue*] *by-leue* P (*here*;
but by-leyue elsewhere); *leue* EIG;
leeue F. *lordes*] *goddes* F. *lordes*
forbode] *lord* *forbede* EI; *lord* *me*
for-beode M.

328. *penaunce*] *penaunces* I.

329. *Saules* E] *Soules* MIFG;
Saule P. *synged*] *singed* G; *synned*
 IEF; *i-synned* M. *sithes* IFG] *sithe*
 PE; *times* M.

330. *vpon*] *apon* P; *vp* þis I.
troweliche] *triweliche* P.

331. *Ys*] *Nys* M; *It* is I. *for*] to
 I. *ys*] I (*sic*) I; M *om.*

332. *For-thi*] *For-whi* M. *renkes*] *ruleres* G.

B 121

Take heed,
ye mayors, and
wealthy judges,
who purchase
pardons.

When we stand
before Christ at
doomsday,
and our deeds
are rehearsed;

A 102

though we had a
sackful of
provincial letters,

I will give little
for our pardon
unless Do-well
help us!

God give us grace
to work such
works, that Do-
well at doomsday
will say we did
God's will.

And nameliche, 3e maistres · meynes and Iuges,
That han þe welthe of þis worlde · and wise men ben
holde, 336

To purchace 3ow pardon · and þe popes bulles.
At þe dredful day of dome · when dede men shullen
ryse,

And comen alle by-fore crist · a-countes to 3elde,
Howe we ladde oure lyf here · and hus lawes kepte,
And how we dude day by day · þe dome wol reherce.
A poke-ful of pardon þere · ne prouincials letteres, 342
þauh [we] be founde in fraternite · of alle fyue ordres,
And haue indulgences doblefolde · bote dowel ous
helpe, 344

Ich sette by pardon nat a peese · noþer a pye hele!
For-thi ich counsaile alle cristine · to crye god mercy,
And marye hus moder · be oure mene to hym,
þat god 3eue ous grace here · er we go hennes, 348
Suche workes to worche · whil we ben here,
That after oure dep-day · dowel reherce
At þe day of dome · we dude as he tauhte.—*Amen.*

Hic explicit uisio willelmi de petro ploughman.

336. *holde*] i-holde M; holden G.
337. *3ow*] 3oure I.
338. *day of*] I om. men] I om.
ryse] a-risen MIG.

343. [*we* IG] he PMEF (*observe*
ous in l. 344). in] in þe IM. *fyue*]
þe fyue MF.

345. *by—nat*] noght by pardoun I.
noþer] ne nat I; ne M. *hele* IMEG]
heele F; hyle P.

346. *For-thi*] For-ghi M. *crye*
god] god to cri3e M; crye god of F.

347. *marye*] to mari3e M. *moder*]

deere modur F. *be*] to be F. *oure*
—*hym*] to him oure mene G.

348. *go hennes*] hennes wende I.

349. I omits. *whil*] while þat F.

351. *At*] þat at G. *day*] dredful
day F. *tauhte*] us tau3te M.
Amen] M om.

COLOPHON. *Hic*] EMIF om. *wil-*
lelmi] Willelmi W. (*sic*) I; G om.
ploughman] le Plowman I. See Pre-
face. The title Incipit uisio eiusdem,
&c. immediately follows; see Pass. xi.

Visio eiusdem Wilhelmi de Do-wel.

PASSUS XI. (DO-WEL I.)

Incipit uisio eiusdem Willelmi de dowel.

- T**Hus robed in russett · ich romede a-boute,
 Al a somer seson · for to seke dowel,
 [And] frainede ful ofte · of folke þat ich mette,
 Yf eny wiht wist · wher dowel was at ynne, 4
 And what man he myghte be · of meny man ich askede.
 Was neuere wiht in þis worlde · þat wisse me couthe, None knew where
 Wher þat he longede · lasse ne more ; he dwelt.
 Til hit by-ful on a frydaye · two freres ich mette, 8 One Friday, I met
 Maisteres of [þe] menours · men of grete witte. two Minorites,
 Ich hailsede hem hendilyche · as ich hadde ylerned,
 And prayede pur charite · ar þei passede forþere, and asked them
 Yf þei knew eny contreie · oþer costes a-boute, 12 to tell me where
 Wher þat dowel dwelleþ— · “dere frendes, telleþ me ; Do-well dwelt.
 For ȝe aren men of þys molde · þat most wide walken, **B 126**
 And knowen contreies and courtes · and menyne kynne “For ye go about
 places, everywhere.”
 Boþe princes paleis · and poure menne Cotes, 16
 And dowel and do-vuele · wher þei dwellen boþe.”

TITLE. *So* PEG; *M* prefixes *Hic*.
Willelmi FI *om.*

3. [*And* IMGF] PE *om.* *frainede*]
a-frainede M. *folke*] men G.

4. *wiht*] with P; *but see* 1. 6.
wher] wer P.

5. *man* (2)] men E.

6. *þis*] þe I. *wisse me*] me wisse
 IG.

7. *þat he*] þis I. *longede*] lengede
 F; *logget* E; *wonede* G. *ne*] no I.

9. [*þe* IEF] PMS *om.* *menours*]

menour (*sic*) I; *mynours* E; *menow-*
rus & F.

10. *hailsede*] hailede M; *askede*
 G. *ylerned* E] ylernede P; *i-lered*
 M; *lered* IGF.

11. *prayede*] prayed hem I. *pur*]
par E; for M. *ar*] er I; or MFE G.

12. *contreie*] contreis EG.

13. *dwelleþ*] dwellede I. *telleþ*
me] me telleþ E; ȝe me telle F.

16. *menne*] men IE; *menes* M.

"With us, at all times," said one.

A 104

"Nay," said I,
"even the
righteous man
sins seven times
a day,
(Prov. xxiv. 16.)

so he cannot
always be with
you."

"I'll explain that
about the
righteous man,"
said he.

"Put a man in a
boat in open sea,

and the wagging
of the boat will
make him
stumble, though
he is safe.

"Sothliche," seide þe frere · "he sojourneþ with ous
freres,

And ay hath, as ich hope · and [euer] wol her-after."

"*Contra*," quap ich as a clerke · and comseide to dis-
pute, 20

And seide sothliche · "*septies in die cadit iustus*,

Fallynge fro ioye · iesus wot þe sothe !

'Seuene sythes,' seith þe bok · 'syngeþ day by day

The alþer-ryghtfulleste renk · þat regneþ vpon erthe.'

And ho so syngeþ," ich seide · "certys, doþ nat wel ;

For ho so syngeþ · sikerliche doþ vuele, 26

And dowel and do-vuele · may nat dwelle to-gederes.

Ergo, he ys nat al-way · at hom among þow Freres ;

He is som while elles-wher · to wisse þe puple." 29

"Ich shal sei þe, my sone," · seide þe frere þenne,

"How seuene sithes þe sadde man · syngeþ on þe day.

By a forbusene," quap þe frere · "ich shal þe faire
shewe. 32

Let brynge a man in a bot · in-myddes a brode water ;

The wynde and þe water · and waggynge of þe bote

Makeþ þe man meny tyme · to stomble, yf he stande ;

Stonde he neuere so styfliche · þorgh sterynge of þe
bote 36

He bendeþ and boweþ · þe body is vnstable,

18. *freres*] bope G.

19. [*euer* FGI] þut M ; PE om.

23. *sythes* EMF] sythe PI ; see l. 31.
syngeþ] synegeþ G ; synneþ ME ; man
synneth F. *by day*] and ryth M.

24. *alþer*] alder M ; I om. *vpon*]
on I ; on þe G.

25. *syngeþ*] synneþ IMEF ; synegiþ
G. *doþ*] he doþ I.

26. *syngeþ*] synneþ IME ; synegeþ
PG ; but see ll. 23, 25.

27. *dwelle*] stonde G.

28. *ys*] nys G. *at—among*] a-tom
wiþ M.

29. *is*] his P. *som while*] vm-
while G ; vm-whilus F ; vmbiwhile
M ; oþer-while I.

30. *sone*] self M.

31. *syngeþ*] synneþ IMFE ; singeþ
G. *on*] in G.

32. *forbusene*] forbisne I ; forbisme
(sic) G ; for-bisen M ; forbisen F.
quap] seide M. *þe* (2)] þow G.

33. *in myddes*] amyddes I ; amyð
F ; in G.

34. *waggynge*] þe waggyng MFG.
bote] vessel F.

35. *tyme*] tymes I ; a tyme F.
stomble] tombly G.

36. *Stonde*] For stonde I. *styfliche*]
stillich E. *sterynge*] strengþe EM.
bote] barge F.

37. *is*] is so I ; his P.

Ac ȝut he is saf and sounde ; · so fareth hit by þe ryght- **B 127**
ful.

þauh he falle, he falleþ nat · bote as ho fulle in a bote, † For, while he
þat ay is saf and sounde · þat sitteþ with-ynne þe borde. falls *within* the
boat, he is safe.

So hit fareþ," quap þe frere · "by ryghtful mannes Even so with
fallynge ; 41 man.

þawe he þorgh fondinge falle · he falleþ nat out of
charite ;

So dedliche synne doþ he nat · for dowel hym helpeþ.

The water ys likned to þe worlde · þat wanyeþ and **A 105**
wexeþ ; 44

The godes of [þis] grounde aren lyke · to þe grete The waves are
wawes, this world's
fluctuating riches.

[þat] as wyndes and wederes · walwen a-boute ;

The bot ys lykned to oure body · þat brotel ys of The boat is the
kynde, frail body.

That þorgh þe fende and oure flesh · and þis frele
worlde 48

Syngeþ seuene sithes · þe saddest man on erthe,

And lyfholiest of lyf · þat lyueth vnder þe sonne.

Ac free wil and free wit · folweþ a man euere

To repenten and ryse · and rowen out of synne, 52

To contricion, to confession · til he come to hus ende.

† But free will
and free wit
enable a man to
row away out of
sin."

Raper haue we no reste · til we restitue

38. *saf*] *sad* M. *so*] and so I.
hit] G *om.*

39. *falle*] *faile* MF. *as*] I *om.*
ho] who so I; *hoso* F; *he* MG.

40—42. G *omits.*

40. *saf*] *sad* M. *þat*] and I. *sitteþ*] *sitte* I; *sit* M.

41. *by*] *by* þe I.

42. *þorgh*] *þorgh*e P. *fondinge*] *fondynges* I.

43. *he*] I *om.*

44. *likned* IF] *liknyd* G; *likened* EM; *liknede* P. *wanyeþ*—*wexeþ*] *wexep* and *wanyep* M.

45. *of*] on M. [*þis* IMFEG] þe P. *aren*] *ben* E. *to*] I *om.* þe] MEFG *om.*

46. [þat I] For F; PEGM *om.*; *cf.* B-text. *walwen*] *wawen* E; *waweþ* M; *wawen* þei F.

47. *lykned*] *lycknede* P; *see* l. 44. *brotel*] *brokel* EG; *britel* M.

48. *and* (1)] of I (*wrongly*).

49. *Syngeþ*] *Senegeþ* P; *Synegeþ* G; *Synneþ* IMFEG; *cf.* l. 25. *sithes* IMFEG] *sithe* P; *cf.* ll. 23, 31.

50. F *omits.* *lyfholiest*] þe *holiest* I. þe] MG *om.*

51. M *transposes* *wil* and *wit*.

52. *ryse*] to arise I; to a-risen M; arise FG. *of*] of his G.

53. *To*] þorgh I. *he*] he beo G.

54. *Raper*] For *raþere* IF. *we* (1)] G *om.* *til*] til þat F.

Our lyf to oure lord god · for oure lykames gultes."

B 128

"I can't follow
that," said I: "so
farewell."

"Ich haue no kynde knowyng," quap ich · "to con-
ceyue al þy speche, 56

Ac yf ich may lyue and loke · ich shal go lerne
bettere."

"Ich by-kenne þe Crist," quap he · "þat on þe croice
deide."

And ich seide, "þe same · saue ȝow fro meschaunce,
And gyue me grace on þis grounde · with good ende to
deye." 60

Again I wandered
wide, walking
alone, and
came to a grove,

Ich wente forþ wyde where · walkynge myn one,

In a wylde wyldernesse · by a wode syde.

Blisse of [þe] briddes · a-byde me made,

A 106

and listened to
the sweet birds'
lays.

And vnder lynde in a launde · lenede ich a stounde,

To lithen here laies · and here loueliche notes. 65

Murthe of here murye mouthes · made me to slepe ;

Then I slept
again.

And merueilousliche me mette · a-myddes al þat blisse.

One like myself
came, and called
me by name,

A muche man, me þouhte · lyke to my-selue, 68

Cam and callede me · by my [kynde] name.

"What art þow?" quap ich · "þat my name knowest?"

"That wost þou, wille," quap he · "and no wight
betere."

who said, he was
Thought.

"Wot ich," quap ich, "ho art þow?" · "thouhte," seide
he þenne ; 72

"Ich haue þe suwed þis seue ȝer · seih þou me no
rather?"

56. *knowyng*] knowleching I. *quap*
ich] I *om.* *al*] of G. *þy*] þis IFEG.

57. *lyue*] go leue G.

59. *ȝow*] þe M.

61. *myn one*] me one M ; allone E ;
al myn oone F.

62. *wylde*] G *om.* *by*] and by I.
wode] woodes I ; wodus F.

63. [*þe* IMFG] PE *om.* *a-byde*
me] me abide G.

64. *lynde*] a lynde M (*only*). *in*]
vpon I.

65. *lithen*] lustene M.

66. *murye*] I *om.* *me*] me þere I.

67. *me*] i M.

68. *muche*] mekel M. *me*] as y
G. *lyke*] ylike IG. *my*] me M.

69. [*kynde* I] ryhte PEFMG ; but
cf. B-text.

70. *art* MF] ert PE. *art þow*]
artow I ; ertow G. *my*] þou my I.

71. *wost*] I *om.* *wille*] wel E.
wight] man M.

72. *art* IMF] ert PEG.

73. *þe*] E *om.* *þe suwed*] sewed þe
I ; y-sewed þe G. *þis*] G *om.* *seue*]
so also EG ; seuen I ; seune MF.
seih] sawe I ; saw FG ; sje M ; sey E.

"Art þow þouhte?" quap ich þo · "þow coupest me
wisse "Thought," said I, "tell me where is Do-well."

Where þat dowel dwelleþ · and do me to knowe?" 75 **B 129**

"Dowel and dobet," quap he · "and dobest þe þridde

Beþ þre fayre vertues · and beep nauht ferr to fynde.

Who-so is trewe of hys tonge · and of hus two handes, "Whoever is true," said he, "him Do-well follows."

And þorw leel labour lyueþ · and loueþ his emeristine,

And þer-to trewe of hus tail · and halt wel his handes,

Nouht dronkelewe ne deynous · dowel hym folweþ. 81

Dobet doþ al this · ac ȝut he doþ more ;

He is lowe as a lombe · and loueliche of speche,

And helpeth herteliche alle men · of þat he may aspare.

The bagges and þe by-gurdeles · he hath to-broke hem
alle, 85

That þe eorl auerous · heeld, and hus eires ;

And of mammonaes moneye · mad hym meny frendes,

And is ronne in-to religion · and rendreþ hus byble,

And precheþ to þe puple · seynt poules wordes ; 89

Libenter sufferitis insipientes, cum sitis ipsi sapientes ; and renders the Bible, and preaches from the text, 2 Cor. xi. 19.

'Ȝe worldliche wyse · vnwyse þat Ȝe suffre,

Lene hem and loue hem' · this latyn ys to mene.

Dobest bere sholde · þe bisshopes croce,

And halye with [þe] hoked ende · ille men to goode, 92

**Do-best should
B 130
bear a bishop's
crosier,**

74. Art IMF] Ert PEG. quap]
seide M. coupest] coudest IMF.
þow coupest] coudest þou F.

75. Where] Were P. me] me him F.

76. quap he] G om.

77. Beþ] Aren I; Ben M. beep]
ben IM; be F.

78. so] I om. is] his P. trewe]
trywe P. hys] ys P. two EF] tuo
I; to PMG.

79. I omits. þorw] þorwe P.
lyueþ] G om. emoristine] euene-
cristene M.

80. I omits. trewe] trywe P. wel
his] his to M.

81. Nouht] And is nouht I. deyn-
ous] dedeynous I.

82. ac] and MF. more] welmoore F.

83. loueliche] lowelich I.

84. aspare] spare IM.

85. by-gurdeles] bri-gerdeles I;
bregurdles G. to-broke] i-broke M.

86. heeld] helde IE; held MG.

87. mad] hap mad M; y-maked
I; y-mad GF.

88. is] M om. ronne] yronne EM.
in-to] to EFG. religion] religious E.
rendreþ] hap rendred I; rendred F;
redeþ M. and rendreþ] to rendre G.
hus] þe I.

89. cum, &c.] IMG om.

90. vnwyse þat] þe vnwise M.

91. to mene] trewe I.

93. halye] holde E. [þe IMFG]
PE om. hoked] croked M. ille]
alle M. to] & F.

† to put down
despisers of the
law.

And with þe pyk putte adoune · *preuarcatores legis*,
Lordes þat lyuen as hem lust · and no lawe a-counten ;
For here mok and here meeble · suche men þynken 96
That no Bisshop sholde · here byddinge with-sitte.
Ac dobest sholde nat dreden [hem] · bote do as god hihte,

† Mat. x. 28.

Nolite timere eos qui possunt occidere corpus.

Do-well, Dobet,
and Dobest have
crowned a king."

Thus dowel and dobet · diuinede, and dobest, 99
And crounede on to be kyng · to culle with-oute synne
That wolde nat don as dobest · diuinede and tauhte.

Thus dowel and dobet · and dobest þe pridde
Crounede on to be kyng · and kepen ous alle,

A 108

And reulen alle reaumes · by here þre wittes ; 104
Bote oper-wise ne elles nat · bote as þei þree assented."

I thanked him,
and asked him
where these three
dwelt.

Ich þonked pouht þo · þat he me so tauhte :
"Ȝut sauereþ me nat þi sawe," quap ich · "so me crist
spede,

A more kynde knowyng · coueite ich to huyre 108
Of dowel and of dobet · and dobest of alle."

"Only Wit can
tell thee," said he.

"Bote wit wolle þe wisse," quap þouht · "wher þo
þre dwellen ;

Elles know ich non þat can · in none kynriche."

So Thought and

Thouht and ich thus þre daies · to-gederes we ȝeoden,

94. *pyk*] puynt (over erasure) G. G.
putte] pulte I.

95. *Here* S begins again ; and
collation with G is less full.

96. *For*] so IMFSG ; And fore P ;
& for E ; *but* And is superfluous.
mok] muk FS. *and*] and for PE ;
but IMFSG omit for. *meeble*]
moebles I.

97. *Schulde* no bisshop be · here
biddinges to wiþ-sitte I.

98. [*hem* IMFSG] hym PE. *nat*
—*hem*] drede hem noght IG.

99. *diuinede*] demed I. *and*] a
IMFS ; at G.

100. *kyng*] a kyng IESG. *to*] & F.

101. *don*] M om. *diuinede*] de-
med I.

103. *kyng*] a kyng IESG.

104. *reulen*] to reule I. *by*] after

105. E omits from bote as þei down
to nat in l. 107.

106. *þonked pouht*] thought þonkede
I ; þankid muche þouȝt F.

107. *Ȝut*] Ac ȝut I. *me nat*] nat
me I. *sawe*] sawes I. *quap ich*] I
om. *spede*] helpe MF.

108. *kynde*] kyndere I.

109. *of* (2)] IMFSG om. *dobest*]
ho dobest P ; who do best E ; who
doþ best I ; *but* MFS have dobest
only, which is the simplest reading.

110. *Bote*] But if I. *wolle þe*] þe
wolde M ; cunne þe F. *wher*] wer P.
þo] þey S.

111. *kynriche*] kyngge-riche M.

112. *Thouht*] Thouth P ; *but* see
last line. *we*] M om. *togederes*—
ȝeoden] wenton to-gidere F.

- Disputynge vp dowel · daye after oþere ; 113 I went on till we
 And er we were ywar · with wit gan we mete. met Wit.
 He was long and lene · lyke to non oþer, **B 131**
 Was no pruyde in hus aparail · ne pouerte noþer ; 116
 Sad of hus semblant · with a softe speche.
 Ich [dorste] meue no matere · to maken hym to I asked Thought
 Iangle, to ask him a
 Bote as ich bad thouht þo · be mene by-twene, 119 **A 109**
 And putte forth som purpos · to prouen hus wittes, question for me,
 What dowel was fro dobet · and dobest fro hem boþe. and he asked him
 Thenne thouht in þat tyme · seide þese wordes, where Do-well,
 “Wher dowel and dobet · and dobest ben in londe Do-bet, and
 Her is on wolde wite · yf wit couthe teche, 124 Do-best dwelt.
 And what lyues thei lyuen · and what lawe þei vsen ;
 What þei drede and douten · dere syre, telleþ.” **A 110 B 132**
 “Syre dowel dwelleþ,” quap wit · “nat a daye hennes,” “Do-well dwells,”
 In a castle þat Kynde made · of foure kyne þynges ; 128 said Wit, “in a
 Of erthe, of aier yt is made · medled to-gederes, castle made by
 With wynd and water · wittyliche en-ioyned. Kind of four
 Kynde hath closed þer-ynne · craftilyche with alle things, earth,
 A lemman þat he loueþ wel · lyke to hym-selue ; 132 air, wind, and
 Anima hue hatte · to hure hath enuye water.
 Within the castle
 Kind has inclosed
 the lady Anima,

113. *vp*] *vpon* IMFG ; for S.
 114. *er*] *ar* IFG ; or E. *were*
ywar] *were* ware S ; *y-war* were I ;
waar were G. *with*] *S om.*

115. *lyke*] *y-like* IG ; & *lik* F.
 116. *in*] *on* I. *aparail*] *paraile*
 IFG. *ne*] *no* M.

117. *with*] *and* wif IG.
 118. [*dorste* IS] *durst* FE ; *derste*
 G ; *ne* *durste* M ; *purste* P ; *see*
 B-text. *meue*] *moeue* E ; *meeue* F.
to (1)] *ne* M.

119. *thouht*] *thouth* P ; *see* l. 110.
be] *to be* I.

120. *prouen* IEF] *preuen* MSG ;
prouen P. *wittes*] *wit* S.

121. *dowel nas*] *was* do-wel I.

122. *thouht*] *thouth* P ; *see* l. 110.
þat] *þan* P ; *but it seems a mere*
error, as all other MSS. have þat.

seide MFG] *seyde* S ; *saide* I ; *seede*
 P ; *sede* E. *þese* MF] *þise* I ; *þis* E ;
þeese P.

123. *Wher* IMG] *War* P ; *Whare*
 SEF. *ben* IMEF] *been* P ; *be* S.

124. *wolde*] *wille* I. *wite*] *I-wite*
 I ; *i-witen* M ; *ywite* E. *yf wit*] *ho*
so F. *teche*] *him teche* MF ; *telle* G.

125. *lyues*] *lijf þat* M. *lawe*] *lawes*
 SFG.

126. *What*] *And what* I. *and*] *an*
 P. *douten* IMEFSG] *douhten* P.
telleþ] *telleþ me* M.

129. *of*] *and* IS ; *and of* M. *med-*
led] *and medeled* M ; *y-medeled* IG.

130. *en-ioyned*] *en-ioynede* P.

131. *closed*] *i-closed* MF.

132. *wel*] *I om.*

133. *hue*] *sche* IMSFG ; *þo* E.
hatte] *hatteþ* M.

whom 'the prince
of this world'
hates.

A prout prikyere of fraunce · *princeps huius mundi* ;
And wolde wynne hure away · with wiles, yf he
myghte. 135

And kynde knoweth þis wel · and kepeth hure þe
betere,

Do-well, Do-bet,
and Do-best are
her appointed
keepers.

And doop hure with syre dowel · duk of þes marches.
Dobet ys here damelese · syre doweles douhter,
To serue þat lady leelly · boþe late and rathe.

A 111

Dobest ys a-boue boþe · a bisshopes peer, 140
And by hus lerynge is ladde · þat ilke lady *anima*.

B 133

The constable of
the castle is Inwit
[Conscience],

The constable of þat castel · þat kepeþ hem alle
Is a wys knyght with alle · syre Inwit he hatte ;
And haþ fyue faire sones · by hus furste wyf, 144

whose sons are
See-well, Say-
well, Hear-well,
Work-well, and
Go-well,"

Syre seewel, syre seiwel · syre huyrewel þe hende,
Syre worchewel with þyn hand · a wight man of
strengthe,

And syre godfaith gowel · grete lordes alle.

These fyue ben ysett · for to sauve *anima*, 148

Til kynde come oþer sende · and kepe hure hym-self."

"Who is Kind?"
said I.

"What lyues þyng is kynde?" quap ich · "can[st]
þow me telle?"

"Kind is the
great Creator,
who made all
things ;

"Kynde is [a creator]," quap wit · "of alle kyne
þynges,

Fader and formour · of al þat forth groweþ, 152

The whiche is god gretteþ · þat gynnyng hadde
neuere,

Lord of lyf and of lyght · of lysse and of payne.

134. *prout*] proud MISF.

135. *wiles*] whiles P. *yf*] and I.

136. *þis*] hit M. *hure*] hit M.

137. *doop*] dop E; hath do IFS;
i-do M. *syre*] M om. *duk*] duchasse M.

140. I omits.

141. *And*] As I. *lerynge*] lern-
yng IMG. *þat ilke*] þis ilke I; þulke
M. *þat—lady*] eche day þat E.

142. *The*] Ac þe I.

143. *Is*] He is M. *hatte*] hotep M;
highte I.

145. *huyrewel*] herkenewel M.

149. *sende*] seynde P.

150. *lyues*] so also EM; lyuus S;
leuys G; kynnus F; kyn I. *canst*
FMS] canest E; can P. *canst þow*]
canstow I.

151. [*a creator* MS] creator F;
creatour G; creature PEI (*wrongly*);
cf. B-text. *alle*] I om.

152. *al*] M om.

153. *whiche*] wiche P. *þat—hadde*]
begynnyng had he I; by-gunnyng
had G. *hadde*] E om.

154. *lyght*] lip E.

Angeles and alle þyng · aren at hus wil ;
 Man is hym most lyk · of membres and of face, 156 man being most like himself.
 And semblable in soule to god · bote yf synne hit (A 112)
 make.

And as þow suxt þe sonne · som tyme for cloudes † As clouds hide the sun, so sin hides God from man.
 May nat shyne ne shewe · on shawes on erthe,
 Right so letteþ lecherie · and oþer luther synnes, 160
 þat god suweþ nat synful men · and suffreþ hem mys-
 fare,

As somme hongen hem-self · and oþer while a-drencheþ ; † Some sinners kill themselves.
 God wol nat of hem wite · bote letteþ hem yworthe,

As þe sauter seiþ · by such synful shrewes, 164
Et dimisi eos secundum desideria [cordis] † Ps. lxxx. 13 (Vulg.).
eorum.

Loke ! suche luther men · lome ben ryche † Wicked men are often very rich.
 [Of golde and of oþer good · ac godes grace hem faileþ ;]

For thei loueþ and by-leyueþ · al here lyf-tyme
 More in catel þan in kynde · þat alle kyne þynges † They believe more in wealth than in God.
 wroghte, 168

The whiche is boþe loue and lyf · and lasteþ with-
 outen ende.

Inwitt and alle wittes · closed ben þer-ynne ; **B 134**
 By loue and by leaute · þer-by lyueþ *anima* ;
 And lyf lyueþ by Inwitt · and lerynge of kynde. 172

155. *and*] of (!) E. *aren*] ben desiderium PES. [*cordis* EF] PIM
 (*wrongly*) E. SG om.

156. *hym most*] most him I. *and of*] & F; in (*sic*) S. 165. *Loke*] I om. *luther*] luther-
 lyuyng I. *lome*] i-lome M.

157. *in*] most in M.

158. *suxt*] sixt F; seist ES; seest 166. *From* I; also in MFSG; PE
 IM; sext G. omit.

159. *ne*] & S. *shawes*] shaftes M.

160. *Right*] I om. *letteþ*] lette I. 167. *For*] Ac for M.

luther] lipere MFSG. 168. *in*] on IMFSG (*twice*). *More*

161. *suweþ*] scheweþ I. *nat*] nat —*catel*] On catel more I. *kyne*]

such I. *and*] but S. kynde I; Som. *þynges*] þing IG.

162. *a-drencheþ*] drencheþ MG. 169. *whiche*] wiche P. *boþe*] I

163. *leteþ*] lat I; let M; leet G. om. *and lasteþ*] þat laste I; last-
yworthe] worþe S. yng G.

164. *such*] I om. *desideria* IMFG] 170. *wittes*] whittes P.

172. *lerynge*] lerynge MG.

In-wit is in the
head, and *Anima*
in the heart.

Inwitt is in þe hefd · as *Anima* [in] þe herte,
And mucche wo worth hym · þat Inwitt mys-speyneþ.
For þat is godes owen good · hus grace and hus
tresoure,

† Some men,
like Lot, Noah,
and Herod, lose
their Conscience.

That meny lede leeseþ · thorw lykerouse drynke, 176
As lot dude and noe ; · and *herodes* þe daffe
3af hus douhter for [a] daunsyng · in a dissh þe hefde
Of þe blessyde baptiste · by-fore alle hus gustes.

† Conscience and
health are
treasures.

Every man þat hath ynwitt · and hus hele boþe, 180
Hath tresour ynow in treuthe · to fynde with hym
selue.

A 113 B 135
Idiots should
be protected by
the church.

Ac fauntekynes and fooles · þe whiche fauten Inwitt,
Frendes [schulden] fynden hem · and fro folye kepe,
And holychurche helpe to · so sholde no man begge,

B 137
Waste not speech
or time.

Ne spille speche ne tyme · ne myspende neiþer 185
Meeble ne vnmeeble · mete noþer drynke.

† Love your
enemies.

And þanne dude we alle wel · and 3ut wel bet to louye
Oure enemyes entyrelliche · and help hem at here neede.
And 3ut were best to bee aboute · and brynge hit to
hepe, 189

† We should seek
to love all men.

That alle londes loueden · and in on lawe by-leouede.
Bisschopes sholde be here-aboute · and brynge þis to
hepe,

For to leese þere-fore here londe · and here lyf after.

173. *in*] I *om.* *hefd*] heued IG ;
heed F ; hed ME ; hede S. *as*] and
IMFS. [*in* IMFESG] P *om.* *þe*] IG
om.

174. *mucche*] mykel M. *worth*] werches M. *mys-speyneþ*] myspeueþ
ESG ; mys-spendeþ MF.

176. *lede*] a leede IF. *lykerouse*] sikenesse of E. *drynke*] drynks M.

177. *lot*] loth IMF. *and* (2)] an P.

178. *3af*] He 3af I. [*a* IMFSE] P *om.* *daunsyng*] daunce F. *þe*] his
S. *hefde*] heed MF ; hed E ; hede S.

179. *þe*] þat IG. *gustes*] *so also*
E ; gestes I ; gistes MFS.

181. *in*] of IS. *with*] IS *om.*

182. *whiche*] wiche P ; whiche þat
I. *fauten*] lakkyþ G.

183. [*schulden* M] schold S ; schal
I ; schul F ; schulle G ; suche PE.

184. *helpe*] helpeþ E ; S *om.*

187. *And*] Ac I. *we*] S *om.* *3ut*
—*bet*] wel bete 3ut I. *to*] is to E.
S *omits* last half of l. 187 and first
half of l. 188.

189. *3ut*] ryȝt S. *were*] hit were
M.

190. G *omits.* *loueden* IMFES]
loueþ S ; *miswritten* lyueden P. *and*]
an P. *on*] o S ; oo F.

191. G *omits.* *þis*] hit MS ; it F.

- The catel þat crist hadde · pre clopes hit were, 193 † Christ had but
 Ther-of was [he] ryfled · and robbed er he deyede ; three pieces of
 After þat he les hus lyf · for lawe sholde loue wexe. cloth, and of
 Prelates and preestes · and princes of holy church these He was
 Sholde doute no dep · noþer dere 3eres, 197 † Prelates should
 To wenden as wyde · as þe worlde were, fear no death,
 To tulien the erthe with tonge · and teche men to † but preach Love
 louye ; through all the
 For ho so loueþ, leyue hit wel · god wol nat lete hym world.
 sterue 200
 In myschef for lacke of mete · ne for myssynge of
 — clopes ;
Inquirentes autem dominum non minuentur Ps. xxxiii. 11
omni bono. (Vulg.).
 Ho so lyueþ in lawe · and in loue doþ wel (A 117)
 As these weddid men · þat þis worlde susteynen ? Truly wedded
 For of here kynde thei come · confessours and folk do well.
 [martyres,] 204 Of such come
 Patriarkes and prophetes · popes and maiden es. confessours,
 For god seith hit hym-self · ‘shal neuere good appel martyrs, &c.
 þorw no sotel science · on sour stock growe ;’
 And hit ys no more to mene · bote men þat buth by- (B 138)
 getyn † Illegitimate
 208 children are out
 Out of matrimonie nat moillere · mowe nat haue þe of grace.
 grace

194. *S omits.* *Ther-of]* þer-fro E.
 [he IMFEG] P *om.* *ryfled]* ryfled
 P. *ryfled—deyede]* robbed and
 rufled · or he on roode deyed I.

195. *After þat]* Afterward M. *he*
les] he leste M; lees he E. *After—*
lyf] And I sy þe al his lif (*sic*) I.
loue] longe & (*sic*) S.

197. *doute]* nat dowte I. *noþer]*
 ne none MSF; ne no IG.

199. *tulien]* tylve ISFG; *telize*
 M. *erthe]* eerthe P.

200. *leyue]* lef MS; leue EG; I
om. *hit]* him I.

201. *lacke]* defaute I; no lac F.

203. *As]* And (!) S. *these]* theese
 P; wise M.

204. *thei]* þer E. *confessours]* þe
 confessours M; boþe confessours
 I. [*martyres* MIFSG] maistres
 (*wrongly*) PE.

205. *maiden es* MI] maidones
 PEFG.

206. *hit]* IS *om.*

207. *on]* on a M; in a S.

After l. 207, S *adds*—*Noþur* an a
 bytur brom · wex broune beryus.

208. *hit]* MSEFG *om.* *buth]* bep
 ESF; ben MI.

209. *moillere]* mulerize M.

That leelle legitime · by lawe may cleyme.

And þat my sawe be soth · þe sauter bereþ witnesse,

Ps. vii. 15 Vulg.).

Concepit in dolore, & peperit iniquitatem.

Caym þe cursed creature · conceyued was in synne,

† Cain, who was
accursed, was
conceived in sin.

After þat adam and eue · hadden ysynged ; 213

With-oute repentaunce · of here rechelesnesse,

A rybaud þei engendrede · and a gome vnryghtful.

As an hewe þat ereþ nat · auntreþ hym to sowe 216

On a leye-lond · a-zens hus lordes wille,

So was caym conceyued · and so been cursed wrecches,

That lycame han a-zen þe lawe · þat oure lord ordeynede.

(A 118)

Alle þat come of caym · caytyues were euere, 220

And for þe synne of caymes sed · seyde god to noe,

Gen. vi. 7.

Penitet me fecisse hominem ;

God bade Noah
build the ark,

And bad shape hym a schip · of shides and of bordes,

‘Thy-selue and þy sones þree · and sitthen ȝoure
wyues,

Buske ȝow to þat bot · [and] a-bydeþ þer-ynne 224

for the flood
should destroy
Cain's seed.

Tyl fourty dayes be fulfilled · and [þe] flod haue wasshe

Clene away þe cursede blod · that of cayme ys spronge.

A 119 B 130

“All the beasts
must die for
Cain's sin,

Bestes þat now beep · banne shulleþ þe tyme

That euere þat cursed cayme · cam on this erthe ; 228

Alle shullen deye for hus dedes · by dales and hulles,

And þe foules þat flen · forth with othere bestes,

save of each kind
a couple.”

Except onliche · of eche kynde a peyre,

That in þy shynglede schip · with the shal be saued.’

210. *leelle*] þe leel F. *legitime*] I; hym schap SG. *hym*] I *om.*
legitimi F; *legityme* men M. *by*] *schip* IMFSG] *shup* PE. *of* (2)] I
by þe I. *om.*

211. *be*] is I. *bereþ*] bere S.

213. *ysynged*] y-synned IMFE;
I-synnewyd S.

214. *rechelesnesse*] rechilessnesse P.

215. *and*] M *om.* I *omits last half*
of the line.

216. *hewe* IG] *hywe* P; *hyne*
IMFES. *auntreþ*] & *auntrþ* S; &
awntereth F.

217. *a*] an old S; a lewed F.

222. *shape*] *shappe* P; go schapen

I; hym schap SG. *hym*] I *om.*
schip IMFSG] *shup* PE. *of* (2)] I
om.

224. *Buske*] *Buskeþ* SMF. [*and*
IMF] PESG *om.*

225. [þe M] PEIFSG *om.* *wasshe*] *i-wassche* MFG; *ywasche* (sic) I.

226. *ys*] I *om.*

227. *banne shulleþ*] *schal banne* IG.

230. *flen*] *flyeth* I; *fleep* F; *fleon* S.

231. *eche*] ech a I.

232. *þy*] M *om.* *schip* MFS]
schippe I; *shup* P. *with—saued*] *schal be with þe y-saued* I.

Here aboute þe barn · hus belsires gultes, 233

And alle for here for-fadres · ferdn þe worse.

The godspel ys her-ageyn · as gomes may reden,

Filius non portabit iniquitatem patris, [nec pater iniquitatem filij.] Ezek. xviii. 20.

Holy writ wittnesseþ · þat for no wickede dede 236

That the sire hym-self doþ · by hus owene wil,

The sone for [þe] syres synne · sholde nat be þe werse.

West-mynster lawe, ich wot wel · worcheþ þe contrarie; † Westminster

For þauh þe fader be a frankelayne · and for a felon be law says the
hanged, 240 contrary, for it
disinherits the
son whose father
is hanged.

The heritage þat þe air sholde haue · ys at þe kynges
wille.

Ac þe godspel ys a glose þere · hudyngþe þe greythe
treuthe;

For god seide ensample · of suche manere iss hue,

That kynde folweþ kynde · and contrarieþ neuere;

Nunquam colligunt de spinis vuas: & alibi, Mat. vii. 16, 17.

Bona arbor bonum fructum facit.

Ac whi þe worlde was a-drent · holy writ telleþ, 245 The flood came
because Setl's
seed married
Cain's.

Was for mariages of man-kynde · þat men maden þat
tyme.

After þat caym þe cursedde · hadde culled abel,

Seth, Adames sone · sitthen was engendred. 248

And god sente to seth · so sone he was of age,

B 138

233. *aboute* G] *aboutghte* I; *about* EF; *bouzte* S; *boute* M; *mis-written* aboute P. *hus*] þe IMFG.

234. *for-fadres*] *form-fadres* MFS.

235. *portabit* IMFSEG] *importa-*
bit P. [*nec—filij*] *in* M only.

236. *þat*] S om.

237, 238. I *has*—þat þe sire by
him-selfe doþ · þe sone schal be þe
worse. *for*] *fore* P. [þe EMFSG] P
om. *synne*] *gilt* F; *gult* S.

239. *West-mynster*] Ac West-
minster I.

240. *a* (1)] S om. *a* (2)] MSF om.
hanged] *anhanged* I; *i-hanged* M.

241. *air*] *heir* I; *eire* E; *eir* M;
sone S; *eyr* G; *heirus* F.

242. *godspel*—a] *gospales* M. *hudyngþe*] and *hudeþ* I. *greythe*] *grete*
MEG; *graye* (!) S.

243. *seide*] *sey* S. *iss hue*] *yschue*
E; *issue* IF; *issu* M; *vssu* S.

244. *colligunt*] *colligit quis* M;
colliget F; *colligit* EG; *colliges* IS.

245. *a-drent*] *dreynt* E.

246. *Was*] *Hit was* M. *of man-kynde*] *makyng* I.

248. *sitthen*] *seth (repeated)* I;
seþþe M. *engendred*] *engendrede* P;
endangered (1) M.

God warned
Seth's issue not
to marry with
Cain's;
and was wroth
with them for so
doing.

That—for no kyne catel · ne no kyne byheste
Suffren hus seed seeden · with caymes seed hus broþer.
And for þat seth suffrede hit · god seide, 'me for-
þynkeþ 252

B 140

Jo. xiv. 6.

That ich man made · opere matrimonye suffrede ;
For good sholde wedden good · þauh þei no good hadde,
For ich am *uia & ueritas* · and may auaunce hem alle.
Ac fewe folke [now] folweþ this · for thei ȝeueþ here
children 256

Now-a-days,
many marry for
money.

† No rich man
will marry a
pretty girl, if
poor;

† but he will
marry an ugly
one, if rich,

For couetise of catel · and connynge chapmen ;
Of kyn ne of kynredene · a-counteþ men bote lytel.
þauh hue be loueliche to loken on · and lofsom a bedde,
A mayde wel ymanered · of good men [y]spronge, 260
Bote hue haue eny oper good · haue hure wol no ryche.
Ac let hure be vnloueliche · vnlofsom a bedde,
A bastarde, a bounde on · a begeneldes douhter,
That no curtesye can · bote let hure be knowe 264
For ryche oper wel yrented · þauh hue reuely for elde,
Ther nys squier ne knyght · in contreye a-boute,
That he nel bowe to þat bonde · to bede hure an hose-
bonde,

† and wish next
day that she were

And wedden hure for hure welthe · and wisshen on þe
morwe 268

250. *That*] *superfluous, but in all*
MSS. ne] ne for M.

251. *Suffren—seeden*] Suffre nout
þi seed scheden M. *hus* (2)] þi M.

252. *for—seth*] seth for he I.

253. *man*] man on moolde F.

254. *no*] *miswritten* ne P.

255. *and*] i M. *hem*] I om.

256. *Ac*] For M. [*now* EMIFS]
P om. *now folweþ*] folwen now I.

257. *catel*] hory catel F. *and*] to
F. *chapmen* IMFES] chapman P.

258. *a-counteþ*] counteþ IG.

259. *hue*] sche M; ȝhe I; ȝo E;
heo FG; *miswritten* he P; *but see* l.

261. *loueliche—*a] lousum to loken
on · and also in M.

260. *wel*] and wel I. *ymanered*]

ymanerede P; *ynorisched* E. *of*]
and of I. *yspronge* EIMFSG]
spronge P.

261. *eny*] I om. *hure wol*] wol
hire I; wole hure MF; nel hure G.

262. *hure*] hem I. *a*] in M.

263. *bounde*] bonde MF. *on*] so
also MS; oon F; E om. *a*] *oper* a
E (*twice*). *begeneldes*] begenyldes
ES; begeneles M; begenildus F.

264. *can*] ne can I. *knowe*]
i-knowen M.

265. *wel yrented*] rented wel I.
reuely] ryuel E; ryuele MFSG; be
reueled I.

267. *nel*] ne wile IM. *þat*] þe S.
to (2)] and M. *hosebonde*] house-
bond IS; husbonde FG.

- That hus wyf were wex · oper a watel-ful of nobles. turned into wax
or money.
- In gelesie ioye-less · and Ianglynge a bedde
- [þei lyue here lif vnlouely til deth hem departe.]
- Meny peire sitthe the pestilence-tyme · han plight **A 120**
treuthe to louye, 272 Many, since the
pestilence, have
married ill,
- Ac þei lyen [lelly] · here noþer loueþ opere.
- The frut þat þei bryngen forth aren meny foule
wordes ;
- Thei han no children bote cheste · and choppes hem and have no
by-twyne. children but
strife.
- Thauh þei don hem to donemowe · bote þe deuel hem Though they go
helpe 276 to Dunmow,
they never fetch
the flitch.
- To folwen for þe flicche · feccheþ þei hit neuere ;
- Bote þei bothe be for-swore · that bacon thei tyne.
- For-thi ich counseile alle crystine · coueite neuere be Then wed not for
wedded money, but marry
suitably.
- For couetise of catel · in no kynne wyse ; 280
- Bote maydenes and maydenes · marieþ þow to-gederes ;
- And wydewers and wydewes · weddeþ ayþer opere,
- And loke þat loue be more þe cause · þan lond oper **B 141**
nobles.
- And euerech manere seculer man · þat may nat con- It is better to
tyne, marry than burn. 284
- Wisliche go wedde · and war þe fro þat synne

269. *watel*] so PE; walet IMF; watel (*alt. to walet*) G; cofre S.

270. *ioye-less*] iewelless (*wrongly*) M. a] in M.

271. *In F only.*

272. *Meny*] Many a I. *the*] þis IG; MF *om.* *pestilence-tyme*] pestilences IG.

273. [*lelly* SMG] lely I; leelly F; sothliche PE. *here*] neuer E; MS *om.* *noþer*] neyþer S; non IG. *here noþer*] for noon of hem F. *loueþ*] likeþ IG.

274. *frut*] fruyt IMFGS. *forth*] E *om.* *aren*] ben ES.

275. *Thei han*] Han þey I.

278. *thei*] þei ne M (*wrongly*).

279. *For-thi*] For-why M. *crystine*] goode G. *coueite*] coueiteþ M; coueytete (*sic*) I. *be*] to be M.

280. G *omits.* *For*] For no I. *no kynne*] non skynnes (*sic*) E.

281. *maydenes* (2)] maydones PE. *marieþ* MFS] marye I; *miswritten* marien PG.

282. *wydewers—wydewes*] widewes and widewers I. *ayþer*] þoure ayþer I. 283. *loke*] lokeþ MS. *nobles*] noobles P.

284. *manere*] G *om.* *contynue*] conteyne MS.

285. *go*] to M. *wedde*] wedde a wif E. *war—fro*] worche for M. *þat*] G *om.*

That lecherye is, a lykyng þyng · and lyn-zerde of helle.

Marry while young.

And whil þow art 3ong and 3ep · and þy wepne kene,
Awreke þe þerwith on wyuyng · for godes werk ich
holde hit : 288

Cf. John of Bridlington, in Wright's Polit. Poems, i. 159.

*Dum sis uir fortis · ne des tua robora scortis,
Scribitur in portis · meretrix est ianua mortis.*

Observe right seasons.
None but the pure should live together.

3e þat han wyues, beþ war · worcheþ nat out of tyme,
As adam dude and eue · as ich whil er tolde. 292
For sholde no bed-borde be · bote yf þei boþe were
Clene of lyf and loue in saule · and in leel wedlok.
For þat derne dede · do no man sholde 295

A 121

1 Cor. vii. 2.

Bote wedded men with here wyues · as holy writ telleþ ;
*Bonum est ut unusquisque uxorem suam habeat,
propter fornicacionem.*

Bastards are commonly false, liars, ungracious, and wasters.

That opere-gates been gete · for gadelynges aren holde,
And fals folke and foundlynges · faitours and lyers,
Vngraciouse to gete good · opere good loue of puple,
A-waytyng and wastyng · al þat thei cacche mowe ;
A-3ens dowel thei don vuele · and þe deuel seruen, 301
And after here deþ-daye · dwellen shulle in helle,
Bote God gyue [hem] grace · her goyng to amende.

Thus, Do-well is, to do lawfully ;
Do-bet, to love all men ; Do-best, to help all.

And þus ys dowel, my frend · to do as lawe techeth,
To louye and to lowe þe · and no lyf to greue. 305
Ac to louye and to lene · leyf me, þat is dobet ;
Ac to 3eue and to 3eme · boþe 3onge and olde,

286. *That*] For SG. *and*] & a G.

287. *art*] ert PEG.

288. *Awreke*] Wrek S. *holde hit*] hit holde MF.

291. *3e*] And *3e* I. *beþ* IMESG] be F ; ben P. *war*] i-war M. *worcheþ*] and worcheþ I.

292. *er*] ere 3ow I.

293. *borde*] bourde IMF.

294. *loue in*] in loue of I.

295. *sholde*] ne schoolde F.

297. *gates*] gate M. *for*] G om. *aren holde*] ben yholde E.

299. *good* (2)] gete I ; M om.

puple] þe peple MFS.

300. *A-waytyng*—*wastyng*] A-wayten and wasten IG. *cacche*] gete F.

301. *thei*] G om.

303. [*hem* IMF]G] hym S ; PE om. *her*] here · such F. *to*] here to I.

304. *do* IMFSEG] *miswritten* day P. *as*] as þe F.

305. *lowe*] loue I (*wrongly*).

306. *Ac*] S om. *lene*] loue or lone I. *leyf*] lef M ; leef SG ; leue IE ; leuee F.

307. *Ac*] And S. *to* (2)] S om. *olde*] holde P.

Helen and helpen · is dobest of all.

308

For þe more a man may do · by so þat he do hit,

The more is he worth and worthi · of wyse and goode

ypreised."

310

† The more a
man can do, the
more worthy he
is, if he do it.

Hic explicit passus primus de dowel.

308. *Helen*] To helen hem F. *do-*
best] best E.

309. *For*] Fore P. *by*] M *om.*

310. *is he*] he is IE; ys G.
worth—worthi] worthy and worth I;

wroþ & worþ (*sic*) S. *goode*] of god I.

COLOPHON. IM *omit.* *Hic*] FSE

om. G *has*—Explicit Passus Primus
de visione Willelmi de dowel.

PASSUS XII. (DO-WEL II.)

*Incipit passus secundus [de dowel].***A 122 B 143**Then had Wit a
wife named
Study,who sternly said
to him,
"Thou art wise
to teach fools!Cast not pearls
before swine
(Mat. vii. 6).I speak of those
that prefer
riches to wisdom.

THenne hadde wit a wif · was hote dame studie,
That ful lene lokede · and lif-holy semede ;
Hue was wonderliche wroth · þat wit so me tauhte.

Al starynge dame studie · sterneliche seide, 4
"Wel art þow wys," quap hue to Wit · "suche wis-
dome [to] shewe

To eny fol other flaterere · oþer to frentik puple ;"
And seide, "*nolite mittere*, 3e men · margerie-perles
A-monge hogges þat hauen · hawes at wille ; 8
Thei don bote dreuele þeron · draf were hem leuere
þan al þe precieuse perreye · þat eny prince weldep.

Ich segge hit by suche," quap studie · "þat shewen by
here werkus,

[þei] loueþ lond and lordshup · and lykyng of body
more 12

OBS. *The readings marked K are from MS. Digby 171.*

TITLE. Incipit passus secundus PE ;
Incipit secundus F ; M *adds*—de do-
wel ; S *adds*—de eodem ; I *has*—
Passus primus de visione Dowel, &c.

1. *hote*] i-hote M. *was hote*] men
callid here F.

3. *Hue*] Sche IM ; Heo FK.
wonderliche] wonder M. *so me*] me
so I.

4. *starynge* IES] staryng MF ; star-
yenge P. *sterneliche* IESM] sturne-
liche PF. *seide*] sche seide M.

5. *to Wit*] SF *om.* *wisdome*] wis-

domes KFS. [to IMFSEGG] P *om.*

6. *other*] or to I.

7. *mittere*] mittere in viam I. 3e
men] 3emmen & E (*wrongly*).

8. *hogges*] swyn M. *hawes*] hawen
S. *at*] at heore M. *at wille*] I-
nowe F.

9. *dreuele* I] dreuel K ; dreuelen
E ; dryuele F ; drauele M ; dreuely
S ; dreuelyn P.

11. *hit*] M *om.* *studie*] witte I
(*wrongly*). *werkus*] werk I.

12. [þei M] That PEIFSK ; cf. B-
text. *loueþ*] louen but M. *body*
more] heore bodi M.

Than holynesse oper hendenesse · oper al pat seintes **B 144**
techeþ.

Wisdom and Wit now · is nat worth a carse
Bote hit be carded with couetyse · as clopers kembern
wolle. **15**

A 123

Wisdom is worth
nothing now-a-
days, unless it is
carded with
Covetousness,
like wool.

He pat can contreeue and caste · to deceyue þe puple,
And lette with a loueday · treuthe, and by-gyle hym,
That can coueite and caste thus · aren cleped in-to
counsail.

Qui sapiunt nugas & crimina lege uocantur,
Qui recte sapiunt · lex iubet ire foras. **20**

He is reuerenced and robed · pat can robbe þe people † False lawyers
þorw fallas and false questes · and þorw fykel speche. are most
Iob þe gentil and wys · in hus gestes wytnesseþ revered.
What shal worthe of suche · whenne þei lyf leten; **24**

Ducunt in bonis dies suos, & in fine descendant † Job xxi. 13.
ad infernum.

The sauter seith þe same · of alle suche ryche;

Ibunt in progenies patrum suorum, & usque in † Ps. xlviii. 20
eternum non uidebunt lumen: (Vulg.).

Et alibi: Ecce ipsi peccatores, & cet. **Ps. lxxii. 12**
(Vulg.).

‘Lo!’ holy lettrure seith · ‘whiche lordes been these
shrewes! **26**

Tho pat [god] most good gyueþ · most greue ryght and
treuthe:’

14. *carse*] *crasse* M; *kerse* F.

15. *kembern*] M *om.* *wolle*] here
wolle I.

16. *Ho*] He M. *pat*] so S. *and*
a F. *puple*] rightful I. S *omits* from
to deceyue to thus in l. 18.

17. *hym*] IK *om.* F *has*—& lette
trewþe with louedaies · & begile þe
leel trewe.

18. *coueite* MEKG] *coueyty* P;
not in IS; F *has* *coniecte*, which, how-
ever, lacks support. *and*] an P.
aren] ben EMS. *cleped*] i-called M;
called F.

20. *recte sapiunt*] *sapiunt recte* S.

22. *fallas*] *fallasse* M; *fallace* F.

questes] *enquestes* M. *fykel*] false S
(wrongly).

23. *and wys*] I *om.* *hus*] a M.
gestes] *geste* EMSK; *geest* F.

24. *whenne*] *wenne* P. *lyf*] þe
lijf M. *fine*] puncto S. *descendant*]
descendent F. *ad*] in EMF. *in-*
fernum] *inferna* S.

25. *progenies* EIF] *progenie* PM
SK. *uidebunt*] *uidebit* M.

26. *holy*—*seith*] *saip* holy letterure
I. *whiche*] *wiche* P; *swiche* M.
these MSFK] *thees* P; *þise* I; *þis* E.

27. [*god* IMFSKG] PE *om.* *gyueþ*]
zifþ I; *doþ* M. *most greue*] *greueth*
most I.

Ps. x. 4 (Vulg.).

*Que perfecisti, destruxerunt ; [iustus autem quid
fecit ?]*

Ribalds are helped
before the poor.

And harlotes for [hure] harlotrie · aren holpen er nedý
poure ; 28

And þat is no ryght ne reson · for rapen men sholde
Help hem þat hath nouht · þan þo þat han no neede.

Teachers of holy
things are now
little loved.

Ac he þat haþ holy writ · aye in hus mouthe, 31
And can telle of treuthe · and of þe twelue apostels,

B 145

Oþer of þe passion of crist · oþer of purgatorie peynes,
Lytel is he a-lowed þerefore · among lordes [at] festes.

A 124

Now-a-days,
men make a
mock of the
Trinity.

Nowe is þe manere atte mete · when mynstralles ben
style, 35

The lewede a-þens þe lered · þe holy lore to dispute,
And tellen of þe trinite · how two slowe þe þridde,
And brynge forth ballede resones · and taken bernarde
to wisse,

And putteþ forþ presompcions · to preouen þe sothe.

B 146

Thus they talk
at the dais, and
are full;
but the needy
man is driven
from their gate.

Thus thei dreuelen atte deyes · þe deyte to knowe, 40
And gnawen god with gorge · when here guttes fullen.

Ac þe carful mai crie · and quaken atte þate,
Boþe a-fyngred and a-furst · and for defaute spille,

Ys non so hende to haue hym yn · bote hote hym go
þer god is ! 44

Thenne semeþ hit to my syght · to suche as so biddeþ,
God is nat in þat hom · ne hus help neither !

† God is not in
such houses.

[*iustus—fecit* S] *iustus*, &c. M;
iustus autem, &c. F; *iustitiam* P
(*wrongly*); I om.

28. *And*] I om. [*hure* S] here
IKG; heore M; her F; PE om.
aren] K om. *er*] or FSE. *nedý*
IMFSEK] nudy P.

30. *hem*] him IMFSEK. *þo*] hem
S; him M.

31. *aye*] as it were F.

33. *peynes*] þe peynes I.

34. *alowed*] loued K; loued or leet
I. *þerefore*] herfore I. [*at* IMFG]
ate S; of PE; K om.

35. *atte* E] ate F; at þe IM; at
SK; atte þe P.

37. *two*] tweyne M.

38. *ballede resones*] a balled resoun
K. and] IK om. *witnesse*] witt-
nesse P.

40. *atte*] at þe MF; as þe (*wrongly*)
I; at S. *deyes*] dee M. *deyte*] diete
F; dette (!) IS.

41. *when*] while þei M; whan þei
F. *here guttes*] þe wombe F.

43. *a-fyngred*] so PFK; a-fyngryd
S; a-fyngered E; of-hongret M; an-
hungred I. *a-furst*] so PSK; a-first
F; aþurste E; a-pruste I; a-prest M.

44. *yn*] I om. *hote*] bidde M.
hote hym] S om.

45. *to* (2)] bi M. *as*] þat IS.

Lytel loueþ he þat lorde · that lente hym [al] þat blisse,
That so partep with þe poure · a parcel, whenne hym
nedep. 48

Ne were mercy in mene men · more þan in ryght ryche, Were not the poor
Meny time mendynans · myghte gon a-fyngred ; kinder than the
And so seith þe sauter · ich sauh hit in *memento*, rich, many would
want a meal.

Ecce audiuius eam (.i. caritatem) in effrata ; Ps. cxxxi. 6
inuenimus eam in campis silue. (Vulg.).

Clerkus and knyghtes · carpen of god ofte, 52
And haueþ hym muche in hure mouthe · ac mene men
in herte. **A 125**

Freres and faitours · han founde vp suche questiones
To plesse with proute men · sitthe þe pestilences, Clerks have
Christ in the
mouth, but poor
men in the heart.

[And preching at seint poules · in pure enuye of
clerkes,]

That folk is nouht ferm in þe feith · ne free of here
goodes, 57

Ne sory for here synnes ; · so is pruyde en-hansed **B 147**

In religion and al þe reame · among ryche and poure, Pride has so in-
creased that
prayers have no
power.

date. || That preyeres han no power · these pestilences to lette.

For god is def now a dayes · and deyneþ nouht ous to † God is deaf
now-a-days.
huyre, 61

And good men for oure gultes · he al to-grynt to deþe ;

47. [al IMFSEKG] P om.

48. *whenne* wenne P. *hym* hem
I. *nedep* IMFSE] *nudeþ* P; *neodeþ*
K.

49. *ryght*] M om.

50. *time*] tymes I. *mendynans*
mendynantz I; *mendynauntus* F;
mendenauntus S. *a-fyngred*] of-
hongred M; anhungred I; see l. 43.

51. *sauh*] seyh I; sai MS; saw F.
i. caritatem] FS om.

52. *god ofte*] good hostes I (wrongly).

53. *hym*] IK om. *ac*] and M.
men in] in here I.

54. *vp*] F om. *questiones*] de-
maundus F.

55. *proute*] prut E; proude MISK;
þe prowde F. *þe*] þis I; MFS om.

pestilences] pestelences P; pestilence
time M; cf. l. 60.

56. *From* I; also in KGS; inserted
in F after l. 57; PEM omit. And
preching] So þei preche F. in FSG]
miswritten and IK.

57. *nouht*] S om. *ferm*] in-ferme
(!) E. *þe*] K om.

58. *for*] of SK. *pruyde*] pryuyde
P; but see l. 64. *is pruyde*] pride
is I.

59. *and*] in M. *al*] in al IK.

60. *these*] thees P; M om. *pesti-
lences*] pestelences P. *lette*] bete K.

61. *nouht*] SK om. *huyre*] hure
IKE; here MF.

62. *gultes*] gilt F. *he*] M om. *deþe*
IMFSEK] dyþe P.

And þut þese wrecches of þys worlde · is non y-war by
oper,

Ne for drede of eny dep · with-draweþ hem fro pruyde,
Men lack charity. Ne parteþ with þe poure · as pure charyte wolde, 65
Bote in gayenesse and in glotenye · for-glotten here
goodes,

And brekeþ nat here bred to þe poure · as þe book
hoteþ ;

Isaiah lviii. 7.

[*Frange esurienti panem tuum ; et egenos vagos-
que induc in domum tuam.*]

The more a man
has, the less he
gives.

Ac þe more he hath, and wyneþ · þe world at hus
wylle, 68

And lordeþ in leedes · the lasse good he deleþ.

Tobie tauhte nat so · takeþ hede, 3e ryche,

How he tolde in a tyme · and tauhte hus sone dele :

Tobit iv. 9.

[*Si tibi sit copia, abundanter tribue : si autem
exiguum, illud impertiri libenter stude.*]

And þis is no more to mene · bote ‘ho so muche good
weldeþ, 72

Be large þer-of while hit last · to leedes þat been needy.

Yf þow haue lytel, leue sone · loke by þy lyue

Get þe loue þer-with · þauh þou fare þe werse.’ 75

† But now, none
follow Tobit’s
counsel.

Ac lust no lord ne lewed man · of suche lore nou to hure,

Bote lythen how þey myghte lerne · lest good to spene.

And so lyuen lordes now · and leten hit a dowel ;

63. þese MFK] þees P ; þis ISE.
y-war IK] i-war M ; awar F ; war ES ;
miswritten whar P ; cf. B-text.

64. hem] him I.

66. in (2)] IMFSK om. for-glotten FS ; for-glwtē E.

67. nat here] no F. hoteþ] telleþ E. [*Frange—tuam*] from E ; not in P. *et—tuam*] IMSKG om. in—tuam] F om.

68. hath—wyneþ] wyneþ and haþ·I. and] or S.

69. lordeþ] lord is M.

71. dele] to dele S. stude] S om.

72. þis] MFSK om. no—mene] to

mene no more IFSK. bote—so] who I.

73. last MFSK] laste P ; lasteþ I. leedes] hem E ; men K.

74. leue] apparently miswritten loue P.

75. þe] M om. þer-with] þer-wip here M. fare—werse] þe werse fare IMFSK.

76. ne] now ne I. lewed] lettred I ; leered FK. man] men I. nou] I om. to] M om. hure] huyre S ; here IMF.

77. lythen] leten M. lest good] best here goode E. spene] spende M.

78. so lyuen] þat loueþ loueþ (sic) I.

For is no wit worth now · bote hit of wynnyng soune,
[And capped wiþ clergie · to conspire wronge.] 80

For-thi," quap hue to wit, "be war · holy writ to shewe
Amonges hem þat hauen · hawes atte wille,
The whiche is a lykyng and a lust · and loue of þe
worlde."

† Wherefore
beware of shewing
holy things to
swine."

And whanne wit was y-war · what studie menede, 84 (A 126)

Ich myghte gete no greyn · of wittes grete wittes,
Bote al lauhwyng he loutede · and loked vp-on studie,
Semyng þat ich sholde · by-sechen hure of grace.

B 150
Wit, hearing
Study so talk,
signed to me to
beseech her.

When ich was war of hus wille · to þat womman ich
loutede, 88 **A 127**

And seide, "mercy, ma dame · þoure man shal ich
worthe

I bowed to
Study, and asked
her to teach me
about Do-well.

As longe as ich lyue · bothe late and rathe,
And for to worche þoure wil · the while my lyf dureþ,
With þat þe kenne me kyndeliche · to knowe what is
dowel." 92

"For thi meeknesse," quap hue · "and for thi mylde
speche,

She said she
would recom-
mend me to
Clergy (Learn-
ing),

Ich shal þe kenne to clergie · my cosyn, þat knoweth

79. *is*] nys M. *wit*] wynnyng M
(*wrongly*). *bote*] but if I. *soune*] come I; conne K.

80. *In I only*.

81. *For-thi*] For-why EM; þerefore I. *quap*—*wit*] witte, quop sche I.

82. *hawes*] hawen S. *atte*] at heore MF; at EK.

82, 83. *Here I has*—

To foles and flaterers · þat frentike
aren of witte,

Andsaide, *nolite mittere* · margery-
perles,

þey done but dreuely þer-on ·
draffe were here leuere,

Among hegges (*sic*) þat han ·
hawes at wille,

þan alle þe precious perrye · in
paradise groweth.

*These lines are repeated from ll. 6—
10 above, lines 8 and 9 being trans-*

posed.

83. *whiche*] wiche P. *and a*] in M; and SFK. *lust* MFSK] loust P.

84. *And*] An P. *whanne*] wanne P; whan þat M. *was*] is E. *y-war* IK] i-war M; a-war F; war ES; whar P; cf. l. 63.

85. *wittes* (2)] connyng E.

86. *lauhwyng*] laweyng I; lauh-
yng M; lawhyng F; lauyng S;
lawyng E. *loutede*] lotede PE; *but*
see l. 88.

88. *When*] And whan IS. *hus*] hire IF. *þat womman*] his wif S. *ich loutede*] gan I lowten I; gan y knele S.

90. *S omits*.

91. *And*] FS *om. the*] SMF *om. dureþ*] duyrep P; endureth F.

93. *for*] M *om*.

94. *þe kenne*] kenne þe IEK.

Alle kyne konnynges · and comsynges of dowel,
Of dobet and dobest · for doctor he is yknowe, 96
And of scripture þe skylful · and seryuaynes were
trewe.

whose wife was
Scripture
(Writing).

For hue is sybbe to þe seuen ars · and also my soster,
And cleregies wedded wif · as wys as hym-selue
Of lore and of letterure · of lawe and of rescn. 100
So with þat þat cleregie can · and counsail of scripture
Thow shalt conne and knowe · kyndeliche dowel."
Thenne was ich al so fayn · as foul of fair morwenynge,
Gladder þan gleo-man · þat gold hap to gyfte, 104
And asked of hure þe heye way · wher þat cleregie
dwelte—

B 151

"And tel me som tokne," quap ich · "for tyme is þat
ich wende."

"The way
thither is through
Suffer-weal-and-
woe,

"Aske þe heye wey," quap hue · "hennes to suffre-
Bothe-wele-and-moche-wo · yf þow wolt lerne. 108
And ryd forth by richesse · and rest nouht þer-ynne;
Yf þow coueite to be riche · to cleregie comst þow
neuere.

passing by Riches
and the Deadly
Sins,

Bothe wommen and wyn · wratthe, yre, and slewthe,
Yf þow [hem] vse oþer haunte · haue god my treuthe!
To clergie shult þow neuere come · ne knowe what ys
dowel. 113

A 128

Coming to Clergy,

Ac yf þou happe," quap hue · "þat þow hitte on clergie,
And hast vnderstondyng · what he wolde mene,

95. *comsynges*] comsyng M.
96. *and*] and of MEFS; of I.
97. *of*] ouer IK. *skylful*] scilfulest
M; skylful P. *trewe*] trywe P.
98. *þe*] al þe S; M *om*.
99. *cleregies*] clergies F.
101. *þat þat*] þat þe F; þat IK.
102. *kyndeliche*] kendeliche P.
103. *al so*] as IK. *morwenynge*] *morwe* I; *morwen* K; *morewe* S.
104. *gleo-man*] a gleman MS; þe
gleman F.
105. *of*] at EFSK. *dwelte*] dwelleþ
M; duelled I.

107. *quap hue*] I *om*.
108. *moche*] michel M; muchel F;
I *om*. *yf*] ȝif þat MF. *wolt*] wol I;
wil F.
109. *And*] Ac M. *and*] ac FSK;
but M; I *om*.
110. *S omits*. *Yf*] For if IK. *coueite*
MFEK] coueitest I; coueity P.
111. *Bothe*] But I; *With E. wom-*
men] *miswritten* wommon P.
112. M *omits*. [hem FS] hit
PEIKG. *oþer*] or elles F.
113. *shult þow*] schal y K.
114. *hitte*] hutte M.

- Sey to hym *py-self* · ouer-see my bokes, 116 tell him it was I
 And seye ich grette wel hus wif · ich wrot hure a byble,
 And sette hure to sapience · and to þe sauter glosed. who taught his
 Logyk ich lerede hure · and al þe lawe after, wife the Psalter
 Alle þe musons in musyk · ich made hure to knowe. and Wisdom,
 Plato þe poete · ich putte hym ferst to booke, 121 I taught Plato
 Aristotle and opere · to arguen ich tauhte. and Aristotle.
 Grammere for gurlles · ich gart furst wryte,
 And bet hem with a baleyse · bote yf þei wolde lerne.
 Of alle kyne craftes · ich contreeuede here tooles, 125
 Of carpentrie, of kerueres · and contreeuede þe compas, **B 152**
 And cast out by squire · boþe lyne and leuell. I also taught
 Thus þorw my lore beþ men ylered · þauh ich loke men the use of
 dymme. level and line.
 Ac theologie haþ teened me · ten score tymes, 129 But Theology has
 The more ich muse þer-on · the mystiloker hit semep, vexed me often;
 And þe deppere ich deuyne · the derker me þynkep hit. musing on it only
 Hit is no science sothliche · bote a sothfast by-leyue; makes it mistier.
 Ac for hit lereþ men to louye · ich by-leyue þer-on þe
 bettere. 133 Yet, for the love
 that is in it,
 [† I believe in it.]
 For loue is a lykyng thyng · and loth for to greue; **A 129**
 Lerne for to louye · yf þe lyke dowel, Love truly, if
 For of dobet and of dobest · here doctor is dere loue.” Do-well pleases
 you.”
 Tho wente ich my way · with-oute more lettyng, 137 **A 130 B 154**
 And to clergie ich kam · as clerkes me seide, So I went on till I
 met Clergy.

116. *to*] I *om.* *py-self*] *pi-self*
 þanne F. *ouer*] ouer P. *my*] manye
 IK.

117. *grette*] grete FSK. *ich*] for i I.

118. *þe*] E *om.* *glosed*] glosede P;
 y-glosed IM.

119. *lerede*] lernede MI.

120. *Alle*] And alle I. *to*] for to I.

123. *wryte*] to write MFS.

126. *of kerueres*] & keruerus S;
 and of coruyng M. *and*] i M.

127. *out*] mette I. *by*] by þe F.

128. *ylered*] i-learned MF. *beþ*—
ylered] men lerede K. *dymme*]
 holewe M.

129. *teened*] i-tened M.

130. *The*] For þe F. *muse*] musede
 M. *mystiloker*] maisterliker M;
 mystlokur F.

131. *þe*] K *om.* *ich*] in M. *derker*]
 deerker P. *þynkep hit*] it þenketh F.

132. *science*] conscience E. *soth-*
fast] stedefast M. *by-leyue*] by-lyue
 P; but see next line.

133. *lereþ*] lerede I; lerneþ M.
men] me M. *by-leyue*] leue M;
 leue F.

135. *þe*] þow M. *dowel*] to dowel
 PE; but IMFSK omit to; cf. l. 142.

136. *of* (2)] IFMK *om.*

137. *wente*] wende E.

And ich grette hym goodliche · and greipliche hym told,
How þat wit and hus wif · wissed me to hym, 140
To [kenne] and to knowe · kyndeliche dowel.

† Clergy told me
to keep the ten
commandments,

“By cryst,” quap clergie · “yf þow coueyte dowel,
Kep þe ten commaundemens · and kep þe fro synne;
And by-leyf leelly · how godes sone a-lyghte 144

† and to believe in
Christ's Incar-
nation.

On þe mayde marie · for mankynnes sake,
And by-cam man of þat mayde · with-oute mannes
kynde.

And al þat holy church · here-of can þe lere,
By-leyf lelly þere-on · and look þow do þer-after. 148

B 155

Austin wrote
books about the
Christian faith.

Her-of austin þe olde · made bokes and bokes;
Ho was hus autor · and him of god tauhte?
Patriarkes and prophetes · aposteles and angeles
And þe holy trinite · to austyn appeirede, 152
And he ous seide as he seiþ · and so ich by-leyue,

† He tells us that
he beheld the
Trinity.

That he seiþ þe syre and þe sone · and seynte spirit to-
gederes,

And alle þre bote on God · and her-of made he bokes,
3e, busiliche bokes; · ho [beþ] hus wytnesses? 156

John xiv. 9, 10.

*Ego in patre & pater in me [est;] et qui me
vidit, patrem meum uidit qui in celis est.*

139. And] I om. ich] M om.
greipliche] greiliche P.

140. wissed] had wissed F. to
hym] him tille M.

141. [kenne IMFS] kowe (sic) P;
kow KE; cf. l. 102.

142. E omits. cryst] crist þo FSK.
clergie] clergize þo M.

143. fro] out of M. kep—synne]
care no forþere I.

145. mankynnes] mankynde I.

146. man] S om. mannes kynde]
mankynde IK; makynde (sic) S.

147. lere] lerne MF.

148. By-leyf—þere-on] Leeue it
leely I. lelly—on] þer-on lelly K.

149. Austyn þe olde · here-of made
bokes I.

150. Ho] But ho F; Sche M
(wrongly). and] þat FS.

152. holy] trewe IFSK; truwe M.
appeirede] y-perede S; þat apperede
F

153. he] y S. seiþ] say I; si M;
sy F; sey3 S; sei3e E (and in l. 154).

154. That] M om. þe] F om.
(twice). syre] fader I. spirit]
espirit IKS.

155. made he] he made I. bokes]
þe bokes E.

156. 3e] Ac 3e F. 3e—bokes] I om.
ho] 3e M. [beþ IFKG] ben M; buþ S;
miswritten but (for buth) P; bot E;
cf. l. 150. [est IM] PEFSK om. me
uidit] uidit me M; videt me FS.
patrem—uidit] uidet & patrem meum
S; videt & patrem F; uidit & patrem
M. qui in—est] qui, &c. E; FS
om.

Alle þe clerkes vnder crist · ne couthe this asoile ;
 Bote thus by-longeþ to by-leyue · alle þat lykeþ dowel.
 For hadde neuere frek fyn wit · þe faith to dispute,
 Ne man myghte haue no merit þer-of · myghte hit be
 preoued ;

The merit of
 Faith is in want
 of proof.

160

*Fides non habet meritum ubi humana ratio [pre-
 bet experimentum.]*

S. Gregorii xl
 Homil. in Evang.
 lib. ii. hom. 26.

Thus by-leyue and leaute · and loue is þe þridde,
 That makeþ men to dowel · dobet, and dobest.”

† Belief, Loyalty,
 and Love, are
 Dowel, Dobet,
 and Dobest.

[þanne] scripture scorned me · and many skyles
 shewede,

B 168

[Compare this
 with the con-
 clusion of the
 A-text; page
 137* of vol. 1.]

And contynauce made to clergie · to congie me, hit
 semede,

164

And lakkede me in latyn · and lyght by me sette,

And seide, “*multi multa sapiunt, & seipsos
 nesciunt.*”

S. Bernardi
 Cogitationes de
 cognitione hu-
 manæ conditionis.
 cap. i.

Tho wepte ich for wo · and wrapede of [here] wordes,
 And in a wynkyng ich worth · and wonderliche ich
 mette.

Again I slept, and
 had a marvellous
 dream.

For ich was raueshed ryght þer ; · fortune me fette, 168

In-to þe londe of longynge · and loue hue me brouhte,

And in a myrour, hihte myddelerd · hue made me to
 loke,

Fortune bade me
 gaze in the mirror
 called the World.

157. *couthe*] coude M; cowde F.

158. *thus*] þis MF; þus it I. *lykeþ*
 liken to M; loueþ S.

159. *hadde*] ne hadde M.

160. *myghte* (1)] mouȝthe I. *no*
 IF *om.* *haue*—þer-of] meryt haue
 þerof F. *myghte* (2)] mouȝt FK.
preoued] preouede P; preued FK;
 y-preuyd S; i-preued M. *humana*
ratio] humanum M. [*prebet*, &c.
 EMFS] possidet dñum P; K *om.*

161. *by-leyue*—*leaute*] in bileue
 lele (*sic*) I.

162. *That*] þei F. *men*] EF *om.*
to] S *om.* *dobet*] and dobett I; do-
 bet boþe F.

163. [*þanne* MF] þenne ISKG;
 The PE; cf. B. xi. 1.

164. *to* (1)] on I. *congie*] conge MS;

congeie IK; cunge F. *hit*] as it F.

165. *me*] I *om.* *in*] a IF. *lyght*
 lite E.

166. *wrapede*] wrappe ISK. [*here*
 I] hus P; his MKS; þis E; pese F;
 cf. B. xi. 3.

167. *north* MS] wurthe F; wrathe
 K; warth PI. *and*] an P. *ich* (2)] me
 I; ESK *om.* *mette* EMIFSK] mete P.

168. *raueshed*] raueshede P; raue-
 schyd S; rauyssched IK; i-raueisshed
 M. *fortune*] for fortune I; as for-
 tune F.

169. *In-to*] And in-to I. *þe*] a M;
 S *om.* *and loue*] a-lone IM. *hue*
 heo FK; sche I; he MS.

170. *hihte*] þat highte I; hatte S.
myddelerd] myddulerþe SF. *hue*
 heo F; sche IM; schco K; he S.

And sutthe seide to me · “her myghte þou see wondres,
And knowe þat þow coueitest · and come þer-to, par-
aunter.” 172

B 169

Fortune had two
damsels, named
Lust-of-the-Flesh
and Lust-of-the-
Eyes.

Thenne hadde fortune folwyng hure · two faire
maidenes,

Concupiscentia-carnis · me calde þe eldere mayde,
And couetyse-of-eyen · ycald was þat opere.
And pruyde-of-parfit-lyuyng · pursewede [me] faste, 176
And bad me for my contynence · counte clergies lore
lyght.

Lust-of-the-Flesh
comforted me, and
bade me rejoice in
my youth.

Concupiscentia-carnis · comfertyde me in þys wyse,
And seide, “þow art 3ong and 3ep · and hast 3eris
ynowe

For to lyue longe · and ladyes to louye. 180

And in þis mirour þow myzt see · murthes ful menyne,
That lede þe wol to lykyng · al þy lyf-tyme.”

The second
maiden said she
would do all I
wished.

The secounde mayde seide · “ich shal sewe þi wil ;
Til þow be a lord of londe · leten þe ich nelle, 184
That ich ne shal folwie þy felaushupe · yf fortune lyke.”
“He shal fynde me hus frende” · quap fortune her-
after ;

“That man þat me lykep helpe · myghte nat mys-
happe.” 187

But a man named Thenne was þer on hiht elde · þat heuy was of chere ;

171. *sutthe*] *sennes* he I; *syþpe* he
S. *seide*] *seide* þus F. *myghte* þou]
þou myzt FS.

172. *knewe*] *i-knowe* M.

173. *hure*] *M om.*

174. *Concupiscentia-carnis* IMFS
KG] *Carnis concupiscentia* PE; *but*
see l. 178. *me*] *so also* E; *men*
IMFSK. *calde*] *so also* EI; *called*
FSK; *calleden* M. *mayde*] *F om.*

175. *ycald*] *y-called* IMF; *S om.*

176. [*me* IMFSK] in PE.

177. *lyght*] at l₃te MF; *litel* K.
counte—lyght] *coueyte clerkes tech-*
ing I.

178. *in—myse*] of þis manere I.

179. *art*] *ert* PEK.

181. *myzt* MESIK] *may* F; *myst*
P.

182. *þe*] *S om.* *wol*] *wolde* I.

183. *mayde seide*] *saide* þe same
ISK; *maide seide* þe same F. *sewe*
MF] *sew* S; *suwe* K; *schewe* I;
suwe E; *sywe* P.

184. *a*] *E om.* *of*] and haue
I.

185. *þy*] *I om.* *lyke*] *it like* F.

186. *He* IMFSEK] *Hue* (*by mis-*
take) P. *her*] *þer* I.

187. *That*] *þe* M. *helpe*] *to helpe*
MS. *myghte*] *mai* M.

188. *hiht*] *þat hyzte* SK. *heuy*] *mis-*
written euy P.

"Man," quap elde, "mete ich with þe · by marie of
heuene!

Elde (Old Age)
threatened me,
and bade me be-
ware.

Thou shalt fynde fortune · faile at þy moste neede,

And *concupiscentia-carnis* · clene the for-sake!

Byterliche shalt þow banne þenne · boþe [dayes] and
nyghtes

192

Couetyse-of-eyen · that euere þow hure knewe,

And pruyde-of-parfit-lyuyng · to muche peril þe
brynge."

"3e, recche the neuere," quap rechelesness · stod forth
in raggede cloþes,

"Never mind
him," quot.
Recklessness.

"Folwe forþ þat fortune wol · thou hast ful fer to elde ;

A man may stoupe tyme ynowe · when he shal tyne þe
corone !"

197

Syre wanhope was sibbe to hym · as som men me tolde,

For rechelesnesse in hus rybaudrie · ryht þus he seide,

"Go ich to helle, go ich to heuene · ich shal nouht
[go] myn one !"

200

† "Whether I go
to hell or heaven,"
said Recklessness,
"I shall not go
alone."

Were hit al soþ þat 3e seyen · thou scripture and clergie,

Ich leyue neuere þat lorde ne ladie · þat lyueþ her on
erthe

Sholde sitte in godes sete · ne see god in hus blysse ;

† The rich cannot
enter heaven.

189. *mete* IMFSEK] mette P. *mete*
ich] if I mete I. *of heuene*] modur
mylde F.

190. *faile*] þe faile I.

192. *Byterliche*] Withterli M.
banne] curse K. [*dayes* IM] a daye
PK ; day E ; by day SF. *nyghtes*]
nyzte F ; be nyztus S.

193. *Couetyse*] For coueytise S.
knawe] eye F.

195. *recche* IK] reche S ; rechche
F ; rech M ; rechep PE (*wrongly*).

196. *fer* IMFK] feer P ; ferre E.
ful fer] fele zere S.

197. *tyme*] tymes I. *when*] wen
P. *þe*] his MF. *corone*] croune MI
SF ; croon E ; crone K.

199. *rybaudrie*] rybaudrye S ; *mis-*
written rybaudrie P ; ribaudie IFK ;
rebaudie E. *þus*] þus sum tyme F.

200. *Go—heuene*] Go y to heuene
go y to helle SF. *go ich*] or I. [*go*
IMFSKG] PE om. *myn one*] allone
E ; me-selue M.

201. *hit*] M om. *thou*] S om. *and*]
and þou I.

202. *neuere þat*] þat no M ; þat K.
ladie] ladies E. *on*] in I. *erthe*]
eerthe P.

203. *sitte*] sette S. *in*] on MFSK.
godes] good M. *sete*] sight I. *blysse*]
face S. *impossible*] so also F ;
possible MISK. *regnum*] regno I.
foramen acus] IMFK om. S *has*—Ita
possibile est camelum transire per
foramen acus siue diuitem in regnum
celorum ; E *has*—Facilius est came-
lum per foramen acus intrare quam
diuitem ad regnum celorum.

† (Mat. xix. 24.)

*Ita impossibile est diuiti intrare in regnum
celorum, sicut camelus foramen acus.*

For clergie seith þat he seih · in þe seynt euangelie,

A 134 B162

I am saved, if
saved, by pre-
destination.

þat ich man maked was · and my name y-entred 205

In þe legende of lif · longe er ich were.

Predestinat thei prechen · prechours þat þis shewen,

Or prechen inparfit · ypult out of grace, 208

Vnwryten for som wikkednesse · as holy writ sheweth,

John iii. 13.

Nemo ascendit in celum nisi qui de celo descendit.

Ich leyue hit wel, by oure lorde · and no lettrure
bettere.

Solomon, who
wrote Wisdom,
was the wisest of
men.

For salomon þe sage · þat sapience made,

God gaf hym grace of wit · and of good after, 212

Neuere to man so muche · that man can of telle,

To rewele alle reames · and ryche to make,

And deme wel and wislyche · wommen bereþ witnesse ;

† 1 Kings iii. 26.

Non michi nec tibi, sed diuidatur.

Aristotle and he
were teachers of
men.

Aristotle and he · hij tauhten men boþe ; 216

Maisters þat techen men · of godes muchel mercy

Witnessen þat here wordes · and here werkes boþe

Weren wonder goode · and wise in here tyme,

A 135 B163

Yet are they both
in hell !

And holychurche, as ich huyre · haldeþ boþe in helle !

Were we to do as
they taught, and

Yf we sholden worchen after here workes · to wynnen

ous heuene, 221

impossibile] turn back to p. 207.

204. *seih*] sey F; sey₃ S; sey₃ K;

si M; saith (*sic*) I. *seynt*] M om.

205. *maked*] made IK; I-maked
F. *y-entred* EI] yentrede P; entred
MFSK.

206. *ich*] he M.

207. *Predestinat*] Prodestinat P.
shewen] schewede S.

208. *ypult*] pulte I; puylt K; i-put
MFS. *out*] K om.

209. *wikkednesse*] vnkyndenesse M.
Nemo—celo] M om.; but cf. footnote
to l. 215. *de—descendit* IFS] de-
scendit de celo PEMK; but cf. B-
text.

210. *Ich leyue*] And I leue IK.

no] non M; on no IK.

211. *þe*] S om.

212. *after*] aunter aftur S.

213. *man* (1)] erthely man F.
man can] men coude M.

214. *rewele*] so PI; rewle FS; rule
EMK.

215. *deme*] demed I. *wommen*] as
women F. *Non, &c.*] Here M wrongly
inserts the rubric above (l. 209)—
Nemo, &c. *Non*] Nec E.

216. *hij*] hy ESK; þei MF; who I.

217. *techen men*] men prechen I.

218. *Witnessen*] Whitnessen P.

219. *wise*] wisest I.

220. *huyre*] hure EK; here MIF.

221. *Yf*] And if I. *to*] for to F.

That for hure werkes and witt · wonyep now in peyne, yet go to hell,
we were unwise indeed.
Then wroghte we vnwisliche · for al 3oure wyse tech-
ynge.

Ac ich countresegge þe nat, clergie · ne þy connynge,
scripture ; 224

That ho so doþ by 3oure doctrine · doþ wel, ich leyue.

Ac me were leuere, by oure lorde · a lippe of godes † Better were a
morsel of God's
grace than all the
wisdom got from
books.
grace

Than al þe kynde witt þat 3e can boþe · and connynge
of 3oure bokes.

For of fele witty, in faith · litel ferly ich haue, 228

Thauh here gost be vngraciouse · god for to plesse.

For meny men of þis molde · setten more here herte But many men
rather seek goods
than God.
In worldliche good þan in god · for-þy grace hem failleþ.

At here moste meschef · mercy were þe beste ; 232

And mercy of mercy · needes mot aryse,

As holy writ wittnesseþ · godes word in the godspelle ; † Mercy begets
mercy.

Eadem mensura qua mensi fueritis, remecietur † Mat. vii. 2.
uobis.

Ryght wel ywittede men · and wel lettred clerkes,

Selde arn þei seien · so lyue as þei lere ; 236

Witnesse on godes wordes · þat was neuere vntrewe :

Super cathedram moysi [sederunt,] &c.

[Ac] ich wene hit worth of menye · as was in Noes
tyme,

Mat. xxiii. 2.
[Cf. A 132]

222. *werkes*] work S. *witt*] heore
wit M.

223. *we*] i I ; y K. *3oure*] oure M.

224. *countresegge*] contresyngge E.
nat] þat (!) E. *þy*] þe M.

225. *doþ* (2)] he doþ MF.

226. *lippe*] lappe M.

227. *can*] cunne M.

230. *of*] in I ; on F. *setten more*]
more sette I.

231. *worldliche*] I *om.* *for-þy*]
for-whi M ; & for-þi F. *grace hem*]
hem grace I.

232. *moste* EMFSK] meste P ; more
I.

233. *And*] But S. *mot*] moste M.

234. *godes word*] god M ; holi
writ F. *the*] I *om.* *Eadem, &c.*] *in-*
serted in M after l. 228. *fueritis*]
fueritis alijs S. uobis] & vobis F.

235. *Ryght*] I *om.* *lettred*] y-
lettered IK ; i-lettred MFS.

236. *Selde*] Seilde P ; Seldom I ;
see l. 301. *arn*] as M. *seien*] so PE ;
seyn IMK ; *seie* F ; *sey* S. *so*] to IF.

237. *Witnesse on*] Witnesseþ I.
wordes] word MIS. *vntrewe*] vn-
triwe P. *moysi*] S *om.* *[sederunt]*
in F only.

238. *[Ac* IMFKGS] And PE.

The flood de-
stroyed all but
Noah.

Tho þat he shop þe schip · of shides and of bordes,
Was neuere wright þat þer-on wrouhte · ne workman y-
saued, 240

May Holy
Church prove to
be Noah's ark!

Bote briddes and bestes · [and] þe blessed Noe,
And hus wif with hus sones · and hus sones wyues;
[Of] wrightes þat hit wroghten · was non ysaued.

B 164

God leyue hit fare nat so by folke · that þe faith techen
Of holychurche, þat sholde kepe · alle cristine saules;
For *archa noe*, nymeþ hede · ys no more to mene 246
Bote holychurche, herbergh · to alle þat ben blessedede.
The *culorum* of this c[l]ause · curatores ys to mene,
That ben carpenters vnder criste · holy [kirke] to make
For lewede folke, godes foules · and hus free bestes;

Ps. xxxv. 7
(Vulg.).

Homines & iumenta saluabis, domine, &c.

At domes day a dyluuye worth · of deþ and fuyr at
ones; 251

(Worcheþ, 3e wryghtes of holichurche · as holy writ
techeþ,

Lest 3e be loste as þe laborers were : þat labored vnder
Noe.

A 135

But the thief on
the cross was
saved, because he
shrove him to
Christ;

A goode fryday, ich fynde · a felon was ysaued,
That vnlawefulliche hadde gylued · al hus lyf-tyme;
And for he by-knew on þe crois · and to crist schrof
hym, 256

239. þat] I *om.* *schip* IMFSE] shup P; schup K. of (2)] ISK *om.*

240. wright] *miswritten* writ P; but see l. 243; wriht ES; writht M; wirt F; I *om.*

241. [and IMFSEK] þat PE. M *has in the margin*—Contra prelatos.

243. [Of IMFSEK] And PE. *non*] þer non M; non of hem I.

244. leyus] leue IMSEK; leene F. by] by þis I.

246. nymeþ MFSK] nemeþ P.

247. herbergh] is herborþ E. alle] E *om.* blessedede] i-blessed M.

248. clause FSK] cause PE; cf. B-text. *curatores*] written in red in MK (as a Latin word); curatours E;

curatours IS; creatours (!) F.

249. ben] E *om.* [kirke I] churche PEFSK; chirche M.

250. foules] folys I; folus S; foolus F (*wrongly*).

251. At] A SK. dyluuye] delful time M. fuyr] of fuyr PE; but IMSEK omit of.

252. as] to make as S. techeth] 3ow techeth F.

253. be loste] ben i-lost M. þe] MF *om.* labored—Noe] wiþ noe wrouten M.

254. A] On M. ysaued] ysauede P.

256. And] M *om.* schrof EMIF SK] shroue P.

He was sonnere ysaueð · þan seynt Iohan þe Baptist,
And er Adam oþer ysaie · oþer eny of þe prophetes,
That hadden leye with lueyfer · meny longe ȝeres.

A robber was y-raunsoned · raper þan þei alle; 260 and so a
With-oute penaunce oþer passion · oþer eny oþer purgatory.

peyne

He passede forth pacientliche · to perpetuel blisse.

Al-so marie Magdelene · ho myghte do worsse

As in lykyng of lecherye · no lyf denyede? 264

Who did worse
than Mary
Magdalen,

And dauid þe douhty · þat deuynede how vrye

or David, who
slew Uriah,

Mighte slilokeste be slayn · and sente hym to werre

Leelliche as by hus lok · with a lettere of gyle;

Paul þe apostel, þat no pite hadde · cristene peuple to or Paul?
culle; 268

Now beþ þese seintes, as men seyen · and souereynes
in heuene,

B 165
Yet they are now
in heaven.

Tho þat worst wroghten · while þei weren here.

By þat þat salamon seith · hit semeth þat no wyght

Wot ho is worthi · for wele oþer for wicke, 272

Whether he is worthi to wele · oþer to wickede pyne :

Sunt iusti atque sapientes, & opera eorum in Eccles. ix. 1.
manu Dei sunt.

Thus ich, rechelesnesse, haue rad · registres and bokes,

259. *leye*] ley EF; lye S; i-leiȝe
M.

261. *oute*] outhe P. *oþer* (1)] and
I.

262. *He passede*] Passeþ I. *to*]
in-to F.

263. *Al-so*] þan I. *ho*] ȝo E.
myghte] myde (*sic*) M. *do*] do no
E; ha do F.

264. *denyede* MSIK] denoyede P;
denyed it F.

265. *And*] Or I.

266. *slilokeste*] sleylokest EISK;
slylikest M. *werre*] worþe I.

267. *lok*] book M; bokes I. *Leel-liche-lok*] Slylich al with slyþe S.
lettere] lyare I.

268. *þat*] IK *om.* *pite*] piete I.

cristene] crustene P. *culle*] kille
FS; culle to deþe I.

269. *Now*] And now I. *þese* M]
þise I; þis SE; þei F; þees P. *as*]
by þat I. *and*] as E. *souereynes*]
seyynours M.

270. *Tho*] And þo F; I *om.*
while] wile P; þe while þat I; while
þat MF. *weren here*] here were I.

271. *þat þat*] þat I.

272. *wicke*] wicked I. *S omits from*
for to worthi in next line.

273. *is*] be F. *wickede*] walle in
F. *pyne*] so PI; peyne EMFSK.
iusti—*sapientes*] & sapientes iusti
M; see note to l. 277. *atque*] et IK.

274. *A leaf lost in I, down to xiiij.*
20. *rad*] y-rad SK; I-redde F.

**A 136 B
166**

Christ never
commended
clergy (learning);
see Mark xiii. 9,
11,
which says,
'When ye are
brought before
kings,' &c.

Cf. Ps. cxviii. 46
(Vulg.).

So that Wisdom
is of no avail
without Grace.

Augustine says

(Confess. Lib. viii.
c. 8),

* Wise clerks are
often sunk in hell,

And fond ich neuere, in faith · for to telle treuthe, 275
That clergie of cristes mouth · comended was euere.

For crist seide to seintes · and to suche as he louede,

Dum steteritis ante reges et presides, [nolite cogitare quomodo aut quid loquamini,] & cetera :

'Thauh 3e come by-fore kynges · and clerkes of þe lawe,
Beep nat a-ferd of þat folke · for ich shal 3eue 3ow tonge,
Connynge and clergie · to conclude hem alle.' 280

Dauid makeþ mencion · he spak among kynges,
And myghte no kyng hym ouer-come · as in connynge
speche.

Sothly," seide rechelesnesse · "ich see by menye
euydences, 283

That noþer wit ne wyghtnesse · wan neuere þe maistrie
With-oute þe grete gyfte of god · with hus grace and
fortune.

For he þat most [seih] and seide · of þe sothfast trinite
Was Austyn þe olde · þat euere man wiste.

He saide thus in hus sarmon · for ensample of grete
clerkes, 288

*Ecce ipsi idioti rapiunt celum, vbi nos sapientes
in inferno mergimur.*

This is to mene no more · to men þat ben lewede,

'Aren none rapere raueshed · fro þe ryghte by-leyue
Cominliche þan clerkes · most knowynge and connynge;
And none sonnere ysaued · ne saddere in þe by-leyue

275. *And*] Ac F. *treuthe*] of
treuthe P; but MFSEK omit of.

276. *comended*] comsed M.

277. *Dum, &c.*] Here M has the
rubric quoted above, l. 273. *steteritis*
FSKG] steteris PE. [*nolite cogitare*
EFS] PK om. [*quomodo, &c.*] in S
only.

279. *3ow*] S om.

281. *makeþ*] made M. *he*] and M.

282. *speche*] of speche F.

283. *menye*] myn S; F om. *euy-*
dences MSKG] euedences P.

284. *noþer*] K om.

285. *þe*] FS om. *grete*] KG om.
and] and his M.

286. [*seih*] si M; say S; *miswritten*
seith PEFKG; but see l. 154.

288. *He*] KG om. *for*] in M. *en-*
sample] saumple F. *idioti*] ydioti
E; ydiote MFS. *rapiunt*] rapiunt
nobis S. *sapientes*] FS om.

290. *rapere raueshed*] rausched
rapur FS. *raueshed*] i-rauessched M.

291. *Cominliche*] Comenliche S;
Comuneliche MF. *and*] of FS.

292. *And*] Ne F. *þe*] F om.

- Than ploughmen and pastours · and poure comune
 people ;' 293 whilst poor
 ploughmen and
 shepherds attain
 heaven,'
- And lewede leele laborers · and land-tylynge people
 Persen with a *pater-noster* · paradys oþer heuene, **B 167**
 by help of but one
Pater-noster !
- Passinge purgatorie penaunceles · for here parfit by-
 leyue, 296
- Breuis oratio penetrat celum.*
- Selde falleþ þe seruant · so deepe in arerages Not common
 servants, but
 stewards, run in
 arrears.
- As doþ þe reyue oþer þe conterroller · þat rekene mot
 and a-counte
- Of al þat þei hauen had · of hym þat is here maister.
 Ac þese lewede laborers · of lytel vnderstondynge 300
- Selde fallen so foule · and so deepe in synne
 As clerkes of holy churche · þat kepen sholde and saue So fares it with
 learned men.
- Lewede men in good by-leyue · and lene hem at here
 neede.
- '*Homo proponit*,' quap [a] poete þo · and plato he **B 170**
 Man proposes,
 God disposes.
- hihte, 304
- '*Et deus disponit*,' quap he · 'let god do hus wille.'
 Al þat treuthe a-tacheþ · and testifieþ for goode,
 Thauh thei folwe þat fortune wole · no folie ich hit
 holde.
- And *concupiscentia-carnis* · shal þe nat greue 308 The lust of the

293. *poure comune*] oþer pore M ;
 oþur comen S.

294. F omits. And] MSK om. *tyl-
 ynge*] tylynge SK.

295. *Persen*] þei peersen F ; Passen
 M. *oþer*] after (*sic*) E ; of KG.

297. QBS. Here in some MSS (T,
 H₂, and Digby 145) the A-text and
 C-text are pieced together. See A-
 text, pref. pp. xviii, xx, xxiv. *Read-
 ings from T are here given, to show
 how the Passus ends.* *arerages*] ari-
 rages E ; areragis S ; rerages F ; a-
 rerage M ; arerage TK ; arrirages P
 (but see xiii. 66).

298. *reyue*] reue MESTKG ; reeue
 F. oþer] & T. þe (2)] a M ; FK om.
conterroller] counteroller MS ; coun-

trollour TF ; counterrollers E. *a-
 counte*] acompte T ; counte FS.

299. *had* TSKG] hadd P ; i-had
 MF.

300. *þese* MFS] þees P ; TK om.
lytel] lewde S. *vnderstondynge*] vn-
 durfongynge F ; vndirstonde (*sic*) T.

302. *of*] dooth of F.

303. *good*] rith M. *neede*] wille T.

304. *Homo*] 3e homo F. [*a* MTF
 ESKG] þe P. þo] T om.

305. *Et*] Set M. *he*] he þo F.
hus] al his M.

306. *a-tacheþ*] techip T.

307. *Thauh—folwe*] þan þe folke
 (!) E. *wole*] wolde F ; T om.

308. And] Ne T. *shal—greue*]
 ne shal not greue þe T.

flesh will not
harm thee," said
Recklessness.

Gretlich, ne by-gyly þe · bote yf þy-self wolle."

"3e, farewel, fyppe!" quath fauntelet · and forth gan
me drawe,

So I yielded to
temptation,
† and thought no
more of Clergy's
counsel.

Til *concupiscentia-carnis* · a-corded to alle my werkes.

Of dowel ne of dobet · no deynte me þouhte, 312

Clergie and hus consail · ich countede ful lytel!

Hic explicit passus secundus de dowel.

309. *Gretlich ne*] Graithly to F.
by-gyly] bigyle FK; by-gile ne naþur
(sic) S; begile T; greuen (*repeated*
from last line) M. þe] FS om. yf
þy-self] þou T. wolle] woldest M.

310. 3e] Tho T. *fauntelet*] a
fauntlet S; a fauntekyn M.

311. to] til TKG; with S. *werkes*]

wordes M.

312. *ne*] and M. *me*] me ne T.

313. *Clergie and*] Of clergie & F;
Ne clergie ne T. *ich countede*] a-
countede M; I counte it T. *lytel*]
lite M.

COLOPHON. MT omit. *Hic*] EFSK
om. *de dowel*] FK om.

PASSUS XIII. (DO-WEL III.)

Incipit passus tercius [de dowel.]

“**A**las, eye!” quath elde · and holynesse boþe, (Page of B-text)
 “þat wit shal turne to wrecchednesse · for **170**
 welthe hap al hus wil!” Old Age and
Holiness
mourned.

Couetise-of-eyen · confortede me after,

And seide, “rechelesnesse · recche þe neuere! 4 Lust-of-the-Eyes
comforted me;

By so þow riche were · haue þow no conscience

How þat þow come to good; · confesse þe to som frere, and bade me
confess to a friar
when I pleased.

He shal a-soile þe thus sone · how [so] þow euere wynne
 hit.

For while fortune is þy frend · freres wollen þe louye,

And fastne þe in here fraternite · and for þe by-seche **171**

To here priour prouincial · hus pardon to haue, 10

And praye for þe, pol by pol · yf þow be [pecunious;]

Pena pecuniaria non sufficit, et cet.”

By wissynge of þis wenche ich dude · hure wordes I did as she bade.
 were so swete, 12

Til ich for-þat ȝouthē · and ȝorn in-to elde.

TITLE. *So in K; Incipit passus tercius PE; Hic incipit tercius passus de dowel M; Incipit tercius de eodem S; Passus secundus de dobet (wrongly) T.*

1. *eye*] *eyze* M.

2. *wit*] with P. *welthe*] *wele* SK.

4. *seide*] *seide* to F (*which seems not to be meant; cf. B-text*). *þe*] *þow* M.

5. *By*] T *om.* *þow*] *þat þou F.* *riche were*] *were* M. *were*] T

om. *þow* (2)] T *om.*

6. *þat*] so F. *þat—come*] *þou comist* T.

7. [*so* FTS] PEMK *om.* *euere—hit*] *euere* it *wynne* F; *hit euere wonne* M.

9. *fastne*] *faste* T.

10. *To here*] *Bi-fore þe* M.

11. [*pecunious* EMFSKG] *pecunius* P; *pecuniosus* T. *Pena*] *Sed pena* F.

13. *ȝorn* TK] *ȝorne* P; *ron* M; *ran* S; *ourne* E; *ȝarn fast* F.

Thenne was fortune my foo · for al here fayre by-hestē,
 And pouerte pursuwede me · and putte me to be lowe,
 In my old age the
 friar avoided me,
 And flittyngē fond ich þe frere · þat me confessedē, 16
 And seide, ‘he myghte me nat a-soile · bote ich suluer
 hadde

† and refused me
 absolution. To restitue resonabliche · for al vnryghtful wynnynge.’

“Owh! how!” quap ich þo · and myn hefd waggēde,
 I told him he was
 like a wooer of
 widows. “By my faith, frere,” quap ich · “ȝe fare lik þe wou-
 were 20

That wilneþ þe wydewe · bote for to wedde here
 goodes.

Ryght so, by þe rode,” quap ich · “rouhte þe neuere
 Wher my body yburied were · by so ȝe hadde my
 goodes!”

172 Thanne lowh leaute · for ich lourede on þe frere; 24
 Loyalty looked
 upon me, and
 asked why I
 looked angry.
 “Whi lourest þow?” quap leaute · “leue syre,” ich
 seide,

“For this frere flaterede me · while he fond me riche;
 Now ich am poure and penyles · at litel prys he set me:
 Ich wolde hit were no synne,” ich seide · “to seye þat
 were treuthe. 28

173 The sauter seith hit is no synne · for suche men as
 ben trewe

For to seggen as thei seen · and saue onliche prestes;

14. *Thenne*] & þan FTK.
 15. *me*] me faste F.
 17. *me—a-soile*] not asoyle me S.
bote] but if F.
 18. *vnryghtful*] vnskilful S; sor-
 ful E.
 19. *Owh how*] Ow hou E; Ow how
 F; How how S; Ow ow M; Owþ
 houþ K; How T. *ich*] S om. *þo*] þo
 to hym T. *hefd*] hed EM; heuid
 TFK; hand S. *waggēde*] y-waggyd S.
 20. M omits from ȝe fare to ich in
 1. 22.

OBS. Here I begins again, but is
 damaged and imperfect throughout
 this Passus.

21. *wilneþ*] wilneþ nat IS; wilneþ

- nouþt T. *wedde*] welde T.
 22. *ich*] y þo S. *rouhte*] roþt E;
 rouþte TF; roþte S. *rouhte þe*] rout-
 est þow M.
 23. *yburied were*] were y-buried K.
by] M om. *ȝe*] þou T.
 24. *Thanne*] And þanne IT; þo M.
 25. *lourest*] louridest T. *leue* EM
 STK] leue IF; laue P. *ich*] he MT.
 26. *this* IMFSETK] thees P. *flater-
 ede*] flaterēþ S. *while*] þe while I;
 þer whiles T.
 27. *Now*] And now IT. *at*] K om.
set me] me setteþ M.
 29. K omits.
 30. *For*] IT om. *seggen*] seiþe M.
and] alle M.

Existimasti inique quod ero tui similis ; arguam te, & statuam contra faciem tuam. Ps. xlix. 21 (Vulg.).

Thei wollen a-leggen al-so · and by þe godspel preouen **172**
hit,

Nolite iudicare quemquam. Mat. vii. 1.

“Wher-of serueþ lawe,” quap leaute · “and no lyf
vndertoke **32**

Falnesse ne faiterie ? · for som-what þe apostel seide,

Non oderis fratrem tuum secreta in corde [tuo.] Levit. xix. 17.

Thyng þat al þe worlde wot · where-fore sholdest þow **173**
spare

To rehercen hit by retoryk · to a-rate dedliche synne ?

Ac be þow neuer þe furste · the defaute to blame ; **36** “Be not the
Thauh þow see, sey nat · som tyme, þat is treuthe. first to find
fault.”

Thyng þat wolde be pryue · publisshe þow hit neuere,

Noper for loue labbe hit out · ne lacke hit for non
enuye ;

Parum lauda, vitupera parcius.”

“He seith soth,” quap scripture [þo] · and skypte an **40** Scripture
hy, and prechede, approved of this,

Ac þe matere þat hue meeuede · yf lewede men hit
knewe,

þe lasse, as ich leyue · louye þei wolde

The by-leyue of oure lorde · þat lettrede men techen.

Of here teme and of here tales · ich took ful good hede ;

Hue seide in here sarmon · selcouthe wordes :— **45** referring to Mat.
xxii. 1—14.

Nolite, &c.] M om.

32. *Wher-of]* And wher-of IT ;
Wer-of P.

33. *[tuo FST] PEMK om.*

34. *where-fore]* where-to S ; where
K.

35. *hit]* it al I. *a-rate]* rate F ;
rehete T.

36. *þow neuer]* neuer-more IT.
the] F om. *to]* for to F.

37. *see]* hit seo M ; I om. *sey]* me
sey F. *treuthe]* trewe MFS ; truwe K.

39. *Noper for]* Ne for no M. *labbe*

—out] loue it nouȝt T. *hit]* S om.
non] MFSTK om.

40. *He]* A (*sic*) IT. *[þo ITFSKG]*
PE om.

41. *hue]* sche IT ; he PMFSEK
(*wrongly*) ; cf. ll. 49, 72. *meeuede]*
moeued E. *yf]* & T.

44. *of]* FIK om. *ful]* wel T ; F
om.

45. F omits. *Hue]* Sche M ; Heo
K ; He PITES (*wrongly*). *here]*
heore M ; his E.

^{least}
 "Multi to a mangerie · and to þe mete were sompned,
 And whan þe people was plener come · the porter vn-
 pynned þe gate,

174

And plyghte in *pauci* pryueliche · and leet þe remenant
 go rome." 48

I pondered upon
 my election to
 grace.

Al for teene of here tixt · tremblede myn herte,
 And in a weer gan ich wexe · and with my-selue to
 dispute

Wheþer ich were chose oþer nat chose; · on holy-
 churche ich þouhte,

That vnderfong me atte fount · for on of godes chosene.

"Christ has called
 us all.

"For crist clepide ous alle · come yf we wolde, 53
 Sarrasyns and scismatikes · and so he dude þe Iewes,
 And bad hem souken of hus brest · sauete for synne,
 And drynke bote for bale · brouke hit ho so myghte;

Isa. lv. 1.

O uos omnes sitientes, uenite ad aquas!

Christ saves all
 men," said I.

Thenne may alle cristine [come] · and cleyme þer
 to entre 57

By þat blod þat he boughte ous with · and baptisme,
 as he tauhte,

Mk. xvi. 16.

*Qui crediderit et baptizatus fuerit, [saluus erit],
 & cetera.*

For thauh a crystine man coueytede · hus crystendome
 to reneye,

Ryghtfulliche to reneye · no reson hit wolde. 60

"A churl must

For may no cherl a chartre make · ne hus catel selle

46. a] þe S. þe] MF *om.* sompned] ysompned E; i-sompned M.

47. whan] wan P. was] were S. vnpynned] opened EM; opeynned S; & openide (*sic*) T; vnpynneþ I.

48. *pauci*] paucos S. *pryueliche*] S *om.* go] F *om.* rome] rombe T; pleye S.

50. And] M *om.* to dispute] dispute KF; disputed M.

51. Wheþer] Weþer P.

52. vnderfong] vndurfeng FSK. atte] at þe IMTF. *chosene*] childur F.

53. *clepide*] curteisly kept F.

54. *scismatikes*] miswritten scismaticyns P; cf. B-text.

55. of] at IMTFSK. sauete for] to saue þe fro M. of—synne] for synne · saue (sauf T) at his breste IT.

56. hit] MF *om.* O uos] F *om.*

57. [come IMTFSKG] PE *om.* þer] for S.

58. as] þat S. [saluus erit MFE] hic saluus erit S; PKIT *om.*

59. coueytede] coueite MF. to] K *om.*

61. cherl] cheerl P; clerke ES. a] no F; TK *om.*

With-oute leue of þe lorde · no lawe wolde hit graunte. have his lord's
leave to sell his
goods;
Ac he may renne in arerage · and rome fro home,

As a recheles caitif · oþer reneyed, as hit semeþ; 64

Ac reson shal rekene with hym · and rebuke him atte
laste,

And conscience a-counte with hym · and caste him 175
[in] arerages,

And putte hym þenne in prison · in purgatorie to but he can be
imprisoned for
debt."
brenne,

Rewardynge him þer for hus rechelesnesse · ryght to þe
day of dome, 68

Bote contricion and confession · crye, by hus lyue,
Mercy for hus mysdedes · with mouthe and with herte.'

"That is sothe," seide scripture · "may no synne lette Scripture bade
me trust to God's
mercy.
Mercy, þat hue nel al amende · yf meeknesse here folwe;

Thei boþe, as our bookes telleþ · aren aboute godes
werkes; 73

Misericordia eius super omnia opera eius."

"Ye, baw for bookes!" quap on · was broken out of
helle— Ps. cxliv. 9
(Vulg.).
Trajan declares
how he was re-
leased from hell.

"Ich, troianus, a trewe knyght · ich take witness of
[a] pope, 75

How ich was ded, and dampned · to dwellen in helle
For an vncristene creature; · seynt gregorie wot þe
soþe,

62. *oute*] ouhte P. *þe*] þat E. *wolde*] wole K; wol I; wil F.

63. *Ac*] But T. *arerage* KMS] arrirage P (*but see* l. 66); areragis T; rerage F. *rome*] rombe T; renne S.

64. *a*] ET *om.* *recheles*] cherles (!) E.

65. *Ac*] But T. *him*] F *om.* *atte*] at þe IMFT; at S.

66. [*in* MITFSKG] PE *om.* *are-rages*] rerages F.

67. *þenne*] affir T.

68. *Rewardynge*] Rewarde EF; And rewarde K. *ryght*] M *om.* *Re-wardynge*—*rechelesnesse*] And for his

recchelesnesse rewarde hym þere TI.

69. *Bote*] But 3if T. *crye by*] he cacche in T. *lyue*] leue S.

71. *sothe*] þe sothe PE; *but* MFSKT omit þe; cf. B-text.

72. *nel*] ne may KMFST. *amende*] mende E. *yf*] and IT.

73. *boþe*] miswritten beþe P.

74. *Ye*] 3a T. *broken*] i-broke M.

75. *troianus*] so PIK; troianes M T; traianus SE. *trewe*] trywe P. *of*] at S. [*a* MTFEKG] þe S; P *om.*

76. *to*] for to F; forte M.

"Pope Gregory
prayed for my
release."

176

"See how this
pagan was
saved!" said
† Recklessness
(see Pass. xiv.
129).
"Ye lords, think
upon Trajan."

177

Learning with-
out love is profit-
less.

That al þe cristendome vnder Crist · ne myghte
cracche me þennes,

Bote onliche loue and leaute · as in my lawes demynge !

Gregore wiste þis wel · and wilnede to my soule 80

Sauacion, for þe sothness · þat he seiþ in myn werkes ;

And for he wilnede wepynge · þat ich were saued,

God of hus goodnesse · seiþ hus grete wil ;

With-oute moo bedes byddyng · hus bone was vnder-

fonge, 84

And ich ysaued, as 3e may see · with-oute syngynge of
masse.

Loue, with[oute] leel by-leyue · and my lawe ryghtful
Sauede me Sarrasyn · soule and body boþe."

"Lo, lordes ! what leaute dude · and leel dom y-used !

Wel auhte 3e lordes þat lawes kepen · þis lesson to

haue in mynde, 89

And on *troianus* treuthe to þenke · alle tymes of 3oure
lyue,

And louye for 3oure lordes loue · and do leaute euere
more.

For lawe with-oute leaute · leye þer a bene ! 92

Oþer eny science vnder sonne · þe seuene ars and alle,

Bote loue and leaute [hem] lede · y-lost is al þe tyme

Of [hym] þat traueleþ þer-on · bote treuthe be hus
lyuynge.

78. *ne*] M om. *cracche* MFSEKG] *miswritten* cacche PT; cf. B-text. *cracche* me E] me cracche MFSK; me cacche T; cacche me P. *þennes*] þenne M; fro þenne T.

80. *wiste*] wist PK. *wel*] M om.

81. *þe sothness*] my sopfastnesse S. *þat*] IT om. *he*] K om.

82. *saued*] i-saued MFTK.

84. *With-oute*] And wiþoute ITK.

85. *ich ysaued*] i saued M. *with-oute*] wiþ I. *masse*] masses EFK; mo messis T.

86. *[oute* IMFTKS] PE om. *and*] as I.

88. *y-used*] so also E; y-vsed K;

y-vsied ST; i-vsied MF.

89. *auhte 3e*] owen T. *lawes*] laye I. to] F'S om.

90. *on*] in S. *troianus*] so PIK; *troianes* M; *traianus* E. *of*] in METSK.

91. *for*] fore P. *3oure*] oure IT. *do*] E om. *And—loue*] And for 3oure lordus loue to louye S; For 3our lordus loue to loue F.

92. *leye*] ley me F.

93. *and*] of (I) E.

94. FS omit. [*hem* METK] hym P; it answers to þei in B. xi. 167.

95. [*hym* SMFTK] hem PE; but observe hus following.

Lo, loue and leaute · been oure lordes bookes, 96
 And cristes owen clergie · he cam fro heuene to teche
 hit,

And sitthe seynt Iohan · seide hit of hus techynge ;

Qui non diligit, manet in morte :

1 John iii. 14
 (Vulg.).

And nameliche poure people · here preiours may ous
 helpen ; 99

For god, as þe godspel seith · goth ay as in þe poure,
 And, as þe euangelist wytnesseþ · whan we maken 108
 festes,

We sholde nat clypie knyghtes þer-to · ne no kyne
 ryche, 102

Cum facitis convivium, nolite uocare amicos Luke xiv. 12.

[*diuites*,] &c. ;

‘Ac calleþ þe carful þer-to · þe crokede and þe poure.
 For eche frend fedeþ oþer · and fondeþ how he may
 quite 104

Meles and manshupes · eche a ryche man oþer ;

Ac, for þe poure may nat paye · ich wol paye my-self ; Christ repays
 þat louyep and lenep hem · largeliche shal ich quite.’ what is given to
 the poor.

At caluarie, of cristes blood · cristendome gan sprynge,

And blod-breþrene by-cam we þer · of on body wonne, We are all
 As *quasi modo geniti* · gentel men echone ; 110 blood,
 viz. of the blood
 shed at Calvary.

No begger ne boye among ous · bote yf synne hit
 make, 1 Pet. ii. 2.

96. Lo] So IT ; Loo how F ; So lo
 K.

98. *sitthe* — Iohan] sent Iohan
 sethen I ; seint Iohan siþen T. *hit*
 hit is P ; but EMFSKT omit is. *of*
 in M.

100. þe] E om. in] MFSTK om. ;
 cf. B. xi. 180.

101. *euangelist*] euangelye SIK ;
 Evangelie T.

102. [*diuites*] in E only. S omits
 last half of l. 102, and first half of l.
 103.

104. *eche*] euery T. *how—may*
 forte M ; how beste to I ; hym best

to T.

105. *manshupes*] manschipes MST ;
 manschepes EF. a] ES om. *ryche*
 T om. *oþer*] to oþur S.

106. *Ac*] T om. *my*] I om.

107. *louyep*] louep hem M. *shal*
ich] þer T.

108. *blood cristendome*] body ;
cristus blood F.

109. *blod*] blodi MFT. *by-cam*
we] we by-come IT. *on*] o FSİK ; a
 T. *wonne*] i-wonne MITK.

111. *No*] Ne E. *After* ous (vs)
 PE add is, *which* IMTFSK omit ; cf.
 B-text. *yf—hit*] it synne IT.

John viii. 34.

Qui facit peccatum, seruus est peccati.

129

In þe olde lawe, as [þe] lettre telleþ · menne sonen me
cald ous, 112

[Of] Adames ysshue and eue · ay til god-man deide,
And after hus resureccion · *redemptor* was hus name,

Both rich and
poor are Christ's
brethren.

And we hus bloody breþren · as wel beggers as lordes.

For-þy loue [we] as leue children · and lene hem þat
nedeþ, 116

And euery man help oþer · for hennes shulleþ we alle
To haue as we han deserued · as holychurche wittnesseþ,

† Mat. xxv. 46.
John v. 29.

Et qui bona egerunt, ibunt in uitam eternam ;

[qui vero mala, in ignem eternum].

180

Learn the law
of love.

For-thi lerne we lawe of loue · as oure lord tauhte ;

The poure people faile [we] nat · whil eny peny ous
lasteþ. 120

For in here liknesse oure lorde · lome hath be knowe ;

Luke xxiv. 13.

Wittnesse in þe paske woke · when he ȝeode to emaus,
Cleophas ne knew hym nat · þat he crist were,

For hus poure aparail · and pilgrimes cloþes, 124

Luke xxiv. 31.

Til þat he blessedede here bred · and brak hit by-twyne
hem.

So by hus werkes thei wiste · þat he was Iesus,

Ac by hus cloþing þei knewe hym nat · so caitifliche
he ȝede.

Christ set an

Al was ensample sothliche · to ous synful here, 128

112. [þe ITS] PEMK *om.* þe let-
tre] lettere M ; lered men F. telleþ]
techeþ I ; seith MFS. menne] men E ;
mennus FS ; manes M ; mennes IK ;
menis T. me] so also IMFE ; men
SK ; T *om.* cald] calleþ S.

113. [Of MFSKT] And PE. eue]
of eeuës F.

115. bloody] blod M.

116. For-þy] For-ghi M. [we
MFKTSG] PE *om.* and] I *om.* hem]
we him S ; hym K. nedeþ] nudeþ P.

117. for] fro I.

118. deserued] serued F. [qui,
&c.] in S only.

119. For-thi] For-ghi M. lawe]
þe lawe T.

120. The] And T. [we MFTSKG]
PE *om.* ous lasteþ] lastuþ vs S.

121. For] Fore P. lome] ful lome
F ; lombe S ; whilom T.

122. woke] wouke FT ; wike M.
when] wen P. ȝeode] wente F. emaus]
romaynes (!) T.

123. ne] K *om.*

125. þat] MF *om.* here] þe M.
by-twyne hem] hem bituene IT.

126. thei] hy S. Iesus] lord Iesus F.

127. hus cloþing] knowing T.

128. Al was] And al was in T.

We sholde be lowe and loueliche · and leel, eche man example of
humility.
to oper,

And pacient as pilgrimes · for pilgrimes arn we alle.

In þe parail of a pilgrim · and in a poure liknesse 131 **181**

Holy seyntes hym seiþ · ac neuere in secte of riche.

And seynte marie hus moder · [as] matheu bereth wit- The virgin Mary
was poor.
nesse,

Was a pure poure mayde · and to a poure man ywedded.

Martha on marie magdalene · an huge pleynte [hue] Martha com-
plained of Mary.
made, 135

[And to oure saueour selue · saide þese wordes:]

Domine, non est tibi cure quod soror mea reliquit Luke x. 40.
me solam ministrare?

And here aiperes wil · hasteliche god a-soilede, 137

And aiperes werkes and wil · ryght wel he alowede;

Ac God putte pouerte by-fore · and preouede hit for þe Christ praised
Mary most.
bettere;

Maria optimam partem elegit, que non auferetur Luke x. 42.
ab ea.

And alle þe wise þat euere were · by ouht ich can aspie, Wise men praise
poverty.

Preisede pouerte for beste · yf pacience hit folwe, 141

And boþe bettere and blessedere · by meny folde þan
richesse;

Thauh hit be sour to suffre · þer comeþ a swete after. **182**

129. *We*] þat we T.

130. *arn*] ben ME; be S.

131. *þe parail*] a-paraille MS; þe
aparail K. a pilgrim] pilgrimes M;
pilgrime F. a (2)] MFTSK om. *lik-
nesse* MIKT] licknesse P.

132. *hym*] iesu F. *secte*] sith M.
T is corrupt.

133. [*as* MFTSK] PE om.

135. *magdalene*] Maudeleyn MFS
IT. *huge*] hugy S. [*hue*] he FS;
heo KG; sche MT; PE om. (*For
the spelling hue, see l. 72.*)

136. *From* IKSTGM (*for* And to T
has Vnto); PE omit; F has—& to
our sauour him-self · hes leide þese
woordus; cf. B. xi. 243. *cure*] cura

IMTK.

137. *here*] hure MS; herd (!) E.
aiperes] aipere P; but see next line.
I omits last half of l. 137, and first
half of l. 138.

138. *werkes*] werk S. *he*] STK
om.

139. *Ac*] But T; And M. *God—
pouerte*] pouerte god putte IT.
preouede hit] prouiþ T.

140. *þe*] S om.

141. *for*] as for F. *folwe*] folwede
M; folewede T.

143. *Thauh*] Al-pogh IT. *hit*] he
I. *sour*] sor T. *swete*] swetere M;
swetnesse F.

The walnut has a
bitter husk, but a
sweet kernel.

Such is poverty.

† He that
forsaketh father
or friend for the
gospel's sake shall
receive an
hundredfold.

† Mat. xix. 29.

To be perfect, we
must sell all.

As in a walnote, with-oute · ys a byter barke, 144
And after þat biter barke · be þe shale aweye,
Ys a curnel of comfort · kynde to restorie ;
So, after, pouerte and penaunce · pacientliche [y]take,
Makeþ man haue mynde in god · and hus mercy craue,
The whiche is curnel of comfort · for alle cristene
saules. 149

And wel sykerour he slepeþ · þe seg þat is poure,
And lasse drat by daye · oper in derk to be robbed,
Than he þat ys ryht ryche · reson bereþ wittnesse ;
Pauper ego ludo · dum tu diues meditaris. 153
Holichurche wittnesseþ · ‘ ho so for-sakeþ
Hus fader oper hus frendes · [fremde] opere sibbe,
Other eny welthe in this worlde · hus wyf oper hus
children, 156

For þe loue of oure lorde · loweþ hym to be poure,
He shal haue an hundredfolde · of heuene-ryche blisse,
And lif lastyng for euere · by-fore oure lorde in heuene ;

Quicunque [reliquerit] patrem & matrem, &c.
Crist a-cordeþ eft her-with · clerkes witen þe sothe,
What god hym-self saide · to a seg þat he louede ; 161
‘ Yf þe lykeþ, quap god, ‘ to lyue · þe lif þat is parfit,
Al þat þow hast here · hasteliche go sulle hit ;

144. *in*] on ITFK; S *om.*

145. *shale*] scale IT.

146. *Ys*] per is MF. *restorie*] so
also M; restore ITFSEK.

147. *pouerte—penaunce*] penaunce
& pouerte IT. *ytake* EIKST] i-take
MF; take P; cf. B-text.

148. *haue*] to haue IFS. *in*] of T.
craue] to craue FKST.

149. *whiche*] wiche P. *is*] is þe
IKT.

150. *he*] F *om.* *seg*] man M.

151. *lasse drat*] drede lasse E.
drat—daye] a-drad in dai-lith M.
by] in T; by þe F. *in*] F *om.* *derk*]
deerk P. *robbed*] i-robbed M.

152. *ryht*] M *om.* *reson*] resoun
us F.

155. *oper*] and M. [*fremde* MT]
frembe S; frende PEIFK; (*where it
is clear that frende arose from mis-
reading fremde*; fremde opere sibbe
= whether unrelated or related).

157. *For*] And for F. *loweþ hym*]
logeth hem I; loueth F. *be*] þe M.

159. [*reliquerit* MFES] relinquet
P; relinquit IKT. &] uel M; aut
F.

160. *eft*] ofte ST. *her*] þer M.
witen] whiten P.

161. *hym-self saide*] seide hym-
self IKT. *seg*] man M.

162. *þe lykeþ*] he likeþ E; þow
like M; þou likest KT.

163. *go—hit*] þou it selle F.

ȝeue poure peuple þe pans · ther-of porse þow none,
Ac ȝeue hem forth to poure folke · þat for my loue hit
askep. 165

For-sake al and suwe me · and so is thi beste ;

Si uis perfectus esse, uade & uende omnia [que Mat. xix. 21.
habes.]

Thus consaileþ crist · in comun ous alle :—

† The counsel of
Christ.

‘Ho so coueyteþ to come · to my kynriche, 168

He mot for-sake hym-self · hus suster and hus broþer,

And al þat þe worlde wolde · and my wil folwen,

Nisi renunciaueritis [omnibus] *que possidetis,* &c. † Luke xiv. 33.

Meny prouerbis ich myghte haue · of meny holy seyntes,

To testifie for treuthe · þe tale þat ich shewe, 172

And poetes to preouen hit · porfirie and plato ;

† Porphyry,
Plato, Aristotle,
Ovid, and others,
all praise poverty.

Aristotile, ouidius · and elleuene hundred,

Tullius, tholomeus · ich can nat telle here names,

Preouen pacient pouerte · pryns of alle vertues. 176

And by [þe] greyn þat groweth · god ous alle techep

[Mischeifs on pis molde · mekeliche to suffre :]

Nisi granum frumenti cadens in terra mortuum † John xii. 24.

fuerit, ipsum solum manet ;

Bote yf [þe] sed þat sowen is · in þe sloh sterue, 179

Shal neuere spir springen vp · ne spik on strawe curne ;

Sholde neuere whete wexe · bote whete fyrste deyde.

164. ȝeue] ȝif MK; And ȝif F; ȝif
þe TS. pans] pens M; penys T.
porse] purse IFTS; purce M.

165. Ac ȝeue] But ȝif MT; Ac gif
F; Ac ȝif KS. hem] hym S; it T.
to] to þe T. askep] aske IT.

166. suwe] haue S. is] it is F.
thi] so PK; þy I; þe MTFSE. que
habes] in S only.

167. Thus] ȝet T.

168. to (1)] to me E. to (2)] in T.

169. mot] moste M. suster—broþer]
broþer and his sisteor M (wrongly).

170. Nisi, &c.] Nisi quis renun-
ciauerit omnibus que possidet, &c. F.
[omnibus EFS] omnia PMIKT.

171. Meny] Mo KT.

172. testifie] testefie PK; testefize
M. for] T om. shewe] tolde M.

173. porfirie] porphirie MFIS.

175. tholomeus] ptholomeus S.

176. pryns] pris M.

177. [þe MFTSK] PE om.

178. From M; also in IKTFSG; PE
om. Mischeifs] Mischeues M; but
see l. 201. on] of FS. þis] T om.
molde] world S. terra] terra & P;
but EMITFSK omit &. ipsum, &c.]
MFIKTS om.

179. [þe MEKSFT] þat P. in]
on S.

180. curne] kerne ITFS; kurne EK.

181. whete] miswritten wete P
(twice).

† All seeds die in the ground before they produce fruit.

† Seeds that can bear severe weather are the most useful.

† Linseed and such seeds are less worthy than wheat.

† So men that can suffer most will be most exalted.

† Tribulations

And oper sedes al-so · in þe same wyse,
That ben leide on lough erthe · ylore as hit were ;
And þorw þe grete grace of god · of greyn ded in erthe
Atte laste launceþ vp · wher-by [we] lyuen alle. 185
Ac seedes þat been sowen · and mowe suffre wyntres,
Aren tydyour and tower · to mannes by-hofthe,
Than seedes þat sowen beep · and mowe nouht with
forste[s], 188
With wyndes ne with wederes · as in wynter-tyme ;
As, lynne-seed and lik-seed · and lente-seedes alle
Aren nouht so worthy as whete · ne so wel mowen
In þe feld with þe forst · and hit freese longe. 192
Ryght so, for soþe · þat suffre may penaunces
Worth alowed of oure lorde · at here laste ende ;
And for here penaunce be preysed · as for [a] pure
[martir,]
Oper for a confessour ykud · that counteþ nat a ruysshe
Fere, ne famyne · ne false menne tonges ; 197
Bote as an hosebonde hopeþ · after an hard wynter,
Yf god gyueþ hym þe lif · to haue a good heruest,
So preoueþ these prophetes · þat pacientliche suffreþ.
Myscheifs and myshappes · and menye tribulacions

182. *And*] & so it is of F; S *om.*
183. *leide*] i-leid M. *on*] in MITK.
erthe] eerthe P.

184. *of* (2)] and IT. *in*] on ITFKS.

185. *Atte* EK] At þe MIFTS; *Atte*
þe P (*wrongly*). *wher*] wer P. [*we*
MIFSKTG] PE *om.*

186. *wyntres*] wyntur F.

187. *Aren*] Ben E. *by-hofthe*] bi-
hofþe M; by-hofte I; by-houe S;
behof T; byhof E; by-hefthe K; be-
houethe F.

188. *forstes* EKG] forstus SF;
frostes MIT; forste P.

189. *With*] Ne T. *with*] IT *om.*
tyme] tymes IT.

190. *As*] Ac K. *lik*] lek MT;
leek IF.

191. *mowen*] dure mowe FS; *cf.*
l. 188.

192. *forst*] so PSFK; frost MIT.

193. *for soþe*] soþely IT. *þat—*
may] he þat mai suffre M. *penaunces*]
penaunce TF.

195. *penaunce*] patience TFKS. [*a*
MTKFSG] PE *om.*; *see next line.*
pure] puyre P. *martir* KTSG] mar-
tyr MF; *miswritten* matir PE.

196. *ykud*] i-kid MT. *counteþ*] a-
counteþ M; countide T. *ruysshe*]
rusche KF; rysshe ST. *counteþ—*
ruysshe] kunneþ noȝt in harnysche E
(*corruptly*).

197. *Fere ñe*] For no E. *menne*]
men ES; mennes IF; menes MT.

198. *an* (2)] E *om.*

199. *gyueþ*] gyue M. *hym þe*] hem E.

200. *these* MKFS] thees P; þis IE;
þise T. *pacientliche*] patience E.

201. *menye*] E *om.*

By-tokneþ ful treweliche · in tyme comynge after 202 betoken future
Murthe for hus mornynge · and þat mucche plente. joy.

For crist seide to hus seyntes · þat for hus sake
þoleden

Pouerte [and] penaunce · [and] persecucion of body,
[Schullen haue more worschipe to wages ·

þan] Angeles—in here angre · on this wise hem grette,

‘*Tristitia uestra uertetur in gaudium* :

† John xvi. 20.

þoure sorwe in-to solas · shal turne atte laste, 208

And out of wo in-to wele · þoure wyrdes shul chaunge.’

Ac [who] so redeþ of [þe] riche · þe reuers he may † But with the
fynde, rich it is not so.

How god, as þe godspel telleþ · gyueþ hem foul tow-
name,

And þat hus gost shal go · and hus good by-leue, 212 † God warned the
And askeþ hym after · ‘ho shal hit haue, rich man that his
death was near.

The catel þat he kepeþ so · in coffres and in bernes?

And art so loth to leue · þat leue shalt needes :

O stulte, ista nocte anima tua egredietur ; [que † Luke xii. 20.

congregasti, cuius erunt ?] *Thesaurizat*, & † Ps. xxxviii. 7

ignorat [cui, &c.]. (Vulg.).

An vnredy reue · þi residue shal spene, 216

202. ful] IKT om. treweliche] triweliche P.

203. hus] heore M.

204. to hus] so to FS ; to IK.

205. [and MIFTSG (twice)] KPE om. penaunce MIFTSG] penances PE.

206. *This imperfect line is from I ; there is an evident omission here in the other copies ; we might insert—and worthier ben yholde*

207. [þan I] þanne T ; PEKMS om. angre] owen degre I (but anger means distress ; B. xv. 254, 266).

208. atte] at þe MFST.

209. wyrdes] wordes K ; wordes IETS ; wordes MF (but wyrd = fate).

210. Ac] And MT. [who EKMITG] ho FS ; P om. redeþ] rat I ; ret K. [þe MIKTFSG] PE om. - he] IKT om.

211. telleþ] seiþ M. hem] hym KTSF ; I om. foul tow-name] ful tow-name FE ; foul to name MT ; foel to name I ; fool to name SG (foul tow-name = evil nickname ; fool to name = fool as a name).

213. hym after] hym hertely T ; I om.

214. bernes] apparently hernes P ; but bernes in the rest.

215. art] ert PEK. leue] lene or leue in the MSS. I has—And art so loth to leue · þat lete schal þou nedes ; so T (with shalt for schal þou). shalt] schal. þou I ; þou schalt FS. egredietur EG] egrediatur PITKM ; rapietur F ; rapietur a te S. [que—erunt] in E only. [cui] in S only.

216. spene] spende T ; haue M.

That menye mothþe was [maister] ynne · in a mynte-
while;

Vp-holderes on þe hul · shullen haue hit to selle.'

Lo, lo, lordes, lo · and ladies, takeþ hede,

† Fruits with
sweet juice will
not keep long.

Hit lasteþ nat longe · þat is lycour swete, 220

As pees-coddles and pere-Ionettes · plomes and chiries!

þat lyghtliche launceþ vp · litel while dureþ,

And þat þat rapeþ rypeþ · roteþ most saunest.

† Foulest weeds
grow on fat land;

On fat londe and ful of donge · foulest wedes groweth;

Right so for sothe · suche þat ben bysshopes, 225

Erles and archedekenes · and oper ryche clerkes,

That chaffaren as chapmen · and chiden bote þei wyne,

And hauen þe worlde at here wil · oper-wyse to lyue.

Right as weodes wexen · in wose and in donge, 229

So of rychesse vpon richesse · [arisen] al vices.

† So likewise
vices arise from
riches.

Lo, lond ouere-layde · with marle and with donge

Whete þat wexeth þer-on · worth lygge ar hit ripe;

Right so, for soþe · for to sygge treuthe, 233

Ouer-plente pryde norssheþ · þer pouerte destrueþ hit.

For, how hit euere be ywonne · bote hit be wel dis-

pended,

Worldliche wele is wicked þynge · to hym þat hit kepeþ.

† Wealth fills its
possessor with
dread;

217. *mothþe*] *mowþe* M; *mouzte* F; *mouþe* ES; *man* T; *miswritten* *nothe* (for *mothe*) I. [*maister* MIKTFS] PE *om.* *ynne*] *inne* M; in T; of F; IS *om.* *mynte*] *so also* MIKFS; *mynt* T; *minti* (sic) E.

218. *hul*] *hil* T.

219. *Lo lo*] *Lo lo lo* M; *Lo louely* T; *Lo* K.

221. *and* (1)] KFST *om.* *pere-Ionettes*] *pyonies* F.

223. *saunest*] *so* PKS; *sennest* (for *sonnest*) M; *sonnest* IT; *sonest* E; *sone* F.

224. *ful of*] *foul* T. *wedes*] *wed* M.

225. *for sothe*] *soþliche* T. *þat*] *as* FS.

227. *chapmen*] *schepmen* S. *bote*] *but* 3if S.

229. *nose*] *muk* S.

230. *of*] *on* T; in F. *rychesse*] *riche* M. *vpon*] *of* F; *vp* KS. [*arisen* M] *ariseþ* G; *arist* PEIKT (*which is singular, whilst wexen (last line) is plural*); *wexeth* F; *wexuþ* S; *waxiþ* T.

231. *marle—donge*] *donge & with marl* S.

232. *wexeth þer-on*] *þeron wexiþ* T. *ar*] *er* T; or MEKFS. *ripe* EMIKTS] *repe* P.

233. *for soþe*] *soþly* T.

234. *norssheþ*] *norescheþ* K; *norischeþ* I; *norissheþ* T; *norissseþ* M; *nurscheþ* F. *destrueþ hit*] *hit destroyeþ* IT; *hit distriþeþ* M.

235. *For*] *And* T. *hit euere*] *euere* hit MF. *dispended*] *i-spended* MS.

236. *Worldliche* EMF] *Worldly* KT; *Worliche* P; *Wordly* S. *hym*] *hem* IT. *hit*] *hit so* F.

For yf he be fer þer-fro · ful ofte hath he drede 237

That fals folke fecche away · felonliche hus godes ;

And ȝut more hit makeþ men · meny tyme and ofte † and incites
To synegen, and to souchen · soteltees of gyle, 240 others to robbery
and murder ;

For couetyze of þat catel · to culle hem þat hit kepeþ ;

And so is meny [man] ymorþred · for hus money and
goodes,

And tho þat duden þe dede · ydampned þer-fore after, † thus causing
And he for hus harde holdynge · in helle, par aunter. the perdition
both of the

So couetise of catel · was combraunce to hem alle ; the murdered.

Lo, how pans purchasede · faire places and drede, 246

þat rote is [of] robbers · þe richesse with-ynne !

Hic explicit passus iijus de dowel.

237—241. T omits.

237. *fer*] *feer* P. *hath he*] *he haþ* I.

238. *fecche*] *wol fecche* E ; *wolden fecche* M.

239. *tyme*] *a tyme* F ; *tymes* I.

240. *To*] *F om.* *synegen*] *senegen* F ; *synwen* E ; *synewe* S ; *synnen* M ;
cf. Pass. xi. 25, 26. *souchen*] *sowche*
boþe F ; *sewe* M ; *sotile* S ; *sechen* K.
soteltees] *sotiltees* I ; *sotultees* F ; *so-*
tiltes (*sic*) M.

241. *þat* (1)] *S om.* *hem*] *him*
MFSIK.

242. [*man* MSIKTEG] *a man* F ;
men P. *hus*] *M om.* *and*] *and his*
MSIT ; and for his K.

243. *þe*] *þat* I. *þe dede*] *K om.*

244. *holdynge* MITFSEKG] *appar-*
ently heldynge P. *helle*] *helle pyne*
T. *par aunter*] *peraduenture* E.

245. *of*] & K. *combraunce*] *a*
comeraunce E.

246. *pans*] *pens* MI ; *penys* T.
purchasede] *purchasþ* MIT. *faire*] *grete* S. *drede*] *brode* S.

247. [*of* MITFSKG] *PE om.* *richesse*] *grete richesse* S. *After* l. 247 M *adds*
—For he þat gadereþ so his good ·
god no þyng preiseþ.

COLOPHON. ITM *omit.* *Hic*] *ES*
om. *KF have*—Explicit passus ter-
cius.

PASSUS XIV. (DO-WEL IV.)

Incipit passus quartus [de dowel].

† But poverty
may walk in
peace, unrobbed.

AC wel worth pouerte! · for he may walke vn-
robbed

Among pilours in pees · yf pacience hym folwe.
Oure prynce iesu pouerte chees · and hus aposteles alle,
And ay þe lenger þei lyueden · the lasse good þei
hadde; 4

† 2 Cor. vi. 10.

Tanquam nichil habentes, & omnia possidentes.

† Abraham and
Job were very
rich.

3ut men [rat þat] abraam and Iob · were wonder ryche,
And out of numbre þo men · menye meobles hadden.

† Yet Abraham
suffered great
loss, when
Abimelech took
away his wife
(Gen. xx.).

Abraám for al hus good · hadde muche teene,
In gret pouerte [he] was yput; · a pryns, as hit were, 8
By-nom hym ys housewif · and heeld here hym-self,
And abraám nat hardy · ones to letten hym,
Ne for brightnesse of here beaute · here spouse to be
by-knowe.

TITLE. *So in* KF; *M prefixes*
Hic; *Incipit passus quartus* PE; *to*
which S *adds de eodem*; *Passus*
tercius de Dowel I; *T om.*

1. *Ac*] *As (wrongly)* I; *But T.*
vnrobbed] *vnrobbede* P.

3. *chees*] *ches* MIESKT.

4. *þei* (1)] *þat þei* F. *Tanquam,*
&c.] *M om.* *&—possidentes*] *1KT*
om.

5. 3ut] & 3it F. [rat þat MKT]
ret þat I; reedith þat FG; *miswritten*
þat of PE; *see* Pass. iv. 410, 416.
men—þat] *ret me þat* I; *rat me þat*
T; S om

7. *Abraam*] *Ac* *abraham* F. *al—*
good] *his (sic)* I; *his aunte* T.
muche] *mykel* M; *muchel* F.

8. *In*] *For in* IT. [*he* MIKFST]
PE *om.* *yput*] *i-put* M; *put* KTFS;
putte I. *pryns*] *prisoun* M (*wrongly*).

9. *By-nom—housewif*] *A king bi-*
nom him his wijf M. *I omits the*
last half of lines 9 and 10; *T omits*
last half of l. 9.

10. *hardy*] *so hardy* F. *hardy*
ones] *onus hardy* S; *ones so hardy* T.
to—hym] *him to lette* F.

11. *spouse—by-knowe*] *spousehod to*
beknowe T.

And for he suffrede and seide nouht · our Lord sente † God helped
tokne, 12 Abraham for his
patience.

That þe kyng eride · to abraám mercy,

And deliuerede hym hus wif · with muche welthe after.

And also Iob þe gentel · what ioie hadde he on erthe, † Job also lost
How bittere he hit bouhte · as þe book telleþ ! 16 his wealth ;

And for he songe in hus sorwe · ‘*si bona [accepimus] a domino,* † Job ii. 10.

Dere-worthe dere God ! · do we so *mala,*

Al hus sorwe to solas · þorgh þat songe turnede,

And Iob by-cam a iolif man · and al hus ioie newe. 20 † but God re-
stored it him,
because of his
patience.

Lo, how pacience in here pouerte · these patriarkes
releuede,

And brouhte hem al aboue · þat in bale roteþe.

As greyn þat lyth in þe greot · and þorgh grace, atte † Abraham and
Job were like
grain that grows
up at last.

Spryngeþ vp and spredeþ · so spedde þe fader abraám,

And al-so þe gentel Iob ; · here ioie hath non ende. 25

Ac leueþ nouht, 3e lewede men · þat ich lacke riches, † Yet I blame
not riches.

Thauh ich preise pouerte þus · and preoue hit by
ensamples

Worthiour, as by holy writ · and wise philosopheres.

Bothe two [þeþ] goode · be 3e ful certayn, 29 † Riches and

12. *he*] E *om.*

13. *eride*] *eride* þo F. *to*] S *om.*
mercy] of merci MF. I *has*—þat þe
kynde (*sic*) cried him mercy þat
time; T *has*—þat kynde comely
kyng · criede hym mercy.

14. *welthe*] Ioye S.

15. *And*] K *om.* And also] IT *om.*

16. *How*] And how IT. *bouhte*] *aboghte* IT; *abouht* K; *bouht* also F.

17. T *has*—And for he suffride so
mekly · his sorewe ouerþede. *And*] *Ac* M. *in*] K *om.* [*accepimus* MK
FETG] *accipiam* (?) P; *suscepimus* S.

18. *dere*] and dere I.

19. *to—songe*] þorw þat song · to
solace hit M.

20. *a*] as T. *iolif*] *iolif* MF; gen-
til S. *al*] E *om.*

21. *in here*] and IT. *these*] thees P.

22. *roteþe*] so in all.

23. *As*] As a F. *þe*] IEF S *om.*
greot] grete E; gret M; grut KSF;
grounde IT.

24. *vp*] IT *om.* *spedde*] sprad F;
dude M. *þe—abraam*] abraham þe
goode F.

25. *al-so*] IT *om.*

26. *3e*] IKT *om.*

27. *ensamples*] ensample ES.

28. *as*] M *om.*

29. [þeþ ES] ben MIT; beon K;
be F; *miswritten* but P. *goode*] *ful*
goode FS. *ful*] wel T.

poverty are
both good,

And lyues þat our lorde loueþ · and large weyes to
heuene.

† but poverty
often reaches
heaven first.

Ac þe poure pacient · purgatorye passeþ

Rapere þan þe ryche · þauh thei renne at ones. 32

† If a merchant
and a messenger
reach a place
together,

For yf a marchaunt and a messenger · metten to-gederes,
And scholde wenden o way · where both mosten
reste,

And rekene byfore reson · a resonable acounte,
What one haþ, what anoþer haþ · and what hy hadde
boþe, 36

† the merchant's
business will
occupy him long;

The marchante mote nede be lette · lengere þen þe
messagere ;

For þe parcels of hus paper · and oþer pryuey dettes
Wol lette hym, as ich leyue · the lengthe of a myle.

† but the mes-
senger can soon
shew his errand.

The messenger doþ na more · bote [with] hus mouth
telleþ 40

Hus [erande], and hus [lettere] sheweþ · and is a-non
delyuered.

And thauh þei wende by þe wey · tho two to-gederes,

† If the mes-
senger crosses a
wheat-field, no
one stops him ;

Thauh þe messenger make hus wey · a-mydde þe
whete,

Wole no wys man wroth be · ne hus wed take ; 44

30. *And*] As E. *weyes*] wey T.
to] ȝeueþ to M.

31. *þe*] E *om.* *purgatorye*] þe
purgatory I.

32. *thei*] ȝe F.

33. *metten*] so PIMK ; mette F ;
meten ET ; mete S.

34—37. E *omits.* In P, these
lines are written in the margin, but
by the same scribe ; Whitaker omits
them.

34. *o way*] on wai M ; away S.
mosten reste MIKS] moste reste FG ;
muste resten T ; *written most . . rest*
P (the margin of the leaf being cut
off).

35. *a* MKFT] cut off in PI.
acounte MIKF] acompte T ; mis-
written *acountes* P. *a—acounte*]
acounte þat is resonable S.

36. *what*] & what S. *anoþer*] oþer
MTKF ; þat oþur S. *haþ*] T *om.*
hy] þei MIKTFs.

37. *be*] by S. *lette*] I-lette I ; let
MKFST. *þe messagere*] þat oþur F.

38. *þe*] S *om.* *paper*] paupere E.

39. *leyue*] leue MKSET ; leuee F.

40. *The*] Þere þe KT. *doþ*] he
dooth F. [*with* EIMKFST] P *om.*

41. [*erande*] erende IK ; arnede
(sic) T ; lettere PE ; lettire S ; lettire
F ; letteres M. [*lettere*] lettire KT ;
erande E ; eraunde S ; ernde PM ;
arande F.

42. *wende*] so PEKFT ; wend S ;
wenten M ; wente I. *tho*] þei MF ;
þe E.

43. *amydde*] amyde P ; amonge T.
whete] sayre whete IT.

44. *wroth be*] be wroth ITKFS.

Ys non haiwarde yhote · hus wed for to take ;

Necessitas non habet legem.

Ac yf þe marchaunt make hus way · ouere menne
corne,

† but the hay-
ward would stop
the merchant,
and take a pledge
of him.

And þe haywarde happe · with hym for to mete, 47

Oper hus hatt oper hus [hode] · opere elles hus gloues

The marchaunt mot for-go · oper moneye of hus porse,

And 3ut be lett, as ich leyue · for þe lawe askep

Marchauns for here merchaundise · in meny place to
tollen. 51

3ut þauh þei wenden on way · as to wynchestre fayre,

† If both go to
Winchester fair,
the merchant
goes the slowest ;

The marchaunt with hus merchaundise · may nat go so
swithe

As þe messenger may · ne with so mochel ese.

For þat on bereþ bote a boxe · a breuet þer-ynne,

Ther þe marchaunt ledeþ a male · with meny kynne
þynges, 56

† for he has a
heavy box, and
is in dread of
robbers,

And dredeþ to be ded þere-fore · and he in derke mete

With robbours and reuers · þat riche men dispoilen ;

Ther þe messenger is ay murye · hus mouthe ful of
songes, † whilst the
messenger is
light of heart.

And leyueþ for hus letteres · þat no wight wol hym
greue. 60

45. *Ys*] Ne T. *yhote*] hote I; is
hoten T. *to*] K om. *take*] nyme M.
Most MSS. agree in making lines 44
and 45 end nearly alike; but ITKFG
insert *Necessitas—legem* between
them; M omits this quotation alto-
gether.

46. *yf*] & S. *menne*] so PIK;
mennes F; menes M; menis T; men
ES. *corne*] corne P.

48. [*hode* EK] hod MG; hood
ITFS; hed (!) P. *hus* (3)] K om.

49. *mot*] he moot F.

50. *3ut*] K om. *lett*] i-letted M.
leyue] leue ITMKSE; leue F.

51. *in*] E om. *place*] places
MEFS. *to*] KFS om. *tollen* TESH
tolle IMF; tullen P; tellen K.

52. *3ut*] & 3it IFT. *þauh*] þer I;

E om. *on*] o IK; a FT; þe M.

53. *may*] he may F.

54. *mochel*] mychel ES; muchel
FT; mykel M; moche I.

55. *þat on*] þe one K.

56. *ledeþ*] let IT; lat KF. *meny*
kynne] many skenis T.

58. *reuers*] with reuers P; but
MKFSET omit with. *þat*] & F.

59. *ay*] euer S. *hus*] & his FT.

60. So PEMIK. The alliteration
is imperfect, unless we put *lede* for
wight, as in T; F has—

& leueth for his lettres · ay to be
welcome,

& þat no wigt wole him greue ·
walkyng on weies.

S has the same, but with euer for ay,
and omitting & before þat.

† Yet the merchant's wealth may secure for him a safe passage.

Ac ȝut, myghte þe merchaunt · þorgh monye and oþer
ȝiftes,

Haue hors and hardy men ; · þauh he mette þeoues,
Wolde non suche a-sailen hym · for hem þat hym
folweþ,

As saffliche passe as the messenger · and as sone at hus
hostil. 64

3e wyten wel, 3e wyse men · what this is to mene,
The marchaunt is no more to mene · bote men þat ben
ryche

† The merchant means the rich who keep the ten commandments,

Aren a-countable to crist · and to þe kyng of heuene,
That holden mote þe heye weye · euene [þe] ten
hestes,

Boþe louye and lene · þe leelle and þe vnleelle, 69
And haue reuthe, and releue · with hus grete richesse,

† and assist the wretched, giving tithes of their goods,

By hus power, alle manere men · in meschief yfalle ;
Fynde beggars bred · backes for þe colde, 72

Tythen here goodes treweliche · a tol, as hit semeþ,
That oure lord lokeþ after · of eche a lyf þat wynneþ
With-oute wyles oþer wrong · oþer wommen atte
stuwes ;

† and paying men's debts.

And ȝut more, to make pees · and quyte menne dettes,
Boþe spele and spare · to spene vpon þe needful, 77

61. *Ac*] & EF. *monye*] his money
IT. *monye and*] many S. *oþer*] F om.

ȝiftes EIMFKS] ȝeftes P; ȝeftis T.
63. *hem þat*] suche as KT.
folweþ] folwede M.

64. *As*] And as IT. *saffliche*] saf S.
passe] IK om. *the*] F om. *at*] in S.
hostil] hostel MK; ostel EFT.

66. *is—mene*] meeneth na more F.

67. *Aren*] Þei beþ E; Aren alle
IKT. *and—þe*] þat is M.

68. *þe*] þan (sie) E. *euene*] euene
to MS. [þe IMKFTG] PES om.; cf.
rubric to Pass. viii. 204.

69. *lene*] eke leene F. *þe* (1)] IT
om. *þe* (2)] ITKS om.

70. *grete*] IT om.

71. *By—power*] I om. *in*] þat

beth in F; in a S; þat in T. *yfalle*] falliþ T.

72. *Fynde*] & fynde F. *bred*] here breed F. *backes*] & cloþus S; & bakkis T. *þe*] T om.

73. *Tythen*] & tiþen FT; Teþen M.
goodes] good IT. *treweliche*] tryweliche P. *semeþ*] were FS.

74. *a*] MF om.

75. *wrong*] wronges IT. *atte*] at
þe IMST. *stuwes*] stiwes K; stuyues
E; styues MS; stewus F; stewis T.

76. *ȝut*] K om. *quyte*] to quytten
I. *menne*] so PK; mennus F;
menes M; menis T; men ES.

77. *Boþe*] And IT. *spare*] eke
spare F. *spene*] spenden M; spende
ITF. *needful*] needy F.

As crist [him]self comaundeþ · to alle cristene people,

Alter alterius onera portate, [& sic adimplebitis † Gal. vi. 2.
legem christi].

The messagers aren þe mendinans · þat lyueþ by menne
almesse,

† The messenger
means the poor,
who are less
bound to do
penance.

Beþ nat ybounde as beþ þe riche · to bothe þe two
lawes, 80

To lene ne to lere · ne lentenes to faste,

And opere pryuey penaunces · þe whiche þe preest
wot wel

That þe lawe 3eueþ leue · suche lowe folke to be ex-
cused ;

† They are ex-
cused from tithes
and various
duties.

As, none tythes to tythen · ne cloþe þe nakede, 84

Ne in enquestes to come · ne *contumax*, þauh he worche

Haly day oper holy eue · hus mete to deserue.

For yf he loueþ and by-leyueþ · as the lawe techep,

Qui crediderit & baptizatus fuerit, [saluus erit], † Mark xvi. 16.

& cetera,

Telleþ þe lord a tale · as a trewe messenger, 88

And sheweþ by seel and sitthe by lettere · with what
lord he dwelleþ,

† The poor man
who confesses
the true faith

[Knowelecheþ] hym cristene · and of holy [kirke] by-
leyue,

Ther is no lawe, as ich leyue · wol lette hym þe gate,

† will not be shut
out of heaven.

Ther god is gatwarde hym-self · and eche a gome
knoweth ; 92

78. [him MITKFSE] P om. to]
IT om. [*&—christi*] in F only.

79. messagers] messangers IT;
messenger K; massager M. aren]
ben ES. menne] see l. 76.

80. beþ F] by I; ben T; be MK;
beþ P; S om. þe (1)] 3e M. þe
(2)] KS om. two] I om. þe two] to
þe MFT.

81. lere] lerne ITK. lentenes] to
lentenens E; in lentenys T; in lenten
M; lentoun F; lente S. to] for to F.

82. þe (1)] KF om.

83. to] KT om.

84. As] Ne M. to tythen] tethe-

gen K. cloþe] to cloþe I; for to cloþe
F. þe] none M; F om.

85. enquestes] none enquestes I;
none questes M; no queste T. to]
for to F.

87. K omits. yf] T om. and] or
F. [saluus erit MF] hic saluus erit
S; PEITK om.

88. trewe] triwe P.

90. [Knowelecheþ KF] Knowe-
lechiþ T; Knewlechuþ S; Knowleche
M; Kneweleche PE. of] on MF.
[kirke I] church PEFS; chirche
MKT. byleyue] by-leueþ SF.

91. Ther is] þat S; Per nys M.

The porter of pure reuthe · may parfome þe lawe,
In þat he wilneþ and wolde · ech wight as him-self.

† A beggar's good
will is equal to a
rich man's gift.

For þe wil is as muche worth · of a wrecche beggere,
As al þat þe ryche may reyme · and ryghtfulliche
dele ;

And as muche mede · for a myte þat he offreþ 97

(221)

As þe riche man for al his moneye · and more, as by
þe godspel ;

Mark xii. 43.
Luke xxi. 3.

*Amen dico uobis, quia hec uidua paupercula
[misit plus omnibus qui miserunt in gasophi-
lacium ;]*

So þat poure pacient · is parfitest lif of alle,

183

And alle parfite preestes · to pouerte sholde drawe ;

Ps. xxxvi. 3
(Vulg.).

For *spera-in-deo* spekeþ of prestes · þat han no spend-
yng seluer, 101

Poor priests shall
not starve.

That yf þay trauaile troweliche · and tristen in god
almyghty,

Hem sholde neuere lackye lyflode · noþer lynnene
wollene.

The title þat 3e takeþ 3oure ordres by · telleþ 3e beþ
[aunaunced,] *in authority* 104

Priests should
not take money
for masses.

And needeþ nat to nyme seluer · for masses þat 3e
syngen ;

For he þat tok 3ow title · sholde take 3ow wages,

93. *reuthe*] treweþ E ; truþe K.

94. *Here eight leaves are wanting*
in F, down to xvi. 178. ech] ech a
IS ; eche a K. *night*] wy T. *him*]
miswritten hem P.

95. S *places* is *after* worth. a] I
om.

96. þat] S om. may] K om.
reyme] reome M ; rayne I ; rayme T.

97. as] also M. mede] me E.
þat] þer IT. *he offreþ*] offred S ; ich
offre E.

98. *his*] is P. as] ITS om. *Amen*
—*quia*] S om. [*misit—omnibus* E]
plus omnibus misit S ; PMIKT om.
[*qui—gasophilacium*] in S only.

99. þat] þat þe S ; T om. *par-*

fitest] parfiith M.

100. And] S om. And alle] Eche
a T. *preestes*] preste IT. *sholde*]
shulle S.

101. *spera*] speraui M. *seluer*]
siluer IET.

102. in] til E ; to M ; on T. *god*
almyghty] almyghty god I.

103. *lackye*] lacky E ; lakke IK
ST ; lacke M. *lynnene*] lynne P ; but
see ii. 18. *wollene*] wulle S.

104. *title* IMTES] titel K ; titile P.
þat] IKT om. *telleþ*] til S ; tille K.
[*aunaunced* MT] aunaunsed IKEG ;
aunaunsid S ; amanced P ; cf. B-text.

106. *title* ME] titel K ; titile P ; a
title IT ; þat title S.

Oper þe bisshop þat blessed ȝow · and enbaumedē The bishop
should pay them.
ȝoure fyngeres.

For made neuere kyng knyght · bote he hadde catel
to spene, 108

As by-fel for a knyght · oper fond hym for hus
strengþe; 104

For hit is a carful knyght · and of a caitif kynges
makyngē, A wretched
knight is he who
has no wealth.

That hath no londe ne lynage riche · ne good loos of
hus hondes. 111

The same ich seye for soþe · by suche þat ben preestes,
þat han noþer konnyngē ne kyn · bote a corone one, Priests trust
their title and
tensure for their
support.
And a title, a tale of nouht · to hus liflode, as hit were.

Vuele ben þei suffred · suche þat schenden masses
Throgh hure luþer lyuyngē · and lewede vnder
standyng! 116

A charter is chalangable · by-fore a chief Iustice,
Yf fals latyn be in [þat lettere] · þe lawe hit enpugneþ,
Oþer peynted par-entrelignarie · parcels ouer-skipped;
The gome þat so gloseþ chartres · a goky he is yholden.
So is he a goky, by god · þat in the godspel failleþ, 121
In masse oþer in matynes · maketh eny defeaute;

Qui offendit in uno, in omnibus est reus.

James ii. 10.

107. *blessed*] blesseþ M; blesse
(*sic*) E. *and*] or K. *enbaumedē*] enbaumeþ M.

108. *knyght*] no knyȝt IT; ne
knyȝht K. *spene*] dispende M.

109. *by-fel* KS] bi-fulle M; befelle
I; befel T; hit byfelle E; by-feel P.
fond] so PIMS; fonde EK.

110. *hit is*] ȝif (*sic*) M. *is*] S om.
and] þat (*sic*) E; M om. *caitif*] carful MS.

111. *no*] noȝþer I; noþer T. *loos*] los MT.

112. *þat ben*] as beþ S.

113. *han*] I om. *kyn*] kiþ T. *co-
rone*] croune ITE; crone K; crowne
M.

114. *title*] titile P.

115. K omits. *Vuele*] Euele MT;
Iuel E. *þat*] as S. *schenden* EMS]
shenden T; shynden P. *masses*] þe
masse T.

118. [*þat lettere* MIKSEG] þe let-
tre T; þe letteres P. *enpugneþ*] in-
pugneþ S; empugned I.

119. *par-entrelignarie*] or enter-
lyned M.

120. *so gloseþ*] gloseþ so IT. *goky*] gouky E; gokow S. *a—he*] for a
goky is T. *he is*] is he K.

121. *he*] it IT; hit K. *goky*] gouky E; gokow S.

122. *In*] Oþer in T. *In—in*] Or
in a messe or in a L S omits the
rubric and l. 123.

And ouer-skipers al-so · in þe sauter seith dauid,

Ps. xlv. 7, 8
(Vulg.).

*Psallite Deo nostro psallite, quia rex terre deus ;
psallite sapienter.*

The bishop shal be blamed · by-fore god, as ich leyue,
þat coroneþ suche clerkes · as for godes knyghtes, 125

185

Of unlit priests.

þat conneþ nat *sapienter* · noþer synge ne rede.

Ac neyþer is al blameles · þe bisshop ne þe chapeleyn ;
For *ignorantia non excusat* · as ich haue herd in
bookes."— 128

† Thus did Reck-
lessness argue
with Clergy.

Thus rechelessnesse in a rage · a-resonede clergie,
And scornede scripture · þat meny skyles shewede,

Nature bad him
behold the won-
ders of the world.

Til þat kynde cam · clergie to helpen,
And in þe myrour of myddel-erde · made hym eft to loke,
To knowe by ech creature · kynde to louye. 133

I saw the sun, the
sea, and the sand,

And seih þe sonne and þe see · and þe sand after,
Wher þat briddes and bestes · by here makes ȝeden,

beasts, worms,
and fowls,
man and his
mate,

Wilde wormes in wodes · and wonderful foules 137
With fleckede fetheres · and of fele colours ;
Man and hus make · ich myghte see boþe,

186

poverty and
plenty,
bliss and bale.

Pouerte and plente · bothe pees and werre, 140
Blisse and biter bale · bothe ich seih at ones ;
And how þat men mede token · and mercy refuseden.

123. *S omits.* And] For IT. *quia*] qui est ME; quoniam I. *quia—sapienter*] S om. *psallite sapienter* M] psallite IT; E om. (represented in PK by the abbreviation s.s., where s = sallite, for psallite).

124. *blamed*] i-blamed M. T omits l. 124, and runs ll. 125 and 126 into one.

125. *coroneþ*] crouneþ IE; croneþ K; crownen M. *clerkes as*] IT om.

126. *sapienter*] o sapiencia M; T om.

127. *neyþer*] noþer E; neuer neyþer I; nere neyþer T. *is*] buþ M. al] IT om. þe (2)] his S.

128. *herd*] i-herd ME.

129. *a-resonede*] a-ratede S.

130. *scornede scripture*] scripture scornede I; scripture scornide it T.

132. *myddel*] mydel P. *erde*] erþe IST. *eft*] ofte T; S om. *to*] KT om.

133. *ech*] eche a I; iche a T.

134. *by-holdynge*] by-holde K; bihelde I; & beheld T. al] T om.

135. *seih*] si M; say S; sithe I. *sand*] londe E.

136. *Wher*] And where IKT. *ȝeden* EMS] ȝeeden P; ȝeoden K; þey ȝede IT.

138. *fetheres* EIMKS] fetthers P.

139. *see*] i-seo M.

141. *biter*] IT om. *seih*] si M; seye I.

142. *men*] I om. *mede*] me (!) S.

Reson ich seih sothliche · suwen alle bestes

I saw that Reason
ruled all beasts;

In etynge, [in] drynkyng · in gendrynge of kynde ; 144

After cours of concepcion · non tok kepe of oþer

As when þei hadde ruteyed ; · a-non þei resten after.

Maules drowen hem to maules · on morwenynge by
hem-self,

males withdrew
from females
after breeding
time.

And femeles to femeles · herdeyed and drow. 148

Ther ne was kow ne kow-kynde · þat conceyued
hadde,

That [wolde bere] after bole · ne bor after sowe.

Ther was no [kynne] kynde · þat conceyued hadde,

That ne lees þe lykyng of lust · of flesch, as hit were,

Saue man and hus make ; · and þer-of me wondrede.

† Men alone
know no
moderation.

For out of reson þei ryde · and rechelesliche taken on,

As in durne dedes · bothe drynkyng and elles.

Briddes ich by-helde · in bosshes maden nestes, 156

I saw birds
making their
nests, and
wondered.

Hadde neuere weye wit · to worche þe leste.

Ich hadde wonder at wham · and wher þat þe pye

143. *Reson*] And resoun I. *seih*] here written sauh P (but see ll. 135, 141); si M. *sothliche*] sothliche P. I omits last half of l. 143, and first half of l. 144.

144. [in KES] and PTM. *gendrynge*] engendryng MKS; engendurer I; engendrure T.

145. *cours*] þe cours M. *kepe*] hede M.

146. *As*] And T. *ruteyed*] roteyed I; roteide K; yrotied ET; i-roteied M. *after*] ayþer I.

147. *Maules*] so PEKSG; Males MIT (twice). *on*] in M; a T; and (!) I. *morwenynge*] mornying I; morewnynges M; morwnynges E; morows S. *hem*] hym S.

148. *herdeyed*] herdyede S; herdeiede M; herdyng E; herdede K; ferdide T; ferdedede (sic) I; herknede G. *and*] an P. *drow*] rowe E.

149, 150. K omits (but the lines are added in a much later hand). *ne was*] nas E.

150. [*wolde bere* T] wuld bere S; wolte beere (in a much later hand) K; belwede M; beere P; beþer (!) E; not in I; cf. B-text. *bole—sowe*] bore · ne sow aftur bore (wrongly) S.

151. *was*] ne was KT. [*kynne* MES] kyne K; kyn T; kynde P.

152. *ne* MEKST] apparently no P. *lees*] so PEK; les MST. *þe*] S om. *lust* MIKST] loust PE.

154. *ryde*] redde E. *rechelesliche*] richelich E. *taken*] token IMEST; toke K.

155. *durne*] derne MKST. *bothe*] apparently bethe P; boþe in T; K om.

156. *by-helde*] by-heelde P. *bosshes*] bussches I; busches EKS; buskes M; buskis T. *nestes*] neestes P.

157. *weye*] we E; wie K; wiz T; withg M. *neuere weye*] we neuer E.

158. *at—wher*] wher · and at wham P (but the rest have the arrangement given; cf. B-text). *and—þat*] whan and where I.

Lernede legge styckes · þat leyen in here neste;
 Ther is no wryght, as ich wene · sholde worche here
 nest to paye. 160

Yf eny mason þer-to · makede a molde
 With alle here wyse castes · wonder me þynkeþ!

Some birds hid
 their eggs.

And ȝut ich meruailled more · menye of þo bryddes
 Hudden and heleden · durneliche here egges, 164
 For no foul sholde hem fynde · bote hus fere and
 hym-self.

Some bred upon
 trees.

And some treden, ich tok kepe · and on trees bredden,
 And brouhten forth here bryddes · al aboute þe grounde.

167

In mareis and in mores · in myres and in wateres 168
 Dompynge dyueden; · “deere god,” ich sayde,
 “Wher hadden þese wilde suche witt · and at what
 scole?”

I observed the
 peacocks.

And whan þe pocok caukede · þer-of ich took kepe,
 How vn-corteisliche þe cok · hus kynde forth strenede,
 And ferliche hadde of hus fairnesse · and of hus foule
 ledene. 173

159. *Lernede*] *Lernede* to MST; apparently *Lornede* P. *in*] on IMK. *here*] *heore* M; *his* K. *neste* EIKSG] nest MT; *neestes* P (*but see next line*).

160. *is*] *nys* MT. *wryght*] *wyzt* S; *wyt* ET; *withg* M.

161, 162. *I has*— . . . *masoun* made a molde *þer-to* · moche wonder me þynkeþ; as in B-text. *T has the same, beginning* ȝif any masoun.

161. *þer-to makede*] *þer-to maken* E; *make þer-to* M.

162. *here*] so PK; *hure* S; *his* E; *hise* M; (*here castes* = *her contrivances*).

163. *ȝut*] S *om.* *ich meruailled*] *ich merueile þe* E; *me meruailth* I; *me merueillide* T. *þo*] *þe* IMKT.

164. *Hudden*] *Hidden* KT. *heleden*] *hileden* I. *durneliche*— *egges*] *derworþliche hure egges* M; *derneliche hure nestus & eggus* S; *here egges dernely* IT.

165. *hem*] *it* IT; K *om.* *hus*] *hire* T. *hym*] *hire* T.

167. *al*] & *alle* S.

168. *mareis*] *maries* E; *mariis* M. and (1)] M *om.* *mores*] *moores* I; *meores* K. *myres*] *medes* E. *in wateres*] *watres* M.

169. *Dompynge*] *Dumpynges* M; *Doppynge* E; *Dompus* S. *dyueden*] *dyuyden* P; *dyuede* IT; *diuyde* K; *dyuede* in M.

170. *þese* MKS] *þees* P; *þis* IE; *þise* T.

171. *whan*] *how* IT. *ich took*] *tok* y SIT; *toke* y K.

172. *þe*] *þat* I. *hus*] *his* IMKSET; *miswritten* hud P. *strenede* MIK] *better than* *strenide* T; *strende* P; *streynde* E; *strewede* (*put for streuene, a mistake for strenede*) S.

173. *ferliche hadde*] *ferkoyed* (!) I; *ferliede* T. *ledene* MKG] *lidun* S; *leedene* P; *leodene* E; *lenede* (*miswritten for ledene*) I; *lenide* T.

And siþþe ich loked on þe see · and so forþ on þe Then I looked at
the sea and stars,
sterres,

Meny selcouth ich seiþ · aren nouht to seggen nouthe ;

Ne what on floures in feldes · and [of] hure faire the flowers, and
the grass.
coloures, 176

How out of greet and of gras · grewe so meny huwes,

Somme soure and somme swete · selcouþ me þouhte ;

Of here kynde and of here colours · to carpen hit were
to longe.

Ac þat þat [moste] meuede me · and my mod chaungede, Reason ruled all
beasts except
man.
Was þat ich seiþ reson · suwen alle bestes 181

Saue man and mankynde ; · meny tymes me þouhte,

Reson rewelede hem nat · noþer riche ne poure.

Then ich aresonede reson · and right til hym ich seide, I asked Reason
why this was so.
[“Ich haue wonder in my witt · so wis as þow art holde,

Wher-for and why · so wide as þow regnest, 186

[þat þow ne ruelest raþer · renkes þan oþer beestes.

For ich see noone so ofte sorfeten · sopliche so man- † “For I observe
none so immoder-
ate as mankind,
kynde ; 188

In mete out of mesure · and meny tymes in drynke,

In wommen, in wedes · and in wordes boþe

174. þe (2)] I om.

175. selcouth] selcoupes MKT.
ich] ic P; but see l. 174. seiþ] si
M; say S. aren] ben E; beþ S.
nouht] none T. seggen] sayn E;
seie M; sey T.

176. what on] so PEIKST; what
of M. feldes] felde MIT. [of
ITMKEG] on S; P om.

177. How] And how IT. greet]
so PK; greet E; gret M; greut T;
grut S; grith I. of (2)] M om.
grewe] groweþ ME; growe IT.

178. Somme] And some IKT. sel-
couþ] selcouhþ P; see l. 175.

179. of] K om. colours] colour
IT. to] IT om.

180. þat þat] þat at K; þe (sic) I;
þis T. [moste I] most SKT; moost
G; man (sic) E; PM om.

181. Was] Whanne T. seiþ] si M.

182. tymes] time ME.

183. rewelede] reuled E; reulede
S; rewlide T; rulede K; reule (sic)
M; reued rewelede (sic) I.

184. aresonede] resoned I. til] to
ST. ich] MT om.

185. art TMS] ert EK; miswritten
herte P. holde] i-holde M; holden
T.

186. so] as IKT.

187. ne] I om. ruelest] rulest
MK; reulest S; reweledest I; rewel-
ist T.

188. For] IKTS om. sorfeten]
sorfete K; surfaiten T; surfete MS;
sorfetep G; apparently forfeten PEI
(but alliteration decides it). so (2)]
as S.

189. tymes] time M.

190. wordes] werkes M.

Thei ouerdon hit day and nyght · and so doþ noon
opere. 191

† although man-
kind resembles
thee more than
all other
animals."

Bestes ruwelen hem al by reson · and renkes ful fewe.
And þer-fore meruaileþ me · for man, as in [makynge,]
Is most yliche þe · in wit and in werkes,

188

Reason would
not tell me.

[Whi he ne loueþ þy lore · and lyueþ as þow techest ?"
And reson aresonede me · and seide, "recche þe neuere
Whi ich suffre oper nat suffre :"— · "certes," ich seide,
"Ech a seg for hym-self · salamon ous techeth ; 198

Ecclus. xi. 9.

De re que te non molestat, noli certare."

"Who is more
long-suffering
than God ?"

"Ho suffreþ more þan God ?" quap he · "no gome, as
ich leyue !

He myght a-mende in a mynt-while · al þat amys
stondes ; 200

Ac he suffreþ, in ensauple · þat we sholde alle suffren.
Ys no vertue so feyr · of value ne of profit,

As ys suffrance souereynliche · so hit be for godes loue.
And so witnesseþ þe wyse · and wysseþ þe frenshe, 204

Patience is a fair
virtue.

*Bele uertue est suffraunce · mal dire est petite ueniaunce ;
Bien dire e bien souffrir · fait ly souffrable a bien uenir.*

191. noon] nat I ; not T. opere] oper bestis T.

192. Bestes] pey IT. ruwelen] ruelen EKS ; rulen M ; rewele I ; rewle T. and] ac I ; but T.

193—195. I has—

And perfore merueileth me · for
man is most yliche þe

Of wille and of werkes · why he
ne loueth þy lore ;

T has the same, except lyk for yliche
þe, and wyt for wille.

193. [makynge KS] makynge ME ;
mankynde PG.

194. Is EITKMS] His P. yliche] i-lik M ; lyk T. þe] þo K ; T om.
in (1)] of IMKT ; S om. nit] witt
P ; wordes E. in (2)] of IMKST.
werkes] werkus boþe S.

195. ne] S om. lyueþ—techest]
leueþ þi techyng M.

197. ich (2)] he MIKT ; but ich

seems quite right.

198. seg] man M. noli] nolite
KT ; noli te I.

199. suffreþ] suffred S.

200. a] K om. mynt] so PET ;
mynte IS ; myn K ; myte M.

201. alle suffren] soffren alle I ;
suffre alle T.

202. of (1)] ne of IT. of—profit]
ne of profit neuer þe mo S. of (2)]
I om.

203. As] So IKT.

204. witnesseþ] wittnesseþ P. þe
(1)] wel T ; IK om. wysseþ] wisse
S.

205. petite] petit MT ; pety K.

206. souffrir] suffrier I ; soffreire
K ; suffer PTMEG ; but souffrir seems
the best form. ly] luy IKT ; le M.
uenir IT] venier M ; veneir K ; uener
PEG.

For-þi," quap reson, "ich rede the · rewele þi tonge
euere ;

And er þow lakke eny lyf · loke ho is to preise. 208

For is no creature vnder cryst · þat can hym-selue make ; No creature can
make himself.

And yf cristene creatures · couthen make hem-selue,

Eche lede wolde be lacles · leyf þow non opere !

Man was mad of suche matere · he may nat wel a-sterne

189

That som tymes hym tit · to folwen hus kynde ; 213

Caton a-cordeþ her-with · *nemo sine crimine uiuit.*"

Cato ; Distich.

i. 5.

Tho cauhte ich colour a-non · and comsed to be
ashamed,

Then I awoke,

And awaked þer-wip ; · wo was me þenne, 216

and was very
sorry to dream no
more.

That ich ne hadde ymet more · so murye as ich slepte,

And sayde a-non to my-self · "slepyng, ich hadde
grace

To wite what dowel ys · ac wakyng neure !"

And þenne was þer a wiȝt · what he was ich nuste :— Then saw I one,

"What ys dowel?" quap þat wiȝt · "y-wys, syre,"

ich seyde,

221

"To see inuche and suffren al · certes, syre, ys dowel."

"Haddest þow suffred," he seide · "slepyng þo þow
were,

who rebuked me
for my im-
patience.

þow sholdest haue knowe þat cleregye can · and more
conceyued þorwe reson. 224

207. *For-þi*] For-why M. *the*
rewele] þow reule I.

208. *ho*] who-so K.

209. *is no*] y not S. *creature*] *curatour* T (*wrongly*).

210. *And yf*] For and M ; And K. *cristene creatures*] creatures cristene IT.

211. *Eche*] Eche a MK ; Ech a I ;
Iche a T. *wolde*] wolle S. *lede*—
lacles] wolde lede lacks (*sic*) E.

212. *suche*] suche a KT.

213. *tymes*] time MT. *tit*] betyt
I ; ne betit T ; tid E.

214. *her-with*] þer-wip MK ;
kyndely þerwip T.

215. *ich*] y a S.

216. *wo*] and wo I.

217. *ymet*] met KT ; mete S.

218. *ich hadde*] hadde y ST ;
had i I.

220. *wiȝt* EI] wiȝt K ; withg M ;
wiȝ T ; whiȝt P ; *so in l.* 221. *nuste*] *nyste* IT ; ne wiste M.

221. *What*] þat M. *ich*] he MK
(*wrongly*).

222. *syre*] þat S ; IT *om.*

223. *suffred*] suffrede P ; i-suffred
M. *þo*] þaw M.

224. *knowe*] i-knowe M. *and*—
þorwe] þat conseued more þan I ; &
conceyued more þourȝ KT.

190

For reson wolde haue reherced to þe · ryght as cleregie
seide ;

Ac for þyn entermetyng · her art þow for-sake :

Cf. Prov. x. 19.

*Philosophus fuisses, si tacuisses; et alibi:
Locutum me aliquando penituit, tacuisse
nunquam.*

"Adam, while he
held his peace,
was in Paradise.

Adam, whiles he spak nat · hadde paradys at wylle ;
Ac whanne he mamelede a-boute mete · and musede for
to knowe 228

The wisdomē and þe wit of God · he was putte out of
blisse.

Ryght so ferde reson by þe · for þi rude speche,
And for þow woldest wyte why · of resones pryuete.

For thy pride
and presumption
Reason refused
thee.

For pruyde and presompeion · of þy parfit lyuynge 232
Reson refusede þe · and wolde nat reste with the,
Ne cleregie of hus connyngē · kepeþ þe nat shewe.

Shame brings
amendment.

For shal neuere, er shame come · a shrewe wel be
chasted ;

If a drunken man
fall into a ditch,
let him lie there.

For let a dronken daffe · in a diche falle, 236
Let hym lygge, lok nat [on] hym · til hym luste
aryse ;

And þauh reson rebuke hym þenne · reccheþ he neuere,
Of clergie ne of kynde witt · counteþ he nat a russhe ;

225. M *omits.* to] IKT *omit.*

226. Ac] T *om.* her] þer E. art
MKST] ert PE. art þow] artow I.
S *has* — Si tacuisses, philosophus
fuisses; Me aliquando locutum fuisse
penituit, siluisse nunquam. me] est
(*wrongly*; for esse) M.

OBS. One leaf lost in G, down to
xv. 40.

227. whiles] þe whiles IT; while
M. nat] nout M. at] att P.

228. whanne] wanne P. mame-
lede] momelede S. and] he T. for]
T *om.*

229. wit] witt P.

230. ferde] fariþ T. rude] proude
M.

231. woldest rye] wost ywite (*sic*)

E. of—pryuete] resones preuede
(*sic*) I; resoun is preuyte T.

232. For] IT *om.* and] or IT.

233. wolde] wul S.

234. hus] E *om.* þe] I *om.* nat]
not to T.

235. wel] K *om.* chasted] ychasted
EK. be chasted] chaste IT.

236. diche] dike I.

237. Let MKST] Late I; Leet P.
[on IMKST] in PE. luste] liste ET;
luste to M; lust to IS. aryse] rise I.

238. And] For IMKST. rebuke
IMKST] rebuky P. he] 3e S.

239. Of] Ne of IT. ne] & E.
counteþ] acounteþ MS. he] I *om.*
russhe] rische EKS; ruyssche M;
ressche I; risshe T.

To blame hym oþer to bete hym penne · ich halde hit
bote synne. 240

Ac when neede nymeþ hym vp · a-non he ys a-shamed,
And penne wot he wher-fore · and whi he is to blame."

When he recovers,
shame tells him
his fault."

"3e seggeþ soþ, by my soule," quap ich · "ich haue
seyen hit ofte,

"You blame me,"
I said, "for re-
buking Reason."

[þer] smyt no þynge so smerte · ne smelleþ so foule 244
As shame ; þer he sheweþ hym · ech man shoneþ hus
companye.

Whi 3e worden to me þus · was for ich aresonede
reson."

"3e, certes," quap he, "þat is soþ"— · and shop hym to "Yes," he replied.
walke,

And ich a-roos vp ryght with þat · and reuerencede
hym fayre, 248

Then I prayed
him to tell me
his name.

And yf hus wil were · he wolde hus name telle ?

Hic explicit passus quartus de dowel.

240. oþer] K om. hym (2)] M om.
halde] ne holde T. bote] but a MS.

241. Ac] And M; But T. a-
shamed] a-shamede P.

243. seggeþ] seien M. soule] selfe
I. seyen] Isey E; iseize MT; y-seie
K; sey S.

244. [þer IMKST] Her PE; cf.
B-text. ne] & T.

248. ich] S om. a-roos] a-ros
MKS; arros (sic) I. vp ryght] ryght
vp PT; but the rest transpose the
words; cf. B-text.

249. name] tale K. he—name] his
name he wolde M.

COLOPHON. IMT om. Hic] EKS
om. de dowel] KS om.

PASSUS XV. (DO-WEL V.)

Incipit passus quintus [de dowel.]

192

"I am Imaginative," he said.

"Ich am ymaginatif," quap he · "ydel was ich neuere,

þauh [ich sitte] by my-self · suche is my grace ;

"I have followed thee for more than forty years,

Ich haue yfolwed þe in faip · more þan fourty wynter,

And wissede þe ful ofte · what dowel was to mene, 4

And counsailede þe for cristes sake · no creature to by-gyle,

† and have instructed thee never to waste speech or time.

Noþer to lye noþer to lacke · ne lere þat is defendid,

Ne to spille speche · as to speke an ydel,

And no tyme to [tyne] · ne trewe þyng to teenen ; 8

Lowe þe to lyue forth · in þe lawe of holychurche ;

þenne dost þow wel, with-oute drede · ho can do bet, no forse !

† Clerkes that know everything can do better.

Clerkes þat connen al · ich hope þei conne do bettere ;

Ac hit suffiseþ to be saued · and to be suche as ich tauhte. 12

TITLE. Incipit passus quintus PE ; M prefixes Hic ; MSK add de dowel ; Passus quartus de Dowel IT.

2. [ich sitte] i sitte MT ; ich sitt E ; I sete I ; y sete KS ; ysete P.

3. yfolwed EM] yfolwede P ; folwed IK ; folwyd S ; folewid T.

5. counsailede] i-conseiled M ; counsailede P. for] ofte for S.

6. noþer] ne EIKT. ne] to I.

7. Ne to] Noþur S. speche] speeches E ; no speche IT. as] as for

ITK. an] on MS.

8. And] Ne IT. to (1)] T om.

[tyne EMIKTS] tene P. trene] trywe P. to (2)] IT om. teenen] tenen E ; teone K ; tene MITS.

9. to] and to M ; and ITK ; for to S. lyue] þe lynde (1) E.

10. Þenne] And þanne IT. bet] beth PI.

12. saued] i-saued M. and] S om. to (2)] MITK om.

Ac for to louye and lene · and lyue wel and by-leyue,
 Ys ycallid *caritas* · kynde loue in english;
 And þat is dobet, yf eny suche be · a blessed man, þat
 helpeþ

† Charity or Love
 is Do-bet, who
 bestows peace
 and patience.

[þat] pees be and pacience · and poure with-oute de-
 faute; 16

Beatius est dare quam petere.

† Acts xx. 35.

Ac catel and kynde witt · encombrep ful menye;
 Woo is hym þat hem weldeþ · bote he [hem] wel dis-
 peyne;

195

*Scientes & non facientes uariis flagellis uapula-
 bunt.*

Cf. Luke xii.
 47, 48.

Ac comunliche connynge · and vnkynde rychesse,
 As, loreles to be lordes · and lewede men techeres, 20
 And holy church e hore[n] help · auerous and coueytous,
 Droweþ vp dowel · and distruyeþ dobest.

† But cunning
 and riches often
 dry up Do-wel,
 and destroy
 Do-best.

Ac grace is a gras þer-fore · to don hem eft growe;
 Ac grace groweþ nat · til [goode wil] gynne reyne, 24
 And wokie þorwe good werkes · wikkede hertes.
 Ac er suche a wil wexe · god hym-self worcheþ,
 And sent forþ seint espirit · to don loue sprynge;

† But Grace
 causes them to
 grow again.

Spiritus ubi uult spirat, et cetera.

John iii. 8.

196

13. *and* (1)] and to MSK; and for
 to I. *and* (2)] an P. *lyue*] liþe M.
and by-leyue] I beleue I.

14. *ycallid*] y-callyd S; ycalid P;
 ycald EMITK. *in*] an I; on MKT.

15. *suche*] man schulde T.

16. [þat IMKST] And PE. *with-
 oute*] out of T. *petere*] recipere M;
 accipere S.

17. *encombrep*] accombrep I;
 acombrep KS; accumbriþ T.

18. [hem IMKST] *miswritten* hym
 PE. *dispeyne*] dispene E; despene
 K; dispende MT; despende I.
flagellis] penis M. *Scientes, &c.*] *Scienti & non facienti variis flagellis
 vapulabitur* IT.

21. *auerous*] & auerous S.

22. *Droweþ*] so PKS; Draweþ E;
 Driep M; Dryueþ T. *distruyeþ*] de-

stroyeþ IT; distrieþ vp M. *dobest*] *do-bet* T.

23. T *omits. eft*] ofte K; oft to S.

24. [goode wil K] goode wille E;
 goud wille S; *better than* god wol
 PI; god wole M; god wile T. *The
 true reading is decided by* l. 26.
gynne] gunne E; 3iue T; þat hit M;
 S *om.*

25. *wokie*] wakye E; waky KS;
but see B. xv. 332. *good*] godus S.
wikkede] þise wykkide T.

26. *wil* MKST] *better than* will
 wol P; wille wol E. *god—worcheþ*] *worcheþ*
 good silue I; werchiþ good
 þour seluen T.

27. *sent* EKST] send PM. *seint*] *þe
 seynt* MKT. *espirit*] *espiryt* S.
loue] þe lef T.

So grace, with-oute grace · of god and of good werkes,
 May nat bee, bee þow siker · þauh we bidde euere. 29

† Learning is due
 to the influence
 of stars.

Cleregie comeþ bote of siht · and kynde witt of sterres,
 As to be bore oper bygete · in suche constellacion,
 That wit wexeþ þer-of · and opere [wyrdes] boþe; 32

*Uultus huius seculi sunt subiecti uultibus
 celestibus.*

Grace is a gift
 of God.

So grace is a gyfte of god · and kynde witt a chaunce,
 And cleregye and connyng · of kynde wittes techyng.

Learning is to be
 commended.

And ȝut is cleregie to comende · for cristes loue, more
 þan eny connyng of kynde witt · bote cleregie hit
 ruwele. 36

† Moses wit-
 nesses that God
 wrote a law of
 love on stone.

For moyses wittnesseþ þat god wrot · in stoon with
 hus fynger,

Lawe of loue oure lorde wrot · longe er crist were.

And crist cam and confermede · and holy [kirke] made,

(197)

† Christ wrote it
 on the ground.

And in sond a sygne wrot · and seide to þe Iewes, 40
 ‘That seeþ hym-self synneles · cesse nat, ich hote,
 To stryke with stoon oper with staf · this strompet
 to deþe’;

† John viii. 7.

*Qui uestrum sine peccato est [mittat in eam
 lapidem,] & cetera.*

For-thi ich consaile alle cristene · cleregie to honoure;

198

Clerks learn
 from books.

For as a man may nat seo · þat mysseþ hus eyen, 44
 No more can no clerkes · bote [if] hit be of bookes.

28. *with-oute*] with S. *of* (2)] also I; MKS *om.* *werkes*] werk M.

29—33. M *omits.*

29. *bee* (1)] buryone S. *bee þow*] so T.

30. *comeþ*] come not S. *witt of*] with-out E.

31. *oper*] & T. *bygete*] biȝite E; gete S. *suche*] such a IKST.

32. [*wyrdes*] wurdus K; wyrdus S; wordes PEIT (*wyrdes* = destinies).

33—42. K *omits.*

34. *and*] a IST. *techyng*] techinges I.

35. *for*] fore PM.

36. *ruwele*] reule EIS; rule M.

37. *in stoon*] and crist IT; in a ston S.

38. *loue*] I *om.*

39. [*kirke* I] churche PEIS; chirche MT.

40. *a*] I *om.*

41. G *begins again.* *cesse*] sese IST.

42. *strompet*] strompett P. [*mittat—lapidem*] in E only.

43. *For-thi*] For-whi M; For T. *consaile*] consaily P; but see l. 63. *alle cristene*] eche creature KG; ich a creature IT.

45. *clerkes*] clere IT. [*if* IKG] ȝif EMT; PS *om.* *be*] come IT (*which suits the alliteration better*).

And thauh men maden bokes · god was here maister,
And seynte spirit þe saumplarie · and seide what men
sholde wryte.

And ryght as syht serueþ a man · to see þe hye strete,
Ryght so lereþ lettrure · lewede men to reson. 49

And as a blynde man in batayle · bereþ wepne to fyghte, Like a blind man
in battle,

And haþ non hap wiþ hus axe · hus enemy to hitte ;

No more can a kynde-witted man · bote clerkes hym teche, so is one with
common sense
but untaught.

Come for alle hus kynde wyttes · þorwe cristendom to
be saued ;

The whiche is cofre of cristes tresour · and clerkes
kepen þe keyes, 54

To vnlouke hit at here lykyng · þe lewede and lerede
to helpe,

To ȝeue mercy for mysdedes · yf men wolde hit aske
Buxumliche and benygneliche · and bydden hit of grace.

Archa dei in þe olde lawe · leuites hit kepten ;

Leuites kept
the ark,

Hadde neuere lewede man leue · to legge honde [on] þat
cheste,

Bote hit were preeste oþer preestes sone · patriarch
oþer prophete. 60

199

and no others.

Saul, for he sacrificede · sorwe hym by-tydde,

And hus sones for hus synnes · sorwe þey hadden ;

Saul did wrong
in sacrificieng
(1 Sam. xiii. 12).

[And alle lewede þat leyde hond þeron · loren lyf after.]

46. *And thauh*] þaw M ; Al-þouȝ
SKTG. *And—bokes*] I om.

47. *And*] And þe MSI. *spirit*] *espirit* MG ; *esprit* I. *þe saumplarie*] *heore ensamplarie* M. *what*] þat M. *men*] me E.

48. G omits. *And*] But M. *syht*] a sight K. *strete*] weize M.

49. G omits. *lereþ*] lerneþ M.

50. *And*] For G ; I om.

51. *haþ*] S om. *enemy*] enmy M.

52. *clerkes*] werkes I (*wrongly*).

53. *for*] þoruȝ S. *wyttes*] witte I ;
wyt T. *saued*] sauede P ; see l. 76.

54. *The*] T om. *The whiche*] For
hit G. *is*] IK om. *cofre*] þe cofre
I ; þe coffre T.

55. *vnlouke*] vnloke ES ; vnlokken
I ; louken T.

56. G omits ll. 56—63. *for*] for his
M. *wolde*] wolle I ; wol K ; wul S ;
wile T.

59. *to*] T om. *legge*] leyn M ; leyn
T. [*on IMKT*] in PES ; cf. B-text.

60. *preeste*] prest MK ; preestes
PEIST.

62. *þey hadden*] hem bitidde IK
(*repeated from* l. 61) ; hem betauȝte T.

63. *From* I (*which has hane for*
hond) ; also in KT. *This seems but a*
fragment of the three lines in B. xii.
120—123, which are correctly pre-
served in MS. R only ; see B-text.

Never despise
learning or
clerks.

For-þy ich consaille alle creatures · no clerk to dispise,
Ne sette short by here science · what so þei don hem-
selue. 65

Take we here wordes a worth · for here wittnesses ben
trewe,

Meddle not with
such.

And medle we nat moche with hem · to meeuē eny
wratthe,

Leste cheste chaufe ous so · and choppe ech man opere ;
And do we as dauid techē · for doute of godes
veniaunce ; 69

Ps. civ. 15
(Vulg.).

Nolite tangere cristos meos, &c.

For clergie is cristes vikery · to conforte and to curen ;
Boþe lered and lewed were lost · yf clergie ne were.

† Men naturally
clever have
found out a
learning of their
own.

Kynde-wittede men han · a clergie by hem-selue ;
Of cloudes and of custumes · þei contreuede meny
þynges, 73

And markede hit in here manere · and mused þer-on
to knowe.

They thought
much of science,

And of þe selcoupe[s] þat þei seyen · here sones þer-of
þei tauhte,

þei helden hit for an hey science · here soteltes to
knowe. 76

Ac þorw here science sopliche · was neuere soule ysaued,
Ne brouht þorwe here bokes · to blisse ne to ioye.

200
but their books
brought none
to bliss.

For al here kynde knowyng · cam bote of diuerse
sightes

64. *For-þy*] For-why M. *clerk*] clerkes I.

66. *a*] at IT. *wittnesses*] witnesse
TKG. *trewe*] trywe P.

68. *chaufe—so*] chaste vs so ES ;
cause vs to chide I ; achaufe us so MG ;
chauufen vs in wo T. *and—man*] þat eche man choppe M.

69. *Here M repeats* ll. 30—32, 64,
68, and then 69 again.

70. *vikery*] vicarie EG ; vicary I ;
uicori M ; vicorie KS ; viccorie T.
to (2)] KG om.

71. *were* (1)] we S. *lost*] i-lost M.

73. *of*] G om. *contreuede*] con-
treuen M ; contreueþ S.

74. *marked*] makede M ; markeþ
S. *þer-on*] on E.

75. *þe*] M om. *selcoupes* MEKSTG]
silkouthes I ; selcoupe P. *seyen*]
sien M. *tauhte*] to teche E.

76. *þei*] For þey IT ; And G. S
omits last half of l. 75, and first half
of l. 76.

78. *þorwe*] be T.

79. *al*] MS om. *cam*] ne cam PE ;
but IMKSTG omit ne.

Of briddes and [of] bestes · of blisse and of sorwe. 80
 Patriarkes and prophetes · reprouede here science,
 And seide here wordes and here wysdomes · ne was
 bote al folye ;

As to þe clergie of cryst · þei countede hit bote a
 truþe ;

Sapientia huius mundi stultitia est apud deum. 1 Cor. iii. 19.

For þe hye holygost · shall heuene to-cleue, 84
 And loue shal leepe out after · in-to þis lowe erthe,
 And clannesse shal cacchen hit · and clerkes shullen
 hit fynde ;

Pastores loquebantur ad inuicem, et cet. Luke ii. 15.

Hit spekeþ of riche men ryght nouht · ne of riche lordes,
 Bote of clenness and of clerkes · and kepers of bestes ;

Ibant magi ab oriente, et cetera. 88 Mat. ii. 1.

Yf eny frere were founde pere · ich 3eue [þe] fyue
 shyllinges !

Noþer in cote noþer in caytyf hous · was crist y-bore, Cf. Luke ii. 7.
 Bote in a burgeises hous · þe beste of alle þe toune.

To pastours and to poetes · aperede þe angel, 92 The angel
 And bad hem go to bedlehem · godes burþe to honoure, appeared to the
 shepherds,

And [songen] a song of solas · *Gloria in excelsis deo !* 201
 Riche men routten þo · and in here reste were, Luke ii. 14.

80. *and* (1)] or I. [of IMKSTG] domini.
 PE om.

82. *seide*] E om. *and*] ne I; for
 T; G om. *wysdomes*] wisdom MG.
ne was] nas K; was IST. *bote al*]
 al but M. *al*] a IKSTG.

83. *As*] And MG. *countede hit*]
 a-counten M. *a*] T om. *truþle*]
 trefele M; trifle STG. *est*] KT om.

84. *shall heuene*] heuen schal
 IKTG; þe heuene schal S.

85. *out after*] aftur out S. *after*]
 T om. *þis*] þe S.

86. *and*] as E.

87. *Hit*] He S. *of*] þer of IT.
riche] grete S; þe T.

88. *and* (1)] I om. *of* (2)] ST om.
After oriente I adds—De natiuitate

89. *founde*] i-fonde M. [þe IMS
 KTG] PE om.

90. *Noþer*] Ne IT. *cote*] no cote
 T. *noþer in*] ne in K; ne IT. *cay-*
tyf] caytifes IT. *was crist*] crist
 was KTG.

91. *burgeises*] burgeys S; borgeis
 M; burgeis T. *of*] in M. *alle*]
 IKTG om.

92. *to*] K om. *þe*] an G.

93. *bedlehem*] bethleem MEK;
 bedleem I; bedlem STG.

94. [*songen* M] songe IT; song S;
 syngen PEK; singe G.

95. *routten*] routte K; ruten M;
 rotte I; routen E; routed S; routide
 T; rutte G. *in*] K om.

þo hit shon to þe shepehurdas · a shewere of blisse.
 The Magi. Clerkes knewen the comete · and comen with here
 presentes, 97
 And dude here homage honorably · to hym þat was al-
 myghty.

I say this because you slandered
 learned men (see pp. 212, 213). Whi ich haue ytold þe al þis · ich took ful good
 hede,
 How þow contrariedest cleregie · with crabbede wordes,
 þat is, how lewede men and lufere · lyghtloker were
 saued 101
 þan connyng clerkes · of kynde vnderstandyng;
 And þow seidest soþ of somme · ac ich seye in what
 manere.

Throw two men into the Thames, Take two stronge men · and in temese cast hem, 104
 And boþe naked as a nelde · here noþer heuyour þan
 oþer;

one who can swim and one who cannot; That on hap connyng · and can swimmen and dyuen,
 That oþer is lewede of þat labour · and lernede neuere
 swymme;

which is in danger?" Which is, trowest þow, of þo two · in temese most in
 drede?" 108

202 "He þat can nat swymme," ich seyde · "hit semeþ to
 alle wittes."

"Ryght so," quap þat renke · "reson hit sheweþ,
 "So," said he, That he þat knoweþ cleregie · can sonnere a-ryse

98. *here*] hem K; G *om.* *honor-*
ably] S *om.* *to*] & to K. *was*] is M.

99. *þe*] 3ow T; M *om.* *ful*] wel M.

101. *þat is*] E *om.* *lufere*] leþere
 M; lipere T. *lyghtloker*] miswritten
 lyghlokere P. *lyghtloker were*] were
 lithliker M. *saueð*] sauede P; i-
 saued MEG; y-sauede I.

103. *þow*] S *om.* *ac*] & E; but T.
seye] so PS; seie K; say E; se IT;
 si M; wot G.

104. *two* STG] tuo I; to PEMK.
temese] temse EM; themese IG;
 tempe T.

105. *nelde*] nedele IE; nedle M.

here noþer] here none IKT; and non
 M; non of hem S. *heuyour*] heue-
 gour K; heuegur S; heuegere T.

107. *of*] as of I. *neuere swymme*]
 hit neuere M.

108. *þow*] IEKS *om.* *þo*] þe S.
two STK] tuo I; to PEM. *most-*
drede] is in moste drede I; is most
 in dred T (*which omit is after*
Which).

109. *semeþ*] semede I.

110. *so*] S *om.* *þat*] þe S; G *om.*

111. *sonnere*] sennere M; sannur
 S.

Out of synne, and be saf · þow he synegy ofte, 112 "can a learned
If hym lykeþ and lust · þan eny lewede sothliche. man sooner
leave sin.

For yf þe clerk be connyng · and knoweþ what is
synne,

And hou contricion with-oute confession · conforteþ
þe soule,

As we seen in þe sauter · in psalmes on oþer tweye,
How contricion is comended · for hit caccheþ a-wey

synne, 117

*Beati quorum remisse sunt iniquitates, [et Ps. xxxi. 1
quorum tecta sunt peccata,] &c.:* (Vulg.).

And þat comforteþ ech [a] clerk · and keuereþ fro Clerks do not
despair.

wanhope,

In whiche flood þe feend · fondeþ man hardest,
þer þe lewede lyeth stille · and lokeþ after lente, 120

And haþ no contricion · ar he come to shryfte;

And þan can he lytel telle · of on oþer of oþer, Unlettered men
have to learn as
they are taught.

Bote as his loresman lereþ hym · he by-leyueþ and
troweþ;

And þat is after person oþer pareshe-preest · and par-
aunter boþe beþ lewede 124

For to lere lewede men · as luc bereþ wittnesse;

Si cecus ducit cecum, ambo in foueam cadent:

203

For mucche woo was hym marked · þat wade shal with
þe lewede. Mat. xv. 14.

112. *synegy*] synege KG; synwe S;
synny E; synne IMT.

113. *lewede*] lewed man M.

116. *As*] And S.

117. *caccheþ* MIKSG] *cacchiþ* T;
chacheþ P; *casteþ* E; see B-text.
[*et—peccata*] from E.

118. [*a* IKST] PEMG om. *keuereþ*
EISTG] *kouereþ* P; *keouereþ* K;
couereþ him M.

119. *hardest*] fastest M.

120. *lyeth*] liif M; liþ T.

121. G omits ll. 121—123. *ar*] er
ST; or E: til M. *he*] þei T (*wrong-
ly*).

122. *And*] M om. IT omit last
half of the line.

123. *lereþ hym*] hym lereþ I.
he] I om. T omits last half of the
line.

124. *person oþer*] his persoun oþer
his I. *beþ*] ben M; IT om.

125. *For*] IKTG om. *lere*] lerne
M. *luc*] booke I. *Si*] Dum IMKTG;
Cum S. *ducit cecum*] ceco ducatum
prestet E. *ambo—cadent*] IKSTG om.
cadent] cadunt EM.

126. *For mucche*] Ful mochel I.
woo] S om.

Well for him
who can read!

Ps. xv. 5 (Vulg.).

Reading has
saved thieves
from Tyburn.

The penitent
thief was saved,

Wel may þe barn blesse · þat hym to book sette ;
That lyuynge after lettrure · sauede hym lyf and soule !

Dominus pars hereditatis mee · ys a murye verset, 129
Hit haþ ytake fro tyborne · twenty stronge þeeues ;
þer lewede þeeues ben lollid vp · loke how þei been
sauede !

þe þeef þat hadde grace of god · a goode fryday, as
þow toldest, 132
Was, for he ȝelde hym creaunt to crist · and hus grace
askede.

And god is ay gracious · to alle þat gredeþ to hym,
He wol no wickede man be lost · bote yf he wol
hym-self ;

*Nolo mortem peccatoris, sed ut magis conuertatur
& uiuat.*

but had a low
place in heaven ;

And þauh þe þeef hadde heuene · he hadde non hye
blisse 136

As seynt Iohan and oþer seyntes · þat han a-serued
bettere.

as if I were to
sit on the floor of
the hall to eat.

Ryght as som man ȝyueþ me mete · and set me
a-myddre þe floor,

Ich haue mete more þan ynowe · ac nat with so muche
worship

As þo þat sytten at þe syd-table · oþer with þe souereynes
in halle, 140

128. *That*] þe S. *lyuynge*] lyuynge
haþ M. *sauede*] sauēþ M.

129. *mee*] IM om. *verset*] versett
P ; uers M ; vers T.

130. *Hit*] For it T.

131. *lollid*] i-lolled M. *sauede*] i-saued M.

132. *a*] on MT ; & (l) E. *as—
toldest*] to be i-saued M.

133. *ȝelde* EIKG] ȝeld S ; ȝuld P ;
ȝald T ; held M ; see l. 153. *hym*
EIMKSTG] miswritten hem P. *and*] as M.

134. *ay*] euer S ; G om. *alle—
hym*] hem þat to him gredeþ M.

135. *He*] And IT. *wol*] wile þat

M. *yf*] KSG om. *sed—uiuat*] IKSTG om.

136. *And*] Ac MKSG ; But T. *non
hye*] not so hy S.

137. *Iohan*] Ion EM. *a-serued*
EMK] a-seruede P ; serued ITG ; de-
seruyd S.

138. *man*] KG om. *set* MST] sett
P ; sette IKG ; setteþ E. *a-myddre*] inmyddes M.

139. *nat with*] with noȝt E. *so*] IT om.

140. *at þe*] ate S ; at K. *table*] bord M. *þe*] M om. *souereynes*] souereyntes I ; souerayn T. *in halle*] S om.

Bote, as a beggere, bordles · by my-self vpon þe grounde.

204

So hit ferde by þe felon · þat a goode fryday was saued ; So he is not with the apostles,

He [sit] noþer with seynt Iohan · with symon ne with Iude,

Ne with maydenes ne with Martris · ne with mylde wydewes, 144

Bote as a soleyne by hym-self · and serued vp-on þe but by himself. grounde.

For he þat ys ones a þeeff · is euere more in daunger,

And as þe lawe lykeþ · to lyue oþer to deye,

De peccato propiciato noli esse sine metu ;

Eccclus. v. 5.

And for to seruen a seynt · and suche a þeeff to-gederes,

Hit were no reson ne ryght · to rewarde boþe [y]liche.

Ryzt as *traianus*, þe trewe knyght · tulde nat deep in Trajan dwelt not deep in hell ; helle, 150

That oure lord ne hadde hym lyghtliche out · so leyueþ of þe þeeff in heuene.

For he ys in the lowest heuene · yf oure byleyue beo and the thief is lowest in heaven. trewe,

And wel loseliche lolleþ þere · as by þe lawe of holy-churche ; 153

Et [reddet] unicuique secundum opera sua.

Ps. lxi. 13 (Vulg.).

Ac whi þat [one] þeeff vp-on þe croys · creaunt hym zelde

Raþer þan þat oþer · þauh þou woldest apose,

141. G omits. a] T om. vpon] on MITS.

142. a] on MT. saued] sauede P ; i-saued M.

143. He] Hit E ; A I. [sit IMK STG] sitte E ; sat P. seynt] K om. Iohan] Ion M. with symon] ne with Symond I ; ne wiþ symon T. ne with] ne wiþ seynt M ; ne IT.

144. Ne] M om.

145. a] S om. hym-self] silf S. and] I om. serued] seruete P ; i-serued MI ; yseruid T. vp-on] on T.

148. for] so M. a (1)] swich a S.

149. yliche IKSEG] ylich T ; i-like M ; liche P.

150. Ryzt] And right IT. *traianus*] troianus SKTG ; troianes IM ; þe troianes (!) E. trewe] trywe P. tulde] so PEKSG ; tilde M ; telde IT.

151. leyueþ] leueþ E ; leue i MIKS. of þe] þat þe K ; þat IT ; of þat ES ; of M. leyueþ - þeeff] lyueþ þat þef T.

152. heuene] of heuene IT. trewe] trywe P.

153. loseliche K] losliche P ; louslich E ; loslich S ; lifliche I ; loueliche MT. þe] M om. [reddet EIKMST] reddit PG. secundum] iuxta IMT.

154. þat] þe S. [one I] o T ; PEMSKG om. vp-on] on MT.

Cf. Ps. cxxxiv. 6
(Vulg.).

203
Inquire not into
reasons.

Nature taught
the turtle and
the peacock.

† Ps. cxlviii. 5
(Vulg.).

206

The fairest fowl
is the feeblest of
flight.

Alle þe clerkes vnder Crist · ne coupe þys asoile ; 156

Quare placuit, quia uoluit, etc.

And so ich seye by þe · þat sekest after weyes,

How creatures [han] kynde witt · and clerkes comen
to bokes,

And how þe floures in þe fritth · comeþ to feyre hewes ;
Was neuere creature vnder cryst · þat knew wel þe
byggynnyng 160

Bote kynde, þat contreeuede hit furst · of corteise wil.

He tauhte þe tortle to trede · þe pokok to cauke,

And Adam and eue · and oþer bestes alle

A cantel of kynde witt · here kynde to saue. 164

Of good and of wikke · kynde was þe ferste,

He seih hit and suffrede hit · and seide hit bee sholde ;

*Quia ipse dixit, & facta sunt ; ipse mandauit,
& creata sunt.*

Ac whi hewolde þat wikkede were · ich wene and ich leyue,
Was neuere man vpon molde · þat myghte hit aspye.

Ac longe-lybbynge men · lyknede mennes lyuyng 169

To bryddes and to bestes · as here bokes telleþ,

þat the fayrest fowel · foulest engendreþ,

And feblest fowel of flicht is · þat [fleep] oþere
swymmeþ. 172

That is, þe pokok and þe popeiay · with here proude
federes

156. coupe] shulde M. þys] it I.
157. þe] þi-self T. weyes] þe
weyes I ; þe wijes T.

158. [han IKG] hadde T ; and
PEMS. and] and how ITKG.

159. T omits. þe] þat M (twice).
floures] foules KG.

160. byggynnyng] gynnyng T.

161. hit] M om. furst] I om.
of] of his IMT ; or S. corteise ES]
cortese K ; curteis MI ; korteis G ;
miswritten cortisie P ; kynde T.

162. pokok] pecok KTG.

163. oþer—alle] alle oþere bestes IT.

166. He] IKTG om. seih] si M.

RUBRIC. Dixit et facta sunt
IKSTG ; M om.

167. nere] S om. and] as M.
leuwe] leue EIMTG ; leoue K ; be-
leue S.

169. lybbyng] lyuyng MST.
mennes] menne K ; men IS ; manes
M ; menis T.

171. fowel] foule EIMKS ; foul TG.

172. feblest] þe febleste T. flicht]
flight I ; fliht T ; flight K ; flith M ;
flyht G. [fleep IM] flep ET ; fleup
S ; flucht P ; flucht K ; flyyt G.

173. pokok] pecok KTG ; pookoo P.
with] withe P.

By-tokneþ ryght riche men · þat regnen here on erþe.

For porsewe a pocok · oþer a pohen to cacche,

And haue hem in haste · at þyn owene wil ; 176

The peacock's tail
is in his way.

For þei may nat fleo fer · ne ful hye noþer,

For here feþeres þat faire ben · to fle fer hem letteþ.

Hus leedene is vnloueliche · and lothliche hus caroigne ;

His voice is
harsh.

Ac for hus peyntede [pennes] · þe pocok is honoured

207

More þan for hus faire flesch · oþer for hus murye note.

Ryght so men reuerenceþ more þe ryche · for hus

Rich men are
reuerenced for
their riches,
as a peacock is
for his tail.

muche meeble

182

þan for þe kyn þat he cam of · oþer for hus kynde wittes.

Thus þe poete preiseþ · þe pocok for hus federes,

And þe riche for hus rentes · oþere rychesse in hus

[schoppe].

185

þe larke, þat is a lasse fowel · is loueloker of lydene,

The lark has a
sweeter voice
than the peacock.

And swettur of sauour · and swyfter of wynges.

To lowe-lyuynges men · þe larke is resembled, 188

And to leelle and to lyf-holy · þat louen alle treuþe.

þus porfirie and plato · and poetes menyne

Lykneþ in here logyk · þe leeste fowel oute.

And wheþer hij be saf oþer nat saf · þe soþe wot nat

Whether
Porphyry and
Plato are saved,
none knows.

clergie,

192

174. *regnen*—on] dwelleþ vpon S.

175. *For*] To E.

176. *hem*] hym S. *in*] in an I.
owene] I om.

177. *þei*] he ne M. *fer* IMSTG]
ferre E; feer K; fur P. *ful*] wel MG.

178. *fer* IMSTG] ferre E; feor K;
feer P.

179. *leedene*] leodene KE; ledene
M; lethene I; ludene S; leden T.
vnloueliche] vncomelich S. *loth-*
liche] lodli M. *hus*] is to S; ys his G.

180. [*pennes* IT] feþeres PEMSKG;
but observe the alliteration; and cf.
B. xii. 247. *is honoured*] miswritten
his honourede P.

181. *murye*] faire T. *note*] notus S.

182. *hus*] here I; hure S. *muche*
meeble] moebles I; meble T.

183. *þe*] eny I; any T. *kyn*]

kynde M. *þat*] IT om. *for* (2)] fore P.

184. *pocok*] pecok ETG.

185. *þe*] S om. *riche*] riche man
IT. *for*] fore P. *rentes*] rente MT.
oþere] or for IST. [*schoppe* EMKSG]
shoppe T; schoppes I; sheepe P.

186. *loueloker*] loueliker M; loue-
lokest I. *lydene*] ledene IEMSG;
leodene K; ledon T.

187. *wynges*] wynges I.

188. *resembled*] y-semblid S.

189. *And*] Al S. *leelle*] lowe M;
leue T. *to* (2)] IMTG om.

190. *porfirie*] porphirie IS; pur-
phirie M; porphorie T.

191. *Lykneþ*] Liknede M.

192. *wheþer*] weþer P; wher IKG.
hij] hy E; þei M; he IKSTG. *saf*]
sad M; saufe I; sauf T (*twice*).
nat (2)] no S.

Ne of sortes, ne of salamon · no scripture can telle
 Wheþer þei be in helle oþer in heuene; · oþere aristotle
 þe wise.

God, who gave
 the heathen wit
 to teach us, will
 perhaps save
 them."

Ac god is so good, ich hope · sitthe he gaf hem wittes
 To wissen ous weyes þer-with · þat wenen to be sauēd,
 And þe bettere for here bookes— · to bidden we been
 holde 197

þat God for hus grace · gyue here saules reste;
 For lettred men were but lewede men ȝut · ne were þe
 lore of þo clerkes."

208

"Clerks deny
 salvation to
 Saracens and
 Jews," said I.

"Alle þese clerkes," quap ich þo · "þat on crist by-
 leyuen, 200

Seggen in here sarmons · þat noþer sarrasyns ne Iewes
 With-oute baptisme, as by here bokes · beep nat
 ysauēd."

1 Pet. iv. 13.

"Contra," quap ymaginatif þo · and cōmsed to loure,
 And seide, "*uix saluabitur iustus in die iudicii*;
Ergo saluabitur," quap he · and seide no more latyn.

"Trajan was
 saved, though
 never baptized,"
 said he.

"Traianus was a trewe knyght · and took neuere
 crystendome, 205

And he is saf, seith þe bok · and his soule in heuene.

194. *Wheþer*] Weþer P. *þei*] hy
 S; þat þey I. *helle—heuene*] heuene
 or in helle SG.

After l. 194 S alone inserts these
 five lines—

Iob was a paynym · & plesede god
 a prys,

And aristele (*sic*) al-so · sewede
 þe same secte,

And lad ful holy lyf · aftur lawe
 of kynde,

Where-fore hit semep sōþly · by
 sondry skylus to schewe

þat he is saf as was Iob · I can
 not seye þe soþe.

195. *sitthe*] þat seppe I; þat sippe
 T. *hem*] him I.

196. *ous*] vs IST; us M. *weyes*]
 wyes KT. *þer-with*] G om. *sauēd*]
 sauēde P; i-sauēd MG.

197. *holde*] y-holde IG; i-holde M.

198. *þat*] To G. *for*] of M. *gyue*
 MS] ȝyue K; ȝeue I; ȝiue T; gyf P
 (which is bad grammar). M adds—

nota argumentum pro infidelibus.
 199. *were* (1)] ne were M; nere E.
but] as IKTG. *men* (2)] T om. ȝut]
 ȝet T; ȝit I; E om. *þe*] STG om.
þo] þe IE. *þo clerkes*] bokes KG;
 here bokis T. *ne—clerkes*] ȝif þat
 þei ne were M.

200. *þese*] þeese P; þe T. *by-
 leyuen*] leuen ITG; lyuen S; leouen
 K.

201. *in*] witoute (!) I.

202. *beep*] ne beþ T.

204. *seide*] spac M.

205. *Traianus*] Troianus MEKSTG;
 Troianes I. *trewe*] triwe P; *but see*
 l. 211.

206. *his*] is P.

Ther is follyng of font · and follyng [in] blod-shedyng, “There is also a
And þorw fuyr is follyng · and al is ferm by-leyue; baptism by *blood*,
and one by *fire*.

*Aduenit ignis diuinus, non comburens sed
illuminans.*

Ac treuthe, þat trespassede neuere · ne transuersede True men, that
azens þe lawe, 209 never trespass,
must be approved
of by a true God.

Bote lyuede as [his] lawe tauhte · and leyue[þ] þer be
no bettere,

And yf þer were, he wolde · and in suche a wil deyeþ—
Wolde neuere trewe god · bote trewe treuthe were
a-losed. 212

And where hit worth oþer nat worth · þe by-leyue is
gret of treuthe,

And hope longeþ ay þer-on · to haue þat treuthe 209
deserueþ; There is much
hope of such.

Quia super pauca fidelis fuisti, supra multa te † Mat. xxv. 23.
constituam :

And þat is loue and large huyre · yf the lord be trewe, † God rewards
men beyond what
He promises.”
And cortesie more þan couenant was · what so clerkes
carpen; 216

For al worth as god wole”— · and þer-with he vanshede. Then he vanished.

Hic explicit passus quintus de dowl.

207. *Ther*] And þer I; Ac þer KG; leue.
But þere T. *follyng*] fullyng M
(twice). *of*] in S. [*in* IMKSETG]
of P; see B-text.

208. *fuyr*] fire I; fure E; feor M.
follyng] fullyng EMI; folewyng T.
is] T om. *ferm*] heren (!) E.

209. *transuersede*] trauerssede M;
trauersed I. *þe*] his I.

210. *lyuede* IT] leuede MG; leued
E; leouede K; lyueþ S; *miswritten*
leyuede P; (but *lyuede* = lived here;
cf. B-text.) [*his* IMKSG] þe ET; P
om. *leyueþ*] leueþ MIS; leuiþ T;
leoueþ K; leuede G. *miswritten* *leyue*
P; leue E.

211, 212. G omits.

211. *he*] a I. *wolde*] so in all but
T; not as in B-text; T has—wolde

212. *Wolde*] Ne wolde ITK. a-
losed] a-losede P.

213. *oþer*] were it T. *nat worth*] worþe nat I; worth noȝht K. *by-leyue*] bileue EMISG; beleue T.

214. *hongeþ ay*] ay honguþ S;
chaungeþ ay K. *deserueþ*] desireþ M.
fidelis fuisti] fuisti fidelis IMSTG.
supra, &c.] I om.

215. *huyre*] hure I. *yf—trewe*] of þe lord of truþe M.

216. *cortesie*] a cortesie KS; a
curtasie M; a curteisie T.

217. *vanshede*] vanschede E; vanys-
sched I; vanesschede MS; vanisschide
T; vanyschede K.

COLOPHON. So PG; IM omit. *Hic*] EKS om. *de dowl*] KS om.

PASSUS XVI. (DO-WEL VI.)

*Incipit passus sextus [de dowel].***210**

Then I awoke,
and thought
much about my
dream—

A Nd ich awakede þer-with · wittles ner hande ;
As a frek þat feye were · forth gan ich walke
In manere of a mendinaunt · meny 3eres after.
And meny tyme of þis meteles · muche pouhte ich
hadde ; 4

how Fortune
failed me,

Furst, how fortune me failede · at my moste neede,
And how elde manacede me · so myghte happe,
þat, yf ich lyuede longe · leue me by-hynde,
And vanshie alle myne vertues · and myne faire lockes.
And how þat freres folweden · folk þat was ryche, 9
And people þat was poure · at lytel prys setten ;
Ne corses of poure comune · in here [kirke]-3erd moste
ligge,

and friars would
bury no poor,

TITLE. *So in* KG ; *S omits* passus ;
M *prefixes* Hic ; PE *omit* de dowel ;
IT *have*—Passus quintus de visione,
vt supra.

2. *As*] And as ITG. *feye*] feize
M ; vey E. *walke*] fare S.

3. *In*] In þe M. *3eres*] 3er ITG ;
3ere K. *after*] þeraftir T.

4. *And*] In I. *tyme*] tymes IMT.

5. *moste*] ferste T.

6. *so—happe*] so longe myghte ich
happe PE ; *but* IMKSG *omit* longe
and ich, *which seem to have been acci-*
dentally caught from l. 7 ; T *has*—so
mizty hap he hadde.

7. *lyuede* IMKSTG] lyued E ; leuede
(*badly*) P. *leue, &c.*] *so in all but*
G ; to leue G.

8. G *omits. vanshie*] so PE ; van-
yssche IKS ; vanisshe T ; vanessche
M. *faire*] fale E. *lockes*] lotus (*per-*
haps for locus) I ; lotes T.

9. *þat*] M *om. folweden*] folewide
faste T.

10. *was*] wera T. *setten*] þei
setten T.

11. *Ne*] Ne no IT ; No M. *corses*] *corps* IK ; coors S ; cors TG ; bodies
M. *of*] of þe M. [*kirke* IT] church
PES ; chirche MK. *moste*] mai M.

Bote yf he quike by-quethe hem auht · oper wolde
helpe aquite here dettes. 12

And how pis couetise ouer-cam · alle kynne sectes,
As wel lerede as lewede · and lord as þe bonde. 7

and evil priests
betrayed men to
final doom;

And how þat lewede men ben ladde · bote oure lord
hem helpe,

Thorow vnconnyng curatours · to incurable peynes. 16

And how [þat] ymaginatif · in dremeles me tolde

211

Of kynde and of hus connyng · and what connyng
he ȝaf to bestes,

and how Imagin-
ative taught me
how loving
Nature is;

How lounge he [is] to eche lyf · a londe and a
watere;

For alle he wisseþ and ȝeueþ wit · þat walkeþ oper
crepeþ. 20

And ich meruailde in herte · how ymagynatif saide,
þat *iustus* by-fore iesu · in *die iudicii*

and how he spoke
of the difficulty
of salvation, and
then vanished.

Non saluabitur · bote *his* helpe;

And, whanne he hadde seide so · how sodeynlich he
vanshede; 24

And so ich mused vpon pis matere · þat me luste to
slepe.

Thenne cam conscience · and cleregie after,

Again I dreamt,
and beheld

12. *yf*] IMKSTG om. *he quike*] quikke he I; quyk he KTG. *by-quethe*] biquaþ IKG; bequaþ T. *oper wolde*] to T. *aquite*] quyte ISKTG; to quite ME.

estes P.

13. *how*] miswritten ow P; see l. 9. *þis*] þus K; MTG om. *sectes*] frekes M.

19. *How*] And how IT. [*is* IMKSTG] was PE; see next line; and of. B-text. *eche*] eche a KS; vch a I; iche a T. *lyf*] man M. *a*] on M (*twice*). and] as E.

14. *lerede*—*lewede*] lewed as lered E. and] M om.

21. *meruailde*] merueyle I. *in*] in myn M; muche in T.

15. *ben*] S om. *ladde*] i-lad M; lad KSTG.

22, 23. *Written as one line* in M.

22. *in*] be sauf in T.

16. *G omits. curatours*] creatours K; creatures IS. *incurable*] vn-curable EK.

23. *bote*] but ȝif I; quod he þo · but ȝif þat T.

17. [þat IKTG] PES om. *dremeles*] derkenesse M.

24. *whanne*] wanne P. *seide*] i-seid M; yseid T. *vanshede*] vansch ed E; vanysschede IK; uaneschede MS; vanisshide T.

18. *Of*] O S. *of*] o S. *hus*] ST om. *connyng* (2)] kynde M. *to*] IKSTG om. *bestes*] miswritten best-

25. *vpon*] on M. *me*] i M. *to*] KG om.

26. *Thenne*] And þanne IKTG. *after*] þeraftir T.

Conscience and
Clergy, who
said I should dine
with Reason.

And beden me ryse and rome · for with reson sholde
ich dyne.

And ich a-ros and romed forth · with reson [we] mette.
We reuerencede reson · and romed forth softeliche, 29

Then saw I a
master, who
went with Con-
science to dinner.

And mette with a mayster · a man ylike a frere.

Conscience knew hym wel · and welcomede hym fayre ;
þei wisshen and wypeden · and wenten to þe dyner. 32

Pacience as a poure þyng cam · and preide mete for
charite,

Patience stood
without.

Ylike to peers plouhman · as [he] a palmere were,

Crauede and criede · for cristes loue of heuene,

A meles mete for a poure man · oþer moneye, yf þei
hadden. 36

Conscience called
him in.
212

Conscience knew hym wel · and welcomede hem alle ;

þei wisshen and wipeden · and wenten and setten.

The master sat
in the best place.

þe maister was made to sitte furst · as for þe most

worþy ;

Reson stod and stihlede · as for stywarde of halle. 40

Patience and I
sat at a side-
table.

Pacience and ich weren · yput to be mettes,

And seten by ous selue · at a syd-table.

Cleregie calde after mete · and þenne cam scripture,

And seruede hem þus sone · of sondrie metes menie, 44

27. *beden*] so PEKT; *bede* M; *bed* G; *bode* I. *ryse*] arise KG; *risen vp I. for*] and I. *sholde ich*] we schulde T.

28. *And*] E *om. with*] and wip IT. [*we* EIMKSTG] *ich* P.

30. *ylike*] *glyche* E; *like* IK; *lik* MTG; *liche* S.

31. *wel*] IKG *om. welcomede*] *wolcomede* P; *but see* l. 37.

32. *wisshen* T] *wischen* K; *weschen* IE; *wesshen* MSG; *wosshen* P (*but see* l. 38). *wypeden*] *wypten* M. *þe*] MT *om.*

33. *Pacience—cam*] And *þer* com *pacience* as a pore *þinge* I; And *þere* come *pacience* & pore *þinges* T. *for*] *pur* ITG; *par* K.

34. *Ylike*] *liche* E. *plouhman*] *þe* plowman I. [*he* IMSTG] PEK

om. as—were] a palmere as he were S.

37, 38. *Compare* ll. 31, 32. *The lines seem intentionally repeated; cf. B-text. hym*] hem I.

38. *þei*] IG *om. wisshen*] so PTG; *wisshen* K; *weschen* IMES. *wipeden*] *wipten M. and setten*] to sitte G.

39. *to*] ISTG *om. as*] & E.

40. *stihlede*] *stihlede* M; *stihþlede* K; *stihþlide* T; *stiehelede* S; *stihþlede* G. *stywarde*] *steward* MKT. *halle*] alle K.

41. *weren*] was I; *prestly* was T. *yput* KG] *i-put* M; *yputt* P; *putte* I; *put* ST. *mettes*] *menes* E.

42. *ous*] vs *KS*; *us* M; *oure* IT.

43. *mete*] *me* (!) I.

44. *hem*] *hym* S; G *om.*

Of austyn, [of] ambrosie · of alle þe foure euangelies,

Edentes et bibentes que apud illos sunt.

Luke x. 7.

Ac of þese metes þis maister · myghte nat wel chewe ;

The master ate
costly dishes,

For-þy he eet mete of more cost · mortrewes and
potages.

Of þat þat men myswonne · þei maden hem wel at ese,

Ac here sauce was ouere-soure · and vnsauerliche
grounde,

but their sauce
was over-sour.

49

In a mortar, *post-mortem* · of meny bitere peynes,

Bote yf þei synge for þo soules · and wepe salte teeres ;

*Uos qui peccata hominum comeditis, nisi pro eis
lacrimas effuderitis, ea que in delicijs come-
ditis, in tormentis [euometis].*

Thenne reson radde · ryght a-non after,

52

þat conscience comaunde sholde · to do come scripture,

Conscience bade
Scripture bring
bread for
Patience and me.

And brynge bred for pacience · bytynde apartie,

And to me þat was hus mette þo · and oþer mete boþe.

He sette a soure loof · and seide, "*agite penitentiam*,"

Mat. iii. 2.

And sitthe [he] drow ous drynke · *diu-perseuerans*, 57

213

"As longe," quap he, "as þe lyf · and þe licame may
dure."

Cf. Mat. x. 22.

"This is a semeliche seruice !" · seide pacience.

45. *Of*] And T. [*of* EIKSG] and
of M; and PT. *ambrosie*] Ambrosi
K; Ambrose IMTG. *of*] and of M.
þe] K *om. euangelies*] euangelistes
ME. *illos*] eos TG.

46. *þese*] þees P. *þese metes*] þis
mete IKT. *þis*] þe MS; þat IT.

47. *For-þy*] For-whi M. *eet*] ete
IK; eyt S. *he eet*] ete he I; et he
T. *mete*] metes M.

48. *þat þat*] þat IKTG. *wel—ese*]
at ese wel S.

49. *vnsauerliche*] so PM; vn-
sauerly KG; vnsauerlich E; vn-
sauorely I; vnsauourly T; ouer-
sauerly S. *grounde*] y-grounde IS;
i-grounde M; ygrounden T.

50. *morter*] mortel E. *post-
mortem*] þat mortem hiȝt T.

51. *þo*] þe IMKSTG. [*euometis* ST]

euometis M; *euometis* IK; *miswrit-
ten* en emergitis P; emergitis E.

52. *reson*] was resoun I; as resoun
T. *ryght anon*] a-non ryȝte SIT.

53. *come*] K *om.*

54. *bytynde*] so PK; bitynde M;
bitande T; bytynge IES. *apartie*]
so PIMKT; aparty E; a party
SG.

55. *And*] þat E (*wrongly*). *mette*]
so in all but T; mete T.

56. *sette*] sette forþ M.

57. [*he* IMKSTG] PE *om.*; cf.
B-text. *ous*] M *om. diu*] dia I;
dya T.

58. *þe* (1)] þi M; þy E; IKG *om.*
þe lyf] I may lyue T. *þe* (2)] þi M;
þy E; IKSTG *om.*

59. *pacience*] pacience þanne M.

Contrition
brought forward
a pittance of Ps.
xxi. 6.

Thenne cam contrition · þat hadde coked for hem alle,
And brouhte forþ a pitaunce · was *pro-hac-orabit-*
omnis-sanctus-in-tempore-oportuno. 61

Ps. l. 19.

Conscience confortede ous · boþe clergie and scripture,
And seide, "*cor contritum & humiliatum, deus,*
non despicias."

I mourned to see
the doctor drink
so much wine.

Pacience was wel apaied · of þis propre seruyse,
And mad murye with þis mete ; · ac ich mournede euere,
For a doctor at þe heye deys · drank wyn faste—. 65

Isa. v. 22.

Ue uobis qui potentes estis ad bibendum uinum—

He ate all sorts of
good dishes.

And ete meny sondry metes · mortrews and poddynges,
Braun and blod of þe goos · bacon and colhoppes.

214

"Only 3 days
ago he preached
about St Paul's
sufferings,"
said I.

Then seide ich to my-self · þat pacience hit hurde, 68
"3ut is nat þre daies don · þat þis doctor prechede
At seint pauls by-for þe people · what penaunce þei
suffreden,

Alle þat coueitede to come · to heuene hye ioie ;
And how þat paul þe apostle · what penaunce he þoled
For oure lordes loue · as holy lettrure telleþ ; 73

2 Cor. xi. 27.

In fame et frigore, &c.

"They never
preach from St
Paul's words in
2 Cor. xi. 26.

Ac me wondreþ in my witt · whi þat thei ne preche,
As paul the apostel prechede · to þe people ofte,

Periculum in falsis fratribus !

60. þat] M om. coked] i-coked M.
61. orabit] orabit ad te M. in—
oportuno] M om.

62. Conscience] Thanne conscience
IKTG. confortede] confortuþ S.
boþe] & boþe S. seide MIKSTG] mis-
written seiden PE. despicias] de-
spiciet M.

64. mad] made him M; made
hym E. murye] murþe K. þis] his
M.

65. at—deys] þat at þe heize deis
sat T. drank] þat dronk M.

OBS. Here K ends.

66. ete] eet MG; sette T.

67. þe goos] gees IT. bacon and]
baken in M. colhoppes] so PEM;
coloppes I; coloppus S; colopis T.

68. my] me M. þat pacience] so
patient I; so pacience T.

69. 3ut] Hit MG; It IT. is] nys
M. don] gou M. þis IMESTG] mis-
written þees P. þat—doctor] þis
doctour þat he ISG; þis doctour þat
he ne T.

70. seint] IT om. by-for] to M.
what] þat M.

71. coueitede] coueiten MS; coueyte
IT. heuene hye] heuene heie E;
heuene-riche M; heuene kynne SG;
eny kyn IT.

72. þat] M om.

73. holy] ES om. lettrure] lettre
M; wryt I; scripture E.

75. in] est in ITG. falsis fratri-
bus] fratribus filiis S.

Holy writ bit men be war · and wisliche hem kepe, 76

That no fals frere · þorw flatrynge hem by-gyle;

Ac me is lop, þow ich latyn knowe · to lacky eny secte,

For alle we ben brethren · þauh we be diuersliche

clopede.

† But, though I know Latin, I will not blame a brother.

Ac ich wiste neuere freek · þat frere is ycalled

80

Of þe fyue mendynauns · and made eny sarmon,

That took þis for [his] teme · and told hit with-oute

glose.

I never heard a friar preach from that text!

Thei prechen þat penaunce · is profitable for þe soule,

And what meschief & what mal ese · crist for man

poledede.

84

Ac this doctor and diuinour · and decretistre of canon,

And al-so a gnedy gloton · with to grete chekes,

Hath no pite on vs poure · he perfourneþ vuele;

þat he precheþ he proueþ nat" · to pacience ich tolde,

And wisshede witerliche · with a wil ful egre,

89

þat in the mawe of that maister · alle þo metes were,

Disches and dobeleres · with alle þe deyntes after!

"Ich shal Iangly to þys Iordan · with hus Iuste wombe,

This glutton pities not us poor."

215

I wished all the good dishes had been in his maw together!

76. *bit*] *bid* S. *hem*] T *om.*

78. *is*] *þenkeþ* IT. *latyn*] M *om.* *knowe*] *knewe* M. *latyn knowe*] *know* latyn E. *to lacky*] *to lacken* IG; *to lacke* M; *to lakkyn* T; S *om.* *secte*] *man* M.

79. *brethren*] *breythrene* P; *breperen* IET; *breperne* M. *ben brethren*] *breperen ben* E. *diuersliche*] *diuerse* ITG; *dyuerse* M. *be diuersliche*] *dyuerslich be* E. *clopede*] *yeloped* M.

OBS. A leaf lost in S; from l. 80 to l. 156.

80. *frere*] a frere M. *ycalled*] *ycallede* P; *called* IM; *cald* T. *In margin of M—contra fratres.*

81. *fyue*] *four* E. *mendynauns*] *meyndenauns* M; *mendenauntis* I. *and*] *and he* M; *þat G. and—sarmon*] IT *om.*

82. *for*] *fore* P. [*his* IM] *here* PETG. *glose*] a glose IT.

83. *for*] *to* ITKG.

84. *what* (1)] *þat* M. *what* (2)] IMTG *om.*

85. *Ac*] & E. *this*] *miswritten* thes P. *diuinour*] *diuinour quod* i IT. *decretistre* IMG] *decretestre* P; *discrefistere* (sic) E; *decristre* (sic) T.

86. *gnedy*] *gredy* ITG. *to*] *tuo* I; *two* T.

87. *vuele*] *euele* IMT.

88. G *omits.* *he*] *and* I. *nat*] *it nougt* T. *to pacience*] *compacience* (I) I. *ich*] *he* M.

89. *wisshede*] *whisshede* P; *wysched* E; *wijsschede* M. *a*] IT *om.*

90. *the*] *þat* I. *that*] *þe* TG. *þo*] *þe* MG.

91. *Disches*] *Bope disches* ITG. *dobeleres*] *dobelers* EIM. *with* P; & G. *deyntes*] *dentes* M.

92. *Iangly*] *iangle* IMTG. *þys*] *þat* M. *Iordan*] *yurdan* I; *iurdan* T. *with*] *wit* P. *Iuste*] *iusty* T.

And a-pose hym [what] penaunce is · and purgatorie
on erthe, 93

And whi he lyueþ nat as he lereþ! · “let be,” quap
pacience,

Patience said the
doctor would do
penance soon,

And seide, “þow shalt seo þus sone · whan he may na
more,

He shal haue a penaunce in hus paunche · and pufte at
eche worde; 96

Thenne shulleþ his gottes godelen · and [he] by-
gynne to galpe.

Now he hath dronke so depe · he wol deuiny sone,

and prove that
such dishes are a
penitent's food.

And preouen it by here apocalips · and by þe passion
of seint aueray, 99

þat noþer bacon ne braun · blammanger ne mortreus
Ys noþer fissh ne flessch · bote fode for penauntes;

And take witesse of þe trinite · and take his felawe
to witesse,

What he fond in a forel · of a freres lyuyng; 103

And bote þe ferste leef be lesyng · leyf me neuere after!

216

“He will begin
and talk lies.
Then ask him
about Do-well.”

And þenne is tyme to talke · and to apose this doctour
Of dowel and of dobet · and yf dobet do eny penaunce.”

Ich sat stille as pacience wolde · and thus sone þis doctour,

93. *hym*] G *om.* [what IMETG]
wich P.

95. *seo*] i-seo M; se IETG. þus]
now T.

96. G *omits.* Thenne] And þan I.
paunche] foule panche I. *eche*] ech
a I; iche a T.

97. *shulleþ*] schulle M; schul E;
schal IG; shal T. *his*] is P. *gottes*
gottes MT. *godelen*] gopelen EI.
his—godelen] gothelen his gottes I;
guldelen (*sic*) his guttes T. [he EM]
PIT *om.* by-gynne] gynne IT;
gonne E.

98. *Now*] For now T; & whenne G.
dronke] ydronke E; i-dronke M. *so*
þus M; G *om.* *he*] a I; & T. *deuiny*
dyuyne IMEG; deuyne T.

99. *preouen*] proueþ E. *it*] M *om.*
here] þe M. *apocalips*] pocalips I;

pokalipsis T. *by* (2)] IT *om.* *aueray*
so PEG; auerey MI; aueroy T.

100. *blammanger*] ne blammanger
I; blanmanger M; blamyngere E.
mortreus] mortreus MT; mortrewes
EG; mortrelx I.

101. *Ys*] Nys M. *penauntes*] pen-
aunce EG.

102. *take* (1)] takeþ E. *of*] at IET.
þe] a I. *his*] is P. *take—witesse*
of his felawe boþe M.

103. *he*] a I. *lyuyng*] leuyng
MT.

104. *bote*] but 3if T. *lesyng*]
lesynges IT. *leaf*] word G. *leyf*
lef M; leue IETG.

105. *talke*] so PMTG; take IE (*as*
in B-text).

106. *of*] MG *om.* *do*] be M. *eny*
my I.

As rody as a rose · roddede hus chekes, 108 Soon the doctor
Kowede and carpede · and conscience hym herde, coughed and
And tolde of a trinite · and to-warde me he lokede— talked.

“What is dowel, sire doctour?” quap ich · “is dobet eny penaunce?” “Is Do-bet penaunce?” said I.

“Dowel?” quap þis doctour · and he drank after, 112 “Do-well,” said

“Do þy neyhebores non harme · ne [þy]-selue noþer, he, and drank,
þanne dost þow wel and wisliche · ich dar hit wel “is to do no
a-vouwe.” harm.”

“Certes, sire,” þanne seide ich · “hit semeþ nat here, “Then you do
In þat ȝe parteþ nat with ous poure · þat ȝe passeþ dowel, not well,” I said,
Noþer louyep as ȝe lereþ · as oure lorde wolde, 117 “for you have
given us
nothing.”

Et uisitavit & fecit redemptionem plebis sue † Luke i. 68.
israel.

And ȝe fare þus with ȝoure sike freres · ferly me þynkeþ,
Bote dowel endite ȝow · *in die iudicii.*”

Thenne conscience ful curteisliche · a contenaunce he 217
made, 120 Then Conscience
asked him the
same question.

And preynte vpon pacience · to preye me be stille,
And seide hym-self, “syre doctour · by so hit be
ȝoure wil, 122

What is dowel and dobet? · ȝe diuynours knowep.”

“Ich haue seide,” seide þe seg · “ȝ can seye no bettere,

108. *roddede*] *ruddede* M; *roded* were E; *ruddite* T.

109. *Kowede*] *Kowhede* E; *Cowhede* I; *Coughide* T; *He cowhede* M.

110. *tolde*] *tolde* him ITG. *a*] þe T. *he*] ET *om.*

111. *dobet* EM] *dobest* PITG; *but* see l. 106.

112. *drank*] *dronk* anon M.

113. *þy*] þyn IE. [*þy* IEG] þi MT; þe P.

114. *G omits.* *Þanne*] And þanne IT. *dost þow*] *dostow* I.

115. *nat*] *noupe* I (*wrongly*).

116. *ous*] þe T.

117. *Noþer*] Ne IT. *louyep*] *louy-eth* nat I; *lyueþ* nouȝt T; *luyep* M;

lyuyep G. *plebis, &c.*] IMTG *om.*

118. *And*] And ȝit T. *ferly*] wonder MG.

119. *Bote dowel*] þat dowel wol I. *endite* IMT] *endit* E; *endyty* P (*but it is not the infinitive here*).

120. *G omits* ll. 120—128. *he*] MT *om.*

121. *preynte*] *prengte* M. *vpon*] vp I. *pacience*] *pacient* E. *be*] to be MT.

122. *by*] be IT; M *om.* *by so*] ȝif E.

124. *Ich haue*] þat haue i T. *seide* (1)] *i-seid* M; *y-seide* I. *seide* (2)] quop I; E *om.* *þe seg*] þat segge IT; þe doctor M. *seye*] se T.

"Do-well," said Bote do as doctours telleþ · for dowel ich hit holde ;
 he, "obeys; Do- þat traueileþ to teche opere · for dobet ich it holde ;
 bet teaches; Do- And he þat dop as he techep · ich halde hit for a
 best both teaches dobest ;

Mat. v. 19. *Qui facit et docuerit, magnus uocabitur."*

"Now þow, clergie," quap conscience · "carpe what is
 dowel." 128

† Clergy declines to express his opinion. "Haue [me] excused," quap clergie · "by crist, bote
 in scole,

Shal no such motif be meued · for me, bote þere,
 For peers loue þe ploughman · þat enpugnede ones
 Alle kyne konnynges · and alle kyne craftes, 132
 Saue loue and leaute · and lounnesse of herte,
 And no tixt takeþ · to preoue þis for trewe

Mat. xxii. 37, 39. Bote *dilige deum & proximum* · and *Domine, quis*
 Ps. xiv. 1 (Vulg.). *habitabit in tabernaculo, &c. ;*

And preoueþ by pure skyle · inparfit alle þynges, 136

† Mark x. 18. *Nemo bonus,*

Bote leel loue and treuthe · þat loþ is to be yfounde."

218 Quap peers þe ploughman · "*pacientes uincunt.*

Cf. Mat. x. 23.

By-for perpetual pees · ich shal preoue þat ich seide,
 And a-vowe by-for God · and for-sake hit neuere, 140
 That *disce, doce, dilige · deum* and thyn enemye ;

125. *Bote*] Forte M. *telleþ*] techep
 IT.

126. *for—holde*] I holde it for a
 dovette IT. *it holde*] holde hit M.

127. *for*] E om. *a dobest*] so PE ;
 þe beste IMT. *magnus*] hic magnus E.

129. [*me* EIMTG] P om.

130. *motif*] motyng M. *meued*
 ITG] meuet M; meeuede P. *bote*] T
 om. *þere*] opere (*wrongly*) I.

131. *For*] But for T. *ploughman*
 palmare I; palmere T. *þat*] 3ent
 þat (*sic*) I; 3et þat pers T. *en-*
pugnede] enpyngned E; enpungned
 M; ingpuned ITG. (N.B. IT *are*
corrupt here.)

133. *lounnesse*] lownesse EIMTG.

134. *takeþ*] ne takeþ IT; to take M.

135. *proximum*] patrem I; proxi-
 mum tuum T. *and*] et I. *in taber-*
naculo] in tabernaculo tuo M; I om.

136. *inparfit*] vnparfit EG.

137. *yfounde*] founde EITG; founden
 M.

138. *uincunt*] omnia vincunt T.

139. *preoue*] preue ITG; proue E;
 prouen M; *badly spelt* preeouye P;
 see l. 136.

140. *a-vowe*] afowe E.

141, 142. *Made into one line in IT*
 (*badly*); *for* l. 142, I *has—helpe*
 emfothe (*sic*) þy myght; T *has—*
 helpe him for þi miȝt. *emforth*] *euenforþ* E; *eueue-forþ* M. *myȝt* E]
myȝte G; *miȝt* T; *myght* I; *myth*
 M; *myȝth* P.

Hertely þou hym helpe · emforth þy myȝt,

Cast [hote] coles on hus hefde · of alle kynde speche, Cast [hot] coals
upon thine
enemy's head."
Fonde þorgh wit and with worde · hus loue for to
wynne, 144

And ȝif hym eft and eft · euere at hus neede ;
Conforte hym with þy catel · and with þy kynde speche,
And leye on hym þus with loue · tyl he lauhe on þe ;
And bote [he] bowe for þis betyng · blynd mote [he]
worthe ! " 148

And whanne he hadde worded þus · wiste no man after, † When Piers the
Plowman had
thus said, he
suddenly
vanished.
Where peers plouhman by-cam · so priueliche he wente.
And reson ran after · [and] ryght with him ȝeode ;
Saue conscience and cleregie · ich coupe no mo aspye.
And pacience propreliche spak · tho peers was thus
passed, 153

"That loueþ lelly," quap he · "bote lytel þyng coueyteþ. 219
Ich wolde, and ich wil hadde · wymmen al Fraunce
With-oute bruting of burnes · oþer eny blod-sheding ;
Ich take wittnesse," quap he · "at holy writ a partie ;
Pacientes uincunt.

For, by hym þat me made ! · myȝte neuere pouerte, † "I could
conquer all
France if I
wished," said
Patience.
Miseise, ne myschief · ne man with hus tonge
Tene þe eny tyme · and þow take pacience, 160

142. *See note on last page.*

143. [hote EIMTG] out P. *hefde*]
heued I ; hed MT. *kynde*] kyne E ;
kyn I.

144. [þorgh] wiþ þi M. *with*] wiþ
þi M ; IG *om.* for to] forte M ; to I.

145. G *omits.* And] I *om.* ȝif]
ȝef M. *eft—eft*] oft & eft E.

146. Conforte EG] Comforte IMT ;
Conforty P (*but it is the imperative
mood*).

147. *leye*] lauhe M. *lauhe*] lawhe
I ; lawȝen (*sic*) E ; leiȝe (*wrongly*) T.

148. [*he* IMTG] ȝe PM. *bowe*]
knowe þe I ; lauȝe on þe T. *betyng*]
lechyng T. *mote*] bot (!) E. [*he*
IT] ich PE ; y G ; i M. *See B-text.*

149. *whanne*] wanne P. *worded*]
y-worded IM ; sede E. *wiste* IEMTG]

miswritten weste P.

150. *plouhman*] þe plouhman MIT.

151. *after*] þen after E. [*and*
IMTG] PE *om.*

153. And] Saue IT. *propreliche*]
preueili M. *tho*] whanne T. *passed*]
y-passed IT.

154. G *omits.*

155. *hadde*] adde P. *wynnen*] to
wynnen I.

156. *bruting*] brutynge E ; brut-
teynge I ; britynng T ; brennyng MG.
burnes] bernes MG ; buyren I ; burn
T.

157. OBS. *Here S begins again.*
at] of I ; on T.

159. *Miseise*] Misseyse M ; Myseyse
me (!) I. *myschief*] mischeue M.

160. *pacience*] penaunce M.

† and continually
bears it about
with him.

And bere hit in þy bosom · abowte wher þou wendest,
[In þe corner of a cart-whel · wiþ a crowe croune.]
Shal neuere burne be abaissed · þat hath þis a-boute,
Neiþer hete ne hail · ne helle pouke hym greue, 164
Neiþer fuyr, noþer flod · ne be a-fered of enemye;

1 John iv. 18.

Caritas expellit omnem timorem;

Charity will
make thee master
of all men."

Ther nis wyght in þis worlde · þat wolde þe lette
To haue alle londes at þy lykyng · & þe here lord make,
And Maister of alle here meeble · and of here moneye
after, 168

The kyng and alle þe comune · and clergie to þe
aloute

As for here lorde and ledere · and lyuen as þou techest."

220

"Nonsense," said
the doctor;

"no one can
make peace be-
tween the pope
and his enemies."

"This is a [*dido*]," quap þis doctour · "a disours tale!
Al þe witt of þis worlde · ne wyghte mennes strengthe
Can nat performen a pees · of þe pope and of hus
enemys 173

Profitable for boþe parties"— · and put þe bord fram
hym,

And tok conscience and clergie · to counsel, as hit
were.

221

Conscience bids
farewell to all,

Ac ich took kepe how conscience · [congede] sone þis
doctour, 176

161. *G omits.* wher] wer P.

162. *From I; also in METS; PG omits. a]* o T. *croune]* miswritten crouns E. *In the margin of M—experimentum.*

163. *burne]* buyren I; barn MG. *hath þis]* hereþ hit M. *a-boute]* abouten hym I; aboute hym STG.

164. *Neiþer]* Ne neuere IT; Noþer M. *hail]* habel T; chele G.

165. *noþer]* ne I. *afered]* a-ferd STG; afere E.

166. *Ther nis]* Ne þer is I; Ne þere nis T. *wyght]* wiz T; wit G.

168. *alle]* SG om. *meeble]* moebles I. *moneye]* maynye I.

169. *comune]* comunes E. *aloute]* loute EIST.

170. *ledere]* here ledere IT; heore ledere M. *lyuen]* þow lyue M.

171. *G omits. a]* T om. [*dido* MT] dydo S; dico P; dede (*sic*) I; see B-text. *a dido]* abido (*sic*) E.

172. *þe]* þis I. *þis]* al þis T; þe S. *worlde]* written wordle P. *ne]* and IT. *wyghte]* wyȝty E.

173. *and of]* ne for E; and IMST; ne of G.

174. *fram]* fro EIMG; from T.

175. *conscience—clergie]* cleryge & conscience ISTG.

176. *ich—conscience]* conscience I toke kepe ISTG. [*congede* SG] conged T; conueide P; coueyted EIM (*all evidently corruptions of congeide or congede*).

And sitthe he seide to clergie · so þat ich hit herde,
 “By cryst,” quap conscience · “clergie, ich wol nat lye,
 Me were leuere, by oure lorde · and ich lyuye sholde, and says he
 Haue pacience *parfitliche* · þan half þy pack of bokes! prefers Patience
 Lettrure and longe studie · letteþ ful menye, 181 to half Clergy's
 That thei knoweþ nat,” quap Conscience · “what is books.
 kynde pacience.

For-thi,” quap conscience · “christ ich þe by-teche, Conscience and
 With pacience wol ich passe · *parfitnesse* to fynde.” Patience depart.

Thus þei wente forþ here way · with gret wil ich 222
 folewede. 185 Conscience and
 Patience set out
 as pilgrims.

Thenne hadde pacience, as pilgrimes hauen · in here
 poke vitailles,

Sobrete and symple-speche · and soþfast-by-leyue,
 To comforty hym and conscience · yf þei come in place
 Ther vnkyndnesse and couetyse ys · hongry contreis
 boþe. 189

And as þei wente by þe wey · of dowel gan þei carpe; Soon they meet
 Thei mette with a mynstral · as me þo pouhte. with a minstrel.

Pacience a-posed hym · and preide he sholde telle 192 Patience asks
 him who he is.

What craft þat he couþe · and cortesly he seide,
 “Ich am a Mynstral,” quap þis man · “my name is “I am *Actiua-*
actiua uita, vita,” he says.

Peers prentys þe plouhman · alle people to comfortye.”

179. *Here* F begins again. *lyuye*] brius (sic) E.

lyue EMFSTG; leue I.

180. *bokes* EIMG] bokis T; bokus S; bookus F; boukes P.

181. *Lettrure*] For *lettrure* F. *studie*] studyng E.

182. *thei*] hi S. *knoweþ*] ken F.

183. *For-thi*] For-whi M; And forþi F. *þe*] þou E.

184. *With*] Whit P; For with F.

185. *Thus—forþ*] And wenten forþ in I; And wenten forþ on T. *wil*] witt E; wil þan F.

186. *hauen*] han IMFTG. *here*] so in PEIFSTG; his M.

187. *Sobrete*] Sobernesse G; So-

188. *comforty*] comforte IMFS; confort E; counforte T.

189. *Ther*] Where S. *ys*] ben E; I om. *hongry contreis*] & hongri contre S.

190. *wente*] wende E. *gan*] gunne M; gonne T. *þei* (2)] y G.

191. *Thei*] & F.

192. *a-posed*] opposed I (*wrongly*). *telle*] him telle G.

194. *þis*] *miswritten* þees P. *is*] S om. *actiua uita*] *vita actiua* F.

195. *þe*] M om. *alle*] þe F. *com-fortye*] comforte IMFS; confort E; counforte T.

† "What sort of
minstreley do
you use?"

"What manere mynstralcie · my dere frend," quap
conscience, 196

"Hast þow vsed oþer haunted · al þy lyf-tyme?"

"Mynstralcie can ich nat mucche · bote make men
murye,

"I am a wafer-
seller, and know
but litte of
minstreley.

As a waffrer with waffres · and welcome godes gistes.
Of my labour þei lauhe · þe lasse and þe more. 200

The poure and þe riche · y plese and payn fynde,
And fewe robis ich fonge · oþer forrede gounes.

Wolde ich lye and do men lauhe · þenne lacchen ich
sholde

Mantels oþer moneye · a-mong lordes Minstrales. 204

Because I can
play neither on
tabour, trump,
nor pipe,

Ich can nat tabre ne trompe · ne telle faire gestes,

Farten, ne fipelen · at festes, ne harpen,

Iapen ne Iogelen · ne gentelliche pipe,

Noþer sailen ne sautrien · ne singe with þe giterne. 208

I get no gifts,
save that the
223
parish prays
for me on
Sunday.

Ich haue none gode gyftes · of these grete lordes

For no bred þat ich by-trauaile · to bryng by-fore
lordes.

Ne were hit þat þe parishe · prayeþ · for me on sone-
dayes,

196. *manere*] *maner* of F.

197. *Hast þow*] *Hastow* F; *Hast*
M. *vsed—haunted*] *i-vsed* and
i-haunted M.

198. *can ich*] *i can* M. *men*] *men*
be F.

199. *waffrer*] *wafrer* IF; *waw-
frere* E; *wafer* (*sic*) S. *waffres*] *wafres* I; *wafers* S; *her wafres* F.
and] *ay I. welcome*] *wolcome* P.
godes] G *om. gistes* EMFS] *gustes*
P; *gestes* I; *gestis* T.

200. *lauhe*] *lauzed* E. *lasse—
more*] *more* & *þe lasse* S.

201. *plese*] *pleased* E.

202. *oþer*] & S.

203. *lacchen*] *cacchen* M.

204. *Mantels*] *Mantel* E; Or
mantel I; *Oþer mantel* T; *Mantellus*
menyuor F. *lordes*] *oþer* T.

205. *naþ*] *noþer* M. *faire*] *tidy* F.

206. G *omits. Farten*] *Faiten* I.
fipelen IST] *fipele* MF; *fipelyn* P.
ne (2)] *noþur* F.

207. *Iogelen* T] *Iogelyn* P; *Iogolen*
E; *iogele* IF; *Iogole* S; *iangeln* MG.

208. *Noþer*] *Ne neyþer* I; *Ne*
noþer T. *sautrien*] *sauteryen* I;
sauterien T; *sautren* M.

209. *gode*] *goude* P; *goud* S.
gyftes] *gestes* EMG.

210. SG *omit. by-trauaile*] *by-
trauaily* P; *bi-trauaile* M; *bytrauyle*
E; *bitrauailed* F; *trauaile* I; *be-
trauaille* *ferst* T. *to bryng*] *ferst* I.
to—lordes] *ne bringe hem bifore* F.

211. G *omits. Ne were*] *Nere* I.
parishe I] *parish* T; *pareche* E;
parshe P; *parsche* M; *parisch-preest*
FS. *on*] *on þe* E; *a* F; *M om.*
sone-dayes] *sone-days* P; *sonday* F.

Ich am sory þat ich sew oþer sette · bote for my-self one.
Ac þe prest and oþer people · prayeþ for peers plouh-
man, 213

And for me, actyf, hus man · þat ydelnesse hate. I hate idleness.
For lordes and lorelles · luthere and goode,
Fro myhel-masse to myhel-masse · ich fynde mete and
drynke. 216

Ich fynde payn for þe pope · and praye hym ich wolde I find bread for
þat pestilences to pees · and to parfit loue turne. the pope himself.

For founde ich þat hus blessing · and hus bulle myghte If he would but
Letten þis luþer eir · and lechen þe syke— 220 send me a cure
As þe booke bereþ wittnesse · þat he bere myghte for the pestilence,
In hus mouth mercy · and amende vs alle,

Super egros manus imponent, & bene se habe- Mark xvi. 18.
bunt—

Thenne wolde ich bee busy · and buxum to helpe then would I
Eche kynne creature · þat on cryst by-leyueþ. 224 be busy indeed.

For sutthe he hap the power · þat seynt peter hadde, 224
He hap pureliche þe pot · with þe same salue ; Surely the pope
Argentum & aurum non est michi ; quod autem Acts iii. 6.
habeo, hoc tibi do, &c.

212. G omits. sew MS] sewe P ;
sowe IT ; se E. þat—sew] to sowe F.
sette] sitte E (wrongly). one] alone
S ; I om.

213. oþer] þe oþer E. prayeþ]
preche I. peers] peres þe I ; piers
þe T.

214. for] eke for F. hate] hatuþ S.

215. For] IT om. lorelles] for
lorelles E ; lorels als F. luthere] þe
liþur F ; þe luþere I ; & luþere T ;
lyþere M. goode EMTG] þe goode
IF ; goude PS.

216. myhel] so PM ; mychel E ;
mykel F ; mighel T ; myþhel SG ;
muchel I (twice). to—masse] F om.

218. pestilences] pestilens S.
to (2)] IT om. parfit] S om.

219. founde ich] i fond M
(wrongly).

220. luþer] lyþere IFSG. eir] 3er om.

M ; folc I (wrongly) ; T om. lechen
EMG] lechin P ; leche IFS ; liþe T.

221. þe] F om. booke] bookes
PEG ; bokes M ; bookus F ; but I
has booke ; T has book ; S has boke ;
the phrase is a common one. bereþ]
bere S.

222. imponent] ponebant IT. se]
MISFGT om.

223. Thenne] And þanne IT. bee
busy] be-sych (!) S. to] for to F.

224. Eche] Ech a IFS. by-leyueþ]
leueth IST.

225. sutthe] seþþe MI ; sith F ;
suþ E ; siþþe TG. the] E om. seynt]
IT om. hadde] hadde þanne I.

226. pureliche—salue] þe potte
with þe salue · boþe tuo togedre I ;
þe pot with þe salue T (which runs
ll. 225, 226 into one). quod—do] S
om.

Perhaps men are
not worthy!

Ac yf myghte of miracle hym faile · hit is for men
beep nat worthi

For to haue þe grace of god · and no gult in þe pope.

No blessing can
come while pride
remains.

For may no blessynge do vs bote · bote yf we wol
amende, 229

Ne mannes preier make pees · among cristine people,
Til prude be pureliche for-do · and þat þorw payn de-
faute ;

(239)

Cf. Ezek. xvi. 49.

*Ex habundantia panis et uini turpissimum
peccatum aduenit.*

The sin of Sodom
was due to ex-
cess of food."

Pure plente of payn · þe people of Sodomye, 232
And reste and riche metes · rybaudes hem made."

"Pees!" quap pacience · "ich praye þe, syre actyf!

For þauh neuere payn ne plouh · ne potage were, 235

237

"I will provide
for all people,"
said Patience.

Prude wolde putte hym-self forþ · þauh no plouh eryl.

Hit am ich þat fynde alle folke · and fram hunger saue,

Thorgh þe heye helpe of hym · þat me hyder sente,

And seide, 'lo, here lyf-lode ynowe' · yf oure by-leyue
be trewe. 239

"All living
things have food
given them.

For lent was þer neuere lyf · bote lyflode were yshape,
Wher-of opere wherfore · and wher-with to lyuen ;

The worme þat woneþ vnder erthe · and in water fisshes,

The crykett by kynde of fur · and corlew by the wynde,

227. *Ac*] F *om.* *yf*] M *om.*
myghte] I *mizte* T. *faile*] *faileþ* M.
hit] M *om.* *for*] for þat F. *beep*] *beþ* IT; ben M; buþ S; be F; þat
beþ E. *worthi*] worþ T.

228. *For*] IT *om.* *god*] *miswritten*
good P. *gult*] gold T. *in*] of IT.

229. *yf*] M *om.* *ne*] S *om.*

230. *preier* F] *preiere* ME; *prayer*
I; *prayer* S; *preyour* T; *badly spelt*
preir P. *cristine*] þe *cristine* F.

231. *prude*] so PE; *pride* MIFT.
Ex] IT *om.*

232. *Pure*] For pure F; For þe I;
T *om.*

233. *And*] *Purw* F. *hem*] hym
S; were F.

234. *Pees*] *Pees* now F. *þe*] þow

IFT.

235. *neuere*] *noþer* F. *ne* (2)]
pese ne F.

236. *Prude*] so PE; *Pruyde* T;
Pride MIF. *self*] E *om.* *þauh*] &
þow F. *no plouh*] þe *plow* were to
S (*absurdly*). *plouh*] *plowman* E.

238. *heye*] IT *om.* *sente*] *sende* M.
240, 241. S' *transposes these two*
lines.

240. *was—neuere*] *neuer* was here I.
was þer] *waster* F. *bote*] but gif M.
yshape] hym shape S; shame (1) T.

241. *opere*] and MFS. *and*] or M.

243. *The*] A F. *by* (1)] by þe FS.
of] E *om.* *fur*] þe fyre I; þe fuyr
T; feor M. *and*] E *om.* *corlew*] þe
curlu M; þe corlu S · þe curlew T.

Bestes by gras & by greyn · and by grene rotes. 244

In menyng þat alle men · myghte þe same

Lyuen þorgh leell by-leyue · as oure lord wittnesseþ,

238

So also man lives
by true belief."

Quodcunque petieritis patrem in nomine meo, John xiv. 13.

dabitur enim uobis ; & alibi :

Non in solo pane uiuit homo, sed de omni uerbo, Mat. iv. 4.

quod procedit de ore dei."

"Hast þow ay," quap actyf · "suche mete with þe?"

"Ȝe," quap Pacience, and hente · out of hus poke 248

Then Patience
drew forth a
piece of the
Pater-noster.

A pece of þe pater-noster · and profrede to vs alle.

And ich lustnede, and lokede · what lyflode hit were ;

þanne was hit *fiat-uoluntas-tua* · þat sholde fynde Mat. vi. 10.

vs alle.

"Haue, actyf," quap pacience · "and eet this when þe

hungreþ,

252

"Take and eat
this when
hungry.

Oþer whenne þow clomsest for colde · oþer clyngest for
drouthe ;

And shal neuere gyues þe greue · ne grete lordes

wratthe,

Pryson ne oþer payne · for—*patientes uincunt* ;

By so þow be sobre · of syght, and of tounge boþe, 256

Only be always
sober,

In ondyng, in handlyng · in alle þy fyue wittes,

That þow care for no corn · for cloþ ne for drynke,

Ne deþ drede, ne deuel · deye as god lykeþ,

244. *Bestes*] Beste I. *greyn*] mis-
written greyen P.

246. *lord*] S om. *enim*] MFS om.
dabitur—uobis] I om. *sed—dei*] IS
om. *de* (1)] in EM ; T om.

247. *Hast þow*] Hastow I ; What
hastow F. *ay*] follows actyf in IT.
mete] maner mete F.

248. *Ȝe*] Ȝe parde S ; Ȝe hardiliche
F. *hente*] follows poke in IT. *of—
poke*] his boke (sic) E.

249. *pece* ITMFSE] pice P. *to*]
it to IT ; S om.

250. *lustnede*] lestenede I ; lest-
nide T ; lustede (!) S ; lustened þo F.

251. *þanne*] And þanne IT.

252. *þe hungreþ*] þou hongrest E.

253. *whenne*] wenne P. *drouthe*]
eny droghte I ; any drouþe T ; þe
drouþe F.

255. *payne*] penances M.

256. *By—þe*] Be þou E. *so*] so þat
IT. *boþe*] I om.

257. S omits. *ondyng*] heryng M ;
etyng IT. *þy*] þe MT.

258. *That þow*] Dar þe nat I ; Dar
þe S ; Dar þe no T. *no*] þe I.
for (2)] ne for I. *cloþ*] mete S.
for (3)] ne for IT.

259. *deþ drede*] drede deþ M. *deþ
—deuel*] deuel drede ne deeth F.
deuel] dowel (!) I. *deye*] & deye S ;
but dye F.

and let all else
be at God's will.

Wheþer þorw hunger oþer þorw hete · at hus wil be
hit! 260

For yf þow lyuest after hus lore · þe shorter lyf þe
betere ;

Si quis amat christum · mundum non diligit istum,
[*Sed quasi fetorem · spernes illius amorem.*]

þorgh hus breþ bestes woxen · and a-brode ȝeden ; 264

Ps. cxlviii. 5
(Vulg.).

Dixit & facta sunt.

Ergo þorw hus [breþ] bestes lyuen · boþe men and
fisshes,

239

As wytnesseþ holy wryte · when we seyn oure graces,

Ps. cxliv. 16.

*Aperis tu manum tuam, & imples omne animal
benedictione.*

The Israelites
lived 40 years in
the wilderness.

Hit is founde þat fourty wynter · folke leueden and
nouht tyleden,

And out of flent sprange [þe] flod · þat folke and
bestes dronken. 268

Heaven was
closed in the
time of Elias.

And in elyes time · heuene was yclosed,

That no reyne reynede · þus redeþ men in bookes,

That menye wynter men lyueden · and of no mete
telden.

Seven men (at
Ephesus) slept
more than 60
years."

Seuene slepen, [as] seith þe book · more þan syxty
wynter, 272

Lyueden with-outen lyflode · and at þe laste a-wakeden.

260. þorw (1)] by F; fore T.
þorw (2)] EIF *om.* at] as S.

261. yf] F *om.* lyuest] lyue M.

263. In E *only*.

264. þorgh] For þow (*sic*) F.
Dixit] Ipse dixit F. *sunt*] fuerunt
IT. *Dixit—sunt*] M *om.*

265. *Ergo*] I *om.* [breþ SIT]
PEM *om.*; but see last line. hus
breþ] him F. men] man M.

267. founde] S *om.* folke] þat
folke P (*but* EIMFS *omit* þat); men
MS. nouht tyleden] tylied noght I;
tilde nouȝt T.

268. And] But M. out] E *om.*
flent] þe flent S; þe flynte IT. [þe
IMFEST] P *om.*

269. And] Also F. elyes] helyus
S; Elye is T.

270. reynede] ne ron T; ne roen
(*sic*) I; reynede þanne F. þus—
men] thus rat men IT; as clerkus
rede F. in] on I.

271. That] & F. wynter] wyntres
E. of] I *om.* telden] so PES;
tolden M; toolden F; ne tiled I; ne
tilide T.

272. slepen IMF] slupen PE;
sleptun S; slepte T. [as EIMFS] a
P; T *om.* syxty] þre hundred E.

273. Lyueden] Leueden P (*but* see
next line); & lyuede F; And lyueden
T. þe] S *om.*

And yf men lyueden as mesure wolde · sholde neuere
be defaute

Among crysten creatures · yf crystes worde be trewe ;

Dabo tibi secundum petitionem tuam."

† Cf. Ps. xxxvi. 4.

"What is parfyt pacience?" · quap *Activa uita.* 276

241

"Meeknesse and Mylde speche · and men of on wil,
þe whiche wil loue ledeþ · to oure lordes place ;

† "What is perfect Patience?"
said *Activa-vita.*

And þat is charite, chaumpion · chief of alle vertues,

And þat is poure pacient · alle perilis to suffre." 280

"Where pouerte and pacience · plese more god al-
myghty

"Is patient
poverty better
than well-spent
wealth?"

Than do ryghtful richesse · and resonably to spende?"

"Ȝe, *quis est ille?*" quap pacience · "quyk *laudabimus*
eum!

Thauh men rede of riche · ryght to þe worldes ende,

"What rich man
is out of dread
when his death-
hour draws near?"

[I wist neuere renke þat riche was · þat whan he rekne
sholde,] 285

And whan he drouh hym to þe dep · þat he ne dradde
hym sarrer

Than eny poure pacient · and þat preoue ich by reyson.

Hit are bote fewe folke of these riche · þat ne falleþ in
arerage, 288

274. *yf*] M *om.* *defaute*] þe
faute I.

275. *worde*] wordes IST. *trewc*] trywe P. *tuam*] cordis tui E.

276. *What is*] Wiþ his T.

277. *on*] oo F; o IST.

278. *whiche*] wiche P. *wil*] þat S. *ledeþ*] lat IT; lede M.

279. *chief*] & cheef F.

280. *þat*] þus S. *is*] his F. *poure*] pure S (*but* poure = poor; see next line). *pacient*] pacience MS; see I. 287.

281. *Where*] Wheþer MFT. *and*] or S.

282. *do*] dooth F; IT *om.* *spende*] dispende T.

283. *ille*] hie F. *pacience*] concience M. *laudabimus*] laudemus I.

284. *Thauh*] For þogh F. *riche*]

richesse IMT. *worldes* EIMFT] wordles P; worlus S.

285. *Supplied from B-text. Without this line, the sense is quite incomplete; but I can find it in no C-text MS.*

286. *And whan*] Whan F; þan whan I; þat whanne T. *drouh*] drow ES; drogh I; drou M. *hym* (1)] I *om.* *dradde*] drat M. *sarrer*] sarre M; sorere EI; sorrer F; sorrere T.

287. *þat*] E *om.* *preoue ich*] i preue M.

288. *Here one leaf is lost in G; down to xvii. 41. Hit are*] þer ar F; þer ben E. *of*] in T. *these*] thees P; þe M; þis IT. *ne*] hy ne S; þei ne T. *arerage* IMS] arirage PE; rerage F; arrerage T.

243

The poor claim
joy hereafter.

Thar þe poure dar plede · and preoue by pure reysounē
To haue a-lowaunce of hus lorde; · by lawe he
cleymeth ioie,

That neuere ioie hadde · of [rightful] Iuge he askep;
And seith, 'lo, briddes and bestes · þat no blisse
knoweþ, 292

Beasts and birds
are grieved by
the winter,

And wilde wormes in wodes · þorw wynter þow hem
greuest,

but have
summer after-
wards.

And makest hem wel ney meek · and mylde for defaute;
After þan þow sendest hem somere · þat is [here]
souereyn ioie,

And blisse to alle [þat] been · bope wilde and tame.
Then may beggers, [as] bestes · after blysse asken, 297
þat al here lif hauē lyued · in langour and defaute.'

Beggars will
have bliss
some time.

Bote god sende hem [som] tyme · of som maner ioie,
Oþer heer oþer elles-wher · elles were it reuthe; 300
For to wroper-hele was he wrouzt · þat neuere was
ioie yshape.

Dives had joy
once.

Angeles þat in helle now been · hadden som tyme ioie,
And *Dives* in his deyntes [lyuede] · and in *douce*
uyē;

289. *Thar*] þere IT; þer EMFS.
dar IMFSET] der P. *preoue*] ap-
parently prooue P; but see l. 287.

290. *hus—he*] þes þe lawe (sic) S.
lawe—ioie] pure lawe he claymeth
IT.

291. *That*] Ioie þat IT (cf. last
line); He þat F. *hadde*] he hadde
M. [rightful IFST] rithful M;
ryght PE; see B-text. *he*] T om.

292. *lo*] to F. *blisse*] blisse ne I;
ioie M.

293. *wodes*] þe woodus F. *þorw*]
in M. *wynter*] wynteres IST.

294. *ne*] ful T. *ney E*] neye I;
nyze S; ny F; nei; T; apparently
ner in P (but possibly meant for nei);
M om.

295. *þan*] þen E; þat F; þis S;
M om. *After þan*] þer-after IT.
sendest] seyndest P; but see l. 299.

[*here* IST] heore M; her F; hem P.

296. *Here* eight leaves are lost in
I; down to xviii. 58. *to*] also to F.
[*þat* MFSET] P om. *wilde*] to wilde
T.

297. [*as* ME] as þo F; and PST.
blysse] a blisse T.

298. *lif*] lyf-tyme S. *hauen*] han
METS; haue F. *lyued*] lyuede P;
i-lyued M; I-ledde F.

299. *Bote*] & but F. [*som*] sum
T; PEMFS om. *tyme*] a tyme F.

300. *were*] where P.

301. *wrouzt* FT] wrouzth P; wrozt
ES; wrout M. *yshape*] shapen M.
ioie yshape] in ioie T.

302. *in—now*] now in helle MS.

303. *And*] For T. *his*] M om.
deyntes] so PET; deyntees F; denty-
uous M; dentepus S. [*lyuede* TS]
lyuynge PEMF.

And now he buyeþ hit ful bitere · he is a beggere of
helle. 304

Many man hath hus ioye here · for alle here wel dedes, 243

And lordes and ladyes ben callid · for leodes þat pay God gives some
haue, rich men their
reward here.

And slepiþ, as hit semeþ · and somere euere hem
folewep;

Whan deþ a-wakeþ hem of here wele · þat were here † But, after
so ryche, death, they are
in purgatory or
hell." 308

þan aren hit pure poure þynges · in purgatorie oþer in
helle!

Dauid in þe sauter · of suche makeþ mynde, 310

And seith, *dormierunt [sompnum suum];* & Ps. lxxv. 6
(Vulg.).

*nichil inuenerunt omnes uiri diuiciarum [in
manibus suis];*

Et alibi: Velut sompnum surgencium, & cet. Ps. lxxii. 20
(Vulg.).

Hic explicit passus sextus de Dowel.

304. *ful*] FTS *om.* *bitere*] bitturly
F. *is*] his P. *he—beggere*] a begger
he is F. *of*] in MT.

305. *man hath*] men han M. *hus*
PS] his FET; heore M.

306. *and*] an P. *callid*] i-called
F; cald EMT. *leodes*] ledes M. *pay*]
S *om.*

307. *euere—folewep*] hem folweth
euere F.

308. *Whan*] Wan P; But whanre
T. *were*] where P, *here*] ere E.

309. *aren*] arn M; ar F; beþ S;
ben E; haren P. *hit*] it T; hy E;
þei MFS.

310. *Dauid*] & dauid F. *suche*]
shuche P. *And seith*] With F; S
om. [*sompnum suum*] supplied from
F. *omnes—diuiciarum*] MFST *om.*
[*in—suis*] supplied from E. *alibi*]
iterum M. *Et alibi, &c.*] E *om.*

COLOPHON. MT *omit.* *Hic*]
EFS *om.* *de dowel*] S *om.*

PASSUS XVII. (DO-WEL VII.)

Incipit passus septimus.

(243)

Alas! that riches
should rob man's
soul of God's
love!

Alas! þat [richesse] shal reue · and robbe mannes
soule

[Fro] þe loue of oure lorde · at hus laste ende!

Thei þat haue hure hyre by-fore · aren eueremore poure,
And shulle nat deye out of dette · to dyne er they
deseruen hit. 4

Workmen are
not paid before-
hand.

When here deuer is don · and his daies iourne,
þen may men wite what he is worþ · and what he hap
deserued;

And nouht to fonge by-fore · for drede of disalouwyng.
So ich say by 3ow riche · hit semeþ nat 3e shulle 8
Haue two heuenes · for 3oure her-beyng.

244

Even wild beasts
enjoy the summer,

Muche myrthe is in may · a-monge wilde bestes,
And so forth whil somer lasteþ · heore solace dureþ;

TITLE. Hic incipit passus septimus de dowl M; Incipit passus septimus PE; Incipit septimus F; Passus sextus de dowl T.

OBS. S omits Passus xvii. to xxi.

1. [richesse EMF] ricchesse T; riche P. and] or M.

2. [Fro ETF] For PM. hus] þe T.

3. Thei] Hewen T. haue—aren] nout han bi-forn · and arn M.

OBS. Here M has lost two leaves, including ll. 4—159.

4. shulle nat] selde T. to dyne] þat dyneþ T. er] or EF. they de-

seruen] he deserue T.

5. here] his TF. deuer] dyner ET; diner F (wrongly).

6. may men] men may T. wite EFT] white P. deserued] deseruede P.

7. And] But T. by-fore] to-fore T. drede] feere F; but see B-text.

8. 3e] þat 3e FT.

10. wilde] þe wilde T.

11. forth ET] furth F; miswritten fort P. whil F] while ET; miswritten wil P. heore] & here E.

And muche myrthe a-monge riche men is · þat han
meoble ynow and heele. 12

[Ac] beggers a-boute myd-somere · bredlees þei soupe,
And ȝut is wynter for hem wors · for wet-shood þei ^{but beggars}
gangen, ^{suffer in winter.}

A-furst and a-fyngred · and foule rebuked

Of pese worlde-riche men · þat reuthe hit is to huyre.

Now, lord, send hem somer som-tyme · to solace and ²⁴⁵
to ioie, 17 <sup>The Lord send
them summer
hereafter!</sup>

That al here lyf leden · in lowenesse and in pouerte!

For alle myghtest þow haue maked · men of grete welþe,

And liche witty and wys · and lyue with-oute neode;

[Ac for þe beste, [as] ich hope · aren somme poure and ^{† But God makes}
some riche. 21 <sup>some men rich
and some poor.</sup>

Ryght so haue reuthe of ous alle · þat on þe rode
deydest,

And amende ous of thy mercy · and make ous alle ^{† God give us all}
meeke, ^{grace to amend!}

Louh and leel and louynge · and of herte poure; 24

And send ous contricion · to clanse with oure soules,

And confession, to culle · alle kynne synnes,

And satisfaccion, the whiche fulfulþ · þe fadres will ⁽²⁴⁰⁾
of heuene. <sup>† Contricion,
Confession,
and Satisfaction
are Dowel, Dobet,
and Dobest.</sup>

12. And] F om. meoble] meble
ET; meebus F. ynow] F om.

13. [Ac F] But T; And PE.

14. wet-shood] wetshod T; wat-
schood F; wete shul E; whet-shood
P. þei] þan þei F. gangen] gon ET.

15. A-furst] so PT; Afirst F;
Aþurst E. rebuked] rebukede P.

16. pese F] pes P; þis E. worlde-
riche] written wordle-riche P;
worldelich ETF. Cf. B-text; and
observe the alliteration of riche with
reuthe. hit] FT om. huyre] hure
E; here T; heere F.

17. to (2)] T om.

18. leden] ledden T.

19. myghtest] myȝtest ETF; mis-
written myghtes P. haue] ha F.
maked E] makede P; mad T; maad

F. grete] muche T.

20. liche] ylich T. and ETF] an
P. with-oute] whit-oute P.

21. Ac] T om. [as ETF] P om.
some] TF om.

22. haue] hæ F. of ous] on vs F;
on þi renkis T. þat—deydest] T om.
rode E] roode F; roudé P.

23. of] of al PE; but FT omit al,
which is not wanted. alle meeke]
meke ichone T.

24. Louh] Louȝh F; Louȝ T;
Lowe E.

25. with] whit P.

26. culle] kille T.

27. the whiche] þat ET. fulfull-
eth] fulfilleth F. fadres] fadir F;
fadir T.

And these been dowel and dobet · and dobest of alle ;
Cordis contricio · comep̃ of sorwe in herte, 29
 And *oris confessio* · þat comep̃ of shrifte of mouthe,
 And *operis satisfactio* · þat for synnes payeth,
 And for alle synnes · soueraynliche quiteþ. 32

Cordis contricio, oris confessio, operis satisfactio ;

† These three
instruct all men.

These thre with-outen doute · tholen alle pouerte,
 And lereþ lewed and lered · heh and lough to knowe,
 Ho þat doþ wel oper bet · oper best a-bouen alle ; 35
 And holichurche and charite · here-of a Chartere maden.

† Unless these
three defend us,

Bote þese þre þat ich spak of · on domes day [vs]
 defenden,

246

Elles is in ydel · al oure lyuyng here,
 Oure preyers and oure penaunce · and pilgrimages to
 rome.

Bote oure spences and spending · sprynge of a trewe
 wille, 40

all else is in vain.

Elles is al oure labour lost ; · lo, how men wryten
 In fenestres at þe freres · yf fals be þe foundement !

Christians should
have wealth in
common.

For-thi cristene men scholde been in comun riche · no
 couetise to hym-selue. 43

For seuene synnes þat þer been · þat assailen ous euere,
 The fende folweth hem alle · and fondeþ hem to helpe,

29. *Cordis contricio*] For *contricio*
cordis F. *comeþ*] it cometh F. *in*]
of FT.

30. *And*] And also F.

31, 32. *One line in T*—*Satisfaccion*
for souldis paiþ & alle synnes quyteþ.

31. *operis satisfactio*] *satisfactio*
soply F. *synnes*] synne F.

32. *Cordis—satisfactio*] F om.

33. *These*] Thees P ; Tho T. *with-
outen*] whit-outen P.

34. *lereþ*] leered F. *lered*] eke
lewed (*sic*) F. *heh—lough*] heye &
lowe E ; heiꝝ & louꝝ T ; hy & low F.

36. *a*] T om.

37. *Bote*] And but TF. *þese*] þes
P. *on*] at TF ; vs a (*sic*) E. [*vs*
TF] P om. ; *observe that* E has vs a
for on.

38. *in*] al an T. *ydel*] ydel I-wys
F. *oure*] of oure E. *lyuyng* ET]
leuyng PF.

39. *penaunce*] penaunces TF. *and*]
& oure T. *pilgrimages*] pilgrimage F.

40. *spences*] spens F. *and*] &
oure T. *spending*] spendynges E.
a] E om. *trewe*] trywe P. *wille*]
welle TF.

41. *how men*] what eer me F.

42. *þe*] fals F.

43. *men*] TF om. *cristene*—been]
schuld cristene be F. *no*] non T ;
ne E. *no couetise*] nat couetous F ;
ne coueytise E ; ne coueit G. *to*] for
T. *hym*] hem EFG.

44. *þer*] here G. *þat* (2)] þe whiche
F.

45. *hem*] fast hem F.

And with richesse tho ribaudes · rathest men by-gylen ;
 For þer þat rychesse regneþ · reuerences foleweth, 47
 And þat is plesaunt to pruyde · in poure and in riche.
 The ryche [is] yreuerenced · by reson of his richesse,
 There þe poure is yput by-hynde · and can parauntre
 more 50

247

Where wealth
 reigns, reverence
 follows.

Of wit and of wysedome · þat fer wey is bettere
 Than richesse oper reaulte · and rapen yhurde in heuene.
 For þe ryche haþ muche to rekene · and ryzt softe
 walkip 53

Riches hinder
 men on their
 way to heaven.

The heye wey to-heuene-warde ; · he halt hit nat ful
 euene ;

There þe poure presseþ by-fore · with a pak at hus
 rygge,

Opera enim illorum seq[u]untur illos.

Rev. xiv. 18.

Batauntlyche, as beggers don · and boldeliche he
 craueþ, 56

For hus pouerte and pacience · perpetuel ioye.

Also pruyde in richesse regneþ · rapen þan in pouerte ;
 Oper in þe maister oper in þe man · som mancion he
 shewith. 59

Pride reigns
 in riches,

Ac in pouerte þer pacience is · pruyde hath no myzte,
 Ne non of the seuene synnes · sitte [ne may] þer longe,
 Ne haue power in pouerte · yf pacience hit folewe.

but Patience in
 poverty.

46. And] But T. with] whit P. tho] þo EFT; of G; miswritten to P.

47. þat] as F; Tom. reuerences] reuerence T. foleweth] hem folwen F.

49. The] And þe T; For þe F. [is EFTG] P om. yreuerenced E] yreuerencede P; reuerenced FT. his EFT] is P; G om.

50. yput] putte E; put FTG. can parauntre] per-auntur can FT.

51. wit FG] wyt T; witt E; whizt (badly) P. fer EFT] feer P; for G.

52. oper] & G. and] an P. yhurde] iherde E; I-herd F; herd T; y-hurd G.

53. ryzt G] ryzt EFT; ryzt P.

55. presseþ] preceth F. with] whit P. enim] TG om. illorum] eorum TG. sequuntur] secuntur FEG; sequuntur PT.

56, 57. G omits.

57. and] & his T.

58. Also] And TG. pruyde] prude E; pride F.

59. in (2)] G om. mancion] mencion T. shewith] schewed E.

60. Ac] But T. þer] þat G. myzte EF] mizt T; myzghte P; mizht G.

61. [ne may EF] may T; no mau (!) P. ne—þer] þer mai G.

62. hit] him F.

The poor man
has no pride.

218

He resists not
wrath.

If he has
gluttony, it is
only for good ale,

not for other
luxuries.

If he yields to
sloth, he suffers
for it.

For þe poure is ay prest · to plesen þe riche, 63
And buxume at his biddynge · for hus breed and drynke ;

And buxumnesse and bost · aren euere-more at wratthe,
And ayther hateþ oþer · and mowen nat diueller to-
gederes.

Yf wratthe wraxle with þe poure · he hath þe worsse
ende ;

For yf þei boþe [pleyne] · þe poure is bote fyble, 68
And yf he chide oþer chater · hym chyuyþ þe worsse.
For loueliche he lokyþ · and lough is hus speche,
That mete oþer moneye · of straunge men mote begge.

And yf glotonye greue pouerte · he gadereþ þe lasse, 72
For hus rentes wol nat reche · ryche metes to bigge ;
þauh hus glotonye be of good ale · he goþ to a cold
beddynge,

And hus heued vn-heled · vneislyliche ywrye ;

For when he streyneþ hym to strecche · þe straw is hus
whitel ; 76

So for hus glotonye and grete synne · he haþ a greuous
penaunce,

That is weylawey whan he awakeþ · and wepeþ for
colde ;

So is he neuere more ful murye · so meschief hym
folweþ.

63. þe (1)] a E. prest EFTG] preest P. to] for to G.

64. his EFTG] is P. and] & his FT.

65. wratthe] werre T.

66. mowen] mow E; may T; moweth F. diueller] come G.

67. wraxle] wrastle G; wrastle EF; wrastliþ T. with] whit P.

68. [pleyne FT] pleyn E; pleyen PG; but see B-text. is] his P. fyble] feble EFTG.

69—71. G omits.

69. chyuyþ] cheueþ EFT. þe] wel þe F.

70. lough is] loweþ E.

72. greue] greueþ E; greuiþ T.

73. rentes] purs F.

74. þauh hus] And þeiþ his T. þauh—be] His glotonye þogh it be F. beddynge] bedde F.

75. G omits. heued] hed E. vn-heled] vnheled þer-with F. vneislyliche] vneisiliche F. ywrye] I-writhe F; wrye E.

76. streyneth—to] wol him G. whitel] sshetis T; schetyn G.

77. So] & so F. hus] F om. and] & his FT. and—synne] G om.

78. That is] With F. weylawey] wel lowe (!) T. awakeþ] wakþ TG. colde] his colde F.

79. G omits. So] & so F. ful] F om. hym] aftur F.

þaugh couetyce wolde with þe poure wraxle · þei mai *Avarice cannot*
 nat come to-gederis, 80 *grapple with*
him fairly,

By þe necke nameliche · her neiþer may henten oþer.

For men knoweþ þat couetise · is of ful kene wil,

And haþ hondes and armes · of a long lengthe, *having too long*
arms

And pouerte is a pety þyng · apereþ nat to hus nauele ;

A loueliche laik was hit neuere · by-twyne a long and *for fair wrestling*
 a short. 85 *with him.*

Thauh auarice wolde angrye pouerte · he hath bote
 lytel myzte ;

249

For pouerte haþ bote pokes · to putten yn hus goodes,

Ther auarice haþ almaries · and yre-bounden cofres. 88

And wheþer be betere to breke · lasse boost hit makeþ, *What is a*
 To breke a beggers bagge · þan an yre-bounden cofre ? *beggar's bag to*
an iron coffer ?

Lecherye loueth none poure · for he hath bote lytel *Lechery loves*
 seluer, *not the poor.*

Ne doþ men dyne dylicatliche · neyþer drynk wyne ofte.

A straw for þe stywes ! · hy stod nat ful longe 93

And þay hadde non oþer haunt · bote of poure peple !

Thauh slewþe suwe pouerte · and serue nat god to paye, *He is saved*
 Meschief is ay a mene · and makeþ hym to penke, 96 *from sloth by*
adversity.

That [god is] hus grettest help · and no gome elles,

80. *þaugh*] And þei; T; þan E. *F.*
with] whit P. þe] FG om. *wrawle*] *drynk wyne*] wyn to drynken F.
wraskle E; *wrastle* FT; *wrangle* *none*] no FTG. *bote—seluer*] litel
 G.

81. *By*] And by F; And be T.
her neiþer] nere noþer E. *neiþer*] *to spende* G.

noon FG; non T.

82. *ful*] a FTG. *kene wil*] clene
 wyes (!) E.

84. *a*] but a F; but T; bote a G.
pety] petit F; pite (!) T.

85. *laik*] loke E. *a short*] schorte
 F; a sshort one T.

86. *Thauh*] And þei; T. *auarice*
 EF] auerice PG; so in l. 88. *angrye*] *so* PE; angre FTG. *myzte* F] myzt
 ET; myzte P; myzte G.

87. *pouerte*] he (sic) E.

88. *almaries*] almalye E. *and*] &
 EFTG; an P. *gre*] yrene T; yren

F.

89, 90. FG omit. *gre*] yren T.

91. *Lecherye*] And lecherie T.
none] no FTG. *bote—seluer*] litel
 to spende G.

92. *men dyne*] hem drinke G.
drynk wyne] wyn to drynken F.

93, 94. *One line in T*—A straw for
 þe stewis it stood · hadde þei no
 haunt but of pore. *stywes*] stufes E;
 stywes FG; stewis T. *hy*] þei F;
 hit G. *haunt*] help G. *of*] of þe
 FG.

95. *Thauh*] And þei; T. *suwe*] *sende* T.

96. *ay*] T om. *a*] F om. *and*] *þat* T.

97. [*god is* EFTG] good P (omit-
 ting is). *hus*] T om.

And he is *seruaunt* al-way, he seith · and of hus secte
boþe.

And wheþer he be oþer be nat · he berip þe sygne of
pouerte, 99

And in þat secte oure sauour · sauede al mankynde.

Well may the
patient poor
claim heaven!

For-thi alle poure þat pacient is · of pure ryght may
cleyme

After here endyng heere · heuene-riche blysse.

Much more may
he that forsakes
his wealth,

Much hardyloker may he aske · þat her may haue hus
will

In londe and in lordshpes · and lykyng of body, 104

And for goddes loue leueþ al · and lyueþ as a beggere.

250

As a mayde for a mannes loue · here moder for-sakeþ,

Hure fader and hure frendes · and goop forth with hure
paramour ;

as a betrothed
maid forsakes
her kindred.

Muche is suche a mayde to loue · [of a man þat suche
on takeþ] 108

More þan þat maide is · þat is ymarried by brocage,

As by asent of sondry bodyes · and seluer to bote,

More for couetice of catel · þan kynde loue of þe
mariage.

For so is he
who forsakes
wealth."

· So hit farith by ech a persone · þat possession forsakeþ,
And putteþ hym to be pacient · and to pouerte hym
weddeþ, 113

98. *is*] his G. *secte*] sute T; swete (!) G.

101. *of*] by F. *pure* FG] pur T; poure PE (*by confusion*).

102. *After*] Aftter P. *heuene-riche*] & hy heueneriche F.

103. *Much*] & muche F. *hardy-loker*] hardere T; hardiour G. *may* (2)] miȝte T. *may haue*] hath muche F.

104. *londe*] lonnde P. *lordshpes*] lordsshipe T. *and* (2)] in T.

105. *goddes* EFT] godes G; *mis-written* goodes P.

106. *a*] T om. *for-sakeþ*] for-sok T.

107. *and* (1)] and alle T. *goop*] fareth F. *with*] whith P. *paramour*] paramours TG.

108. *suche a*] þat F. [*of—takeþ* EFG] of man þat suchon takip T; P *has*—here moder for-sakeþ (*repeated from* l. 106); cf. B-text.

109. *maide is*] maydene F. *is ymarried*] married is F.

110. *bodyes*] segges F; *personis* TG. *and*] & eeke F.

111. *couetice*] kinde loue G. *þe*] FT om.

113. *putteþ*] put F; putte T. *to* (2)] TG om. *hym* (2)] hem E; TG om.

þe whyche is sibbe to cryst self · and semblable bope."

Quath Actyf þo al angryliche · and argueynge as hit
were, "What is poverty?" said Active.

"What is pouerte pacient?" quap he · "ich praye þat
þou telle hit." 116

"Paupertas," quap pacience · "*est odibile bonum,*
Remocio curarum, Possessio sine calumpnia,
donum dei, sanitatis mater; See Vincent of Beauvais, *Speculum Historiale*, l. x. c. 71.

Absque solitudine semita, sapiencie tempera-
trix, negocium sine dampno;

Incerta fortuna, absque solitudine felicitas."

"Ich can nat construen al this" · quath *activa uita.* "What is this in English?"

"Parfay," quath pacience · "proprelliche to telle 119

In english, hit is ful harde · ac somdel ich shal telle þe.

DISTINCTIO PAUPERTATIS.

Pouerte is þe fiste poynte · þat prude most hateþ; 251

'Thanne is pouerte good,' quap good skyle · 'þauh hit
greue a lytel, 1. "Poverty is hateful to pride.

Al þat may putten of pruyde · in place þer he regnep.'

Remocio curarum:—

For selde sitt pouerte · þe sothe to declare; 124

As a Iustice to Iuge men · men enioyneþ þer-to no
poure,

Ne to be a mayre ouere men · ne Mynistre vnder
kynges.

Selde is þe poure [yput] · to punysshe eny people,

114. *whyche*] *wyche* P. *self*] *him-selue* FT.

116. *quap he*] F *om.* *praye*] *pray* þe FT.

117. *solitudine*] *solitudine* T (*twice*); *solittudine* G (*twice*).

118. *al*] *wel al* F.

119. *quath*] *þo quod* F. *proprelliche*] & *propurli* F; *parfitliche* G. *telle*] *telle it* T.

120. *In*] *Al þis in* T. *hit*] T *om.* *ac*] *but* T; & F. *somdel*] E *om.* *telle þe*] *schewe* F. *Distinctio, &c.*] *so in* PEF; TG *om.*

122. *quap*] *be* T. *quap—skyle*] & *goostliche* F.

124. *For*] TG *om.* *selde* EG] *seelde* F; *seilde* P; *Shulde* (*wrongly*) T. *sitt*] *sitte* E; *sitteth* F; *sette* (*wrongly*) T; *sit* G.

125. G *omits.* *As a*] Or *as* T. *men* (2)] *me* T. *enioyneþ þerto*] *ioyneth so* F.

126. *a*] T *om.*

127. *Selde* ETG] *Seilde* P; *Ful seelde* F. *þe*] *any* T. [*yput* TG] *I-put* F; *pitt* P; *potte* E; *but see* l. 50.

Ergo pouerte and poure men · parfournen þe comaunde-
ment, 128

Nolite iudicare quemquam.

Possessio sine calumpnia :—

3. The poor do
not win wealth
falsely.

Selde is þe poure ryght riche · bote of hus [riȝtful]
heritage,

He wynneþ nat with wyghtes fals · ne with vnseled
mesures,

Ne borweþ of his neyghebore · bote þat he may wel
paye,

And lyghtly men lenen to fewe men · and men [wene]
hym poure. 132

4. Poverty is the
gift of God.

The feorthe is a fortune · þat florissþ þe soule
With sobrete [from] alle synnes · and al-so ȝut more ;
Hit defendeth þe flessch · fro folyes ful menye :
And a collateral confort · crystes owen sonde ; 136

252

Donum dei.

5. It is the
mother of
health.

ȝut hit is moder of myȝt · and of mannes helthe,
And Frende in alle fondynges · and of foule vueles leche ;

Sanitatis mater.

6. The poor may
walk unrobbed
through the pass
of Alton ;

The syxte, hit is a paþ of pees · ȝe, þorw þe pas of
[altoun] 139

Pouerte myghte passe · with-oute peril of robbynge.

129. *Selde* ETG] Seelde F ; Seilde P. *ryght*] F om. [riȝtful FT] ryght PE ; G om. ; cf. B-text.

130. G omits. *He wynneþ*] Wynneþ he T. *with*] whit P (*twice*). *wyghtes*] whyghtes P ; wiȝtes EF ; wyttes (*wrongly*) T. *vnseled* EF] vnseleide P.

131. *borweþ*] borowe E. *his*] is P.

132. *lyghtly*] *miswritten* lyghly P. *lyghtly—to*] selde me lenen G ; me lenen lyȝtly T. *And—men* (2)] Nat lyȝtly me leeneth to a man F. *to*] bot to E. *and*] ȝif F. *men* (3)] me TG. [*wene* EFTG] P om. *hym*] hem EG ; he be F.

133. *is*] it is FG.

134. G omits. *With*] Whit P. [*from* FT] aȝen E ; whith P ; cf. B-text.

135. *defendeth* FET] defenden G ; defendit P. *ful*] riȝt FG.

136. *And*] TG om. *confort*] confort is F.

137. *ȝut*] & ȝit F. *hit*] T om. *myȝt* EFG] miȝt ; myȝth P. *helthe*] hele T ; help G.

138. *in*] of (*wrongly*) T. *and*] F om. *vueles*] yueles E ; eueles FTG.

139. *pas*] paies T. [*altoun* EF] aueltone T ; aultone G ; haultone P.

140. *Pouerte myghte*] For þere myȝt pouert (*see* l. 141) F. *with*] whit P.

For þer as pouerte passeþ · pees folweþ commenliche,
And euere þe lasse þat eny lyf ledeþ · the lyghter hus
herte is þere,

As he þat wot neuere with wham · in [nyghtes] to
mete;

Paupertas est sine solitudine semita: Seneca.

The seueþe, hit is a welle of wysedome · and fewe
wordes sheweþ,

so poverty is a
safe path.

7. It is a source
of wisdom.

144

For lordes aloweþ hym lytel · oþer leyth ere to hus
reisone;

He tremeþ hus tonge to-treuthe-ward · þat no tresour
coueyteþ;

Sapientie temperatrix.

The eyhteþe, hit is a leel labour · and loþ to take more
Than he may sothliche deserue · in somer oþer in
wynter;

8. It deals fairly
with others.

148

And þauh he chaffare, he chargeþ no los · mowe he
charite wyne;

Negocium sine dampno.

þe nyethe, hit is swete to soules · [is] no suger swettere;
For pacience is hus paneter · and payn to pouerte
fyndeth,

9. It is sweet to
the soul,

And sobrete ȝeueþ here swete drynke · and solaceþ
here in alle angres.

152

141. *commenliche*] comunly T.
pees—commenliche] folweth pees oft
tyme F.

142. *þat eny*] a F. *lyf*] G om.
eny—ledeþ] on lede T.

143. G omits. *neuere*] nere T.
with] whit P. *in*] on T. *[nyghtes]*
nyztes E; *nyȝtes tyme* T; *myȝti tyme*
(sic) F; *myghtes* P. *Paupertas est*
F om. *sine*] absque EFG. *solicitu-*
dine] solitudine T. *Seneca*] F om.

144. *The seueþe*] The seueneþe F;
It semþ T. *hit*] F om. *welle*
EFTG] weelle P.

145. *leyth*] leiþ E; leyen F; lig-
geþ T.

146. *hus*] þe T. *ward*] G om. *Sa-*
piencie, &c.] ETG om.

147. *eyhteþe*] eiȝte T; oþer G.
hit] EG om.

149. *los*] lost E.

150. *þe*] Ne (!) T. *nyȝeþe*] nyȝe
EF; *neiȝe* T. *þe—hit*] Anoper G.
swete] so swete F. *soules*] soule F.
[is T] þer is F; PEG om.

151. *hus*] TG om. *paneter*] panter
EFT; *paniter* G. *payn—pouerte*
pouert payn he T; *pouerte* payn G.

152. *here* (1)] heere P; here
EF; *hire* T. *drynke*] drynkus F.
here (2)] heere P; hire T; hem E;
F om. *alle angres*] angre G.

253 Thus leryde me a lerede man · for oure lordes loue,
seint austyn,
That pure pouerte and pacience · was a lough lyuyng
in erthe,
and a blessing A blessid lyf with-oute busynesse · bote oneliche for
without care." þe soule; 155

Absque solitudine felicitas.

Now god þat al þynge gyueþ · graunte hus saule reste,
That wrot þis to wisse men · what pouerte was to mene!"
(254) Thenne hadde actyf a ledere · þat heyhte *liberum*
arbitrium,

† Then I saw one
who was named
Liberum arbi-
trium (Free-will).

That knewe conscience ful wel · and clergie boþe;
"He þat haþ londe and lordshep," quap he · "at the
laste ende 160

Shal be pourest of power · at hus partyng hennes."

† I asked
Patience if I
might ask him
who he was.

Thenne ich wondrede what he was · this *Liberum*
Arbitrium,

And prayede pacience · þat ich a-pose hym moste.

And [he] suffrede me and seide · "assay hus oþer name."

† I then asked
him whence he
came.

"Leue *liberum arbitrium*," quap ich · "of what londe
ar ye? 165

255

He said he was
Christ's creature,

ʒif þow be cristes creature · for cristes loue, tel me."

"Ich am cristes creature," quap he · "and cristine in
menye place,

And in cristes court yknowe · and of hus kynne a
party;e;

154. *lyuyng*] G om. *in*] on FT.
155. *with*] whit P. *Absque solici-*
tudine] Solitudine T.

156. *þynge*] T om. G *places* god
after saule.

157. *þis*] þus EG.

158. *ledere* EFTG] apparently
lodere T. *heyhte*] hȳte EFT; het
G. *liberum arbitrium*] arbitrium
liberum E.

159. *That*] He TFG.

160. *Here M begins again. He*
þe M. *londe*] lonnde P. *londe*
and] G om. *lordshep*] lordschepe

boþe M

161. *hennes*] elles G.

162. *ich*] T om. *wondrede*] hadde
wondir T. *this*] miswritten thees P;
þat T.

163. *prayede*] preide to F. *ich*]
M om. T is corrupt here.

164. [*he* MFTG] PE om. *me*] F om.

166. *ʒif*] And ʒif T. *tel me*] telle
hit me E; me telleþ M.

167. *place*] so PTFG; a place E;
places M.

168. *yknowe*] ich know (*wrongly*)
E; I knowe wel T.

Is noþer peter þe porter · ne paul with his fauchon, and known to
That wolde defende me heuene dore · dynghe ich neuere Peter and Paul.
so late. 170

At myd-nyȝt, at mydday · my uoise is so yknowe,
þat eche creature þat loueþ criste · welcomeþ me faire."

"Wher-of serue ȝe?" ich seide · "syre *liberum arbi-* † "What do you
trium?" 173 do?" I asked.

"Of som tyme to fyghte," quap he · "falsnesse to de- † "Sometimes I
struye, fight, and some-
times I suffer.

And som tyme to suffre · boþe sorwe and teene,
Layke oþer leue · at my lykynghe chese, 176

To do wel oþer wikke · a wil with a reyson,
And may nat be with-oute a body · to bere me wher † I go about with
hym lykeþ." man's body."

"Thenne is þat body bettere þan þow," quap ich · † "Then is that
"nay," quap he, "no betere; body better than
thou," said I.

Bote as a wode were a fure · þenne worchen [þei]
boþe,

And ayþer is oþeres heete · and also of a wil; 181
And so is man þat hap hus mynde · myd *liberum*
arbitrium.

And þe whyle ich quyke þe cors · cald am ich *anima*; † "I am sometimes
And whenne ich wilne oþer wolde · *animus* ich hyhte, called *Anima*,"
he said;
"also *animus*,

169. *Is*] Nis M. þe] ne (!) E. with] whit P. his] þe T.

170. *wolde*] wole MG; wile T. dore] dere M.

171. G omits. *nyȝt* EF] niȝt T; nyth M; nyȝth P. *at*] ne at M. *uoise*] vois EFT; voys M.

172. G omits. *welcomeþ*] wol- comeþ P.

174. *Of*] MF om. he] y G; he þo F.

175. *suffre*] suffre also F. *sorne* —*teene*] tene & sorewe T.

176. G omits. *leue*] bi-leue M. F has—Where I wol laike or leue · at my likyng I chese.

177. *wikke*] T wicke EM; wike P; wik F; wikkede G. *a wil*] he

wile (*wrongly*) T.

178. *wher*—*lykeþ*] aboute F. *hym*] me G.

179. *bettere* (1)] bet MF.

180. *a* (1)] F om. *a fure*] on fuyre M; in fire T. [þei M] PEFTG omit; but it makes the sense clear.

181. *heete*] help M. *a*] on M; o EFG; T om.

182. *myd*] myþ T; with F; wiþ G.

183. F omits. þe *whyle*] while MG; whiles T; þe wyle P. *quyke*] am quyk in T. *cors* TG] corps M; cours P. *cald*—*ich*] I am cald T.

184. *whenne*] wenne P. *oþer*] and MTG. *hyhte*] hiȝte MF; hatte T. *animus*—*hyhte*] cald am y Animus G.

- mens*, And for þat ich can and knowe · cald ich am ‘mannys
pouht;’ 185
- memoria*, And whan ich make mone to god · *memoria* ich hatte;
And when ich deme domes · and do as treuthe techē,
- ratio*, Then is *ratio* my ryhte name · ‘reson’ in englissh;
And whenne ich fele þat folke telleþ · my furste name
- sensus*, is *sensus*, 189
And þat is witte and wisdomes · the welle of alle
craftes;
And when ich chalange oþer nat chalange · chepe oþer
refuse,
- conscientia*, þanne am ich *conscientia* cald · godes clerk and hus
notarie; 192
And when ich wol do oþer nat do · goode dedes
oþer ille,
- † *liberum*
arbitrium, Then am ich *liberum arbitrium* · as lettrede men
tellen;
- 256** And when ich loue leelly · oure lord and alle oþere,
amor, Then is ‘leel loue’ my name · in latyn þat is *amor*;
And when ich flee fro þe body · and feye leue þe
caroygne, 197
- and *spiritus*.” Then am ich a spirit specheles · and *spiritus* penne
ich hote.
Austyn and ysidorus · ayþer of hem bothe
Nempnede me þis to name · þow now myght cheese

185. M *omits.* And] F *om.*
knowe] eke knowe F. *cald—am*] I
cald am in (*sic*) T. *mannys*] F *om.*

186. *whan*] whanne þat T. *mone*] so
PEMTG; moone F. *hatte*] so
PEMTG (*not as in* l. 184).

187. G *omits this and* l. 190.
techeþ] tellip T.

188. *in*] on T.

189. *whenne*] wenne P. *þat*] what F.
my—is] þan am i F.

191. *nat chalange*] challenge nout
MFG. *chepe*] so PEMFG; chese M.

192. *am ich*] i am M. *con-*
scientia] concience MT.

193. *wol*] wel M; E *om.* *nat*]

wol noȝt E. *dedes*] dede T.

194. *lettrede*] lered MG. *tellen*] me
tellith FT.

195. And] E *om.*

196. *þat*] hit M. *in—is*] & in
latyn T.

197. *body*] flesch F. *feye*] fei M;
vey E. *feye leue*] fayle G. *þe* (2)]
my M.

198. *a*] FG *om.* *hote*] hote F
(*not as in* ll. 184, 186).

199. *ayþer*] eiper oþer T.

200. *me*] G *om.* *þis*] þus F. *name*] names
G. *þow now*] now þow MG;
& now þow F.

How þow coueitest to calle me · now knowest þow alle
myne names. 201

*Anima pro diuersis actionibus diuersa nomina
sortitur; dum uiuificat corpus, anima est.
dum uult, animus est; dum recolit, memoria
est; dum iudicat, ratio est; dum sentit,
sensus est; dum amat, amor est; dum de-
clinat a malo ad bonum, liberum arbitrium
est; dum negat uel consentit, consciencia est;
dum spirat, spiritus est."*

See Isidore,
Etymol. lib. xi.
c. l.

"3e ben as a bischop," quap ich · al bordynge þat tyme,
"For bischopes blessed · thei bereþ meny names,

"You have as
many names as a
bishop," said I.

Presul and *pontifex* · and *metropolitanus*, 204

And oþer names an hepe · *episcopus* and *pastor*."

"That is soth," he seide · "now ich seo þy wil
How þow woldest know and conne · þe cause of alle
here names,

"I suppose you
would fain know
what they
mean?" said he.

And of myne, yf þow myghtest · me þynkeþ by þy
speche!" 208

"3e, syre," ich seyde, "by so · þat no man were
a-greued,

"Yes," said I.

Alle þe science vnder sonne · and alle sotile craftes

Ich wolde ich knewe and couthe · kyndeliche in myn
herte." 257

"Thanne art þow inparfyte," quap he · "and on of
prydes knyghtes; 212

"Then you are
too proud,"
said he.

201. *now*] MG om. *knowest þow*] þow knowest MTG. *sortitur*] uocatur M. *a malo*] de malo T.

202. *ben*] baw (!) M. *bischop* EF] bisshop TG; busshop M; *badly spelt* bihsshop P. *bordynge*] louryng T; *bourdyng* F.

203. *bischopes* E] bisshopes GT; bisshops F; busshopes M; *badly spelt* bihsshopes P. *blessed*] i-blessed MG; þat beth blessed F. *þei*] G om.

204. *Presul*] As *presul* F.

205. *an*] a gret F.

206. *seide*] seide þo · & F.

207. *How*] T om. *cause*] clause T. *here*] M om.

208. G omits.

209. *a-greued*] a-greuede P.

210. *science*] sciences MG. *alle*] alle þe T.

211. *wolde*] wold þat F. *and*] or F. *kyndeliche*] soplich G.

212. *art* MFT] ert PEG. *inparfyte* GT] inparfyt M; inparfyt P; vnparfit E; imparfit F.

- For suche a luste and lykyng · lucifer fel fro heuene ;
 Isaiah xiv. 14. *Ponam pedem meum in aquilone, & ero similis altissimo.*
- “No one can expect to know everything.”
 Hit were a-geyn kynde,” quap he · “and alle kynne resoun
 That eny creature sholde conne al · excepte cryst one.
 Azene alle suche salamon spekeþ · and dispiseþ here wittes, 216
- Prov. xxv. 27. And seith, *sicut qui mel comedit multum, non ei bonum est : Sic qui scrutator est magestatis, opprimatur a gloria.*
- Too much honey cloyeth the maw.
 To englissh-men this is to [mene] · þat mowen speke and huyre,
 The man þat muche hony eet · his mawe hit engleymeþ :
 The wyttiour that eny wight is · bote yf he worche þer-after,
 The biterour he shal a-bygge · bote yf he [wel] worche ;
 Cf. John xiii. 17. *Beatus*, seith seynt bernard · *qui scripturas legit*, 221
Et uerba uertit in opera · emforth his power.
 Couetise to conne · and to knowe science[s]
 Putte oute of paradys · adam and eue ; 224
213. *luste* E] lust MFT; louste P. *and*] & a T; of F. *fel*] *miswritten* feel P; ful M. *& ero, &c.*] MTG om.
 214. *resoun* EFT] reson MG; rei-soune P.
 215. *conne*] kunne E; cunne FMG. *one*] al oone F.
 216. G omits. *Azene*] Azens ET; A-3e F. *alle*] T om. *dispiseþ*] spiceth F. *And seith*] For seiþ salamon þus G. *sicut—est*] G om. *mel—non* MFT] comedit multum mel & P; so also E, omitting mel. *est*] put before ei in MF; T om. *opprimatur*] so in all; read opprimetur. *a gloria*] &c. M.
 217. G omits. [mene MFT] mete PE. *huyre*] hure E; here MT; heere F.
 218. G omits. *The*] þat T. *The*—þat] pat ho so F. *eet*] so PM; eteþ E; ette F. *hony eet*] honieþ (!) T. *his*] is P. *hit engleymeþ*] is engleymed E.
 219. *wyttiour*] whyttiour P; with-tiere M. *wight*] whight P; withg (*sic*) M; wit G; wy T. *worche*] do M.
 220. *biterour*] bitturlokur F. [wel M] wol PETG; but this is too close to l. 219. *bote—worche*] whan he is brouzt in graue F (a remarkable variation).
 221. *seith*] quod M.
 222. *Et*] Vt M. *emforþ*] euene-forþ M.
 223, 224. One line in T, omitting and to knowe. *conne*] cunne ME. [sciences EMTEFG] science P; see l. 226.
 224. *Putte* EM] Pute P; Put FTG. *adam*] boþe adam F. [gloria MFT] gloriam PEG. *spoliauit*] expoliauit E.

Sciencie appetitus hominem immortalitatis Lust of know-
[gloria] spoliavit. ledge caused the
 fall.

And ryght so as hony · is vuel to defie, 225
 Ryght so sothly sciences · swelleþ in a mannes saule,
 And doþ hym to be deynous · and deme þat beth nat
 lerede ;

Non plus sapere · seide þe wyse, 228 258
Quam oportet sapere · lest synne of pruyde wexe: Rom. xii. 3.

Freres fele sithes · to þe folke þat þei prechen
 Meuen motifs meny tymes · Insolibles and fallaces,
 That boþe lered and lewed · of here by-leyue douten ;
 To teche þe ten commaundemens · were ten sithe
 bettere,

And how [þat] folke folyliche · here fif wittes
 myspenden, 234

As wel freres as oþer folk · foliliche spenden
 In housyng and in helyyng · in hih cleregie shew-
 ynge,

More for pomp and prude · as þe people wot wel
 That ich lye nat, loo · for lordes þei plesen, 238
 And reuerenceþ þe ryche · þe rather for here seluer,

† Friars rever-
 ence the rich.

225. *so*] TG *om.* vuel] yuel EG ;
 eucl MFT.

226. *Ryght—sothly*] Soothli riȝt so
F. sothly sciences] litel science T.
sciences] science G. *in*] MFTG *om.*

227. G *omits.* And doþ] Don M.
 hym] hem T.

228. *Non*] For non F.

229. *synne—pruyde*] pruyde of
 synne E; pride & synne F. *of*
pruyde] G *om.*

230. *Freres*] For fals frerus F.
sithes] tymes T. þe] F *om.* folke]
 peple G. þat] þere T.

231. *motifs*] motynges M. *tymes*] time MF.
meny tymes] G *om.* *In-*
solibles] insollible F; & solibles (!)
 E. *fallaces*] falaces E; fallas MF;
 infallaes (!) T.

232. *lewed*] eke lewed F. *douten*] doten T.

233. *were*] where P. *were—sithe*]

ten siþe wer it F; ton (*sic*) siþe were
 T; ten siþe were G.

234. [þat EMFTG] þe P; *cf.*
 B-text. *myspenden*] dispenden M;
 spenden F.

235. *foliliche* ME] foliliche PG
 (*but see last line*); folliche T. *foli-*
liche spenden] & feel of hem wurse
 F; *but cf.* B-text. *spenden*] lyuen M;
 worchen G.

236. *and*] M *om.* *in helyyng*] in
 helyyngge M; in helyyng E; in he-
 lyng F; helynge G; T *om.* *in* (2)]
 & E. *hih*] hi M; hy F; hey E; heiz
 T; hyz G. *cleregie shewyng*] herte
 of pride F.

237—240. G *omits.*

237. *and*] & for E. *and prude*]
 of þat place F. *peuple*] peple MF;
 pepe (!) E.

238. F *omits.* lye] leize T. þei]
 ze T. plesen EM] plesse T; plesyn P.

259

Cf. Deut. i. 17;
xvi. 19.As good teachers
spread holiness,
so evil teachers
spread sin.Some boughs
have leaves,
some are bare.
(*Exemplum con-
tra clericos—
margin of M.*)Where the root
is rotten, no

260

flower can
flourish.
If ye clerks
would leave
rich clothing,

Aȝens þe counsail of cryst · as holy cleregye witnesseth ;

Ne sitis acceptores personarum. 240

Loo, what holy wryt wyttnesseþ · of wikked techeres ;

As holyness and honeste · out of holy church

Spryngeþ and spredeþ · and enspireþ þe people

þorgh parfit preest-hood · and prelates of holichurche,

Ryght so out of holychurche · al vuel spredeþ, 245

Ther inparfit preest-hod is · prechours and techours.

And seo hit by ensample · of trees in somer tyme,

Ther somme bowes bereþ leues · and somme bereþ

none ; 248

The bowes þat bereþ nat · and beeþ nat grene-leuede,

Ther is a myschif in þe more · of suche manere stockes.

Ryght so persones and preestes · and prechers of holy
churche

Ys þe rote of [þe] ryght feithe · to reuwele þe people ;

Ac þer þe rote is rotten · reson wot þe sothe, 253

Shal neuere floure ne frut wexe · ne fair leef be grene.

For wolde [3e] letteride leue · the lecherie of clopinge,

And be courteis and kynde · of holy[kirke] goodes,

Parte [with the] poure · and ȝoure pruyde leue, 257

And þerto trewe of ȝoure tonge · and of ȝoure tail also,

240. *Aȝens*] Ageyn M; Aȝe F.
cleregye] chirche M; writ F. *wit-
nesseþ*] E] whittnesseþ P; telleth F.
Ne] Non M.241. *what*] wiþ (!) T. *holy*—*wytt-
nesseþ*] witnesseth holy writ F.
techeres] tecches M.242. *honeste* EMFTG] *miswritten*
honestete P.244. *parfit*] T om.245. *G omits.* *al*] as (!) E. *vuel*
yuel E; euel MFT.246. *G omits.* *Ther* EMFT] Theer
P; so also in ll. 248, 250. *inparfit*
in (!) T. *techours*] opure F.247. *And—by*] Tak þou G. *of*
on MG. *in*] a G. *of—tyme*] in
somer tyme on tres T.249. *G omits.* *The*] þo F. *nat*
non E. *leuede*] i-leued MT.250. *G omits.*251. *persones and*] in *persones* &
in E.252. *Ys*] so PETG (*probably by
intention*); Ben M; Beth F. [þe
MTF] PEG *om.* *ryght*] ryghit P.
reuwele] reule ET; rule MFG.254. *be*] ne F; be and M.255. [3e MT] þe (*wrongly*) PEG;
F *om.* *the—of*] lecherie · and ȝoure
gai M.256. E *omits.* [kirke T] church
PG; chirches M; churches F.257. *G omits.* *Parte*] To parte F.
[with the EMFT] *miswritten* whithe
P.258. *þerto*] G *om.* *trewe*] trywe
P. ȝoure] here G (*twice*). tail] so
in all MSS; but F turns tail also
into tailasse.

And haten harlotrie · [and] to vnderfonge þe types
 Of vsurers and of hores · and of al vuel wyynynges,
 Loth were lewede men · bote þei ȝoure lore folweden,
 And a-menden hem of here mysdedes · more for ȝoure
 ensamples 262

unlearned men
 would amend.

þan for to preche and preuen hit nat; · ypocrisie hit
 semeþ!

Ypocrisie is a braunche of pruyde · and most among
 clerkes, 264

Hypocrisy is a
 snow-hidden
 dunghill,
 having snakes
 within it.

And [is] ylikned in latyn · to a lothliche dounghep,
 That were by-snywe al with snow · and snakes with-
 ynne,

[Or to a wal whit-lymed · & were blak with-inne.]

Ryȝt so meny preestes · prechours and prelates, 268
 þat beþ enblaunched with *bele paroles* · and with *bele*
 cloþes;

So are priests
 whitened with
 fair words.

And as lambes þei loken · and lyuen as wolues.

Iohannes crisostomus · karpeþ þus of clerkes,

Sicut de templo omne bonum progreditur, sic de

261

templo omne malum procedit. Si sacerdocium

integrum fuerit, tota floret ecclesia; si autem

corruptum fuerit, omnium fides marcida est.

Si sacerdocium fuerit in peccatis, totus popu-

lus conuertitur ad peccandum. Sicut cum

uideris arborem pallidam & marcidam, intel-

ligis quod uicium habet in radice, Ita cum

A sound
 priesthood makes
 a flourishing
 church,

but, as a
 withered tree
 has an evil root,
 so a wicked
 people shews

259. *And*] & also G. *haten*] hate
 al F. [*and* MFTG] PE om. *to*] G
 om. *þe*] no M; G om.

260. *and* (1)] & eke F; TG om.
and (2)] T om. *of* (3)] MEG om.
al] F om. *vuel*] euele MF; euile
 T; vncleue E.

261. *were*] were þe F. *lore*] wil
 G.

262. G omits. *amenden hem*]
 amendit T. *more*] þe more F.

265. [*is* MFT] PEG om. *in*] as
 in F. *a*] E om. *lothliche*] lodli M.

266. G omits. *bysnywe*] so PE;

bisnewe F; *besnewid* T; *i-snewed*
 M. *snow*] *snouȝ* T. *snakes*] *smatte*
 M.

267. *In* T only; but see B-text.

269. *beþ*] *ben* MT. *enblaunched*]
 encumbred M. *bele* (2)] *faire* M.

270. *And*] G om. *as* (2)] as do
 F.

271. F prefixes Loo. *þus*] *ȝus* þus
 F. *procedit*] *cedit* G. M omits
fuerit after corruptum. sacerdocium
 (2)] *sacerdos* T. *peccatis*] *peccato* T.
sanum] *integrum vel sanum* G.

an unsound
priesthood.
(Isaiah xxiv. 2;
Hosea iv. 9.)

*uideris populum indisciplinatum & irreligio-
sum, sine dubio sacerdocium eius non est
sanum.*

Alas! lewede men · muche leese 3e þat fynden 272

Vnkynde creatures · to beo keepers of 3oure soules!

Things wickedly
won go to wicked
men.

Ac þyng þat wikkedliche is wonne · and with false
sleithes,

Wolde neuere oþer-wise god · bote wicked men hit
hadde,

262

As imparfit preestes · and prechers after seluer, 276

Secutours and sodenes · somners and here lemmannes;

Evil got is evil
spent.

And þat with gyle was gete · vngraciousliche be
dispended. 278

Covetous clerks
leave wealth
which profligate
men spend."

Curatours of hollychurche · and clerkus þat ben auarous,
Lightliche þat þei leue · loseles hit deuouren.

Leyueþ hit wel, lordes · boþe lered and lewede, 281

þat þus goþ here godes · atte laste ende,

[þat] lyuen a-3ens holy lore · and þe loue of charite."

"Where is
Charity?" said I.

263

"Charite," quap ich þo · "þat is a þing for sothe 284

That maistres comenden muche; · wher may hit be
founde?

"I have lived long
in þ London,"
said I; "but
have never found
charity.

Ich haue lyued in [london] · meny longe 3eres,

And founde ich neuere in faith · as freres hit precheþ,

Charite, þat chargeþ nat · ne chit, þauh men greue hym,

272. *men*] men alas F.

273. *creatures*] curatours T. *keepers*] leders E.

274. *wikkedliche*] wiþ wickednesse
M.

275. PE *insert* þat *after* neuere,
which MFTG *omit*. *bote*] bute þat G.

276. *after*] for M.

277. *sodenes*] soudenes M; south-
denis T. *somners*] somenours E;
sompours MFG; sompnours T.

278. *gete*] gotten M; bigete F.
be dispended] he dispend it F; mys-
pende T.

279. *Curatours*] For curatours F.
auarous] auerous PG.

280. *þat*] G *om*. *hit*] to G. *de-*

uouren EG] deuowren M; deuoureth
F; deuören P.

281—283. G *omits*.

281. *Leyueþ*] Leueþ MT; Leeueth
F; Lyueþ E.

282. *atte*] at þe MTF.

283. [þat MFT] And PE. *a-3ens*]
a-3e þe F.

285. *wher*] but where F. *hit*] he
F.

286. *haue*] aue P. *lyued*] i-lyued
M; lyuede P. [london M] londoun
F; lundoun T; londen PEG.

287. *ich*] i hit MF.

288. *þat*] þei (*sic*) T. *chargeþ*]
chaungeþ G. *þauh*] & G. *men*] me
TG. *greue hym*] him greue F.

As paul in a pistele · of hym bereþ witesse; 289

Non inflatur, non est ambiciosa, non querit que sua sunt. 1 Cor. xiii. 4, 5.

Ich [knew] neuere, by cryst · clerk noþer lewede, All whom I have
That he ne askede after hus · and oþer-whyle coueytede seen are
Thyng þat needede hym nat · and nyme hit, yf he covetous."

myghte! 292

[For þoȝ men soȝt al sectes · of sustren & of breþeren,]
And [þow] fynde hym, bote figuratifliche · a ferly me
þynkeþ;

Hic in enigmate, tunc facie ad faciem:— 1 Cor. xiii. 12.

And so ich trowe trewely · by that men tellen of
charite."

"Charite is a childish thing · as holichurche witt- 262
nesseþ, 296 "Charity," said
he, "is a childish
thing. 263

Nisi efficiamini sicut paruuli, [non intrabitis in regnum celorum:] Mat. xviii. 3.

[DISTINCTIO CARITATIS.]

As proud of a peny · as of a pounde of golde,

And al-so glad of a goune · of a grey russet

As of a cote of cammoka · oþer of clene scarlett. 299

He is glad with alle glade · as gurlen þat lauhē alle,

And sory when he seep men sory · as þow seest children

Lauhen þer men lauhē · an loure þer men loureþ. 302

264
He is ever glad.

289. *paul*] seint poul F. *a*] his T.
pistele] pistel EMFG; *pistil* T. *non querit—sunt*] MTG *om.*

290. [*knew* EMFG] *kneu*; T;
knowe P. *clerk*] *miswritten* clek
P.

291. *why*] *wyle* P; *whiles* T.

292. *needede hym*] *hym neded* EF.
and] to M.

293. *From* E; *also in* MFGT; P
omits. sectes] þe sektis T; folc M.
of (2)] T *om.*

294. [*þow* M] þou F; PETG *om.*
hym] hem M. *bote*] G *om.* *figura-*
tifliche] *furatif* (!) T; *fugynatijf* (!)
M. *a ferly*] wonder M. *Hic*] *Quia*
hic per speculum F.

295. *And so*] Also M. *so*] E *om.*
men] me G. *of charite*] þer-offe F.

296. *childish*] *childlich* M; *childes*
FG. *sicut*] ut M. [*non—celorum*]
from E; F *has—non intrabitis, &c.*;
MTG *om.* [*Distinctio, &c.*] *from* M;
PEFTG *om.*

297. *of* (2)] G *om.*

298. *al-so*] as TFG.

299. *cammoka*] *cammoca* E;
camaca M; *camaka* FT; *cammaka*
G. *clene*] a clene T; reed F.

301—312. G *omits.*

301. *children*] *babes* F.

302. *an*] and MEFT. *men loureþ*]
oþere louren T.

And when a man swereþ for soþ · for soþ he hit troweþ ;
 † He trusts that He weneþ [þat] no wiȝt · wold lyghe and swere, 304
 none will beguile him. Ne þat eny gome wolde gylen · oþer, ne greue,
 For drede of god þat is so good · and þus-[gates] ous
 techeþ,

† Mat. vii. 12.

*Quodcunque uultis ut uobis faciant homines,
 facite eis.*

He accepts
 sorrows as a
 solace."

He hath no lykyng to lauhe · ne lyghe, men to scorne ;
 Alle sicknesses and sorwes · for solas he [hem] takeþ,
 And alle manere meschifs · as minstracie of heuene.
 Of deþ ne of derþe · drad was he neuere, 310
 Ne mysliked, þauh he loore · oþer lenede to þat ilke
 þat neuere payed peny aȝe · in place þere he borwede."

"Who provides
 for him?" I
 said.

"Who fyndeþ hym his fode?" quap ich · "oþer what
 frendes hath he, 313

"He cares not
 for riches.

Rentes oþer richesses · to releue hym at hus neode?"
 "Of rentes ne of richesses," quap he · "reccheþ he
 neuere,

[A frend he haþ þat fynt him · þat faileþ him neuere].

† Ps. ciii. 28.

On *aperis-tu-manum* · alle þynge hym fyndeþ ; 317

303. F omits.

304. *He*] For he F. *weneþ*] leueþ
 M. *He weneþ*] Wenip he T. [þat
 MFT] nat PE. *wiȝt* F] whiȝt P ;
 withg M ; wiȝ T. *lyghe*] lie MEF.

305. F omits. *gylen*] bygilen E ;
 bi-gyle M. *ne*] M om.

306. *is*] T om. *so*] E om. *and*]
 and þat MF. [*gates*] gatis T ; PEMF
 omit, but the alliteration seems to re-
 quire it. *ous*] us MF ; vs T. M
 ends the line—and þat us þus techeþ.
eis] & eis F.

307. *He*] T om. *to* (1)] for to F.
ne EMF] ne to T ; apparently no P.
lyghe] spelt lyhe P (but see l. 304) ;
 lizen E ; lyke T ; likne F ; likene M.
to (2)] ne M. (Observe that the
 order of words differs from B-text.)

308. [hem MF] hit PET.

309. *meschifs*] myscheues M ; of
 meschiefs T. *as*] for F. *minstracie*]
 mynstralcie E ; mynstralsye F ; men-

stralsie M ; minstracies T.

310. *drad*] a-drad M.

311. *loore*] so PF ; lore MET.
oþer] & T. *lenede*] lente M. *to*] T
 om.

312. *aȝe*] so PEF ; aȝen T ; a-geyn
 M. *place*] places T.

313. *fyndeþ*] fynt T. *hym*] E om.
Who—fode] Hou is charite y-founde
 G.

314. *richesses*] richesse quod he F.
hym] F om. *hus*] MT om.

315. F omits. *ne*] G om. *of*] T
 om. *quap he*] TG om. *reccheþ*] ne
 reechip T.

316. *From* M ; also in FTG ; PE
 omit. *fynt*] fyndeth FG. *faileþ*]
 failide T. *þat faileþ—neuere*] &
 fail him he nelle F.

317. *On*] Oon F ; On ys G ;
 Domine T. *manum*] manum tuam
 M. *alle*] þat (sic) G.

Fiat-voluntas-tua · festep hym eche day.

Mat. vi. 10.

And also he can clergie · *credo-in-deum-patrem*

Ps. xli. 6 (Vulg.).

And portreieþ [wel] þe *pater-noster* · and peynteþ hit
with *auées*. 320

And oper-while hus wone is · to wende in pilgrimages,

Ther poure men and prysouns beþ · and payeþ for here
lyfode, He visits men in prison.

Clotheþ hem and comforteþ hem · and of crist precheþ
hem,

What sorwes he suffrede · in ensample of ous alle,

† He tells men
of Christ's
sufferings.

That pouerte and pacience · *parfitliche* ytake 325

Ys muche merit to þat man · þat wel may suffren.

Whan he haþ thus visited fetered folke · and oper
folke poure, 205

Then he 3erneþ in-to þouht · and 3epliche he secheþ

Pruyde, with alle þe portinaunce · and packeþ hem to-
gederes, 329

And laueþ hem in þe lauandrie · *laboraui-in-gemitu-meo*,

He works in the
laundry;
Ps. vi. 7 (Vulg.).

And boukeþ hem at hus brest · and betep hit ofte,

And with warme water of hus eyen · wokep hit [til
hit] white; 332

Lauabis me, et super niuem dealbabor.

† Ps. l. 9 (Vulg.).

318. *Fiat*] And fiat G. *eche*] iche
a T. *eche day*] euermore F.

320. *And*] He M. *portreieþ*] por-
treie T. [*wel* MFTG] PE *om.*
peynteþ] peynte T. *hit*] it wel F.
auées] so PEF; aues MT.

321. *in*] on T.

322. *payeþ*] paye T. *lyfode*] fode
TG; table F.

323. *hem* (2)] F *om.* *precheþ*
hem] to hem techeth F.

324. *he*] þat he F. *ensample*] *saumple* F. *ous*] us MF; vs TG.

325. G *omits.* *pacience*] penaunce
T. *parfitliche ytake*] pacientliche
taken T; þat parfitly be take F.

326. G *omits.* *Ys*] Worþ T.
muche] gret M. *to*] for F. *wel*] it
T. *may*] may hem M.

327. *Whan*] And whanne T. *thus*]

M *om.* *visited* EF] visitid TG;
i-visited M; visetid P. *fetered*]
vetered F. *oper folke*] EG *om.*

328. *he 3erneþ*] 3erniþ he T. *þouht*]
so all but T, which has 3ouþe, as in
B-text.

329. *þe*] here G. *portinaunce*] so
PG; aportenaunce M; portenaunces
E; purtenaunces F; appurtenaunces
T. *packeþ*] pekk (*sic*) E.

330. *hem*] hym E. *þe*] G *om.*
lauandrie] laundrie T.

331. *And*] T *om.* *hem*] M *om.*
betep] beetep P. *hit*] hem G; it
ful F.

332. *warme*] wharme P. *eyen*]
eizes T. *wokep*] so PEM; weeketh
F; werkþ T; wetþ G. *hit—hit* M]
hem til hit G; it til he F; hit he
PT; hit þe (*sic*) E.

þanne syngeþ he whanne he so doþ · and som tyme
wepyngē,

Ps. l. 19 (Vulg.).

*Cor contritum & humiliatum, deus, non de-
spicies."*

"Were ich with hym, by crist," quap ich · "ich wolde
neuere fro hym,

þauh ich my by-lyue sholde begge · a-boute at menne
hacches. 335

Wher clerkus knowe hym nat," quap ich · "þat kepen
holychurche?"

"Peers the plouman," quap he · "most parfitliche hym
knoweþ ;

Mat. ix. 4; Luke
xi. 17.
266

Et uidit deus cogitationes eorum.

By cloþynge ne by karpinge · knowe shalt thou hym
neuere, 338

Ac þorw werkes þou myght wite · wher forþ he walkeþ ;

† John x. 38.

Operibus credite.

He is þe muriest of mouthe · at metes þer he sitteþ,
And compenable in companye · as crist hym-self techēþ,

267

Mat. vi. 18.

Nolite tristes fieri, sicut ypocrite.

Ich haue seyen hym my-self · som tyme in russett, 342

He wears both
russet and fur.

Bothe in greye and in greys · and in gylt harneys,
And al-so gladliche he gyueþ · to gomes þat hit
needeþ.

Edmund and
Edward were
kings and saints.

Eadmund and edward · ayþer were seyntes, 345
And chief charite with hem · and chast al here lyue.

333. *þanne*] And *þanne* T. *he* (1)]
F *om.* *whanne*] *wanne* P. *so doþ*] *doþ* so TG.

334. *quap ich*] G *om.*

335. *bylyue*] *bileue* G; *bileue* F;
lijflode M. *menne*] *mennes* F; *menes*
M; *men* ET.

336. *Wker*] *Wheper* EFT. *hym*] *hit* G.
hym nat] *nout him* M.

337. *the*] M *om.* *hym*] *hit* G.

339. *Operibus, &c.*] MF *om.*

340. *þe*] MF *om.* *at*] *atte* G.
metes] *mete* M.

341. *compenable*] *so* PFG; *com-*

panable EM; *compaynable* T.

342. *seyen*] *seyn* E; *seize* T; *seye*
FG; *i-seyn* M.

343. *greys*] *gris* EFT; *grys* G;
grees M. *and*] & also G.

344. *gyueþ*] *it gaf* T. *gomes—*
needeþ] *hem þat han nede* G. *hit*
needeþ] *ben nedi* M. *needeþ*] *nedite*
T.

345. *ayþer*] *boþe þei* M; *boþe* F.

346. E *omits from* with *hem to*
charite in next line. *chief*] G *om.*
al] in *alle* G.

Ich haue seyen charite al-so · syngen and rede,

Ryden, and rennen · in raggede clopes,

348 Charity some-
times wears
ragged clothes.

Ac biddynge as a beggere · by-heold ich hym neuere.

Ac in riche robes · rapest he walketh,

Y-called and ycrymyled · and hus croune shaue.

And in [a] freres frocke · he was yfounde ones,

352 He once wore a
friar's frock,
long ago.

Ac it is fer and fele 3eres · in fraunceys tyme;

In that secte sitthe · to selde he hap be founde.

Riche men he comendeþ · and of here robes takeþ,

Of þo þat leelliche lyuen · and louen and by-leyuen;

Beatus est diues sine macula.

356 Eccius. xxxi. 8.

In kynges court he comeþ · yf hus counsail be trewe;

Ac yf couetise be of hus counsail · he wol nat come

þer-ynne.

Among þe comunen in court · he comeþ but selde,

He seldom comes
to court.

For brawelynge and bacbytynge · and beryng of false

268

wittnesse.

360

In constorie by-fore þe comissarie · he comeþ nat ful ofte,

He is seldom in
the consistory.

For here lawe is ouere-longe · bote yf þei lacche seluer.

With bisshopes he wolde beo · for beggers sake,

Ac auarice oper-whiles · halt hym with-oute þe gate.

Avarice keeps
him without the
gate.

Kynges and Cardineles · knowen hym som tyme,

365

Ac þorw couetise and his consail · congeied is he ofte.

347. *seyen*] i-seie M; seie F; seize T; sey3e G.

349. *by-heold*] bi-hult M.

350. *rapest*] raperst M.

351. G *omits*. *Y-called*] Cald T. *shaue*] i-shaue ME.

352. [a EMTG] P *om*. *freres*] frere FG; fair (!) T.

353. *is*] was M; T *om*. *fer* FTG] feer P; ferre E. *fer—3eres*] fer & fele 3ere goo F; fele 3er ago M. *3eres*] 3er MTG; 3ere F. *fraunceys*] frauncesses M.

354. *secte*] sizte M. *to*] ful MF; wel G.

355. *comendeþ*] recomaundip T.

356. *by-leyuen*] bileuen MEG; beleuen T; bileuen F.

357. *hus*] E *om*.

358. *wol—come*] comeþ nat G.

359. *comunen*] comyne G. *selde* EMTG] selde P (*but see* l. 354); rizi seelde F.

360. *brawelynge and*] G *om*.

361. *þe comissarie*] commissaries G. *ful*] M *om*.

362. *here—longe*] ouerlong is here lawe T. *þei*] he F.

363. *With*] For G. *bisshopes*] bihsshopes P.

364. *auarice*] auerice P. *whiles*] while MFG. *hym*] hem G. *þe gate*] þe gates E; gates F.

365. G *omits*. *knownen*] so PM; knewen EF; kneu3 T.

366. G *omits*. *congeied*] conged MF; cunged T. *is he*] he is MF.

And ho so coueyteþ to know hym · such [a] kynde hym
folweþ,

As ich tolde þe with tonge · a lytel tyme passed ; 368

He neither begs
nor borrows."

For noþer he beggeþ, ne biddeþ · ne borweþ to zelde ;

He halt hit a nycete · and a foul shame

To beggen oper to borwe · bote of god one ; 371

† Luke xi. 3.

Panem nostrum cotidianum [da nobis hodie]."

Hic explicit passus septimus & ultimus de dowel.

367. E omits. [a MFT] P om.
such—hym] G omits.

368. *tyme*] while G. *passed*]
a-passed MG ; ypassid T.

369. *he beggeþ*] he ne beggiþ T ; þe
beggere (*sic*) M. *ne* (1)] nor F.

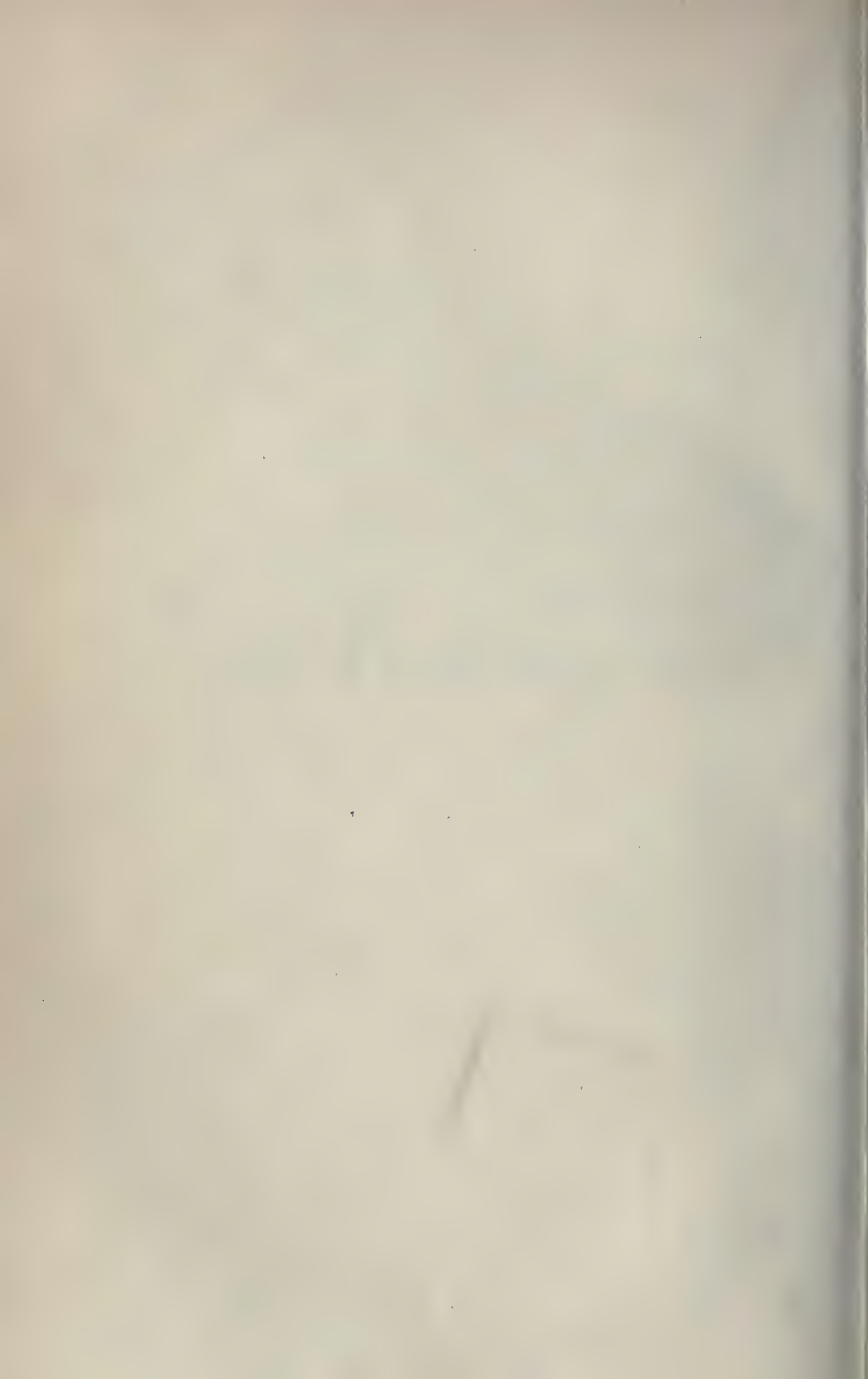
370. *He*] For he F. *hit*] þat F.
a nycete] for a vice T (*which is prob-*
ably right, as it suits the allitera-

tion). *and*] & eke F.

371. *To*] For to F. *to*] for to F.
bote] but it be F. *Panem, &c.*] M
omits. [*da—hodie*] supplied from
F.

COLOPHON. So PG ; M omits.
Hic] EF om. *septimus &*] E om.
T has—Passus septimus de dowel : &
explicit.

Visio eiusdem Willelmi de Do-bet.



PASSUS XVIII. (DO-BET I.)

Incipit passus primus de dobet.

"**T**her is no suche," ich seide · "þat som tyme ne
borweth,

† "There is no one," said I, "but sometimes borrows or is wroth."

Oþer beggeþ oþer byddeþ · beo he ryche oþer poure,
And ȝut oþer-while wroþ · with-oute eny synne."

"Ho so is wroþ and wolde be awreke · holi wryt," quap
he, "proueþ .

4

† "He that is wroth hath not charity."

He passeþ chief charite · if holichurche beo trewe ;

Caritas omnia suffert.

† 1 Cor. xiii. 7.

Holy writ witnesseþ · þer were suche eremites,

(269)

Solitarie by hem-self · and in here selles lyueden

7

† Once there were hermits,

Wiþ-oute borwyng e oþer beggyng e · bote of god one ;

Excepte þat egidie · an hynde oþer-while

like Egidius,

To hus selle selde cam · and suffrede to be melked.

270

Elles fouweles fedden hem · in frythes þer þei woneden,

Bope antonye and erseny · and oþer mo fele.

12

† Anthony, and Arsenius.

Paul *primus heremita* · hadde parroked hym-selue,

Paul the first

TITLE. *So* PFG ; M *prefixes* Hic ;
E *omits* passus ; T *omits*.

2. *ryche—poure*] neuere so riche
M.

3. *with*] whith P.

4. *so*] T *om.* *quap—proueþ*] *preuiþ*
quod he T.

5. *He*] þat he F. *chief*] F *om.*
if] ȝif FT ; and M ; *miswritten* hif
P. *trewe* EMFTG] trywe P ; *so also*
in ll. 15, 33.

6. *witnesseþ*] whitnesseþ P ; with-

nesseþ M. *þer were*] þat G.

7. *and*] MT *om.* *selles*] celles E.

8. *Wiþ*] Whiþ P.

9. *egidie*] Egide T ; seint egidie F.

10. *selle*] celle E. *selde* EMTG]

seilde P ; seelde F. *to*] T *om.*

11. *hem*] him M ; hym TG. *frythes*]
friþ M.

12. *erseney*] arseny T ; arceny M.
mo fele] ful manye T.

13. *parroked*] i-parroket M ; *par-*
lokkid (*sic*) T.

hermit founded
the Augustine
friars.

St Paul made
baskets.

St Peter fished.

Mary Magdalen
lived in desert
places.

† Mary of Egypt
ate 3 loaves in 30
years.

That no man myghte se hym · for muche mos and leues ;
Foweles hym fedde · yf frere austyn be trewe ;
For he ordeynede þat ordre · other elles þei gabben. 16

Paul after his prechyng · panyeres he made,
And wan with hus hondes · al þat hym neodyde.

Peter fysshed for hus fode · and hus fere Andreu ;
Som thei solde, and som thei sode · and so þei leueden
bope. 20

Marie magdalen · by mores leuede and dewes ;
Loue and leel by-leuye · heeld lyf and soule to-gedere.

Maria egyptiaca · eet in þyrty wynter
Bote þre lytel loues · and loue was her souel. 24
Ich can nat rekene hem ryght now · ne reherce here
names,

That lyueden þus for oure lordes loue · meny longe zeres,
With-oute borwyng oþer beggyng · oþer þe bok lyeþ,
And woneden in wildernesse · a-mong wilde bestes ; 28
Ac dorst no best byten hem · by daye ne by nyghte,
Bote myldeliche, whan þei metten · maden louh chere,
And feyre by-fore þo men · fauhned with þe tayles.

Ac bestes brouhte hem no mete · bot onliche þe
foweles, 32

271

No wild beast
harmed them.

God fed them
by birds, not by
beasts.

14. *much*] TG *om.* *leues*] for
leues TG.

15. *Foweles*] And *foulus* F. *frere*]
M *om.* *austyn*] *austyns* F ; *austynes*
T (*wrongly*).

16. *þat*] her F. *gabben* EMTG]
gabbyn P ; fowle gabben F.

17. *his*] is P.

18. *with*] *whith* P ; *and in* l. 31.
neodyde] *nede* MFG ; *nede* E ;
nedite T.

19. G *omits.* *hus* (2)] for his E.
fere] *felow* F.

20. G *omits.* *solde*] *sode* T. *sode*]
sente M ; *sende* F ; *solde* T ; *toke* E.
leueden] *lyueden* EM.

21. *by—dewes*] *be mores* · *lyuede*
zeres and *daies* M ; *heo leuede* · *bi*
moorus and *bi lewes* F ; *by meris*
mylk lyuede & *Ewis* (!) T.

22. *Loue*] Her *loue* F. *leel*] her
leel F. *heeld*] held TG ; halt M.

23. *eet*] so PMTG ; *ete* E ; *eet* but
F.

24. *souel*] so PEMG ; *sowel* F ;
soul T.

25. *ne*] nor F ; & G.

27. *With*] *Whit* P ; *and in* ll. 73,
79.

28. *wildernesse*] *wildernessis* T.

29. *ne*] nor F ; *noþer* M.

30. G *omits.* *louh*] *low* M ; *lowe*
EMF. *chere* EMT] *cheere* F ; *chire* P.

31. G *omits.* *by-fore*] *bi-forn* M.
þe] þe MT. *men*] folk F. *fauhnede*]
fauzned E ; *faunede* M ; *faunide* T ;
faynede F. *þe*] *heore* M.

32. *Ac*] & F. *foweles*] *foules*
EMG ; *foulis* T ; *foulus* F.

In tokenynge þat trewe man · alle tymes sholde
Fynde honeste men [and] holy men · and oþer ryghtful
people.

For wolde neuere feithful god · þat freres and monkes
token

Lyfode of luper wynnynges · in al here lif-tyme. 36

As wytnesseþ holy writ · what thobie seyde

† Remember
what Tobit said
to his wife.

To his wif, whan he was blynde · [he] herde a lamb blete;

‘A! wyf! be war,’ quap he · ‘what ȝe haue here-ynne;

Lord leyue,’ quap þe lede · ‘no stole þyng be here!’ 40

Videte ne furtum sit: & alibi, melius est mori † Tobit ii. 21.

quam male uiuere.

This is no more to mene · bote men of holychurche

Sholde receyue ryght nauȝt · bot þat ryght wolde,

And refuse reuerences · and raueneres offrynges. 43

Thenne wolde lordes and ladies · be loth for to agulte,

Lords would not
exact too much,
if friars took no
alms from
robbers.

And to take of here tenauns · more þan treuthe wolde;

And marchauns merciablen wolde be · and men of lawe

boþe.

Wolde religiouse refuse · raueneres almesse,

Then grace sholde growe ȝut · and grene-leued wexe, 48

And charite, þat child is now · sholde chaufen of [him-]

self,

† Then should
Charity grow
warm.

And confortye alle cristene · wold holy[kirke] amende.

33. *man*] men M. *tymes*] time G.

34. [*and* MFTG] in PE. *men* (2)]
T om.

35. *god* EMTFG] *goud* P. *token*] taken E.

37. *writ* EFTG] *writt* P; *writh* M. *what*] *what* þat F; as M.

38. *To—wif*] at end of l. 37 in T. *his*] is P. *blynde*] *blynd* as a betil T. [*he* MFTG] PE om.

39. *A*] T om. *A wyf*] Woman F. *ȝe haue*] *haue* we T. *here-ynne*] *per-Inne* E.

40. *leyue*] so PE; *leue* MTG; *leeue* F. *þe*] *þat* EMFG. *no*] *þat* no T. *here*] *here-Inne* EMTG. *no—here*] *þat* it be nat of stelthe F. & *alibi*] M om.

42. *nauȝt* MFT] *nauth* P.

43. *offrynges*] *offryng* MF; *conge* (!) G.

44. *for*] TG om.

45. *And*] Or F. *to*] *forte* M. *tenauns*] *tenauntes* MEEFG.

47. *religiouse*] *religioun* M. *almesse*] *almesses* M; *almus* F; *offrynges* T.

48. *ȝut*] F om. *leued*] *levus* F; *loue* (!) T; *leues* G.

49. *child*] so PET; *cold* MF; *scheld* G. *chaufen*] *chawfe* F; *chafen* E; *chaunce* T. [*him* MF] *hem* PETG.

50. *confortye*] *confort* E; *comforte* MFG; *counforten* T. [*kirke* T] *churche* PEFG; *chirche* M.

Iob þe parfit patriark · þis prouerbe wrot and tauhte,
 To makye a man louye mesure · þat monkes beep and
 Freres ; 52

272

Job vi. 5.

*Nunquam, dicit Iob, rugiet onager cum habuerit
 herbam, aut mugiet bos cum ante plenum
 presepe steterit? Brutorum animalium natura
 te condempnat, quia cum pabulum sufficiat
 commune, ex adipe prodiit iniquitas.*

Unlearned men
 might hence
 learn to give less
 to monks.

Yf lewede men knewe this latyn · a litel þei wolde
 auisen hem

Er thei amorteisede eny more · for monkes oþer for
 chanons.

Why should
 lords leave lands
 away from their
 heirs ?

Alas ! lordes and ladies · lewede counsail haue [3e]
 þat founded beþ to fulle · to feffe suche and fede 56
 With þat 3oure barnes and 3oure blod · by goode lawe
 may cleyne !

For god bad hus blessedde · as þe book techeth,

† Exod. xx. 12.

Honora patrem & matrem, [ut longeuus sis, &c.]

To helpe þy fader formest · by-fore freres and monkes,
 And er prestes oþer pardoneres · oþer eny people elles.

† Charity begins
 at home.

Help þi kynne, crist bit · for þer by-gynneþ charite, 61
 And afterwarde awaite · hoo haþ moost neede,

And þer help yf þou hast · and þat halde ich Charite.

† Observe what
 St Lawrence did.

Loo ! laurence for hus largenesse ! · as holy lore telleþ,

52. To] & T. makye] make MFTG.
a man] men MFG. *louye*] so PE ;
 loue MFTG. *ante*] ante eum PET ;
but MF om. eum. *sufficiat commune*
 commune sufficiat MFG. *iniquitas*
 iniquitas tua T.

53. *knewe*—*latyn*] þis latyn knew
 F. þei] E om.

54. *Er*] Or EMFG. *amorteisede*
 enmorteiside M ; morteyse G. *for*
 (2)] FG om.

55. E omits *last halves* of ll. 55 and
 56. [3e MFTG] we P ; cf. B-text.

56. To feffe swiche and fede · þat
 founden ben at þe folle M ; To feffe
 suche & feede · þat founded be to þe
 fulle FT ; To feffen suche & fynde · þat

founde biþ atte fulle G.

57. *With*] Be T. *by*] wiþ G. *may*
 myȝt G.

58. *hus*] þe MF. *blessede* MFG]
 blesside P ; blessid childir T ; blesse
 (wrongly) E. *book*] book us F. *techeth*
 telleþ MF. [*ut*—&c.] in F only.

59. *Here* I begins again. and] or
 T.

60. *And*] Or ITG. *er*] or ME ; ar
 FI ; T om. *er prestes*] oþer peple G.
 61. *for*] & F. þer] her M.

62. T omits. *awaite*] awhaite P.

63. T omits. *and*—*Charite*] & þan
 hadde ich charite E ; for charite I it
 halde F ; & þat halt charite G.

64. *lore*] writh M.

þat hus mede and hus man-hede · for euere-more shal
laste ; 65

Iusticia eius manet in eternum.

He gaf godes men [godes] goodes · and nat to grete
lordes,

† Ps. cx. 3
(Vulg.).

And fedde þat a-fyngred were · and in defaute lyueden.

Ich dar nat carpe of clerkes now · þat cristes tresoure
kepen, 68

† Clerks that keep
Christ's treasure
spend money on
apparel and
concubines.

That poure people by pure ryght · here part thei
myghten aske ;

Of þat [þat] holychurche · of þe olde lawe cleymeþ,

Priestes on aparail · and on purnele spenen.

Men may lykne letterid men · to a lussheborgh, oþer
werse, 72

And to a badde peny · with a good preynthe.

For of muche moneye · þe metal is ryght nauht,

Of counterfeit
coin.

3ut is þe prente pure trewe · an parfitliche graue.

And so it fareþ by false cristine · here follouht is trewe,

Cristendome of holy[kirke] · þe kynges marke of
heuene ; 77

Ac þe metal, þat is mannes saule · of meny of þese
techeres

Man's soul is
alloyed with sin.

Is alayed with lecherie · and oþer lustes of synne,

66. [godes MG] goddes I ; godis T ;
his F ; PE om. to] I om.

67. a-fyngred] so PEEFG ; a-fyngrit
T ; of-hongret M ; anhungred I.

68. dar IMFTG] der P ; derre E.

In the margin of M—contra clericos.

69. thei] IFTG om.

70. Of] And of F. [þat MFITG]
PE om. of þe] by G.

71. on (1)] in heore M. spenen]
spenden M ; spendeth F ; now spene
I ; now spenden T ; now speneþ G.

72. Men] Me I. may] may now
IT. lykne] likne FTG ; likene MI ;
likken E. a] TG om. lussheborgh]
luhsheborgh P ; luscheborgh E ;
losscheburgh I ; lusscheburne MFT ;
luscheboru G. werse] a wurse F.

73. And] & eke F. preynthe]
preente I ; prente MFT.

74. For] IT om. moneye] mone
þat is mad T. ryght] IT om. nauht]
feble F.

75. 3ut] & 3it IT. is] follows
prente in T. an] and MI ; & EFTG.
grauē] i-graue MFITG.

76. follouht] follouzt E ; fullynge
MI ; folewyng T ; preente F. trewe]
triwe P (but see l. 75) ; ful trewe F.
is trewe] y trowe I.

77. [kirke I] church PEEFG ;
chirche MT. þe kynges] ys cristes G.

78. mannes] many (1) T. meny of]
I om. þese] F om.

79. Is] Hit is F. synne] synnes I.

That god coueiteþ nat [þe] coygne · þat crist hym-self
prentede ; 80

And for synne of [þe] soule · for-sakeþ hus owne coygne.

† Bad men are
like counterfeit
coin.

Thus are þe lithere lykned · to lussheborue sterlinges,

That faire by-fore folke · prechen and techen,

And worchen nat as þei fynden wryten · and wissen þe
people. 84

For what þorw werre and wrake · and wycked hyfdes,

† No prayer now
brings peace.

May no preiour pees make · in no place, hit semeþ ;

Lewede men hauen no by-leyue · so letterid men erren.

† The fruits of
the earth and sea
fail.

Neiþer þe see ne þe sande · ne þe seed ȝeldeþ 88

As þei woned were ; · in wham is defaute ?

Nat in god, þat he nys good · and þe grounde boþe ;

And þe see and þe seed · the sonne and þe mone

Don her deuer day and nyȝt · and yf we duden also, 92

Ther sholde be plente and pees · perpetuel for euere.

Weatherwise
men are now-a-
days at fault.

[Wederwise] shupmen now · and oþer witty people

Han no by-leyue to þe lyft · ne to þe lood-sterre ;

Astronomyens al day · in here art failen, 96

80. [þe EMIFTG] þat P. *coygne*]
so PE ; coyne MFIG ; coyn T. *prentede* MIFT] prentede PE ; preyn-
ted G.

81. *And*] But F. *synne*] þe synne
IT. [þe EMIFTG] P om. *coygne*]
marke F.

82. *þe*] þese M ; ȝe I. *lykned*]
lyknede P ; likned EFG ; i-likened MI ;
ylikned T. *lussheborue*] luhssheborue
P ; luscheborue E ; losscheborwes I ;
lusscheburne MF ; lusshebournis T ;
luschebornes G. *sterlinges*] star-
lyngus FG ; starlyng T.

83. *faire*] so fair F. *by-fore*] bi-
forn þe M.

84. *And*] F om. *þei*] ȝe I. *wry-
ten*] i-writen M ; y-write IT. *and*] ne
MF. *wissen*] wisse nat F.

85. *For—þorw*] What so þourgh G.
hyfdes] heuedes MTG ; hedes EIF.

86. *pees make*] make pees F.

87. F omits. *Lewede*] þat lewede
M. *so*] and I.

88—93. G omits.

88. *þe* (1)] ITF om. *þe* (2)] IMFT
om. *þe* (3)] no I. *In margin of M*
—defectus populi.

89. *As*] As þat F. *woned*] I-woned
F ; I-wont T. *is*] is þe M.

90. *nys*] ne is F. *good* IMFT]
goud P.

91. *the*] and þe I.

92. *deuer*] dyuer M ; deuyer I.
nyȝt EMFIT] nyȝth P. *duden*] dyden
F ; dede IT. *also*] eke F. *and—
also*] dede we so also IT.

93. *sholde*] ich holde E. *and*] of
M. *for*] IT om.

94. [Wederwise I] Wonderwyse
PEMFTG ; but see B-text. *shupmen*]
schipmen IFG ; chappmen M ; shup-
pen (*sic*) E. *witty*] wise F.

95. *lyft*] list F. *lood-sterre*] lood-
sterres PEIT ; but MFG have lode-
sterre, which is of course right.

96. *day*] day now F.

That whilom warned men by-fore · what shoulde by-falle
after.

Shupmen and shephurdes · by the seuen sterres
Wisten while and tolden · whenne hit shoulde
reynen.

Tyliers þat tyleden þe erthe · tolden here maystres 100 Tillers could once
calculate the
yield of the soil ;

By þe seed þat þei sewe · what þei shoulde notye,
And what lyue by and lene · þe londe was so trewe.

Now failleþ þis folke · boþe sowers and shupmen,

Noþer þei knoweþ ne conneþ · o cours by a-noþer. 104 **275**
but are now at a
loss.

Astronomyens al-so · aren at here wittes end ;

Of þat was calculated of þe clymat · the contrarye þey
fyndeth.

Grammere, þat grounde is of alle · by-gyleþ now
children ;

For þer is nouthe non · who so nymeþ hede, 108 There are none
now who can
versify.

That can [versifie] fayre · oþer formeliche endite,

Ne þat can construen kyndeliche · þat poetes maden.

Gowe now to eny degre · and, bote gyle be halde a
mayster,

97. *whilom* IFTG] *whilen* PE ; *calculated*] *þei calcle* F.
wel lome M. *by-falle*] *fallen* F. 107—110. *G omits.*

98. *Shupmen*] *Schipmen* MFTG ; 107. *þat—is*] *þat is ground* M ; *þe*
Schepmen EI. *grounde* I. *now*] *nowþe* MF ; *nouthe*
I ; *now þe* T.

99. *while*] *wel* I ; *wel ofte* M ;
sum tyme F. *hit*] *þat hit* M. 108. *þer is*] *is þer* M ; *is I. nouthe*
now E ; *now of hem* F ; *IT om.*
nouthe non] *no withg now* M. *hede*
EMIT] *heede* F ; *miswritten hete* P.

100. *tyleden*] *tiliede* I ; *tilied* F ;
tilide T. *þat tyleden*] of M. *tolden*] *uerseþe* M ; *versfy* E ; *uersie* P.
sum tyme toold F. *here*] *to heore* M. *versifie fayre*] *faire versifie* F. *oþer*
101. *notye*] *notiþe* M ; *note* FG. *ne* M. *formeliche*] *foormally* F ;
shoulde notye] *sulle myghte* I ; *selle*
miþte T. *formaly* T. OBS. T *wrongly makes*
ll. 108, 109 *into one line* ; *and I makes*
ll. 108—110 *into two lines.*

102. *was*] *whas* P ; *ys (wrongly)* G.

103. *Now*] *But now* F. *þis*] *our*
F. *sowers*] *felders* F ; *folwers* I.
shupmen] *schipmen* MFITEG.

104. *knoweþ*] *ne knoweþ* I. *con-*
neþ] *kunneþ* E ; *cunne* M ; *þei can* F.
a] on M. *a-noþer*] *an oþer* EMG.

105. *aren*] *ben ME (badly).* *al-so*
aren] *arn also · alle* F. *here wittes*] *miswritten ere whittes* P.

106. *calculated*] *i-calkuled* M. *was*

110. *þat can*] I om. *þat (2)]* *þat*
þe M. *maden*] *haue maked* F.

111. *Gowe*] *so* PEI ; *Go we* MFTG.
and] F om. *bote*] I om. *halde*] *i-holde* M ; *holde* ITG ; *hadde* E ; F
om. *a*] M om.

And a flaterer for hus vsshære · [a] ferliche me þynkeþ !
 Masters of divinity know no logic. Doctours of decree · and of dyuyn maystres, 113
 That shoulde þe seuene ars conne · and a-soile *ad*
quodlibet,

Bote þei faille in fylosophye · —and filosofhers lyueden,
 [And wolde wel examene hem— · wonder me þynkeþ !]
 Even churchmen, perhaps, skip the 276
 services. Lord leyue þat þese preestes · leelly seyn here masses,
 That þei ouerhuppe nat for hast ! · as ich hope thei
 do nat, 118

[þogh] hit suffice for oure sauacion · sothfast by-leyue ;
 As clerkus in *corpus-christi* feste · syngen and reden,
 Mere faith, they say, suffices. That *sola fides sufficit* · to saue with lewede people. 121
 Ac yf preestes do her deuer wel · we shullen do þe
 bettere.

† Even Saracens might thus be saved. For saresyns mowe be saued so · yf þei so by-leyuede,
 In þe lengthyng of here lyf · to leyue on holychurche.”
 † Holy-Church is charity, life, love, truth, in one belief and law. “What is holychurche, frend ?” quoþ ich · “charite,”
 he seyde, 125

“Lyf, and loue, and leaute · in o by-leyue [and] lawe,
 [A loue-knotte] of leaute · and of leel by-leyue,

112. *a—for*] false flaterer F. *for*] G om. *a*] I om. *vsshære* T] *vsshære* E; *vschære* IF; *vscher* M; *husschære* PG. [*a* FT] and PEI; MG om. *ferliche*] *ferlich* E; *ferly* IFTG; wonder M.

113. *of* (1)] now of F. *decree*] so PE; decre MFI; *degre* T; decreete G. *dyuyn*] *deuyn* MG; *diuinite* IT.

114. *ars*] arts F; M om. *ad*] a IFTG.

115. *faille*] *failede* M. *in*] in þe T. *and*] E om. *and—lyueden*] a *ferly* me thinketh F (*from* l. 112).

116. *From* M; *not in* PEIFTG, which leave the sentence incomplete; cf. B. xv. 376.

117. *leyue*] so PE; *leue* MFTG; *lete* I. *masses*] *masse* MIT.

118. *That þei*] And nat to F. *ouerhuppe*] so PG; *ouerhippe* EFIT; *ouerlippe* M.

119. [þogh I] Þo3 E; Þowh F; Phaw M; Þau3 G; Þei3 T; That P; cf. B. xv. 380. *suffise* EFT] suffice IG; *soffice* M; *suffuse* P. *for*] to T. *oure*] F om.

121. *with*] with P; and in ll. 129, 130, 131, 134.

122. *deuer*] *dyuer* M. *uf—her*] doctours dooth þour F. *we*] & we F; *miswritten* whe P.

123. G omits. *by-leyuede*] *bileue* MFT.

124. G omits. *lengthyng*] *letyng* I; *lettyng* T; (*this may seem better; but cf. Lyf in l. 126.*) *leyue*] *leue* EMIT; *leeue* F.

125. *frend*] *dere frende* IT; F om.

126. *Lyf*] *Leue* (*wrongly*) T. *o*] on M; oo F. [*and* M] & oo F; a PEIG; of T.

127. [*A—knotte* MFITG] And loue a knotte PE.

Alle kynne cristene · cleuyng on o wyl, 128
 With-oute gyle and gabbyng · gyue and selle and
 lene.

Loue lawe with-oute leaute · lowable was it neuere ;
 God lereþ no lyf to loue · with-oute leel cause :

Iewes, gentiles, and sarrasines · Iugen hem-selue 132 † Jews and
 That leeliche þei by-leyuen · and ȝut here lawe Saracens think
 [dyuerseþ] ; their belief is
 true.

And on god þat al by-gan · with goode herte þei
 honoureþ,

[And eiper loueþ, and bileuiþ · in on lord al-myȝti.]

Ac oure lorde loueþ no loue · bote lawe be þe cause ; † Lechers love
 For lechours louen aȝen þe lawe · and at þe laste beep against law, and
 dampned : love against
 137 truth, and are
 hanged.

And theeues [louen, and] leaute haten · and at þe laste
 beep hanged :

And leelle men louen as lawe techen · and loue þer-of
 aryseþ,

The which is hefd of charite · and hele of mannes soule.

Dilige deum propter deum ; id propter ueritatem † Love God,
est. Et inimicum tuum propter mandatum ; because of the
id propter legem est. Et amicum propter truth ; and your
amorem ; id est, propter caritatem. enemy, because of
 the law ; and
 your friend be-
 cause of charity.

Loue God, for he is good · and grounde of alle treuthe ;

Loue þyn enemy entyerly · godes heste to ful-fille ; 142

128. *cleuyng* E] *cleuyng* FTG ; *cleueynge* I ; a better spelling than *cleuyng* P ; *cleymyng* (wrongly) M. on] in I.

129. *and* (1)] or M. *and* (2)] G om. *and* (3)] T om. *lene*] *lene* & loue T (which omits Loue in l. 130).

130. *lowable*] allowable TI ; allow-able FG.

132. *gentiles and*] and gentil I ; & ientil T.

133. [*dyuerseþ* EMIFTG] *dyuersen* P.

134. *on*] o ITG ; oo F ; of E.

135. *From* M ; also in IFGT ; PE

om. *eiper*] *ayper* IG ; *aither* oþur F. *bileueþ*] *leeueth* F.

136. *loueþ*] *alloweþ* I.

138. [*louen and* T] *louyen and* I ; PEMFG om. (But cf. ll. 137, 139.) *theeues—at*] *lurdeynus þat lewte hate · at* F. *hanged*] *i-hanget* M.

139. *And—as* Ac leel loueth & F. *men*] G om. *louen*] lyue I.

140. *hefd*] *hed* EMFG ; þe hede I ; þe heuid T. *For* id, MITG *have* i., and omit est (*thrice*) ; F has id est the first time only, and i. afterwards.

142. *entyerly*] *enterli* M ; *enterly* EG.

† Love one friend especially, viz. thine own soul.

Loue þy frend þat folweþ þy wil · þat is [þy] faire soule.

For whanne alle frendes faillen · and fleen a-wey in deiynge, 144

Then suweþ þe þy soule · to sorwe oþer to ioie,
And ay hopeþ eft to be · with here bodye atte laste

† Charity is to be dear (*cher*) to thy soul.

In murthe oþer in mornynge · and neuere eft to departe.
And þat is charite, my leue childe · to be cher ouer thi soule ; 148

Contrarie hure nauht, as in conscience · yf þou wolt come to heuene."

"[Wher] sarrasyns," ich seyde · "seo nat what is charite?"

† Saracens have some charity ; for they love God their Creator.

"Hit may be þat sarrasyns hauen · a suche manere charite, 151

Louye, as by lawe of kynde · oure lord god al-mygthy.
Hit is a kynde þyng, a creature · hus creatour to honoure ;

For þer is no man þat mynde hath · þat ne meokeþ hym and by-secheþ 154

To þat lord þat hym lyf lente · and lyflode him sendeþ.

† But many love Him not aright.

Ac meny manere men þer beoþ · as sarrasyns and Iewes,
Louyeþ nat þat lorde a-ryght · as by þe legende sanctorum, 157

143. [þy EIG] þi MFT; þe P.

144. *alle*] þi F. *deiynge*] so PE; deying G; deying M; dying F; deynge I; doying (!) T.

145. *þe*] so G. *þy*] IT om.

146. *eft to*] for to FTG; forte M. *with*] whit P; and in l. 166. *here*] F om. *atte*] at þe MTG.

147. *eft*] F om.

148. *my*] IT om. *leue*] F om. *child*] sone M. *cher*] cheer F. *ouer*] of G. *be—ouer*] loue wel M.

149. *as*] F om. *to*] in T.

150. [Wher] Where IG; Whare F; Were P (*for* Wher, *contr. form of* Wheþer); Wheþer ET; For (*wrongly*) M. *ich seyde*] seiden

(*wrongly*) M. *nat*] now M. *seo*] i-se I.

151. F omits. *be*] be so ITG. *a suche*] swich a M; such a ITG.

152. *Louye*] Louen T; To loue F. *by*] be þe M.

153. *a kynde*] kende F; kyndely IT. *a*] for a M; euery T; IG om. *to*] G om.

154. *For*] F om. *is*] nys FT. *mynde*] kynde M. *ne*] M om.

155. *lyf*] F om. *and*] I om. *him*] M om. *sendeþ*] EMFG] sende I; sente T; seyndeþ P.

157. *Louyeþ—þat*] Leuiþ nat on oure T.

And lyuen oute of leel by-leyue · for thei leyue in
a mene. 158

A man þat hihte makamede · for messye thei hym heolde,
And after hus lerynge thei lyuen · and by lawe of kynde. (276)
And when kynde hath hus cours · and no contrarye The Saracens
suppose Mahomet
to be the
Messiah.
fyndeth, 161

þenne is lawe lost · and lewete vnknownen.

Beaute saunz bounte · blessed was hit neuere,
Ne kynde *saunz cortisie* · In no contreye preysed. 164

Men fyndep þat makamede · was a man ycrystned,
And a cardinal of court · a gret clerk with-alle, Mahomet was a
Christian once,
and wanted to
be pope, but
failed.
And persuede to haue be pope · pryns of holychurche;
And for he was lyke a lussheborgh · ich leyue oure
lord hym lette. 168

For-thi souhte he in-to surrye · and sotile[d] hou he
myghte He then went to
Syria and tamed
a dove.

Beo mayster ouer alle þo men · and on þis manere
wroughte.

He endauntede a douue · day and nyght here fedde;

In aȝer of hus eris · pryueliche he hadde 172 He used to put
corn in his ears.

Corn, þat þe coluer eet · when he cam in places.

158. *And*] But F. *in*] on IG.

159. *hihte*] he heȝte E. *makamede*] makemed E; makamete MF; makameþ I; macumeþ T (*here and elsewhere*). *heolde*] helde EG; hoolde F; holdeth IT; holden M.

160. *lerynge*] lernyng G. *and*] as M. *by*] bi þe MF.

162. E *omits. lawe*] þat lawe F. *lost*] i-lost MF; y-left ITG. *vnknownen*] vnknowyn P; vnknowe MIFTG.

163. *saunz*] sauip (!) T; *and in* l. 164.

164. *Ne*] No T; And M. *preysed*] i-preised MG; is y-preised IT.

165. *Men*] Me I. *fyndep*] fynde wel I; fynt wel T.

167. *And*] He M. *be*] so PEMFI; beo G; ben T.

168. *And*] Ac I. *was*] whas P.

lyke] lik to M. *lussheborgh*] louhsheborgh P; luscheborȝ E; losscheburgh I; lusscheburne MFT; lussheborue G.

169. *For-thi*] For-whi M. *souhte*] souȝte EMFIT; southte P. *he*] I *om. souhte he*] he souȝte M. *in-to*] in E. *surrye*] surye IG; sorie M. *sotiled* I] sotilide T; sotelede G; sotelde M; *misrritten* sotile PE; souled F.

170. *ouer*] of M. *and*] F *om. Before* wroughte MIFTG insert he.

171. *douue*] dowue or downe MG; doun IT; coluer (*over an erasure*) E. *day*] and day IFG.

172. *In*] þan in F.

173. *þat þe*] I *om. þat*] G *om. þe*] T *om. coluer*] culuur F. *eet*] so PMFIG; ete E; et T. *in*] in-to F. *places*] place G.

- And in what place he prechede · and þe people tauhte,
 Then the dove Then sholde þe coluere come · to the clerkes ere,
 pecked at his ears
 for the corn. Menynge as after mete · thus makamede here en-
 chauntede. 176
- And whan þe coluer kam þus · þenne [knelede] þe
 people,
 277 For makamede to men swor · ‘hit was a messenger of
 heueue,
 Mahomet gave out that the dove
 was the mes-
 senger of God. And sothly god self · in suche a coluere lyknesse
 Tolde hym and tauhte hym · hou to teche þe people.’
- Thus he misled Thus makamede in mysbyleyue · man and womman
 many. brouhte, 181
- And in hus lore thei leyuen ȝut · as wel lered as
 lewede.
- Since our Saviour And sutthe oure sauour suffrede · suche a fals crystine
 suffered this, Deceyue so sarrasyns · sothly me thynkeþ, 184
- † holy men Holy men, as ich hope · thorw help of þe holy gost,
 should now Sholde conuerten hem to crist · and cristendom [to] take.
 convert these Saracens. Sholde conuerten hem to crist · and cristendom [to] take.
 281 Alas! þat men so longe · on makamede by-leyuen,
 See how many So meny [prelates] to preche · as þe [pope] makeþ, 188
 bishops the pope makes! Of Nazareth, of Nynyve · of Neptalym, of damaske,
 That thei ne wendeþ þe wey · as holy writ biddeth,

174. *he*] þat he F.

176. *mete*] hus mete PE; her meete F; hure mete G; but MIT omit hus or her; cf. B-text. *thus*] so F.

177. [knelede MIT] kneled F; knelde G; knewele P; knewlen E.

178. *For*] F om. *men*] hem M. *to—swor*] swoor to men F. *hit*] he G. *of*] fro E.

179. *god*] þat god I. *self*] him-self MF. *suche*] G om.

180. *to*] he schulde M.

181. *man—womman*] men and wemmen M.

182. *in*] so PEMFG; on IT, as in B-text, *leyuen*] leuen IEG; leue T; lyuen M; lyue F.

184. *so*] so þe IFT; þe G.

185. *ich hope*] þe pope (!) E. þe

—*gost*] god almyȝti F.

186. *and*] F om. [to IMFT] PEG om.

OBS. After l. 186, M inserts l. 288; see note below, to l. 187.

187. *on*] in I, *by-leyuen*] beleuid T.

OBS. Here the subject-matter is misarranged in M; l. 188 appears 30 lines further on.

188. [prelates IFTG] prestes PE; prestes M; cf. B. xv. 485. *preche*] prechie P. [pope EMIFTG] people (!) P.

189. *of* (4)] and of M.

190. *wendeþ*] wente IT. *þe wey*] in world T; I om. *as*] þat G. *biddeth* EFM] biddith P; byddeþ G; bitte I; bit T.

Ite in universum mundum · sutthe 3e wilneþ þe name Mark xvi. 15.

To be prelates, and preche · þe passion of Ihesus, 192

And as hym-self seyde · so lyue and deye ;

Bonus pastor animam suam ponit pro omnibus suis. John x. 11.

Hit is reuthe to rede · hou ryght holy men lyueden, Good men of
How thei defouleden here fleessh · for-soken here old suffered
many things.

owen wil,

Fer fro kuth and fro kyn · vuel-cloped 3eoden, 196

Baddeliche beddyd · no book bote here conscience,

Noþer richesse bote þe rode · to reioysen hem inne ;

Absit [nobis] gloriari nisi in cruce domini nostri iesu christi. Gal. vi. 14.

And þo was pees and plente · a-mong poure and riche ;

And now is reuthe to rede · hou þe rede noble 200 The noble is now

Ys yreuerenced by-fore þe rode · and receyuyd for þe preferred to the

worthier

To a-mende and to make · as with men of holichurche,

Than cryst, oþer croys þat ouercam · deþ and dedly 202

synne !—

203

And now is werre and wo · and ho so ‘whi’ askeþ,

For couetyse after a croys · þe croune stant in golde. All men honour

191, 192. T *makes* sutthe—Ihesus into one line ; I *begins* a new line with Sitthe (*for* Sutthe), and *wrongly* divides ll. 191—193.

192. *To be*] of T. *Ihesus*] crist M.

193. *so*] so to I ; to MG. *deye*] to deien M ; to deye G ; T *puts* ponit before animam. *ponit*] dat M.

194. *ryght*] F om.

195. *for-soken*] & forsoke FTG.

196. *Fer* MITG] Fers E ; Feer P. *Fer fro*] & fro here F. *kuth*] couthe I ; kyþ M ; kith FT. *fro* (2)] F om. *vuel*] euel IF ; euele M ; yuel E. *cloped*] i-cloped MI. *3eoden*] þei 3ede T ; hy 3ede G.

197. *Baddeliche*] Ful baddeliche F. *beddyd*] ybedded EIT ; i-bedded M. *no*] & (!) G.

198. G *omits.* *Noþer*] Ne no IT ; No M. *richesse*] riche I ; richchesses F. *reioysen* I] reioyesen P ; reioyse E ; reiosche F ; reioisshen T ; reioie M. [*nobis* IG] vobis T ; nos PEM ; michi F ; cf. B-text. *Absit nobis*] Michi autem absit F.

199. *þo*] E om.

200. *now*] G om. *to*] for to F.

201. *receyuyd*] reuerensid (*repeated*) T. *for—worthier*] as for beture F. *worthier*] worschepour M.

202. G *omits.* *with*] whit P ; T om.

203. *Than*] In I. *oþer*] on M ; þat (!) E. *cryst oþer*] cristes IT.

204. *And*] M om.

205. *For*] For þe F. *a*] þe F ; G om. *stant*] so PEFG ; stande I ; stand M ; standiþ T.

the cross that is
engraved upon
coins.

Boþe riche and religiouse · that rode þei honouren

þat in grotis is y-graue · and in gold nobles.

For couetyse of þat croys · clerkes of holychurche 208

Schullen ouerturne as templers duden · þe tyme

aprocheþ faste.

The fall of
the Templars.

Mynne 3e nat, lettered men · hou þo men honourede

More tresour [þan] treuthe? · ich dar nat telle þe sothe

How þo corsede crystine · catel and richesse wor-

shepeden ; 212

Reyson and Riȝtful dome · þe religious dammede.

Right so, 3e clerkus, 3oure couetise · er come ouht longe,

Shal dampne *dos ecclesie* · and depose 3ow for 3oure

pruyde ;

Luke i. 52.

Deposuit potentes de sede.

Yf knyȝt-hod and kynde wit · and þe comune and

conscience 216

To-gederes louen leelliche · leyueþ hit wel, bisshopes,

Bishops shall
live like Levites.

[þe] lordshup of londes · leese 3e shulle for euere,

And lyuen as *levitici* dude · and as our lord 3ow

techeþ,

Cf. Deut. xii. 6.

Per primicias et decimas.

Constantine's
gift condemned
by an angel.

Whenne constantyn of hus cortesyse · holy[kirke]

dowede 220

207. *y-graue*] graue I; grauen M.
gold] goldene G. *gold nobles*] nobles
of golde M.

208. *þat*] þe IF.

209. *Schullen*] Schulde I; Schal
F. *templers*] þe templeris T; þe
temple (!) I. *duden*] so PMEG;
deden F; dede IT. *aprocheþ*] comiþ
G.

210. *Mynne*] Mynewe T; Mene M;
Wyte G. *nat*] I om. *lettered*] 3e
lettred MF. *þo*] þat G.

211. [þan IMETG] þan þe F; P
om. *sothe* EMIFTG] southe P.

212. *þo*] þe EFG.

213. *Reyson*] þat resoun F. *and*]
as E. *þe*] so PEIT; þo MF. *religious*
EMFT] religiouns I; *miswritten* re-
lious (*by a mere slip*) P; see l. 206.

dome—religious] þo freris of religion
G.

214. *3e*] EFG om. *3oure*] þoruȝ
T. *er*] ar I; or EMG; 3e ȝit or (*sic*) F.

215. *3ow for*] F om.

216. [Yf] Hyf P; ȝif EMFIG.
knyȝt] knyȝt P. *wit* F] wyt TG;
witte I; witt E; whit P; with M.
and (2)] MF om.

217. *To-gederes*] at end of l. 217
in T. *louen*] louyen I; louye F;
loueden MT. *hit*] F om. *wel*] wel
3e F; I om.

218. [þe EMITG] To (*wrongly*) P;
F om. *londes*] 3our londes F. *3e*]
þey G. *shulle*] schulde M.

219. *our*] 3oure IE. *3ow*] M om.

220. [kirke IT] church PEFG;
chirche M.

With londes and leedes · lordshepes and rentes,

An angel men hurde · an hih at rome crye—

‘*Dos ecclesie* this day · hap ydronke venym,

And tho þat han petres power · aren poysoned alle.’

A medecine moste þer-to · þat myghte amende þe
prelates, 225

That sholden preye for þe pees · and possession hem
letteþ ;

Takeþ here londes, 3e lordes · and leet hem lyue by
dymes, 227

Yf 3e kynges coueyten · in cristene pees to lyuen.

For yf posession be poyson · and inparfyt hem make,

The heuedes of holychurche · and tho þat be vnder hem,

Hit were charite to deschargen hem · for holychurches
sake, 231

And purge hem of þe olde poyson · ere more perel falle.

For were preest-hod more parfyt · þat is, þe pope formest,

That wiþ moneye menteyneþ men · to werren vp-on
cristine,

A-3ens þe lore of oure lorde · as seynt luk wytnesseþ,

*Michi uindictam, [& ego retribuam, dicit do-
minus, &c.]* 235

Hus prayers with hus pacience · to pees sholde brynge

If then their
wealth hinders
churchmen in
their duty, it
were well to take
it away from
them.

283

It were well to
free them from
such poison.

† If the pope
would cease to
maintain war,

† Rom. xii. 19 ;
Deut. xxxii. 35.

† his prayers

221. *With]* Whith P; *and in* ll.
234, 236, 245.

222. *hurde]* herde MITF; herd E.
hih] hey I; hey; E; hy F; hi M;
hei] T. *at]* aboute F. *crye]* þo
criede M.

223. *this]* þis ilke F.

224. G *omits.* *tho]* I *om.* *petres*
MIE] petrus FT; petris P. *aren]*
ben E; be F. *poysoned]* apoysoned
EIF; I-poysoned F; enpoisoned
M.

225. A] M *om.* *moste]* þer most
F. *þe]* F *om.*

227. 3e MEIFTG] *miswritten* 3 (*sic*)
P. *leet]* late F; lat I; letip T;
letteþ M; lete G.

228. 3e—*coueyten]* þe kyng

coueyte I. *in]* on G. *cristene]*
cristes FITG.

229—232. G *omits.*

229. *inparfyt]* inparfyzt P. *in-*
parfyt hem] hem inparit F.

230. *heuedes]* hedes EF. *tho—*
hem] ho so is hem vndur F.

231. *churches]* church F; chirche
I.

232. *þe]* heore M. *olde* MIT] old
E; oolde P; F *om.*

233. *parfyt]* parfyzt P; *and in* l.
251. *þat]* þan G. *In margin of* M
—De papa.

235. [*&—&c.*] *in* F *only.*

236. *prayers]* pees (*sic*) F. *with]*
for G. *pacience]* penaunce M.

might bring
peace.

† Observe how
Mahomet pre-
vailed by means
of a dove,

† not by might,
but by guile.

† So should the
pope pray Christ
to send his Dove,

† which is the
Holy Ghost, who
makes peace.

Alle londes to loue · and þat in a lytel tyme ;
The pope with alle preestes · *pax-uobis* sholde make !
And take hede hou makamede · þorwe a mylde doue,
He hald al surrye as hym-self wolde · and sarasyns in
quyete ; 240

Nouht þorw manslauht and [mannes] strengthe · maka-
mede hadde þe mastrie,
Bote þorw pacience and pryuy gyle · he was prynce
ouer hem alle.

In suche manere, me þynkeþ · moste þe pope,
Prelates, and preestes · prayen and by-seche 244
Deuowtliche day and nyzt · and wiþ-drawe hem fro
synne,

And crye to crist þat he wolde · hus coluere sende,
The whiche is þe holy gost · þat out of heuene de-
scendede, 247

To make a *perpetuel* pees · by-twyne þe prynce of heuene
And alle manere [of] men · þat on þis molde lybbeþ.
Yf preest-hod were *parfit* and preyede thus · the people
sholde amende,

That now contrarien cristes lawes · and cristendom
despisen. 251

251

For sutthe þat þes sarasyns · scribes, and þese Iewes

237. *Alle*] And alle M. *to*] in-to
MIFTG. *a*] MIFT *om. tyme*] while GT.

238. *pax-uobis*] E *om. make*] synges M.

239. *hou*] on I. *þorne*] with FM.
doue] dowue MIF; douue T; dome (!)
E.

240. *He hald*] He halde E; Hadde
MIFTG. *hym-self*] he F. *quyete*] equite I.

241. *and*] ne M. [mannes I]
manis T; PEMFG *om. makamede*
hadde] hadde he M.

242. *pryuy*] G *om. ouer*] of F.

243. *suche*] such a IFG. *me*] as
me F.

244. *Prelates*] Prelatis P; With
prelats F; Boþe prelatis T.

245. *and*] T *om. fro*] fro here G.

246. *þat*] IT *om. sende* EMIFTG]
seynde P.

247. *whiche*] wiche P. *þe*] þe hye
I; þe heige T. *descendede*] descende
F; descendeþ I.

248. *by-twyne*] bitwix F; bytwene
EIMG. *prynce*] kyng M.

249. [of MFT] PEIG *om. þis*] his
T; þe M.

250. *Yf—and*] Parfit presthode
þat F.

251. *now*] T *om. now contrarien*
contrarien now IG; contrarie þus T.
lawes] lawe M.

252—262. G omits.

252. *scribes*] tribus (*wrongly*) T.
þese] þes P; þe M.

Hauen a lippe of oure by-leyue · þe lightloker, me
þynkeþ,

Thei sholde turne, [who so] trauayle wolde · and of þe
trinite techen hem.

For alle paynynes preyen · and parfitliche by-leyuen

In þe grete heye god · and hus grace asken, 256

And maken here mone to makamede · here message to
shewe.

Thus in a faith lyueþ þat folke · and in a false mene;

And þat is reuthe for þe [ryghtful] men · þat in þe
reame wonyep,

[And perel for þe prelates · þat þe pope makeþ;] 260

[þat] bereþ name of Neptalym · of Nynyue and of
damaske.

For when þe holy kynge of heuene · sende hus sone to
erthe,

Meny myracles he wrouhte · man for to turne,

In ensample þat men · sholde seo by sad reyson, 264

That men myghte nat be sauede · bote þorw mercy and
grace,

And þorw penaunce and passioun · and parfyt by-leyue;

And by-cam a man of a mayde · and *metropolitanus*,

And baptisede, and busshoppede · with þe blode of hus
herte, 268

283

Paynyns pray
to God and
Mahomet,

which is a peril
to the pope and
his prelates.

Christ wrought
many miracles,

baptized men,
and confirmed
them with His
blood.

254. *turne*] IT *om.* [*who so* IT] þat PEMF. *hem*] F *om.* *techen hem*] *hem* teche M.

255. *preyen*] *precheþ* (!) I. *and*] þat F. *parfitliche*] *parfite* I.

256. *heye*] *hy* F; *hie* M; of (*sic*) I; T *om.* *god*] god of heuene T.

257. *to shewe*] for to sewe F.

258. *a*] T *om.* (*twice*). *faith*] *fay* F. *þat*] þis F. *in* (2)] F *om.*

259. M *inserts* ll. 259—287 *after* l. 187. *þe* (1)] þat T; F *om.* [*ryghtful* IFT] *rithful* M; *ryght* PE; *cf.* B. xv. 536. *þe* (2)] þat IM; FT *om.* *þe reame*] *rome* F.

260. *From* M; *also in* IFT; PE *om.* *perel*] a peril T. *þe* (1)] IT *om.*

261. [þat IMFT] And PE. *name*] þe name T. *and*] I *om.* of (3)] F *om.*

262. *holy*] *heye* I; *heize* T. *sende*] *so* PFG; *sente* IMT. *to*] *til* I. *erthe*] *eerthe* P.

263. *he*] þo he F; a I. *man*] men IF. *man for*] to cristene lawes man G.

265. *bote*] and but I.

266. *parfyt*] *parfyzt* P.

267. *a* (1)] M *om.* *metropolitanus*] *metropolanus* (*sic*) IMTG.

268. *And*] He M. *and*] an P. *busshoppede*] *busshopede* M; *busshupede* T; *bishopede* EF; *bishopid* G; *bisshemed* (*sic*) I.

Alle þat wilnede oþer wolde · with inwit by-leue hit.

264

Saints suffered
death in many
countries.

Meny seint sitthe · suffrede dep̃ al-so ;

For to enforme þe faithe · ful wyde-where deyden, 271

In Inde and in alisaundrie · in ermanye, in spayne,

And fro mysbyleue · meny man turnede.

St Thomas died
a martyr.

In sauacion of mannys saule · seynt thomas of

Caunterbury

274

Among vnkynde cristene · in holychurche was sleye,

And alle holychurche · honoured for þat deyinge.

He is a pattern to
all bishops.

He is a forbusne to alle busshopes · and a bryzt myrour,

And souereyneliche to alle suche · þat of surrye bereþ
name ; 278

And nat in engelonde to huppe abowte · and halewen
menne auters,

And crepe in a-monge [curatours] · and confessen a-zen
þe lawe ;

Cf. Deut. xxiii.
25.

Nolite mittere falcem in messem alienam.

Meny man for crystes loue · was martred a-mong
romaynes 281

269. *oþer*] and IMFTG. *with*] whit P; *and in* l. 268. *inwit* FG] Inwyt T; inwitt EI; inwith M; *badly spelt inwhyt* P. *hit*] TG om.

270. *Meny*] Many a FG. *seint*] seyntes M. *suffrede*] hath suffred þe F. *al-so* EIMFTG] al-soo P.

271. *enforme*] enferme PG; *but en-* forme EM; *enfourme* T; *conferme* F; . . . *ferme* I. *ful*] M om. *deyden*] þei dede F; þei deiden M.

272. *and*] I om. *in ermanye*] matrimonye (!) I. *ermanye*] er- monye MT; hermonye F. *in* (4)] and in MEG.

273. *And fro*] And so fram her F. *man*] men MI; a man F; men hy E; mo G.

274—276. *These lines are much rubbed in* M and I. *Caunterbury*] Cauntelbury P; cauntilburye E; *but caunterbury* MTG; kaunturbury F.

275. *sleye*] so PG; slawe IFT; sleyn E; slayn M.

276. G omits. *honoured*] honour-

ede P. *for*] þoruþ T.

277. *forbusne*] so PE; forbisne I; forbisen T; forbisme G; forbison MF. *alle*] F om. *busshopes*] so PEM; bisschopes IT; bishops F. *bryzt*] bryzthe P.

278. *to alle*] of IT. *name*] þe name IT. *of—bereþ*] beere of surry F.

279. *nat*] þat (!) I. *engelonde*] engelounde P. *huppe*] so PEI; hoppe T; hop F; lepe M; lyppe G. *and*] an P. *menne*] mennes F; menes M; men EITG.

280. *in*] G om. *[curatours* MIFT] curatures G; creatours (*wrongly*) PE; cf. B. xv. 558. *confessen* MT] confesson P; confesse F; *confessye* G; confession (*wrongly*) EI. *þe*] G om. *messem alienam*] so in MIFTG; alienam messem PE.

281. *man*] a man F; men. M. *was*] weren MT. *martred*] i-martyred M.

Er cristendome were knowe þer · oper eny croys
honoured.

Eueriche busshope, by þe lawe · sholde buxumliche
wende,

Bishops are
bound to teach
their people.

And pacientliche, þorgh hus prouynce · and to hus
· peple hym shewe, 284

Feden hem and [fillen] hem · and fere hem fro synne ;

In baculi forma · sit presul hec tibi norma,

Fer, trahe, punge gregem · seruando per omnia legem ;

And enchaunte hem to charite · on holychurche to
be-leyue. 288

For as the kynde is of a knyzt · oper for a kynge to
be take,

† Just as a
knight or king is
liable to captivity
or death when
defending his
people,

[And] among here enemys · in mortails bateles

To be culled and ouercome · þe comune to defende ;

So is þe kynde of [a curatour] · for cristes loue to
preche, 292

† so should it be
with priests.

And deye for hus dere children · to destroye dedly
synne ;

Bonus pastor ;

† John x. 11.

And nameliche þer as lewede lyuen · and no lawe
knownen.

Ac we crystine conneþ þe lawe · and hauen of oure
tounge 295

285

282. *Er*] Or EMFI. *were* EIMFT]
wher P ; was G. *knowe*] i-knowe MI.
eny] þe G. *honoured*] honourede P.
283. *busshope*] bishop EFIT.
wende EMF] weynde P ; walke ITG.

285. *Feden*] Fenden T. [*fillen* M]
follen I ; fullen T ; fulle FG ; folwen
PE. *hem* (3)] hym E.

286. *forma sit*] sit forma (*wrongly*)
T. *norma*] forma M.

287. *punge*] pasce G.

288. *This line is placed in M after*
l. 186, as already noted.

289. *Here M inserts* ll. 188—258,
already collated. *knyzt*] kny3th P.
oper] and M ; I om. *for*] of MTG.
a (2)] þe T ; F om. *take*] i-take M.

290. [*And* MIT] Al FG ; PE om.
mortails] mortel E ; mortele IFG ;
mortail T ; mortel M. *bateles*] ba-
tayle G.

291. *culled*] i-kulled M. *and*] or
MT.

292. [*a curatour* EMIF] curatours
T ; curatour G ; creatour P ; see l.
280. *preche*] teche E.

293. *dere children*] children dere
E. *destroye* IMFT] distrye P ; des-
truye EG.

294. *as*] þat IT. *knownen*] ne knowe
I ; no known T.

295. *conneþ* I] kunneþ EF ; cunneþ
M ; *miswritten* comeþ (*by a mere slip*)
P ; come T ; conne G. *þe*] to T.

Busshopes and bookes · the byleyue to teche. 296
 Iuwes lyuen in þe lawe · þat oure lord tauhte,
 Moyses to be maister þer-of · til messie come,
 And in þat lawe þei leyue · and leten hit for the beste.
 And ȝut knewe þei crist · þat cristendome tauhte, 300
 And for a parfyt prophete · þat muche people sauede,
 And of selcouþe sores · sauede men ful ofte ;
 By þe myracles þat he made · messie he semede,
 Tho he lyfte vp lazar · þat leyde was in graue, 304
Quatriduanus cold · quik dude hym walke.
 Iuwes seyden, þat hit seyn · with sorcerie he wrouhte,
 And [stodieden] hou to struyen [him] · and struyeden
 hem-selue,
 And here power thourh hus pacience · to pure nouht
 brouhte. 308
 And [ȝut] thei seien soþliche · and so doþ þe sarrasyns,
 That Iesus was bote a Iogelour · a Iaper a-monge þe
 comune,
 And a sophistre of sorcerie · and *pseudo-propheta*,
 And hus lore was lesynge · and lacken hit alle, 312

Jews live
according to the
law, and trust to
it.

They know
Christ to be a
prophet,

because He did
many miracles.

286
He raised
Lazarus.

They sought to
slay Him.

Jews still think
Christ a false
prophet.

296. *Busshopes*] Bischopes EFT; Bisschop I.

298. *to be*] þe T. *þer-of*] of hem M. *til*] til þat MFT.

299. *And*] F *om. in*] on IT; G *om. þat*] þe T. *leyue*] lyuen MFT; hyue E; leue I; leuen G.

300. *ȝut*] F *om. knewe*] so EMT; knowen F; knoweþ G; knowe PI. *þei*] þat F. *tauhte*] made G.

301. *And*] As F. *peuple*] folc M.

302. G *omits. sauede*] salued F. *ful*] wel M.

303. G *omits. By*] And bi M. *myracles* EIF] miraculis T; miracle M; meracles P.

304. *Tho*] Lo F. *lazar*] þe lazer M. *in*] in a I.

305. *cold*] & cold F. *quik*] & quike G. *dude hym*] he made M. *walke*] to walke F; wake I.

306. *seyn*] say I; sy F; seien EM; seize T; syen G. *with*] whit

P. *sorcerie* G] *apparently* sorceris P; *but we find* sorcery FT; sorserie I; *miswritten* soserie M; scorcerie E; cf. B-text, and see l. 311.

307. [*stodieden* IT] fondeden PEM; fondede FG; *but observe the alliteration, and cf. B-text. hou*] M *om. struyen*] so PE; destreie M; destroye I; stroye T; stroyn F. [*him* MF] hym T; hem PEIG (*wrongly*). *struyeden*] so PE; destroyeden M; studieden (!) I; stroieden FT.

308. *And*] F *om. hus*] here I. *brouhte*] turnede M; he brouȝte F; *miswritten* brouhten P.

309. [*ȝut* MG] ȝit IF; ȝet T; PE *om. seien*] seiden M. *doþ*] dede M.

310. *was*] nas M. *a-monge*] of G

311. *a*] E *om. and*] and a I; a T. *pseudo-propheta*] propheta pseudo M.

312. *And*] And þat MIFG. *lesynge*] lesynges IT.

And hopen þat he be to comynge · þat shal hem releue ;
 Moyses oþer Makemedē · here maistres deuineþ ;
 And haueþ suspecion to be saf · boþe sarrasyns and
 Jewes,

Thorwe Moyses and makamede · and myghte of god þat
mad al. · 316

Now sytthe þat these sarrasyns · and al-so þe Iewes Since they know
Conne þe ferste clause of oure by-leyue · *Credo in* the first clause
deum patrem, of the creed,

Prelates and preestes · sholde preoue, yf thei myghte,
Lere hem lytulum and lytulum · & in iesum christum, they should be
filium eius, taught the
second.

320

Til þei coupe speke and spelle · & *in spiritum sanctum,* 287
 Recorden hit and rendren hit · wyth *remissionem* till they know
peccatorum, it all.”
Carnis resurrectionem, & uitam eternam ; amen.”

Hic explicit passus primus de dobet.

313, 314. *Transposed in F.*

313. *pat*] *F om.* *to*] *M om.* *com-
ynge*] *so* PEMF; *come* ITG (*here
comynge* = *comene*, *the gerund*).
hem releue] *releue hem alle G.*

314. *oper*] & F. *here*] or T.
deuineb] bei diuineth F.

315. *hauep*] han a MIT; haue a G;
han EF.

316. *god*] him F. *al*] hem F.

317. *Now*] And IT. *syttte*] seip
T. *pat*] MG *om. these*] theese P;
þe G; E *om. and*] an P. þe] þise
T; bis E.

318. *pe ferste*] a F.

319. *preoue*] preue hit M.

320. *Iere hem*] And *leren* M; &
lere hem F. *lytulum*—*lytulum*]
litelum & *litelum* EI; *litlum* & *litlum*
T; *litel* and *litel* M; *litel* & *bi* *litel*
F; *miswritten* *lytulhum* and *lytulum*
P; *lytulum* (*only*) G. & MTEG
miswritten and PI; (*but it means*
et); F *om. eius* *eius* vnicum M.

321. *spelle*] so MIT; *spele* PFG.
& MIFET] et G; *miswritten* and P
(*but it means* et).

322. *hit*] him G (*twice*). *rendren*] *reden* MI. *Carnis resurrectionem*] & *carnis resurrectionem* *per-to* F.

COLOPHON. *So PG ; M om. Hic*
EF om. Hic explicit IT *om.*

PASSUS XIX (DO-BET II).

Hic Incipit Passus Secundus de Dobet.

(288)

"Can you shew
me Charity?"
said I.

"**L** Eue *liberum arbitrium*," quap ich · "ich leyue,
as ich hope,

Thou coupest telle and teche me · to charite, ich leyue?"

Then louh *liberum arbitrium* · and ladde me forþ with
tales,

(289)

† Then he led me
to the garden of
Man's-Heart,

Til we comen in-to a contree · *cor-hominis* hit hyhte, 4
Herber of alle pryuytees · and of holynesse.

Euene in þe myddes · an ympe, as hit were,

þat hihte *ymago-dei* · graciousliche hit growede.

Thenne gan ich asken what hit hyhte · and he me sone
tolde— 8

† where grew the
tree of True-love.

"þe tree hihte trewe-loue," quap he · "the trinite hit
sette ;

þorgh louely lokynge hit lyueþ · and launceþ vp
blossemes,

The whiche blosmes burnes · benygne-speche callen ;

† The fruit is
called *Caritas*.

And þer-of comeþ a good frut · þe which men callen
werkes 12

TITLE. *So* PMG; Incipit passus secundus EF; IT *om.*

1. *leyue*] leue EMITG; leeue F.

2. *coupest*] coudest MFI. *telle*] telle me I. *ich leyue*] i leue ME; as I leue ITG; as I leeue F.

3. *louh*] louþe E; louþ T; louþh FG; low M; lowe I.

5. *Herber*] Erbere E; Herbarwe M. *and*] & al-so G.

6. *M omits.* *myddes*] myddus is F.

7. *hihte*] F *om.* *hit growede*] it

growith FG; I-graued I.

9. *hihte*] hatteþ MT; hatte IG; hit F.

10. *lokynge*] likyng T.

11. *whiche*] wiche P. *blosmes*] blosme F. *burnes*] barnes M. *callen*] it calleþ ITG; hit callen E; is calde F.

12. *good*] grete I. *frut*] fruyt MIFTG. *which*] wich P. *men*] me F.

Of holynesse, of hendynesse · of help-hym-pat
neodeþ,

The whiche is callid *caritas* · cristes owen fode,
And solaceþ alle soules · sorghful in purgatorie."

"Now, certes," ich seide · and sykede for ioie, 16

"Ich þonke [3ow] a þowsend sythes · þat 3e me hider
kende; † I thanked him
for shewing me
the tree.

And suppen þat 3e fowche-saue · to seye me what hit
hihte."

And he þonked me þo · bote þenne took ich hede,

Hit hadde shoriers to shoue hit vp · þre shides of o It was supported
lengþe, 20 on three props.

And of o kynne colour · and o kynde, as me þouhte,

All þre yliche longe · and yliche large.

Muche meruailed me · on what more thei growede;

And efte askede of hym · of what wode þei were? 24

"Thees þre shoryeres," quap he · "þat bereþ vp þis † These props
plonte, denoted the
Trinity.

Thei by-tokneþ trewely · þe trinite of heuene;

Thre persons in-departable · perpetual were euere,

Of o wyl, of o wit · and here-with ich kepe 28

The frut of þis faire tree · fro þre wykkede wyndes,

13. of *hendynesse*] of *henderesse*
IFETG; and *henderesse* M. of *help*]
to helpe M.

14. *whiche*] *wiche* P. *callid*
caritas] *caritas* y-called IFT; *caritas*
called G.

15. *And*] & he F; *þat* G.

16. *seide*] *saide* þo F. *and*] an P.
sykede] *sighede* I.

17. [3ow MIT] þe PEF. *þowsend*]
hondred M. *sythes*] *sipe* MIFT;
side G. *kende*] *tauzte* F; *brouzte* G.

18. *suppen*] *sith* F; for M. *fowche-
saue*] *fouchensaf* E; *fouchesaaf* F;
vouchen saf M; *vouche-sauf* IT;
foweche-saue P; *fuchede saf* G.
what] as IT. *hihte*] *hotē* IT.

20. *Hit hadde*] I hadde T; He
hadde G. *shoriers*] *schorares* I;
schulieres G. *to*] I om. *shoue*]

schyuyn I; *shyue* T; *schule* G. o]
on M. *lengþe*] *lengþye* or *lengþþe* P.

21. o (1)] on M. o (2)] IT om.

22. *and*] & alle G.

23. *thei*] þat þei M.

24. *efte askede*] I asked efte F;
askide eft T; asked ofte I; eft y
askede G. of (1)] at G. of (2)] G
om.

25. *plonte*] so PEF; *plaunte* I;
plante MT; plente G.

26. *Thei*] IT om.

27. *in-departable*] *vndepartable* E.
euere] for euere F.

28. *of*] and M; & of TG. o (1)]
on M. *wit*] whit P. *with*] whit
P; and in l. 34.

29. *frut*] fruyt MFITG. *fro*] for
G. *þre*] þe G; M om.

"The world,"
said Liberum-Ar-
bitrium, "is a
wind that blows
against the tree.

The first prop is
the Father's
might.

200
The flesh is also a
fell wind.

The second prop
is the Son, or the
Father's Wisdom.

The third enemy
is the devil,

And fro fallung of stok · hit faille nouht of hus myghte.
The worlde is a wykkede wynde · to hem þat wolde
treuthe ;

Covetyse comeþ of þat wynde · and [*caritas* hit abiteþ],
And for-freteþ þat frut · with manye fayre syghtes ; 33
And with þe ferste plaunke ich palle hym doune ·
potencia-dei-patris.

þanne is flessch a fel wynde · in flouryng-tyme ;
þorgh lecherie and lustes · so loude he gynneþ blowe,
þat hit norischeþ nyce syȝtes · and som tyme wordes,
And menye wykkede wormes · workes of synne, 38
And al for-bit *caritas* · to þe bare stalke ;

Thanne sette ich þe secunde plaunke · *sapiencia-dei-*
patris,

The which is þe passion and penaunce · and þe parfyt-
nesse of ihesus, 41

And þer-with ich warde hit oþer-whyle · til hit wexe
rype.

Thenne fondeþ þe feende · my frut to destruye,
And leith a laddere þer-to · of lesynges be þe ronges ;

30. *of* (1)] of þe MFG ; þe (*sic*)
IT. *hit—of*] þat he nat faile F.
of (2)] FG *om.*

31. *worlde*] wordle PG. *wolde*] wolle I ; wulleth F.

32. *wynde*] whynde P. [*caritas* —*abiteþ* ITG] hit abiteþ *caritas* E ; hit abiteþ (*omitting caritas*) M ; charite it abideth F ; hit betep *caritas* P.

33. T *omits.* *for-freteþ*] forfrete I. þat] þe MG. *frut*] fruyt IMFG. *with*] whit P ; þorgh I.

34. *And*] M *om.* *with*] whith P. *plaunke*] planke IFTG ; plante (*wrongly*) M. *palle*] fal F ; platte M ; pallede G. *doune*] a-doun M. *potencia—patris*] M *om.*

35. *is flessch*] is þe flessche IT ; fleysch is M. *fel* MFTG] felle EI ; feel P. *in*] in his F ; & in IT.

36. *þorgh*] Wiþ M. *so*] M *om.* *blowe*] to blowe E.

37. *þat*] M *om.* *hit*] G *om.* *norischeþ* IEG] norijsseþ M ; nurscheth F ; norisship T ; (*all preferable to norceþ* P). *wordes*] nise wordes G.

38. I *transposes* wormes and workes.

39. *for-bit*] so PEM ; forbitte I ; forhitte (*sic*) T ; forbiteth F. *caritas*] charite F. *to*] riȝt to FIT ; nouȝt to (!) G. *stalke*] stocke M.

40. *sette*] si M. *plaunke*] planke MFIT. *patris*] I *om.*

41. *which*] wich P. þe (1)] MF *om.* þe (2)] F *om.* *of ihesus*] T *om.*

42. *And*] MT *om.* *warde*] war-dede MF. *hit* (1)] FG *om.*

43. *Thenne*] And þanne IFT. *fondeþ* EMIFTG] foundeþ or fonndeþ P. *frut*] fruyt MIFTG.

44. *leith* FEM] laith I ; leyþ G ; leithe P ; leiȝe T. *lesynges*] lesynge G.

With alle þe wyles þat he can · waggeþ þe roote 45
þorw bak-byters and braweleres · and þorwe bolde
chyderes,

And shakeþ hit; ne were hit vnder-shored · certes hit † who shakes the
sholde nat stande. tree violently.

So þese lourdeines litheren þer-to · þat alle þe leues
fallen, 48

And feccheth a-way this frut som tyme · by-fore boþe
myn eyen.

Thenne palle ich a-downe þe pouke · with þe þridde
shoryere,

291
The third prop is
the Holy Ghost."

The whiche is *spiritus-sanctus* · and soþ-fast byleyue,
And þat is grace of þe holy gost; · and þus gat ich þe
mastrey." 52

Ich totide vp-on þat tree þo · and þenne tok ich † I looked upon
hede, the fruit of the
tree,

Wheþer þe frut were faire · oþer foul to loken on.

And þe frut was wonder fair · non fairer beo myghte;
Ac in þre degrees hit grew · gret ferly me þouhte, 56

And askede þo 'yf hit were · al of on kynde?' † and asked if it
were all of one
kind.

"3e, certes," he seide · "and sothliche þow leyue hit.

Hit is al of o kynde · and þat shal ich prouen;

45. *With*] And wiþ IT. *waggeþ*] he wageth F; he waggeþ G.

46. *chyderes*] chidyng F.

47. *And shakeþ*] þei schaken F. *vnder-shored*] vnder-shorede P; schoried F. *ne — shored*] ȝif it nere vndirshorid T. *certes*] IFT om. *nat*] nat lenger F.

48. *G omits.* *þese*] þees P. *lourdeines*] lordeynes EIM; lurdeynus FT. *litheren*] lithereþ IT; lithur F.

49. *this*] þe IT.

50. *Thenne*] And þanne IT. *palle*] polle E; platte M; falle T. *a-downe*] doun MTG. *a-downe—pouke*] him adoun F.

51. *whiche*] wiche P. *is*] I om. *and*] a M.

52. *grace*] þe grace M. *and*] M om. *gat*] so PM; gaat G; gate E;

gete I; geet F; kepe T.

53. *totide*] totrede M. *vp-on*] vp in I; on M. *þat*] þe EFTG.

54. *þe*] þat F. *were*] wher P. *to*] for to EIT. *loken on*] be-holde M.

55. *And*] M om. *wonder*] I om. *And—was*] þo was þe fruit F. *beo myghte*] be þer myzte FG; myzt be E.

56. *G omits.* *Ac*] As I. *þre*] þe þre I. *grew*] groweþ E. *ferly*] ferli þo F; wondere E.

57. *askede*] I asked at him F; y askede G. *þo yf*] eft þo where I; eft þo wheþer T. *al*] F om. *of*] I om.

58. *he seide*] sire quod he F. *þow*] IT om. *leyue hit*] hit leue MG.

59. *o*] on M.

Ac somme ar swettere þan some · and sonner wollen
rotye. 60

† “We see different apples on the same tree, some riper than others.

Men may seo on an appul-treo · meny tyme and ofte,
Of o kynne apples · aren nat yliche grete,
Ne of sewynge smale · ne of [o] swetnesse swete.
Tho þat sitten in þe sonne-syde · sonner aren rype, 64
Swettour and saueriour · and also more grettoure
Than [þo] þat selde hauen þe sonne · and sitten in þe
north-half;

† Adam was the tree, and we are the apples.

And so hit fareþ sothly · sone, by oure kynde.
Adam was as tree · and we aren as hus apples, 68
Somme of ows sothfast · and some variable,
Somme litel and some large · like apples of kynde.

† Wedded men, widows, maidens, and monks are at the top of the tree, and receive the sun.

As weddede men and wedewes · and ryȝt worthy
maidenes,
þe whiche þe *seynt esprit* [seweþ] · the sonne of al
heuene, 72
Conforteþ [hem] in here continence · þat lyuen in con-
templacion,
As monkes and monyeles · men of holichurche;

60. ar] beþ E. *sonner*] sannere M; by some G. *by*] be MT; of G.
P (*but see* l. 64); sonere E; some (*wrongly*) I. *rotye*] rote FTG.

61. Men] Man E; Me IF. on] in I. meny] many a F.

62. Of] þat of F. *kynne*] kynde EIGHT; kynde of F. *aren*] beþ E; ben M. *nat*] nat alle F; & (*sic*) T.

63. G omits. of (1)] IT om. *sewynge* EIMT] sywyng P; o suyng F. [o EIF] PMT om.

64. in] on F. þe *sonne*] summe F. *sonner*] sone þei F; son or som E. *aren*] ben E.

65. *saueriour*] of more sanour M. *grettoure*] grettere MEI; grete F.

66. [þo MIFTG] PE om. *selde* IM] selden ETG; seelde F; seilde P.

67. *sothly*] soththly P. *sone* IFT] soone P (*but sone = son*); summe

M; by some G. *by*] be MT; of G.

68. Adam] Our alder adam F. as (1)] a EMIFG; þe T. *aren*] weren E; ben EM. as (2)] MF om.

69. ows] vs IT; vs beþ E; vs buþ M; vs be F. F *transposes* ll. 69 and 70.

70—75. G omits.

70. and] MIT om. *kynde*] o kynde FT.

71. As] Among F. *wedewes*] wedewes or wodewes P (*but see* l. 76); wydewes MIT; widues E; wyuus F. *ryȝt*] ryȝth P; rith M.

72. whiche] wiche P. þe] EM om. *esprit*] spirit IT. [seweþ MI] sueth F; seueth T; PE om.

73. Conforteþ] And conforteþ I. [hem MEITF] him P.

74. men] and men MF.

These hauen hete of þe holi gost · as crop of treo þe
sonne.

Wedewes and wedeweres · þat here owen wil for-saken,
And chast leden here lyf · ys lyf of contemplacion,
And more lykyng to oure lorde · þan lyue as kynde
askep, 78

† The contem-
plative life pleases
God more than
the active life.”

And folwe þat þe flessch wole · and frut forþ brynge,
That lettered men in here langage · *actiua-uita* callen.”

“3e, syre,” ich seide, “and sitthen · þer aren bote two
lyues 78

† *Actiua Vita* and
*Vita Contempla-
tiua.*

þat oure lorde a-lowep · as lered men ous techep,

That is *actiua-uita* · and *uita contemplatiua*,

Whi growep this frut in þre degrees?” · “for a good
skyle,” he seide; 84

“Her by-neope ich may nyme · yf ich neode [hadde,
Matrimonye, a moiste frut · þat multipliþ þe peple.
Thenne a-boue is a betere frut · ac boþe two ben goode,
Wedewehode, more worpier · þan wedlok, as in heuene.
þanne is virginite, more vertuouus · and fairest as in
heuene, 89

“Beneath, is the
fruit of
Matrimony.

† Above it is
Widowhood; and
above that is
Virginity.

For þat is euene with anges · and anges peer.

292

Hit was þe furste frut · þat þe fader of heuene blessedede,

75. *hete*] þe hete T; þe 3ifte I.
crop] hap þe crop I; han (*sic*) þe
crop T. *of treo*] hath of F. *tree*] þe tre IT; þe tree E.

76. *here*] F om.

77. *leden*] leten M. *ys*] as M; in
F. *ys lyf*] E om.

78. *to*] of F. *lyue*] life I; lif T;
lijf M. *as*] of T.

79. *And*] Or F. *folwe*] folewep
M. *þe*] þat M; G om. *wole*] wolde
IT. *brynge*] to brynge M.

80. *uita*] lif MG. IT *have*—þat
actiua lif lettred men · in here lan-
gage it calleþ.

81. *and*] þo M. *aren*] bep E.
two FG] to PM; twey E; tweye T;
tweyne I.

82. *lered*] lewed (!) IT; our lawe
F. *ous*] vs ITG; us MF.

83. *That is*] þo beth F; IT om.
and] et I. *uita contemplatiua*] con-
templatiua vita IT.

84. *this*] þi F; þe T. *for*] IT om.
a] MF om.

85. [*hadde* MIFTG] *habbe* PE;
cf. B-text.

86. *multipliþ* IFTG] *multepliþ*
PM.

87. *Thenne*] And þenne IT. *a*] MIFGT om. *two* ET] tuo I; to PMFG.

88. *worpier*] worpiere is T; wurthi
F.

89. *is*] M om. *T places* is after
virginite. *more*] moost GT. *as*] is
T. *heuene*] blisse G.

90. *anges* (2)] *archaungelus* F.

91. *Hit*] For þat F. *þat*] F om.
þe (2)] G om.

And bad hit be [of] a bat of erpe · a man and a mayde ;

† That which was
fairest honoured
that which was
first.

In menyngē þat þe faireste þyng · þe furste þyng sholde
honoure, 93

And þe clennest creature · creatour ferste knowe.

In kynges court and knyghtes · þe clennest men and
fairest 95

Shullen serue for þe lord selue · so fareþ god almyghty.

Maidenes and marteres · ministred hym her in erthe,

† Maidens and
martyrs minis-
tered to Christ on
earth."

And in heuene both most pryue · and next hym by
reson,

For þe fairest frut · by-fore hym as of eorthe, 99

And swete wiþ-outē swellinge · soure worth hit neuere."

† "This plant
produces fair
fruit," said I,

"This is a propre plonte," quap ich · "and pryueliche
hit bloweþ,

And bryngēþ forþ faire frut · folke of all nacion,

Bothe parfit and inparfit ; · pure fayn ich wolde 103

A-saye what sauour hit hadde " · ich seide þat tyme ;

† and prayed him
to shake the tree.

"Leue *liberum arbitrium* · leet som lyf hit shake."

A-non he het elde · an hih for to clymbe, 106

And shaken hit sharply · þe ripen sholden falle.

† Then Old-Age
climbed up the
tree and shook it.

Elde clam towarde þe crop · þan comsede hit to erie ;

92. *hit*] F om. [of EMIFG] in T ;
P om. *a*] in a T (twice).

93. *faireste*] furste M. *furste*
fairest M. G om. *from faireste to þe*
in l. 94.

94. *creatour*] his creator MFG.
creatour ferste] first creatour IT.
knowe] i-knowe M.

95. *court*] hous M. *knyghtes*] in
knyztes IF. *men*] T om.

96. *serue*] suffre (!) T. *for*] bifore
F ; M om. *selue*] hym-silf EFT. *so*]
and so I. *god*] our kyng F.

97. *Maidenes*] For maidenus F.
hym] I om. *in*] on MFT.

98. F omits. *buth*] beþ E ; ben
M. *in—pryue*] in heye heuene is
preue ofte I ; he (*sic*) heiz in heuene
is preuyest T.

99. FG omit. *For*] And for IT.
of] on M.

100. G omits. *swete*] swetnesse F.
wiþ] whip P.

101. *plonte* EFG] plente (*for*
plonte) P ; plante MIT. *pryueliche*]
propurliche M. *bloweþ* EIMT] blewēþ
(*for bloweþ*) PG ; groweth F.

102. *Here a leaf fails in I ; from*
l. 102 to l. 162. faire] T om. *nacion*]
naciounus F.

104. *ich seide*] & seide T ; so seide
i F ; he seide G.

105. *arbitrium*] arbitrium quod i
F. *leet*] let MT ; late ET.

106. *het*] hete E ; heet G ; heete
F ; hize MT.

107. *þe*] þat þe M. *ripen*] so PE ;
ripe MFTG.

108. *Elde*] And elde T ; Whan
eelde F. *clam*] clomb T ; cam MF.
towarde—crop] to þe cropward T.
hit] i T.

He waggede wedewehode · and hit wepte after ; 109

He meuede matrimonye · hit made a foule noyse.

For euere as elde hadde eny doun · þe deucl was wel
redy, The devil
gathered up all
that fell,

And gederide hem alle to-gederis · boþe grete and smale,

Adam and abraham · and Ysaye þe prophete, 113

Sampson and samuel · and seynt Iohan þe baptist,

And bar hem forþ baldely · no body þo hym lette, and placed his
prey in limbo.

And made of holy men hus horde · in *limbo inferni*,

Ther is derknesse and drede · and þe deucl maister.

þenne meuede hym mod · in *maiestate dei*, 118

þat *libera uoluntas dei* · lauhte þe myddel shoriere, † Then Free-will-
of-God seized the
second prop,

And hitte after þe fende · happe hou hit myghte. 120

Filius, by þe faders wil · flegh with *spiritus sanctus*, and *Filius* under-
took to regain the
fruit.

To ransake [þat] rageman · and reue hym hus apples,

þat fyrst man deceyuede · thorgh frut and false by-hest.

And þenne spake *spiritus sanctus* · in gabrielis mouthe The Annuncia-
tion.

To [a] mayde þat hihte marie · [a] meek þyng with alle,

þat on Iesus, a Iustice sone · moste Iouken in hire

chaumbre,

293

Til *plenitudo temporis* · tyme [y]come were, 127 Gabriel's address
to Mary.

110. *He*] Hit F. *meuede*] meeuede MT; lafte F. *myddel*] mydel P.
PF; moeued E. *a*] E om. 120. *hitte*] hit it F. *hit*] he M.

111. *wel*] ful T. *wel redy*] aredy 121. *Filius*] Filius dei F. *by*] wiþ
T. *fleg*] *miswritten* fleght P; but
G. *observe* fleþe E; fleiþ T; fliþ F; fly M;
fley G.

113. *Ysaye*] ysaac EM; amos F. 122. *To*] To go T. [þat EMFTG]
prophete] patriarke E. þe P; cf. B-text. *reue*] bi-reue M.
114. *samuel*] salomon F. *Iohan*] *hus*] of his T.

Ion EMF. 123. *thorgh*] with F. T has—þat
þoruþ fals behest & fruyt · ferst man
disceyuede.

115. *baldely*] so PMT; boldelich 124. *in*] M om. *mouthe*] ore M
E; boldly F; boldely G. þo] to E; (the Latin word).
T om. *hym*] hem T.

116. G omits. *hus*] an M. *horde*] 125. [a EMFTG] that P. *hihte*
lord (!) F. *limbo*] limbo doun PM; *marie*] marie hiþe F. [a MFTG]
limbo domus E; limbo domo F; but PE om. *meek*] mylde M.
T omits the doubtful word after
limbo; cf. B-text.

117. G omits. *derknesse* EMFT] 126. *a*] T om. *Iustice*] iustices
deornesse (an error for deorknesse) P. MEG. *Iouken*] lauken E; ioyken M.

118. *meuede* MFG] meouede P; 127. *ycome* ETG] i-come MF;
moeued E. *mod*] so PM; mood FTG; come P.
mode E.

119. *dei*] M om. *lauhte*] lauhte

- That elde felde eftē þat frut · oper fulle to be rype,
 þat Iesus sholde Iuste þer-fore · [in] Iugement of armes,
 Who sholde fecche þis frut · þe feend oper Iesus self.
- Mary assents. The maide myldeliche þo · þe messenger hue answeredē,
 And saide hendyliche to him · “loo, me, hus handmayde,
 For to worchen hus wil · with-oute eny synne; 133
- Luke i. 38. *Ecce ancilla domini, [fiat michi secundum ver-
 bum tuum,]” &c.*
- And in þe wombe of þat wenche · he was fourty wokes,
 The Incarnation. And man by-cam of þat mayde · to saue mankynde,
 Byg and abydyngē · and bold in hus barn-hede, 136
 To hauen fouhten with þe feende · ar ful tyme come.
- Jesus learns Ac *liberum arbitrium* · leche-crafte hym tauhte,
 leech-craft, Til *plenitudo temporis* · hih tyme a-prochede, 139
 That suche a surgeyn setthen · yseye was þer neuere,
- and heals the Ne non so faithfol fysician; · for, alle þat [hym] by-
 sick, souhte,
- He lechede hem of here langoure · lazars and blynde
 bothe;
- 294 *Ceci uident, claudi ambulant, leprosi mundantur* :
 † Mat. xi. 5. And comune wymmen conuertede · and clansede hem
 of synne.
- He restores life to Lazarus; And he lyft vp Lazar · þat lay in hus tombe, 144

128. *felde*] so PMGT; feld F; fulde E. *þat*] þe EFGT. *oper*] or it F. *fulle*] so PE; felle M; fel FGT. *rype* MFGT] rypy PE.

129. *Iuste*] E om. [in M] and PE; & by FG; & be in T.

130. *þis*] þe F.

131. *þo*] GT om. *hue*] 30 E; heo FG; MT om. *answerede*] grauntede FGT.

132. *me*] me here F.

133. G omits. [*fiat—tuum*] in F only.

134. *wokes*] wikus F.

135. *man by-cam*] be-com a man T. *to—mankynde*] mankynde to saue T.

136. G omits. *abydyngē*] biddinge

T.

137. *To*] He þouȝte G. *fouhten*] i-foute M; i-fouȝte FT.

139. *hih*] an hi M. *hih—aprochede*] aproched pure fast F.

140. *surgeyn*] sorgien EM. *setthen*] seþen M; sipen GT; sup E; sith F. *þer*] E om.

141. [*hym*. EMFGT] P om. *hym bysouhte*] besouȝte hym T.

142. G omits. *lechede*] lechende M. T puts bothe before lazars. *Ceci uident*] MFGT om. *ambulant*] ambulabant T. *mundantur*] mundaban-tur T.

143. *conuertede*] comfortede M.

144. *he*] MT om. *Lazar*] þe lazer M. Cf. Pass. xviii. 304.

Quatriduanus cold · quyke dude hym rome.

Ac er he made þat miracle · *mestus cepit esse*,

John xi. 35.

And wepte water with hus eyen · the whi witen fewe.

Ac þoo þat seyen þat selcouþ · seyden þat tyme, 148

þat he was god oþer godes sone · for þat grete wonder.

And somme Iewes seiden · with sorcerie he wrouhte,

The Jews said He
was a wizard.

And þorwe þe myghte of Mahon · and þorw mysbyleyue ;

Demonium habes.

John x. 20.

“Thanne sathan is 3oure sauour,” quap Iesus · “and

Mat. xii. 27.

hap saued 3ow ofte ;

152

Ac ich sauede 3ow sondry tymes · [and] also ich fedde

He reminds the
Jews of His
miracles.

3ow

With fisshes and with fyf loues · fyfe þousend at ones,

And þer-of lefte baskettes · ful of broke mete,

295

Broke bred, to beren hit · a-weye hoo so wolde. 156

Vnkynde and vnknowing !” quap Crist · and with a

He beats them
with a rope.

rop smot hem,

And ouer-turneded in þe temple · here tables and here

John ii. 15.

stalles,

And drof hem out alle · þat þer bowten and solde,

[*Eiecit ementes & vendentes de templo, &c.*]

And seide, “þis is an hous · of orisouns and of holynesse, Mat. xxi. 13.

And whenne þat my wil is · ich [wol] hit ouer-throwe, John ii. 19.

And er þre dayes after · edefye hit newe ;” 162

[*Intra triduum reedificabo illud.*]

145. G omits. cold] he was cold
F ; cold-ded T. quyke—hym] quik
he dede M ; he quye dede him to F.
Cf. Pass. xviii. 305.

146. Ac er] & for F.

147. And] He M. witen MEG]
wyten T ; miswritten whiten P.

150. with] whith P ; þat F.

151. Mahon] mahound MFG.
habes] habens M ; habens T.

152. sathan is] is sathan FT.
sauour MFT] saueour G ; saveour
P. saued] sauede P ; i-saued MFTG.

153. [and MFTG] PE om. ich—
3ow] 3ou fedde F.

154. fisshes] fyue fyssches MFTG ;
twey fisches E. fyf] foure F ; to M ;
G om.

155, 156. G omits. One line in T
—And I lefte basketis ful of broke
mete · bere away who so wolde.

157. unknowing] vnconnyng T.

159. bowten] bouzten E ; bouzte
TG ; bouzt F. and] or T. [*Eiecit*,
&c.] in F only.

160. orisouns, &c.] holinesse & of
prayeres G. of (2)] FT om.

161. [wol EG] wolde PT ; wole M ;
wil F.

162. [*Intra—illud*] in F.

The Iewes tolden þe Iustice · how þat Iesus seyde ;
 † John ii. 21. Ac þe ouerturning of þe temple · by-tokned þe resurec-
 cion. 164

The Jews seek to slay Him. Enuye and vuel will · ȝorn in þe Iewes,
 And persuede [hym] pryueliche · and for pans hym
 bouhte,

† Mat. xxvi. 5. *Ne forte tumultus fieret in populo,*
 Of Iudas þe Iewe · Iesus owene disciple.

On Good Friday the Jews met Jesus. This by-fil on a fryday · a litel by-fore paske, 168
 þat Iudas and Iewes · Iesus thei mette.

296
 Mat. xxvi. 49. “*Aue, rabbi,*” quap þat ribaud · and right til hym he ȝede,
 And custe Iesus, to be knowe þer-by · and kauht of þe
 Iewes.

Thanne Iesus to Iudas · and to þe Iewes seyde, 172
 “Falsnesse ich fynde · in þy faire speche,

“I find sorrow in thy kisses,” said Jesus. And kene care in þy cossyn[g]s · and combraunce to
 [þi]selue.

Thow shalt be myrour to menyne · men to deceyue ; 175
 Wo to hem þat þy wiles vsen · to þe worldes ende !

Mat. xviii. 7. *Ve homini illi per quem scandalum uenit.*

John xviii. 8. Sitthe ich by treson am take · and to ȝoure [wille,] Iewes,
 Suffreþ myne apostles in pees · and in pees gangen ;”

163. M omits. I begins again.

164. ouer] F om. bytokned] bi-
 tokened MIG. þe (3)] his T.

165. G omits. vuel] euel MI ;
 euy] FT. ȝorn] so PEM ; orne T ;
 aren I ; ernede F. in þe] in-to F.

166. G omits. [hym T] him
 MFI ; hem PE. pans] pens MI.
 hym] F om.

167. þe] þilke M ; þat F.

168. by-fil] bi-ful M ; befel TI ; bi-
 fel G ; fel F. fryday] friday nyȝt F.
 litel] lite F. paske] þe paske I.

169. Iudas] þis iudas F.

170. þat ribaud] þo Ribaudes I ;
 ribawde F ; ribaudes G. til] to
 MFT. he ȝede] þey ȝeden ITG ; he
 wente F.

171. custe] kiste IT ; kuste M ;
 kissed F. Iesus] him F. knowe]

i-knowe M. kauht] kauhte P ; cauȝte
 E ; cauȝt MFT ; caght I. and—þe]
 þan cauȝt was he of F.

173. faire speche] speche fayre I.

174. kene] F om. þy] M om.
 cossyns] cossyns PE ; kussynng MIG ;
 kissing FT. to] of F. [þi EFT] þy
 IG ; þe P. þi-selue] þe soule M.

175. men] man T. to] for to F.

176. hem] þo IT. þy] þyn P ; but
 þy EIG ; þi MFT. worldes] wordles
 PG. Ve] Ve autem F.

177. take] I-take F. [wille GT]
 wil F ; wiles I ; PE om. Cf. B-text.
 Iewes] ȝe iewes F. ȝoure—Iewes]
 ȝow iewes I-sold M.

178. pees (1)] so PMFG ; payes I ;
 pais T ; pes E. pees (2)] so PITG ;
 pes E. and—gangen] among ȝow to
 gange M ; a-wey to goone F.

[*Sinite hos abire, &c.*]

Thus Iewes to þe Iustices · *iesus* thei ladden.— 179

With muche noyse þat nyght · ner frentik ich awakede,

In Inwit and in alle wittes · after *liberum arbitrium*

Ich waitede wyterly, ac ne wiste · whider he wente,

And þanne mette ich wiþ a man · on mydlentens soneday,

As hor as an haweporn · and abraam he hihte. 184

“Of whennes art þow?” quap ich · and hendeliche hym

grette.

“Ich am with faip,” quap þat freek · “hit falleþ nat

me to lye,

An heraude of armes · er eny lawe were.”

“What is hus conysaunce,” quap ich · “in hus cote-

armure?”

188

“þre persones in o pensel,” quath he · “departable

from oþer;

O speche and o spirit · spryngeþ out of alle,

Of o wit, of on wil · were neuere a-twynne;

And sondry to seo vpon · *solus deus* he hotep.” 192

“Sipthen thei ben surlepes,” quap ich · “thei han sondry

names.”

“That is soþ,” saide he · “þe syre hatte *pater*;

And þe secunde is a sone · of þe syre, *filius*;

297
Then I awoke,
and sought every-
where for
Liberum-
Arbitrium.

On Midlent
Sunday I met
Abraham, or
FAITH.

Abraham de
trinitate (margin
of P); *De trini-*
tate (M).

Abraham is
seeking one
whose cognisance
is the Trinity,

298
the Father, the
Son,

[*Sinite, &c.*] in F only.

179. *Thus*] Dis I; Þese F; Þes G.

180. *With*] Whith P.

181. *In*] T om. *in*] MFG om.
wittes] whittes P.

182. G omits. *waitede*] awayted
EM; wakide T. *wyterly*] sikerly I.
ac] ac ich E; ac i MF. *whider*
MFT] weder P; whodere E. *ac—*
wente] ac whider a wende y ne wiste
I; but whider he wente I ne wiste T.
he] heo P; a I.

183. *wip*] whip P. *on*] a IFT.
mydlentens] myd-lentene F; myd-
lenten TG; mydlente M.

185. *whennes*] wennes P. *art* MI
FT] ert PEG.

186. *nat me*] nat for F; nout M;

me nat G.

187. *An* EMFTG] *miswritten*
And P. *armes*] his armes M.

189. *pensel*] penson M. *depart-*
able] indepartable eche F; but see l.
216.

190. *O*] And T; G om. *o*] ITG
om.

191. *of*] & of T; and MG. *were*]
and weren M; þei were FT; were
þey G.

193. *surlepes*] surlepus F; surlepis
T; suyrelepus I; sondrilipes M; *mis-*
written surlepees PE; seperable
(over erasure) G. *thei* (2)] I om.

194. *he*] he þenne IT. *hatte*]
hatteþ MT; highte I; hijt F. *pater*]
pater-noster IT.

and the Holy
Ghost.

The þridde is þat halt al · a þyng by hym-selue, 196
Hologost is hus name · and he is in alle,”

“This is merk þyng for me,” quap ich · “and for
meny oþer,

How o lord myghte lyue a þre · ich leyue hit nat,” ich
seyde.

† Concerning
faith in the
Trinity in Unity.

“Muse not to muche þer-on,” quap faith · “tyl þow
more knowe, 200

Ac looke þow leyue hit leelly · al þy lyf-tyme,
That þre by-longeþ to on lorde · that lygaunce cleymeþ,
Mighte, and [a] mene · to seo hus owen Mighte,
Of hym-self and of hus seruaunt · and [what] suffreþ
hem boþe. 204

“The Father sent
forth His Son as
a servant.

God þat gynnynge hadde neuere · bote þo hym gode
þouhte,

Sente forth hus sone · as for seruaunt þat tyme,
To okupien hym here · til issue were spronge,
The whiche aren children of charite · and holichurche
þe moder. 208

Patriarchs,
prophets, and
apostles are God’s
children.

Patriarkes and prophetes · and apostles were þe children;
And crist and cristendome · and cristene holichurche
By-tokeneþ þe trinite · and trewe by-leyue.

O god almyghty · þat man made and wrouhte, 212
Semblable to hym-self · er eny synne were,

A þre he is þer he is · and hereof bereþ wittnesse

196. *is*] is a þyng M. *þyng*] thing
halt (*wrongly*) F. *hym*] his G.

197. *hus*] þe F. *and*] an P.

198. *merk* MTG] merke EI; meerk
P. *is—þyng*] þing is me (*sic*) F.
oþer] anoþer IFTG.

199. *o*] a ET. *a þre*] on þreo M.
ich (2)] he M.

200. *to—þeron*] þer-on to muche T.
tyl] or G. *more knowe*] knowe more
M.

201. *looke þow*] IT om.

202. *That*] T om. *on*] a MIT; o
FG. *lygaunce*] so PEM; ligeance I;
a-ligeaunce F; leggeaunce T.

203. [*a* MFTG] P om. *and—*

mene] he mene I; ich moeue E.

204. *of*] EMIF T om. *hus*] T om.
[*what* MIFTG] PE om.

205. *gynnynge*] by-gynnynng IG.
gynnynge—neuere] no bigynnynng
hadde E.

206. *sone*] deere sone F. *for*] for
his M.

208. G omits. *whiche*] wiche P.
þe] I om.

209. *apostles*] þe aposteles M. þe]
M om. F omits last half of l. 209
and first half of l. 210.

210. *and* (2)] & alle IT.

211. *trewe*] trywe P; holy G.

214. G omits. *A*] And M.

þe werkes þat hym-self wrouhte · and þis worlde boþe ;

Celi enarrant gloriam dei, & opera manuum eius † Ps. xviii. 1
annunciat firmamentum. (Vulg.).

That he is þre persones departable · ich proue hit by
man-kynde, 216

And o god almyghty · yf alle men beo of adam.

Eue was of adam · and out of hym ydrawe,

Adam, Eve, and
Abel were one.

And abel of hem boþe · and alle þre o kynde ;

[Ac] these þre þat ich carpe of · adam, and eue, 220

And abel, here issue · aren bote on in man-hede.

Matrimonie with-oute moillere · is nat muche to preyse, 299

The bible bereþ witesse · a book of þe olde lawe,

þat a-corsed alle couples · þat no kynde forth brouhte ;

Maledictus sit homo qui non reliquit semen in
israel. 224

And a man with-oute a make · myghte nat wel of
kynde

Man and his wife
resemble the first
Two Persons of
the Trinity :

Multeplie, ne more-ouer · with-oute a make louye,

Ne with-oute a sowere be suche seede · þis we seen alle.

Now go we to god-hede ; · in god, fader of heuene,

Was þe sone in hym-selue · in a *simile*, as eue 229

† just as Eve
came out of
Adam.

Was, whanne god wolde · out of þe wye y-drawe.

And as abel of adam · and of hus wif eue

† And, as Abel
proceeded from

215. G omits. þis] þe MT. worlde]
wordle P. &—firmamentum] IFT
om. eius—firmamentum] M om.

216. In margin of M—probacio.

218. was—adam] of Adam was I ;
& Adam was (!) T. and] T om.

220. [Ac M] And IFTG ; mis-
written As PE. these] theese P.
þat] as E.

221. here EITG] heer P ; her F ;
heore M. issue] essue P ; but see l.
207.

222. G omits. moillere] so PM ;
moylere EI ; moilere F ; muliere T.

223. G omits. The] As þe IT.

224. G omits. a-corsed] accurseth
I. sit] MFT om. reliquit] reliquid
M ; reliquerit F.

225. And] FG om. a (1)] IT om.
a (2)] M om. And a] With-out (sic)
E. wel IMFTG] miswritten welle
PE.

226. ne] no FT ; and M.

227. be suche] bisowed F. seen]
se wel F ; wyten T.

228. go we TG] gowe I ; gawe MF ;
goo wee P. god-hede] þe godhood M ;
þe god-heede F.

229. simile] saumple M.

230. whanne] wanne P ; whan þat
F. nye EG] wiȝ T ; wy F ; badly
spelt weye PI ; vie M ; see l. 280.
y-drawe] drawe EMT ; here drawe
F.

231. And] T om. as] G om.

Adam and Eve,
so the Holy
Ghost proceeded
from the Father
and the Son.

Sprang forth and spak · a spire of hem tweyne, 232
So out of þe syre and of þe sone · the *seynt esprit* of
bothe

Ys, and ay [was] · and worth with-outen ende.

Man and his wife
and children
form a Trinity.

And as þre persones palpable · is pureliche bote o
man-kynde, 235

The whiche is man and hus make · and moillere-is issue,
So is god godes sone · in þre persones þe trinite.

In matrimonie aren þre · and of o man cam alle þre,

And to godhede goþ þre · and of o god is alle þre ;

Loo, treys encountre treys," quap he · "in godhede
and in manhede." 240

"Hauest þow seyen þis?" ich seide · "alle þre, and o
god?"

"In a somer ich seyh hym," quap he · "as ich sat in my
porche,

Where god cam goynge a-þre · ryght by my gate ;

Tres uidit et unum adorauit.

Ich ros vp and reuerencede god · and ryght fayre hym
grette, 244

Wesh here feet, and wypede hem · and after þei eten,
And what ich pouhte and my wyf · he ous wel tolde.

† There is a
Trinity both in
Manhood and in
the Godhead.

300

I, Abraham, saw
the three Persons
(Gen. xviii. 2).

Where god cam goynge a-þre · ryght by my gate ;

Tres uidit et unum adorauit.

Ich ros vp and reuerencede god · and ryght fayre hym
grette, 244

Wesh here feet, and wypede hem · and after þei eten,
And what ich pouhte and my wyf · he ous wel tolde.

232. *spire* EFT] spir P; spyr G;
spyer I; spirijt M. *tweyne* MIT]
tweye EFG; tweyne P.

233. *out*] MF om. *of* (2)] T om.
seynt] G om. *espirit*] spirit EIFGT;
spirijt M. *bothe*] hem boþe ITG.

234. [*was* T] weren PEMFG; were
I (*which looks as if* weren *is the*
author's own error). I omits last half
of the line.

235. *palpable*] palpablis T. *pure-*
liche] priueliche I. *bote*] F om.

236. *whiche*] wiche P. *moillere*]
moiller M; moilere FTG; mulier I.
-is] so PT; here EIFG; heore M;
(*the possessive case of moillere is in-*
tended.)

237. *god*] god and M. *in*] & E;
G om.

238. *aren*] ben E; arn alle M.

239. *of*] MIFTG om. o] T om.

240. *treys*] treis EMIFTG. *en-*
countre] acountre MTG. *in* (2)] F
om.

241. *Hauest þow*] Hast þow EMT;
Hastou IF. *seyen*] i-seyn M; y-
seye IFG; soþe (!) T. *and*] but M.

242. *seyh him*] si him M; him
seye I; hym seiz T. *as*] T om.

243. *Where*] Were P. *goynge*]
gangande I; gangyng TG. *a-þre*] in
þreo M. *ryght*] F om. *et*] F om.

244. *ros*] a-ros M. *vp*] I om. *ryght*
fayre] fayre y G.

245. *Here* M has lost a leaf; down
to xx. 30. *Wesh*] Wesch I; Wissche
F; Wissh G; Wysschen T. *after*]
afterward IG.

246. *my wyf*] what my wyf þouhte
T.

He by-hihte ous issue and heir · in oure olde age,
 Ful trewe tokne by-twyne ous is · what tyme þat ich
 mette hym ; 248

How he fondede me first · my faire sone ysaac,
 To make sacrifice of hym · he het me, hym to honoure. God commanded
me to sacrifice
Isaac.

Ich with-sat nat hus heste · ich hope and by-leyue 251

Wher ich walke in þis worlde · he wol hit me a-lowe.

Ich circumsysede my sone · and al-so, for hus sake,

My-self and my meyne · and alle þat maule were

Bleden blod for þat lordes loue · ich hope to blesse þe
 tyme. 255

Myn affiaunce and my feith · is ferm [in] hus by-leyue ;

For hym-self seide ich sholde haue · and myn issue boþe God promised me
an inheritance.

Lond and lordshup ynow · and lyf with-uten ende.

To me and to myn issue · more he by-hihte,

Mercy for oure mysdedes · as meny tymes 260

As we wilnede and wolde · with mouth and herte asken.

And sitthen he sende me to sayn · and seide þat ich God bade me
honour Him with
bread and wine.

sholde

Worshupen hym with wyn · and with bred boþe

At ones on an auter · in worshup of þe trinite, 264

And make sacrifice so · som-what hit by-tokneþ ;

Ich leyue þat þilke lorde thenke · a newe lawe to make ;

Fiet unum ouile et unus pastor.

† John x. 16.

247. *heir*] erthe (!) F. *age*] gate
 (!) F.

248. *Ful*] But T. *tokne*] tokenys
 IT. *by-twyne*] bi-twix F. *what*]
 wat P; of what G. *what tyme*]
 whan tyme comp IT. *mette* EFG]
 mete PT.

249. *me*] T om.

250. *het*] heet F; hete EI; leet
 G. *hym* (2)] E om.

251. *by-leyue*] ich bileue E; I
 leue F.

252. *worlde*] wordle P. *he wol*] a
 wille I. *hit me*] me hit F.

253. *and*] IFTG om.

254. *alle*] T om. *maule*] so PEG;
 male IT; malus F.

255. *þat*] our E. *þe*] þat IT.

255—261. G omits.

256. [*in* IFT] PE om.

257. *and*] I and IT.

258. *lordshup*] lordscipes E.

259. *to*] T om. *he*] he me IFT.

260. *as*] also FT.

261. *wilnede*] willed F; wilne T.
and (2)] & with T. *asken*] also I.

262. *sende*] so PEF; sente IG;
 sette T.

264. *At*] Ac F; But T.

265. G omits. *by-tokneþ*] be-
 tokened F.

266. *þilke*] þulke EG; ilke IFT.
thenke] þenkeþ IF; þenkyþ G;
 þinkeþ T.

Thus have I ever
been God's
herald.

Thus haue ich beo hus heraude · her and in helle,
And comforted menye carful þere · þat after hus comyng
loken. 268

301
I seek Him whom
John baptized;

For-thi ich seke him," he seide · "for seynt Iohan þe
baptist

John i. 29.

Seide þat he seih hym her · þat sholde [saue] ous alle;
Ecce agnus dei [qui tollit peccata mundi]."

Thenne hadde ich wonder of hus wordes · and of hus
wide clopes,

For in hus bosom he bar a þyng · and þat he blessedde
ofte. 272

I saw a leper in
Abraham's lap,

And ich loked in hus lappe · a lazar lay þer-ynne,
With patriarkes and prophetes · pleiynge to-gederes.
"What waytest þow," quap faith · "and what woldest
thou haue?"

whom I asked
him to shew me.

"Ich wolde wyte," quap ich þo · "what is in þy lappe?"
"Loo!" quap he, and leet me seo · "lord, mercy!" ich
seide, 277

"This is a present of muche prys · what pryns shal hit
haue?"

"The devil," said
he, "has claimed
this leper and
me:

"Hit is a preciouise present," quap he · "ac þe pouko
hit haþ attached,

no one can
ransom us

And me þer-wiþ," quap þe wye · "may no wed ous quite,
Ne no bern beo oure borghe · ne brynge ous out of
daunger, 281

Fro þe poukes poundfalde · no maynprise may ous fecche,

267. *beo*] be EFG; ben IT.
268. *menye*] many a IFT. *loken*]
loked IF.

269. *he*] i F; y G. *Iohan*] Ion
EF. *þe*] F om.

270. *seih*] sey EG; sy F. *hym*]
IT om. *sholde*] schal F. [*saue*
IFTG] ioye PE; cf. B-text. [*qui*,
&c.] from F.

271. *hus* (2)] I om. *hus wordes*]
þys G.

272. *a*] IFTG om.

274. *pleiynge*] pleizeden T.

275. *waytest*] awaitest FTG. *faith*]

miswritten faiht P. *woldest*] wolt I;
wost (!) T.

276. *wyte*] ywite EIFG.

277. *leet*] lete E; let TG. *lord*] a
lord F.

279. *attached*] attachede P; y-
tachid T.

280. *þe*] þat FT. *wye*] wy F; wi;
T; wey I. *quite*] aquyte FG.

281. G omits. *bern*] so PEI; barn
F; burn T. *borghe*] borch I; borw
E; borwe F; boru; T. *out*] E om.

282. G omits. *poundfalde*] pyn-
fold F.

Til he come that ich carpe of · crist is hus name,
 þat shal delyuery ous som day · out of þe deuēles
 powere,

302
 till Christ comes,

284

And betere wed for ous wagen · þan alle we beon worthi,
 And þat is, lif for lyf · oþer ligge þus euere,
 [Lollynge] in my lappe þus · til such a lord ous fecche."

and offers life for
 life."

"Alas !" ich seide, "þat synne · so longe shal lette
 The myght of godes mercy · þat myghte ous alle
 amende !"

289

And wepte for hus wordes ; · with þat ich seyh an oþer
 Rappliche renne · þe righte wey we wente ;

Then I wept, but
 soon beheld
 another,

And ich fraynede hym furst · fro whennes he come,
 What he hihte, and whider he wolde · and wyghtliche
 he ous tolde.

whose name I
 asked.

293

Hic explicit passus secundus de dobet.

283. *of*] F *om.*

284. *delyuery*] delyuere EIFTG.

285. *alle we beon*] we ben alle ITG.

286. *euere*] for euer EFG.

287. [Lollynge IT] Longynge
 PEF; cf. B-text.

288. *ich—synne*] þat synne ich
 seide E. *seide*] seide þo F. *lette*] I-lette F.

289. *myghte*] schal G.

290. *for*] wiþ G. *ich seyh*] ich sey
 E; I saw F; sagh i I; sauþ i T.

291. *Rappliche*] Rappelich E;
 Rapeliche IT; Ful rapeliche F. *Rapp-
 liche—righte*] þat rapliche wente þe
 hyþe G. *we*] þat we FG.

292. *ich*] T *om.* *whennes*] wennes
 P; whenne þat F.

293. *whider*] IT whedur F; whodere
 (for wheder?) E; woder (for wheder?)
 P; what G. *and* (2)] G *om.* *wyght-
 liche*] wittilich E. *tolde*] tauþte G.

COLOPHON. *So* PG. *Hic*] EF *om.*
Hic explicit] IT *om.*

PASSUS XX (DO-BET III).

Hic incipit passus tercius de dobet.

303

"I am HOPE,"
said he, "and
bear a letter,

"Ich am *spes*, [a *spye*]," quap he · "and spire after
a knyght,

þat tooke me a maundement · vp-on þe mounte of
synay,

To ruele alle reames *per*-with · in right and [in] reison.
Loo, here þe lettere," quap he · "in latyn and in ebrew,
That ich seye is soþe · seo ho so lykeþ." 5

"Ys hit a-seled?" ich seyde · "may men seo þe
letteres?"

and seek Him
who shall seal
it."

"Nay," he seyde, "ich seke hym · þat haþ þe seel to
kepe,

The whiche is criste and cristendome · and a croys *per*-
on to honge. 8

Were hit *per*-with a-seeled · ich wote wel þe soþe,
That lucifers lordshup · ligge sholde ful lowe."

"Shew me," said
I.

"Leet se thi letteres," quap ich · "we myghte þe lawe
knowe."

Then he shewed
me a stone,

He plyghte forþ a patente · a pece of an harde roche,

RUBRIC. *So in P*; Incipit tercius
F; IT *om.*

OBS. M begins at l. 31.

1. [a *spye* IG] a spie FT; PE
omit; cf. B-text. *spire* T] spirr P;
speore F; spere I; spure EG.
knyght] kyng E.

3. [in EIFT] PG *om.*

4. in (1)] a I; o T. in (2)] an
I; on T.

5. *That*] þat þat ITF; For þat G.
seye] seiþ I; seiþ T; say F. *is*] was
F. *seo*] se it F; a-say G.

6. *a-seled*] a-selede P; asseled I;

asselide T; I-selid F. *seo*] y-se I.
þe] þy EG.

7. *he seyde*] sede he E; I seide
(*wrongly*) F. þe] þat F.

8. *whiche*] wiche P. *criste and*]
croys of G. a] IFT *om.* a croys] G
om. to honge] y-honged I.

9. *a-seeled*] I-selid F.

10. *ligge—lowe*] schold ligge lowe
F; lowe schulde ligge ITG.

11. *Leet*] Let T; Lat IFG. þe] þi
F.

12. *forþ*] out F. an harde] a F.

Wher-on was write two wordes · in þis wise glosede ;

Dilige deum & proximum [tuum]. 13

This was þe tyxt treweliche · ich toke ful good gome ;

The glose gloryousliche was wryte · wyth a gylt penne ;

In his duobus mandatis pendet tota lex [& prophete]. Mat. xxii. 40.

“Ys her al þy lordes lettere?” quap ich · “3e, [leue me,” he] sayde, 16

“And ho so worcheþ after þis write · ich wol vnder-take, “He that doeth thus is safe.”
Shal neuere deouel hym dere · ne dep in soule greue.

For þauh ich seye hit my-self · ich haue saued with þis charme

Of men and of wymmen · meny score þousend.” 20

“He seiþ soþ,” seide faith · “ich haue founde hit trewe. “Yes,” said Faith; “behold here are Joshua, Loo, her in my lappe,” quap faith · “þat leyuede vp-on Judith, and others.”
þe lettere,

Boþe Iosue and Iudith · and Iudas makabeus,

And sixe þousand mo,” quap faith · “ich can nat [seye] here names.” 24

“3oure wordes aren wonderful,” quap ich · “wher eny “Which of you must I believe?” said I.
of 3ow be trewe

And leel to be-leyuen on · for body oper for soule ?

Abraam seith þat he seiþ · holiche þe trinite,

13. *write*] writen IF; ywrit E. *two* ET] to PFG; tweye I. *write—wordes*] two wordes ywrit E. *in*] and on IT. *glosede*] I-glosed F; a-glosed G. [*tuum*] supplied from T; PEIG om. F has—*Diliges dominum deum tuum super omnia & proximum tuum sicut te ipsum*.

14. *treweliche*] triweliche P. *gome*] so PEF; geme I; 3eme T; kepe G.

15. *gloryousliche was*] was gloriously IT. *wryte*] writen I. *gylt*] gulte I; gilden E. *mandatis*] IT om. *pendet*] pependit IT. *tota*] uniuersa E. [*& prophete* EF] PITG om.

16. *þy*] þis I. *lettere*] lettres IT. [*leue—he* EIT] leef me he F; leyf he me (by mistake) P; leof he me G.

17. *þis write*] his wit F.

18. *Shal*] Schal per F. *deouel*] deucl EFIG; deuil T. *in*] in his T.

19. T omits from ich haue to faith in l. 21. *saueð*] sauede P.

20. *meny*] many a F.

21. *seiþ*] seide F. *founde*] y-founde IF; vounde G.

22. *leyuede*] leued EI; leeued F; leuide T. *þe*] þat EITG; þis F.

24. G omits. [*seye* F] sei3e T; seyn I; telle PE; but obs. *alliteration*.

25. *aren*] arn ful T. *ich*] i þo I. *wher*] wheþer T. *trewe*] trywe P.

26. G omits. *And*] And al P; but EIFT omit al. *body*] so PEIF; lif T (as in B-text). *oper*] & T.

27. *seiþ*] sau3 T; sei3e E; sy FG.

305

"What need of a
new law,

such as Hope
now proclaims ?

Hope's law is
harder than
Abraham's.

Go thy way,
Spes!"

þre persones parcel-mele · departable from oþer, 28
And alle þre bote o god ; · thus abraam bereþ wittnesse,
And ysauede þat by-leyueþ so · and sory for here synnes,
He can no certayn summe telle · and somme aren in
hus lappe.

What neodeþ [hit] þanne · a newe lawe to brynge, 32
Sutthe þe furste suffisede · so by-leyue and be ysaued ?
And now comeþ her this *spes* · and haþ aspied þe lawe,
þat of þe trinite ne telleþ · ne takeþ mo persones
To god-hede, bote o god · and o god almyghty, 36
The whiche alle men aren holde · ouere alle þyng to
honoure ;

And sitthe to loue and to leue · for þat lordes sake
Alle manere of men · as muche as ous self.
And for to louye and to leyue · in o lord almyghty.
Hit is lyght for lewede · and for leredē boþe ; 41

Ac for to by-leyue in o lorde · þat lyueþ in þre persones,
And lereþ þat we louye sholde · as wel lyeres as leele—
Go þy gat," quað ich [to] *spes* · "so me god helpe, 44
Tho þat leorneþ thi lawe · wolle litel while hit vsen !"
And as we wente in the way · thus [wordyng of] þis
matere,

30. G *omits.* *ysauede*] haþ y-saued
I ; haþ sauid T ; seeth I-saued F.
by-leyueþ] byleued I ; beleuid T ;
lyue F. *for here*] be of F.

31. G *omits.* *Here* M *begins*
again. *He*] i M.

32. *What*] But what F. *neodeþ*]
neded I ; nedite T. [*hit* G] it IFT ;
PE *om.*

33. *suffisede*] suffiseth F. *so* PETG]
to IF ; so to M. *be*] M *om.* *ysaued*
E] ysauede P ; i-saued M ; saued
IFG ; sauid T.

34. *her*] þer M ; IT *om.* *and*]
þat I.

35. *þe*] no ITG. *ne*] TG *om.* *mo*]
no T.

36. *o* (2)] E *om.*

37. *whiche*] wiche P. *holde*] i-
holde M.

38. G *omits.* *to loue—leue*] loue
and bileue M. *leue*] *perhaps* leue.

39. G *omits.* *much* MFT] meche
P ; myche E ; mochel I. *ous*] us
MF ; oure IT. *self*] selue MFI ;
seluen T.

40. *to* (2)] IMG *om.* *leyue*] leue
ET ; bileue MIFG. *lord*] god FG.

41. *lyght*] like F. *lewede*] lewed
men M. *for* (2)] fore P.

42. *Ac*] & F. *o*] a MFG.

43. *þat*] nat (!) F.

44. [*to* EMFTG] þo P ; *cf.* B-text.
spes] pes (!) T.

45. *Tho*] þei F. *leorneþ*] lereth
F. *thi*] þe E. *wolle*] wel FT ; wile
I. *while*] wile P. *vsen*] useth F.

46. *we—the*] I went in my F.
[*wordyng of* IMFTG] wondrynge in
P ; wondrynge of E ; *cf.* B-text.

Then seih we a samaritan · cam syttinge on a mule,
 Rydyng ful raply · þe ryght way þat we wente, 48
 Comynge fram a contreie · þat men callide Ierico,
 To Iusten in ierusalem · he iacede away ful faste.
 Boþe abraam and *spes* · [and] he metten to-gederes 51
 In a wilde wilderness · wher theoues hadden bounde
 A man, as me tho thouhte · to muche care þei brouhte.
 For he ne myghte steppe ne stande · ne stere fot ne
 hondes,
 Ne helpe hym-selue sothliche · for *semiuius* he semede,
 And naked as a neelde · and non help aboute hym. 56
 Faith on hym hadde furst a sight · ac he fleih a-syde,
 And wolde nat neyhle hym · by nyne londes lengthe.
 Hope cam hippyng after · þat hadde so ybosted
 Hou he with moyses maundement · hade meny men
 holpen; 60
 And whanne he hadde siht of þis sike · asyde he gan
 drawe,
 And dredfulliche with-drow hym · an dorste go no nerre.
 Ac as sone so þe samaritan · hadde sighte of þat syke,

Then we saw a
 Samaritan, riding
 on a mule,
 coming from
 Jericho.

306

Faith, Hope, and
 the Samaritan
 find a wounded
 man (Lu. x. 33).

Faith passes by
 him.

Hope also passes
 by him.

But the
 Samaritan
 alights,

47. *cam*] come IM; com T.

48. *Rydyng*] Ridande T. *ryght*] same G. *þat*] MIT om. *we*] he M. *wente*] zeden IT.

49. *Comynge*] Comande T. *callide*] callen T; calden M; callyþ G.

50. *in*] at T. *iacede*] so PM; iaced EIF; iaside TG. *ful*] M om.

51. [*and* MIFTG] as E; adde (*sic*) P. *to-gederes*] at ones ITG.

52. *hadden bounde*] hadde i-bounde MIFT.

53. *tho*] MG om. *muche*] mis-written muce P. *þei*] þo F.

54. G omits. *ne* (1)] IF om. *stere*] stire MF; T om. *hondes*] hand T.

55. G omits. *semiuius*] semiuyf IF; semyvif T; semeuij M.

56. G omits. *And*] And as IFT. *neelde*] nelde ET; nedle F; nedel I; nedele M. *non—hym*] no lijf him

aboutze M. *aboute hym*] aboutzen I.

57. *on—sight*] first of him sight (*sic*) I; first had on him siht T; furst on him had siht F; of him furst hadde a syth M. *fleih*] fleiz ET; fly FG; fli M. *a-syde*] on side M.

58. *wolde*] nolde FT. *neyhle*] so PG; neze E; neyhele I; neizhen F; neihe M; neize T. *nyne*] many M.

59. *hippyng*] hoppynge E; huppyng G; lippyng M. *þat*] & F. so] M om.

60. *men*] man T. *hade—holpen*] many men hadde i-holpe M.

61. *And*] Ac I; F om. *whanne*] wanne P. *of*] on EF. *þis*] þe F. *gan*] gan him MT.

62. *And*] M om. *hym*] him þo IT. *an*] and MEIFTG. *nerre*] ner hym T.

63. *as*] so ITG. *so*] as EMF; IG om. *þe*] þat M. *þat syke*] þis careful IFTG.

He alyghte a-non of lyarde · and ladde hym in hus
hondes, 64

And to pis wye he wente · hus wondes to [be]holde.
He perceyuede by his pous · he was in peril to deye,
And bote he hadde recouer þe raper · þat rise sholde he
neuere. 67

and washes his
wounds with
wine and oil,

He vnbokelede hus boteles · and boþe he a-tamede ;
With wyn and with oile · hus wondes he can lithe ;
Enbaumed hym and bond hus heuede · and on bayarde
hym sette, 70

307
takes him to a
grange called,
lex dei,

And ledde hym forth to *lauacrum · lex-dei*, a graunge,
Is sixe myle oþer seuene · by-syde þe newe markett,
And lefte hym þere a lechinge · to lyuen if he myghte.
And took two pans to þe hosteler · to take kepe to hym,
“ And þat goþ mor for hus medicine · ich make þe good
aʒenwarde,

and tells the
innkeeper to take
care of him,
giving him two
pence.

For [ich] may nat lette,” quap [þat] lede · and lyarde
he bystrydeþ, 76

Then he rides on
to Jerusalem.

And rapede hym to ryde · þe righte wey to Ierusalem.
Bothe faith and hus felawe *spes* · folweden faste after ;

Then ran I after
the Samaritan,
308

Ac ich suwede þe samaritan · and seide hou þei bothe
Weren afered, and flowen · fro þe man y-wounded. 80

4. *He*] I om. *alyghte*] liʒt F; liʒte T. *anon*] M om. *hym—hondes*] hit on his hand M.

65. *wye* E] wy F; wiʒ T; *badly spelt* weye P; wey I; wythg M. *be-holde* MT] by-holde I; biholde E; behoorde F; holde (*wrongly*) P.

66. *He*] And ITFG. *perceyuede*] aperseyuede M. *pous*] puffis (!) T. *he*] þat he G. *he—peril*] in perel he was F.

67. G omits. *bote*] but if I; but ʒif T. *recouer*] rekeuere E; rekeuour F; recuerer M; recouerer I. *þe*] FT om. *þat rise*] a-rise M.

68. *He*] And IT. *a-tamede*] gan atame T.

69. *wondes*] wounde T. *can*] gan EIMFTG. *lithe*] light I.

70—76. G omits.

70. *heuede*] hede E; hed MT; heed F.

71. *dei*] *dei omnipotentis* M.

73. *a*] at M. *if* I] ʒif MFT; hif P.

74. *pans*] pens MI; panys T.

75. *goþ mor*] more goþ I. *þat—hus*] what is more for F. *þe*] hit M.

76. *For*] F om. [*ich* E] i MIFT; P om. [*þat* EIMFT] þe P. *bystry-deþ*] gan stride F.

77. *rapede*] rapeþ I; rape (*sic*) E. *rapede—ryde*] to ride him rapede M.

78. *faith*] þe faip I. *folweden*] hyeden G. *folweden—after*] þei folwede faste F.

80. *y-wounded*] y-woundede P; y-wounde I.

"Haue hem excused," quap þe samaritan · "here help
 wolde nat vaille,
 Ne medecine vnder molde · þe man to hele brynge,
 Noþer Faith ne fyn hope · so festered aren hus wondes ;
 With-oute þe blod of [a] barn · he beoþ nouht ysaued,
 The whiche barn mot neodes · be bore of a mayde, 85
 And with þe blod of þat barn · embaumed and baptized.
 And þauh he steppe and stande · right strong worth he
 neuere
 Til he haue eten al þat barn · and hus blod dronken,
 And 3ut be plastred with pacience · when fondynges
 hym prykieþ— 89
 For wente neuere [man] þis way · þat he ne was here
 rifled,
 Saue my-selue sothliche · and suche as ich louede—
 And 3ut be-leyue leelly · vpon þat litel baby, 92
 þat his likame [schal] lechen .atte laste ous alle."
 "A ! syre," ich seide · "shul nat we by-leyue,
 As faith and hus felawe *spes* · enformede me boþe,
 In þre persones, a parceles · departable from oþer, 96
 And all þre bote o god ? · þus abraham me tauhte.
 And hope afterwarde · of god more me tolde,

and told him
what Faith and
Hope had done.

He told me that
nothing could
cure the wounded
man but the
blood of a child
born of a virgin.

"Nearly all," said
he, "who pass
through that
wilderness are
robbed."

310
"Shall I believe
in the Trinity,
as Faith taught
me ?" said I,

81. *excused*] *ascusid* T. *quap*] seide F. *wolde*] *may* IFTG; *mai* M. *vaille*] *auaile* IMFTG.

82. *Ne*] *Ne* no IT. *þe man*] *hym* G.

83. *aren*] *ben* EM.

84. [*a* EIMFTG] *þat* P. *he beoþ*] *þei* *ben* M; *he worþ* G. *ysaued*] *ysauede* P.

85. *whiche*] *wiche* P. *bore*] *so* PG; *born* EMIFT.

86. *embaumed*] *embaumede* P. *baptized*] *baptizede* P; *y-baptized* I.

87. *steppe—stande*] *stande* & *steppe* ITG.

88. *eten* EIFT] *heten* P; *i-3eten* M; *3ete* G. *al*] *G om.*

89—91. *G omits.*

89. *be*] *I om.* *plastred*] *plastrede* P; *y-plastred* I. *fondynges*] *fond-*

yn MF. *hym*] *hem* T.

90. [*man* MIT] *better than* men PEF (*though* men is also used in the singular, *when indefinite*). *ne was*] *nas* FT. *rifled*] *rifled* P; *i-rifled* M; *y-ruyfl* I; *I-robbed* F.

92. *be-leyue*] *bileue* M; *to be-leyue* P; *to bileue* E; *to leeu* F; *but þey leue* ITG (*the reading of M is the only one that makes sense*). *þat*] *þe* I; *a M.* *baby*] *barn* E.

93. *his*] *is* P. [*schal* EMIFG] *shal* T; *P om.* *atte*] *at þe* MEFT; & *at þe* G.

94. *ne* EMIFTG] *miswritten weye* P.

96. *a parceles*] *aparseld* M; *apertly* F; *a parcel* G.

98. *hope*] *sir hope* F. *of*] *of o* I. *me*] *he me* G.

"or in the law of
Love, as Hope
taught me?"

And lerede me for hus loue · to louye al man-kynde,
And hym abouen alle · and hem as my-selue; 100
Noþer lacky ne alose · ne leyue þat þer were
Eny wickeder in þis worlde · þan y were myself,
And most imparfit of alle persones · and pacientliche
suffre 103

"Follow the
teaching of both.

Alle manere of men · and þauh ich myghte me venge,
I sholde tholie and þonken hem · þat me vuel wolde."
"He seide soth," quap þe samaritan · "and so ich rede
þe also.

And as abraam þe olde · of o god þe taughte,
Loke þow louye and by-leyue · al þy lyf-tyme. 108
And if kynde witt carpe her-aȝen · and oþer kynne
þouhtes,

Shew to hereticks
thy HAND.

Oþer heretikes with argumens · þyn hond þou hem
shewe!

For god þat al by-gan · in gynnynge of þe worlde,
Ferde furst as a fust · and ȝut is, as ich leyue, 112

† Cf. Isalah xl. 12.

Mundum pugillo continens,

The Father is
like the folded
FIST;

As with a fust with o fynger · yfolde to-gederes,
Til hym liked and luste · to vnlose þe fynger,

the PALM
betokens the
Holy Ghost;

And profrede hit forth as with þe paume · to what
place it sholde.

The paume is þe pip of þe honde · and profref þorþ þe
fyngres, 116

100. G omits. and] I om.

101. lacky] so PE; lacke MF;
lakke IG; lak T. alose] so PMFG;
allose I; loose E; los T.

102. Eny] A E. wickeder] worse
MF. þis] þe I; T om. worlde]
written wordle P.

104. of] I om. myghte me] me
mizte T. me] IG om. venge] a-venge
M.

105. sholde] schal M. tholie] þole
T. vuel] euel MF; yuel IEG; euil
T.

106. He seide] A seyde I.

107. taughte] tauhgte P.

109. And] F om. her] þer ME.
and oþer] or eny MFTG.

110. þou] þat þou IT. hem] hym E.

111. gynnynge] bigynnyng IF; þe
bi-gynnyng M.

113. with (1)] MG om. with (2)]
withoute (sic) I. o] a IMTG; F om.

114. liked] likeþ I. liked—luste]
lust & likede F. vnlose] vnclose M;
vnlouke F. þe] þat MFTG.

115. hit (1)] M om.

116. þe pip] pith F; þe put M;
piþe G. forþ] I om. fyngres] fynger
MT.

To mynystre and to make · þat myght of hond knoweþ,
 And bytokneþ trewely · telle ho so likeþ,
 The holy gost of heuene; · he is as þe paume. 119
 The fynGRES þat freo beo · to folden and to clycchen
 By-tokneþ sothliche þe sone · þat sente was tyl erthe,
 Touchede and tastede · at techynge of þe paume,
 Seynte marie, a mayde · and mankynde lauhte;

311

the FINGERS
betoken the Son.

Natus ex maria uirgine.

The fader is þenne as þe fust · with fynger and with
 paume, 124

To huden and to holde · as holy writ telleþ;

Omnia traham ad me ipsum.

John xii. 32.

Al þat þe fynger gropeþ · graythly he grypeþ,
 Bote yf þat þat he gropeþ · greue þe paume.
 Thus are thei alle bote on · as hit an hande were, 128
 A fust with a fynger · and a foll paume.
 And as þe fust is ful hand · yfolde to-gederes,
 So is þe fader a ful god · þe furste of hem alle.
 And as my fust is furst · er ich my fynGRES shewe, 132
 So is he fader an former · þe furste of alle þynges;

The FIST, PALM,
and FINGERS are
but ONE HAND.

312
The folded fist is
like God the
Creator.

Tu fabricator omnium;

And alle þe myghte with hym is · was, and worth
 euere.

117. *mynystre* MI] mynestre P;
mynystre þer-with F.

118. *bytokneþ*] bytockneþ P; but
see l. 121. *telle*] telle hit M.

119. *he*] for he F.

120. *folden* E] folde MIFTG; mis-
written felden P. *clycchen*] clucche
EIT; clenche M; clouche F.

121. *sothliche*] sothliche P; treu-
lich E. *tyl*] on M; to T.

122. *tastede*] techide T. *techynge*]
tasyng T.

123. G omits. *Natus*] Natus est I.

124. G omits. *is þenne*] þanne is
M.

125. *huden*] so PE; huyde IG;
hiden MF; hide T. *writ*] badly
spelt wriȝth P. *telleþ*] techēþ M.

126, 127. *One line in I*—And þat
þe fynger gropeþ he gripeþ · but if it
greue þe paume; so also T.

127. *gripeþ*] gripeþ MG; gripe F.

128. *an*] on a E.

129. *fust*] fist T. *foll*] ful EMI
FTG.

130. *þe fust*] þere M. *ful*] a ful
MIFTG; but PE omit a; cf. B-text.
yfolde] yfoolde P; ydrawe G.

131, 132. M omits.

132. *And*] ITG om.

133. *So is*] And IT. *fader*] þe
fadere EF. *an*] and MEIFT. *former*]
formoure EIF; fourmetour T. *Tu*,
&c.] M om.

134. *þe*] G om. *was*] and was
MT; E om. *and*] as E.

The fingers are
as the Son.

þe fyngres is ful hand · for, failled thei here þombe,
Portrey ne peynte · parfitliche, ich leyue, 136
Sholde no wryzt worche · were he aweye.
Ryzt so, faillede þe sone · þe syre be ne myghte,
Ne holde, ne helpe · ne hente þat he louede ;

Dextre dei tu digitus.

The paume is pureliche þe honde · and haþ power by
hym-self, 140
Oper-wise þan þe wrythen fust · oper werkmanshup of
fyngres.

The palm unfolds
the fist, and
receives from the
fingers,

For þe paume haþ power · to putten oute þe Ioyntes,
And to vnfolde þe fust · for hym hit bylongeþ,
And receyuen þat þe fyngres rechen · and refuse, yf
hym likeþ, 144

Al þat þe fyngres and þe fust · felen and touchen,
Beo he greued with here gripe · þe holy gost let falle.
Thus is þe holigost god · noþer gretture ne lasse 147
Thenne is þe syre oper þe sone · and of þe same myghte,
And alle þre nys bote o god · as my hand and my
fyngres,

and fingers, fist,
and palm are but
one hand.

Vnfolde oper yfolde · a fust-wyse oper elles,
Al is hit bote on hand · hou so y turne hit. 151

313

He who is hurt in
the palm fails in
power over the
fingers and the
fist.

Ac ho so is hurt in þe hand · euene in þe myddes,
He may receyue ryght nouht · reson hit sheweþ ;
For þe fyngres þat folde sholden · and þe fust make,
For peyne of þe paume · power [hem] failleþ 155

135. *fyngres*] fust M (*wrongly*).
ful] a ful EMFG. *for*] ac F. *thei*]
M om.

136. *Portrey*] Noþur portreie F;
Ne myzte portreie G. *leyue*] wene G.

137. *wryzt* E] wryzt F; write (*sic*)
I; withg M; wryzt T; *spelt* wryzt P;
whyzt G. *worche*] noþur wurche wel
F. *he*] þey IT; hit M.

138. *Ryzt*] Ryght P.

139. M *transposes* helpe and hente.

140. *pureliche*] propurliche M.

141. *þe wrythen*] þei write (!) T.

142. *to*] for to I. *oute*] forþ M.

143. *for*] to F.

144. *And*] And to G. *hym*] hem I.

146. *Beo he*] But he be IT. *greued*]

miswritten greueued P. *let*] lat IF.

147. *Thus*] And þus IT. *lasse*]

lessere IT; smaller MF.

148. *is*] I om. *oper*] and M.
and] bute G. *of*] F om.

149. *nys*] is MIT; F om.

150. *Vnfolde*] Vnfolden MIT. *y-*
folde] folden MIT.

151. *hit*] MG om.

152. G omits. *so*] I om.

155. [*hem* MIFG] hym PET.

To clucche oper to clawe · to cluppe oper to holde.

Were þe myddel of myn hand · with-oute mal ese,

In menyne kynne manere · ich myghte my-self helpe,

Boþe meue and amende · þauh alle my fynGRES oken.

By this *simile*," he seide · "ich seo an euidence, 160

That ho so synegeþ in þe *seynt espirit* · asoilled worth

he neuere,

Noþer her ne elles-wher · as ich herde telle ;

Qui peccat in spiritum sanctum [neque remittetur ei,] &c. Mark iii. 29,

He prikeþ god as in þe paume · þat *peccat in spiritum sanctum*. 163

For þe fader is as þe fust · þe sone is as þe fynGRES,

The holy gost of heuene · he is as þe paume.

So ho so synegeþ azens þe *seynte espirit* · hit semeþ þat for he grieues the HAND in the PALM. 166

he greueþ

God, þer he gripeth · and wolde hus grace quenche. 314

For to a torche oper to a taper · the trinite is likened,

As wexe and a weke · [were twyned] to-gederes,

And fuyr flaumed · forth of hem boþe ; 170

And as wex and weke · [and warm fuyr] to-gederes

158. *To*] For to F. *clucche*] clicche MTG; clyche F. *cluppe*] clippe MFITG.

157. *Were*] Ac were F.

158. *menye*] many a F. *my*] me M.

160. *By*] & so by F. *simile*] similitude T. *he*] y G. *he seide*] F om.

161. *That*] F om. *synegeþ*] synneþ EMT; senneth I; synnede F. þe] F om. *seynt*] I om. *espirit*] spirit IEG; espijt (*sic*) M. *asoilled*] asoilled P; amended G.

162. *ne*] nor F. *spiritum sanctum*] spiritu sancto I. [*neque—&c.*] from F; M *has*—ne r. &c.; PEIT om.

163. *He*] For he IT. *as*] M om. þe] his IT.

164. þe (1)] god þe IG. *as*] M omits (*twice*). *fynGRES*] fynger MEIFG.

165. *The*] & þe F. *he*] MG om.

166. *So*] F om. *so*] þat G. *synegeþ*] synege F; synneþ MEITG. *seynte*] FG om. *espirit*] spirit EIFG. *hit*] hem I.

167. þer] þer-wiþ I. *quenche* EM IFITG] queynche P.

168. *likened* MI] likenede P; lykned GT; I-likned F; ylickened E.

169. *As*] & as F. *a*] FTG om. [*were twyned* I] were tweyned M; were twynnyd T; if þei were wounde F; and warme fur PEG (*by confusion with* l. 171); see B-text.

170. FT omit. *fuyr flaumed*] flaumed fuyr PEG; but fuyr flammed M; þanne flammyng fure I; see B-text.

171. FT omit. [*and warm fuyr* MG] and warme fure I; were twynede P; were twyned E (*by confusion with* l. 169); see B-text.

If the fingers only are hurt, the palm still retains power.

Likewise he who sins against the Holy Ghost is never forgiven,

The Trinity is like a TORCH, having WAX, WICK, and FIRE.

Fostren forþ a flaume · and a fayre lye, 172

That serueþ þese swynkeres · to seo by a nyghtes,

So doþ þe syre and þe sone · and *seynt espirit* to-
gederes,

Fostren forth a-mong folke · fyn loue and by-leyue,

þat alle kynne crystene · clanseþ of synne. 176

Like a smoulder-
ing torch without
light,

And as þou suxt some tyme · sodenliche, of a torche

þe blase beo blowen out · 3ut brenneþ þe weke,

With-uten lye and lyght · [lith] fuyr in þe macche,

so is the
quenching of the
Spirit.

So is þe holy gost god · and grace with-oute mercy

To alle vnkynde creatures · þat coueyten to distruye

Leel lycame, and lif · þat oure lorde shupte. 182

Glowing coals
give no light
like a blazing
torch does.

And as glowynge gledes · gladē nat þese workemen

þat worchen and waken · in wynteres nyghtes,

As doþ a kyx oþer a candeale · þat cauht haþ fuyr, and

blaseþ, 185

No more doþ the syre ne þe sone · ne *seynte espirit* to-
gederes

Graunten eny grace · ne for-gyuenesse of synnes,

Til þe holy gost by-gynne · to glowen and blase. 188

The Spirit, blown
upon by Love,
flames like FIRE.

So þat þe holy gost · gloweþ bote as a glede,

Til þat loue and by-leyue · leelliche to hym blowe.

Thenne flammeþ he as fuyr · on fader and on *filius*,

172. *fayre*] fyre I. *lye*] lie E; liȝe M; leye IF; leiȝe T.

173. *þese*] þes P. *seo*] werke I. a] on M.

174. *þe* (1)] F *om. seynt*] þe seynt M. *espirit*] spirit IETG.

177. *suat*] sixte E; sixt FG; seest IM; sest T.

178. *pe*] 3if þe F. *blowen*] y-blowen IT.

179. *lye*] lie M; leye I; lowe T. and] oþer T. *lyght*] lith (= lyght) M. [lith IF] liþ MTG; *miswritten* lyght P; liȝt E (*by repetition*).

181. *coueyten*] conuertē (1) E.

182. *lycame*] libam M. *shupte*] schapte MF.

183. *gledes* EIMFT] *miswritten* glades P; *but see* l. 188. *gladēþ*]

gladieþ I. *nat*] now M; I *om. þese*] þes P.

184. *worchen—waken*] waken and worchen M. *waken*] walken T; a-waken F. *nyghtes*] tyme F.

185. *kyx*] kex MF. *cauht*] lauȝt F.

186. *the*] I *om. espirit*] spirit EITG.

187. *synnes*] synne MTG.

188. *Til*] Til þat I. *bygynne*] bi-gynneþ M; gynne I. and] & to FTG.

189. *bote*] M *om.*

190. *by-leyue*] þe leue T.

191. *Thenne*] And þanne IT. *flammeþ*] flaumeþ E; flaumiþ G; flameth F. *fader*] þe fader M; Pater G.

And melteþ myghte in-to mercy · as we may seo a
wynter,

315

192

Isykles in euesynges · thorgh hete of þe sonne

Melteþ in a mynt-while · to myst and to water ;

So grace of þe holy gost · melteþ al to mercy,

The grete myghte of þe trinite · to mercyable, and to
none oþere.

196

And as wex wiþ-oute more · vpon a warm glede

Wol brennen and blasen · beo thei to-gyderes,

And solasen hem þat mowe nat seon · syttyng in deork-
nesse,

So wol þe fader for-zyuen · folke of mylde hertes, 200

That ruffulliche repenten · and restitucion maken,

In as muche as þei mowen · amenden and payen,

And yf hit sufficith nat for a-seth · þat in suche wille
deyen,

[Mercy, for his mekenesse · wil make good þe remen-
ant.]

204

And [as] þe wicke and þe warme fuyr · wol make a fayr
flamme

As icicles are
melted by the
sun's heat, so the
Spirit inclines the
Trinity to mercy.

As wax laid on
an ember will
blaze,

so the Father
forgives
penitents.

As a wick, when
lighted, burns,

For to murthen men with · þat in merke sytten ;

So wol crist, of hus curtesye · and men crye hym mercy,

Boþe for-zeuen and for-3uten · and 3ut bydde for ous

To þe fader of heuene · for-3yuenesse to haue. 209

so Christ forgives
also.

192. *we* EIMFTG] *miswritten* wey
P. a] in M.

193. *Isykles*] Isecheles MF. *in*]
on I.

194. *mynt*] so PEEFG; mynte IT;
myte M.

195, 196. *melteþ*—*trinite*] þe grete
myzt of þe trinite Melteþ al to mercy
IT (*as in B-text*). *to none*] noon FG.

198. *thei*] þei to M.

199. *hem*] IT *om.* *seon*] seo MG;
sen E; see F; se IT. *deorknesse*]
derknesse MTG; derkenesse IF;
derkesse (!) E.

203. *sufficith*] suffice FT; sofice M.
a-seth] aseth E; asseþ T; a-seeth F;
a-sech (*error for a-seth*) I. *for a-*

seth] i-now M. *þat*] & F. *wille* E]
badly spelt wile P; wil MFG; a
wille I; a wil T. *deyen* G] deien
EM; deyn P; dyen F; deyeth I;
deizeþ T.

204. *From* I; *also in* EMFTG; P
omits.

205. [*as* EMFITG] P *om.* *þe* (2)]
a G; EMFIT *om.*

206. *men*] E *om.* *merke* ME]
merk FTG; a myrke I; meerk P.

207. *and men*] if men wil F.

208. *for-3uten*] for3utte E; for3ete
IMFG; for3eten T. *bydde*] bit E.

209. *þe*] our F. *of*] in E. *for-*
zyuenesse] and for3euenesse I.

But FIRE without
tinder will not be
of service;

Ac hewe fuyr of a flynt · four hundred wynter ;
Bote þou haue tache to take hit with · tunder and
broches,

Al þy labour is lost · and al þy long trauayl ; 212
For may no fuyr flamme make · faille hit hus kynde.

so is the Spirit
like Grace
without Mercy.

So is [þe] holiȝost god · and grace with-oute mercy
To alle vnkynde creatures · as crist hym-self wittnesseþ ;

Mat. xxv. 12.

Amen dico uobis, nescio vos.

316

If thou art
unkind,

Beo vnkynde to þyn emcrystene · and al þat þow canst
bidde, 216

Dele and do penaunce · day and nyght euere,

then, for all the
pardons thou
canst buy, the
Spirit hears thee
not.

And porchase al þe pardoun · of paumpelon and of rome,
And Indulgences ynowe · and be ingrat to þy kynde,
The holyȝost huyreþ [þe] nat · ne helpeth þe, be thow
certayn. 220

Forvnkyndenesse quencheþ hym · þat he [can] nat shyne,
Ne brenne, ne blase cleer · for blowynge of vnkynde-
nesse.

Seynt paul þe apostel · proueþ wher ich lye ;

1 Cor. xiii. 1.

Si linguis hominum loquar, &c.

Beware, ye wise
men,

For-þi beoþ war, ȝe wyse men · þat with þe worlde deleþ,
That ryche beon and reson knowen · reuleþ wel ȝoure
soule. 225

of unkindness,

Beoþ nat vnkynde, ich consaile ȝou · to ȝoure emcrystene.

210. *Ac hewe*] Hak out M. *of*], pampilioun T; pampilion G; þe
at IT.

211. *Bote*] But ȝif M. *tache*] tach
EF; tache I; tasshe T; houȝt (*for*
ouȝt) G; M *om.* *tunder*] tonder
MI; tendere EG. *and*] or T; &
sum F.

212. *al*] MF *om.*

213. *flamme*] no flamme PE; but
MIFTG omit no; cf. B-text. *faille*]
lacke M.

214. [þe EMIFTG] P *om.* *god*]
M *om.*

215. *wittnesseþ*] *miswritten* witt-
nesse P.

216. *emcrystene*] euencristene IT.

218. *paumpelon*] pampiloun IF;

pampilioun T; pampilion G; þe
paumpelen M. *and*] M *om.*

219. *And*] & eke F. *and*] F *om.*
ingrat] ingrat (*sic*) IT; nygard MG.

220. *huyreþ*] hureþ EG; hereþ IM
FT. [þe IMFTG] PE *om.* [þe] M
om. *be thow*] be þe M; in G.

221. *quencheþ* EMIFTG] queyncheþ
P. [can EIFT] ne can M; P *om.*

223. *Seynt*] IT *om.* *wher*] wheþer
T; where þat G; wer P.

224. *For-þi*] For-whi M; þerfore
F. *with þe*] wit with (*sic*) F.
worlde] wordle PG.

225. *soule*] soules MI.

226. *emcrystene*] euencristene
MIGT.

For menye of [3ow] ryche men · by my saule, ich lye
nat,

3e brenneþ, ac 3e blaseþ nat · and þat is a blynde bekne ; lest ye burn, but
blaze not.
Mat. vii. 21.
*Non omnis qui dicit [michi] domine, domine,
intrabit in regnum celorum.* 228

Mynne 3e nat, riche men · to which a meschaunce
þat *dives* deyed, and dampned [was] · for hus vnkynde- Remember Dives,
who perished ;
nesse

Of hus mete and of hus moneye · to men þat hit
neodede?

3ut wan he hit nat with wrang · ne with queynte † yet he won
not his wealth by
wrong-doing.
sleythes, 232

Bote ryȝtfulliche, as men [rat] · al hus rychesse cam
hym,

And on hym-self, seith the book · sotelede hou he
myghte

Most lordliche lyuen · and leet hus lycame werie

Clopes of most cost · as clerkes bereth wittnesse ;

Epulabatur splendide, & induebatur bisso & purpura. † Luke xvi. 19. 236

And for he was a nigard · to þe neodful poure, † But he was a
niggard to the
poor.
For godes treitour he is tolde · for al hus trewe catel,
And dampned is and dwelleþ · with þe deucl in helle.

227. [3ow IMFTG] PE om. *ryche*]
riche EMFITG ; ryke P ; but see l.
225.

228. 3e] E om. *bekne*] sa PMFT ;
bekene EG. [michi] in F. *domine*
(2)] I om. *regnum*] regno T.

229. Mynne] Mene MT ; Wite G.
riche] 3e riche M. to] F om. *which*]
swich M ; wich P. a] E om.

230. dampned was TG] dampned
PEI ; dampned is M ; was I-dampned
F ; cf. l. 239.

231. of] IT om. *hus* (2)] G om.

232. hit] I om. *sleythes*] sleyȝtes
IF.

233. ryȝtfulliche] ryȝthfulliche P.
[rat EMIT] pat P ; rede F ; sayþ
G.

234. on] so PEIT ; how M ; FG om.
(The word on is not wanted, but the
mistake seems to be the author's.)
seith] as seith I. *sotelede* G] soutel-
ede P ; souteled E ; but soteled F ;
sotiled I ; sotilide T ; sotilde M.

235. leet] ȝet T ; ȝit IF ; ȝut M
(wrongly) ; G om. *hus*] on his T.
werie] were FT.

236. & purpura] ITG om. The
quotation in F is—Induebatur pur-
pura & bisso & epulabatur cotidie
splendide.

237. nigard] nygarde and a nyth-
ing IT. þe neodful] reupful E.

238. tolde] called I. al] M om.

239. is] IT om. and] a I. in] of
G.

† Since he is
damned, though
he won not with
guile,

Suthþe he with-oute wiles wan · and wel myghte a-
temye 240

Lordliche for to lyuen · and likyngliche be cloþed,
And is in helle for al þat · how wole riche nouthe

† how shall
niggards be
excused, who
have won wealth
guilefully ?

Excuse hem þat beþ vnkynde · and ȝut here catel
wonne

With wiles and with luther wittes · and ȝut wollen nat
atemye 244

To gon semliche ne sitte · sith holy writ techēþ,
That þat wikkedliche is wonne · to wasten hit, and to
make frendes ?

† Luke xvi. 9.

Facite vobis amicos de mammona iniquitatis.

Eche a riche man, ich rede · reward her-of take, 247

And ȝeueþ ȝoure good to þat god · þat grace of ariseþ.

317

For ȝe þat ben vnhende to hyse · hope ȝe none oþer,

Bote to dwelle þer *dives* is · dayes with-outen ende.

Unkindness
quenches the
Holy Spirit,

Thus is vnkyndenesse [kid] · and aquencheþ, as hit
were,

The grace of þe holygost · godes owene kynde ; 252

For þat þat kynde doþ · vnkynde for-doþ.

as thieves quench
a man's life.

Acorsede þeoues, vnkynde cristene men · for couetise
and enuye

240. *Suthþe*] And sitthe I; And
siþen T. *wiles*] *miswritten* whiles
P; see l. 244. *atemye*] atemye or
ateniye P; but a-temye MEF; a-
tymye I; atemie G; ateme T.

241. *likyngliche*] likendeliche I.

243. *catel*] I om. *wonne*] i-wonne
MIG.

244. *With wiles*] at end of l. 243
in T. *atemye*] atemye or ateniye P;
but atemye EMF; atymye I; ateme
TG; as in l. 240.

245. *ne*] ne to F; and M. *sith*]
sittþ P. *writ techēþ*] scripture tellith
F; writ telliþ G.

246. I omits. *That*] T om. *That—*
is] Of þat is wikkidliche F. *hit*] G
om. to (2)] GT om. to make]
maketh F. *vobis*] vos I.

247. a] ME om. man] IFTG om.

take] to take F.

248. *And*] F om. *good* EMFTG]
goud P.

249. *ȝe*] þo T; I om. *vnhende*]
vnkynde MF. *hyse*] hise IMFG;
his ET.

250. *to*] þey I; ȝif þei T; ȝe M.
þer] per þat M. *is*] F om. *dayes*]
dai MTG.

251. *Thus is*] & þat for F. [*kid*
T] PEMFI omit; but it is clearly
required. and] þat F. *aqueyncheþ*
E] aqueyncheþ P; quencheþ MIFG;
quenchild T.

253. *For*] Comunliche F. *þat* (2)]
IT om. *for-doþ*] for-dooth it aftur F.

254. *Acorsede*] As cursede MFG;
As þis cursede I; As þise curside T.
vnkynde] vnkende P; but see last
line. *cristene*] F om.

Sleep a man for hus meobles · with mouth oper with
handes ;

For þat þe holy gost hap to kepe · suche harlotes
destruyen, 256

The whiche is lyf and loue · the lye of mannes body.

For euery maner good man · may be lykned to a torche, Every good man
is like a torch ;

Oper elles [to] a taper · to reuerence with þe trinite ;

And ho so morþereþ a good man · me þynkeþ, [by] myn he who murders
him, quenches
the light.
In-witt, 260

He for-dop þe light þat oure lorde · lokeþ to haue
worsshep of.

And ȝut in mo maneres · men offendeþ þe holy gost ;

Ac þis is þe worste wise · þat eny wight myghte

Synegen a-ȝens þe *seynt espirit* · assenten to destruye

For couetyse of eny kynne þyng · þat cryst dere
boughte. 265

How myghte he aske mercy · oper eny mercy hym How shall the
merciless expect
mercy ?
defende,

That wikkidliche and wilfulliche · wolde mercy
anyente ?

Innocence is next god · and nyght and day hit cryeþ,

‘ Veniaunce ! veniaunce ! · for-ȝeue be hit neuere, 269

255. *Sleep* EF] Sleþ ITG ; Slen M ; Sleehþ P. *meobles* EF] mebles MIG ; meblis T ; noebles P (*a mere clerical error*). *mouth*] money I.

256. *suche*] so FG ; swiche M ; þo I ; þe T ; and *suche* PE ; *but* and *is* not wanted.

257. *lyf—loue*] loue & life I. *lye*] so PEF ; lie MG ; ley I ; leiȝe T.

258. *maner good*] good maner I. *may be*] is F. *lykned*] likned EFG ; liknid T ; likened MI ; lycknede P ; cf. l. 168.

259. [to EMFTG] PI om. *to—trinite*] þe trinite to honoure F.

260. *morþereþ* EMI] murþreþ T ; formopureth (*sic*) F ; morþreþ G ; *miswritten* morþrerþ P. *good* .

IMFTG] goode E ; goud P. [*by* EIFG] be MT ; in P ; see B-text.

261. *He*] A I. *for-dop*] so dop (*wrongly*) T ; bi-nymeþ M. *to—worsshep*] be wurscheped F.

262. *in*] on M.

263. *worste*] wurse F. *wight* IFT] wyȝt G ; withg M ; whight P ; whiȝt E.

264. *Synegen*] Senegen G ; Synege F ; Synny E ; Synnen IT ; Synne M. *espirit*] spirit EITG. *assenten*] to sente F.

265. *boughte*] a-bouȝte MF.

266. *eny*] F om.

267. *anyente*] so PEITG ; anentesch M ; aquenche F.

268. *hit*] he T ; M om.

318

That shende ous and shadde oure blod · for-shupte ous,
as hit semede ;

Rev. vi. 10.

Vindica sanguinem iustorum !'

Even Love cries
out for
vengeance."

Thus 'veniaunce ! veniaunce !' · verray charite askep,
And suthen charite, þat holychurche is · chargeþ this
so sore, 272

Leyue ich neuere þat oure lorde · atte laste ende
Wol louye þat lyf þat loue · and leel charite destruyen."

"But were I to
pray for the
Holy Ghost's
forgiveness," said
I, "should I be
saved ?"

"Ich pose ich hadde syneged so," quap ich · "and
shold nouthe deye,

And now am ich sory þat ich so · þe *seynt espirit* agulte,
Confesse me and crye hus grace · god þat al made, 277
And myldeliche hus mercy aske · myghte ich nat be
saued ?"

"Thou mightest ;

"Ȝus," seide þe samaritan · "so þou myghtest repente,
That ryghtwisnesse þorgh repentaunce · to reuthe
myghte turne. 280

yet how seldom is
a condemned
felon pardoned
for his penitence !

Ac hit is bote selde seyn · ther sothnesse bereþ witt-
nesse

Eny creature be coupable · by-for a kynges Iustice,
Be yraunsoned for repentaunce · þer al reson hym
dampneþ.

Ther þat partye porsueþ · þe apeel is so huge, 284

270. *shende*] so PEMFG ; schent
IT. *shadde*] so PEG ; schedde MIFT.
forshupte] forschapt F ; fforsshepte
T ; forchopte M. *semede*] semep MF.
sanguinem, &c.] *domine sanguinem
sanctorum tuorum* F.

272. *charite*] þat charite P ; but
EMIFTG omit þat. *holychurche*]
holy F. *chargeþ*] charieþ (!) T.

273. *Leyue*] Leue EMITG ; Leeue
F. *atte*] at þe EMIFTG.

274. *and leel*] leel & F. *leel*] I
om.

275. *pose*] suppose F ; pose þat G.
syneged] sineged G ; syngede F ;
synned ET ; i-synned MI. *nouthe*]
nought (!) I.

276. *ich* (1)] FG om. *am ich*] i
am M. *so*] so dude PE ; but IMFTG

omit dude. *espirit*] spirit EITG.
agulte] so MG ; agilte I ; agilt T ;
agilted F ; to agulte PE ; but IMFTG
omit to ; cf. B-text.

277. *al*] al þing F.

278. *aske*] aske er T.

279. *Ȝus*] Ȝis IF.

280. *þorgh*] þoru þi M. to EMI
FTG] *miswritten* tow P.

281. *selde* EMITG] seild P ; seelde
F. *sothnesse*] southnesse P.

282. *Eny*] Euery I.

283. *yraunsoned* ET] yraunsomed
IF ; raunsomed M ; yraunsende (for
yraunsonde) P. *for*] for his IT.

284. *Ther—porsueþ*] Or þere þe
partie sueth F. *apeel*] apele E ; ap-
pel T ; apel M ; apul I ; peel F. *is*]
his P. *huge*] hoige F ; houge T.

May no kynge mercy graunt · til boþe men a-corden,
þat ayþer partye haue [equite] · as holy writt wit-
nesseþ; 286

Nunquam dimittitur peccatum, &c.

319

Thus hit fareþ by suche folke · þat folwen here owene
wil,

þat vuel lyuen and leten nat · til hem for-sake synne.

Drede of desperacion · þenne dryueþ a-wey grace, 289

Despair drives
away grace.

þat mercy in here mynde · may nat þenne falle;

For good hope þat hem helpe sholde · to [wanhope]
turneþ,

And nat of þe [nounpower] of god · þat he nys ful of
myghte 292

It is not through
God's lack of
power

To amenden al þat amys is · and hus mercy grettour

Than alle oure wikkede werkus · as holy writ telleþ,

Misericordia eius super omnia opera eius.

(Ps. cxliv. 9,
Vulg.),

Ac er hus rightwisnesse to reuthe turne · restitution
hit makeþ;

but because some
restitution is
required.

As sorwe of herte is satisfaccion · for suche as may nat
paye. 296

Ac þre þynges þer beoþ · þat doþ a man to sterte

Three things
drive a man out
of his own house:

Out of his owene hous · as holy writ sheweþ.

285. *May*] þat may IT.

286. *ayþer*] euery T. [*equite* EITG]
acquitee F; a quyte P; a quit M;
see B-text. *witnesseþ*] miswritten
witnessse P; as in l. 215. *dimittitur*
dimittatur M.

287. *In margin of M*—De disper-
acione.

288. *leten*] leewe F; lette T. *til*
to I. *for-sake*] for-sakeþ M.

289. *Drede*] Som drede I; & drede
F. *away*] ITG om.

290. *may*] ne may F.

291. *hem*] him M. *hem helpe*
helpe þenne IT; þenne helpe G.
[*wanhope* EIMFTG] whamhope P
(by mistake). *turneþ*] þere torneþ
IT; it turneth F.

292. [*nounpower* F] nounpower
M noun-poer I; newe power (!) T;

vnpower PE; cf. B-text. *nys*] ne is
MFI. *ful—myghte*] al-myȝty F.

293. *amenden*] mende F. *amys*
mys MF.

294. *oure*] opere I. *wikkede*
werkus] werkus wicked F. *telleþ*
us telleth F.

295. *er*] ar IFG. *hus*] þis IM.
rightwisnesse] riȝt F. *er—rightwis-*
nesse] þer is riȝtfulnesse E.

296. *As*] For M. *is*] of I; and M.
for] to F. *as*] þat ITG.

297. *beoþ*] biþ G; ben EMIT;
be F. *to*] MT om. *In margin of*
M—De tribus inimicis (against l.
294).

298. G omits. *his*] is P. *hous*
EMIT] hows F; apparently mis-
written houe P; but see l. 301.

- a shrewish wife, That on is a wikkede wif · þat wol nat be chastet ;
 Hure fere fleeth fro huere · for fere of huere tounge.
 rain dripping And yf hus hous be vnheled · and reyne [on] hus bedde,
 through a leaky He sekeþ and sekeþ · [til] he slepe drye. 302
 roof,
 and smoke that Ac when smoke and smorþre · smyt in hus eyen,
 irritates his eyes. Hit dop hym wors þan hus wyf · oper wete to slepe.
 For þorw smoke and smorþre · smertep hus syghte,
 Tyl he be bler-eyed oper blynde · and þe borre in hus
 prote, 306
- 320 Koweþ and corseþ · þat crist 3yue hym sorwe
 That sholde brynge yn bettere wode · oper blowe til hit
 brente. 308
- The scolding wife The wif is oure wikkede fleshe · [þat] wol nat be chastet,
 is the frailty of For kynde clyueþ on hym euere · to contrarie þe soule.
 our flesh; And thauh he falle, he fynt skyles · þat frelete hit made.
 And þat is lyghtliche for-3yue · and for-3ute boþe 313
 To man, þat mercy askeþ · and amende þenkeþ.
- the dripping rain Ac þe reyn þat reyneþ · þer we reste sholde,
 is like sicknesses; Beop syknesses and oper sorwes · þat we suffren [ofte],

299. *on*] IT *om.* *chasted* EMG] *chastede* P; *chastied* T; I-*chasted* F; *chastised* I.

300. *fleeth*] *fli* M. *fro*] I *om.* *fro* *huere*] hire fro T; þan her fro F.

301. *vnheled*] *vnhelede* P. *reyne* EFTG] *regne* M; *ryne* PI; *but see* l. 315. [*on* EMIFTG] in P. *bedde*] *hed* M.

302. *He*] þan he F. [*til* IFTG] *er* P; or E. *til he*] *forte* M.

303. *Ac*] And MF. *smorþre*] *smorþur* F; *smore* M; *smolder* IT; (*and in* l. 305). *smyt in*] *smertep* E. *eyen*] *eize* T; *eye* G.

304. *wete*] *whete* P. *to*] for to FT.

305. *For*] T *om.* *hus*] so his F.

306. *be*] I *om.* *bler-eyed* M] *blereyde* P; *blereiþed* T; *blered* IF; *blered, altered to blereid* E. *oper*] And M. *and*] or M. *borre*] *burre* IFT.

307. *Koweþ*] *Kowheþ* EG; *Coueth*

I; *Couheþ* M; *Couziþ* T; þan he *cowheth* F. *þat*] *3a* (*sic*) I. *crist*] *god* G. *hym*] *hem* M.

308. *brynge*] *bryngge* P. *blowe*] *blowen* it ITG.

309. *to*] IG *om.* *vnderstonde*] *vnderstonne* P.

310. *The*] Oure M. [*þat* EMG] & F; PIT *om.* *chasted* G] *chastede* P; *ychasted* EF; *schasted* M; *chastised* I; *chastid* T; *see* l. 299.

311. *clyueþ*] *cleueþ* IMFT. *on*] of G.

312. *fynt*] *fynd* M. *skyles*] *soile* F. *þat*] G *om.*

313. G *omits.* *for-3yue—for-3ute*] *forþete* · & *forgyue* F.

314. *man*] þat man F.

315. *Ac*] IT *om.* *reyneþ* EIFT] *ryneþ* P; *regneþ* M; *rainep* G.

316. *Beop*] Is F. *syknesses*] *sike-nes* EF. *sornes*] *sorwe* F. [*ofte* MFT] *ouht* P; *out* E; *oghte* I; *oujt* G; *cf.* B-text.

As seynt paul þe apostel · in hus pistles techep, 317

Virtus in infirmitate perficitur.

2 Cor. xii. 9.

And þauh men maken · mucche deol in here angre,

And beo inpatient in here penaunces · pure reson and impatience
knowep, under sickness is
pardonable.

That þei han cause to contrarien · by kynde of here
syknesse ; 320

And lightlicheoure lorde · at here lyues ende

Haþ mercy of suche men · þat vuel may suffrye.

Ac þe smoke and þe smorþre · þat smyt in oure eyen, But the smoke is
þat is couetise and vnkyndenesse · which quencheþ like unkindness,
godes mercy. quenching mercy. 324

For vnkyndenesse is contrarie · of alle kynne reson ;

321

For þer ne is syk ne sory · ne non so mucche wrecche, There is no man
þat he ne may louye, and hym lyke · and lene of hus but can, if he will,
herte

Good wil, good worde · boþe wusshen and wylnen

Alle manere of men · mercy and for-zeuenesse, 329 love his
And louye hem yliche hym-sylf · þat hus lyf a-mende. neighbour as
himself."

Ich may no lenger lette," quap he · and lyarde he
prykede,

And wente away as þe wynde · and þer-with ich The dreamer
awakede. awakes. 332

Hic explicit passus tercius de dobet.

317. *As*] & F; I *om.* *seynt*] IT
om. *in*] þus in F. *pistles*] pistel
IMF. *Virtus*] Nam uirtus P; but
EIMFT *omit* Nam. *in*] M *om.*

318. *And*] Ac M. *men*] þat men
IFTG. *deol*] so PE; doel FT; dool
M; deel I; del G.

319. *penaunces*] penance MIF.

320. *That*] F *om.*

321. *lightliche*] holich (!) E.

322. *of*] on IFTG.

323. *smorþre*] smorthour F; smorre
M; smolder IT. *smyt*] so ETG;
smyth M; smytte I; smygt P; smyt-
eth F; see l. 303.

324. *þat*] F *om.* *and*] F *om.*

which] wich P; swich M; þat F.

325. *is*] is þe IT; in F. *of*] to FG.

kynne] kynde I; kynnes T; maner G.

326. F *omits.* *ne is*] nys IM.

327. *he*] M *om.* *louye*] loue FMT.
lene] lene or leue in the MSS.

328. *Good* EMIFTG] Goude P.
good] goud P; and good MG. *boþe*] MG *om.* *wusshen*] whusshen P.

329. *of*] IF *om.* E *omits* from
mercy to hem in l. 330.

330. *hus lyf*] is liue & IT.

332. *þe*] ITG *om.* *and*] and rith
M. *awakede*] awoke I; waknide T.

COLOPHON. *So* PG; M *omits.*
Hic] EF *om.* *Hic explicit*] IT *om.*

PASSUS XXI. (DO-BET IV.)

*Hic Incipit passus quartus de dobet.***322**The dreamer
wanders wearily,

and falls asleep.

He dreams about
Palm Sunday
(Mat. xxi.; Mk.
xi.).
The good
Samaritan,
or Piers Plow-
man, comes
riding onwards.**323**

WO-werie and wetschod · wente ich forth after,
 As a recheles renke · þat reccheþ nat of sorwe,
 And ȝeode forþ lyke a lorell · al my lyf tyme,
 Til ich wax wery of þis worlde · and wilnede efte [to]
 slepe, 4
 And lenede me til lenten · and longe tyme ich slepte.
 Of gurlen and of *gloria laus* · gretliche me dremede,
 And hōw *osanna* by org[o]ne · olde [folk] songe.
 On was semblable to þe samaritan · and somdel to peers
 plouhman, 8
 Barfot on an asse bak · bootles cam prykye,
 With-oute spores oþer spere · and sprakliche he lokede,
 As is þe kynde of a knyght · þat comeþ to be doubled,
 To geten hus gilte spores · and galoches y-co[u]ped, 12

TITLE. *So in* PMG; Incipit pas-
 sus quartus E; Incipit quartus F;
 IT om.

1. *Wo-werie*] Ful weri E; Wolle-
 werie G; *but* Wolleward IFT (*as in*
 B-text); Wellenward M. *wetschod*
 EMT] wetschode P; wete-schood F;
 watschoed I; wadsshod G.

2. *a*] G om. *recheles* EFTG]
 reccheles IM; *miswritten* richeles P.

3. *lyke*] y-like IT.

4. *wax*] so PMF; waxe I; wexe
 E; wex T; was G. *þis*] þe IG.
wilnede] leste G. [to IMFTG] PE
 om.

5. *til*] to IFT. *lenten*] lentoun
 IF; lente M.

6. *me*] i M.

7. *orgone* F] orgene IT; orgne PE;
 organ M; origene (!) G. [*folk* FTG]
 folke I; men PEM; *cf.* B-text.

8. *was*] ITG om. *plouhman*] þe
 plouȝman T.

9. *cam*] gan F. *prykye*] prike
 TG.

10. *spores*] spore MF. *and*] ac
 M; IFTG om. *sprakliche*] so PT;
 spracliche MFG; sparklich EI.

11. *a*] E om. *comeþ*] cam G.
doubed] so PE; dobbed MI; dubbed
 FG.

12. *To*] For to F. *hus*] him F;
 hise M; here IT. *gilte*] gult M;
 gilden E; gild G. *y-couped* IMFT]
 y-coped PG; ykeped E.

Then was faith in a fenestre · and cryde, "*a! filij
dauid!*"

Faith cries out,
proclaiming the
"Son of David."

As doþ an heraud of armes · when auntres comeþ to
Iustes.

Olde Iewes of ierusalem · for ioye þei songen,

Benedictus qui venit in nomine domini.

Mat. xxi. 9.

þenne ich fraynede [at] faith · "what al þat fare by-
mente,

16

And ho sholde iusten in ierusalem?" · "iesus," he seide,

Faith says that
Jesus is coming
to joust,

"And fecche þat þe feond cleymeþ · peers frut þe
plouhman."

"Ys peers in þis place?" quap ich · and he preynkte
vpon me,

"*Liberum dei arbitrium,*" quap he · "for loue hap
vndertake

20

That þis iesus of hus gentrise · shal Iouste in peers
Armes,

and will wear
Piers' coat-
armour.

In hus helme and [in] hus haberion · *humana natura* ;
þat crist be nat knowe · for *consummatus deus*,

In peeres plates þe plouhman · this prykiere shal ryde ;
For no dint shal hym dere · as *in deitate patris.*" 25

"Ho shal Iouste with iesus," quap ich · "Iewes, oþer
scrybes?"

"Nay," quap Faith, "bote þe feond · and fals dom to
deye.

He will joust
against the foul
fiend, and against

13. *Then*] And þanne IT. *a* (2)]
o T.

14. *auntres*] so PEIMG; *auntru*
F; but we should probably read
auntru, as in T; cf. B-text.

15. G omits. *ioye*] *ioie* þo F. *in*,
&c.] E om.

16. *fraynede*] *fraynnede* P. [at
IMFT] of G; PE om. *what*] þat F.
bymente] *bi-menede* M.

18. *fecche*] *fecche awei* M. *feond*]
deuel G. *cleymeþ*] *cleymed* F.

19. *preynkte*] *preunkte* E; *preynte*
MFGT; *princte* I. *vpon*] on I.

20. *quap he*] ITG om. *hap*] he
hap M. *vndertake*] *y-take* G.

21. *þis* ME] *þys* G; *þes* P; *is* IT;
F om. *of*] for FG. *gentrise* MG]
gentrice IE; *gentrye* FT; *genterise*
P.

22. *In*] G om. [*in* IMET] PFG
om. *natura*] *creatura* M.

23. *þat*] *miswritten* þa P. *knowe*]
i-knowe MIFTG. *for*] as M; T
om.

24. *plates*] so PEIMG; *platus* F;
platis T. *this*] *thes* P. *prykiere*]
prikere IT.

25. *For*] þat M. *dint*] *dryth* M;
donte or doute I. *as*] F om.

26. *oþer*] or þe M; *wheþer* G.

false doom of
death.

Deþ seith he wol for-do · and a-doun brynge 28
Al þat lyueþ oþer lokeþ · a londe and a watere.

324

Life threatens to
defeat Death,

Lyf seith þat he lyep · and haþ leyde hus lyf to wedde,
þat for al þat deþ can do · with-Inne þre dayes,
To walke and fecche fro þe feonde · peers frut þe
plouhman, 32

for ever.

And legge [hyt] þer hym lykeþ · and lucifer bynde,
And [forbete and bringe adoun] · bale [and] deþ for
euere ;

Hosea xiii. 14.

O mors, ero mors tua ! "

Pilate comes
with much
people (Mat.
xxvii. 19).

Thenne cam *pilatus* with muche people · *sedens pro*
tribunali,

To seo hou douhtliche deþ sholde do · and deme here
beyer ryght. 36

The Iuwes and þe iustices · azens *iesus* þey were,
And alle þe court cryede · '*crucifige*' lowde.

One bears false
witness against
Jesus.

Thenne put hym [forth] a pelour · by-for pilat, and
seyde,

"Thys *iesus* of oure Iuwen temple · Iapede and des-
pise, 40

To for-don hit on a day · and in þre dayes after
Edefien hit efte newe— · her he stant þat seyde hit—
And ȝut make [hit] as muche · in alle manere poyntes,

28. *for-do*] forþ M.

29. *a*] on M; o T (*twice*). *and*] or M.

30. *þat*] M *om.* *lyep*] lickth F. *leyde*—*lyf*] lif leide F.

31. *deþ*] he M. *In margin of M*—*de passione christi*.

32. *To walke*] at end of l. 31 in IT. *fecche*] to feche E.

33. [*hyt*] hit MG; it IFT; hym PE. *þer*] þere as F.

34. [*forbete*] so MI (*as in B-text*); forbite PEFTG. [*and—a-doun* MFG] adoun and brynge PET; a-downe & begge (*sic*) I. [*and MF*] PEITG *om.* *ero—tua EF*] tua ero mors P; mors tua ero M; but I has —O mors, mors tua ero, morsus; see

Vulgate.

35. *cam*] M *om.* *people*] pride F.

36. *hou—do*] þe douȝtinesse of deeth F. *deme*] deyme P. *beyer*] beiere E; beyre I; boþe MF; bopis T; beye G.

37. *iustices*] Iustice T.

38. *cryede*] þo cride F. *lowde*] lowede P; longe E.

39. [*forth* IMFTG] PE *om.* *pelour*] so PEMIFG; pilour T. *pilat*] pilatus IG.

41. *To for-don*] For to done I. *on*] in T. *a*] o G. *in*] in þe E.

42. *Edefien hit*] Edified F. *stant*—*hit*] stond hit seide M.

43. *ȝut*] I ȝit F; M *om.* [*hit* MEG] it IFT; P *om.*

Bothe as longe and as large · aloft and a-grounde, 44

And as wyde as hit euere was · this we witnessen alle."

"*Crucifige*," quap a kachepol · "he can of wicche- John xix. 15.
crafte."

"*Tolle, tolle*," quap anoþer · and toke of kene þornes,

And by-gan of a grene þorne · a garlaunde to make, 48 The crown of
thorns.

And sette hit sore [on] hus hefd · and suthe seyde in
enuye, 325

"*Aue, rabbi*," quap þat ribaud · [and] reodes shotte at
hus eyen :—

And nailede hym with þre nayles · naked on þe rode, Jesus is
crucified with
three nails,

And with a pole poyson · putten to hus lippes, 52

And [beden] hym drynke, hus deþ to lette · and hus
dayes lengthen ;

And seide, "yf he sothfast beo · he wol hym-self
helpen ;

And now, yf þow be criste · godes sone of heuene, and bidden to
come down from
the cross.

Come a-doune of þis rode · and þenne wol we leyue 56

That lyf þe louyep · and wol nat lete þe deye."

"*Consummatum est*," quap Crist · and comsede for to "IT IS
FINISHED."
John xix. 30.
sounye

Pitousliche and paal · as prison þat deyep ;

44. *aloft*] on lofte M. *a-grounde*] F om.
on grounde M.

45. *And*] MG om. *we witnessen*] we whitnessen P ; withnessep we M.

46. *of*] on M ; G om.

48. *a*] EIFG om. *of—þorne*] þer-
of M.

49. [*on* EMFTG] in P. *hefd*] hed GEM ; heed IF ; heuid T. *suthe*] F om. *in*] with F.

50. *rabbi* M] rabi PITG ; raby F. [*and* MEFTG] a P. *reodes*] reed F ; rede T. *at*] vp to IT ; in F ; on G.

51. *naked*] naken M ; faste G. *on*] vppon ITG ; to F. *þe*] a IMT.

52. *with—pole*] a pole wiþ M. *to*] vp to T ; þey to G.

53. [*beden* IMT] bed G ; bad F ; bid PE ; *cf.* putten in l. 52. *hus* (1)]

F om.

54. *seide*] seiden MF ; saiden I. *sothfast*] soththfast P ; sotil I ; sotle T. *he—hym-self*] him-selþe now he wol IT.

55. *now*] craftily T ; I om. *yf*] 3if þat F. *godes—heuene*] and criste goddes sone IFT ; crist goddes sone MG (a remarkable variation, as helping out the alliteration).

56. *þis*] þe MFT. *wol*] schal IT. *leyue*] leue EIMTG ; leuee F.

57. *lyf*] lord & lif F.

58. *sounye*] swowny E ; swowne IF ; swoone M ; swone TG.

59. *paal*] so PEG ; pale IMT ; al pale F. *as*] & (!) E. *prison*] pri-
soun dooth F ; a prison MGT. *þat*] G om.

The lord of lyf and of light · þo leyde hus eyen to-
gederes. 60

The light of day
withdraws.

The day for drede þer-of with-drow · and deork by-cam
þe sonne ;

The wal of þe temple to-cleef · euene a two peces ;
The hard roche al to-rof · and ryght derk nyght
[hit] semede ;

Dead bodies rise.

The erthe quook and quashte · as hit quyke were, 64
And dede men for þat deon · comen oute of deope
graues,

One of them tells
of the battle
between Life and
Death.

And tolden why þat tempest · so longe tyme dured.

“For a byter bataile” · þe dede bodye seyde,

“Lyf and dep in þis deorknesse · her on for-dop þat
oper, 68

Ac shal no [wyt] wite witerliche · ho shal haue þe
mastrye,

Er soneday, a-boute sonne-rysyng” · and sank with þat
til erthe.

326

Mat. xxvii. 54.]

Somme seiden he was godes sone · þat so faire deyede ;

Vere filius dei erat iste :

Some seiden, “he can of sorcerye · good is þat we
a-saye 72

Wher he be ded oper nat ded · doun er he be take.”

The two thieves.

Two þeoues þer wer · þat þoleden dep þat tyme

61. *by-cam*] bygan EG.

62. *to-cleef*] so PE ; to-clef MITG ;
cleef F. *euene*] G om. *a two*] in to
MI. *peces* EMFTG] pices P. *a—*
peces] al to-gedres I.

63. *M omits. derk*] F om. [*hit*
G] it IFT ; PE om.

64. *quook*] to-quake I ; to-quazte
T. *quashte*] quashete P (*apparently*
by mistake) ; quasshte G ; quaste E ;
quasschede F ; quakede M ; quoke I ;
quok T. *quyke were*] were quike G.

65. *deon*] deone MF ; dene ET ;
deþe I ; done G.

66. *why*] wy P. *þat*] þe I. *tyme*]
while M (*wrongly*) ; G om.

67. *For*] Al for F. *þe*] þat F.

bodye] bodies T.

68. *her—for-dop*] ere on fordo E
(*wrongly*). *her*] þat F. *þat*] here I.

69. *Ac*] F om. [*wyt* IF] wyt G ;
withg M ; whit P ; whizt E ; wy T.
wite witerliche] withturli wite M.

70. *Er*] Or M ; Ar a I ; Er a T.
a-boute] at F ; a-boute þe MIT. *and*]
he G. *sank*] schrank F. *til*] to I ;
to þe T.

71. *godes*] M om.

72. *Some*] And some IT. *of*] MF
om.

73. *Wher*] Wheþer MF. *doun*]
a-doun G. *er*] or MF.

74. *þer*] þan þere F. *þer—þat*] þo
ITG.

Vpon crois by-side crist · so was þe comune lawe.

Quikliche cam a cacchepol · and craked a-two here
legges, 76

And here armes after · of euerich of þo þeoues.

Ac þer was no boye so bolde · godes body to touche, No one breaks
For he was knyght and kynges sone · kynde for-ȝaf þat the legs of
tyme Christ.

þat no boye hadde hardinesse · hym to touche in
deyinge. 80

Ac þer cam forth a blynde knyght · with [a] kene But a blind
spere y-grounde, knight, named
Longeus,

Hihte *longeus*, as þe lettere telleþ · and longe hadde lore
hus sight.

By-fore pilat and oþer people · in þe place he houede.

Ac maugre hus meny tep · he was mad þat tyme 84

To Iouste with *iesus* · this blynde Iuwe *longeus*; jousts against
Jesus,

For alle hij were vnhardy · þat houede þer oþer stode,
To touche hym oþer to tryne hym · oþer to take hym
doun and graue hym, 87

Bote pis blynde bachelere · þat bar hym þorw þe herte; and pierces his
The blood sprang doun by þe sper · and vnsperrede þe heart.
knyghtes eyen. The blood heals
his blindness.

Tho fel þe knyght vpon knees · and cryed iesu mercy,

327

75. *crois*] þe crois MG.

76. *Quikliche—cacchepol*] A cac-
chepol of þo þeues cam I; A cacche-
pol cam T. *a-two*] on to M.

77. *And*] & eke F. *þo*] þe MG.

78. *þer*] I *om. no boye*] non M;
beorne þer F (*omitting no*).

80. *boye*] bodi MG. *no—hadde*] hadde no boy IT. *hym—touche*] to
touche him F. *in*] at his M. *deyinge*] deyinge P.

81. [*a IMT*] PEF G *om.*

82. *longeus*] longis MG. *telleþ*] seith F. *and*] G *om. lore*] so PG;
lorn MT; lost F.

83. *þe*] þys G; F *om. he*] þere he
F.

84. *Ac*] IMFTG *om. maugre*]

maugrey P; Mawgreith F; Malgre I.
mad] i-mad MF.

85. *To*] For to FT; I *om. this*]
þe FG. *Iuwe*] kniȝt T; knyth M.
longeus] longis MG; at wille F.

86. *hij were*] þei weren M; þey
were FG; were þey IT. *þer*] T *om.*
stode] stoude P.

87. *to* (2)] M *om. tryne*] so PEF;
trinen I; trine G; turne M; trien T.
to (3)] MF *om. and*] or I. *and—*
hym] in graue F; T *om.*

88. *þis*] þe M. *þat*] he M. *þorw*]
to F.

89. *sprang*] þo sprang F; ran M.
þe knyghtes] his F.

90. *fel* MFTG] feol P; felle E;
fil I. *knees*] his knes MFT.

Longeus cries
mercy of Christ.

"A-zens my wil hit was," quap he · "þat ich 3ow
wonde made!"

He syghede and seide · "sore hit me for-þynkeþ, 92
Of þe dede þat ich haue don · ich do me in 3oure
grace.

My londe and my lycame · at 3oure lykyng takeþ hit,
And haue mercy on me, ryghtful Ihesu!" [and] ryght
with þat he wepte. 95

Then Faith re-
proves the Jews
of cowardice,

Thenne gan faith foully · þe false Iewes to despisen,
And calde hem 'caytifs a-corsed' · for þis was a vil
vilanye:—

"Veniaunce is to 3ou falle · þat makede þe blynde
Beten hym þat was ded · hit was a boyes dede!"

[þus faith bi-gon to fare · wiþ þe false Iewes]— 100

"Corsede caityfs! · knyghthod was hit neuere
To bete a body ybounde · with eny briȝt wepne,
þe gree ȝut haþ he geten · for alle hus grete wondes.

saying that their
chief champion
had yielded him-
self recreant.

For 3oure champion chiualer · chief knyght of 3ow alle
3elt hym recreaunt rennyng · ryght at iesus wil. 105
For beo þis deorknesse ydo · deþ worþ venkised,

91. *A-zens*] *Aȝen* IT; *Ageyn* M;
Aȝe F. *was*] *is* T. *wonde*] *wounde*
EIMFTG.

92. *He*] *þan* he F; And IT.
syghede] *siked* E. *seide*] *to crist*
seide F.

93. *þe*] o G. *don*] i-do MT; do
IFG. *in*] hit in-to G.

94. *My*] *Boþe* my IT. *lykyng*]
wille M.

95. *ryghtful*] *myȝtful* F. [*and*
IFT] PEMG om. *ryght—þat*] *with*
þat mone F.

96. *þe*] G om. *to*] *placed before*
þe in I; F om.

97. *And*] ITG om. *calde*] *callede*
M. *caytifs a-corsed*] *cursed caitifes*
MF. *for*] M om. *vil*] *fil* (sic) EG;
MF om. *for—vilanye*] *for her vilanye*
F; for euer I (*which begins* l. 98
with For þis was a vile vilany, and
divides the lines wrongly).

98. *is—falle*] 3ow bifalle I. *falle*]
bi-falle M. *makede*] *made* ITG.

99. *hym*] a body F. *hym—ded*]
þe dede I; þe dede þat 3e dede (sic)
T. *hit*] þis I.

100. *From* M; PEIFGT omit.

101. G omits. *Corsede*] *Kene a-*
cursed F.

102. G omits. *To*] For to F.
briȝt EFT] *brighte* I; *briȝth* P; *brith*
M. *wepne*] *wepenes* I.

103. *geten*] *gete* MG; I-*gete* F.
wondes] so PG; *woundes* EMIFT.

104. *champion*] *miswritten cam-*
pion P; *but observe the alliteration.*

105. *recreaunt*] *creaunt* I. *ren-*
nyng] *remyng* MF.

106. *venkised*] so PM; y-*venkised*
G; *venkysched* E; y-*venquyst* T; y-
wenkused I. *deþ—venkised*] of deth
he is avenged F.

And 3e, lordlinges, han lost · for lyf shal haue þe
maystrie,

And 3oure fraunchise þat freo was · fallen is to þral-
dom, 108

And alle 3oure children cheorles · cheuen shulle þei "Ye shall never
neuere, thrive except by
usury."

Ne haue lordshup in lond · noþer lond tylie,

And as barayne beo · and by vsure libbe,

The whiche is lif þat oure lorde · in alle lawes
defendeþ. 112

Now beoþ 3oure goode dayes don · as daniel of 3ow
telleþ,

When crist with crois ouercam · 3oure kyngdom shal
to-cleue;

Cum uenerit sanctus sanctorum, cessabit unctio Cf. Dan. ix. 24.
uestra."

What for fere of þis ferly · and of the false Iewes, 115

Ich drow in þat deorknesse · to *descendit ad inferna*,

And þer ich seyð sothliche · *secundum scripturas*,

Out of þe west, as it were · a wenche, as me þouhte,

Cam walkynge in þe way · to helleward he lokede.

Mercy hihte þat mayde · a mylde þyng with-alle, 120

And a ful benygne burde · and buxum of speche.

Heore suster, as hit semede · cam softly walkynge

MISERICORDIA.
From the West
coast approaches
Mercy.

VERITAS.

107. 3e] 3ow M (*wrongly*). *lord-*
linges] *lordeynes* T; *lordyngus* F;
lordes M. *shal*] *wile* M.

108. *fraunchise*] *miswritten* *fraun-*
chises P. *fallen*] *y-fallen* IT. *to*
in-to I; *in* T. *þraldom*] *charldom* F.

109. *þei*] *miswritten* *þe* P; *I om.*

110. *noþer*] *ne no* ITG; *ne þe* F.
tylie] *tulye* I; *telie* M.

111. *as*] *as þe* F. *and*] *as* M.

112. *whiche*] *wiche* P. *The—lif*] *lives* F. *lawes*] *lawe* F.

113. *beoþ*] *buþ* M; *ben* I; *be* FT.
goode] *godes* F. *don*] *i-do* M; *ydon*
T; *do* F. *of*] *ofte* I.

114. *with*] *þorgh* IT; *E om.* *to-*
cleue] *be cleue* E. *Cum*] *Dum* T.

uenerit] *veniat* IG. *cessabit*] *cessat*
IT; *cesset* G.

115. *the*] *þese* F.

116. *drow*] *drow me* F; *wiþdrogh*
I; *wiþ-drouz* T; *wiþ-drow* G. *in*] *in-to* M.

117. *ich seyð*] *saw* i F.

118. *it were*] *me þouzte* T. *wenche*] *weynche* P. *me þouhte*] *it were* T.

119. *in*] *by* G. *he*] *so* PFG (*for*
hue); *heo* T; *sche* IM; *3o* E.

120. *Mercy*] *Dam mercy* F.

121. *benygne*] *miswritten* *benyngne*
P; *beynde* T. *burde*] *bierde* I; *berde*
M; *boerde* F. *of*] *of her* F.

122. *walkynge*] *after* M.

From the East
comes Truth.

Euene out of þe est · and westwarde he þouhte,
A comely creature and clene · treuthe [he] hihte. 124
For þe vertue þat here folwede · afered was he
neuere.

They wonder at
the marvellous
events.

Whan þeos maydenes metten · mercy and treuthe,
Ayþer axed of oþer · of þis grete wonder,
Of þe deone and deorknesse · and how þe day
[rowed], 128
And whiche a light and a leom · lay by-fore helle.
"Ich haue ferly of þis fare · in faith," seide treuthe,
"And am wending to wyte · what þis wonder
menep."

"Mary the
maiden,"

"Haue no meruayle þer-of," quath mercy · "murthe hit
by-toknep. 132

329
said Mercy,
"bare a child,

A mayde þat hatte Marie · and moder with-oute
felynge

Of eny kynde of creature · conceyuede þorw speche
And grace of þe holygost · waxe gret with childe,
With-oute [wommanes] wem · in-to þis worlde brouhte
hym; 136

thirty years ago.

And þat my tale is trewe · ich take god to witnesse.
Sutthen þis barn was ybore · beoþ þritty wynter
passed,

Deyed and deþ þolede · þis day a-boute mydday;

123. *est*] west (!) T. *he*] he (*for*
hue) PFG; *sche* IMT; 30 E.

124. *clene*] a clene IF. *and—*
hihte] treuthe was here name T.
[*he*] sheo P; *sche* IM; *scheo* F; 30
E; heo G; *but cf.* ll. 123, 125.

125. *here folwede*] folweth here F.
he] so PFT (*for* hue); *sche* IM; 30
E; heo G.

127. *of* (1)] IT *om.* (*as in* B-
text).

128. *deone*] doene F; dene EIT;
done G. [*rowed*] rowide T; rouede
IG; roued PE; reued M; romede
F; *but cf.* B-text.

129. *whiche*] wiche P; swich M.
a (2)] wich a P; *but* EIMFTG omit

wich; *cf.* B-text; ME *om.*

131. *to*] for to F. *menep*] bi-
menep M.

133. *hatte*] hihte F; hoteþ I;
hattiþ T. *felynge*] veling G; wailing
M; vilenye T.

134. *of*] I *om.* *þorw*] wiþ-oute (!)
G.

135. *And*] And þoru; T; þoru M.
waxe] so PI; wax EMF; wex T;
was G.

136. [*wommanes* FT] womanes M;
woman E; womman IG; women
P. *worlde*] wordle PG.

137. *is*] be M. *trewe*] trywe P.

138. *ybore*] born MT; bore G.

That is þe cause of þis eclipse · þat ouer-closeþ now þe
 sonne, 140

His death causes
 this eclipse.

In menyng þat man shal · fro meorknesse beo drawe,
 The while þis light and þis leom · shal Lucifer a-
 blende.

For patriarkes and prophetes · han prechede her-of ofte,
 That þyng þat tynt was þorw treo · treo shal hit wyne,
 And þat þat deþ down brouhte · deþ shal releue." 145

What was lost
 by a tree, a tree
 shall win back."

"That þat þou tellest," quap treupe · "is bote a tale of
 walterot!

For adam and eue · and abraham with opere,
 Patriarkes and prophetes · þat in peyne ligen, 148

Leyf hit neuere þat 3on lyght · hem a-lofte brynge,
 Ne haue hem out of helle ; · hold þy tonge, mercy,

Truth refuses
 to believe what
 Mercy says.

Hit is trufle þat þou tellest ; · ich, treuthe, wot þe sothe,
 That þyng þat ones was in helle · out comeþ hit neuere.

For iob þe parfit patriarke · repreoueþ þy sawes, 153

Quia in inferno nulla est redemptio."

Cf. Job vii. 9.

Thenne mercy ful myldeliche · mouped þese wordes,
 "þorgh experience," quap heo · "ich hope þei shulle be
 sauede. 330

For venym for-dop venym · þer vecche ich cuydence,
 That adam & eue · haue shullen bote. 157

"Venom," said
 Mercy, "destroys
 venom.

140. *That*] And þat I. *þis*] þe
 MG. *eclipse*] enclips M; clips IFTG.
þat] F om. *ouer-closeþ*] ouercloþeth
 I; ouercloside T; ouercomeþ MG.
now] MG om.

142. *leom*] lowe IT; loue G.
ablende] ableynde P; ablynde E.

144. *þyng*] IG om. *þat*] IT om.
was] T om. *þorw*] þorgh a I; wiþ
 M. *shal*] wil F.

145. *þat* (2)] IT om. *deþ* (2)] lif
 G.

146. *þat* (2)] IMTG om. *walterot*]
 so PET; waltrot F; a waltrot M;
 walter G; walteret I.

149. *Leyf*] Lef M; Leue EIT;
 Leeue F; Leoue G. *neuere*] were (!)
 T. *3on*] 3eon P; 3one I; 3onde M;
 3ynen (!) G; 3eond E; þat F. *3on*

lyght] þou list (!) T. *a-lofte*] o-loft
 T; on lofte M.

150. *haue*] heue M. *hem*] hem 3it
 F.

151. *is*] is a F; is but a M; is but
 IT. *trufle*] tryfle EFTG; triful M;
 trewful I. *treuthe*] trewely T.

152. *was*] is IFTG; comeþ M.

153. *For*] ITG om. *þy*] þe I.
repreoueþ—sawes] he proueþ þis sawe
 M.

154. *þese*] þes P.

155. *heo*] so PG; 3o E; he I; sche
 M; ho T. *quap heo*] 3it F.

156. *vecche*] so PE; fecche IMTG;
 fet F.

157—163. G omits.

157. *3*] & eke F. *shullen*] scholden
 I. *bote*] boþe (*wrongly*) M.

A dead scorpion
heals the
scorpion's sting.

This death shall
destroy death."

JUSTITIA.
"See," said
Truth, "here
comes
Righteousness
from the North."

PAX.
"And Peace from
the South," said
Mercy.

Of alle fretynge venymes · þe vilest is þe scorpion ;
May no medecyne amende · þe place þer he styngþ,
Til he be ded, ydo þer-to · and þenne hit destroieþ
The first venemoste · thorgh vertu of hym-selue. 161
And so shal this deþ for-do · ich [dar] my lyf legge,
Al þat deþ and þe deuel · dude formest to eue.
Ryght as þe gylour þorw gyle · by-gylede man formest,
So shal grace þat al by-gan · make a good ende, 165
And by-gyle þe gylour · and þat is a good sleithe ;
Ars ut artem falleret."

"Now suffre we," seide treuthe · "ich seo, as me
thynkeþ,
Out of þe nyte of þe north · nat ful fer hennes, 168
Ryghtwisnesse come rennyng ; · reste we þe whyle ;
For he wot more þan we · he was er we boþe."
"That is soth," seide mercy · "and ich seo her by
southe,

Wher comeþ pees pleyinge · in pacience [y]cloped. 172
Loue heore haþ coueyted longe · leyue ich non oþer
Bote loue haue sent heore som lettere · what þis light
bymeneþ
That ouere-houeþ helle þus ; · he shal ous telle."

158. *Of*] For of IT. *fretynge*
venymes] ffrethane venym T. *vilest*
foulest M ; filist E. *is*] M om.

159. *styngþ*] stynkeþ (!) E.

160. *be*] IT om. *ydo*] and i-do M ;
& do F. *and*] M om. *hit*] he IT.
destroieþ MIF] distroyeþ T ; distrieþ
P ; destruyeþ E.

161. *venemoste*] venymoste T ;
venymeste I ; venymest M ; venymous-
heede F ; venymost þing E.

162. *for-do*] do M. [*dar* EFIT]
þar P ; schal M.

164. *Ryght*] And right IT. *as*] so
as M.

165. *al by-gan*] bigan al IT (*which*
runs better) ; but see l. 222.

166. *And*] & so F. *and*] M om.
a] I om.

168. *nyte*] so PEMFT. *nat*] þat

is (!) E. *fer* MIFTG] ferre E ; feer P.

169. *Ryghtwisnesse*] Rightwisnesse
IEFT ; Rythwisnesse PM ; cf. l. 177.
come] comeþ M. *þe*] a M ; þere T.
whyte] wyle P ; whiles I.

170. *he*] so PIFTG ; 3o E ; sche M
(*twice*) ; but note that he *here* = hue
= she ; cf. l. 178. *er*] er þan P (but
EIMFTG omit þan) ; or EIF.

171. *and*] G om. *ich*] T om.

172. *ycloped* EMITG] cloped PF.

173. *heore*—*coueyted*] haþ y-co-
ueyted hire I ; hadde coueitid hire T.
leyue] & now leue F.

174. *haue*—*heore*] hure haþ i-sent
M. *what*] þat M. *bymeneþ*] brenneþ
M.

175. *he*] so PIFTG ; 3o E ; sche M ;
observe that he = hue, as above.
ous] vs soone F. *shalous*] vs schal I.

Whenne pees, in pacience [y]cloþed · aproched ayþer
oþer, 176

Ryghtwisnesse reuerencede pees · in heore riche Righteousness
cloþinge, greets Peace.

And prayede pees to tellen huere · to what place he
wolde,

In heore gay garnemens · wham he gladie þouhte? 331

“My wil is to wende,” quap Pees · “and wel-come Peace says she
hem alle, 180 is come to
welcome all
the redeemed
souls.

þat meny day myghte ich nat seo · for meorknesse of
synne.

Adam and eue · and oþer mo in helle,

Moyses and meny mo · mercy shullen synge ;

And ich shal daunce þer-to · do al-so þow, suster ! 184

For iesus iousted wel · ioie by-gynneþ to dawen ;

*Ad uesperum demorabitur fletus, & ad matu- Ps. xxix. 6
tinum leticia. (Vulg.).*

Loue þat is my lemman · suche letteres me sente,

þat mercy my suster, and ich · mankynde [shulde] “Mercy and
saue ; Peace shall save
mankind.”

And þat god haþ for-gyue · and graunted to al man-
kynde, 188

Mercy, my suster, and me · to maynprise hem alle.

And crist haþ conuerted · þe kynde of ryghtwisnesse

In-to pees and pyte · of hus pure grace.

Lo, here þe patente !” quap pees · “in pace in idipsum, Ps. iv. 9 (Vulg.).

176. *Whenne*] Wenne P. *ycloþed*
EMITG] cloþed PF. *ayþer*] here
ayþer IT.

178. *he*] heo F ; sche MI ; she T ;
30 E ; cf. l. 177. *wolde*] scholde I.

179. *In*] And I. *he*] heo FG ; sche
MI ; she T ; 30 E. *gladie*] glade
MFT.

180. E *omits.* *wende*] weynde P.
and wel-come] to gladye G.

181. *ich*] IMFTG *om.*

182. *Adam*] As adam F.

184. *al-so þow*] þow also M ; þou so
IG.

185. *For*] For þat F. *to*] I *om.*
&] T *om.* &—*leticia*] MF *om.*

186. *me*] he me MI ; heo me
TG.

187. [*shulde* M] scholde E ; shul-
len PF ; schal ITG.

188. *þat—haþ*] god hath gilt now
F. *graunted—al*] graunteth for F.
al] MG *om.*

189. *and*] & to F.

190. *crist*] þat crist I ; our crist F.
conuerted] conforted (!) E.

192. *þe*] a F.

Righteousness
rebukes her.

And þat pis dede shal dure · [*dormiam et requiescam*]."

"Rauest þou?" quap ryghtwisnesse · "oper þou art
ryght dronke ! 194

Leyuest þou þat 3on light · vnlouke myghte helle,
And saue mannes soule? · suster, wene hit neuere !
At þe begynnynge of þe worlde · god gaf þe dom hym-
selue, 197

"Adam was to
die if he ate of
the fruit."

þat adam and eue · and hus issue alle
Sholden deye doun-ryht · and dwelle in payne euere,
Yf þei touchede þe treo · and of þe frut eten. 200
Adam afterwarde · a-ȝens hus defense,
Faste fret of þat frut · and for-soke, as hit were,

332

The leel loue of oure lorde · and hus lore bope,
And folwede þat þe feonde tauhte · and hus fleshes wil,
Aȝens reson and ryghtwysnesse; · recorde pis with treupe,
That here payne is perpetuel · no preyere may hem
helpe. 206

His pain shall
be perpetual."

For-thi let hem chewe as thei chose · and chide we nat,
susteres,

For hit is a botles bale · þe byte þat þei eten."

Peace prays
that there may
be an end of the
pain.

"And ich shal preye," quap pees · "here payne mote
haue ende,

þat here wo in-to wele · wende mote atte laste. 210

193. *dure*] endure F. [*dormiam*,
§c.] from EIMFTG; P om.

194. *Rauest þou*] What rauestow
F; Rauestow I. *oper*] or elles M.
art IMFT] ert PEG. *ryght*] MG om.

195. *Leyuest*] Leuest EITG; Wen-
est M. *þou*] M om. *Leyuest þou*]
Leuestow F. *þat*] þat þe PE; but
IMFTG omit þe. *3on*] ȝende (sic) E;
3ondur F; ȝoure G.

196. *And*] & also F. *wene*] lef M.
198. *eue*] eue also F. *hus—alle*]
al his yssue EITG; al heore issue
aftur M; al her yssue F.

199. *Sholden*] Schal I. *payne*]
pyne FG. *euere*] for euere M.

200. *Yf*] ȝif þat FT; If þat I.
þe (1)] þat ITG; a F. *þe frut*] þat
fryut T. *eten*] ȝeten M. *of—eten*]

tasted of þe froyt F.

201. *Adam*] & ȝit adam F.

202. *Faste*] He G; IT om. *þat*]
þe IG.

203. *leel*] ITG om. *hus*] of his G.

204. *hus*] þe M. *fleshes*] miswrit-
ten sheshes P.

205. *and*] i I. *recorde*] i recorde
M. *þis*] it I.

207. *For-thi*] For-ghi M; For G;
F om. *chewe*] cheue IM; schewe E.

208. *hit*] his M. *a*] ITG om.
byte] bitte I. *eten*] ȝeten M.

209. *quap*] seide F. *ende*] an
ende P; but EIMFTG omit an.

210. *þat*] And þat EIFT. *wende*
mote] mote wende ITG; wende F.
atte EG] at þe IMFT; atte þe P.

For hadde þei wist of no wo · wele hadde þei nat
knowe;

For wot no [wight] what wele is · þat neuere wo
suffrede, 212

Ne what is hot hunger · þat hadde neuere defaute.

Ho couþe kyndeliche · with colour discriue,

Yf alle þe worlde were whit · oþer swan-whit alle
þynges?

† Who could
paint things in
their natural
colours, if all
things in the
world were
white?

Yf no nyght [ne] were · no man, as ich leyue, 216

Sholde wite witerly · what day were to mene

Ne hadde god suffred of som · oþer þan hym-selue,

He hadde nat wist wyterly · wheþer deþ wer soure
oþer sweyte.

For sholde neuere right riche man · þat lyueþ in reste
and hele 220

Ywyte what wo is · ne were þe deþ of kynde.

So god þat al by-gan · of hus good wil

By-cam man of a mayde · mankynde to saue,

And suffrede to be solde · to seo þe sorwe of
deyyng, 224

“For God became
man, to know
the sorrow of
death.

The whiche vnknytte[þ] alle care · and comsyng is of
reste.

211. *knowe*] i-knowe M; knowen I.

212. *wot*—*wight*] no wight wot
IT. [*wight* IFT] wyzt G; withg M;
whit P. *what*] wat P. *neuere wo*
wo neuere E.

213. *Ne*] And T. *what*] wat P.
hadde neuere] neuere hadde MF.

214. *Ho*] For ho F. *with*] wiþ
T; wit (*for with*) P; with (*altered*
to whit E; white IF; whyzt G; whijt
M. (*But with seems the true reading,*
white being wrongly borrowed from
the next line.)

215. *Yf*] Hif P; *but see* l. 216.
were] where P. *oþer*—*whit*] as swan
in M.

216. *Yf*] For 3if F. *no nyght*] ne
myzte (!) T. [*ne* ITG] PEMF om.;
cf. B-text. *as*] ITG om.

217. I omits *from what to wyterly*

in l. 219. *wite*] i-wite M. *witerly*
whiterly P; *see* l. 218. *were*] is T.

218. *god*] M om. *suffred*] suffrede
P; i-suffred MT.

219. *wist*] i-wist M. *wheþer*
weþer PE; wher MIG. *wer*] is T.

220. *right*] F om. *hele*] in hele I.

221. *what*] what þat F. *þe*] T
om.

222. *al by-gan*] bigan al IT.

223. *mankynde*] mankyne M.

224. *to* (1)] for to F. *þe*] G om.

225. *whiche*] wiche P. *vnknytteþ*
vnknettþ T; vnknyzteth (*sic*) I;
vnknette M; vnknyt EF; vnknytte
P; vn-knitte G; *perhaps vnknyt is*
best, but this is the contracted form
of vnknytteþ, so that it is much the
same; cf. B-text. *and*] G om. *is of*
of his T.

For til moreyne mete with ous · ich may hit wel a-
vowe,

Ne wot no wight, as ich wene · what is ynowh to
mene.

God suffered
Adam to know
sorrow,

For-thi god of hus goodnesse · þe furst man adam, 228
He sette hym in solace furst · and in souerayne murthe,
And sutthe suffrede hym to synege · sorwe to fele,

333

To wite þer-þorw what wele was · and kyndeliche to
knowe.

and afterwards
took Adam's
nature.

And after aunterede god hym-self · and tok adams
kynde, 232

To wite what he hadde suffred · in [þre] sondry places,
Boþe in heuene and in erthe; · and now to helle he
þenkeþ,

To wite what alle wo is · þat wot of alle ioye; 235
Omnia probate; quod bonum est tenete.

Man's sin and
folly shall teach
him what bliss
is."

So shal hit fare by þis folke · here folie and here synne
Shal lere hem what loue is · and lisse with-outen ende.
For wot no wight what werre is · þer as pees regneþ,
Ne what [is] witerliche wele · til wele-a-way hym teche."

Then appeared
one named Book,

Thenne was þer a wight · with two brode eyen, 240
Book hihte þat beau-pere · a bold man of speche.

"By godes body," quap þis book · "ich wole bere
wyttnesse,

226. *mete*] mette ETG. *avowe*] afowe E.

227. *wight*] wigt FT; whight P; whigt E; withg M; wrecche G.

228. *For-thi*] For M. *goodnesse*] goudnesse P. *furst man*] forme fadur F.

229. *He*] FT om.

230. *suffrede*] he suffride T. *synege*] so PF; sinege G; synne IMT; synny E. *to* (2)] for to F.

231. *wite*] white P. *þer-þorw*] þer-with F. *what*] wat P. IT *have*—To wyte what wele was þer-þorgh · kyndeliche (kyndenesse T) to knowe. *wele*] sorwe (!) E.

232. *aunterede god*] god aunterede

IT. *tok* MTG] toke EI; took F; touk P. *adams*] a mannus F.

233. *wite*] white P. *hadde*] haþ IT. [þre IFTG] þreo M; þe PE; see B-text. *suffred*] i-suffred M.

234. *he*] I om.

235. *alle* (1)] G om. *wot*] whot P.

238. *wight*] whight PE; withg M. *as*] þat M; weele of F; al G.

239. [is IMFTG] PE om. *witerliche*] whiterliche P. *wele-a-way*] weyleway I; weilawai MT; weylawey F.

240. *Thenne*] But þan F. *wight*] whight P; withg M. *two*] two ful F.

242. *þis* EMFTG] þes P; þe I. *wole*] wolde M.

- Tho þis barn was ybore · þer blased a sterre, 243 who tells of the
 þat alle þe wise of þe worlde · in o wit a-corde[de], star in the East.
 þat suche a barn was ybore · in bethleem þe cyte,
 þat mannes soule sholde saue · and synne destruye.
 And alle þe elemens," quap þe book · "here-of bereth
 witnesse ;
 þat he was god þat al wrouhte · þe wolkene furst 248 The *air* showed
 shewede. God's power,
 [þo] þat weren in heuene · token *stella comata*, when the comet
 And tenden hit as a torche · to reuerence hus burthe ; shone at His
 þat light folwede þe lorde · in-to þe lowe erthe. birth.
 The water witnessede þat he was god · for [he] wente 252 The *water* bare
 on hym drye ; witness, when He
 Peter þe apostel · parceyuede hus gate, walked upon it.
 And as he wente vpon þe water · wel hym knewe, and 334
 seide,
 [Lord crist, comaunde me · to come to þe on watur] ;
 ' Domine, iube me uenire ad te [super aquas.] Mat. xiv. 28.
 Loo, how þe sonne gan louke · hure light in huere 256 And now the
 selue, sun's light fails.
 When he sey hym suffry deþ · þat sonne and seo
 made !
 Lo, þe erthe for heuynesse · þat he wolde deþ suffre, The *earth* quakes.

243. *Tho*] þo þat I. *sterre*] bold
 sterre F.

244. *wise*] wies E; wizes T. þe]
 þis M. *acorde*] FG] acorde EI;
 acordeden M; accordit T; acorde P.

245. *ybore*] born M; yborne I.

246. *destruye*] so destroye F.

247. þe (1)] F om. þe (2)] þis F.
witnesse] whitnesse P.

248. þat] and I. *wolkene*] wel-
 kene MFI; welkne T; wolkenes G.
shewede] scheweden M.

249. [þo EIMTG] To P; For þo
 F. *heuene*] heuene þo F.

250. *tenden*] so PEIMFT; tendyn
 G. *hus*] þat G.

251. þe (1)] þat FG. þe (2)] þis
 M.

252. *witnessede* G] whitnesse P;
 witnesseþ ITMF. [he IMFT] god
 PEG; cf. B-text. *hym*] her F.

253. *Peter*] & seinte petur F. þe]
 M om. *hus*] wel his F. *gate*] grace
 M.

254. *vpon*] on IMFTG. *water*]
 wawe F.

255. *From* F; PEIMTG omit.
 [super aquas] from EMF; PIT om.

256. *Loo*] And lo I; And loke T.
louke] loke E; to lowke F. *in*] and
 (!) M. *huere*] him M.

257. *he*] so PEIFTG; heo (*altered*
 to he) M; *observe* he = hue = she.
 deþ] IT om.

258. deþ] IFTG om.

[Quakede] as quike þyng · and al to-quashte þe roches !
Lo, helle myghte nat holde · bote openede, þo god dep
poledede, 260

And let out symondes sones · to se hym honge on
rode,

† Luke ii. 26.

Non visurum se mortem.

Now shal lucifer leyue hit · thauh hym loþ þynke ;
For ihesus as a gyaunt · with a gyn comeþ ʒonde,
To breken and to bete a-doun · alle þat ben a-gayns
hym, 264

And to haue out alle · of hem þat hym likeþ.

Jesus shall rise
again!

And ʒut ich, book, wol beo brent · bote he arise to lyue,
And conforten al hus kyn · and out of care brynge,
And al þe Iuwene ioie · vniøynen, and vnlouken,
And bote þei reuerencen hus resurexion · and þe rode
honoure, 269

And by-leyue on a newe lawe · beo ylost lyf and soule !"

A spirit speaks
to hell.

"Suffre we," saide treuthe · "[ich] huyre and seo boþe
A spirit speke to helle · and bit vnsperre þe ʒates ; 272

Ps. xxiii. 9
(Vulg.).

*Attollite portas, principes, vestras ; & eleuamini,
porte eternas, &c."*

A voys loude in þat light · to Lucifer seide,

259. [Quakede MEIFTG] Qua-
quide P. as] as a IFGT. quashte]
quashete P ; but quasshte G ; quasshide
T ; quashed F ; miswritten quatte
M ; quasche E ; cf. l. 64. þe] M om.
260. dep] TG om. dep poledede]
deyde F.

261. Non, &c.] M om.

262. Now] And now IT. leyue]
leue IMT ; leue F ; lyue (for leyue)
PEG. leyue hit] hem leue F.

263. ʒonde MF] ʒont T ; ʒeonde
(for ʒonde) P ; ʒende (an error for
ʒonde) EI ; ʒender (for ʒonder) G.

264. alle] al PG ; but see l. 265.
þat] þo T.

265. to] forto F. alle—þat] of
helle · alle þo T.

266. bote] but ʒif M. arise] rise
M.

267. al hus] his careful F. and]
& al T.

268. vniøynen IE] vniøyenen P ;
vniøynd (wrongly) M ; vniøyne
FG.

269. bote] bote yf PG ; but EIMFT
omit yf. hus] þe M ; þis IT. resur-
exion] risyng F. þe] þat G.

271. I omits. we] we þo F ; M
om. [ich] i MFT ; we G ; and PE ;
cf. B-text. huyre—seo] se and here
F.

272. speke] spekeþ IT. bit]
bitte to I. vnsperre] oppene G.
Attollite] Tollite M. principes, &c.]
IMT om. vestras, &c.] F om. &—
&c.] G om.

273. loude] a-lowd F. seide] it
seide F.

"Princes of þis palys · prest vndo þe zates,
 For here comeþ with coroune · þe kyng of alle glorie."
 Thenne syhede satan · and seide to helle, 276
 "Suche a light a-zeins our leue · lazar hit fette ;
 Colde care and combraunce · is come to ous alle.
 Yf þis kyng [come] yn · mankynde wol he fecche,
 And leden hit þer lazar is · and lightliche me bynde.
 Patriarkes and prophetes · han parled her-of longe, 281
 þat suche a lorde and a lyght · shal leden hem alle
 hennes.

"Princes of hell,
 unbar the gates!"

335

Satan advises
 the fiends to
 keep the gates
 barred.

Ac rys vp ragamoffyn · and reche me alle þe barres
 That belial [þy bel]-syre · beot with þy damme, 284
 And ich shal lette þis lorde · and hus light stoppe ;
 Ar we þow bryghtnesse be blent · barre we þe zates.
 Cheke we and cheyne we · and eche chyne stoppe,
 þat no light leope yn · at loue ne at loupe. 288
 And þow, Astrot, hot out · and haue oute [oure] knaues,
 Coltyng and al hus kynne · oure catel to saue.
 Brynston boilaunt · brennyng out-castþ hit
 Al hot [on] here heuedes · þat entren ny þe walles. 292

† "Rise up,
 Ragamuffin, and
 give me Belial's
 bars ;

† let us stop up
 every chink.

† Astrot and
 Colting, pour out
 boiling brimstone
 on all who ap-
 proach.

274. *Princes*] *Princeps* I. *þis*] *þat* G. *palys*] *place* IT. *vndo*] *so* PEITG; *vndop* M; *vndooþ* F. *þe*] *þis* IT; *þese* F.

275. *here*] *here* he I. *coroune*] *a* crowne F.

276. *syhede*] *sizte* M; *sede* (!) E.

277. *leue*] *bileue* (*wrongly*) M.

278. *Colde*] IT *om.* *is*] *so in all.*

279. *þis*] *þes* PG. [*come* ITG] *comeþ* M; *miswritten comen* PF.

280. *hit þer*] *zet þat* T.

281. *parled*] *i-parlet* M. *longe*] *ofte* G.

283. *rys*] *aris* MITG. *ragamoffyn*] *ragamuffyn* IFT. *and*] *G om.* *reche*] *areche* IMTG. *alle*] *G om.*

284. [*þy* EIMFTG] *þe* P. *bel* IMG] *bele* T; *beel* PF. *beot*] *beet* IFG; *beut* T; *bete* E. [*þy*] *his* M.

285. *þis*] *þat* M.

286. *Ar*] *Or* E; *Er* MT. *þow*] *with* F. *barre*] *go barre* IT. *we*] *T om.*

287. *Cheke*] *so in all.* *we* (2)] *E om.* *eche*] *eche* a MIFG. *chyne*] *chene* M; *chynne* F.

288. *leope*] *lepe* IMTG; *lippe* F. *miswritten leopen* P. *ne at*] *ne zit at þe* F.

289. *And þow*] ITG *om.* *hot*] *hote* IT; *hoot* F. [*oure* IFTG] *þi* M; *PE om.*

290. *oure catel*] *þe care* (!) IT.

291. *Brynston*] *so* PE; *Brymston* F; *Brymston* GT; *bremston* M. *boilaunt*] *boyland* ET; *buylyng* FG; *Boilyng* M (*which has Boilyng* *bremston.* *brennyng*] *brennande* T. *hit*] *M om.*

292. [*on* MFTG] in PE. *heuedes*] *hedes* EMIFGT. *ny*] *to* M; *ney* E; *nyz* I; *neiz* T.

† Set the great
bows and guns,
and put Mahound
at the mangonel."

Setteþ bowes of brake · [and] brasene gones,
And sheteþ out shot ynowh · hus shultrom to blende.
Sette mahon at þe mangonel · and mulle-stones þroweþ,
With crokes and with kalketrappes · a-cloye we hem
echone ! " 296

Lucifer says that
none can prevail
against Jesus.

"Lust[en]eþ," quap lucifer · "for ich þis lord knowe,
Boþe þis lord and þis lyght · is longe gon ich knew hym.
May no deþ þis lord dere · ne no deoueles queyntise,
And wher he wole, is hus wey ; · ac war hym of þe
periles ; 300

"We must
appeal to His
justice.

Yf he reue me of my ryght · he robbep me by mastrie.
For by ryght and reson · þe renkes þat been here
Body and soule beþ myne · boþe good and ille.

He said that
Adam should
die."

For he hym-self hit seide · þat syre is of helle, 304
That adam and eue · and al hus issue
Sholden deye with deol · and here dwelle euere,
Yf [þat] þei touchede a treo · oþer toke þer-of an appel.
Thus this lorde of light · suche a lawe made, 308
And sitthe he is so leel a lorde · ich leyue þat he
wol nat

Reuen ous of oure ryght · sutthe reson hem dampned.

293. [and EIMFTG] a P.

294. G *omits.* sheteþ] schoteþ E ;
shetteþ M. hus] heore M. shultrom]
scheltrom IT ; scheltrum M ; schiltrom
E ; schelttroun F.

295. G *omits.* mahon] mahoun
MT ; mahonde I ; mahound F. M
*omits last half of l. 295, and first half
of l. 296.*

296. with] ITFG *om.* a-cloye] en-
cloye M ; & cloye IT ; gloze, *altered
to glose* (!) G. hem] G *om.*

297. Lusteneþ M] Lesteneþ I ;
Listeneth now F ; Lusteth PE ;
Lustneþ G ; Lestnīþ T.

298. is] I *om.* gon] y-go I ; a-go
MF ; go TG.

299. queyntise] pouke F.

300. wher—is] we wile wissen (!)
T. ac] but MT. periles] perile I.

301. reue] bi-reueþ M ; reuiþ T ;

robbīþ G. ryght] lyf (!) G. by]
wiþ M ; of his IT.

302. reson] by reson IT.

303. beþ] þei be F.

304. he] IT *om.* hit] M *om.* hit
seide] seide it IT. syre] seignour F.
helle] heuene IFTG.

305. hus] heore M ; her F. issue]
issue aftur M.

306. deol] so PEMF ; deole G ;
doel IT. here] þer E. euere] for
euere M.

307. Yf] & F. [þat IMET] PFG
om. a] þat ET. oþer] & FG. an
appel] any applis T.

308. this] thees P. light] lawe &
liþ F ; lif G.

309. so—a] a lele I.

310. of] al F. sutthe] whan M.
hem] hym T ; he F. dampned]
dampneþ M.

The Iuwes þat weren gentel-men · ihesu þei dispiseden, The Jews despised Jesus, and are now under tribute.
 Boþe hus lore and hus lawe · now aren þei lowe cheorles.
 As wide as þe worlde is · wonyep þer none 36

Bote vnder tribut and taillage · as tikes and cheorles.
 And þo þat by-comen cristine · by consail of þe baptist,
 Aren frankelayns and freo · þorgh fullyng þat thei toke,
 And gentel-men with ihesu · for ihesus was yfulled,
 And vp-on caluarie [on] croys · [y-crowned] kyng of Iuwes.

346
 The Christians
 are free men.

Hit by-comeþ for a kyng · to kepen and defende, 42 Jesus performed the duties of a king,
 And conquerour of hus conqueste · hus laies and hus large.

So dude ihesu þe Iuwes · he Iustifiede and tauhte hem
 The lawe of þe lykyng lyf · þat laste shal euere ; 45
 And fendede hem fro foule vueles · feueres and fluxes,
 And fro feondes þat were in hem · and false by-leyue.

þo was he ihesus of Iuwes cald · gentel prophete, 48
 And kyng of here kyngdom · and corone bar of þornes. and bare a crown of thorns.
 And þo conquered he on croys · as conquerour noble ;
 Myght no deþ hym for-do · ne adoun brynge,

þat he ne aros and regnede · and rauesshede helle ; 52 He arose, and was a conqueror.
 And þo was he conquerour called · of quyke and of dede.

For he 3af adam and eue · and oþer mo blisse,
 þat longe hadde leye by-fore · as luciferes cheorles ;

35. *þei*] we (!) I.

37. *taillage*] tailage EIM ; taliage F ; talages G.

38. *by*] þoru M ; þoru3 T.

39. *Aren*] And arn M ; Ben E. *freo*] fre men IT.

41. *And*] E om. [*on* MIF] with PET ; in G. [*y-crowned* IF] crowned EMT ; coronede P ; crowned G.

42. *and*] & to IT.

43. *conqueste*] conquestes I. *laies*] so PMIT ; lawes G ; lawus F ; lores E. *large*] leege F ; largete G.

44. *So*] And so IT. *þe*] to þe MF. *he*] M, om. *Iustifiede*] Iustefiede P ; iusticed G. *and—hem*] hem and tauhte MG.

45. *of*] & G. *þe lykyng*] IT om. ; see B-text. *laste shal*] schal lasten F.

46. *fendede*] defended M ; fenden T ; fendeþ G. *and*] & eek F. *feueres—fluxes*] fluxus and feueres M.

47. *And*] F om. *were—hem*] in hem was IT.

48. *gentel*] & gentel F.

49. *here*] eueri G.

50. *on*] on þe M. *as*] as a MG.

52. *aros*] roos F.

53—56. G omits.

54. *blisse*] her blisse F.

55. *leye*] i-leie M ; lif (!) T.

- And tok lucifer þe loþliche · þat lorde was of helle, 56
 And bond hym as he is bounde · with bondes of yren.
 Ho was hardier þan he? · hus heorte blode he shadde,
 To maken alle folk freo · þat folwen hus lawe.
- He gave His
 lieges places in
 Paradise.
- And sutthe he ʒaf largeliche · all hus leel lege 60
 Places in paradis · at here partyng hennes,
 He may beo wel cald conquerour · and þat is crist to
 mene.
- And now He
 cometh to teach
 us
- Ac þe cause whi he comeþ þus · with croys and hus
 passion,
 Ys, to wissen ous þer-with · þat when we beo tempted,
 Ther-with to fighten and fenden ous · fro fallyng in-to
 synne, 65
- that he who
 loveth joy must
 suffer wo.
- And seo by hus sorwe · þat ho so loueþ ioie,
 To penaunce and to pouerte · he mot putte hym-selue,
 And mucche wo in þis worlde · wilnen and suffren. 68
 Ac to carpe more of crist · and how he cam to þat name,
 Faithly for to speke · hus furste name was ihesus.
- His name was
 Jesus at first.
- Tho he was bore in bethleem · as þe book telleþ,
 And cam to take mankynde · kynges and aungeles 72
 Reuerencede hym ryght faire · with richesse of eorthe.
- Angels sung to
 him.
 Luke ii. 14.
 Kings offered
 Him their gifts.
- Aungeles of heuene comen · kneolede and songen,
Gloria in excelsis deo.
 Kynges comen after · kneolede and offrīde

56. *loþliche*] ladde F.
 57. *as*] and M. *bounde*] I-bounde F.

58. *Ho*] Who EMG. *shadde*] so PEMG; *schedde* FT; *schewed* I.

59. *folk*] foolk P; folkes E.

60. *ʒaf* EFG] *mismritten* ʒaue P (*but see* l. 54); *gaf* M; *ʒeueþ* I; *ʒiueþ* T. *lege*] leege F; *lyge* M; *lige* GT.

61. *at*] after M.

62. *beo wel*] wel be M. *wel cald*] called wel F; *cald wel* G.

63. *whi*] þat IT. *croys*] his cros IT. *hus*] wiþ M; F om.

64. *tempted*] i-tempted MIFG.

65. *fighten and*] E om. *fenden*]

to defende M.

66. *þat*] MI om.

67. *mot*] moste M; *miȝte* T.

68. *wilnen*] willen M.

69. *Ac*] And for F. *and*] F om.

70. *Faithly*] Faiþfulli MF.

73. *Reuerencede*] Reuerencide P; And reuerenced I. *ryght*] ful F. *richesse*] richesses MIF. *of*] on T. *eorthe*] herte G.

74. *Aungeles*] & aungelus F. *of*] out of IT. *comen*] I om. *kneolede*] kneled E; *knelide* I; *knelyng* MFG; *knelande* T. *songen*] syngyng F.

75. *after*] afturward F. *kneolede and*] & kneling F; *knelynge* & G.

Muche gold and murre · with-oute mercy askynge, 76
 Oper eny kynne catel · bote knewelechede hym souereyn
 Boþe of sand, sonne, and see · and sitthen þei wente
 In-to here kyngene kutthe · by counsail of aungeles,
 And þer was þat word fulfild · the which thou of speke ;

Omnia celestia, terrestria, flectantur in hoc Phil. ii. 10.
nomine ihesu. 80

For alle þe aungeles of heuene · at hus burthe kneolede,
 And al [þe] wit of þe worlde · was in þo þre kynges ; These Magi
 Reson and [ryghtwisnesse] · and reuthe þei offrede ; offered Him
 Where-fore and whi · wise men þat tyme, 84 reason,
 Maistres and lettred men · *magi* hem calde. righteousness,
 and ruth ;

That on kyng cam with reson · keuered vnder sense ; 348
 The secounde kyng sitthen · sothliche he offrede denoted by
 Ryghtwisnesse, vnder red gold · resonnes felawe. 88 incense,
 Gold is likned to leaute · þat laste shal euere, gold,
 And reson to ryche gold · to right and to treuthe.

The þridde kyng cam þo · and kneolede to iesu, 91
 And presentide hym with pite · aperyng by mirre ; and myrrh.
 For mirre is mercy to mene · and mylde speche of
 tonge.

Eorthliche honeste þynges · was offred þus at ones
 þorgh þre kynde kynges · kneolyng to ihesu. 95

76. *Muche*] Machel M. *Muche*—
murre] Myrre & moche golde IT.

77. *G omits. knewelechede*] knewe-
 leched E ; knewelichede P ; knowe-
 lecheden MIT ; knowlached F.

78. *sand*] land M. *sitthen*] sennes
 I ; after-ward G.

79. *Here I has lost eight leaves,*
down to xxiii. 81. *kutthe*] kup E ;
 kith FT ; coup M. *aungeles*] an
 aungel G.

80. *þat*] þe T. *which*] wich P.
the which] þat G. *terrestria*] et
 terrestria MF.

82. [*þe EMFGT*] þat P. *was*]
 F om. *þo*] þis E.

83. [*ryghtwisnesse EMF*] ryghtful-
 nesse PGT ; *but see l. 88. offrede*]
 suffreden M.

84. *Wherefore*] Werefore P ; Wher-
 fore sire F ; Where G.

85. *hem*] men hem G.

86. *keuered*] ycouerid P. *sense*]
 cense F ; sence M.

87. *he*] T om.

89. *likned FG*] licknede P ; likened
 E ; i-likened M ; yliknid T.

91. *þo*] T om.

92. *And*] F om. *with*] M om.
aperyng by] peeryng with F.

93. *to*] for to F.

94. *Eorthliche*] Erþliche EMT ;
 Erthelyche G ; Eerthlich F (*not as in*
B-text). *was*] so PEMT ; were F.
Probably was should have been kept
in B-text. at ones] to iesus M.

95. *þre*] þe F. *kynde*] kyne T.
to ihesu] at ones M ; cf. l. 94.

Jesus was not yet a king or a conqueror,] Ac for alle þese preciose presentes · oure lord [prince] ihesus 96

Was noþer kyng ne conquerour · til he comsede wexe
In þe manere of [a] man · and þat by muche sleithe,
Like a conqueror, As hit by-comeþ for a conquerour · to conne menye
He learnt many sleights, sleithes,

He wrought
miracles,

And menye wiles and wyt · þat wol be a ledere ; 100
And so dude ihesus in hus dayes · ho so dorste tellen hit.
Som tyme he suffrede · and som tyme he hidde hym,
And som tyme he fauhte faste · and fleih oper-while ;
And som tyme [he] gaf good · and grauntede hele, 104
Boþe lyf and lyme · as hym luste, he wrouhte ;
As [kynde] is of a conquerour · so comsede ihesus,
Til he hadde alle hem · þat he for bledde.

349

He turned water
into wine, and
began to DO-
WELL,

In hus Iuente þis Ihesus · at [þe] Iuwene feste 108
Turned water in-to wyn · as holy writ telleþ,
And þer by-gan god of hus grace · gretliche to dowel.
For wyn is lykned to lawe · and lyf-holynesse ;
And lawe lackede þo · for men louede nat here
enemy[s] ;

at the feast in
Cana,

And crist counsaileþ thus · and comaundeþ boþe 113
To lerede and to lewede · for to loue oure enemys.
So at þat feste furst · as ich by-fore tolde,

96. Ac] But T ; F om. þese] þes P.
[prince TFG] PEM om. lord prince]
prince lord F.

97. noþer] neuere M. wexe] to
wexe F ; to waxe T.

98. [a EMFTG] P om. by] wiþ M.
sleithe] slyþe EG ; sleizte FT.

99. a] F om. sleithes] sleiztus F ;
sleizte T ; slyþes G.

100. wiles] whiles P.

101. And] FG om. tellen hit] hit
telle MG.

102. G omits. Som] For sum F.

103. fleih] fli M. while] wile P.

104. And] G om. [he MFGT] PE
om. hele] hele boþe T.

105. Boþe] T om. hym] him-self
M. luste] list T.

106. [kynde MFGT] PE om. of
a] to G. comsede] comside þanne T.

107. alle hem] hem alle F.

108. þis EMFTG] þes P. at] T
om. [þe MF] PEGT om.

109. Turned] at end of l. 108 in T.

110. And] F om. grace] good-
nesse M. gretliche] graithely F ;
TG om. dowel] dwelle (!) T.

111. lykned] i-likened M.

112. enemys T] enemyus F ; enmys
M ; enemy PEG ; but see l. 114.

113. counsaileþ] consailede G.
comaundeþ] commaundede G.

114. G omits. To] Both to F.
for] FT om.

115. So] So þat F. at þat] atte G.
þat] þe MF.

By-gan God of hus grace · and of hus goodness [to]
do-wel ;

And þo was he cleped and cald · nat onliche crist, bote
ihesu, 117

A fauntekyn ful of wytt · *filius Marie*.

For by-fore hus moder Marie · made he þat wonder,

in the presence
of Mary.

That sheo furst and formest · sholde ferme by-leyue,

That he thorgh grace was gete · and of no gome elles.

He wrouhte þat by no wyt · bote by worde one, 122

After þe kynde þat he cam of · þer comsede he dowel.

And whenne he was woxen more · in hus modres
absence, 124

Next He wrought
many miracles,

He made lame to leepe · and ȝaf light to blynd,

And fedde with two fisshes · and with fyue loues

[Sore] a-fyngred fele folke · mo þan fyf þousand.

Thus he comfortede careful · and cauhte a grettere name,

and caught a
greater name,
viz. DO-BET.

The whiche was dobet · wher þat he wente. 129

For deue þorgh hus doynge · and dombe speke and
herde,

And alle he heled and halp · þat hym of grace askyde.

Tho he was callyd in þe contreo · of þe comune people

Then was He
called the Son of
David.

For þe dedes þat he dude · *fili david, iesus!* 133

350

For dauid was þe douhtiest · of dedus in hus tyme ;

116. *of hus* (2)] MFTG *om.*; *cf.* B-text. [to MTG] PEF *om.*

117. *And*] G *om.* *cleped* MEFT]
clipepe P; clipyd G.

118. *A*] And T; A fair F. *filius*]
& filius F.

119. *he*] was F.

120. *sheo*] sche MFT; ȝo E; heo
G. *ferme*] be ferm (!) F.

121. *was gete*] gete was F. *of*]
þurw F.

122. *by* (2)] þoru M; þurw F;
þoru; T; þurgh G.

123. *dowel*] to dowel M.

124. *whenne*] wenne P. *woxen*]
I-woxe F; waxe T; wexe G. *was*
woxen] wexede M. *modres*] modur
F; moder G; modir T.

125. *lame*] þe lame F. *to* (2)] to
þe PE; *but* MFTG *omit* þe.

126. *two* EGT] to PMF.

127. [*Sore* MFTG] So PE. *a-*
fyngred] of-hungred M. *fele*] T *om.*

128. *careful*] þe careful F. *gret-*
tere] gret M.

129. *The whiche*] Whuche name
G. *whiche*] wiche P. *dobet*] a do-
bet F.

130. *deue*] so PFGT; deue M;
defe E. *speke*] so PEMT; spook F;
spek G.

131. *he*] T *om.* *halp*] he halp F.

132. *Tho*] And þo T. *he was*] was
he M. *þe* (1)] MFGT *om.* *contreo*]
contre F; cuntre M; contreye EG;
cuntray T.

- 1 Sam. xviii. 7. The buyrdes [þo] songen · *saul interfecit mille, & david decem milia*; 135
- None was so worthy as He to be king. For-þi þe contreye þer ihesu cam · cald hym *fili david*, Nempnede hym of nazareth · and no man so worthi To beo caiser *oper* kyng · of þe kyngdom of Iuda, Ne ouer Iuwes Iustice · as ihesus [was], hem þouhte. Her-of had cayfas enuye · and *opere* Iuwes, 140
- The Jews then crucified Him, And for to do hym to deþe · day and nyght þei casten, And culled hym on croys-wyse · at caluarye, on a fryday, And sutthen buriede hus body · and beden þat men sholde 143
- and watched His body, Kepen hit fro nyght-commeres · with kyghtes y-armed, For no freonde sholde hit fecche · for prophetes hem tolde
- lest He should rise again. That þat blessed body · of buriels sholde aryse, And gon in-to galile · and gladen hus apostoles, 147
- Angels sang at His resurrection. And hus moder Marie; · thus me by-fore deuynede. The knyghtes that kepten hit · by-knewen hem-selue, þat aungeles [&] archaungeles · ar þe day spronge, Comen kneolyng · to þat corps, and songen, 'Christus rex resurgens' · and hit aros after, 152

135. [þo EMG] þanne T; so P; cf. B-text. F *has*—þe burdes seide he bar him wel · whan he beet ten þousand; *Percussit saul mille, & david decem milia*.

136. *cald*] þei calde M. *fili*] iesu fili M.

137. *Nempnede*] And nempnide T; Hy nempnide G. *no man*] nampned him (!) F.

138. *beo*] ha be F. *oper*] and M. *of*] in T. *þe*] F om.

139. *ouer*] ouere P. [*was* MFGT] PE om.; cf. B-text.

140. *opere*] othe as *opere* (!) T.

141. *deþe* EMG] deth F; diþe P; dede T. *þei*] hy G; M om.

142. *culled*] culden MF; culde G; kilden T. *on* (1)] a F; in G. *a*] T om.

145. *For*] þat M. *freonde*] body G. *For—freonde*] Freend for noon F. *hit*] him MF; hem (!) T.

146. *buriels* E] burielles MG; biriellus F; burielis T; *miswritten* buriellesse P. *of—sholde*] schulde · of biriellus F. *aryse*] rise T.

147. *and gladen*] to gladye G.

148. *thus*] so F. *me*] so PE; men MFTG.

149. *The*] þan þe F.

150. [*&* EFGT] and M; P om. *ar*] or EM; er T.

151. *þat corps*] þe crois F. *corps*] corpus E; bodi M. T *has*—Com knelyng on knes · and to þat corps sungen. *songen*] swettely songen G.

152. F *puts* christus resurgens at end of l. 150, and omits this line. *rex*] MG om.

Verrei man by-fore hem alle · and forþ with hem ȝeode.

The Iuwes preyede hem of pees · and preyede þo
knyghtes

Telle þe comune, þat þer cam · a companye of hus
aposteles, 155

351
The Jews bade
the soldiers say
His body was
stolen.

And by-wicched hem as thei woke · and a-way stelyn
hit.

Ac marie magdalene · mette [him] by þe weye,
Goynge to-ward galile · in god-hede and man-hede,
And lyues and lokynge · and heo aloud cryede, 159

But Mary
Magdalen saw
Him alive,
and proclaimed
it;

In eche companye þer heo cam · ‘*christus resurgens*.’

Thus cam hit out þat crist ouer-cam · rekeouered, and
lyuede;

Sic oportet Christum pati, & intrare gloriam Luke xxiv. 46.
suam,

For þat [þat] wommen witeþ · may nat wel be consail ! for what a woman
Peter parceyuede al pis · and porsuede after, 163 knows is no
secret.

Boþe Iames and Iohan · Ihesu to seke,

Taddee and ten mo · with thomas of ynde ;

And [as] alle þese wise wyres · weren to-gederes

His apostles
were together in
a closed house,
when Christ
came in.

In an hous al by-shutt · and here dore barred, 167

Crist cam yn, and al was closed · boþe dore and ȝates,

153. *Verrei*] Verey E; Verai M;
Verray T; Hit roos (*sic*) F.

154. *The—preyede*] þo preide þe
iewus F. þo] þe MT; to þe F.

155. *Telle*] To telle M.

156. *by-wicched* E] bi-wicchede M
GT; biwicchched F; *miswritten* by-
wocched P. *stelyn*] stelen EMGT;
þei stole F. *hit*] him M; G *om.*

157. *Ac*] But T; And F. [*him* M
FGT] hem PE.

158. *Goynge*] Goānde T. *toward*
in-to F. *and*] & in G.

159. *lyues*] lyuyng M. *And lyues*
Al alyue F. *lokynge*] lokande T.
heo] sche M; scheo F; ȝo E; he G;
T *om.* heo aloud] lowde þo scheo F.

160. *eche*] eche a MFG. heo] sche
M; scheo F; ȝo E; he GT.

161. *rekeouered*] and reouerede

M; & reoueride T. *lyuede* FEMT]
releuede G; leyuede P. *Sic oportet*
Oportebat F. *pati*] pati & resurgere
M. &—*suam*] F *om.* *gloriam suam*] MTG *om.*

162. [*pat* EMG] PFT *om.* *may*
hit may FT.

163. *Peter*] þo petur F. *al*] MG
om. *and*] he F. *porsuede*] pursued
fast F.

164. *and*] & eke F. *to*] for to F.

165. *Taddee* EM] Tadde TF; Tadee
PG. *and*] wiþ G. *with*] and G.

166. *And*] MG *om.* [*as* FMGT]
PE *om.* *nyes* FGT] *badly spelt*
weyes P; men M.

167. *here*] þe T. *barred*] i-barred
MF.

168. *yn and*] ȝut G. *was*] T *om.*
closed] cloos F. *dore*] deres M.

Thomas touched
and knew Him.

To peter and to hus aposteles · and seyde, '*pax uobis!*'
And took thomas by þe hand · and tauhte hym [to
grope] 170

And fele with hus fynGRES · hus fleshliche heorte.
Thomas touchede hit · and with hus tunge seyde,

John xx. 28.

'*Dominus meus & deus meus,*

Thow art my lord, ich by-leyue · god, lord ihesu, 173
That deydest and deþ þoledest · and deme shalt ous alle,
And now art lyuyng and lokyng · and laste shalt
euere.'

352
Christ blessed
Thomas,

Crist carpede þenne · and corteisliche seide,
'Thomas, for thou trowest this · and trewely by-leyuest
hit, 177

and those still
more who believe
without sight.

Yblessed mote þou beo · and beo shalt for euere;
And blessed moten þei beo · in body and in soule,
þat neuere shullen seo in syht · as þou seost nouthe,
And leelly by-leyuen al this · ich loue hem and blesse
hem; 181

John xx. 29.

Beati qui non uiderunt, & crediderunt.'

Then He aimed
at DO-BEST.

And when þis dede was don · dobest he þouhte,
And 3af peers power · and pardon he grauntede
To alle manere of men · mercy and for3yuenesse, 184
And 3af hym myghte to asoylye men · of alle manere
synnes,

169. *to hus*] his E; *oper* G.

170. [*to grope* EMFGT] þo grepe
P.

171. *fleshliche*] freliche T.

172. *Thomas*] Thomas þo F. *hit*
hym E. *Dominus, &c.*] *follows* l. 176
in M.

173. *art* MFT] ert PEG. *god lord*
& my god F; lord god & G.

174. *That*] T om. *deydest*] Diz-
est T. *shalt*] schal MFT.

175. *art* MF] ert PEG; art þou T.
shalt] schal MFG.

176. *þenne*] þo F.

177. T omits. *trowest*] troudest
M. *trewely*] stedefastli M. *hit*] F
om.

178. *Yblessed*] Per-for blessed
F.

180. *shullen seo*] ne schullen se E;
syen þis F. *seo*] se me T. *as*] þat
MG. *seost*] sixt it F.

181. *by-leyuen*] lyuen T. *hem* (2)]
F om.

182. *don*] i-don M; I-do F; do G.
dobest] to dobest M.

183. *and*] a M.

184. *and*] an P. *In margin of M*
—de restitucione.

185. *And 3af*] T om. *asoylye*] asoyly E; asoile MG; assoile T; soile
F. *to—men*] men to assoile TG.
synnes] of synnes T.

In couenaunt þat þei come · and kneweliched to paye

To peers pardon [þe] plouhman · *Redde quod debes.*

Mat. xviii. 28.

Thus haueþ peers power · beo hus pardon payed, 188

To bynde and vnbynde · bothe here and elleswher,

He gave His
apostles power to
bind and unbind.

And assoille of alle synnes · saue of dette one.

A-non after an hyh · vp in-to heuene

191

He ascended into
heaven.

He wente, and woneþ þere · and wol come atte laste,

And rewardy [him] right wel · þat *Reddit quod debet,*

Payeþ now parfitliche · as pure treuthe wolde. 194

And what persone payeþ hit nat · punysshenn he þenkeþ,

He shall judge all
men at Doom's-
day."

And demen [hem] at domesday · boþe quyke and dede ;

The gode to þe god-hede · and to grete ioie, 197

And wyckede to wonye · in wo with-uten ende."

Thus conscience of crist · and of þe croys carpede,

353

And consailede me to kneole þer-to · And þenne cam,

me þouhte,

200

On *spiritus paraclitus* · to peers and to hus felawes,

In liknesse of a lyght[n]ynge · a-lyghte on hem alle,

The Spirit
descends on Piers
and his fellows.

And made hem [conne] and knowe · alle kynne lan-

guages.

203

186. *kneweliched*] knowleched MT; knewleche G.

187. [þe T] PEMFG omit; but see B-text; cf. l. 360.

188. *haueþ*] so PG; haþ EMFT. *peers*] he M. *beo*] to F. *payed*] i-paied M.

189. *To*] For to F. *and*] and to M. *elleswher*] elleswer P; elles MG; ellus F; ellis T.

190. *of* (1)] men of T.

191. *after*] he sti M. *an hyh*] þan an hy F; on heiþ T. M adds—Ascendit ad celos.

192. *þere*] þere now F. *atte*] at þe MFT.

193. *And*] To M. *rewardy*] reward E; reward MFGT. [him FT] hym G; hem PEM. *þat Reddit*] & *redde* (sic) T.

194. *Payeþ*] & paith F. *now*] T om. *parfitliche*] trewly G.

195. *what*] wat P. *hit*] G om.

he] hem he E; him he T.

196. [hem EFG] hym PT; M om. *boþe—dede*] quyk & ded boþe T.

197. *þe*] FGT om. *god-hede*] god þede G.

198. *And*] þe M; G om. *enae*] eny ende G.

199. *þe*] his M; T om. *In margin of M—de immissione spiritus sancti.*

200. *consailede*] counseiledest F. *cam—þouhte*] gan y þenke G.

201. *to* (2)] FG om.

202. *liknesse*] licknesse P. *a*] FT om. *lyghtnyng*] liþtenynge F; liþt-nyng T; lith þyng M; lyghtynge PG; liþtyng E; but see B-text. *a-lyghte*] aliþte M; he aliþt F; & liþt ET.

203. *hem*] hym T. [conne EMG] kunne F; come PT. *and*] & eek F. *languages*] langage M.

- Ich wondrede what þat was · and waggede conscience,
 And was a-fered for þe lyght · for in fuyres lyknesse
Spiritus paraclitus · ouer-spradde hem alle. 206
- “This is Christ’s messenger,”
 said Conscience. Quap conscience tho, and kneolede · “this is cristes
 messenger,
 And comeþ fro þe grete god · grace is hus name.
 Kneole now,” quap conscience · “and yf þow conne synge,
 Welcome hym and worshupe hym · with ‘*veni, creator
 spiritus.*’” 210
- Grace counsels
 Piers, And ich sang þat song þo · and so dude meny hondred,
 And cryden with conscience · “help ous, god of grace !”
 Tho by-gan grace · to go with peers the plouhman, 213
 And consailede hym and conscience · the comune to
 someny—
- bestowing gifts of
 grace “For ich wolle dele to day · and diuyde grace
 To alle kynne creatures · þat can hus fif wittes ;
 Tresour to lyue by · to here lyues ende, 217
 And wepne to fight with · þat wol neuere faille.
- against the power
 of Antichrist. For antecrist and hise · shal al þe worlde greue,
 And encombry þe, conscience · bote yf crist þe helpe.
 And fele false prophetes · flaterers and glosers 221
 Shullen come, and be curatours · ouer kynges and Erles.
 Thanne shal pruyde be pope · and pryns of holychurche,
 Couetise and vnkyndenesse · cardinales hym to lede.
- For pride shall
 be pope.

204. *Ich wondrede*] Wondur had i
 F. þat] he F; it T. *waggede*] wag-
 gide on T.

205. *And*] I F. *a-fered*] a-ferede
 P; aferde E; aferd MFTG. *for* (1)]
 of E. *þe*] þat G.

207. *tho*] T om. *is*] F om.

208. *þe*] T om.

209. *conne*] canst T.

210. *hym* (1)] M om.

213. *Tho*] And þanne T.

214. *hym*] E om. (!) *someny*] so
 PEG; somene MF; sompne T.

215. *wolle*] wolde M.

216. *can hus*] so PEGT; haue his
 F; han heore M; *perhaps* kan should
have been retained in B-text.

217. *Tresour*] Tresoures G. *here*]
 oure G.

218. *fight*] warde F (*an ingenious
 suggestion*). *wol*] schal G. *In
 margin* of M—De antechristo.

219. *antecrist*] auntecrist PG (*here,
 and in* l. 225). *hise*] alle hise T.
shal—worlde] al þe world shal T.
worlde] wordle P.

220. *encombry*] encombre MEFG;
 acumbre T. *yf*] T om. *þe* (2)] G om.

221. *fele*] *follows* prophetes in T.

222. *curatours*] creatures (!) F.

223. *Thanne*] And þanne T. *pope*]
 poore (!) F. *holychurche*] holinesso
 F.

224. *hym*] hem M.

For-pi," quap grace, "ar ich go · ich wole gyue 3ou
tresour, 225

And wepne to fyghte with · whanne antecrist 3ou
assailep."

And gaf ech man a grace · to gye with hym-self,
þat ydelnesse ne encombre hem nat · ne enuye, ne
pruyde; 228

The gifts of the
Spirit;

Diuisiones graciaram sunt.

1 Cor. xii. 4.

To somme men he 3af wit · [wip] wordes to shewe,
To wyne with truthe · þat þe worlde askep,
As preostes and prechours · and prentises of lawe,
Thei to lyue leelly · by labour of tounge, 232
And by wit to wyssen opere · as grace wolde hem teche.
And somme he kende craftes · and connyng of syghte, merchandise;
With syllynge and byggyng · here by-lyue to wyne.
And somme he lerede to laboure · a londe and a watere, handicrafts;
And lyue by þat labour · a leel lyf and [a] trewe. 237
And somme he tauhte [to] tulye · to theche and to
coke,

Wit and
eloquence;

As here wit wold · when the tyme come.

And somme to dyuyne and dyuyde · nombres to kenne, mathematicis;

And [craftely] to compassen · and colours to make. 241 painting;

225. For-pi] For-whi M. wole] MFT omit hem); 3af kynde G.
schal M. tresour] tresoures G. craftes] craft T. and] with F.

226. to] for to F. assailep] assaile
syghte] sixtus FG.

227. And] He M. man a] gom T. bygg-
to gye] T om. (! with] wel F. ynge] buggyng M; byeng T. by-
lyne] bileue E; by-lif T; lijfode

228. ne (1) FGT om. encombre]

hen-combrie E. hem] him T; F om.
ne (2) neþer G.

229. To] T om. men] ET om.
[wip MEFT] PG om.

230. To] For to F. þat] as T.

231. preostes—prechours] prech-
ours & prestis T. prentises] princes
(!) M; prentis T. of] of þe T.

232. to—leelly] lelly to lyue T.
by] wip G. of] of heore M.

233. by wit] beo wys G. wolde
hem] hem wolde EMT; wol hem G.

234. kende] kende hem PE (but

235. syllynge] selliung MT. bygg-
ynge] buggyng M; byeng T. by-
lyne] bileue E; by-lif T; lijfode

MG.

236. a] on MT (twice).

237. And] To G. [a EMFGT] P
om.

238. [to MFGT] PE om. theche]
þeche E; þeche MT; miswritten
teche PF; take G. coke] so PEMT;
kooke F; loke G.

240. And—and] Somme diuine &
somme F. dyuyde] to deuyde T; M
om. to kenne] to telle M; T om.

241. And] To keruen & T. [craf-
tely F] also M; PEGT omit; but see
B-text. And—to] Some G.

- foreknowledge; And somme to seo and to seye · what sholde by-falle
Bothe of wele and of wo · and be war by-fore, 243
- astronomy; As astronomyens þorw astronomye · and philosophers
wise.
- strength to do justice; And somme to ryde and rekeuere · þat vnryghtfulliche
was wonne;
He wissede men wynnen hit aȝeyn · þorgh wyghtnesse
of handes, 246
- 355** And fecchen hit fro false men · with foleuyles lawes.
And somme he lerede to lyue · in longynge to be hennes,
In pouerte and in pacience · to preye for alle crystyne.
And alle he lerede to beo leell · and eche a craft loue
opere, 250
- Nother bost ne debat · beo among hem alle.
- "Let none be envious," said Grace. "Thauh somme be clannere þan some · ȝe seon wel,"
quaþ grace,
"That alle craft and connyng · cam of my ȝyfte. 253
- "Let none blame others. Loke þat non lacken oper · bote louye as breþeren,
And he þat most maistries can · beo myldest of berynge.
- Make conscience your king. And coroneþ conscience kyng · and makeþ craft ȝowre
stywarde,
And after craftes consail · clopeþ ȝow and fedeþ. 257
- For ich make peers plouhman · my procuratour and
my reue,

242. *and*] & somme F. *sholde*] schal M. *by-falle*] betide T.

243. *of* (2)] E *om.* *war*] i-war MTG.

244. *astronomyens*] astronomerus F; astrymyanes T.

245. *rekeuere*] to recouere T; to rikene F. *þat—was*] what was vn-
ryȝtful F. *wonne*] i-wonne M.

246. *He—aȝeyn*] And wisse aȝe &
wynne aȝe (!) F. *wynnen hit*] to
wynne G. *þorgh*] wiþ G. *wyght-
nesse*] witnesse F.

247. *foleuyles*] so PE; foleviles G;
foluyles MF; felouns T. *lawes*] lawe M.

248. *And*] G *om.* *lerede*] mis-

written lererede P (but see l. 249);
lernede M; lernide T.

250. *lerede*] lernide T. *eche a*]
eueri M; eche EG.

251. *Nother*] No T; ne no G. *ne*]
ne nō T. *debat*] baat G.

252. *clannere* E] apparently clan-
nore P; clenner FT; clenner MG.
ȝe seon] he seyþ G.

253. *cam*] it cam F; be G.

254. *lacken oper*] opur lacke F.
as] alle as F; M *om.* *breþeren* ET]
breþur F; broþrene P; breþerne M;
breþren G.

256. *ȝowre*] M *om.*

258. *plouhman*] þe plouȝman T.

And registrer to receyuen · *redde quod debes.* 259

My prowre and my ploughman · peers shal beo on My plowman
erthe; shall be Piers."

And for to tulye treuthe · a teome shal he haue."

Grace gaf to peers a teome · of foure grete oxen; 262 Grace gives Piers
four oxen,

That on was luc, a large beest · and a lough-chered,

Marc, and matheu þe þirde · myghty beestes boþe;

And Ioyned til hem on Iohan · most gentil of alle, 356
Matthew, Mark,
Luke, and John;

The prys neet of peers plough · passynge alle opere. 266

And sutthe grace of hus goodnesse · gaf peers foure and four "stots,"
stottes,

Al þat hus oxen ereden · thei to harwen after.

On hihte austyn · and ambrosie anoper, 269 Austin, Ambrose,
Gregory, and
Jerome;

Gregori the grete clerk · and Ierom þe goode.

Theose foure, the faith to teche · folwede peers teom,

And harowede in an hand-whyle · al holy scripture,

With to eythes þat thei hadden · an olde and a
newe; 273

Vetus testamentum et nouum.

And grace gaf to peers greynes · cardinales uertues, and also four
seeds, viz. the
cardinal virtues.
And sewe hit in mannes soule · and sitthen he tolde
here names. 275

260. *prower* EG] *miswritten* power
P; *but* prowre E; *prowour* F; *pro-*
uour T; *puruyour* M; *see* B-text. on]
yn G.

261. *tulye*] *telie* MT; *tilie* FG.
treuthe] *trewthe* wel F. *he*] i M.

262. *to*] MTG *om.* *of*] FTG *om.*
grete] *goode* M. In margin of M—
De caruca petri.

263. *That on*] þe toon F. on] M
om. *lough-chered*] *lough-chyrede* P;
louȝ-chered ET; *low-cherede* F; *low-*
chered MG.

264. *Marc*] And marchus T. *þirde*]
þridde MFGT.

265. *And*] He G. *Ioyned*] enioy-
nede M. *til*] to EFT. on] MF *om.*

267. *And sutthe*] þe G. *sutthe*]
E *om.* *stottes*] *stonus* (!) F; *stokkes*
(!) G.

268. *Al*] And al F. *þat*] þis T.
ereden] ere T. *thei*] for G. to
harwen] to-harewide T.

269. *ambrosie*] so PE; ambrose
MFGT. *anoper*] þat opur F.

270. *þe goode*] þat oper G

272. *whyle*] wyle PG.

273. *eythes*] so PE; eipes MF;
aithes T; ayþes G. *newe*] nywe P.
Vetus] Id est vetus TG. *Vetus, &c.*]
F *om.* E *has*—*Vetus testamentum*
was þat on · & nouum was þat oper.

274. *to*] MGT *om.* *cardinales*]
cardynal E; þe cardinal F. *uertues*]
uirtutes M.

275. *And*] He G. *sewe*] sew MG;
seuȝ T; sowe F. *hit*] hem FT; *yet*
probably hit is meant; and it should
have been retained in B-text. *soule*]
soules M. *he*] TG *om.*

PRUDENCIA.
The first is the
Spirit of
Prudence;

Spiritus prudencie · þe furste sed hihte ;
þat ho so eet þat seed · ymagenye he sholde, 277
Er he dude eny dede · deuyse wel þe ende ;
And lerede men a ladel bygge · with a long stele,
That cast for to kele a crokke · and saue þe fatte aboue.

TEMPERANCIA
the second, of
Temperance;

The secunde seed highte · *spiritus temperancie* ; 281
He þat eet of þat seed · hadde suche a kynde,
Sholde neuere mete ne myschief · make hym [to]
swelle ;

which protects
men against all
357
excesses;

Ne sholde no scornere · out of skyle hym brynge, 284
Noþer wynnynge, ne welthe · of worldliche richesse,
Wast word, ne ydelnesse · ne wyckede speche meoue.
Sholde no curiouse cloþe · come on hus rygge,
Noþer mete in hus mouthe · þat maister Iohan spicede.

FORTITUDO.
the third, the
Spirit of
Fortitude,

The þrydde seod þat peers sewe · was *spiritus fortitudi-*
nis ; 289

And ho so eet of þat seed · hardy was he euere
To suffren al þat god sente · syknesses and angres ;
Myghte no lyere with lesynges · ne loos of worldly catell
Make hym for eny mournyng · þat he ne was mury in
soule, 293

And bold of a-bydyng · busemares to suffren,

277. þat] And MG. eet MFG] et
T; eete P; ete E. þat] of þat MF.
ymagenye] ymagyne M; ymagine F
G; ymagen T; ymagened E. In
margin of E—Prudencia.

279. lerede] lereth F. a—bygge]
to bigge a ladel G. stele] stale
MF.

281. In margin of E—Temper-
ancia.

282. eet MFG] et T; eete P; ete
E. hadde] he hadde E.

283. Sholde] Schal M. [to MFT]
PEG om.

284. sholde] schal M. out—hym]
him · out of skile F. hym] G om.

285. Noþer] Ne neur FGT. of]
ne M. worldliche MFT] wordliche P;
wordeles G. richesse] richesses T;
goodus F.

286. ne (1)] of MFGT; as in B-
text. meoue] meue TG; mede F.

287. Sholde] þer scholde F. on]
to T.

288. Noþer] Ne no TG.

289. sewe] sew MFG; seuz T. In
margin of E—Fortitudo.

290. eet MFG] et T; ete PE. he]
for F; MGT om.

291. syknesses] siknesse FG; boþe
siknesse M. and] or T.

292. lyere] lizeris T. ne MFGT]
apparently no PE; but see B-text.
loos] los MG; lost EFT. worldly F]
worldlich M; wordly PG; worldis T.

293. ne was] nas T; was (!) G.

294. of] so PE; and MFGT.
busemares] busmers EG; bismares
MT; bismerus F. to] and M.

And plede with pacience · and *parce michi, domine* ;

which confers
patience ;

And keouered hym vnder consail · of caton þe wise,

Esto forti animo · cum sis dampnatus inique. 297

Dion. Cato; Dist.
ii. 14.

The furthe seed þat peers sewe · was [*spiritus iusticie*] ;

IUSTICIA.
the fourth, of
Justice,

And he þat eet of þat seed · sholde be [euere] trewe

With god, and nat a-gast · bote of gyle one.

For gyle goþ so priuely · þat good faithes oper-whyle

May nat be aspied · þorw *spiritus iusticie.* 302

Spiritus iusticie · spareþ nat to spille

which punishes
the guilty,

Hem þat beoþ gulty · and for to corecte

The kyng, and þe kyng falle · in eny þynge gulty. 305

For counteþ he no kynges wrapthe · when he in court
sytteþ

To deme as a domesman ; · adrad was he neuere,

and is afraid
neither of duke
nor of death.

Noþer of duk ne of deþ · þat he ne doþ þe lawe. 308

For present oper for preyoure · opere eny princes
letteres,

He dude equityte to alle · euene-forth hus knowynge. 358

Theese foure seedes peeres sewe · and sutthen he dude
hem harwen

With olde lawe and newe lawe · þat loue myghte wexe

The harrow is
the law.

Amonge þese foure vertues · and vices destruyen. 313

For comunliche in contreies · cammokes and weodes

Weeds are like
vices.

Fouleþ þe frut in þe felde · þer þei growen to-gederes ;

295. *plede*] *pledite* al T; *pledede*
G.

296. *keouered*] *keuere* F.

298. *sewe*] *sew* MFG; *seu* T.
[*spiritus iusticie* EMFGT] P has a
blank space. In margin of E—
Iusticia.

299. *eet* MFG] *et* T; *eete* P; *ete*
E. [*euere* M] *euene* PEGT; *but see*
B-text. *be euere*] *euermore* be F.
trewe] *trywe* P.

300. *god*] *our god* F.

301. *whyle*] *wyle* P.

302. *aspied*] *aspiede* P.

303. *spareþ*] *he spareth* F.

305. *and*] *if* F. *þe kyng*] *he* G.
þynge gulty] *agilt* T.

306. *counteþ*] *acounteþ* M. *no*] *non* M; *nouzt* T; *nat* þe G.

307. *adrad*] *drad* T.

308. *doþ*] *dede* T. *þe*] G om.

309. *present*] *presentes* MG. *oper*] *MG om.* *eny*] *for* G. *letteres*] *lettre*
F.

310. *dude*] *dooth* F. *euene-forth*] *emforth* FG.

311. *sewe*] *sew* MG; *seu* T. *he*] *TG om.*

312. *olde*] *þe olde* M. *newe*] *with*
newe P; *but* EMFGT *omit* *with*,
þat—myghte] *for loue schulde* M.

313. *and—destruyen*] *vices to dis-*
troize M. *destruyen*] *destroyede* T.

315. *þer*] *þat* M.

- And so doþ vices vertues · “and for-thi,” quap peers,
 “Harweþ alle þat conneþ kynde wit · by counsail of
 theose doctours, 317
 And tulyeþ after here techynge · þe cardinale vertues.”
 Grace bids Piers to build a barn. “Aȝeynst þat þi greynes,” quap grace · “bygynneþ to
 growe,
 Ordeyne þe an hous, peers · to herberghen in thi cornes.”
 Piers asks for wood, “By [god], grace,” quap peers · “ȝe mote gyue me
 tymber, 321
 And ordeyne þat hous · er ȝe hennes wende.”
 and receives the cross of Christ. And grace gaf hym þe croys · with þe corone of
 þornes,
 þat crist vp-on caluarie · for mankynde on peynede ;
 And of hus baptisme and blod · þat he bledde on rode
 He made a maner mortar · and mercy hit hihte. 326
 And þer-with grace by-gan · to make a good foundement,
 And watelide hit and wallyde hit · with hus peynes
 and hus passion,
 He builds the house of Unity. And of alle holy writt · he made a roof after, 329
 And cald þat hous vnite · holychurche in englishe.
 330 And whanne þis dede was don : grace deuysede
 A cart, hihte cristendome · to carien home peers sheues ;

316. *vertues*] an *vertues* PT; but EMFG omit an; cf. B-text. and] TG om. *for-thi*] for-whi M; forþ-wiþ T.

317. *alle*] it alle T. *þat conneþ*] þe comune wiþ M. *conneþ*] can F. *theose*] þe G.

318. *tulyeþ*] tilieth FG; teleþ M; telliþ T. *cardinale*] cardinales MG.

319. *þat*] TG om. *þi*] þe M. *to*] for to FT. *growe*] ripen T; ripe G.

320. *in*] inne M; T om.

321. *By*] Before T. [*god* MFGT] godes PE; see B-text.

322. *ordeyne*—*hous*] þat hows ordeyne F. *er* T] or EMFG; *miswritten* her P. *ȝe*] þou E. *wende*] wennde P. *hennes wende*] wende hennus F.

323. *þe* (1)] þat M.

324. *Here S begins again. vpon*] on G. on EMSGT] one P; F om. *peynede*] so PMFS; peyned E; paynide T; pinede G.

325. *and*] in S. *bledde*] had F.

326. *made*] hadde S; had F; mad hym G. *morter*] of mortar T. and] G om.

327. *And*] G om. *þer-with*] with S. *to make*] T om. *good*] G om.

328. *watelide*] batailed F. *peynes*] peyne ST; pyn F. *hus—and*] þe peynes of M. *hus* (2)] EFG om.

329. *And*] & þo F; M om.

330. *in*] on MSTG; an F.

331. *whanne*] wanne P. *don*] idon M; I-do F. *grace*] grace þo F.

332. *hihte*] þat hiȝte MST. *carien home*] carte of T. *home*] hym (!) S.

And sutthe we han beo sesed · seuene þowsend wynter,
 And neuere was þer-aȝeyn · and now wolde by-gynne,
 He were vnwrast of hus worde · þat wisse is of
 treweþe.” 313

“That is soþ,” seide satan · “bote ich me sore doute,
 For þow gete hem with gyle · and hus gardyn breke,
 A-geyn hus loue and hus leue · on hus londe ȝeodest,
 Nat in forme of a feonde · bote in forme of an Addre,
 And entisedest eue · to ete by heore on,

Ve soli!

“True,” said
 Satan, “but thou
 didst win by
 guile.

336

Thy words to
 Eve were false.
 † Eccles. iv. 10.

And by-hihtest heore and hym · after to knowe,
 As [two] godes, with god · bope good and ille ; 320
 Thus with treison and with trecherie · þow troiledest
 hem bope,

† Thou saidst
 that she and
 Adam should be
 as two gods.”

And dudest hem breke [here] buxomnesse · þorw false
 by-heste ;

Thus haddest þou hem oute · and hyder atte laste.

Hit is nat greythly getyn · ther gyle is þe rote.” 324

“And god wol nat be by-gyled” · quaþ gobelyn, “ne
 by-Iaped ;

Goblin says their
 title is invalid.

We haue no trewe tittle to hem · for þi treison hit
 makeþ.”

“For-thi ich drede me,” quaþ þe deouel · “lest treuthe
 wol hem Fecche. Satan says,

311. *han*] hadde E. *sesed*] i-sesed
 M; *cessid* T. *han—sesed*] haue had
 sesoun (!) F.

312. *was*] was ȝit F.

313. *He were*] þen were he IT.
tremþe] miswritten treweþe P.

315. *gete*] gote F. *breke*] broke
 E.

316. *on*] in I.

317. *an Addre*] a naddere T.

318. *And*] & eke F. *entisedest*]
 enticest M. *eue*] dame eue F.

319. *by-hihtest*] hiȝtest F. *hym*]
 eke him F. *after*] afturward F.

320. [*two* ET] to (*for* two) PMFIG.
ille] euil T.

321. *with* (2)] IMFTG *om. troil-*

edest] bi-troiledest M. *om.*

322. [*here* EIMFTG] he (*for* here)
 P. *false*] þi false MF. *by-heste*]
 behestis T.

323. *Thus*] And so IT. *þou*] IT *om.*
atte] ate F; at þe MTG.

324. *Hit is*] Is hit M. *greythly*
getyn] gete greithly F. *getyn*] gete
 F; y-gete IMFG.

325. *And*] Ne M; For T. *by-*
Iaped] iaped M.

326. *We*] For we ne M. *treme*]
 triwe P. *þi*] T *om. makeþ*] made
 M; makede G.

327. *For-thi*] For-whi M. *þe*] a
 F. *hem*] hym E.

† "God hath
beguiled us
in return."

And as þow by-gyledest godes ymage · in goynge of an
addre, 328

† Goblin says,
"I have tempted
Jesus in vain."

So hap god by-gyled ous alle · in goynge of a wye."

"For god hap go," quap gobelyn · "in a gome lyknesse
This þritty wynter, as ich wene · and went a-bowte and
prechede.

Ich haue asailid hym with synne · and som tyme ich
askede 332

Wher he were god oþer godes sone · he gaf me short
answere.

Thus hap he troiled · and trauailed In hus tyme

Forþ like a tydy man · this two and þritty wyntere,

† I tried to
prevent His
martyrdom.

And whenne ich seih þat [hit] was so · ich sotelide
how ich myghte 336

Lette hem þat louede hym nat · lest þei wolde hym
martrye.

I would have
lengthened His
life."

Ich wolde haue lengthed hus lyf · for ich leyuede, yf
he deyeede,

And hus soule huder come · he sholde shende ous alle.

The body, whyle hit on bones ȝede · a-boute was hit
euere 340

To lere men to beo leel · eche man to louen oþer ;

The whiche lif and lawe · be hit longe y-used,

328. *by-gyledest*] gilest FT. *ymage*] ymages I. *of*] as FT *an addre*] a naddere T.

329. *of*] as F.

330. *god*] he M. *go*] so in all but G ; y-go G. *quap*] be (!) T. *a*] I om. *gome*] so PEIFG ; gomes MT.

331. *wene*] leue M. *and went*] he hap i-go M.

332. *asailid*] a-saied M.

333. *Wher*] Wheþer MFT. *he—answere*] and schortli he me answered M.

334, 335. *One line in IT*—þus hap he troiled forþ like (as T) a tidy man · þis tuo & þritty wynter. *troiled*] toiled M. *two EFT*] tuo I ; to PMG. *wyntere*] ȝere E.

336. *whenne*] wenne P. *þat*] EIFGT om. [*hit* MEG] it IFT ; he P.

337. *martrye*] martiry E ; martre MFG ; martir IT.

338. *lengthed*] i-lengþed M. *yf*] & F.

339. *And*] þat if I ; þat ȝif T. *he*] hit FITG. *sholde*] wolde F.

340. *whyle*] wyle P ; þe whiles T ; whiles IG. *on*] one P. *ȝede*] ȝeden P.

341. *lere*] lerne MF. *men*] T om. *eche—to*] and eche man M ; & eche a man F ; and iche man to IT.

342. *whiche*] wiche P. *y-used* E] i-vsud M ; yvsid T ; y-vsud G ; used F ; auysed (*wrongly*) I ; yusede P.

Hit shal vndon ous deoueles · and down brynge ous alle."

"Now y seo wher hus soule · comeþ seilinge hider-
wardes

344·

337
"I see His soul
sailing hither-
wards," said
Satan.

With glorie and with gret light · god hit is, ich wot wel.

Ich rede we fleo," quap þe feond · "faste alle hennes ; "Let us flee."

For us were betere nat beo · þan abyde in hus syghte.

For thi lesynge[s], lucifer · we loste furst our ioye, 348 DE MENDACIIS.
(margin of M.)

And out of heuene hider · thi prude made ous falle ;

For we [leyuede] on þy lesinges · þer losten we [oure]
blysse.

And now, for a later lesynge · þat þow lowe tyl eue,

We han lost oure lordshep · a londe and in helle ; 352

Nunc princeps huius mundi [eicietur foras]." John xii. 31.

Suppe þat satan · myssayde þus foule

Lucifer for hus lesynges · leyue ich non oþer,

Bote oure lord atte laste · lyeres here rebuke,

And wyte hem al þe wrecchednesse · þat wrouht is on
erthe. 356

† This proves
that God will
rebuke liars at
the last.

Beo yware, 3e wise clerkes · and wytty men of lawe,

þat 3e [be-leize] nat [þese lewed] men · for atte laste dauid

343. *ous deoueles*] *deuelus* dynt F. *down* EIMFT] *don* (for *doun*) P; *a-*
doun G.

344. *Now*] And now IT. *wher—*
comeþ] *his soule · come* M.

345. *With*] Whit P.

346. *we*] *miswritten* wey P.

347. *us*] vs EIFTG; *we* M; *hus* P.

348. *lesynges* IMFT] *lesynge* PEG; *see* l. 350. *lucifer*] þow *lucefer* M.

349. *prude*] *pride* EIMFT; *pryte* G; *badly spelt* *pruede* P.

350. *For*] Whan M. *we*] he (!) T. [*leyuede*] *leuede* G; *leued* EIFT; *leueden* M; *miswritten* *lyuede* P; *but see* l. 338. *on*] F *om.* [*oure* FTG] *þe* M; PE *om.*; *but see* l. 348. I *omits last half of* l. 350, *and first half of* l. 351.

351. *a*] F *om.* *lowe*] *louwe* E; *low* F.

352. *We*] Whe P. *lordshep*] *mis-*
written *lorshep* P. *a*] on M; o T;

in F. *in*] eke yn G. [*eicietur, &c.*] *from* M; PEITFG *om.*

353. *Suppe*] He seiþ T (*wrongly*). *myssayde, &c.*] þus *foule* *mysseide* · & *schenfully* *rebukede* F. *myssayde*] *misdede* G.

354. *leyue ich*] i *leue* M; *now leue* i F.

355. *Bote*] But þat F. *atte*] *ate* F; at þe MT. *here*] wol F.

356. *wyte* F] *miswritten* *wyten* P; *witen* M. *þe*] from (!) T. *wrouht is*] is i-wrount M; wroght is here ITG. *on*] in I.

357. *Beo*] Buþ M; Beth FT; Biþ G. *yware*] war FT. *wytty men*] 3e *witty* IT.

358. [*be-leize* T] *bileue* (for *bileie*) I; by-gylie PE; bi-gile MG. *þat—*
be-leize] Bigileth F. *nat*] non MG. [*þese lewed* F] þis *lewed* IT; *lewed* EMG; þeos P. *atte*] *ate* F; at þe MT.

Witnesseþ in hus wrytynge · what is lyeres mede ;

† Ps. v. 7 (Vulg.).

*Odisti omnes qui operantur iniquitatem, & perdes
omnes qui loquuntur mendacium.*

† This is a
digression.

A lytel ich ouer-lep · for lesynges sake, 360
þat ich ne segge as ich seih · suyng my teme !—

For eft þat light bad vnloûke · and lucifer answerede,

Ps. xxiii. 10
(Vulg.).

“What lord art þu?” quap lucifer ; · a voys a-loud
seyde,

“The lord of myght and of [mayn] · þat made alle
þynges. 364

“Undo these
gates.”

Duke of þis dymme place · a-non vndo þe ȝates,
That crist mowe comen In · þe kynges sone of heuene.”

The gates of
hell are broken.

And wiþ þat breþ helle brake · with alle beliales
barres ;

For eny wye oþer warde · wyde openede þe gates. 368

Mat. iv. 16.

Patriarkes and prophetes · *populus in tenebris*,

John i. 36.

Songen with seint Iohan · *ecce agnus dei !*

Lucifer loke ne myghte · so lyght him a-blente ;

And þo þat oure lord louede · with þat lyght forth
flowen. 372

Our Lord offers
soul for soul.

“Lo, me her,” quap oure lorde · “lyf and soule bothe,
For alle synful soules · to saue oure beyere ryght.

338

Christ claims his
own, saying,

Myne þei were and of me · ich may þe beter hem
cleyme.

359. *Witnesseþ*] *Whitnesseþ* P ;
Witnesse I. wrytynge] *writinges* I.
ð] MF *om. loquuntur*] so PTE ;
locuntur MFI G.

360. *ich*] þat (!) T. *ouer-lep*] *ouerlepe* IT ; *ouur-lepte* F.

361. *as*] *nouȝt* as T ; *nat* as I.
seih] *seide* F ; *si* M. *suyng*] *suwyng*
E ; *sewyng* MFT ; *suenge* G.

362. *For*] And M.

363. *art* IMFT] ert PEG. *a—*
a-loud] *vare vaire leeu* he F.

364. [*mayn* MFTG] *mayne* IE ;
man (for *main*) P.

365. *Duke*] *Dukes* IT. *dymme*] *dyuine* (!) I ; *derke* G. *vndo*] *vndop*
IT. *þe*] þis T.

366. *more*] *mote* M.

367. *brake*] *to-brac* F.

368. *wye—warde*] *warde oþur wy*
F. *openede*] *open* IT G.

369. *Patriarkes*] *þo patriarkus*
F. *populus*] *with populus* F ; and
populus G.

372. *And*] Al E. *louede*] *loueþ* M.
forth] *placed before* with *in* I ; T
om. flowen] so PEIG ; *folwen* F ;
folewen M ; *folewide* T.

374. *synful*] *cristene* M. *beyere*] *beiere* E ; *beie* M ; *bothes* F ; *boþe*
IG ; *boþis* T.

375. *þe*] *miswritten* þei P. *beter*] *bet* EF.

Al-pauh reson recorde · and ryght of my-selue, 376
 That yf þei eten þe appel · alle sholden deye,
 Ich by-hihte hem nat here · helle for euere.
 For þe dedliche synne þat þei duden · thi deceite hit
 made ;

With gyle þow hem gete · ageyn alle reson. 380
 For in my paleis paradis · in persone of an Addere
 Falsliche [þou] fettest þere · þat me by-fel to loke,
 By-glosedest hem and [by]gyledest hem · and my
 gardyn breke,

"Thou, Satan,
 didst win man-
 kind by guile.

A-zeyns my loue and my leyue ; · þe olde lawe
 techeth, 384

þat gylours [be] by-gylid · and in here gyle falle.

And ho so hitteþ out a mannes eye · oþer elles hus
 for-teþ, † The law
 requires an eye
 for an eye.

Oþere eny manere membre · maymeþ oþer hurteþ,
 The same [sore] shal he haue · þat enye so smyteþ ; 388

Dentem pro dente, & oculum pro oculo.

Exod. xxi. 24.

So lyf shal [lyf] lete · þer lyf haþ lyf anyented,
 So þat lyf quyte lyf · þe olde lawe hit askeþ.

Ergo, soule shal soule quyte · and synne to synne
 wende, I offer soul for
 soul,

And al þat man mys-dude · ich, man, to amenden
 hit ; 392

And þat þat deþ for-dude · [my] deþ to releuen, death for death.

376. *recorde*] recordede I.

377. *sholden*] shuln þei IT.

378. *by-hihte*] byhete I; by-het G.
helle] helle to haue F.

379. *For*] F *om.* þe] þat MG.

381. *For*] G *om.* *an Addere*] a
 neddere I; a naddere T.

382. [þou FG] P *EMIT om.*; but
 see B-text. *by-fel*] by-feol P.

383. *By-glosedest*] Glosedest F.
byggyledest] by-gyledist G; bigyledest
 MIFT; gyledest PE.

384. *leyue*] leue EIMFTG.

385. [be EFTG] ben M; beþ P; I
om.; cf. B-text.

386. *hitteþ*] hit IFTG.

388. [sore EIF] sor MT; mis-
 written for P; so G. &] TG *om.*
smyteþ] herteþ M.

389. [lyf EIFTG] lijf M; P *om.*
 þer] þat M. haþ] haue F. lyf (4)]
 M *om.* *anyented*] anynted E; en-
 ented M; avenked F; anentid G;
 amyendid (!) I.

390. *quyte*] schal quite M. *hit*] M *om.*

391. *wende*] wynde ET.

393. þat (2)] IT *om.* [my ITG]
 ich PE; i MF; cf. B-text. to] ys
 to G.

† Cf. Heb. ii. 14. Boþe aquyte and aquykye · þat was aqueynt þorw
synne ;

And gyle be by-gyled · thorgh grace atte laste,

† Cf. Ps. vii. 16. *Ars ut artem falleret, &c.*

So leyf hit nat, lucifer · þat ich a-zeyns þe lawe 396

Fecche here eny synful soule · souereynliche by
maistrie ;

Bot þorgh ryght and reson · raunson here myne lige ;

Mat. v. 17.

Non ueni soluere legem, sed adimplere.

339

So þat þorgh gyle was geten · þorwe grace is now
y-wonne.

And as adam and alle · þorw a treo deyden, 400

Adam and alle þorgh a treo · shal turne to lyue.

Guile is beguiled.

And now by-gynneþ thi gyle · a-gayn on þe turne,

And my grace to growe · ay wydder and wydder.

The biternesse þat þow hast browe · now brouk hit þy-
self ; 404

Drink that which
thou hast brewed.

That art doctour of deþ · drynk þat þow madest !

For ich þat am lord of lyf · loue is my drynke,

And for þat drynke to-daye · deyede, as hit semede ;

Ac ich wol drynke of no dich · ne of no deop cleregie,

Bote of comune coppes · alle cristene soules ; 409

Ac þi drynke worth deþ · and deop helle þy bolle.

I thirst still ;

Ich fauht so, me fursteþ ȝut · for mannes soule sake ;

† John xix. 28.

Sicio.

394. *Boþe*] And boþe IT. *aquykye*] quikie MF. *aquyte* — *aquykye*] quykke and quyte IT. *was aqueynt*] queynte was IT. *þorw*] with F.

395. *be*] I om. *atte* EG] ate F ; at þe MIT ; *miswritten* atte þe P. *Ars, &c.*] M om.

396. *leyf*] leue EIMFTG. *þat ich*] IT om. *ich*] M om. *lawe*] lawe i fecche IT.

397. *Fecche*] Fecche i M ; in l. 396 in IT. *by*] wiþ M.

398. *reson*] þorgh resoun IT. *lige*] so PMTG ; liege I ; leege F ; leche (!) E.

399. *þorgh*] wiþ I. *now*] M om.

400. *And as*] So þat M.

402. *thi*] þe ET. *on þe*] on þe to IT ; þe to M.

403. *to*] for to F. *ay*] F om.

404. *The*] þat M. *hit*] þou hit G.

405. *art* IMFT] ert PEG.

406. *þat am*] am þat MF.

407. *And*] I om. *deyede*] I deyede IT. *semede*] semeþ E.

408. *dich*] disshe IT ; dik M ; deþ (!) G. *no* (2)] I om.

411. *Ich fauht*] In faip M. *so*] þat F. *fursteþ*] þresteþ M ; þorstiþ G. *sake*] I om. *Sicio*] IM om.

- May no pyement ne pomade · ne presiouſe drynkes but I drink not yet.
 Moyste me to þe fulle · ne my þurst slake, 413
 Til the vendage valle · in þe vale of Iosaphat,
 And drynke ryght rype most · *Resurreccio mortuorum.* Joel iii. 12, 13.
 Then shal ich come as a kyng · with coroune and with
 angeles, 416
 And haue out of helle · alle menne soules.
 Feondes and feondekenes · by-for me shullen stande,
 And be at my byddying · at blysse oþer at payne. 419 **340**
 Ac to beo merciablen to man · þenne my kynde askeþ; Fiends and fiendkins shall obey me.
 For we beoþ breþeren of blod · ac nat in baptisme
 alle.
 Ac alle þat beoþ myn half-breþeren · in blod and in My brethren shall not be condemned.
 baptisme 422
 Shal neuere eft in helle come · beo he ones oute;
Tibi soli peccavi, & malum contra te feci, &c. Ps. l. 6 (Vulg.).
 Hit is nat vsed on erthe · to hongen eny felones
 Ofter þan ones · þauh þei weren treitours. 425
 And yf þe kyng of þe kyngdom · come in þe tyme A king can pardon a felon.
 Ther a þeof þoly sholde · deþ oþer Iuwise,
 Lawe wolde he ȝeue hym lyf · and he lokede on hym.
 And ich, þat am kynges ouer kynges · shal come suche I, the King of kings,
 [a] tyme, 429

412. *ne pomade*] G *om.* *ne* (2)]
 ne oþur F. M *has*—Mai no precious
 piment · pomadre ne no drynkes.

413. *þurst*] prest M; brist F; furst
 T. *ne—þurst*] my prest neiþer M.
slake] slokke G.

414. *vendage*] ventage IMT. *valle*]
 falle EIMFTG. *in*] on G.

416. *Then*] And þan IT. *ich*] E
om. a] IT *om.*

419. *at*] in F (last 2 times).

420. *þenne*] þat T.

421. *beoþ*] F *om.* *breþeren*]
 broþerne P. *of*] of o IG. *ac*] but
 MT. *in*] in o G.

422. *þat*] þo T. *half*] halue M;
 hole IG; holy T; owne F; see l. 438.
breþeren] broþerne P.

423. *eft*] follows helle in IT. *beo*
he] ben þei M. *&—feci*] F *om.*
contra] coram MIGT.

424. *nat*] M *om.* *vsed*] i-vs'd M.
to—felones] any feloun to hange F.

425. *þan*] þan it were F. *weren*
treitours] tretours were F.

426. *þe* (2)] F *om.*

427. *þoly*] þole MT. *oþer*] oþer
 oþere T. *Iuwise* EM] better than
 Iuwes P; iewise IG; Iewesse (!) F;
 Iewis T.

428. *he* (1)] E *om.* *ȝeue*] ȝaf T;
 ȝof F. *and*] if F.

429. *kynges*] a kynges P; but
 EIMFTG omit a. *ouer*] of MF. [a
 IMFTG] PE *om.*

can pardon
whom I will.

Ther þat dom to þe deop · [dampneþ] alle wyckede ;
And yf lawe wol ich loke on hem · hit lyth in my
grace, 431

Wheþer þei deye oþer deye nat · dude þei neuere so
; ille.

Be hit eny þyng [dere abouȝt] · þe boldness of here
synne, 433

Ich may do mercy of my ryghtwisnesse · and alle myne
wordes trewe.

No ill shall go
unpunished;

For holy writ wole þat ich be awreke · of hem þat
wrouhte ille ;

(Cf. Pass. v. 140.)

*As, nullum malum impunitum, & nullum bonum
irremuneratum.*

And so of alle wyckede · ich wolle here take veniaunce,
And ȝut my kynde, in my kene yre · shal contrarie
my wil— 437

† Ps. xxxvii. 1
(Vulg.).

*Domine, ne in furore tuo arguas me, neque in
ira tua corripas me—*

341

yet mercy shall
be shown.

To beo merciablen to menye · of my half-breþeren.

For blod may seo blood · boþe a-purst and a-cale,

Ac blod may nat seo blod · blede, bote hym rewe. 440

2 Cor. xii. 4.

*Audiui archana verba, que non licet homini
loqui.*

Ac my ryghtwisnesse and my right · shal regnen in
helle,

And mercy and mankynde · by-for me in heuene.

430. [dampneþ EIMFTG] dampned euele T. *As*] FT om. & nullum]
P. nec ullum F.

431. *And*] F om. *lawe wol*] G om.
ich] T om. *hem*] him T.

432. *deye*] deyde G [twice]. *dude*]
do M. *þei*] hy E. *dude þei*] ha þei
do F.

433. [dere abouȝt MFE] dure y-
bouht P; aboght I; abouȝt TG.

434. *of*] on M. *trewe*] trywe P;
turne M.

435. *For*] F om. *be*] F om.
awreke] wreke IFTG; wroken M.
of] on MF. *wrouhte*] don M. *ille*]

436. *of*] I om.

437. *And*] Ac I; But T. *con-
trarie*] constreyne FITG; costreyne
M. *neque, &c.*] IMFTG om.

438. *my*] menye I. *breþeren*] bro-
þerne P.

439. *boþe*] M om. *a-purst*] a-prest
M; afurst IT.

440. *blede*] I om.

441. *ryghtwisnesse*] riȝtwisnesses
F. *my* (2)] IMFTG om.

For ich were an vnkynde kynge · bote ich my kyn I were unnatural
holpe, 443 not to help my
own kin.

And nameliche at suche a neode · þat neodes help
askep,

Non intres in iudicium cum servo tuo, domine. Ps. cxlii. 2
Thus by lawe," quap oure lord · "lede ich wol fro (Vulg.).
hennes 445 I will release
those that I
love."

Alle þat ich louye · and leyuede in my comynge.

Ac for þe lesynge þat þow, lucifer · lowe til eue,

þow shalt abygge bitere," quap god · and bond hym Christ binds
with cheynes. 448 Satan.

Astrot and alle opere · hudden hem in heornes, Ashtaroth and
Thei dorst nat loken on oure lorde · þe leste of hem others hide
alle, themselves.

Bote [leten] hym leden forth which hym luste · and
leue whiche hym lykede.

Mony hundrede of aungelis · harpeden þo and songen, The angels harp
and sing.

Culpat caro, purgat caro, regnat deus dei caro.

Thenne pipede pees · of poetes a note, 453

"*Clarior est solito · post maxima nebula phebus* ;

Post inimicitias · clarior est et amor. 343

After sharpest shoures," quap pees · "most sheene is þe The sun is
sonne ; brightest after
456 sharp showers.

Ys no weder warmer · þan after watery cloudes,

443. *kyn*] kynde M. *holpe* EIMF G.
T] *miswritten* helpe (*for* holpe) P ;
wolde helpe G.

444. *at*] in F. *neodes*] nede M. *domine*] IMTG om.

445. *by*] i F. *fro*] M om.

446. *Alle*] þo ledis T. *þat ich*] þo þat i MF. *in*] on F.

447. *Ac*] & F. *lucifer love*] lowe
lucifer MIFTG. *til*] to FT.

448. *abygge*] aby IFTG ; a-bugge
M. *bitere*] bitterly T. *hym*] I om.
cheynes] a chayne G.

449. *Astrot* EIMTG] Astrott P ;
Astarot F. *alle*] þese F. *hudden*] so
PE ; hidden IMFT. *heornes*] so
PF ; hernes EMT ; hirnes I ; hernys

450. *on*] in E.

451. [*leten* IE] leet F ; let TG ;
leot P ; lette M. *which*] wich P ; as
F. *hym luste*] I om. *whiche*] wiche
PM ; such as F. *lykede*] likeþ M.

452. *Mony*] Many an F. *regnat—*
caro] F om. *deus—caro*] TG om.

453. *Thenne*] þo M. *of*] & (!) F.
of—a] of a poete a G ; a poetes I.

454. *post—phebus*] IMFT om.

455. *clarior—et*] F om.

456. *sharpest*] scharpe E. *sharpest*
shoures] schourus sharpest F. *most*
sheene] warmest M.

457. *Ys*] *Per* is F.

Love is dearest
after strife.

Noþer loue leuere · ne leuere freondes, 458

þan after werre and wrake · whanne loue and pees beon
maistres.

Truth and Peace
embrace.

Was neuere werre in þis worlde · ne wykkeder enuye,
þat loue, and hym luste · to lauhynge [ne] brouhte,
[And pees þorgh pacience · alle pereles stoppede]." 462

"Treuwes," quap treuthe · "þou tellest soþ, by iesus!
Cluppe we in couenaunt · and ech of ous cusse
oper!"

"And leet no people," quap pees · "parceyue þat we
chide! 465

For impossible is no þyng · to hym þat is al-mygthy."

Righteousness
and Peace kiss
each other.

"þow seist soþ," quap ryghtwisnesse · and reuerentliche
heo custe

Pees, and pees heore · *per secula seculorum.* 468

Ps. lxxxiv. 11
(Vulg.).

*Misericordia & ueritas obuiauerunt sibi; Iusticia
& pax osculate sunt.*

Treuthe trompede þo, and song · "*Te deum laudamus.*"
And þen lutede loue · In a lowd note,

Ps. cxxii. 1
(Vulg.).

"*Ecce quam bonum & quam iocundum est, habi-
tare fratres in unum!*"

Tyl þe day dawede · these damseles daunsede,

The poet awakes, That men rang to þe resurreccioun · and with þat ich.
awakede, 472

458. Noþer] Neiþer M; Ne no I.
FTG.

459. loue—pees] pees and loue M.

460. wykkeder] wickede M.

461. lauhynge] lauzyng it T;
lawzyng hym E. [ne EFT] PMI
om.; but see B-text. G is corrupt.

462. From I; also in TG; PEMF
omit. pereles G] perelis T; mis-
written sperewes (for perelles) I.

463. Treuues] so PE; Trewes IM;
Trewis TG; Trewus now F. tellest]
tellest vs IT; seist F.

464. Cluppe] so PEMI; Clippe F
TG. cusse] kus M; kisse IFT.

465. leet] lete E; late F; let MT;
lat IG. chide] so PEMFTG; chidede

467. heo] 3o E; sche M; hire T
(wrongly); þey G. custe] kiste T;
kissede FI.

468. and—heore] treuþe & treuþe
hure G. heore] kist heere F. per]
per omnia ETG.

469. trompede] titly trumped F.
and] a M.

470. þen] louely F. lowd] long
M. note] tune T. est, &c.] MIFTG
om.

471. TyI] & til F. daunsede]
carolede IT.

472. þe] F om. and] and right
IT. awakede] waked ITG.

And kallyd kytte my wyf · and kalote my doughter, and bids his wife
 “A-rys, and go reuerence · godes resurreccioun, 474 Kitte and his
 And creop on kneos to þe croys · and cusse hit for a daughter Kalote
343
 Iuwel,

And ryghtfullokest a relyk · non riccher on erthe. to revere and
 For godes blessing body · hit bar for oure bote, kiss the cross.
 And hit a-fereþ þe feonde · for such is þe myghte,
 May no gryslliche gost · glyde þer hit shadewep !” 479

Hic explicit passus quartus et ultimus de dobet.

474. *A-rys*] Ariseth F. *go*] goþ M; gave F; go we G. *reuerence*] reuerenceþ M. *godes*] our goddus F.

475. *on—croys*] to þe cros on knes IT. *cusse*] kus M; kisse IFT; kisse we G.

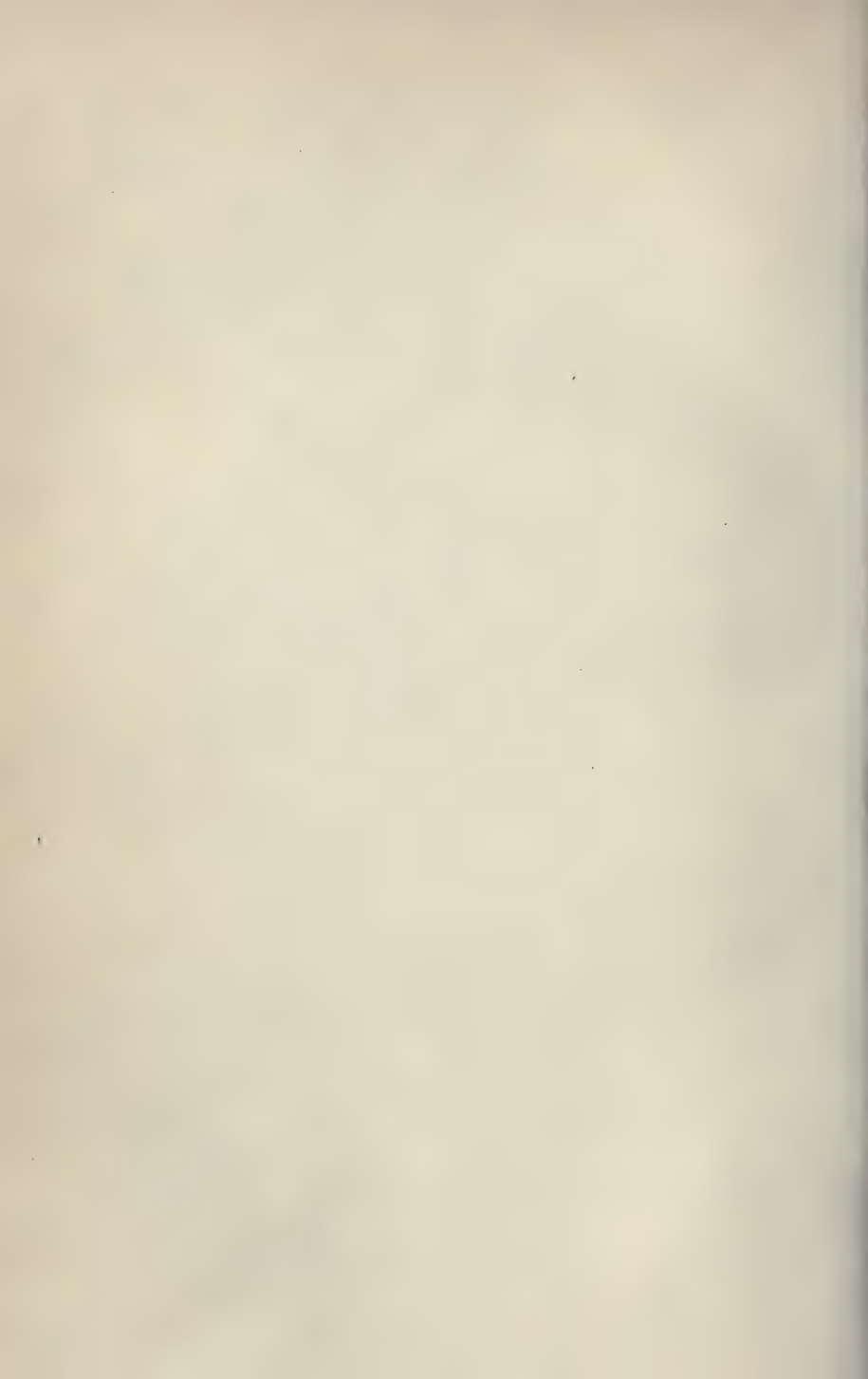
476. *And*] An P; þe M. *ryghtfullokest—riccher*] rithfulest relic · no richere non is M. *on*] yn G.

478. *hit*] he M. *a-fereþ*] aferede

G. *þe* (2)] his M.

479. *May*] Þer may F. *gryslliche*] graselese G. *glyde*] a-bide M. *shadewep*] schadeþ M.

COLOPHON. *So in* P; M *om.* *Hic*] EF *om.* I *has*—Explicit: Et incipit Dobest; T *has*—Explicit de do-bet: Et incipit de dobest; G *the same*, *prefixing* Hic.



Visio eiusdem Willelmi de Do-best.

PASSUS XXII (DO-BEST I).

Hic Incipit passus primus de dobest.

Thus ich awakede and wrot · what ich hadde dremed,
 And dyhte me derly · and dude me to churche,
 To huyre holliche þe masse · and be housled after.

344
 The poet awakes
 and writes his
 dream.

In myddes of þe masse · þo men ȝeden to offrynge, 4
 Ich fel eft-sones a slepe · and sodeynliche me mette,

He again sleeps,
 and dreams of
 Piers the
 Plowman, hold-
 ing a cross.

That peers the plouhman · was peynted al bloody,
 And cam yn with a croys · by-fore þe comune people,
 And ryght like in alle lymes · to oure lord ihesu; 8

And þenne calde ich conscience · to kenne me þe soþe.

“Is this ihesus þe Iouster?” quap ich · “þat Iuwes
 duden to deþe,

“Is this Jesus or
 Piers the
 Plowman?”

Oþer is hit peers plouhman? · ho peynted hym so
 rede?”

Quap conscience, and kneolede þo · “þese aren cristes
 armes,

“It is Christ,
 wearing his own
 coat-armour.”

12

Hus colours and hus cote-armure · and he þat comeþ so
 bloody,

TITLE. *So* PM; *so* EF, omitting
 Hic; Incipit de dobest GT; Incipit
 dobest I; Incipit passus septimus de
 dowl S (*wrongly*; owing to omission
 of Passus xvii to xxi).

OBS. *Here S begins again.*

1. *Thus—awakede*] I awaked þus
 F. *what*] þat F. *dremed*] i-dremed
 MIT.

2. *churche*] kirke MIG.

3. *huyre*] here MIFT. *holliche*] holly IMFGT; holy S. *be*] to be IT.
housled] yhousled E; i-hoseled M.

4. *myddes*] myddul F. *þo*] M om.

5. *Ich*] And i M. *fel* GT] ful M;

felle EIS; fel þo F; *miswritten* feel
 P. *a*] on I. *me*] IS om.

6. *peynted*] i-peynted M. *bloody*] rede bloody (*sic*) S.

7. *yn*] M om. *þe comune*] al þe
 M.

8—322. S omits.

9. *calde*] so PEIMT; cald G; called F. *kenne*] telle M; knowe G.

11. *is hit*] hit is MIT. *peers*] peres þe IF.

12. *þese*] this P. *aren*] ben EM.

13. *and* (2)] ac I; but T. *so*] M
 om.

Hit is crist with his crois · conquerour of cristine."

345

"Why call Him
Christ ?

"Whi calle þe him crist · siþthen Iuwes cald hym
ihesus ?

His name is
Jesus.

Patriarkes and prophetes · propheciede by-fore, 16

þat alle kynne creatures · sholden kneolen and bowen,

A-non as men nempned · þe name of God ihesu.

Ergo is no name · to þe name of ihesu,

[Ne] non so neodful to nempne · by nyghte ne by daye.

For alle deorke deoueles · dreden hit to huyre, 21

And synful ben solacede · and saued by þat name.

And þe callen hym crist · for what cause, telleþ me ?

Is Christ a
worthier name ?"

Is Crist more of myght · and more worþiere name 24

Than iesu oþer iesus · þat al oure ioy come of ?

Conscience
replies,

"Thow knowest wel," quap conscience · "and þow

conne reson,

"One man may
be both knight,
king, and
conqueror.

þat knyght, kyng, conquerour · may be o persone.

To be cald a knyght is fair · for men shal to hym

kneole ; 28

To be cald a kyng is fairour · for he may knyghtes

make ;

To be called a
conqueror comes
of special grace.

And to be cald conquerour · that comeþ of special grace,

Of hardynesse of heorte · and of hendeness [boþe], 31

To make lordes of laddes · of londe þat he wyneþ,

And fre men foule þralles · þat folwen nat hus lawes.

14. *Hit*] IT om. *his*] is P.

15. *Whi*] & whi F. *calle*] calde
G. *siþthen*] siþthen pat PE ; but IM
FGT omit pat. *cald*] calde G ; calden
T ; called EIF ; calleden M.

18. *God*] G om.

19. *Ergo*] Ergo sire þer F. *of*]
of þe (*sic*) I ; T om.

20. [*Ne* IFGT] And PEM ; see B-
text. G is corrupt.

21. *dreden*] aren drade I. *hit*—
huyre] for to heren it IT.

23. *for*] ac for F. *me*] F om.

24. *more* (1)] any more F. *wor-
þiere*] wurthi F ; worþy G.

25. *Than*] þan is G. *al*] M om.
come] came E ; cam IMFG.

26. *and*] if F. *conne*] knewe
M.

27. *knyght*] a knyzt G. *conquer-
our*] & conquerour F.

28. *cald*] called F ; i-cald M. *is*]
miswritten as P. *shal*—*kneole*] shuln
knele to him T.

29. *To*] F om.

30. *And*] Ac IF ; G om. *cald*] i-
cald a M ; called a F ; cald a G.
cald conquerour] conquerour y-called
I ; conquerour cald T. *that*] it F ;
hit G.

31. *Of*] And of IT ; Boþe of F.
[*boþe* T] PEMFG om. ; but the line
seems incomplete without it.

And gaf hym capeles to hus cart · contricion with con- Piers' horses are
fession, 333 contrition and
confession.

And made preosthood haiwarde · the while hym-self
wente

As wide as þe worlde is · with peers to tulye treuthe,

And þe londe of by-leyue · þe lawe of holychurche.

Now is peeres to þe plouh ; · pruyde hit aspide, 337 Pride sees Piers
ploughing,

And gadered hym a gret ost · greuen he þenkeþ and prepares to
attack him.

Conscience, and alle cristene · and cardinale uertues,

To blowen hem down and breken hem · and bite a-two

þe rotes ; 340

And sente forþ sourquidours · hus seriauns of armes, He sends out
his sergeants

And hus aspide spille-loue · on speke-vuel-by-hynde. and his spy

These to-comen to conscience · and to cristyne people, Spill-love.

And tolden hem tydynges · “ þat tyne þey sholde 344

The seedes þat syre peers sewe · þe cardinale uertues ; Pride's message
to all Christians,

And peers bern worth to-broke · and þei þat ben in
vnite

Shullen come out, and conscience · and þowre two

capeles, 347

Contricion and confession · and þoure cart bi-leyue

Shal be colered so queyntely · and keouered vnder oure threatening to
work them evil
by sophistry.

sophistrie,

333. And] He G. *with*] & FGT.

334. And] He T. *while*] wile P ;
whiles T.

335. þe] F om. *tulye*] tilie FGT ;
tily S ; telie M.

336. Not in B-text ; G omits.
þe (2)] þanne T.

337. hit] hit hap M.

338. gadered] gadereþ MS. *greuen*]
to greuen F ; greuen him T.

339. and (2)] G om. *cardinale*]
cardinales MG.

340. To] T om. *hem* (1)] G om.
bite] M om. *a-two* EFGT] a-to PS ;
on to M. *rotes*] mores T.

341—345. G omits.

341. forþ] aboute F. *sourquidours*]
surquidours EMT ; cirquydorus S ;
his surquidorus F. *seriauns*] ser-

iauntus FT ; sergauntz M.

342. hus] E om. *aspie*] spie T.
on] and (!) M ; T om. *vuel*] euele
MT ; euel F ; yuel E.

343. to-comen] two comen F (*as in*
B-text ; *but the author has altered*
l. 341). to (2)] to þe F.

344. hem] hym T. *þey*] he T.

345. The] þo T. *syre*] T om.
sewe] sew MFS ; seu ; T. þe] FS
om. *cardinale*] cardinales M.

346. to-broke] broke T. þei] þo
M.

347. þowre] hise T. *two*] to MF.

349. colered] coloured FST ; i-
colered M ; colourd G. so] MG om.
keouered] keouerede P ; keuered FS
TG ; couered M. *oure*] þoure S ; TG
om.

That conscience shal nat · knowe by contricion, 350
 Noþer by confession · ho is cristyne oþer heþene,
 Ne no manere marchaunt · þat with monye deleþ,
 [Wheþer] he wyne with right · with wrang, oþer with
 vsure. 353

360

Pride and
 Lechery prepare
 to waste the
 world.

With suche colour and queyntise · comeþ pruyde
 [y]-armed,

With þe lord þat lyueþ after · þe lust of hus bodye,
 To wasten, in welfare · and in wickede kepynge, 356
 Al þe worlde in a while · þorough oure wit," quap pruyde.
 Quap conscience to alle crystyne tho · "my consail is,
 we wende

Conscience bids
 men to fly to
 Unity or Holy-
 Church.

Hastiliche in-to vnite · and holde we ous þere; 359
 Preye we þat a pees were · in peers bern þe plouhman.
 For wyterly ich wot wel · we beoþ nat of strengthe
 To go a-gayn pruyde · bote grace with ous were."

Common Sense
 bids them dig a
 ditch about
 Unity,

And þenne cam kynde wit · conscience to teche;
 He criede, and comaundede · alle cristyne people 364
 To delue and dike a deop dicke · al aboute vnite,
 þat holychurche stod in holynesse · as hit were a pile.

to serve as a
 moat.

Conscience comaundede þo · alle crystyne to delue,
 And make a muche mot · þat myghte be a strengthe,
 To helpe holychurche · and hem þat hit kepeþ. 369
 Thenne alle kynne crystyne · saue comune wommen,

A list of those
 who repented not.

Repentede and refusede synne · saue thei one;

350. *knowe*] i-knowe M.

351. *Noþer*] Ne FT.

352. *Ne*] G *om.* *manere*] maner
 of T.

353. [*Wheþer* MFSGT] Weder
 P. *with* (1)] wit P. *with* (2)]
oþer with PE; but MFSGT *omit*
oþer here.

354. *colour*] colours MFSGT.
queyntise] queyntises FG. *y-armed*
 G] y-armyd ST; i-armed MF; armede
 PE; see l. 144.

355. *after þe*] in G. *lust* EMF
 SGT] loust P.

356. *in* (1)] on T; and to (!) M.

in (2)] on T.

358. *my—is*] y rede G. *we*] to M.

360. *Preye*] And preye T. *a*] T
om. *þe*] M *om.*

364. *He*] And TG. *comaundede*]
comaunde S.

365. *To—at*] Delue & dyke depe T.
dike] to dike G.

366. G *omits.* *in*] aboute F. *pile*]
 piler T.

369. *To*] For to F. *hem*] hym G.

370. *kynne*] E *om.*

371. *After this line* B-text has one,
which the C-text MSS. omit. So also
after l. 374.

/ And [a sisour] and a somenour · þat weren for-swore
ofte, 372

Witynge and wilfulliche · with þe false þei helden,
And for seluere were for-swore · sothly þei wisten hit.
Ther ne was cristyne creature · þat kynde wit hadde,
þat he ne halp a quantyte · holynesse [to] wexe ; 376
Some by bedes byddyng · and somme by pilgrimages,
Oþer oþere pryueie penaunces · and somme þorw pans-
delynge.

361

Many penitents
assist the growth
of holiness.

And þenne water welled · for wyckede werkes, 379
Egreliche ȝernynge · out of mennys eyen.
Men weep for
their sins.

Clannesse of the comune · and clerkes clene lyuynge
Made unite holychurche · in holynesse stonde. 382

“Ich care nat,” quaf conscience · “thauh pruyde come
nouthe, Conscience bids
all Christians to
dine,

The lord of lust shal beo lett · al þis lente, ich hope.
Comeþ now,” quaf conscience · “ȝe cristyne, and dyneþ,
þat han labored leelly · al þis lente tyme. 386

Her is bred yblessid · and godes body þer-vnder.
offering them the
Lord's Supper
once a month.

Grace gaf þorw godes worde · to peers plouhman power
And myghte to maken hit · and men for to eten hit,
In help of here hele · ones in a monthe, 390

372. [a sisour MFSGT] assisour
P; acisoure E.

373. Witynge S] Whitynge P;
Wityng ETG; Wetyng F; Waiting M.
After Witynge EMFG insert wel.
helden EMST] helde G; heelde F;
apparently holden P; but see B-text.
374. wisten hit] hit wisten M.

376. halp] helpud S. [to MFSGT]
PE om.

377. somme] T om.

378. Oþer] miswritten Oþe P; Or
FSGT; And M. penaunces] pen-
aunse ST. þorw] be T; by S. pans]
pens M.

379. welled] walled vp M. water
—for] walkide watir fro (!) T.

380. ȝernynge] ernyng TG; ren-
nyng EMFS. mennys] renkus F;
mannes G.

381. comune] comunes E.

382. unite] vnyte in S. holynesse]
clennesse S. stonde] to stonde M;
to stande G.

383. nat] nat now PEG; but MF
ST rightly omit now.

384. lust] loust P. lett] let MTG;
bete FS.

385. now] T om.

386. labored] i-laboured M.

387. bred yblessid]. blessed al (!)
E. and] E om. vnder] inne M.

388. T has — Grace þoruȝ good
word · ȝaf piers þe plouȝman power.

389. And] T om. to (!)] for to
FSG. and men] men it F. eten]
etyn P.

390. help] hope MG. a] F om.
monthe EMFS] mounthe PG; moneþ
T.

Oper as ofte as thei hadde neode · thei that hadden
payed 391

To peers pardon [þe] plouhman · *Redde quod debes.*"

The commons
wish to know if
they must make
restitution.

"How?" quap alle þe comune · "consailest thou ous
to 3elde

Al þat we owen eny wyght · er we go to housele?"

"That is my consail," quath conscience · "and cardinale
vertues, 395

[þat iche man forziue oper · & þat wile þe pater-noster];

362

Mat. vi. 12.

*Et dimitte nobis debita nostra, sicut & nos [di-
mittimus], &c.:*

And so to beo asoilled · and sytthen beo housled." 397

A brewer refuses
to do so.

"3e, hawe!" quap a brewere · "ich wol nat beo
rueled,

By iesu! for al 3oure iangelynge · after *spiritus iusticie*,
Ne after conscience, by crist · for ich couþe selle

He prefers
selling dregs and
draff.

Boþe dregges and draf · and drawe at one hole 401

Thicke ale and þynne ale · and þat is my kynde,

And nat to hacke after holynesse; · hold þy tonge,
conscience!

Of *spiritus iusticie* · þow spekest muche an ydel!"

Conscience warns
the brewer.

"Caitif," quap conscience · "corsede wreche! 405

Unblessed art þow, brewere · bote yf god þe helpe;

Bote þow lyue by þe lore · of *spiritus iusticie*,

391. *ofte as*] of F. · *thei—payed*] and þat þei hadden paie M.

392. [þe FSTG] PEM om.; cf. B-text.

393. *How*] What F. *consailest thou*] þou counsellist T; conseelest M. ous] vs MFSGT; E om. to] T om. 3elde] lyue (over erasure) G.

394. *er*] er þat SG.

395. *cardinale*] cardinales MG.

396. *From* T; also in MFSG; PE omit. *þat*] Or MFS; Or, altered to Of 3ow G. 3] for M. þe] þi F. *Et*] T om. *sicut—&c.*] MGT om. [*dimitimus*] in F only.

397. *And*] T om. *to beo*] ben M. *asoilled*] asoilled P. *beo* (2)] to beo G; to be ES; T om. *to—housed*]

I-housed aftur F. *housed*] i-hosed M; yhuselid T.

398. 3e] 3a T. *rueled* E] reulede P; rewled FS; rewelid T; i-ruled M; ruled G.

399. *al*] G om. *after*] by F.

400. *for*] while T. *couþe*] coude MF; can T.

402. *ale* (2)] TG om. *my*] E om.

403. *to*] SG om.

404. *muche*] mychel M; but F.

405. *quap*] þo quod F. *corsede*] þow cursede M; & cursede F.

406. *art* MFST] ert PEG. *art þow*] ertou G. þe] FT om.

407. *Bote*] & but F. þe] SGT om. of] or T.

The cheſe ſeede þat peers ſewe · ſaued worſt þow neuere.
Bothe conſcience þe comune fede · and cardinale vertues,
Leyf hit wel, we beon loſt · boþe lyf and ſoule.” 410

“Then is meny man ylost” · quap a lewede vicory ; A vicar says,

"Ich am a curatoure of holy[kirke] · and cam neuere
in my tyme

Man to me, þat couthe telle · of cardinale uertues, 413

O per þat acountede conscience · a cockes feþer o per an
hennes !

Ich knew neuere cardinal · þat he ne cam fro þe pope,
And we clerkes, when thei comeþ · for here comunes
payeþ,

416

"I never knew
cardinal but such
as comes from
the pope.

For here pelure and palfrayes mete · and pylours þat
hem folwen.

The comune *clamat cotidie* · eche man to opere, 363

'The countrey is þe corsedour · þer cardinales comeþ ynne; The country is
And ther thei ligen and lengen most · lecherie þer the worse for
regneb:— them.

420

For-þi," quap þis vicory · "by verrai god, ich wolde

þat no cardinal come · a-mong þe comune people,

Bote in here holinesse · [holden] hem stille

At Auenoun, a-mong Iuwes • *cum sancto sanctus* Ps. xvii. 26
eris, &c. (Vulg.). 424

408. *sewe*] *sew* MFG; *seu*₃ T.
saued] *i-saued* M. *worst*] *best* M.
worst *bow*] *wurstow* F.

409. *pe—fede*] be comun fode T;
be comene sed G. *cardinale*] cardi-
nales MG.

410. *Leyf*] Leef E; Lef MSG; Leue T; Leeue F. *wel*] G *om. lost*] I-lost F. *lyf*] body ST. *boþe—and*] þe lif boþe and þe F.

412. a] F om. [*kirke* T] church
PEFSG; *chirche* M. *neuere*] non M.

413. *cardinale*] cardinales MG.

414. *Oper* *pat*] Or *ellus* F. *pat*] *pan* E. *a*] at a FS; to a T. *oper*—*hennes*] FT *om.*

415. *knew*] ne knew G; ne kneuz
T. *he ne*] M om. *cam*] comeþ G.

416. *And*] *pat* M. *we*] *Tom*.

417. *and* (1)] *and* heore MT. *pal-
frayes*] *palfrey* T.

418. *echē*] ech a F. *to*] til T.

419. *per cardinales*] *pat* a cardinal
T; *pat* cardinales G.

420. *lyggen* EM] *liggyn* P; *lyggeþ* S; *ligge* T; *reygne* G. *lengen*] *longen* M; *logge* F; *ligge* G; *regne* T. *þer*] M *om.*

421. *For-pi*] For-*whi* M. *pis*] *beis* P. *wolde*] *vowe* G.

423. *holinesse*] holinesse at hom F.
[*holden* EFG] holde MS; heolden
P; held T. *hem*] hym al S.

424. *Auenoun*] *auynoun* M; *auynon* S; *aioun* G.

- Oper in rome, as here ruwele wolde · þe relikes to kepe ;
 And thow, conscience, in kynges court · and sholdest
 neuere [come] þennes, 426
 And grace þat thou so gredest of · were gyour of alle
 clerkes,
 And peers with hus newe plouh · and his olde boþe
 Emperour of alle þe worlde · þat alle men were
 crystyne ! 429
- The pope, who
 should help men,
 slays them.
- Imparfit is þe pope · þat al þe people sholde helpe,
 And soudeþ hem þat sleep · suche as he sholde saue ;
 Ac wel worthe peers plouhman · þat porsueþ god in
 doynge, 433
- Mat. v. 45.
- Qui pluit super iustos & iniustos* at ones, 433
 And sent þe sonne to saue · a corsed mannes tulthe,
 As bryght as to þe beste man · oper to þe beste womman.
 Ryght so peers plouhman · peyneþ hym to tulye
 As wel for a wastour · oper for a wenche atte stuwes,
 As for hym-self and his seruauns · saue he is furst
 yserued ; 438
 So blessed beo peers plouhman · þat peyneþ hym to
 tulie,
 And traunaileþ and tuleþ · for a tretour al-so sore
- Piers works for
 all alike,
- for the traitor
 364

425. *ruwele*] rewle T; reule ES; rule MFG. *þe*] here T. *kepe*] knowe G.
 426. *in*] in þe S. [*come* TG] go PEMFS; *but observe the alliteration.*
 427. *þat*] so (!) F. *so*] G om. *gredest*] gredest T; spekest M. *were*] T om.
 428. *and*] and with F. *boþe*] T om.
 429. *Emperour*] Were emperour M. *þe*] þis M. *were crystyne*] cristene were M.
 430. G omits. *Imparfit*] For imparfit F. *þe* (1)] þat FST. *þe* (2)] FT om. *peuple*] peplus F.
 431. G omits. *And*] þat FS. *soudeþ*] soudeþ or sondeþ PFS; sowdeth M; sendiþ T; sende E. *as*] þat M.
 432. *Ac*] For-þy G. *plouhman*] þe plouþman T. *porsueþ*] pursuede M. *doynge*] dede F.
 433. *&*] & super E.
 434. *þe*] M om. *corsed*] pore F. *tulthe*] tilþe MFGT; telþe S.
 435. *to* (1)] EFST om. *man*] man- nus F. *to* (2)] FS om. *womman*] womannus F.
 436. *plouhman*] þe plouþman T. *tulye*] tilie MFSGT.
 437—439. T omits.
 437. *oper*] as G. *for* (2)] FS om. *atte*] at M; of þe FSG.
 438. *and*] or for S; or F; *oper* G. *seruauns*] seruaunt FG.
 439. *blessed*] i-blessed M. *peyneþ*] pyneþ E. *to*] G om. *tulie*] tilie MFS.
 440. *tuleþ*] tulieþ G; tilieth F; tyluþ S; tilip T; toileþ M. *al-so*] as FG.

As for a trewe tydy man · alle tymes [y]lyke. 441 and the true man.

And worsheped be [he] þat wrouhte al · boþe good and
wykke,

And [suffreþ] hem þat synful beon · til tyme þat thei
repenten.

And god amende þe pope · þat pileþ holichurche, 444 God amend the pope!

And cleymeþ by-fore þe kyng · to beo kepere ouere
cristyne,

And counteþ noȝt þauh cristene men · be culled and
robbed,

And fyndeþ folke to fighte · and cristene blod to spille, The pope spills
Christian blood.

Aȝeyn þe lawe boþe old and newe · as luk bereþ witt-
nesse, 448

*Non occides: [Et alibi], Michi uindictam, [& ego
retribuam].* Exod. xx. 13;
Heb. x. 30.

Sikerliche hit semeþ, by so · hym-self hadde hus wil, He cares about
little except his
own will.

þat [he reccheþ] right nouht · of al þe oþer remenaunt.

And crist of hus cortesyne · þe cardinales saue, 451

And turne here wit to wisdom · and welþe for þe soule!

For þe comune," quap þis curatour · "counten ful litel The commons
care little about
conscience. 454

441. *trewe*] triwe P. *tydy*] tiling
G. *glyke*] y-liche STG; i-liche MF;
lyke P; cf. B-text.

442. *And*] T om. [*he* MFSGT]
PE om. *al*] G om. *wykke*] wicked
F.

443. [*suffreþ* EMFGS] suffren P;
suffre T. *hem*] T om. *tyme*] F om.
þat] G om. *thei* repentent] he re-
pente T.

444. *þe*] S om.

445. *ouere*] of SF.

446. *counteþ*] a-counteþ M. *þauh*]
þat G. *men*] TG om. *culled*] killed
F; kild T; quelled M. *robbed*] I-
robbed FG.

447. *fyndeþ*] fynt T. *to* (1)] for
to F. *and*] F om. *to* (2)] T om.

448. *Aȝeyn*] & aȝen E. *boþe*] F
om. *newe*] nywe P. *þe—newe*] þe
olde lawe & þe newe T. *luk*] it F;

T om. *bereþ*] bere S. [*Et alibi* FS]
PEMTG om. [*&—retribuam* ST]
PEMFG om.

449. *Sikerliche*] T om. *hym-self*]
he M.

450. [*he* MSG] hym PEF.
reccheþ MSFG] rekeþ PE. *al þe*]
þat G. *þat—reccheþ*] And reknip T.
al] T om. *þe*] þat S. *oþer*] T om.

451. *crist*] god M. *saue*] saued
(wrongly) E.

452. *here*] hit (*sic*) E. *to*] into S.
and] as E. *welþe*] wele T.

453, 454. E transposes the last
halves of the lines, putting last half
of l. 454 in l. 453, and the contrary.

453. *þe*] þus S; this F. *þis*] þes
P. *þis curatour*] peris doctour T.
counten] a-counteþ ME; counteth F.

454. *oþer*] of F; & T. *cardinales*]
cardinales MG.

365

Each man
beguiles the
other."

A lord says that
he thinks it right
to take all that
his auditor says
is his.

A king says,

"What I want, I
can lawfully take.

Bote hit sounē as by syght · som what to ·wynnyngē;
Of gile ne of gabbyngē · gyueþ þei neuere tale. 456

For *spiritus prudencie* · among þe people, is gyle,
And tho faire vertues · as vices thei [hem] semeþ;
Eche man soteleþ [a] sleiþe · synne [for] to huyde, 459
And coloreþ hit for a connyngē · and a clene lyuynge."

Then louh þer a lorde · and "by this light!" seide,
"Ich halde hit right and reson · to take of my reuee
Al þat myn auditour · oþer elles my stiwarde 463
Conseileþ me by here a-counte · and my clerkes wryt-
ynge.

With *spiritus intellectus* · thei toke þe reeue-rolles,
And with *spiritus fortitudinis* · fecche hit, wol he,
nul he." 466

Then cam þer a kyngē · and by hus corone seide,
"Ich am a kyng with corone · þe comune to reule,
And holychurch and clergie · fro corsede men to de-
fenden. 469

And yf me lackeþ to lyue by · þe lawe wol þat ich take
Ther ich may haue hit hastelokest · for ich am hefd of
lawe,

And 3e ben bote membrys · and ich a-boue alle. 472

455. *Bote*] But 3if T; Bute if G.
hit] þey G. *to*] in F.

456. *neuere*] no T.

458. *tho*] alle þo T. *thei*] to F; G
om. [hem EMF] hym P; ST *om.*
as—*semeþ*] vices þei hem holdem
(*sic*) M.

459. [*a* EMFSGT] P *om.* *synne*
synnys G. [*for* MF] PESGT *om.*;
cf. B-text. *huyde*] hude E; hide
MFT.

460. G *omits.* *a* (1) F *om.*

461. *louh*] so PM; lowh F; low3
E; lou3 ST; low3h G. *seide*] he
seide M.

462. *hit*] E *om.* *to*—*reeue*] of my
reue to take T.

463. *elles*] *miswritten* alles P. T
om. *stiwarde*] stiþ steward T.

464. *me*] M *om.* *a-counte*] a-

countus F.

465. *reeue*] so PFS; reue G; reues
E; reoues M; reuis T.

466. *fecche*] fecchiþ T; we fet F.
wol] wile T; wuld S. *nul he*] nyl
he M; nelle he EF; nel heo G; nulle
he S; or nille T.

467. *Then*] And þen S; And þanne
FT. *Then*—*þer*] And þer cam G.
corone] croune he M.

468. *a*] EMFG *omit*; see B-text.
to] for to F.

469. *And*] Al F. *fro corsede*] for
wicked F. *to*] FG *om.*

470. *lackeþ*] lakke MF; lakke
STG. *take*] take it T.

471. *haue*—*hastelokest*] hastlokest
it haue T. *hastelokest*] hastilikest
M. *hefd*] hed EMSGT; heed F.

472. *And*] For G.

Sitthen ich am 3oure alre hefd · ich am 3oure alre hele, I am the head.
 And holychurches chef help · and chefteyn of þe
 comune. 474

And what ich take of 3ow two · ich take hit at techynge I act by the
spirit of justice."
 Of *spiritus iusticie* · for ich Iugge 3ou alle ;

So ich may baldely beo housled · for ich borwe neuere,
 Ne craue of my comune · bote as my kynde askep."

"In condicion," quap conscience · "þat þou conne de- 366
 fende, 479 Conscience says
he must reign by
reason and truth.

And reule þy reame in reson · right wel, and [in]
 treuthe ;

þan, þat þow haue þyn askyng · as þe lawe askep ;
*Omnia sunt tua ad defendendum, sed non ad
 deprehendum !*" 481

The vicory hadde fer hom · and faire tok hus leue,
 And ich a-wakede þer-with · and wrot as me mette. The poet awakes.

Hic explicit passus primus de dobest.

473. G *omits.* *Sitthen*] And siþen
 T. *alre* (1)] alþer MT; alder F.
hefd] hed EMST; heed F. *alre* (2)]
 alder MF; alþer T.

474. *churches*] chirche T. *chef-
 teyn*] cheuenteyn M; chastisoure E.

475. *at*] of MT.

476. *Iugge* MFST] Iuge PG.

477. *housled* G] houslede P; hous-
 lid ES; i-hoseled M; hoseled F; hu-
 selid T.

479—481. E *omits.*

480. *and*] G *om.* [*in* MFSTG] P
om.

481. *þat*] schalt G; S *om.* T *has*
 —Trewþe wile þat þou haue þat þe
 lawe askip. *sunt tua*] tua sunt M.
tua] mea F. *deprehendum*] de-
 predandum M.

482. *vicory* EG] vicori M; vikery
 FS; vickery P; *but see* l. 411. *fer*
 MSGT] ferre EF; feer P.

483. *wrot*] wrouȝt F. *me*] i M.
mette EMSGT] þouȝte F; *miswritten*
 mete P.

COLOPHON. *So* PG; MT *omit.*
Hic] FS *om.* E *has*—Explicit passus
 primus.

PASSUS XXIII. (DO-BEST II.)

Hic Incipit passus secundus de dobest.

367

The poet wanders
about;

And as ich wente by þe waye · when ich was þus
awaked,

Heuy-chered ich ȝeode · and elynge in heorte;

For ich ne wiste wher to ete · ne in what place.

and at noon meets
with Need,

And [hit] neyhede ny þe noon · and with neode ich
mette,

That afrontede me foule · and faitour me calde. 5

who says,

“Coupest þou nat excuse þe,” he seide · “as dude þe
kyng and opere,

That þou toke to lyue by · to sustinaunce and clopes,

As by techinge and tellynge · of *spiritus temperancie*,

And þat þow nome no more · þan neode þe tauhte? 9

“Need hath no
law.

Neode haþ no lawe · ne neuere shal falle in dette

For þre þynges þat he takeþ · hus lyf for to saue;

A man may take
food,

That is, mete, whanne men hym werneþ · for he no
monye weldeþ, 12

TITLE. *So* PGM. *Hic*] E om. F
has—Incipit secundus. OBS. I only
preserves fragments of ll. 82—92; *the*
rest is wanting or illegible.

1. *wente*] wende E. *by*] in M.
awaked] awakede P; waked G.

2. *chered* EMFG] chired P; cherid
TS.

3. *in*] at T.

4. *And*] M om. [*hit* SM] it FT;
PEG om. *neyhede*] neiþhed F; neyȝ-
hede G; neiȝed ET; nyȝede S. *ny*] ney E. *þe*] to MF; G om. *neode*] so
PMG; neede F; nede EST; *here*
and below.

6. *Coupest*] Canst M. *excuse*—

seide] so EMS; he seide excuse þe P;
seide he þe excuse F. *he seide*] GT
om. *dude—kyng*] þe kyng dude M.
dude] G om.

7. *sustinaunce*] sustinaunces F.
sustinaunce—clopes] clopis & to sus-
tinaunce T. *and*] & to S.

8. *As*] Was T; And GF.

9. *And*] Al G. *nome*] nyme T.
no] E om.

10. *Neode*] And nede T; For nede
F. *haþ*] ne haþ T; naþ G. *ne*] & S.

11. *þat*] T om.

12. *werneþ* EMFSGT] wyrneþ P.
for] & T. *no—weldeþ*] naȝt no
moneye G. *weldeþ*] welde M.

And wot þat non wol be hus borgh · noþer haþ wed to
legge; 13

And he cacche in þat cas · and come þer-to by sleithe, 368
Sopeliche he syneweþ nat · þat so wynneþ hus fode.

And þauh he come so to [a] cloþ · and can no betere or clothing,
cheuesauce, 16

Neode nymeþ hym a-non · vnder hus mayn-pryse.

And [ȝif] hym lust for to lape · þe lawe of kynde or a drink of
wolde, 18

þat he dronk of eche a dicke · er he deide for þerste.

So Neode at grete neode · may nyme as for hus owene,

With-oute consail of conscience · or cardinale uertues,

So þat he suwe and saue · *spiritus temperancie*. 22

For is no vertue by-fore · to *spiritus temperancie*,

Noþer *spiritus iusticie* · ne *spiritus fortitudinis*.

For *spiritus fortitudinis* · forfeþ ful ofte,

He shal do more þan mesure · meny tyme and ofte, 26

And bete men ouere bittere · and som body to lyte,

And greue men grettour · þan good faith wolde.

And *spiritus iusticie* · shal Iugen, wol he, nul he,

After þe kynges counsaile · and þe comune lyke. 30

Temperance is
greater than
Justice or
Fortitude.

Justice sometimes
fails.

13. *And*] Ne T. *þat*] T om. *þat non*] no wȳt F; *þat no man* G. *wol*] nelle E; to T. *noþer*] ne F; ne no GT; & S. *haþ wed*] wed haþ GT; haþ no wed S; wed M.

14. *he cacche*] cacche hym cloþ G.

15. *syneweþ*] sineweþ G; synweþ S; synegeth F; synneþ MET. *Sopeliche—nat*] He synneþ nouȝt soply T.

16—19. G omits.

16. *to*] til M. [*a* EMFTS] P om.

17. T *has only*—Nede anon riȝt · nymeþ him vndir.

18. [ȝif F] ȝeueþ PE; ȝyueþ MS; ȝaf T (*all wrong*); cf. B-text. *lust* EMFS] loust P; list T. *þe*] as þe M.

19. *drunk of*] drynke at T. *a*] ST om. *er*] or EM; ar F; er þanne T. *deide*] deize M; diȝe T. *þerste*] þrest M; þrist FT.

20. *So*] So þat F. *for*] G om.

21. *cardinale*] cardinales MEG.

22. M omits. *surve*] so PF; sue S; sewe GT. *and*] or G.

23. *is*] nys M; T om. *by-fore*] so PE; to-fore M; by ȝer G; by fer F; be ver T; cf. B-text. *to, &c.*] so fair as temperaunce F.

25. *forfeteþ*] fforestip (!) T.

26. *tyme—ofte*] a tyme forsothe F.

27. G omits. *bete* EFST] beten M; *miswritten* bote P. *body*] bodies M. *lyte*] litel MT.

28. G omits. *greue*] greueþ M. *grettour*] ofttere T. *wolde*] hit wolde E.

29. *Iugen*] iugge MFT; iuge G. *wol*] wil F; wile T; wulle S. *nul*] nelle E; nille T; nulle S; nyl M; nel FG. *he* (2)] T om.

30. *and*] if F; & as T. *lyke*] likeþ T.

Prudence may
also fail.

And *spiritus prudencie* · in menye poynt shal fayle
Of þat he weneþ wolde falle · yf his wit ne were. 32
Wenyng is no wisdom · ne wys ymaginacion,

Man proposes,
God disposes.

Homo proponit, deus disponit · god gouerneþ alle goode
vertues.

Next hym is neode · for a-non he meokeþ,
And is as lough as a lomb · for lackyng of þat hym
neodeþ; 36

For neode makeþ neody · for neode lough-herted.

369

Wise men choose
neediness.

Filosofres for-soken welthe · for þei wolde be neody,
And wonede wel elyngliche · and wolden nat be riche.
And god al hus grete ioie · gostliche he lefte, 40

God became
needy Himself.

And cam and took man-kynde · and by-cam ful neody.
He was so neody, seith þe bok · in meny sondry places,
þat he seide in hus sorwe · on þe selue rode,

Mat. viii. 20.

‘Boþe fox and fowel · may fleo to hole and crepe, 44
And þe fische hap fynnes · to flete with to reste,
þer neode hap ynome me so · þat ich mot neode abyde,
And suffre sorwes soure · þat shal to ioie turne.’

Then be not
ashamed of being
needy.”

For-þi beo nat a-basshed · to bydde and to beo neody,
Sithe he þat wrouhte al þe worlde · was wilfulliche
neody; 49

31. *poynt*] *poyntus* FS.

32. *he*] *we* (!) S. *wolde*] *wol* F.
yf his] *ȝif þat his* F; *ȝif þat* T.

34. *deus*] & *deus* FST. *alle*] *hem*
alle T.

N.B. *By a singular error, the MSS. (PEMFSGT) place the words Good vertues (M has Of goode uertues) at the beginning of l. 35; but see B-text.*

35. *hym*] *hem* F. *neode*] *nouþe*
G. *Next—neode*] & *nede* is next
hym T. *meokeþ*] *mekeþ* EMFSG;
makip T.

36. *of*] T *om.* *þat hym* GMFT]
hym þat PES (*wrongly*).

37. G *omits*; *not in* B-text. *neody*
nede T. *for—herted*] *for neodes low*
herte M; *for nede* is *lowe herte* E;
fele nedis louȝ herte T.

40. *Here G fails.* *at*] *at* M.

41. *by-cam*] *bigan* F. *ful*] T *om.*

42. *He—seith*] *So he was nedy as*
seip T.

44. *fow*] *vox* M. *fowel*] *foul*
MFST. *and*] & also to S.

45. *fynnes*] *vynnes* M; *fyn* T.

46. *Der*] *þat* T; M *om.* *so þat*
T *om.* *abyde* S] *abide* MFT; *byde*
PE; *see* B-text.

47. *sorwes*] *sorewe* T. *soure*] *sory*
somme F; *ful soure* T. *ioie*] *blisse*
M.

48. *For-þi*] *For þey* E; *For-whi* M;
For þei ne T. *beo*] *beþ* E. *abasshed*
abasshyd S; *abasched* EF; *abashed*
M; *abassht* T; *abaihsshed* P. *to*
(2)] *þow* M; ST *om.*

49. S *omits.* *þe*] *þis* F. *wilfulliche*
wilful in F.

Neuere non so neody · ne non so poure deyede." 50

When neode hadde vnder-nome me thus · a-non ich fel
a sleope,

The poet again
sleeps, and
dreams.

And mette ful merueilousliche · þat, in a mannes
forme,

Antecrist cam þenne · and al þe crop of treuthe 53 Anticrist over-
turns truth.

Turned tyte vp-so-doun · and ouer-tilte þe rote,

And made fals to springe and sprede · and [spede]
menne neodes.

In eche contreie þer he cam · he cutte away treuthe,

And gert gyle growe þer · as he a god were. 57

Freres folweden þat feonde · for [he ʒaf] hem copes,

370

And religiouse reuerencede hym · and rongen here
belles ;

Friars welcome
Anticrist.

Al þe couent þo cam · to welcome [þat] tyraunt, 60

And alle hise as wel as hym · saue onliche foolles ;

The whiche foolles weren · gladdere to deye

Only fools resist
him.

þan lyue lengoure, suþe leaute · was so rebuked.

And a fals feond anticrist · ouer alle folke regnede, 64

That were mylde men and holye · þat no meschief
dradden,

Defieden al falsnesse · and folk þat hit vside ; 66 Holy and true
men

50. *Neuere*] Ne neuere T. *non*
(2)] M *om.* *ne—poure*] ne pouerere
T.

51. *hadde—thus*] me hadde þus
vndernome M. *fel* FT] felle E; feol
P; fil S; ful M.

52. *ful*] wel M. *a*] F *om.*

53. *þenne*] renne M. *al*] kitte al
E (*where* kitte *is wrongly added*
above the line; see l. 56).

54. E *omits.* *tyte*] hit MS; tit
(*altered to it*) T; him F; *but* tyte
seems best. *tilte* MFT] tilt P; tulte
S.

55. *to*] T *om.* [*spede* MFST]
spedde PE; see B-text. *menne*]
menes M; men E; manis T. *neodes*]
nede T.

56. *eche*] eche a F. *þer*] where T.
cutte] kitte E; cauȝte T.

57. *gert*] garte M; gart FT.
growe] to growe M.

58. *feonde*] frend (!) T. [*he*
EMFST] *miswritten* ʒe P. *ʒaf* EST]
gaf MF; ʒaue P.

59. *belles*] belle T.

60. *Al*] And al T. *couent* EMFST]
couant P. *þo cam*] cam þo FS;
com T. *welcome* EMFST] wolcome
P. [*þat* MFST] þe PE.

62. *whiche*] wiche P. *to deye*] for
to dye F; to diȝe þanne to lyue T.

63. *þan lyue*] at end of l. 62 in T;
see note above. *lengoure*] lenger FT;
eny lengere M.

64. *feond*] feon P; fende E; fend
MT; frend F. *alle*] al þe E.

65. *That*] Whiche F; And þat T.
þat] and MF.

are cursed by
Antichrist's
followers.

And what kyng comfortede hem · knowynge here
gyle,

Thei corsede and here consail · were hit clerk oþer
lewede. 68

Pride bears
Antichrist's
banner.

Anticrist thus sone hadde · hundredes at hus baner,

And pruyde bar þat baner · boldeliche aboute,

With a lorde þat lyueþ · after lykyng of hus body,

And cam a-zeyns conscience · þat keper was an gyour 72

Ouer kynde cristyne · and cardinale uertues.

Conscience
counsels the
worldly-foolish to
keep within the
church.

"Ich consail," quap conscience þo · "comeþ with me,
3e fooles,

In-to unite holichurche · and halde we ous þere.

And crye we to kynde · þat he come and defende 76

Ous fooles fro þe feondes lymes · for peers loue þe
plouhman.

And crye we on al þe comune · þat þei come to unite,

Ther to abyde and bykere · azeyns beliales children."

Nature hears
Conscience, and

Kynde huyrde þo conscience · and cam out of þe
planetes, 80

371
sends forth his
messengers,

And sente forþ his [foreyours] · feuers and fluxes,

Couhes and cardiacles · [crampes] and toþ-aches,

Reumes and Radegoundes · and roynouse scabbes, 83

67. *what*] *wat* P. *comfortede hem*] *(see l. 76). þe (1)] þese F. þe (2)]*
þat hym comfortide T. here] T
om.

68. *corsede*] *cursede* hem M.

69. *thus—hadde*] *hadde þus sone*
T. *hundredes*] *an hundrit* T.

70. *þat*] *þe* MS. *bar—baner*] *þat*
baner bar F; it bar T. *aboute* EFST]
miswritten *abouhte* P; *abouzte* M.

71. *lyueþ*] *lyued* F. *lykyng*] *þe*
lykyng S. hus] T om.

72. *And*] *þat* FST. *cam*] *com*
S; T om. *an*] *and* MF; & EST.

73. *Ouer*] *Of alle* M. *cardinale*]
cardinales ME.

74. *þo*] FT om.

75. *unite*] *vnyte* of ET.

76. *defende*] *defende* vs T; *see*
next line.

77. *Ous*] *so* PS; Vs MF; T om.

78. *on*] to M.

79. *Ther*] *And þere* T; Here M.
to] ST om. *abyde and*] *bide & to F.*
bykere] *be euer* M.

80. *huyrde—conscience*] *con-*
sience þo herde T.

81. *sente*] *send* S. [*foreyours* EF]
foreyours S; *foreynours* M; *ferours*
(*for* *foreours*) P; *ferours* T. *fluxes*]
flixis F.

82. *Here I begins, and is legible to*
l. 92. *Couhes*] *Cowþes* E; *Kouwes*
M. [*crampes* MIF] *crumpis* T;
crompis S; *claumpes* PE. *aches*]
ache M.

83. *roynouse*] *roynyssche* M; *ruy-*
nouse S; *runyous* T.

Bules and bocches · and brennyng Aguwes; 84
 Frenesydes and foule vueles · these foragers of kynde viz. diseases,
 Hadden pryked and preyed · polles of people;
 Largeliche a legion · lees þe lyf sone. so that many die.

Ther was—"harow and help! · her comeþ kynde, 88
 With deþ þat is dredful · to vn-do ous alle!"
 The lord þat lyuede after lust · þo aloud criede Lechery cries
 After comfort, a knyght · to come and bere hus after Comfort.
 baner.

"Alarme! Alarme!" quap þat lorde · "eche lyf kepe
 hus owene." 92

Thenne mette þese men · er mynstrales myghte pipe,
 And er heraudes of armes · hadden discriued lordes.
 Elde þe hore · was in þe vaunt-warde, Eld (Old-age)
 And bar [þe] baner by-fore deþ · by right he hit bears Death's
 claymede. banner.

Kynde cam after hym · with menye kynne sores, 97
 As pockes and pestilences · and mucche people shente;
 So kynde þorgh corrupcions · culde ful menye.
 Deþ cam [dryuyng] after · and al to douste [paschte] Death dashes
 Kynges and knyghtes · caysers and popes; 101 kings and popes
 Lered ne lewede · he lefte no man stande; to dust.

84. *Bules*] so PE; *Byles* IM;
Belis T; *Boilus* FS. *Aguwes*] so PE;
agues MFS; *anguisshe* T.

85. *vueles*] *eueles* IMF; *yueles* E.
these] T *om. foragers*] *for-goerus* S;
forgoers F.

86. *pryked*] *prykede* P; *i-priked*
 MF; *y-preched* (!) I. *preyed*]
preyede P; *y-preyed* I; *i-peyned* M;
I-paied F. *of*] *of þe* MFS; *þe* (*sic*)
 T.

87. *Largeliche*] *þat largelich* F.
lees] so PI; *leef* (*for lees*) F; *les* ST;
loste M. *þe*] *þy* E.

90. *lyuede*] *lyueþ* S. *lust* EMIFST]
loust P. *aloud*] *he loude* T.

91. *to*] I *om. hus*] *oure* T.

92. *Alarme*] *Asarmus* FS (*twice*).
þat] *þe* T. *lyf*] *man* F.

93. *þese*] *þes* P.

94. *er*] or EF; here S. *discriued*]
discriuede P; *discreued* E; *descriued*
 F; *descreued* M; *discried* T.

95. *Elde*] *þe* was *eelde* (*sic*) F.
was] *he was* T; F *om. vaunt*] *auaunt*
 MFS; *vaun* T.

96. [þe MFST] a PE.

97. *kynne*] *kynnes* M.

98. *pestilences—mucche*] *pestilence*
þat many T.

99. *þorgh*] *with* F. *culde*] *kullede*
 M; *killede* F; *kilde* ST.

100. [dryuyng EMFS] *dremend*
(for dreuend ?) P; *dryuande* T.
douste] so PES; *doust* F; *duste* M;
dust T. [paschte FS] *passhte* T;
paihste P; *pacchede* M; *pouste* (!)
 E.

102. *ne*] and MET. *lewede*] *lewede*
he sparede S. *he*] T *om.*

- That he hitte euene · sterede neuere after. 103
- 372** Many a [louely] lady · and here lemmanes knyghtes
Sounede and swelte · for sorwe of depes dyntes.
- Conscience begs
Nature to cease
his plagues. Conscience of hus cortesie · þo kynde he by-souhte
To cessen and to suffren · and seo wher þei wolde
Leue pruyde pryueliche · and beo parfit cristene. 108
- Then Fortune
flatters the
survivors. And kynde cessede tho · to seon þe people amende.
Fortune gan flaterie þenne · thaym fewe þat were
a-lyue,
And by-hyght [hem] long lyf · and lecherie he sente
Amonges alle manere men · wedded and vnwedded,
And gaderede a gret ost · al ageyn conscience. 113
- Lechery arms
himself; This lecherie leyde on · with lauhynge chere,
And with pryuey speche · and peyntede wordes,
And armede hym [in] ydelnesse · and in hy beryng.
He bar a bowe in hus honde · and manye brode arwes,
Were fetherede with faire by-hestre · and many a fals
treuthe. 118
- his arrows are
feathered with
false promises. With vntidy tales · he teonede ful ofte
Conscience and hus companye · of holy churchre þe
techers.
- Avarice attacks
Conscience. Thenne cam couetise · and caste how he myghte
Ouercome conscience · and cardinale uertues, 122
And armed hym in auarice · and hungriliche lyuede.
103. *F omits.* hitte] hutte M. euene] ones E. sterede neuere] neuere steride T.
104. [louely EMFST] losly P.
105. Sounede] Swouneden MF; Sowunede (sic) S; Swonide T. sorwe —depes] soreweful T. depes EMFS] dypes P.
106. þo] þe F. he] F om.
107. cessen] sesen MFS. to] F om.
109. cessede] sesede FS. seon] seo M; se EFST.
110. flaterie] flatere MFS; faltre (!) T. þenne] þo F. thaym] þulke E; hem MFS; þo T.
111. by-hyght] be-het S. [hem MFST] hym PE.
112. vnwedded] vnweddede P.
113. al] T om.
114. This EST] Thees P; þus MF. leyde MFST] miswritten leyden PE. chere MFST] chire P; clere (for chere) E.
115. And] T om.
116. [in EMFST] with P; but see l. 123, and cf. B-text.
118. Were] Where P. fetherede] i-fyþered M; yfeþered E. a] T om.
119. With] Whit P.
120. of—techers] of al holichirche M; & al holy churchre F; folk of holy churchre S. þe] T om.
122. cardinale] cardinales ME.
123. lyuede] he lyuede F.

Hus wepne was al wiles · to wynne and to huyden ;
 With glosynges and with gabbyngs · he [gylede] þe
 people.

Symonye hym sewede · to assaile conscience, 126 Simony sends
him to beguile
men.

And pressede on þe pope · and prelates thei maden,
 To holde with Antecrist · here temporalite to saue ;
 And cam to kynges consail · as a kene baroun, **373**
 And knockede conscience · In court by-fore hem alle,
 And gerte goode faith to flee · and fals to a-byde, 131 He corrupts
justice,
 And baldeliche bar adoun · with meny a bryght
 noble

Muche of þe wit and wisdom · of westmynster halle. } both in West-
minster Hall
 He iogged til a iustice · and iousted in hus ere, 4
 And ouertulte al hus treuthe · with ‘tak-this-on-
 amendement.’

And to þe arches in haste · he hyede a-non after, 136 and in the Court
of Arches.
 And turnede cyuyle in-to symonye · and suth he tok þe
 official ;

And for a menyuer mantel · he made leel matrimonye He contrives
divorces.
 Departe er dep come · and a deuors shupte.

“Alas !” quap conscience, and cride · “wolde crist, of
 hus grace, 140 Conscience
wishes Avarice
would become a
Christian.
 That couetise were cristyne · þat is so kene to fyghte,

124. *huyden*] huyde S ; huden E ;
hide FT.

125. *With*] Whith P. *glosynges*
glosyng T. *with*] MFST om. *gab-
byngs*] miswritten gabbynges P.
he] T om. [*gylede* S] gilide T ;
giled EF ; bi-gilede M ; gyleþ P.

126. *sewede* MFT] suwed E ; suede
S ; sywede P. *assaile*] asoyle (!) E.

127. *thei*] FT om.

128. *with*] with þe F. *Antecrist*
Auntecrist P.

129. *kynges*] þe kynges T ; knyhtes
M ; knyhtus FS (a remarkable varia-
tion).

130. *In*] in þe T.

132. *adoun*] down E.

133. *þe*] S om. *and*] & þe ST.

134. *iogged*] iagged F ; Iuggede S.
til] to FT. *iousted*] Iustede MT ;
Iuggede (repeated) S.

135. *ouertulte*] ouertilte FT. *with*
erased in T. on] in S.

136. *to*] in-to T. *in haste*] anon F.
hyede] zede T. *anon*] him F.

137. *suth*] seþþe M ; sith F ; siþþe
ST.

138. *And*] MFS om. *he*] & F ; T
om.

139. *Departe*] Departed (!) E.
a] er M. *deuors*] deuorus S ; deuos
MT. *shupte*] schapte MF ; shiften (!)
T.

140. *and*] þo & T.

141. *is*] T om. *to fyghte*] fiþteþ
T. *fyghte*] siþte MF.

And bold and [abydyng · þe] while hus bagge lasteþ.”
 Life laughs, | And þanne lowh loude lyf · and let dagge hus cloþes,
 And armyd hym in haste · in harlotes wordes, 144
 And held holynesse a Iape · and hendynesse a wastour,
 And let leaute a cherl · and lyere a freo man ;
 and counts Conscience as 148
 folly. Conscience and consail · he countede [hit a] folye.
 Thus relyede lyf · for a litel fortune, 148
374 And prykeþ forth with pruyde · preyseþ he no vertue,
 Ne careþ nouht hou kynde slouh · and shal come atte
 laste,
 And culle alle erthly creatures · saue concience one.
 Lyf tho leep asyde · and lauhte hym a lemman, 152
 Life takes “Hele and ich,” quap he · “and hihnesse of herte
 Fortune for his mate, Shal do þe nat drede · neiþer deþ ne elde,
 And [to for-ȝete] ȝouthe · and ȝyue nauht of synne.”
 This likede lyf · and fortune hus lemman, 156
 and is the father Of Sloth. And geten in here glorie · a gadelyng atte laste,
 On þat muche wo wrouhte · sleuthe was hus name.
 Sleuthe wax wonder ȝerne · and sone was of age,
 Sloth marries Despair. And wedded on wanhope · a wenche of þe stewes ; 160

142. *And*] MFS *om.* *and*] *erased*
in T. [*abydyng* FS] a-bidyngge M ;
 bidyngge ET ; byddyngge P. [*þe* MEF]
 þy P ; ST *om.* *hus*] þe T.

143. *lowh* F] *louw* M ; *louze* E ;
louȝ ST ; *miswritten* *loww* P. *loude*]
 T *om.*

144. MF *omit.*

145. *hendynesse*] *hendenesse* EMF ;
hyndenesse ST.

146. *cherl* MFT] *cherle* E ; *chierl*
 P ; *clerke* (!) S.

147. *consail*] *his* *consail* MF.
he countede] *þei* *acountede* M. [*hit*
a S] *it* a F ; *hit* ME ; *it* T ; P
om.

148. *Thus*] & þus F. *relyede*]
relied EF ; *releuede* M ; *reliuede* (*over*
an erasure) T.

149. *preyseþ*] *preysed* S ; & *preisib*
 T. *no*] *noȝt* E.

150. *Ne*] And T. *slouh*] *so* PM ;
slow EFS. *slouh and*] T *om.* *atte*]

at þe MFT ; at S.

151. *culle*] *kil* F ; *kille* T. *alle*]
 MS *om.* *erthly* EFS] *erþliche* M ;
erþely T ; *erthyly* P. *creatures*]
creature T.

152. *tho*] T *om.* *tho leep*] *leep*
 þo F.

153. *quap*] *saide* MFS. *he*] *sche*
 M (*wrongly*).

154. *nat*] *noþer* T. *drede*] *to*
drede MFS. *neiþer*] *ne doþ* *noþer*
 (*sic*) T. *deþ ne*] *non* M.

155. [*to* MFST] PE *om.* [*for-*
ȝete EMFST] *for-ȝute* P.

156. *lyf*] *lif* wel F. *fortune—*
lemman] *his* *lemman* *fortune* T.

157. *atte*] at þe MT ; ate F ; at
 S.

159. *Sleuthe*] þo *sleuthe* T. *wax*]
wex T.

160. *stewes* MFT] *stywes* P ; *stiwes*
 E ; *styues* S.

Here syre was a sysour · þat neuere swor treuthe,
 On [tomme] two-tounged · ateynt at eche enqueste.
 This sleuthe was sleyh of werre · and a slynge made, Sloth uses his
sling against
Conscience.
 And þrew drede of dispayr · a doseyne myle a-aboute.
 For care conscience [þo] · cryede vp-on elde, 165
 And bad hym fonde to fighte · and afere wanhope.
 And elde hente good hope · and hastiliche shrof hym,
 And wayueþ away wanhope · and with lyf he fighteþ. Eld fights against
Life.
 And lif fleyh for fere · to [fisik] after helpe, 169
 And by-souhte hym of socour · and of [his] salue Life flees to
physicians.
 hadde,
 And gaf hym gold good won · þat gladede here hertes,
 And þei gauen hym agayn · a glasene houe. 172
 Lyf leyuede þat leche-craft · lette sholde elde, 375
 And to-dryue away deþ · with [dyas and] drogges.
 Elde auntred hym on lyf · and atte laste he hitte Eld kills a
physician.
 A fisician with a forrede hod · þat he fel in a palsye,
 And þer deiede þat doctour · er thre dayes after. 177
 “Now ich seo,” saide lyf · “þat surgerye ne phisiké Life is careless,
 May nat a myte auaille · to medlen a-ȝens elde.”

162. [tomme MFS] thomme T; Robert P. *two-tounged*] to-tonged MS; þe tongede F; two tunge T. *On—tounged*] O moupe & two tungen E. *at*] in T. *enqueste*] so PM; a queste EFT; queste S.

163. *This* EFS] *miswritten* Thes P; þus M. *a—made*] made him a slynge MFS.

164. *þrew* MFS] þrewe P; þreuȝ T. *drede*] F om.

165. [þo MFT] PES om.

166. *to*] for to F. *afere*] fere a-wey S.

167. *And*] S om. *And elde*] Elde þo MF. *hente*] hente þo S.

168. *wayueþ*] wayuede MT; wayued S; vanned F; vanschep E.

169. *fleyh*] *miswritten* fleyht P (*but see* B-text); flew F; fli M; fly S; fleþ T; fleckeþ (!) E. [fisik EMST] phisik F; syke (*for* fysyke) P.

170. *by-souhte hym*] him bi-souhte MFS. [his MFST] here PE. *hadde*] he hadde MFS.

171. *good*] goud P. *here hertes*] his herte MST.

172. *And*] T om. *þei gauen*] þei ȝauen E; þei gauyn P; þei geuen T; þei gaf F; he gaf MS. *hym*] T om. *houe*] houue MST; howue F; how E.

173. *þat*] M om.

174. *to-dryue*] so PEM; dryue FT; dreue S. [dyas and FS] dias and M; dyetis & T; *miswritten* dayes P; diares E. *drogges*] dragges FT; drouges S.

175. *Elde*] And elde T. *atte*] at þe MFST. *he*] T om. *hitte*] hutte M.

176. *with*] in T. *forrede*] furrede F; furrid T. *fel*] fil F; ful M.

177. *þat*] þe T.

- And in hope of hus hele · good heorte he hente, 180
 and rides to
 Revel. And rod so to reuel · a ryche place and a murye ;
 The companye of comfort · men cleped hit som tyme.
 Eld attacked me, and made me
 bald. And elde hastede after hym · and ouer my hefde
 3eode,
 And made me balled by-fore · and bar on þe croune ;
 So harde he 3eode ouer myn hefde · hit wol be sene
 euere. 185
 I reproved him. “Syre vuel-ytauht elde,” quap ich · “vnhende go
 with þe !
 Suppe whanne was þe hey wey · ouer menne hefdes ?
 Haddest þow be hende,” quap ich · “þow woldest haue
 asked leue.” 188
 “3e, leue lordeyn !” quap he · and leyde on me with
 age,
 Then he made
 me deaf, beat
 out my teeth, And hitte me vnder þe ere · vnneþe may ich huyre.
 He boffatede me a-boute þe mouthe · and bete oute my
 wang-teþ, 191
 and lamed me
 with gout. And gyuede me wiþ goutes · ich may nat go at large.
 And of þe wo þat ich was yn · my wif hadde reuthe,
 And wisshede wel witerlyche · þat ich were in heuene.
 376 For þe lyme [þat] she louede me fore · and leef was to
 feele, 195

180. *hele*] *helpe* T.
 181. *so to*] so to þe F; to þe S. *a*
 (2)] EM *om.*
 182. *cleped* EF] *clepede* MS; *cli-*
pid P.
 183. *hastede*] T *om.* *my*] *myn*
 MFST. *hefde*] *heed* F; *hed* MET;
hede S. *3eode*] *he 3ede* MF.
 184. *balled* EMFS] *ballide* PT.
by-fore] *bi-forn* M. *on*] *vpon* MFS.
 185. *ouer*] *vpon* S. *hefde*] *hed*
 EMST; *heed* F. *sene* EMFST]
syne P.
 186. *vuel*] *euel* MF; *yuel* E.
ytauht] *ytauhte* P; *ytauht* EMT;
tauht SF. *vuel—elde*] *elde euele y-*
tauht T.
 187. *whanne*] *wanne* P. *hey*] T
om. *menne*] *menes* MT; *men* ES;
mennus F. *hefdes*] *heuedis* T; *hedes*
 EMS; *heedus* F.
 188. *be hende*] *hende be* S. *quap*
ich] T *om.* *asked*] *askede* P.
 189. *3e leue*] *3e 3e lewed* M.
 190. *hitte*] *hutte* M. *vnneþe* MF]
vnnyþe PT; *vneþe* E; *onneþe* S.
 191. *wang-teþ*] *wongteþ* M; *iakteþ*
 E.
 194. *wisshede*] *wyschte* S. *witer-*
lyche] *whiterlyche* P; *withturli* M.
 195—198. *Erased in* T; *rewritten*
in late hand.
 195. [þat MFS] PE *om.* *she*] *heo*
 F; *hue* S. *fore*] *so* PEMFS; *better*
for. *to*] *for* to F.

And a nyghtes nameliche · when we naked were, 196
Ich ne myghte in none manere · maken hit at heore
wille,

So elde and [hue] hit hadde · a-feynted and forbete.
And as ich sat in þis sorwe · [ich] sauh how kynde
passed,

And deþ drow neyghynge me · for drede gan ich Death drew nigh
me, and I begged
Nature to release
me.
quaken, 200

And criede carfully to kynde · [out] of kare me brynge,

“Lo, hou elde þe hore · haþ me byseye ;

Awreke me, yf þoure wil beo · for ich wolde be hennes.’

“Yf þow wolt beo awreke · wende in-to unite, 204 He bade me dwell
in Unity,

And hold þe þare euere · til ich sende for þe,

And loke þou conne som craft · er þou come þennes.”

“Consaileþ me, kynde,” quap ich · “what crafte be
best to leere?”

“Lerne to loue,” quap kynde · “and lef alle oþer and learn to love,
þynges.” 208

“Hou shal ich come to catel so · to cloþe me and to
feode?”

“And þow loue leelliche · lacke shal þe neuere and then I should
lack nothing.
Wedde ne worldlich mete · while þy lyf lasteþ.”

And ich þorgh consail of kynde · comsede to rome 212

196. *nyghtes*] *nyghztes* P. *And*—*nameliche*] *Namelich* on *nyztes* M; *Namelich* a *nyztus* FS.

197. *ne*] MFS *om*.

198. [*hue* S] *heo* MF; 30 E; *he* P (*for hue, the usual form elsewhere*). *hit*] E *om*. *hit hadde*] *hadde* hit S. *a-feynted* M] *afeyntede* P; *forfeynted* EFS. *forbete* EMFS] *forbeete* P.

199. *as*] M *om*. [*ich* E] y S; i FT; and M; P *om*. *sauh*] *sawe* E; *saw* M; *sauz* T; *say* FS.

200. *neyghynge*] *nezyng* E; and *neihede* MF; *nere* & *nyjede* S; *faste* to T.

201. *carfully*] T *om*. [*out* EMFS] P *om*.

202. *Lo*] & *seide* lo F. *haþ*] *haueþ* MS. *me*] S *om*. *byseye*] *so*

PE; *bi-seize* MT; *be-seye* S; *biseie* F.

203. *Awreke*] *Awrekeþ* M. *me*] E *om*. *ich*] *wo* i M.

205. *sende*—*þe*] *for þe sende* F.

206. *er*] or *þat* F.

207. *kynde*—*ich*] *quod i to kynde* MF.

208. *Lerne*] *Lere þow* T. *quap*] *seide* F. *lef*] *leue* T. *þynges*] T *om*.

210. *And*] *As* S.

211. *worldlich* ME] *wordliche* PF; *wordly* S; *worpi* T. *while*] *with* F. *þy*] *þe* M.

212. *And*] *þo* F. *ich*] *placed before* *comsede in* MFS. *þorgh*] *be* T.

I found Unity
besieged by seven
giants and Anti-
christ.

337

Sloth led the
assault,
with Avarice.

An Irish priest
despises Con-
science.

Oaths are shot
against Con-
science.

Conscience cries
for help.

The friars offer
him aid.

Thorgh contricion and confession · til ich cam to unite ;
And þer was conscience constable · crystine to saue.

He was bysegged sopliche · with seuene grete geauntes,
That with Antecrist helden · harde azeyns conscience.
Sleuthe with hus slynge · an hard saut he made. 217
Proude preostes cam with hym · passend an hundred ;
In paltokes and piked shoes · and pissares longe
knyues,

Thei come azeyns conscience · with couetise þei helden.
“ By þe marie,” quap a mansed preest · was of þe
marche of yrelonde, 221

“ Ich counte conscience no more · by so ich cacche
seluer,

Than ich do to drynke · a drawt of good ale !”
And so seide syxty · of þe same countreo, 224

And shotten azeyns hym with shot · [many a schef of]
opes,

And brode-hokede arwes · godes herte and hus nailes,
And hadde almost vnite · and holychurche a-doune.

Conscience cride, “ helpe · cleregie, oþer ich falle, 228
Thorgh imparfit preestes · and prelates of holychurche.”

Freres herde hym crie · and comen hym to helpe,

214. *And*] MS om.

215. *He*] 3o E. *He was*] And T.
bysegged EM] bisegid FS; bysegide
P.

216. *Antecrist*] Anticrist PS.
with—helden] heelde *with* antecrist
F.

217. *Sleuthe*] Þo slewthe F. *saut*
EFST] better than sauht P; sauht
M; cf. l. 300. *he*] F om.

218. *preostes*] prelates M. *cam—*
hym] with him come F. *passend*]
passyng EMST. *passend—hundred*]
mo þan a þousand (as in B-text) F.

219. *and* (1)] & in S. *pissares*] so
PME; *pisserus* FST. *longe*] with
longe E.

220. *Thei*] T om. *helden*] holden
S.

221. *By þe*] so PEMFS; Be þe T.

marie] mare S. *mansed*] mansede
PF; mansed E (*which shows it is not*
maused); monsed S. *was*] T om.
was—yrelonde] & by seint mychel
F.

222. *counte*] acounte M. *conscience*
—more] no more consience T. *by so*]
so þat T.

223. *drawt*] so PE; drauht MFT;
draft S.

224. *countreo*] wise F.

225. *with*] FS om. *shot*] schotus
S. [*many—of* EF] wiþ many a
schef of M; many a schef S; many
shuf of T; mony shuf P.

226. *arwes*] harwes P; but see l.
117. *herte*] fleys M; blod S.

227. *adoune*] distroyed T.

228. *cleregie*] to clergie F. *oþer*]
or MT; for FS.

Ac for þei couþe nat wel here craft · conscience for-soke
hem.

Neode neyhede þo ner · to conscience he tolde 232 Need warns
þat þei came for couetise · to haue cure of soules, Conscience
against the friars.

And for thei aren poure, paraunter · for patrimonye
hem failleþ,

Thei wolde flaterie to fare wel · to folke þat ben riche.

And sitthen þei chosen chile · and c[h]aytif pouerte,

Let hem chewe as þei chosen · and charge hem with "Let them chew
no cure. 237 as they have
chosen!

For lommere he lyep · þat liflode mote begge, 378

Than he þat laboreþ for lyflode · and lenep hit beg-
· geres.

And sitthen freres for-soke · þe felicite of erthe, 240 Let friars be
Lat hem be as beggers · oþer lyue by aungeles fode." beggars."

Conscience of þis consail tho · comsede for to lauhe,

And cortesly confortid hem · and cald yn alle freres, But Conscience
welcomes the
friars,

And seide, "sires, sothly · wel-come be 3e alle 244

To unite and to holichurche · ac o þing ich 3ow preye,

Holdeþ 3ow in unite · and haueþ non enuye

To lerede ne to lewide · bote lyueþ after 3oure reule.

And ich wol beo 3oure borw · 3e shulleþ haue brede and offers to find
them food,

and cloþes, 248

And oþer necessities ynowh · 3ou shal no þyng lakke,

231. T omits. Ac] & F.

232. neyhede] neþhed F; neþed E;
neþide T; nyþþede S. to] and to M;
& T.

233. soules] soule T.

234. for (2)] M om. poure par-
aunter] perantur poore F.

235. flaterie] so PE; flaterie MFST.
to (2)] T om.

236. chile] so PS; clyle (for chyle)
E; chele MFT. chaytif] caytif PE;
but chaitife M; chaitif T; cheityf S;
F has caitevous.

237. hem (1)] E om.

238. lommere] so PE; lomere MF;
loomere (altered to loome, with the
gloss i. sepe) T. he] pey E. mote]

schal M.

239. Than] þat (1) F. for lyflode]
þerfore F. hit] it to FS; to M.

240. þe] FS om.

242. þis] his S. tho] MF om.
comsede] becomsed F. for] T om.
lauhe] lauze EST; lauzhe F; laue
M.

246. Holdeþ] And holdiþ T.
haueþ] haþ T.

248. ich wol] i my-self wole MF;
y my silf schal S. shulleþ] schulle M;
schal F.

249. 3ou] 3e MT; þat 3e F. shal]
schulle M; shuln T. no þyng] nat
F.

if they will learn
to love.

With þat 3e leue logyk · and lerneþ for to louye.

For loue lefte þei lordshupes · bope londe and scole,

Frere fraunceis and domynyk · for loue to be holy. 252

And yf [3e] coueiteþ cure · kynde wol 3ow telle,

God made all
things of a certain
number.

That in mesure god made · alle manere þynges,

And sette hit at [a] sertayn · and at a syker nombre,

And nempnede hem names · and nombrede þe sterres ;

Ps. cxlvi. 4

(Vulg.).
Kings have all
their soldiers
numbered.

Qui numerat multitudinem stellarum.

Kynges and knyghtes · þat kepen and defenden, 257

Hauen officers vnder hem · and ech of hem a certayn,

379

And yf þei wage men to werre · thei wryten hem in
nombre ;

Wol no treserour take hem wages · trauayle þei neuere
so sore, 260

Bote hij beon nempned in þe nombre · of hem þat ben
ywaged.

Alle opere in bataille · beep [yholde] brybours,

Pilours and pyke-herneys · in eche parshe a-corsede.

Monks have
fixed numbers
in their houses.

Monekes and monyales · and alle men of religion, 264

Here ordre and here ruele wol · to haue a certayn
nombre ;

Only friars are
unnumbered.

Of lered and lewede · þe lawe wole and askep

A certayn for a certayn · saue onliche of freres !

For-thi," quap conscience, "by crist · kynde wit me
telleþ, 268

250. *logyk*] 3our logik F. *lerneþ*
EMT] lernyeþ P; lerne F. *for*
T om.

251. *loue*] S om. *lefte*] lost E.
lordshupes] lordschip EF; lordschup
S; lordschepe M.

253. [3e EMFST] he P. *cure*] any
cure F.

254. *manere*] maner of T; S om.

255. *hit*] so in all; cf. B-text. [a
EMFT] PS om. a (2)] F om.

256. *hem*] men F.

259. *in*] be T.

260. *Wol*] For wil F. *Wol*—
treserour] Wul not tresoure S.

261. *hij beon*] hy be ES; þei ben

MT; þei be F. *nempned*] named F;
T om. *þe nombre*] nombre T. *y-*
waged] wagid T.

262. *Alle*] Al þat F. *beep*] þei
beth F. [yholde EST] i-holde MF;
miswritten yolde P. *yholde brybours*]
bribores I-holde F.

263. *parshe*] paresche E; a pa-
resche F. *a-corsede*] cursed F.

264. *alle*] iche T.

266. *and*] and of MFS. *lered*—
lewede] lewede & leride T. *wole*]
wolde M.

267. *of*] þe E; MFS om.

268. *For-thi*] For-whi M.

Hit is wickede to wage 3ou · 3e wexeþ oute of numbre.

Heuene haueþ euene numbre · And helle is with-oute
numbre ; 270 Hell is without
number.

For-thi ich wolde witerly · þat 3e were in registre,
And 3oure numbre vnder notarie signe · and noþer more
ne lasse."

Enuye herde þis · And het freres go to scole, 273 Envy bids the
friars learn logic,

And lerne logik and lawe · and eke contemplacion,

And preche men of plato · and prouen hit by seneca,

That alle þyng vnder heuene · ouhte to beo in comune. to prove that all
things should be
in common.

He lyeþ, as ich leyue · þat to þe lewede so precheþ,

For god made to men a lawe · and Moyses hit tauhte,

380

Non concupiscas rem proximi tui.

Exod. xx. 17.

And vuel is this yholde · in parshes of yngelonde,

For persones and parshe-preestes · þat sholde þe people
shryue, 280 In England, the
parish-priests
should confess
men;

And thei beon curatours cald · to knowe and to hele,

Alle þat been here parshenes · penaunces [to enioyne],

And beo ashamede in here shryft; · ac shame makeþ
hem wende, 283

And fleo to [þe] freres · as fals folke to westmynstre, but men flee to
the friars,
þat borweþ and bereþ hit thuder · And thenne byddeþ
frendes

269. 3e] for 3e M. *wexeþ* EFM]
wexiþ T; wexuþ S; *miswritten* wexit
P.

270. T *omits.* *haueþ*] *haþ* an E.
numbre (2)] P *om.*

271. *For-thi*] For-whi M. *wolde*
wulle S. *witerly*] whiterly P; with-
turli M. *were—registre*] weren i-
registred M; in registre were F.

272. *notarie*] so PEF; notories
MT; a noteryes S. *more*] mo
MFST.

After l. 272, T *repeats* l. 261 *in the*
form—But þei be nempnid in þe
nombere · of þeim þat ben wagit.

273. *het*] heet F; hette T; bad S.
go] to go F.

276. *ouhte*] owe E.

277. *He*] But he F.

279. *vuel*] euele MFT; yuel E.
parshes] so PE; parsches M; parisches
F; parosshis T.

280. *For*] þat T. *sholde*] schul S.

281. *And*] T *om.* *cald*] i-cald M.
hele] helpe E; holde T.

282. *penaunces*] penaunce FS. [to
enioyne MFS] enioyne T; enioyneþ
P; enioyned E.

283. *And—in*] Ac for þei schameth
of F. *ac*] & T; F *om.* *wende*] to
wende F.

284. [þe EMST] fals F; P *om.*
as] & T. *fals*] S *om.* *folke*] folk
dooth FS; folc don M.

285. *hit*] MFS *om.*

like cheants who
flee to West-
minster.

3eorne of for-3euenesse · oþer lenger 3eres leue.
Ac while he is in westmynstre · he wol be by-fore,
And maken hym myrie · with oþer menne goodes. 288
And so hit fareþ by muche folke · þat to freres hem
shryueþ,

So executors
repair to the
friars.

As asisours and executours · þei shal 3eue þe freres
A parcel to preye for hem · and maken hem
[murye]

With þe remenant of þe good · þat oþer men by-
swonke, 292

Envy hates
Conscience.

And suffre þe dede in dette · to þe day of dome.

Enuye here-fore · hatyde conscience,

And freres to philosophie · he fond hem to scole,

381

The while couetise and vnkyndenesse · assailede con-
science. 296

Conscience bids
Peace, his porter,
to bar the gates
of Unity.

In vnite holichurche · conscience held hym,

And made pees portor · to pynne þe 3ates.

Alle tale-tellours · and titereres in ydel,

Ypocrise and thei · an hard sawt thei 3euen. 300

Ypocrisè at þe 3ate · harde gan fighte,

Hypocrisy harms
many.

And wondede wel wickedly · meny a wys techere,

286. 3eorne] 3erne FST; 3orne E;
3urne M. of] or T; S om. leue]
lone M.

287. while] wile P. in westmynstre]
at westmynstur halle F.

288. myrie with] wondur mery · of
F. menne] menes M; mennus FT;
men S.

289. And] MFS om. to] to þe F.
hem] FT om.

290. asisours ES] asissours P;
sisours MFT. executours EMFT]
excecutours P; exceketours S. freres]
faitours F.

291. parcel] miswritten prarcel P.
to] for to F. hen] him T. [murye
T] mury E; murie M; merye FS;
murpe P.

292. of—good] T om.

293. þe (1)] so þe F. to] til MS;
3e til F.

294. Enuye] But sir enuye F;
Euer enuye M. hatyde] hatip T.

295. freres] fals frerus F. hem]
so F; vs T.

296. The] F om. while] wile P.
couetise—vnkyndenesse] vnkynde-
nesse and coueitise M. assailede
conscience] conscience assaileden T.

297. held] hold S.

298. þe] wel þe F.

299. Alle] Of alle T. titereres in]
titeris of T.

300. an EMFS] miswritten and P.
sawt F] saut ST; sauzt M; mis-
written swat (for sawt) PE. 3euen]
3ouen F. an—3euen] han hard saut
made T. 3euen] 3ouen F.

301. at þe] ate F. gan] gan to
F.

302. a] T om. techere] techeris T.

That with conscience acordede · and cardinale uertues.

Conscience calde a leche · þat couthe wel shryue, 304

To salue þo þat sik were · and þorgh synne y-wounded.

Shruft shupte sharpe salue · and made men do
penaunce Shrift salues them
with penance.

For here mysdedes · that thei wrouht hadde, 307

And þat peers pardoun were ypaied · *Redde quod debet.* Mat. xviii. 28.

Some likede nat þis leche · and lettres þei senten, They like not
Shrift's plasters.

Yf eny surgeyn were in þe sege · þat softere coupe
plastre.

Sire lyf-to-lyue-in-lecherie · lay þere and groned; 311

For fastynge of a friday · he ferde as he wolde deye.

“Ther is a surgen in þe sege · þat softe can handle, They ask for
another leech, one
Flatterer, a friar.

And more of fisik by fer · and fairer he plastreþ;

On frere flaterere · is fisician and surgien.”

Quaþ contricion to conscience · “do hym come to
unite, 316

For her is meny man · hurt þorgh ypocrisye.”

382

“We haue no neode,” quaþ conscience · “ich wote no
bettere leche Conscience says
the parish-priest
is the right
confessor;

þan person oþer parshe-prest · penytancer oþer busshup,
Saue peers the plouhman · þat hath powere ouere alle,
And indulgence may do · bote yf dette lette.” 321

“Ich may wel suffry,” quaþ conscience · “sutthe 3e
desiren

303. *cardinale*] cardinales ME.

305. *þorgh*] with T. *y-wounded*] wounded F.

306. *Shruft*] Schrifft M; Schrif F. *shupte*] so PE; schop MS; schoop F; shop T. *penaunce*] penaunces E.

307. *wrouht hadde*] hadde ywrouht T. *wrouht*] i-wrouht M.

309. *senten*] sette T.

310. *were*] F om. *þat*] F om. *coupe plastre*] plaster coupe E.

311. *in*] M om.

312. *he*] T om. *wolde*] wul S. *deye*] a died F.

313—322. S omits.

313. *softe*] softer F; softre M.

314. *fer* MFT] ferre E; feer P.

316. *come*] to come F.

317. *is—hurt*] buþ many men i-hurt M. *meny*] many a FT. *hurt*] i-hert F.

318. *no*] a M (see next line).

319. *þan—oþer*] And þat is M. *busshup*] busshop M; bisshop EFT.

320. *Saue*] And also M. *ouere*] of T.

321. *lette*] lette it T.

322. *suffry*] suffre MFET. *3e*] þat 3e M. *desiren* MFT] disyren P.

but Flatterer may
be sent for.

That frere flaterere be fet · and fysyke 3ou syke."

The frere here-of herde · and hyede faste 324

To a lorde for a lettere · leue to haue to curen

The friar gets a
license to hear
confessions.

As he a curatour were · and cam with hus letteres

Baldely to þe bushope · and hus breef hadde,

In countreyes þer he cam · confessions to hure ; 328

And cam ther conscience was · and knockede atte 3ate.

Peace, the
porter of Unity,
parleys with
Flatterer.

Pees vnpynnede þe dore · þat was portour of vnite,

And in hast he [askede] · "what hus wil were?"

"In faith," quap þis frere · "for profit and for helthe,

Carpe ich wolde with contricion · and þer-fore cam ich

hyder." 333

"He is syke," seide pees · "and so aren meny oþere ;

Ypocrisye hap hurt hem · ful hard is yf [þei] keuere."

Flatterer says he
can make salves,
and his com-
panion tells his
name.

"Ich am a surgen," seide þe frere · "and salues can ich

make, 336

Conscience knoweþ me wel · and what ich can don."

"Ich preye the," quap pees þo · "er þow passe forþere,

What hattest þow? ich praye [þe] · hele nat þy name."

2 Tim. iii. 6.

"Certes," seide his felawe · "syre *penetrans-domos*."

383

"3e, go þi gate," quap pees · "by god, for al þy fysike,

Peace refuses to
admit him.

Bote þow conne [oþer] craft · þou comest nat here-ynne.

Ich knew such on ones · nat eyhte wynter passede,

323. *frere flaterere*] þat frere M; þe frere FS. *fet*] i-fet MF. *syke*] be sike F.

324. *frere*] fals frere F. *hyede*] he hied F.

325. (to) [2] T om.

326. *he—curatour*] a curatour he MFT. *and*] T om. *letteres*] lettere T.

327. *breef*] so PF; bref EMST.

329. *atte*] at þe MFT.

330. *vnpynnede*] þo vnpynned F; openide T. *þe dore*] hit MFS; it T. *þat*] MT om. *was portour*] porter was F.

331. *he*] T om. *[askede* MF] asked E; eschte S; hesshede P; hiȝte T.

332. *frere*] frere þo F. *helthe*] helpe S.

333. *ich wolde*] wolde i T. *con- tricion*] conscience F.

334. *so*] M om. *aren*] beþ E.

335. *hem*] hym S. *hurt hem*] hem I-hert F; i-hurt hem M. [þei EMF T] þey S; *miswritten* 3e P.

336. *ich*] T om.

337. *what*] wot what M; what þat FS. *don* E] done P; do MF.

338. *þo*] T om. *forþere*] ferrer F.

339. *hattest þow*] hattestow F. [þe EF] PMST om. *praye þe*] þe pray F.

340. *his*] is P.

342. [oþer MFS] any oþer E; eny PT.

343. *on*] a wy F. *passed*] a-passad M.

Cam yn thus y-coped · at a court þere ich dwellede.
 He was my lordes leche · and my ladies boþe, 345
 And atte last þis lymytour · þo my lord was oute,
 He saluede so oure wommen · til somme were with
 childe."

Hende-speche het pees þo · opene þe gates— 348 Fair-Speech prays
 "Lat yn þe frere and hus felawe · and make hem faire Peace to open the
 chere. gates."

He may seo and huyre here · so may by-falle,
 That lyf þorgh hus lore · shal leue couetise,
 And to beo a-drad of dep · and wiþ-drawe hym fro
 pruyde, 352
 And acorde with conscience · and cusse here aiper
 opere."

Thus þorgh hende-speche · entrede þe frere, Thus the friar
 And cam to conscience · and corteisliche hym grette. gains admission.

"Thou art welcome," quap conscience · "canst þou
 hele syke?" 356

"Here is contricion," quap conscience · "My cosyn, Conscience asks
 ywounded; the friar to heal
 Contrition.

Conforte hym," quap conscience · "and take kepe to
 hus sores.

The plastres of þe person · and þe pouderes beoþ to
 sore, 359

344. *y-coped* E] *i-coped* MF; *y-copede* P.

345. *He—lordes*] And my lord
 (!) T.

346. *And*] T *om.* *atte* E] at þe
 MFST; *atte þe* (*wrongly*) P. *was*
 whas P.

347. *til*] þat T. *were*] where P.

348. *Hende*] Hendy S. *het—þo*
 þo heet pees F. *opene*] & praide open
 F. *gates*] gate S.

349. *Lat*] And lat PE (*but* MFST
omit And; cf. B-text); Let MST;
 Late F. *þe*] S *om.* *chere* EMFST]
 chyre P.

350. *seo*] *i-seo* M. *huyre here*] *i-*
here M; hem here T. *may*] it may F.

351. *leue*] leue his F.

352. *to*] T *omits*; *but the rest*
retain to. *hym*] hem T.

353. *And*] S *om.* *here*] eþer (*sic*)
 E; MFST *om.*

354. *Thus*] & þus F.

355. *to*] þo to F.

356. *art* MFST] ert PE. *welcome*] wolcome P. *canst þou*] canstow F.

357. *quap conscience*] T *om.* *ywounded*] *y-wondyd* S; *ywoundede* P;
i-wounded ME; is *i-wounded* F; *liþ*
woundit T.

359. *plastres*] *plastre* M. *þe* (2)]
 MFS *om.* *to*] so MF; S *om.* *and—*
to] *pynen* hym T.

384

The friar gives
Contrition a
plaster called
Privy-payment.

And lat hem lygge ouer-lange · and loþ is to chaungen ;
Fro lente to lente · he let hus plastres [byte].”

“That is ouerlonge,” quap þis lymytour · “ich leyue
ich shal amende hit.” 362

He goþ [&] gropeþ contrition · and gaf hym a plastre
Of “a pryue payement · and ich shal preye for 3ow,
And for hem þat 3e aren holden to · al my lyf-tyme,
And make 3ow my lady · in masse and in matynes,
] As freres of oure fraternite · for a litel seluer.” 367

He soon causes
Contrition to
cease weeping for
his sins.

Thus he goþ and gadereþ · and gloseþ þer he shryueþ,
Til contrition hadde clene for-3ute · to erie and wepe
and wake 369

For hus wickede werkes · as he was woned by-fore.
For comfort of hus confessour · contricion he lefte,
That is þe souereyne salue · for alle kynne synnes.

Sloth and Pride
again assault
Conscience.

Anon sleuthe seih þat · and so dude pruyde, 373
And comen with a kene wil · conscience to assaile.
Conscience criede eft · “cleregie, come help me !”
And bad contricion to come · to helpe [kepe] þe 3ate.
“He lith [adreynt],” saide pees · “and so doþ meny
opere ; 377

Peace says
Contrition is
drowned.

The frere with hus fisik · þis folke haþ enchaunted,

360. *And*] He T. *lat*] lateth F ;
letteþ M ; letuþ S ; let T. *to*] hem
to F.

361. *to*] in-to M. *let*] latte E ;
lateth F ; letteþ M ; letuþ S. [*byte*
T] bite EMF ; byde PS.

362. *ouerlonge*] to longe F ; longe
T. *þis*] M om. *lymytour* EFT] ly-
metour S ; lymytur M ; lymatour P.
amende hit] hit amende MS ; it
mende F.

363. *He*] And T. [*3*] EFS] PMT
om. ; see l. 368. *and*] an P. *a*] þan
a F.

364. *a*] F om. *3ow*] 3owe P.

365. *holden*] i-holde ME.

366. *masse*] massus F. *in* (2)]
F om.

368. *þer*] whan F.

369. *hadde*] haue M. *for-3ute*]

for-3ete MFST ; *for3it* E. *wepe*] to
wepe T. *and wake*] at beginning of
l. 370 in T ; as in B-text.

370. *woned*] wonede P ; wont FT ;
i-woned M.

371. *For*] Þoru M ; Þurw F. *hus*]
þis MFS.

372. *kynne*] maner T.

373. *Anon*] T om. *seih*] saw M ;
say FS ; sey E ; seþ T.

374. *assaile*] sayle F.

375. *cleregie*] to clergie to F. *me*]
hym EMFS ; T om.

376. *to* (1)] T om. *to* (2)] & F.
[*kepe* EMST] to kepe F ; P om.

377. [*adreynt* EMF] adraynt S ;
adreyned P ; & dryueliþ T.

378. *enchanted* EMF] enchaunt-
ede P.

And doþ men drynke dwale · þat men dredeþ no synne."

"By crist," quap conscience tho · "ich wol by-come a
pilgryme, 380

Conscience says
he will become a
pilgrim,

And wenden as wide · as the worlde regneþ,

385

To seke peers þe plouhman · þat pruyde myghte
destruye,

and seek Piers
the Plowman.

And [þat] freres hadden a fyndynge · þat for neode
flateren,

And counterpleideþ me, conscience ; · nowe kynde me
a-venge, 384

And sende me hap and hele · til ich haue peers plouh-
man !"

And suthe he gradde after grace · til ich gan a-wake.

The dreamer
awakes.

Hic explicit passus secundus de dobest.

Explicit Peeres Plouheman, scriptum per
Thom. Hunkastre.

379. *dwale*] so in all. þat—no] til þei forȝete T.

380. *tho*] S om.

381. *as*] forth also F. *worlde*] wordle P ; wordl S.

382. *þe*] MFS om. *pruyde myghte*] myȝt pruyd S ; myȝte pride F. *pruyde*] M om.

383. [þat EMFST] þe P. *flateren*]

flaterede F.

384. *counterpleideþ*] counturpleteth F. *kynde*] kende T ; kyng (!) E.

386. *suthe*] siþ EF ; siþþe ST ; seþþe M.

COLOPHON. So P ; EMF omit Hic. S has—Explicit *secundus* & vltimus de dobest ; T has—Explicit ; E adds —incipit passus tercius (!).

CRITICAL NOTES.

CRITICAL NOTES.

[IN the following notes a few points are discussed, particularly with reference to Dr Whitaker's edition, which could not conveniently be considered in the foot-notes to the text. His edition is frequently denoted below by the contraction "Whit."]

PASSUS I. This first portion of the poem is not called "Prologus," as in the A-text and B-text; see the colophon—*Explicit passus primus*—on p. 14.

It would be a long and profitless task to point out the numerous errors in Dr Whitaker's edition, which was printed from the same MS. as the present one, without any intentional alterations. The errors arose from his being unable (*at first*) to read the MS. correctly; and we find accordingly that they diminish in number as he proceeded, so that towards the end he is fairly accurate. I here give, by way of sample, the errors in his first page, which terminates with line 9.

In the Title, for *Petro* Whit. prints *Piers*; an excusable error, as the word is very faint, and requires a good light to be visible.

In l. 3, for *as* Whit. has "a₃;" and for *vnholy*—"unholy" with a *u*, though elsewhere he sometimes follows the MS. in this respect.

In l. 4, for *Ich* (MS. *Ich*), he prints "þt;" for *forth*, "forthe;" for *wonders*, "wondres."

In l. 6, for *Maluerne*, "Malverne" with a *v*; though elsewhere he sometimes follows the MS.

In l. 7, for *byfel*, "by fel" (two words).

In l. 8, for *and*, he has the contraction "&."

The marks of contraction in "somere" (l. 1) and "Merueylously" (l. 9), he attempted to preserve, but they are not well printed. In the first instance, we have "some," with a small dot over the "e"; in the second instance we have "müeylously." His print is, like the MS. itself, devoid of punctuation.

At the bottom of every page his edition has a very full paraphrase of the text above it, which I shall cite as *Paraphrase* or "Whit. Paraph." It is in general well done, but contains some mistranslations.

At the end of his text there are a few pages of Notes, which I shall sometimes cite as "Whit. Notes" or "Whit. Note." Most of these are very unhappy in their suggestions.

I do not undertake to correct all the errors in "Whit. Paraph." or "Whit.

Notes," but shall call attention to a few that seem to require present consideration. The discussion of some of them is reserved.

I may further observe, that it is impossible to point out the exceedingly numerous variations between the C-text and the two preceding it. The numbers **A 1**, **B 1**, &c., denote the pages of these texts, thus enabling the reader to compare them for himself. *Observe, however, the obelus (†) in marginal notes to ll. 6, 16, &c., as this indicates new matter.*

5. *cellis*. "The alliteration requires that the word *cellis* . . . be spelt *sellis*. It is pure Saxon, from *Sellie*, wonderful;" Whit. Note. The MSS. spell it with *c* or *s* indifferently, just as we find *celle* or *selle* in Chaucer's Prologue, l. 172; and it can be nothing but the Lat. *cella*. Cf. "*Selle*, stodyngne howse. *Cella*;" Prompt. Parv. The poet, on the look-out for wonders, applied at various cells for information.

16. *waitede*; Whit. "*wattede*," with the note—"S. *wað*, the act of wandering." But as the MS. has *waitede*, this explanation falls through. The sense is *watched*, or *looked about me*.

33. *cheuede*. The MS. really has "*cheffede*," though *cheffede* is clearly meant. But Whit. prints *chessede*, with the note—"chessede the better, made the better choice; but the printed copies read *cheveden*, throve." By the "printed copies" the editions by Crowley and Owen Rogers are meant, as no others then existed. Of course *chessede* cannot be rightly construed as being the past tense of the strong verb *chesen*, to choose.

76. *eren*, ears. Whit. *eyen*, a misprint.

92. *strayues*; Whit. *strayes*. In all such cases, the correction has the authority of the MS. itself, or else is explained in the foot-notes. Here, for instance, *strayues* is found not only in P., but in three other MSS.; see foot-note.

107—123. This passage is an expansion of four lines in the B-text; viz. B. x. 280—283. The true form of it is shewn in the Ilchester MS., quoted in the foot-note, with a few words supplied by guess. The form in the text can hardly be genuine, as the alliteration almost vanishes. It is a singular fact that this passage is the *only one* which bears even the least trace of having been rewritten by another person than the author. For this reason, I attribute the form of it in the text to a pure accident; and suppose that the original copy was accidentally defaced here, so that the scribes had to reproduce it from memory or from what they could decipher. Hence some lines are more correct than others, and the general sense is fairly well preserved.

It will be observed that MS. F has a different version of lines 117—126.

134. *cauȝt*, MS. *chant*, bad spelling for *cauht* = *caught*. Whit. *chant*, corrected to *chant* in Errata.

140. *muchē*. Miswritten *meche* in P. I may here observe, once for all, that the scribe of P. continually writes *e* for *o*; hence his *meche* really stands for *moche*. Whit. Paraph. has "the *submitted* power of the people;" as if *meche* = *meke* = *meek*. But see the various readings. Indeed, we find the entry "*Meche*, much" in Whit. Glos.

181. *hure way roume*, i. e. make their way roomy, make way for them. The reading *ronne* (Whit.) is a misprint.

200. *cracchen* (MS. *chracchen*, as noted), to scratch. The reading *cranchen* (Whit.) is a misprint. Hence the remark "Cranch, to grind the teeth" (Whit. Glos.) is superfluous.

PASSUS II. 18. "*And brynge forth youre bylyve*. The text is evidently corrupted; it may be reduced to sense by reading—*And bring forth for you bylyve*.¹ MS. B.² reads—

For he highte þow þe erþe to helpe þowe eche one
Of wollen of lynnē of lyvelode at need—

and this sense I have adopted in the Paraphrase." Whit. Note.

"Wherefore also he commanded the elements to produce for you the necessities of life." Whit. Paraph. But the reading is quite right as it stands; for *bylyue* = A.S. *bigleofa*, sustenance.

22. *rekenē*; Whit. *reherce*; a misprint, due to the *reherce* which occurs later in the same line.

25. *þorw*. So in MS.; Whit. *yorowe*.

70. *halsede*. The reading *hanslede* seems a mere error of the scribe. I know of no authority for *hansle* in this sense.

79. *teche*; Whit. *tethe*, which he explains by "tether, fasten." But there is no mark of contraction in the MS., which agrees with others in reading *teche*.

86. *graunty*; Whit. *gramity*. His Glossary has—"Gramity, grief or anger." There is no such word.

102. *David by hus daies*; "David, sitting at his high table;" Whit. Paraph. But *by hus daies*, like the *in his dayes* of the B-text, means *in his time*.

114. "Why would the wretched Lucifer leap aloft on the side of the north *rather than* sit on the south?" Whit. Paraph. "My commentary is justified by MS. B. [Phillipps 8252] which reads *rather than*;" Whit. Note. This is undoubtedly correct; see the foot-note.

124. "He was, MS. For this nonsense we must read *Hyndes*, i. e. labourers on holidays, and when idle, court heat; but when employed in labour, defy the cold." Whit. Note. This explanation is quite correct in idea, but the word meant is clearly *Hewes*, which means the same thing as *Hyndes*.

162. *comseþ*; Whit. *coniseþ*. "*Conise*, to teach; to cause to con or know;" Whit. Glos. There is no such word. On the other hand, Whit. also gives "*Comse*, to commence;" which is right.

a myghte; Whit. *Almyghte*, printed in red letters; a word probably coined to help to explain the preceding *coniseþ*.

164. *let hus*; Whit. *leth us*; a printer's error, and corrected in Errata.

¹ i. e. quickly, soon.

² i. e. MS. Phillipps 8252.

175. *3e*; Whit. *pe*. Probably a printer's error, as the Paraph. has "ye go hence."

PASSUS III. 10. *Hue*. "He and *hue* are frequently confounded in the MS.;" Whit. Note, correctly.

18. *layn nat*, conceal (it) not. "*Layne*, to forbear;" Whit. Glos. The latter is hardly accurate.

61. *Forgoers*. The reading *Vorgheours* (P.) is probably a mere error, as all the B-text MSS. have *Forgoeres*, i. e. goes before. The explanation "*Vorgeurs*, vergers" (Whit. Glos.) may be doubted.

69. *liere*; Whit. *here*. "*Then leep here forth*; so MS. A; but MS. B and printed copies *lyer*, which gives the true sense;" Whit. Note. I am obliged to note this, because I deny that our MS. has *here*; it is written *liere* plainly enough.

73. *vnfeelde*, unfolded. Whit. has *unseeled*, with the explanation "un-sealed." This is not the reading of the MS., nor can it be right. See l. 114.

89. *cheste*. Whit. *Thefte*. "On looking more attentively at the MS. I find the word is *Cheste*, i. e. debate, and with this the printed ed. agrees. *Theft* is mentioned below" [l. 92]; Whit. Note.

116. The reading *tuemede* is clearly a mere error for *tuenede*, as the substantive *tene* is elsewhere spelt *tuene* in the MS. "Then Theology departed;" Whit. Paraph. "*Troeme*, to depart. Perhaps mis-spelt for *twene* or *twine*;" Whit. Glos. The two last remarks are wrong, as is easily proved by observing the various readings.

145. *moillere*; Whit. *moillexe*; a misprint; see l. 120.

150. *en-ioynen*; "enjoin it;" Whit. Paraph. But Whit. Note says—"Perhaps it may mean join them together"—which alone is right.

185. *permuten*; Whit. *punniten*, explained by "punish." I know of no such verb as *punnite*.

196. *tome*, i. e. leisure; Whit. *time*, wrongly.

200. *bote*; Whit. *lute*, explained by "let alone;" wrongly.

211. *Go*; Whit. *To*; but such is not the reading of the MS.

217. *dene*; MS. *duene*, meaning *din*, not *doom*, as explained by Whit. Yet *dome* is certainly another reading; see B-text. Whit. Glos. has—"Duene, probably from S. *dwinan*, tabescere. Chaucer has *dwinden* in the same sense. Hence the modern *dwindle*." To what passage this refers I am unable to say; it is due to some mistake.

236. *gommes*, gums; Whit. *gomes*, explained by "sorts of men." This error is corrected in Whit. Note.

PASSUS IV. 61. *scape*, harm; Whit. *scape*, explained by "sin."

68. *graynyge*; Whit. *guyynge*. Yet his paraphrase has "engraving."

86. *parcel-mele*, by small portions at a time, by retail; not "mixed meal," as in Paraph. This error is, however, corrected in Whit. Note.

125. *askes*; so in MS.; Whit. *ashes*.

179. *nauht*; so in MS.; Whit. *nuuh*.

208. *Vnsyttynge*; so in MS. (rightly); Whit. *Unfyttynge*.

224. *knowep*. The reading *knowest pou* (as in I and F) is better than that in the text, as it agrees better with the reading *pi* in l. 225.

241. *werdes*; so in MS.; Whit. *wordes*. "The reading of MS. B. [Phillipps 8252], viz. *hus weirdis*, throws full light on this otherwise unintelligible passage. *Weirdis* are fates, as the weird sisters are the Parcae;" Whit. Note. The note is right, but the difficulty would not have arisen had the MS. been rightly read.

244. *ys pat*; Whit. *pis pat*, with the remark, in the Notes, that "this reading is plainly corrupted." It must have been a misprint, which he did not recognize as such.

282. *nedes*; according to Whit. Note, it is miswritten *neder*. Yet the MS. has *nedes* quite plainly.

292. *and* is miswritten *a* in P., and also in E. and S. Whit. also proposes to read *and*, which he states to be the reading of MS. Phillipps 8252. He explains it correctly thus—"Mede and reward are two different things, but men judge that both are earned by some service or other, whether good or bad [rather, whether secretly or otherwise];" Whit. Note. See l. 335.

319. *ys*; Whit. omits, probably by accident.

326. *vp-on*; so MS.; Whit. *on*.

331. *So pat god geueþ no þyng þat synne ne ys þe glose*. "A different sense, and most probably the true one, is given by MS. B. [Phillipps 8252]—*So god geveþ a þyng þat sinne is þe glose*—that is, conditionally; with a clause of revocation." Whit. Note. A little reflection will shew that the two negatives in our text really destroy each other, so that the sense in the two MSS. is not "different," but the same.

347. This line, and the quotation above it, are omitted in Whit.; probably by accident. They are to be found in the MS.

355. *suweþ*; so in MS.; Whit. *sheweþ*.

367. *cacche*; so in MS.; Whit. *tacche*. "To tack two together without cause;" Whit. Paraph. This cannot be right; note the alliteration.

393. *pecunie*, money; MS. *peccunie*; Whit. *pectinne*. Whit. proposes to read *penninge*, which he explains by "penny." No alteration is needed.

462. *acchett*; so MS.; Whit. *attchett*.

PASSUS V. 23. *peitrel*; so MS.; Whit. *pettrel*.

35. *pei wolle*; Whit. *peir wol*, but corrected to *pei wolle* in Errata.

55. Whit. notes that MS. Phillipps 8252 also reads *badly*, which is undoubtedly right.

58. *hewes*; MS. *hywes*. "To kill my *sheep*;" Whit. Paraph. "I understood the word to mean *ewes*, but in MS. B. [Phil. 8252] the word is *Hynyn*, hinds, or herdmen;" Whit. Note. "For *sheep* read *hinds*;" Whit. Errata.

65. *moche*; Whit. *mocke*; prob. a misprint.

73. *myd*; so in MS.; Whit. *wyd*.

111. *whucche*; MS. *wucche*; Whit. *wurche*. It merely means a hutch or box, A.S. *hwæcce*.

112. *cherissing*; MS. indistinct; Whit. *chëssing*. But he notes that MS. Phillipps 8252 has *cherishinge*; there can be no doubt about the reading.

113. The sense is—And till the holiness of ribalds be most observed upon a high holiday. *Ferye* is the Lat. *feria*; and *an* = on, as usual. Whitaker's note is preposterous. He says, "The Saxon *fere* is a carriage, and the verb is *feran* or *ferian*, so that I have no doubt that the meaning is—Until the pretended sanctity of harlots be carted aloft." In his Glossary he has "*Ferye*, to carry," without any explanation as to how *ferye* can be used as a *past participle*.

182. *manslauht*; so in MS.; Whit. *manslaugh*.

189. *unsittyng*; so in MS.; Whit. *unsemyng*. Cf. Critical Note above to iv. 208.

191. *legge*; so in MS.; Whit. *laye*.

196. *awakede*; Whit. *awakeden*, but corrected in Errata.

PASSUS VI. 1. *god wot*; so Whit., and rightly. Yet the MS. really has *wot god*, as noted in the foot-note.

13. *coke*; so in MS.; Whit. *loke*.

25. *a*; Whit. omits. It is, in the MS., squeezed in between the words *as* and *workeman*, as if it had been omitted at first.

59. *it*; "*it* is an error of the transcriber; MS. B. [Phillipps 8252] has *pei*;" Whit. Note. It is no error, but the usual idiom.

111. In the margin of the MS. is written "*sermo*;" this denotes the beginning of the account of Reason's sermon.

132. *wyuen*; Whit. *wynen*. The MS. may be read either way; but Whit. notes that MS. B. [Phil. 8252] has *wywyn*, and proposes to alter his reading to *wyuen*. The reading *wyfen* in E is equally conclusive. See also the B-text.

138. *wynnyng*. Whit. Paraph. has "whining," but this is corrected in his note, where he says, "perhaps the meaning may be—Let no attention to gain (winning) bring your children to loss in their best interests." This is nearer the mark, but he does not clearly say whether *for-wene* is one word or two. It is a verb implying "spoil."

146. Whit. notes that MS. B. [Phil. 8252] reads *stowyd*.

186. Whit. Paraph. wrongly takes *on* as a preposition, but this is corrected in his note, where he says—"That *one* understanding and *one* will keep watch and ward for all alike." There is no doubt that *on* = *one* here.

197. *man*; Whit. omits; but it is in the MS.

PASSUS VII. 36, 37. Whit. omits the last half of l. 36 and the first half of l. 37, clearly owing to the recurrence of the word *my-self*.

60. *be*. "The word *be* is evidently omitted;" Whit. Note.

103. MS. P. has "*Confessio ire. confessio ire*;" the words of the title

being thus repeated, not only here, but wherever else the titles of the seven sins occur.

130. *have*; so in MS.; Whit. omits.

133. "And made battles out of squabbles;" Whit. Paraph. "Jowtes" is explained by "jolts" in Whit. Glos. But the real meaning of *joutes* is a kind of pottage; see "*Jowtys*, potage" in Prompt. Parv.

149. Whit. notes that this line is miswritten in our MS., and that the MS. B. [Phil. 8252] has the reading "*hore*," which he follows in his paraphrase, correctly.

152. *felle*; Whit. *folle*. Indeed, the MS. looks more like *folle* than *felle*; but the other MSS. are clear enough, and Whit. notes that *felle* is the reading of his MS. B.

154. The variation in F is curious. "The chief addition is in the two lines—

& ȝit [*read ȝif*] I spak no speche · it swal so my breste,
þat I chewed it as a cowe · þat code [*i. e. cud*] chewith ofte.

These are much in the author's manner, and look as if they are genuine. In fact, the former line is merely B. v. 119 in another shape; and the latter has a slight resemblance to C. ii. 191. The notion of comparing Wrath's silent broodings over his supposed wrongs to a cow's chewing of the cud is excellent.

179—194. Designedly omitted by Whitaker. His note says—"eighteen lines are here omitted," &c. He should have said—"sixteen lines."

226. *and podyng*; Whit. *apoding*. "Oriel MS. reads *and pudding*, which is right;" Whit. Note. The real reading of our MS. is *apodyng*, miswritten for *& podyng*. This should have been stated in my footnote.

312. *lacke*, fail; so MS.; Whit. *lache*, by a misprint.

314. *beggen*; Whit. *begger*, wrongly.

322. *reddere*; so MS.; Whit. *reddite*.

335. *fonk*, spark; Whit. *fouk*. "*Fouke*, Fr. *fouke* of *fuyer*, spark of fire;" Whit. Glos. What the *French* word here referred to is I hardly know; it is of more importance to observe that the O.E. *fonk* is merely the Dutch *vonk*.

342. *hauest*, so in MS.; Whit. omits.

370. *portours*; Whit. *porcours*; "pig-drivers," Whit. Paraph. The MSS. read *portours*, *porteres*, *porters*, &c.

398—402. Designedly omitted by Whitaker, who refers the reader to Crowley.

411. *liftynge*; Whit. *lysting*, which is left unexplained.

412—414. Designedly omitted by Whitaker.

PASSUS VIII. 2. *sitte*; Whit. *sute*. Whit. almost always prints *ut* for *itt*. So, in l. 174, for *sitten* he has *suten*.

7. *Rascled*; Whit. *Rastled*.

8. *renk*; Whit. *reuk*, here and elsewhere. "Rouke or Reuke, a man.

S.;" Whit. Glos. By "S." he means Anglo-Saxon. But the A.S. form is *rins*.

23. Accidentally omitted in Whitaker.

36. *yf*. The alliteration shows that this word is to be pronounced *yif*.

58. *flatte*; so in MS.; Whit. *slatte*. "*Slatt*, i. e. splashed;" Whit. Paraph. "*Slatte*, to splash. *Lancashire*;" Whit. Glos. But the alliteration is decisive against all this, on the one hand; and, on the other, the MSS. all have *flatte*.

87. *As god wole*; in MS. P. only. It is written in red ink, and added at the end of the line, after *brynge*.

92. *kenne*; Whit. *kennes*, but corrected in Errata.

137. *secte*; Whit. *seete*, perhaps a misprint, as in l. 141 it is *secte*.

141. *was*; so in MS.; Whit. omits.

155. *A*; Whit. *I*; perhaps a misprint. For *clene* (l. 156) he has *dere*.

161. *paynym*; "an error of the transcriber. MS. B. reads *Palmere*;" Whit. Note. It is no error, but a very curious variation between MSS. of the B-type and the C-type.

185. *seruen*; so in Whit. The MS. accidentally has *seren*.

254. *yn in*; so in MS.; Whit. *yn*. It means—"to enter in this way."

255. *sytle*; Whit. omits.

265. *deuh*. Most MSS. read *dewe* or *dew*; so also in B-text. Whit. proposes to read *deuel*, i. e. devil; but no MS. has such a reading.

305. *care*; Whit. *can*, wrongly.

PASSUS IX. 52. *disours*, storytellers; Whit. *dicours*, explained *dicers*; wrongly.

68. *maugre*; Whit. *in angre*. The *m* happens to be written a little way off the *a* in the MS.

90. *worching*; "the sense evidently requires, that for *worching* be read *wording*;" Whit. Note. This is an excellent suggestion, and I have no doubt it is correct. My only reason for not introducing it into the text is that all the MSS. agree in the mistake.

127. *pe deuel haue þat recche*; Whit. *pe devel haue þe retche*; "the devil may take the wretch for me;" Whit. Paraph. The sense is somewhat different, viz. the devil take him who cares (reckes). Here *þe* is evidently an error for *þat*, the reading of all other MSS., and *recche* is the 3 p. s. pr. subjunctive mood.

153. *fecchen*; Whit. *setthen*, wrongly.

156. *þo*; Whit. omits, probably by accident.

158. In this line, he omits the word *of*.

185. *hem*; Whit. omits.

188. *he botnede*, he bettered. Strictly speaking, the *n* belongs to the intransitive form; but the B-text has *were botnede*, which exhibits the same error in another form. "I once thought the letter *n* in this word redundant, and that it was *botede*. I am now persuaded that it means *buttoned* (!), that

is, bound up, or cured of their pretended ailments;" Whit. Note. This is out of the question; the O.E. *botoun* was generally used to signify the bud of a flower; and I suspect the verb *to button* is comparatively modern.

216. *final*; Whit. *smal*. He misread it.

261. *here bylyue byswynken*, toil for their livelihood. Whit. says—"either *he* is redundant, or must be read *hem*;" note. But *he* is for "*here*," a not uncommon error with scribes, who, after writing "*he*," forgot to make the little curl above. Whit. was puzzled by the word *bylyue*, which he took to mean *early*; cf. note to Pass. ii. 18, above.

262. *þorgh*; Whit. *porgh*, a misprint.

328. *Coket*. The *C* is rather small; hence Whit. misread it *soket*.

351. The MSS. seem, in general, to have *vm.*, not *viii.* It is hardly possible to say what is meant.

353. *dep—derthe*. "The words appear to be inverted; after *dearth* shall come *death*. I leave the enigma to more sagacious guessers;" Whit. Note. Whatever difficulty there may be in the passage, this line, at any rate, is clear; and it is right as it stands. It is well known that the plague called "the Death" was *followed* by a famine, owing to the very cause which the poet specifies, viz. a want of labourers and consequent insubordination amongst them. The prophecy was doubtless written *after the event*.

PASSUS X. 1. *sente*; omitted by Whit. in his text, but added in his Errata. It probably "dropped out" at press.

3. *a culpa*; so in MS.; Whit. omits *a*. See l. 23.

88. *ich wot*; Whit. *wit wot*, corrected in Errata.

147. *ys*; so in MS.; Whit. omits; but he has *ys is* in l. 146.

182. *falle*; Whit. *shall falle*. There is no *shall* in the MS.

247. Whit. notes that the reading of his MS. B. is also *Comynge*.

277. *þo*. Whit. proposes to read *lo*; I do not know why.

300. *which*; Whit. *with*. But the MS. has *wich*, the scribe's usual spelling of *which*.

305. *dyuinede*; Whit. *dymnede*, which he explains by "dreamed;" I do not know why.

PASSUS XI. 40. *sitteþ*; Whit. *suteþ*; as usual.

76. *þridde*, third; Whit. *pridde*, a printer's error; yet it is repeated in l. 102.

90. *þat 3e*; Whit. *þaty e (sic)*; a misprint.

94. *adoune*; so in MS.; Whit. *down*.

96. It means—"such men think that, because of their muck (i. e. wealth) and their moveable property," &c. Not as in Whit. Paraph.—"Lords regard such men as no better than dung or cattle."

101. *diuinede*; Whit. *dimnede*, which he translates by "determined;" see note to x. 305 above.

173. *in þe herte*; though the MS. omits *in*, there is a small blank space left for it.

189. *to kepe*; so in MS. (correctly); Whit. *to kepe*. This mistake is the same as that remarked upon in my edition of Chaucer's *Astrolabe*, p. xxviii. l. 10.

212. *Caym*; Whit. *Cayin*. But what would then become of Wycliffe's joke about C. A. I. M meaning Carmelites, Augustines, Jacobins, and Minorites? See P. Pl. Crede, note to l. 486. Besides, the MSS. all have *Caym*.

233. The sense is—"here the son paid the penalty of his grandfather's offences." Whit. Paraph. has—"the sins of the ancestor bought (punishment for) the son;" which reverses the cases of the substantives. In his Note he says—"I can assign no other sense to this difficult passage." Yet *abie* is a common word in Early English, and still commoner is its corrupted form *abide* in the phrase "thou shalt dear *abide* it." Cf. the Lat. quotation at l. 235.

266. *knyght*; Whit. *kyght*, a misprint.

275. *cheste*, i. e. strife. Whit. Paraph. "chests;" but in his note he says—"Perhaps the word is here meant to be equivocal; *chests* or *quarrels*, which last is the oldest sense." That is, he withdraws his first explanation.

286. *lykyng*, pleasant. Whit. Paraph. "sticking." Whit. note has—"The comparison being with birdlime, proves the meaning to be what I have assigned to it, i. e. licking or sticking fast." No example, however, is added of *lick* in the sense of *sticking fast*.

304. Whit. gives two wrong explanations of this line, one in the Paraph., and one in the Notes. He did not see that *my friend* is in the vocative case.

306. *lene*; so in MS.; Whit. *lere*.

307. *zeme*, to take care of; Whit. *zeine*, which he translates by *gain*; wrongly.

PASSUS XII. 26. *seith*; Whit. omits. It is in the MS.

38. *ballede*, i. e. bald. Whit. Paraph. has "worthy of a ballad."

69. *delep*, distributes, gives away. Whit. has *nedeþ*, by some mistake.

76. *nou*, i. e. now; Whit. *non*.

79. *hit*, so in MS.; Whit. *lut*.

95. *comsynges*, i. e. commencings, beginnings; Whit. *conisynges*, wrongly.

97. *of scripture* must be governed by *comsynges*; "he knows the beginnings (sources) of Dowell, Dobet, and Dobest (for he is known as a doctor), and of scripture," &c. The passage is the same in all the MSS.; but the truth is, that the author has revised the passage very unskilfully. The B-text is better and clearer in every way. Whit. supposes a line to have been lost; but that will not much mend matters.

101. *þat þat*; so in MS.; Whit. *þat*.

104. *to gyfte*, as a gift; so in MS.; Whit. *to gyste*; Whit. Paraph. "for his performance;" which probably was obtained by putting *gyste* = *geste*, i. e. a tale.

151. Whit. omits the first *and*; but it is in the MS.

158—160. Whit. Paraph. is all wrong here.

163. *panne*; MS. The. "*The* is evidently *tho*, i. e. then;" Whit. Note. No doubt this is the right account of the false reading *The. shewede*, Whit. *she wede*; a misprint.

167. *worth*; so in Whit.; but MS. has *warth*. However, *worth* is right.

210. *letturre*; so in MS.; Whit. *lettere*.

224. *ne þy connynge, scripture*; "or thy learned scriptures;" Whit. Paraph. But *scripture* is here in the vocative case.

230. *of þis molde*, i. e. of this world; as usual. Whit. Paraph. has "of this stamp" [mould]; wrongly.

232. *At*; Whit. *Act*; prob. a misprint.

233. *not*; Whit. *not*; but corrected in Errata.

245. *holychurche* should rather be *holy kirke*; unfortunately MS. I (which commonly has this spelling) is imperfect here. Our author uses *both* forms, viz. *chirche* and *kirke*; see xiii. 51.

248. *culorum*; so in MS.; Whit. *culor*, on which he has most extraordinary remarks. Thus—"the keelers in this case" is his translation in Paraph., and his Note says—"The *culor* of this cause may however mean the figure or type, but I prefer the other interpretation." It is right as it stands, being a contraction for *in secula seculorum*, a common ending of prayers, and hence, any tag-end or sequel.

257. *seynt*; Whit. omits, by mistake.

273. *pyne*; Whit. *þyne*; corrected in Errata.

291, 292. Whit. omits these two lines; but they are represented in his Paraphrase. In his Notes, however, he makes an alteration, shewing that he was completely puzzled. It is easy to see what happened. He no doubt transcribed the lines, and paraphrased them; but the printer omitted them in the text, owing to the repetition of the word *þy-leyue*, at the end of lines 290 and 292. Hence his bewilderment.

PASSUS XIII. 32. *vndertoke*, reproved; *vndernome* occurs with the same sense. Whit. Paraph. has "attempted."

36. *þow*; Whit. *yow*. But *yow* is the accus. case.

52. *vnderfong*, received; Whit. Paraph. has "undertook for me."

73. *werkes*; Whit. omits; but it is added in the Errata.

88. The inverted commas (") shew the *beginning* of the speech of Recklessness; the *end* is at P. xiv. l. 128, on p. 238, 18 pages further on.

116. *loue we as*; MS. *loue as*; Whit. *loves*, corrected to *love as* in Errata.

121. *lome*, often; Whit. *loine*, wrongly. His Paraph. has "long since," which points to Fr. *loin* as being the word he was thinking of.

132. *secte*, sect, company; Whit. *sette* (wrongly), which he translates "seat."

180. *ne spik on strawe curne*, nor any spike (shoot) form a kernel (or

grain) upon the top of the straw; not as in Whit. Paraph. "nor spike corn (produce corn) upon the straw." *Spik* is the sb., and *curne* the verb.

204—207. The only incomplete passage in this text. Line 206 is from the Ilchester MS., and is incomplete because the rats have eaten the end of it. The missing portion must have been like what I have suggested in the foot-note. The sense is—"For Christ said to his saints, that for His sake suffered poverty, penance, and persecution of body, (they) shall have the more honour for their reward, and be esteemed more worthy than angels; in their affliction He greeted them on this wise, viz. your sorrow shall be turned into joy." It deserves to be particularly noted that, in our author, as in Hampole, the word *anger* means *affliction* or *distress*, and just answers to the Latin *tristitia*. In l. 207, Whit. misprints *grate* for *grette*, but explains it rightly.

209. *wyrdes*, fates. Whit. Paraph. has "words," but this is corrected in the Notes, with the remark that Gawain Douglas has *wyrdes* in the same sense.

221. *As*; so MS.; Whit. *Ac. pere-Ionettes*; Whit. *pere-ronettes*, wrongly; Whit. Paraph. "pear-rennets." See the articles on *Hastiveau*, *Hastivel* in Cotgrave's French Dictionary, which will be quoted hereafter.

229. *as*; so MS.; Whit. *us. wose*, i. e. ooze, mud; Whit. Paraph. "old walls;" but corrected in Notes.

PASSUS XIV. l. 5. *3ut men rat þat*, i. e. Yet people read that. Whit. notes that his MS. B. [Phil. 8252] has—

"But men seye that Abraham and Iob were ful riche."

26. *lacke*, i. e. blame; not "desire," as in Whit. Par.

34—37. Whit. omits. See the foot-note.

104. *awaunced*; MS. *amanced*, wrongly. Whit. has *amanced*, but in his Paraph. has "advanced," which shews that he got at the right reading by collation with his other MSS.

118. *þat lettere*; MS. *þe letteres*; Whit. *þe lettere*, an emendation probably suggested by collation.

121. *god*; Whit. omits. Hence the extraordinary entry in his Glossary—"Goky-by, a fool's fellow." But see l. 120.

169. *Dompynges*; Whit. *Dom þynges*, paraphrased by "dumb things" (!).

171, 172. I shall only remark here that Whitaker's explanations of *caukede* by *screamed*, and *strenede* by *strained*, are both utterly wrong.

241. *a-shamed*; MS. *a-shamede*; Whit. *a-shemed*. Whit. also omits the word *vp* in this line, though it is in the MS.

PASSUS XV. l. 21. It means—"And for holy church (to be) a help to whores." *Horen* is the gen. pl. There is no difficulty at all, though Whit. wanted to read *horie helpers*, and to explain it by "hoary-headed helpers of holy church." Fortunately, no MS. differs from the text.

25. *wokie*, so in MS. A difficult word, but the same form occurs again elsewhere, viz. in xvii. 332, where it seems to answer to Sc. *wauk*, O.E. *walke*,

to full cloth. Whit. proposes the meanings (1) moisten; (2) irrigate; (3) *whicke* = *quick*, "a word still used in Lancashire for weeding fallow-lands." The last of these is out of the question.

41. *hym-self*; Whit. *hym*. But *self* is in the MS.

96. *a shewere of blisse*, lit. a shewer (discloser) of bliss; though O.E. *shewere* also means *a mirror*. Whit. Par. has—"when a shower of glory shone," &c.; but showers do not *shine*. MS. G. reads *as he were* (!), evidently miscopied.

97. *with*; Whit. *mith*, no doubt a misprint.

106. *swimmen*; MS. "swīmēn;" not "swūmēn," as in Whit. See l. 108.

112. *synegy*; so in MS.; Whit. *syngēp*.

131. "Where ignorant thieves are hung, look how they (who can read, and so obtain benefit of clergy) are saved!" Not as in Whit. Paraph. "while ignorant thieves have been tucked up, howsoever their souls were saved."

150. *tulde*; so in MS.; Whit. *culde*. His Paraph. has "*could not*, i. e. could not (be plunged so) deep." But *tulde* simply means *dwelt*; lit. had his *till* or *tent*.

157. *Quare placuit, quia*; so in MS.; Whit. has—"Quasi placuit, quare."

173. Whit. suggests that *is* after *That* is redundant; but it is because he wholly misapprehends the passage.

195. Whit. omits this line, yet it appears in his Paraph.

PASSUS XVI. 2. *feye*, fated to die, half dead. It is quite correct. Whit. proposes to read *freye*, i. e. free, at large, as he explains it. But the old spelling of *free* would be *fre*, not *freye*.

4. *meteles*; so in MS.; Whit. *metele*, wrongly; for *meteles* is in the singular number.

13. Whit. omits this line, and his Paraph. is wrong in consequence.

48. *myswonne*, won amiss, gained by cheating; Whit. Paraph. "mislike;" wrongly.

55. *mette*; so in MS.; Whit. *meite*. It means *mate*.

84. *poledede*, suffered; Whit. *poledede*, a misprint.

100. *mortreuous*, i. e. *mortreus* (see Chaucer's Prologue); Whit. *mortreinus*, corrected in Errata to *mortuis*, which is still wrong.

121. *preynte*, winked, made a sign; Whit. Par. "pressed;" wrongly.

122. *wil*; Whit. *wel*, but corrected in Errata.

127. *uocabitur*; so in MS.; Whit. *habebitur*.

139. *By-for*, so in MS., but not plainly written; Whit. *Ey for*.

155. "I might, if I wished, win all France;" not as in Whit. Par. "Fair words such as *I wish* and *I will*, had won all France."

156. "Without destruction of men;" not as in Whit. Par. "without any speech [bruit?] of burning towns" (!).

163. *burne*, man; Whit. *barne*, wrongly.
 171. *disours*, tale-teller's; not "dicer's," as in Whit. Par. Cf. ix. 52.
 207. *Iogelen*, juggle; MS. *Iogelyn*; Whit. *iägelyn*.
 219. *founde ich*, if I found; not "I have discovered," as in Whit. Par.
 257. *ondyng*, smelling. Whit. Note says, "I am compelled to leave it in uncertainty;" but his Glos. gives the correct meaning.
 292. *lo*; so in MS.; Whit. *to*.
 301. *wroper-hele*, misfortune; not "too angry an hell," as in Whit. Par.
 307. *hem*; Whit. *hen*, but corrected in Errata.

PASSUS XVII. 12. *muchē*; preserved in MS.; Whit. omits.

15. *A-furst and a-fyngred*, athirst and ahungred; Whit. Par. has—"frost-bitten, and with blains on their fingers" (!).

19. *myghtest*; Whit. *myghtes*. Whit. Par. "For thou Almighty hast made," &c., which is quite wrong; so also is his Note.

20. For *and lyue*, Whit. would read *pat lyue*. Not so; the MSS. are right.

23. *mercy*; Whit. *money*; but Par. "mery," correctly.

25. *clanse*, cleanse; the sentence means—"to cleanse our souls with." Whit. has *clause*; and Whit. Par. "that we may close with our own souls;" wrongly.

36. *Chartere*; Whit. *sharter*. Cf. note above to ix. 328.

50. *can*; retained in MS.; Whit. omits.

55. *illorum*; Whit. *morum*, corrected in Errata.

59. *mancion*, mansion, dwelling; not "mention," as in Whit. Par.

73. *rentes*; Whit. *rente*, wrongly.

76. *whitel*, blanket; not "knife," as in Whit. Par.

78. *weylawey*; Whit. *weylaweþ*, corrected in Errata.

139. *altoun*; MS. *haultone*; but all other MSS. omit the aspirate. Whit. Note says—"Halton in Cheshire, formerly infamous to a proverb, as an haunt of robbers;" an assertion of which he offers no proof. But it means Alton in Hampshire, as will be shewn at length hereafter.

143. *nyghtes*. The alliteration shews that this is right, and not *myghtes*, as in MS. P. Besides, the reference is to a poor traveller, who knows not whom he may meet in the dark.

171. *woise*, voice; Whit. *noise*, wrongly; see foot-note.

191. *chepe*, i.e. buy, barter for; Whit. *chesse* (wrongly), which he explains by "chuse."

197. *feye*, dying, dead. Whit. proposes to read *fere* or *ferre*; his Par. has—"leave the flesh far away." Cf. note above to xvi. 2.

226. *swelleþ*; Whit. *dwelleþ*, wrongly.

250. *more*, root; not "moor, i. e. soil," as in Whit. Par.

265. *a*; appears in MS.; Whit. omits.

311. *to*; appears in MS.; Whit. omits.

332. *wokeþ*; so in MS.; Whit. *workeþ*.

340. *sitteþ*; Whit. *suteþ*; he often puts *ut* for *ill*.

350. Whit. Note says—"I am now persuaded that the word *walketh* ought to end the sentence, and that the next line is to be connected with what follows." This hardly seems to go so well.

354. *secte*; Whit. *seate*, wrongly; cf. note above to xiii. 132.

365. *knownen*; for this word, Whit. prints *answer*; but, oddly enough, his Paraph. has "know."

PASSUS XVIII. 1. 37. *seyde*, said; Whit. *deyde*, which he explains by "did."

44. *for*; appears in MS.; Whit. omits.

71. *purnele*, i. e. Purnel, a common name for a concubine. There is no need, with Whit., to alter it to *purple*.

78. *pese*; it should have been noted that the MS. has *pes*. Whit. prints *pei*, which is false grammar.

95. *lyft*, sky; Whit. *lyst*, which he explains by "the catalogues of the heavenly bodies" (!).

101. *notye*, use; not "note down in their accounts," as in Whit. Par.

118. *ouerhuppe*, lit. hop over, i. e. omit; Whit. *overshuppe*, which he explains by "overskip."

212. It means—"How those accursed Christians worshipped wealth and riches;" Whit. Par. has a singular interpretation, but he corrects it in the Notes.

218. Whitaker's suggestion that the misreading *To* at the beginning of this line in P. was due to the *To* in the line above, is doubtless correct.

226. *preye*; Whit. *greye*, a misprint. So is his *and* for *3e* (l. 227), and *pe* for *3e* (l. 228).

258. Whit. has two misprints in this line; he omits *a*, and prints *as* for the second *in*.

261. Whit. omits *of* before *damaskee*, but it is in the MS.

277. Here Whit. has an odd mistake. He misprints *forbusur* for *forbusne*, and explains it by *furbisher*! It means an *example*. In his Glossary he strangely mixes up the right and wrong explanations; he has—"Forbusus, Forbusur [neither of which forms occur], Forbusene, appear to mean an example or illustration; perhaps it may only mean furbisher."

312. *lore*, teaching; Whit. *love*, wrongly.

320. *lytulum* and *lytulum*; written *lytulhum* and *lytulum*, by mistake. Upon this error, however, Whit. built up the following most amazing explanation, which is found in his paraphrase, at p. 303. I do not at all understand how he makes it out, but here it is. "Bishops and priests should try if they can also teach them little hum, i. e. I Hu M and Little um, i. e. Xum—Jesus Christ his Son." This extraordinary guess can seldom have been surpassed.

PASSUS XIX. 3. *me*; Whit. *em*, a misprint.

5. *Herber*, herbarium or herb-garden; not "harbour," as in Whit. Par.
 13. *hym*; Whit. *pem*, wrongly.
 18. *3e fouche*; MS. *3e foweche*; Whit. *3ef owiche*, a misprint.
 31. *hem*; Whit. *pem*, wrongly.
 44. *ronges*, rounds; not "shafts" or "upright posts," as in Whit. Par. and Glos.
 64. *sonner*, sooner; Whit. *somme*; but corrected in Errata.
 67. *by*; Whit. *dy*; a misprint.
 75. *crop*, top, not "fruit," as in Whit. Par. *tree*; Whit. *tres*, wrongly.
 108. *vrie*; Whit. *trie*, wrongly.
 119. *shoriere*, shorer or prop; Whit. *shouer*, which he explains by "shower" (!).
 126. *Iouken*; so in MS. and in B-text; Whit. *rouken*.
 137. *ar*, ere; Whit. *as*, wrongly. But his Par. has "before."
 140. *yseye*, seen; not "I say," as in Whit. Par.
 165. *3orn*, lit. ran; *3orn in*, ran amongst, pervaded; cf. *porsuede* in the line following. It cannot mean "yearned" (as in Whit. Par.), because *yearn* is a weak verb. Cf. note below to xxii. 380.
 193. *surlepes*, separate; miswritten *surlepees* in MS. Whit. Par. has the very extraordinary suggestion that *surlepes* = *sur le pes* = *sur le thèse*, i. e. "subjects of disputation in the schools" (!). Fortunately, his Note says he has "no high opinion" of this explanation.

- PASSUS XX. 1. *spire*; MS. *spirr*; Whit. *spur*.
 12. *pece*; Whit. *peece*. *roche*; Whit. *rocke*.
 16. Whit. suggests the reading I have given.
 34. Whit. omits *her*, but it is in the MS.
 42. *in o*; so in MS.; Whit. *mo*, whence the error in his Par.—"in more lords."
 66. *perceyuede*; misprinted *preyvede* in Whit.
 112, 113. Whit. omits from *and 3ut* in l. 112 to *fust* in l. 113, no doubt owing to the recurrence of the word *fust*.
 118—120. Here again Whit. omits three lines, owing to the recurrence of the word *bytokneþ*.
 151. *hit*; occurs in MS.; Whit. omits.
 169. Whit. omits *a*, and misprints *wike* for *weke*.
 188, 189. Whit. omits from *byggyne* in l. 188 to *gost* in l. 189, owing to the repetition of *holy gost*.
 211. *pou*; Whit. *you*, wrongly: for *you* is never a nom. case in Langland.
 240. MS. has *a-tenye*, both here and in l. 244. In l. 240 Whit. prints *atemye*, but in l. 244 *a-tenye*; in the Errata, he proposes to read *attennye*.
 243. *hem*; Whit. *hew*; a misprint, corrected in Errata.
 275. *nouthe*, now; Whit. *nauthe*, which he explains by *not*, thus reversing the sense.
 296. *paye*; Whit. *praye*, wrongly.

307. *Kowep*, cougheth; Whit. has *Knowep*, but it is corrected in Errata and Notes.

PASSUS XXI. 1. *wetschod*; MS. *wetschode*; Whit. *weitschode*.

2. *renke*; Whit. *reuke*, wrongly.

12. *ycouped*; MS. *ycoped*; Whit. *ytoped*, which he explains by "topped"

36. *here beyer ryght*, i. e. the rights of both of them; *beyer* means *of both*, and is the gen. pl. Whit. seems to have supposed it to be another form of *buyer*; at any rate, he explains it by "their undertaker or champion" (!). See, however, the note to l. 374, below.

82. *lore* = *lorn*, lost; Whit. *lose*, wrongly.

105. *rennyng*, running, viz. in his course; an allusion to the running a tilt in a tournament; it does not mean "running away," as suggested in Whit. Par.

128. *roued* or *rowed*, dawned; Whit. *roned*, which he explains by—"was foul with rain."

144. A cross is here drawn in the margin of the MS., evidently with reference to "the tree" mentioned.

202. *as hit*; Whit. *it hit*; corrected in Errata.

250. *tenden*, lighted, kindled; not "tended," as in Whit. Par.

287. *chyne*, chink; still the MS. has not *chync*, as Whit. prints it.

289. "And thou, Astrot, hoot out;" not "burning Astarte," which is the sense Whit. gives to *Astrot hot*. In his Notes, he gives another interpretation; but that also is incorrect.

347. *syghte*; Whit. misprints *lyghte*.

374. *beyere*, gen. pl. of both, as in l. 36. Whit. proposes to read *brepere*; but see the various readings in the foot-note.

418. *Feondes and feondekenes*, fiends and fiendkins (i. e. little fiends); not "Fiends and their *kin*," as in Whit. Par.

435. *awreke*; Whit. *a worcke*; but corrected in Errata.

459, 460. Whit. omits from *and wrake* in l. 459 to *werre* in l. 460; clearly owing to the recurrence of *werre*.

470. *lowd*; but Whit. says—"undoubtedly *low*." Why so?

PASSUS XXII. 15. Whit. has four misprints in this line, viz. *call* for *calle*, *syben* for *sipthen*, *Iewes* for *Iuwes*, and *calde* for *cald*.

38. *þo* occurs in the MS.; Whit. omits it.

86. *sense*, incense; not "sense," as in Whit. Par.

123. *he* occurs twice in this line in the MS.; Whit. omits it the second time.

149. *þy-knewen*, confessed; Whit. has *þy-knownen*, which he explains by "divined."

159. *lynes*, alive; the old gen. used adverbially; Whit. has *lynes*, which he explains by "in his own lineaments" (!).

162. *may nat wel be consail*, i. e. may not well be counsel, cannot be easily

kept a secret; not "may not well be accepted as established truth," as in Whit. Par. Women are as truthful as men, but—they cannot keep a secret. And this is why (says Langland) Christ appeared to Mary Magdalene, viz. in order to ensure a wide publication of the fact of the resurrection.

195. *payeþ*; Whit. *prayeþ*, but corrected in the Errata.

219. *encombry*; Whit. *emcombry*, wrongly.

234. *syllynge* and *byggynge*, selling and buying; not as in Whit. Par.—"by building and ceiling houses" (!). Whit. was evidently thinking of O.E. *bigge*, to build; but how *syllynge* = *ceiling* is less clear.

238. *theche* and *to coke*, thatch and cock (put hay into cocks); or else, thatch and cook. Either meaning will serve, but other passages shew the former to be more likely; cf. vi. 13. For *theche*, MS. has *teche*, by a clerical error. Whit. prints *leche*, and his Par. has—"to hedge and ditch;" but which is "hedge" and which is "ditch" he does not tell us.

284. *Ne sholde no*; Whit. *No sholde ne*, but corrected in Errata.

293. *ne was*; Whit. *was ne*, wrongly.

359. *þere*; Whit. *here*, wrongly.

380. *zernynge*, running; Whit. Par. "bursting," which looks as if he connected it with *yearn*. Cf. note above to xix. 165.

PASSUS XXIII. l. 82. *crampes*; MS. *claumpes*; Whit. *clamupes*, a misprint.

100. *douste*; so in MS.; Whit. *dust*.

143. *let dagge hus cloþes*, had his clothes *dagged*, i. e. cut or slit at the edges; not as in Whit. Par.—"caused his clothes to fall down."

169. *helpe*; so in MS.; Whit. *helþe*, wrongly.

172. *houe*, hood; not as in Whit. Par. "phial." It was a proverbial phrase. See Chaucer, ed. Morris, vol. iv. p. 256, l. 726; and vol. v. p. 20, l. 469, where *ho:ven* is, as I suppose, a misreading for *howue*; since Tyrwhitt prints *hove*.

193—198. Designedly omitted by Whitaker.

210. *þe*; so in MS.; Whit. *age*, a strange error.

225. *many*; Whit. *more*, wrongly.

336. *salues*, salves; Whit. *saules*; yet he explains it correctly.

Richard the Redeles.

Richard the redeles.

[Prologus.]

And as I passid in my preiere · per prestis were at messe, [Fol. 107 b.]
As I passed
through Bristol,
 In a blessid borugh · pat bristow is named,
 In a temple of þe trinite · þe toune euen amyddis,
 That cristis chirche is cleped · amonge þe comune near Christ
Church,
 peple, 4
 Sodeynly per souldid · selcoupe þingis, strange events
arose.
 A grett wondir to wyse men · as it well myȝth,
 And dowtes ffor to deme · ffor drede comynge after.
 So sore were þe sawis · of bothe two sidis, 8
 Of Richard pat Regned · so Riche and so noble, It was said that,
whilst Richard
was warring in
Ireland,
 That whyle he werid be west · on þe wilde yrisse,
 Henrri was entrid · on the est half, Henry entered
England in the
East.
 Whom all þe londe loued · in lengþe and in brede, 12
 And ros with him rapely · to riztyn his wronge,
 ffor he shulde hem serue · of þe same after.

In these foot-notes, the reader will find the rejected readings of the MS., corrections in which have been but very sparingly made.

Besides these, all the more important parallel passages from the "Vision" are cited, with proper references. Thus, at l. 12, a quotation is given from l. 261 of Passus iv. of the C-text, as denoted by C. 4. 261. The C-text has been chosen for refer-

ence (where possible) because the reader has it in his hand, and has only to turn back till he finds the passage cited.

10. *whyte*; MS. *wyle*.

12. *Cf.* He had be lord of pat londe · in lengthe and in brede; C. 4. 261.

13. *Cf.* Two rysen rapliche · and rounede to-geders; C. 7. 383. For *ros*, the MS. has *rosse*.

These tales
greatly troubled
me.

Thus tales me troblid · ffor þey trewe were,
And amarride my mynde rith moche · and my wittis
eke : 16

ffor it passid my parceit · and my preifis also,
How so wondirfull werkis · wolde haue an ende.

Some men began
to repent, and
thought it a pity
that Reason had
not reformed
misrule.

But in sothe whan þey sembled · some dede repente,
As knowyn is in cumpas · of Cristen londis, 20
That rewthe was, if reson · ne had reffourmed
The myssecheff & þe mysserule · þat men þo in
endurid.

I kept my allegi-
ance to Richard.

I had pete of his passion · þat prince was of Walis,
And eke oure crowned kyng · till crist woll no lenger ;
And as a lord to his liage · þouȝ I lite hade, 25
All myn hoole herte was his · while he in helthe
regnid.

Not knowing
what would
happen,

And ffor I wuste not witterly · what shulde ffall,
Whedir god wolde ȝeue him grace · sone to amende,
To be oure gioure aȝeyn · or graunte it anoper, 29

I began to write
a poem of advice
to the king,

This made me to muse · many tyme and ofte,
For to written him a writte · to wissen him better,
And to meuve him of mysserewle · his mynde to
reffresshe, 32

recommending
him to have
patience.

ffor to preise þe prynce · þat paradise made,
To ffullfill him *with* ffeith · and ffortune aboue,
And not to grucchen a grott · aȝeine godis sonde,
But mekely to suffre · what so him sente were. 36

[Fol. 108.]

If my advice
will do him good,

And ȝif him list to loke · a leef oper tweyne,
That made is to mende him · of his myssededis,
And to kepe him in confforte · in crist and nouȝt
ellis,

15. *were* ; MS. *where*.

22. *endurid* ; no doubt a corruption
of *duredede*, the true old form.

27. *wuste* ; MS. *wost* ; but see Pass.
i. ll. 49 and 64, below.

30. Cf. *Musynge* on þis meteles · a
myle-wey ich ȝeode.

And *meny* tymes this me-

teles · *made me to studie* ;
C. 10. 296.

35. Cf. On *god*, whenne me greued
ouht · and *grucched of hus sonde* ; C.
7. 111.

37. Cf. First I lerned to lye · a leef
other tweyne ; B. 5. 203.

I wolde be gladde þat his gost · myȝte glade be my
wordis, 40 I shall rejoice
at it.

And grame if it greued him · be god þat me bouȝte !

Ther nys no gouernour on þe grounde · ne sholde gye
him þe better— There is no king
upon earth but
might profit by
my words, if he
could read Eng-
lish.

And euery Cristen kyng · þat ony [croune] bereth,
So he were lerned on þe langage · my lyff durst I
wedde— 44

ȝif he waite well þe wordis, and so werche þer after ;
ffor all is tresour of þe trinite · þat turneth men to
gode.

And as my body & my beste · ou[3]te to be my liegis,
So rithffully be reson · my rede shulde also, 48 It is my duty
to advise my
lord.

ffor to conceill, and I couthe · my kyng and þe lordis ;

And þer-ffor I ffondyd · with all my ffyue wyttis

To traueile on þis tretis · to teche men þer-after

To be war of wylffulnesse · lest wondris arise. 52

And if it happe to ȝoure honde · beholde þe book
onys, If, my liege, my
book reaches
your hand, deign
to read it.

And redeth on him redely · rewis an hundrid,

And if ȝe sauere sum dell · se it fforth ouere,

ffor reson is no reпреff · be the rode of chester ! 56

And if ȝe ffynde ffables · or ffoly þer amonge,

Or ony ffantasie yffeyned · þat no ffute is in,

If you find fables
or folly in it,
correct them.

Lete ȝoure conceill corette it · and clerkis to-gedyr,

And amende þat ys amysse · and make it more
better : 60

ffor ȝit it is secrette · and so it shall lenger,

It still remains
unpublished.

43. *croune* ; MS. *grounde*, an obvious error, copied from l. 42.

44. *Cf.* Ich dorst haue leid my lyue · and no lasse wedde ; C. 4. 260.

46. *Cf.* Ther treuthe is, þe trone · þat trinite ynne sitteþ . .
Than treuthe & trewe loue · ys no tresour bettere ;
C. 2. 134—136.

48. *Cf.* —*bi Reson*, And Rihtful-iche, &c. ; A. 1. 92, 93 ; also, For

ryhtfulliche reson ; C. 2. 50.

49. *couthe* ; MS. *couȝthe*.

50. For *ffondyd*, MS. had *ffordyd*, but it has been altered to *ffondyd*. Mr Wright prints *ffordyd*, but see B. 15. 327 ; and cf. C. 2. 15.

55. *Cf.* ȝut sauereþ me nat þi sawe ; C. 11. 107.

56. *Cf.* bi þe Rode of chestre ; B. 5. 467.

Tyll wyser wittis · han waytid it ouere,
 That it be lore laweffull · and lusty to here.
 ffor witterly, my will is · þat it well liked 64

I hope it may
 profit the young.

Ȝou and all ȝouris · and yonge men leueste,
 To be-nyme hem her noyes · þat neweth hem ofte.
 ffor and þey mvse þeron · to þe myddwardis, 67
 They shall [fynde] ffele ffawtis · ffoure score and odde,
 That yough[th]e weneth alwey · þat it be witte euere.

If older men
 read it, it will
 not harm them.

And thouȝ þat elde opyn it · oþer-while amonge,
 And poure on it preuily · and preue it well after,
 And constrewe ich clause · with þe culorum, 72
 It shulde not apeire hem a peere · a prynce þouȝ he
 were,

[Fol. 108 b.]

If any word
 makes my sove-
 reign wrath, I
 pray him to
 believe that I
 mean no ill.

Ne harme noþer hurte · þe hyghest of þe rewme,
 But to holde him in hele · and helpe all his ffrendis.
 And if ony word write be · þat wrothe make myghte
 My souereyne, þat suget · I shulde to be, 77
 I put me in his power · and preie him, of grace,
 To take þe entent of my troupe · þat thouȝte non ylle.
 ffor to wrath no wyght · be my wyll neuere, 80
 As my soule be saff · ffrom synne at myn ende.
 þe story is of non estate · þat stryuen with her lustus,
 But þo þat ffolwyn her flessch · and here ffelle
 þouȝtis;

Let him that is
 grieved learn to
 mend his ways.

So if my conceyll be clere · I can saie no more, 84
 But ho be greued in his gost · gouerne him better,
 And blame not þe berne · þat the book made,
 But þe wickyd will · and þe werkis after.

68. The word *fynde* has obviously
 been omitted here; it is not in the
 MS.

72. Cf. þe *culorum* of þis *clause*;
 A. 3. 264; C. 12. 248.

78. Cf. Thenne knelede ich on my
 knees · and criede hure of
grace,
 And *preide* hure pytously;
 C. 2. 76, 77.

[*Passus Primus.*]

Now, Richard þe redeles · reweth on 3ou self, Richard, void of
counsel, take pity
on yourself!
þat lawelesse leddyn 3oure lyf · and 3oure peple
ope ;

ffor þoru þe wyles and wronge · and wast in 3oure
tyme,

3e were lyghtlich y-lyfte · ffrom þat 3ou leef þou3te, 4
And ffrom 3oure willffull werkis · 3oure will was
chaungid,

Your will has
been turned from
good.

And rafte was 3oure riott · and rest, ffor 3oure daiez
Weren wikkid þoru 3oure cursid counceill · 3oure karis
weren newed,

And coueitise hath crasid · 3oure croune ffor euere ! 8

Radix omnium malorum cupiditas.

1 Tim. vi. 10.

Of alegeaunce now lerneth · a lesson oþer tweyne
Wher-by it standith · and stablithe moste—

Learn how
allegiance is
confirmed ;

By drede, or be dyntis · or domes vntrewe,

Or by creauunce of coyne · ffor castes of gile, 12

By pillynge of 3oure peple · 3oure prynces to plesse ;

not by pillage of
your people, or,
taxes imposed in
time of peace,

Or þat 3oure wylle were wrou3te · þou3 wisdom it
nolde ;—

Or be tallage of 3oure townes · without ony werre,

By rewthles routus · þat ryffled euere, 16

By preysinge of polaxis · þat no pete hadde,

Or be dette ffor þi dees · deme as þou ffyndist ;

Pass. i. 4. *y-lyfte* ; so in MS. Mr townnes.
Wright prints *y-lyste*. 16. *routus* ; MS. *routus*, altered to

9. Cf. Furst I leornede to ly3e · a
lessun or tweyne ; A. 5. 117.

routes, unnecessarily.

11. *drede* ; MS. *dride*, but altered
to *drede*.

17. Cf. Or Poule þe apostle · þat
no pitee hadde ; B. 10. 424 ; C. 12.
268.

15. *townes* ; MS. *towunes* or

but by law and
love.

Or be ledinge of lawe · with loue well ytemprid.

Though þis be derklich endited · ffor a dull nolle,
Miche nede is it not · to mwse þer-on, 21

[Fol. 109.]

Allegiance with-
out love is of no
avail.

ffor as mad as I am · þou; I litill kunne,
I cowde it discryue · in a ffewe wordys ;

ffor legiance without loue · litill þinge availith. 24

Your courtiers
cared only for
ease,

But graceles gostis · gylours of hem-self,

That neuere had harnesse · ne hayle schouris,

But walwed in her willis · ffor-weyned in here youthe ;

þey sawe no manere sizth · saff solas and ese, 28

And cowde no mysse amende · whan mysscheff
was vp,

but never wept
one tear for their
sins.

But sorwed ffor her lustus · of lordsch[i]pe þey hadde,

And neuere ffor her trespas · oo tere wolde þey lete !

þe come to þoure kyngdom · er þe þoure-self knewe, 32

Crouned with a croune · þat kyng vnder heuene

Mizte not a better · haue bouzte, as I trowe ;

Your crown, at
your accession,
was one of
splendour.

So ffull was it filled · with vertuous stones,

With perlis of pris · to punnysshe þe wrongis, 36

With rubies rede · þe riȝth for to deme,

With gemmes and Iuellis · Ioyned to-gedir,

And pees amonge þe peple · ffor peyne of þi lawis.

It was of gold
and diamonds,

It was ffull goodeliche ygraue · with gold al aboute ;

The braunchis aboute · boren grett charge ; 41

With diamantis derne · y-doutid of all

That wrou[3]te ony wrake · within or withoute ;

19. Cf. And ledeþ þe lawe as hure
lust · and louedayes makeþ ; C. 4.
196.

24. Cf. Lawe with-ouen loue · leye
pere a bene ! B. 11. 165.

25. *gostis* ; so in MS. ; printed
gestis by Mr Wright.

27. Cf. And lete no wynnynge for-
wene hem · þe while þei ben zonge ;
C. 6. 138.

29. Cf. þi myschief is vppe ; B. 4.
72.

30. *lustus* ; altered to *lustes* in

MS.

33—37. Cf. And coroned with a
corone · þe kynge hath no betere ; ...
And þer-on rede rubies · and oper riche
stones ; C. 3. 11, 13.

40. *aboute* ; MS. *aboutte*, both here
and in ii. 2, 15, and 102. Cf. *gold al*
a-boute ; C. 3. 158.

42, 45. Cf. And diamantz of derrest
pris · and double manere safferes ; B.
2. 13 ; see the whole passage. *y-*
doutid ; written *y-doutid* in MS. ; so
in l. 46 the MS. has *Y-poudride*.

With lewte and loue · yloke to þi peeris,
 And sapheris swete · þat souzte all wrongis,
 Ypoudride wyth pete · þer it be ouzte,
 And traylid with troupe · and treste al aboute ;
 ffor ony cristen kyng · a croune well ymakyd.

44

adorned with
 sapphires, and
 powdered over
 with pity.

But where þis croune bicom · a clerk were þat
 wuste ;

Where it is now,
 who can tell ?

But so as I can · declare it I thenke,
 And nempne no name ; · but þo þat nest were,
 ffull preuily þey pluckud · þy power away,
 And reden with realte · þoure rewme þoru-oute,
 And as tyrauntis, of tiliers · token what hem liste,
 And paide hem on her pannes · whan her penyes
 lacked.

52

Thy courtiers
 plucked away
 thy power.

55

ffor non of þoure peple · durste pleyne of here wrongis,
 ffor drede of þoure dukys · & of here double harmes.

Thy people dared
 not complain.

Men myȝtten as well haue huntyd · an hare with a
 tabre,

[Fol. 109 b.]
 Men might as
 well have hunted
 a hare with a
 tabor, as have
 sought redress.

As aske ony mendis · ffor þat þei mysdede,
 Or of ony of her men · þouȝ men wulde plete,
 ffor all was ffelawis and ffelawschepe · þat ȝe with
 fferde,

60

And no soule persone · to punnyshe þe wrongis ;

And þat maddid þi men · as þei nede muste.

This inaddened
 thy people.

ffor wo, þey ne wuste · to whom ffor to pleyne.

64

ffor, as it is said · by elderne dawis,

‘ þer gromes and the goodmen · beth all eliche grette,

Where all men
 are equal, wo be
 to the realm !

Woll wo beth þe wones · and all þat woneth þer-in !’

44. Cf. *Ac loue* and *lounnesse* · and
leante to-gederes ; C. 4. 447.

46. See note to l. 42, above.

49. Cf. *I ne wot where þei bicom* ;
 B. 5. 651.

51. *nest* ; MS. *nest* or *neft*. Mr
 Wright prints *neft*, but leaves it un-
 explained, there being no such word ;
nest is *nighest*.

53. *reden* ; so in MS., though

afterwards altered to *ryden*. Yet
reden may stand, as it occurs in the
 Lansdowne MS. of Chaucer ; Prol. l.
 825. See also C. 2. 91.

55. Cf. the account of how “Pees”
 came by his “*panne* bloody ;” C. 5.
 74.

56. Cf. For *pore men der nat*
pleyne · ne here pleinte shewe ; C. 4.
 214 ; see the whole passage.

- þey ladde þou *with loue* · þat þoure lawe dradde, 68
 To deme þoure dukys myssdedis · so derne þei were.
 Thus was your crown cracked.
 Thus was þoure croune crasid · till he was cast newe,
 þoru partinge of þoure powere · to þoure paragals.
 Thus lacchide þey *with laughinge* · and lourid longe
 after, 72
 But ffrist sawe they it not · ne youre-self noþer ;
 ffor all was wisliche ywrouzte · as þoure witte demed,
 And no ffautis y-ffounde · till ffortune aperid. 75
 But had þoure croune be kepte · þat comons it wiste,
 þer nadde morder ne mysscheff · be amonge þe grette.
 Thus þoure cautell to the comoune · hath combred
 þou all,
 That, but if god helpe · þoure heruest is ynne.
 Blame not your council, but yourself.
 Wyteth it not þoure counceill · but wyteth it more
 þoure-self, 80
 The ffortune þat ffallyn is · to ffeitheles peple ;
 Take good heed of my words.
 And wayte well my wordis · and wrappe hem to-
 gedir,
 And constrwe [þoru] clergie · þe clause in þin herte,
 Of maters þat I thenke · to meve ffor the best 84
 ffor kyngis and kayseris · comynge here-after.
 In your council, the men whom you chose were all too young.
 Whane þe were sette in þoure se · as a sir aughte,
 Ther Carpinge comynliche · of conceill arisith,
 The cheuyteyns cheef · þat þe chesse euere, 88
 Weren all to yonge of þeris · to yeme swyche a
 rewme ;
72. *Cf.* Pere was *laughyng* and *louryng* ; B. 5. 344.
 75. *fautis* ; MS. *fauutis*.
 77. *nadde* ; glossed in the MS. by *had nat*.
 78. *cautell* ; glossed in the MS. by *crafte*.
 80. *Wyteth* ; misspelt *Wytteth* (alt. to *Wyteth*) the first time, and *wytek* the second time, in the MS.
 83. The word *þoru* (= through) must be supplied ; *cf.* *Clerkus* þat were confessours · couplede hem to-
 gederes *To construe this clause* ; C. 5. 146, 147.
 84. *Cf.* I dorste *meue no matere* ; C. 11. 118.
 85. *Kayseris* ; badly spelt *Kayse-ceris* in the MS., with the gloss *lordes, rulers* ; *cf.* *Kynges* and *knyghtes* · *caysers* and *popes* ; C. 23. 101.
 86. *sir* ; glossed in the MS. by *lorde*.
 89. *yeme* ; glossed in the MS. by *guyde or rule*.

O^{per} hobbis 3e hadden · of hurlewaynis kynne,
Reffusyng the reule · of realles kynde.

[Fol. 110.]

And whane 3oure counceill I-knewe · 3e come so at
ones,

92

When they knew
you would be led
by them, they
thought only of
their own
grievances.

ffor to leue on her lore · and be led be hem,
ffor drede þat they had · of demynge *per*-after,
And ffor curinge of hem-self · cried on 3ou euere,
ffor to hente hele · of her owen greues,

96

More þan ffor wurschepe · þat þey to 3ou owed,
þey made 3ou to leue · þat regne 3e ne my3te,
Withoute busshinge adoune · of all 3oure best ffrendis,
Be a ffals colour · her caris to wayve,

100

They told you
to set aside all
your true friends.

And to holde hem in hele · if it happe my3te.
ffor trostip rith treuly · and in no tale better,

All þat þey moued · or mynged in þat mater,
Was to be sure of hem-self · and siris to ben y-callid ;
ffor þat was all her werchinge · in worde and in dede.

103

But they only
cared for them-
selves.

But had 3e do duly · and as a duke oughte,
þe ffrist þat 3ou fformed · to þat ffals dede,
He shulde have hadde hongynge · on hie on þe
fforckis,

108

Had you done
what you ought,
you would have
hung up the first
deceiver on the
gallows.

þou3 3oure brother y-born · had be þe same.
Than wolde o^{per} boynardis · haue ben abasshyd,
To haue meved 3ou to ony maters · þat myss[c]heff had
ben ynne.

But ffor 3e cleued to knavis · In þis cas I avowe, 112
þat boldid þi burnes · to belde vppon sorowe,
And stirid 3ou stouttely · till 3e stombled all.

112

But your fondness
for knaves em-
boldened them.

95. *curinge* ; MS. somewhat indis-
tinct. Mr. Wright prints *caringe*.

98. *my3te* ; MS. *myste*.

103. *þat* ; Mr. Wright prints *the*.

111. *maters* ; printed *malis* by Mr

Wright, owing to the indistinctness of
the mark of contraction ; but see l.
84, above ; and also l. 103.

113. *burnes* ; glossed by *barons* in
the MS.

Passus secundus.

But most I
marvel at the
liveries which
you granted;

the badges of the
"white hart"
were seen every-
where.

But the moulting-
time of the harts
was drawing
nigh.

[Fol. 110 b.]

They fled, but
preserved their
horns.

I will consider
how the king's
badges became
so numerous,

But moche now me merueilith · and well may I in
sothe,

Of 3oure large leuerey · to leodis aboute,
That 3e so goodliche 3af · but if gile letted,
As hertis y-heedyd · and hornyd of kynde, 4
So ryff as þey ronne · 3oure rewme þoru-oute,
That non at 3oure nede · 3oure name wolde nempne
In ffersnesse ne in ffoltheed · but ffaste ffile away-ward,
And some stode astonyed · and stared ffor drede, 8
ffor eye of the Egle · þat oure helpe brouzte.

And also in sothe · þe seson was paste
ffor hertis y-heedid · so hy and so noble
To make ony myrthe · ffor mowtynge þat nyghed. 12
That bawtid 3oure bestis · of here bolde chere;
þey seuerid and sondrid · ffor somere hem ffaylid,
And fflowen in-to fforest · and ffeldis aboute,
All þe hoole herde · þat helde so to-gedir; 16
But 3et þey had hornes · half a 3ere after.
Now liste me to lerne · ho me lere coude,
What kynnes conceyll · þat þe kyng had,
Or meued him most · to merke his liegis, 20
Or serue hem with signes · þat swarmed so thikke

Pass. ii. 2. *aboute*; MS. *aboutte*;
cf. note above to i. 40. So also in l.
15.

4. *As*; misprinted *And* by Mr
Wright.

5. *ronne*; printed *roune* by Mr
Wright.

9. *brouzte*; written *brouute* in the
MS.

16. *to-* in *to-gedir* is supplied in
the MS. in a later hand.

17. *a* is supplied in the MS. in a
later hand; cf. "half a 3ere" in C. 3.
238.

- þoru-oute his lond · in lengþe and in brede,
 þat ho so had hobblid · þoru holtes and tounes,
 Or y-passid þe patthis · þer the prynee dwellyd, 24
 Of hertis or hyndis · on hassellis brestis, that every one
 Or some lordis leuere · þat þe lawe stried, saw more than
 He shulde haue y-mette · mo þan y-nowe. 27 enough of them.
- ffor þey acombrede þe contre · and many curse seruid, They cumbered
 And carped to þe comounes · with þe kyngys mouþe, the country.
 Or with þe lordis · þer þey be-lefte were,
 That no renke shulde rise · reson to schewe.
 þey plucked the plomayle · ffrom þe pore skynnes, 32 They plucked the
 And schewed her signes · ffor men shulde drede feathers off the
 To axe ony mendis · ffor her mys-dedis. poor people.
- Thus leuerez ouere-loked · 3oure liegis ichone ;
 ffor þo þat had hertis · on hie on her brestis 36 Those that bare
 ffor the more partie · I may well avowe, the White-Hart
 þey bare hem the bolder · ffor her gay broches, badge oppressed
 And busshid with her brestis · and bare adoune the the poor.
 pouere,
- Lieges þat loued 3ou þe lesse · ffor her yuell dedis. 40
 So, trouthe to telle · as toun men said,
 ffor on þat 3e merkyd · 3e myssed ten schore
 Of homeliche hertis · þat þe harme hente.
 Thane was it ffoly · in ffeith, as me thynketh, 44
 To sette siluer in signes · þat of nouȝt serued.
 I not what 3ou eylid · but if it ese were ;
 ffor ffrist at 3oure anoyntyng · alle were 3oure At your accession,
 owene, all was your own.
- Bothe hertis and hyndis · and helde of non oper ; 48 [Fol. 111.]
 No lede of 3oure lond · but as a liege aughte,
 Tyl 3e, of 3oure dulnesse · deseueraunce made,

22. See Prol. l. 12.

25. *Of*; MS. *Or* (wrongly).28. *seruid*; glossed *deserved* in the MS.; correctly.35. *ichone*; MS. *ichonne*.37. *Cf. ich may it wel arowe*; C.

4. 315.

45. *Cf. Bere no suluer ouer see · þat kynges sygne shewep*; C. 5. 126.46. *Cf. Ich wot wel, quath hunger · what syknesse 3ow aileþ*; C. 9. 271.50. *Tyl*; MS. *Ty*, altered to *Tyl*.

Your badges
spoil the broth,
and upset the
pot.
Luke xi. 17.

þoru ȝoure side signes · þat shente all þe browet,
And cast adoun þe crokk · þe Colys amyð. 52

Omne regnum in se diuisum desolabitur ; luce
xj^o. c^o.

I cannot tell
what induced you
to do this.

ȝit am I lewde · and litill good schewe,
To coueyte knowliche · of kyngis wittis,
Or wilne to witte · how was þe mevyngē,
That [ladde] ȝou to lykyngē · ȝoure liegis to merke, 56
þat loued ȝou full lelly · or leuerez beganne,
And as redy to ride · or renne at ȝoure heste,
As wyghte myghte wilne · wonnyngē vppon erthe,
Tyll leuerez hem lette · and lordyns wrongis, 60
As ȝoure-self ffonde well · whane ffortune ȝou ffolwyð.

When you wished
to trust your
limbs, they failed
you.

ffor whan ȝe list to lene · to ȝoure owen lymmes,
þey were so ffeble and ffeynte · ffor ffaute of ȝoure
lawe,

And so ffeble and wayke · wexe in þe hammes, 64
þat þey had no myghte · to amende ȝoure greues,
Ne to bere byrthen · ȝoure banere to helpe.

But it longith to no liegeman · his lord to anoye,
Noþer in werk ne in word · but if his witt ffayle. 68

Then said Reason
to me, "Never
displease your
judge and lord.

"No, redely," quod reson · "þat reule I alowe ;
Displese not þi demer · in dede ne in wordis,
But if þe liste ffor to lede · þi lyf in dissesē.

But ȝif god haue grauntyd þe · grace ffor to knowe 72
Ony manere mysscheff · þat myȝtte be amendyd,

Be content to
point out what
is amiss."

Schewe þat to þi souereyne · to schelde him ffrom
harmes ;

ffor, and he be blessid · þe better þe be-tydyth

In tyme ffor to telle him · ffor þi trewe herte." 76

52. Cf. þat cast for to kele a
crokke · and saue þe fatte aboue ; C.
20. 280.

56. Here *ladde* seems required.

57. MS. *begynne*, altered to *beganne*.
Cf. And to loue me lelly ; B. 1. 78.

58. Cf. ȝemen · to rennen and to
ryde ; C. 4. 271.

61. *ffolwyð* ; the word *ffayled* is
written above, and is perhaps a better
reading.

63. *faute* ; spelt *fauzte* in the MS.

68. Cf. As in workes and in wordes ;
C. 3. 94.

69. Cf. Forþy, reson, redelyche ;
C. 5. 184.

- Now, ffor to telle trouthe · þus þan me thynketh,
 That no manere meynutenour · shulde merkis bere,
 Ne haue lordis leuere · þe lawe to apeire,
 Neiper bragger ne boster · ffor no bremme wordis, 80
 But ho so had kunnyng · and conscience bothe,
 To stonde vnstombed · and stronge in his wittis,
 Lele in his leuyng · leuyd be his owen,
 þat no manere mede · shulde make him wrye, 84
 ffor to trien a trouthe · be-twynne two sidis,
 And lette ffor no lordschep · þe lawe to susteyne,
 Whane þe pore pleyned · that put were to wrongis.
 And I were of conceill · by crist þat me bouzte, 88
 He shuld haue a signe · and sum-what be zere,
 ffor to kepe his contre · in quiete and in reste.
 This were a good grounde · so me god helpe!
 And a trewe tente · to take and to zeue, 92
 And ony lord of this londe · þat leuerez vsith.
 But how the gayer han y-gon · god wotte þe sothe
 Amonge myztfull men · alle these many zeris;
 And, whedir þe grounde of zifte · were good oper
 ille, 96
 Trouthe haþe determyned · þe tente to þe ende,
 And reson hath rehersed · þe resceyte of all.
 3it, I trowe, zoure entente · at þe ffrist tyme,
 Was, as I wene, 3if I well thenke · in multitude of
 peple, 100
 That 3e were þe more myztier · ffor the many signes
 þat 3e and zoure seruauantis · aboute so thikke sowid;
 And þat þey were more tristi · and trewer þan oper,
 To loue 3ou ffor þe leuere · þat legeaunce stroied; 104
- My opinion is,
 that no 'main-
 tainer' should
 wear a badge, or
 any livery;
- [Fol. 111 b.]
 they should be
 reserved for true
 and good men.
- A good judge
 ought to have a
 badge and a good
 salary.
- God alone knows
 whether the
 reason for giving
 badges has been
 a good or bad
 one!
- No doubt you
 wished the
 wearers of your
 badge to be very
 numerous,
 and to be attached
 to yourself;

80. Cf. —braggyng · abosted, &c.; C. 9. 152.

82. Cf. to stomble, yf he stande; C. 11. 35.

93. And; read To or For?

94. A d is written over g in gayer, as if to alter it to dayes; but the alliteration requires gayer; see Note.

96. zifte; printed ziste by Mr Wright.

97. Cf. Til trenþe hadde ytermenyd · here trespas to þe ende; C. 2. 93.

102. aboute; badly spelt aboute in the MS. sowid; glossed by shewed in the MS.; wrongly.

- Or ellis ffor a skylle · þat skathed 3oure-self, 105
 þat comounes of contre · in costis aboute
 and that all men might know them to be *yours*. Sholde knowe be hir quentise · þat þe kyng loued hem
 ffor her priuy prynte · passinge anoper. 108
 3if þat was 3oure purpos · it passith my wittis
 I praise not your discretion. To deme discrecioun · of 3oure well-doynge !
 þus were 3e disceyued · þoru 3oure duble hertis,
 þat neuere weren to truste · so god saue my soule !
 Had the good Greyhound been cherished, you would have had Harts enough at your service. But had þe good greehonde · be not agreued, 113
 But cherischid as a cheffeteyne · and cheff of 3oure lese,
 3e hadde had hertis ynowe at 3oure wille · to go and to ride.
 And also in serteyne · þe soþe ffor to telle, 116
 [Fol. 112.] I wondir not hylly · þou3 heed-dere þou ffailid ;
 ffor litill on 3oure lyf · þe list ffor to rewe
 On the lean-ribbed deer you had small pity. On rascaile þat rorid · with ribbis so lene,
 ffor ffaute of her ffode · þat ffater[er]is stelen, 120
 And euere with here wylis & wast · ofte þey hem anoyed,
 þat pouerte hem prickid · ffull preuyliche to pleyne,
 But where, þey ne wyste · ne ho it wolde amende !
 You vexed them, and nearly skinned them ; þus 3e derid hem vnduly · with droppis of anger, 124
 And stonyed hem with stormes · þat stynted neuere,
 But plucked and pulled hem · anon to þe skynnes,
 þat the ffresinge ffrost · ffreted to here hertis.
 so that when the chief deer failed, none of the leaner ones stood by you. So whanne 3oure hauntelere dere · were all ytakyn,
 Was non of þe rasskayle · aredy ffull growe, 129
 To bere ony bremme heed · as a best aughte,
 So wyntris wedir · hem wessh with þe snowis,
 With many derke mystis · þat maddid her eyne. 132

106. *in* ; Mr Wright prints *and*, but MS. has *had* altered to *in*. For *aboute*, the MS. has the false spelling *aboutte*. Cf. Yf þei knew eny countreie · oper costes aboute ; C.

11. 12.

120. *ffaute* ; misspelt *ffauzte* in the MS., as in l. 63.

128. *were* ; MS. *where*, badly ; see *were* in ll. 101, 103.

ffor well mowe 3e wyttyn · & so mowe we all,
 þat harde is þe somer · þer sonne schyneth neuere.
 3e ffostrid and ffodid · a ffewe of þe best, 135
 And leyde on hem lordschipe · aleyne vppon oþer,
 And bereued þe raskall · þat rith wolde þei hadde,
 And knewe not þe caris · ne cursis þat walkyd ; 138
 But mesure is a meri mene · þou3 men moche
 yerne :—

Deus exaudit clamorem pauperum, et iudicat Cf. Ps. x. 17, 18.
Causam eorum ; dauid in psalmis. (Vulg.)

þus be þe rotus · 3oure raskall endurid, 140
 Tyll þe blessid bredd · brodid his wyngis,
 To couere hem ffrom colde · as his kynde wolde.
 Rith as þe hous-hennes · vppon londe hacchen,
 And cherichen her chekonys · ffro chele of þe wynter,
 Ryth so þe hende Egle · þe heyere of hem all, 145
 Hasteth him in heruest · to houyn his bryddis,
 And besieth him besely · to bredden hem ffeedrin,
 Tyll her ffre ffeedris · be ffulliche y-pynned, 148
 þat þey heue wynges at her wyll · to wonne vppon hille,
 ffor venym on þe valeye · hadde ffoule with hem ffare,
 Tyll trouthe þe triacle · telde somme her sothes.
 Thus baterid þis bred · on busshes aboute, 152
 And gaderid gomes on grene · þer as þey walkyd,
 þat all þe schroff and schroup · sondrid ffrom oþer.
 He mellid so þe matall · with þe hand-molde, 155
 That [þey] lost [of þeir] lemes · þe leuest þat þey had.
 Thus ffoulyd this ffaukyn · on ffyldis aboute,
 And cau3te of the kytes · a cartfull at ones,

You fostered a few of the best, and gave them lordships.

As the hens cherish their chickens, so the Eagle is busy about his brood till their wings are grown.

[Fol. 112b.]
 The Eagle caused Bushy, Green, and Scrope to lose their heads.

139. *Mesure is medeyne · þou3 þow moche zerne* ; B. 1. 35 ; C. 2. 33.

142. Cf. *as hus kynde wolde* ; C. 4. 129 ; and 9. 161.

144. *cherichen* ; glossed *cherissbeth. chele* ; glossed *colde*.

145. *heyere* ; MS. *Eyere* ; but see iii. 74.

151. Cf. For *treuthe telleþ þat*

loue · ys tryacle for synne ; C. 2. 147.

152. *aboute* ; MS. *aboutze*. So also in ll. 157, 182, 186.

156. Supply *þey and of þeir*. They lost the liefest of their limbs ; i. e. their heads.

158. *kytes* ; MS. *huyttis*, with *kytes* written above ; see l. 161.

The Eagle tried
to pull the head
from the neck of
his prey.

Bagot escaped
for a time, but
was caught at
last.

At last the Eagle
subdued all the
kites and crows ;

who besought
his pardon and
mercy.

Many traps were
set for them.

That rentis and robis · with raveyn euere lauȝte.
Ȝit was not þe ffawcon · ffull ffed at his likynge, 160
ffor it cam him not of kynde · kytes to loue.
Than bated he boldeliche · as a brid wolde,
To plewme on his pray · þe pol ffro þe nekk ;
But þe blernyed boynard · þat his bagg stall, 164
Where purraile-is pulter · was pynnyd ffull ofte,
Made þe ffawcon to ffoter · and ffussh ffor anger,
That þe boy hadd be bounde · þat þe bagge kepte.
But sone þer-after · in a schorte tyme, 168
As ffortune ffolwith · ech ffode till his ende,
This lorell þat ladde · þis loby away
Ouere ffrithe and fforde · ffor his ffals dedis,
Lyghte on þe lordschepe · þat to þe brid longid, 172
And was ffelliche ylauȝte · and luggid ffull ylle,
And brouȝte to þe brydd · and his blames rehersid
Preuyly at þe parlement · amonge all þe peple.
Thus hawkyd þis Egle · and houed aboue, 176
þat, as god wolde · þat gouerneth all þingis,
Ther nas kyte ne krowe · þat kareyne hantid,
þat he ne with his lynage · ne louyd ffull sone.
ffor wher so þey fferde · be ffryth or be wones, 180
Was non of hem all · þat him hide myȝth,
But cam with him a reclayne · ffro costis aboute,
And ffell with her ffetheris · fflat vppon þe erthe,
As madde of her mynde · and mercy be-souȝte, 184
þey myȝte not aschonne · þe sorowe þey had
serued.

So lymed leues · were leyde all aboute,
And panteris preuyliche · pight vppon þe grounde,

159. *raveyn* ; so I read it. Mr Wright prints *rabeyn*, as it may also be read. *lauȝte* ; glossed *caught*.

170. *ladde* ; MS. *hadde* ; but observe the alliteration and the sense.

180. *wones* ; Mr Wright prints *woves*, but in his glossary says "*qu. wones.*" Cf. Lorde, who shal *wonye*

in *þi wones* ? B. 3. 234. And see Pass. iii. 220, below.

183. Cf. *platte hure* to þe erthe ; C. 7. 3.

185. *serued* ; glossed *deserved*.

187. Here follow the catchwords—*With grennes of good here.*

With grennes of good heere · þat god him-self made, [Fol. 113.]

þat where so þey walkid · þey waltrid dounwardis; 189

And euere houed þe Egle · on hie on þe skyes,

The Eagle
hovered above
and saw all.

And kenned clerliche · as his kynde axith,

Alle þe preuy poyntis · þat þe pies wrouȝth. 192

188. *grennes*; glossed *greyhounds*. Observe the context.

This is entirely wrong; for a *gren* is 191. *Cf. riȝte as kynde axeth*; B.
a *gin* or snare; and "a *gren* of good - 2. 27.
heere" is a snare made of fine hair.

Passus Tercius.

I leave the Eagle,
and consider the
Harts.

Now leue we þis beu brid · till I restore,
ffor mater þat my mynde · is meued in now,
That whi þe hie hertis · her hele so mysside,
þat pasture axid · rith to here pure wombis ; 4
I wolle schewe as I sawe · till I se better,
And if I walke out of the wey · I wolle me repente.

The worst deeds
are those done
against nature.

Now herkeneth, hende men · how þat me thynkyth,
Sauynge souereynes · and sages avise, 8
þat þe moste myscheff · vppon molde on
Is demed þe dede · y-do azeins kynde.

I will apply this.

3it clereth þis clause · no þinge my wittis,
With-out more mater · what it mene wolde. 12

When harts come
to be a century
old,

I mene of þe hertis · þat hauteesse of 3eris,
þat pasture prikkyth · and her preny age ;
Whan þey han hoblid on þe holte · an hundrid of 3eris,

and grow feeble,
they instinctively
strive to catch
adders.

That þey ffeblen in ffeissh · in ffelle, and in bones, 16
Her kynde is to keuere · if þey cacche my3th
Adders þat harmen · alle hende bestis ;

þoru busschis and bromes · þis beste, of his kynde,
Secheth and sercheth · þo schrewed wormes, 20
þat steleth on þe stedis · to styngge hem to deth ;

When the hart
finds the adder,
he feeds on his
venom,

And whanne it happeth þe herte · to hente þe edder,
He putyth him to peyne · as his pray asketh,
And ffedith him on þe venym · his ffelle to anewe, 24

Pass. iii. 9. Cf. *þe moste myschif*
on molde · Mounteþ vp faste ; C.
1. 65.

supplied above the line.

23. Cf. *as þe worlde askep* ; C.
1. 21.

18. *harmen* ; MS. *armen*, with *h*

To leue at more lykyng · a longe tyme after.
 This is clergie, hir kynde · coltis nat to greue,
 Ne to hurle with haras · no hors well atamed,
 Ne to stryue with swan · þouȝ it sholle werre,
 Ne to bayten on the bere · ne bynde him noþer,
 Ne to wilne to woo · þat were hem ny sibbe,
 Ne to liste ffor to loke · þat her alie bledde;
 This was aȝeins kynde · as clerkis me tolde:

28

renews his skin,
 and prolongs his
 life.
 It is against
 nature for harts
 to attack a
 Horse, a Swan,
 or a Bear.

*Propter ingratitude liber homo reuocatur in
 seruitutem, ut in stimulo compuncionis, et in
 lege Ciuili.*

32

And þerffor þe hertis · here hele so myssid,
 And myȝte nat passe þe poynte · of her prime age.
 Now constrew ho so kunne · I can saie no more,
 But ffare I wolde to þe ffowle · þat I beffore tolde.

36

[Fol. 113 b.]
 Thus it was that
 they missed their
 safety.

Off all billid breddis · þat þe bough spareth,
 þe propirte of partriche · to preise me lustiþ,
 þat in þe somer seson · whane sittinge nyeth,
 þat ich ffoule with his ffere · ffolwith his kynde,
 þis brid be a bank · bildith his nest,

40

I praise most the
 partridge.

And heipeth his eiren · and hetith hem after.
 And whane þe dame hath ydo · þat to þe dede longith,
 And hopith ffor to hacche · or heruest begynne,

44

This bird tries to
 hatch her eggs.

Thanne cometh þer a congioun · with a grey cote,
 As not of his nolle · as he þe nest made,
 Anoþer proud partriche · and precyth to þe nest,
 And preuylich pirth · till þe dame passe,
 And sesith on hir sete · with hir softe plumes,

48

But another
 partridge comes
 and takes her
 place,

25. Cf. a longe tyme after; C. 8. 203.

26. nat is supplied above the line; it is clearly wanted.

27. no; MS. ne.

32. homo; MS. h°; Mr Wright prints hic, wrongly; see the Preface. seruitutem; MS. seruititem, by a mere slip.

34. Cf. Whoso passeþ þat poynt; C. 2. 98.

39. Cf. In a somer sesoun; C. 1. 1.

41. Cf. Briddes I bihelde · þat in buskes made nestes; B. 11. 336; and compare the whole passage in B. 11. 318—353 with the context.

42. eiren; MS. heires, which is obviously a blunder; for see l. 50, below. Heires = heirs; but eiren = eggs.

49. sete; MS. Cete, altered to sete.

and sits on the
eggs till they are
hatched.

And houeth þe eyren · þat þe hue laide,
And *with* hir corps keuereth hem · till þat þey kenne,
And ffostrith and ffodith · till ffedris schewe, 52
And cotis of kynde · hem keuere all aboute.

Then comes back
their own mother,
and they at once
desert the in-
truder.

But as sone as þey styffe · and þat þey steppe kunne,
þan cometh and crieth · her owen kynde dame,
And þey ffolwith þe vois · at þe ffrist note, 56
And leueth þe lurker · þat hem er ladde,
ffor þe schrewe schrapid · to selde ffor her wombis,
þat her lendys were lene · and leued *with* hunger.
But þan þe dewe dame · dineth hem swythe, 60
And ffostrith hem fforthe · till þey ffe kunne.

What does this
mean?

“What is þis to mene, man?” · maiste þou axe,
“ffor it is derklich endited · ffor a dull panne;
Wherffore I wilne · 3if it þi will were, 64
þe partriche *propurtes* · by whom þat þou menest?”

Ah! Hick
Heavyhead!
your wits are
dull!

A! hicke heuyheed! · hard is þi nolle
To cacche ony kunnyng · but cautell bigynne!
Herdist þou not *with* eeris · how þat I er telde, 68
How þe egle in þe est · entrid his owene,

[Fol. 114.]

The Eagle in like
manner came
back to his *own*
young ones,

And cried and clepid · after his owen kynde briddis,
þat weren anoyed in his nest · and norished ffull ille,
And well ny yworewid · *with* a wronge leder? 72
But þe nedy nestlingis · whan þey þe note herde

and the young
ones followed
him.

Of þe hende Egle · þe heyer of hem all,
þei busked ffro þe busches · and breris þat hem noyed,
And burnished her beekis · and bent to-him-wardis,
And ffolowid him ffersly · to ffighte ffor þe wrongis;

They complained
how they had
been ill-used for
22 years.

þey bablid *with* her billis · how þei bete were, 78
And tenyd *with* twiggis · two and twenty 3eris.
Thus lasfe þey þe leder · þat hem wrong ladde,
And tymed no twynte · but tolled her cornes, 81

53. *aboute*; MS. *aboutte*.

59. *leued*; altered to *lyued*.

62. Cf. *what is þis to mene*; B. 1.
11.

74. *hende*; MS. *ende*, altered to
hende.

78. Cf. And so I *babeled* on my
bedes; B. 5. 8.

And gaderid þe grotus · with gyle, as I trowe.

þan ffolwid þey her ffre ffader · as good fleith wolde,
That he hem ffede shulde · and ffostre fforther, 84

They followed
their true father.

And bringe hem out of bondage · þat þey were brouȝth
inne.

Thanne sighed þe swymmers · ffor the swan ffailid,
And ffolwid þis ffaucoun · þoru ffeldus and tounes,
With many ffaire fflowle · þouȝ þey ffeynte were, 88

THE SWAN.
(Thomas, Duke
of Gloucester).

And heuy ffor þe hurte · þat þe hors hadde.
ȝit þey fferkyd hem fforth · as ffaste as þey myȝte,
To haue þe Egles helpe · of harme þat þey hadde ;
ffor he was heed of hem all · and hieste of kynde, 92
To kepe þe Croune · as cronecle tellith.

THE HORSE.
(The Earl of
Arundel).

He blythid þe beere · and his bond braste,
And lete him go at large · to lepe where he wolde.
But þo all þe berlingis · brast out at ones, 96

THE BEARE.
(The Earl of
Warwick).

As ffayne as þe ffoule · þat fflieth on þe skyes
þat bosse was vnbounde · and brouȝte to his owene.

þey gaderid hem to-gedir · on a grette route,
To helpe þe heeris · þat had many wrongis ; 100

The Bear's
children com-
plained of *Green*.

þey gaglide fforth on þe grene · ffor þey greued were,
þat her ffrendis were ffalle · þoru ffelouns castis.

They mornyd ffor þe morthir · of manffull knyȝtis,
That many a styff storme · with-stode ffor þe comunes ; [Fol. 114 b.]

þe[y] monside þe marchall · ffor his myssedede, 105
þat euell coude his Craft · whan he cloped þe stede.

They cursed the
Earl Marshal.

86. In the margin is written—"y° Swan."

88. *ffowle* ; MS. *ffoole*, with *ffowle* written above.

89. *hurte* ; MS. *hirte*, with *u* above the *i*. In the margin—"ye Horse."

94. *bond* ; MS. *broud* or *brond* ; Mr Wright prints *broud*, but surely it is merely *bond*, misspelt *brond* owing to the influence of the following word *braste*. In the margin—"The Beare."

97. *As fayne as* ; MS. *As fayne was* ; but I venture on the correction

on the strength of the parallel passage —*þanne was I also fayne · as foule of faire morwe* ; B. 10. 153 ; C. 12. 103.

98. *brouȝte* ; MS. *brouite*.

99. *route* ; MS. *rouȝte*.

105. *monside* ; MS. *monside* or *mouside*. Mr Wright prints *monside*, but does not explain it ; *monside* (i. e. cursed) is only another spelling of *mansed*, which see in C. 3. 41.

106. *cloped* ; so in MS. Mr Wright prints *cloped*, which he explains by *clipped*,

And euere as þey ffolwide · þis ffaucoun aboute,
 At iche mevinge fforte · venyaunce þey asked 108
 On all þat assentid · to þat synfull dede.

Let us return to
 Richard.

A rere now to Richard · and reste here awhile,
 ffor a preuy poynt · þat persith my wittis.
 Of ffautis I ffynde · þat ffrist dede engendre 112
 Cursidnesse and combraunce · amonge þe yonge lordis,
 And þe wikkid werchinge · þat walmed in her daies,
 And ȝit woll here-after · but wisdomē it lette.
 That were a lord of lond · þat lawe hathe in honde,
 þat to lyghtliche leueth · or lewte apere, 117
 þe tale of a trufflour · in turmentours wede,

They cared for
 nothing but
 dress.

That neuere reed good rewle · ne resons bookis !
 ffor ben þey rayed arith · þey recchith no fforther, 120
 But studieth all in stroutynge · and stireth amys euere ;
 ffor all his witte in his wede · ys wrappid ffor sothe,
 More þan in mater to amende · þe peple þat ben mys-led.
 ffor I say ffor my-self · and schewe, as me thynchith,
 That ho is riall of his ray · that light reede him ffol-
 with ; 125

respected only by
 fools.

ȝit swiche ffresshe ffoodis · beth ffeet in-to chambris,
 And ffor her dignesse endauntid · of dullisshe nollis,
 And, if þou well waite · of no wight ellis ; 128

Matt. xi. 8.

*Qui mollibus vestiuntur in domibus regum sunt :
 in Euangelio.*

See what comes
 of these beguilers !

þan waite mo wayes · how þe while turneth
 With gyuleris, Ioyffull · ffor here gery Iaces,
 And ffor her wedis so wyde · wise beth y-holde ; 131
 þey casteth hem to creaunce · þe courte ffor to plesse,
 And hopen to be hied · in hast, yif þey myȝthe,
 þoru swiche stif stroutynge · þat stroyeth þe rewme ;

They hope to be
 exalted for their
 finery ;

107. *aboute* ; MS. *aboutȝe*.
 112. *fautis* ; MS. *fauntis*.
 121. *stroutynge* ; MS. *stroututyngē*,
 here and in l. 134 ; but see l. 189, and
 Chaucer, C. T. 3315.
 124. Cf. *Ich seye it for my-selue* ;

C. 5. 134. *thynchith* ; MS. *thynthith* ;
 but this writing of *c* like *t* is common
 enough.

126. Cf. and *brouȝte* hir *in-to*
chaumbre ; B. 3. 10.

But here wey is all wronge · per wisdom is ynned,
 [For] þey lepith als lygh[t]ly · at þe longe goyng, 136 but they come to a bad end.
 Out of þe domes carte · as he þat proff neuere,
 ffor þey kepeth no coyne · þat cometh to here hondis, [Fol. 115.]
 But chaunchyth it ffor cheynes · þat in chepe hangith, They exchange their coin for chains,
 And settith all her siluer · in semitis and hornes, 140
 And ffor-doth þe coyne · and many oper craftis,
 And makeþ þe peple ffor pens lac · in pointe ffor to and make money scarce.
 wepe ;
 And ȝit þey beth ytake fforth · and her tale leued,
 And ffor her newe nysete · nexte to þe lordis. 144
 Now, be þe lawe of lydfford · in londe [&] in water By Lidford law, such men ought to thrive ill.
 þilke lewde ladde · ouȝte euyll to þryue,
 þat hongith on his hippis · more þan he wynneth,
 And douteth no dette · so dukis hem preise, 148
 But beggith and borwith · of burgeis in tounes
 ffurris of ffoyne · and oper ffelle-ware,
 And not þe better of a bene · þouȝ þey boru euere.
 And, but if þe slevis · slide on þe erthe, 152 Except their sleeves touch the ground, they are very wroth.
 þei woll be wroth as þe wynde · and warie hem þat it
 made ;
 And [but] ȝif it were elbowis · adoun to the helis,
 Or passinge þe knee · it was not acouñted.
 And if pernell preisid · þe plytis bihynde, 156 If Pernel praises the plaits, all is well.
 The costis were acouñtid · paye whan he myȝth.
 þe leesinge so likyde · ladies and oper,
 That þey Ioied of þe Iette · and gyside hem per-vnder ;
 And if ffelice ffonde ony ffaute · þenne of þe makynge, If Felice finds

136. *For* ; MS. *But*, wrongly repeated.

140. *semitis* ; or *seimtis*, or *seitutis* ; indistinct and uncertain.

142. *peple* ; miswritten *pephe*.

145. *ȝ* ; MS. *ne*, which seems to have been written over an erasure ; *ȝ* is better.

148. *douteth* ; MS. *douȝteth*.

150. *ware* ; misspelt *whare* in MS.

153. *Cf.* As wroth as þe wynd ; C. 4. 486.

154. Supply *but* ; as in l. 152.

156. *Cf.* He preide *purnele* · here porfil to leue ; C. 6. 129. Observe that *felice* is mentioned only three lines lower down, in C. 6. 132 ; whilst she is mentioned here also, four lines lower. *plytis* ; glossed by *pleytes*.

fault, all must be remade.

Yt was y-sent sone · to shape of þe newe. 161

But now þer is a gyse · þe queyntest of all

A wondir coriouse crafte · y-come now of late,

KERVING OF CLOTHES.

That men clepith kerving · þe cloþe all to pecis, 164

þat seuene goode sowers · sixe wekes after

Moun not sett þe seemes · ne sewe hem aʒeyn.

But þer is a profit in þat pride · þat I preise euere,

The piecing of the cloth costs twenty times as much as the stuff.

ffor þei ffor þe pesinge paieth · pens ten duble 168

That þe cloþe costened · þe craft is so dere.

Now if I sothe shall saie · and shonne side tales,

þer is as moche good witte · in swyche gomes nollis,

As þou shuldirst mete of a myst · ffro morwe tyll euen !

[Fol. 115 b.]

ʒit blame I no burne · to be, as him ouʒte, 173

In comliche cloþinge · as his statt axith ;

Men who think of nothing but dress and new fashions ought not to be trusted.

But to ledyn her lust · all here lyff-daies

In quentise of cloþinge · ffor to queme sir pride, 176

And euere-more stroutynge · and no store kepe,

And iche day a newe deuyse · it dullith my wittis

þat ony lord of a lond · shulde leue swiche þingis,

Or clepe to his conceill · swiche manere cotis, 180

That loueth more her lustis · þan þe lore of oure lord.

And if a lord his leuere · lyste ffor to ʒeue,

Men do not gain liveries for their good deeds, but for bragging.

Ther may no gome ffor goodnesse · gette þer-of but lite,

ffor curtesie, ffor comlynesse · ne ffor his kynde herte,

But rather ffor his rancour · and rennyngue ouere peple,

ffor braggynge and ffor bostynge · and beringe vppon

oilles, 186

ffor cursidnes of conscience · and comynge to þe assises.

This makyth men mysdo · more þan ouʒte ellis,

And to stroute and to stare · and stryue aʒeyn vertu.

This dress is the source of all evil.

So [be] clergie, þe cause · comsith in grette, 190

Of all manere mysscheff · þat men here vsyn.

167. *a profit* : MS. *aprfith* (*sic*), *queinteliche* de-gyset ; A. pr. 24.
with a *profett* written above it.

172. *Cf.* þow myʒt bet *mete* þe *lyuerey*. It is a trisyllable word.

188. *Cf.* And *makeþ men mys-do* · meny score tymes ; C. 4. 159.

176. *Cf.* In cuntinaunce of *cloþinge* ·

ffor wolde þey blame þe burnes · þat brouzte newe
gysis, 192

And dryue out þe dagges · and all þe duche cotis, If lords would
And sette hem a-side · and scorte of hem telle, set aside the
And lete hem pleye in þe porche · and presse non Dutch coats,
ynnere,

Ne no proude peniles · with his peynte sleve ; 196

And eke repreue robbers · and riffleris of peple, and reprove
fflater[er]is and ffals men · þat no ffeith vseth, robbers,
And alle deabolik-doeris · dispise hem ichone,

And coile out þe knyztys · þat knowe well hem-self, and choose good
þat were sad of her sawis · and suffre well coude, 201 knights and
cherish them,

And had traueilid in her tyme · and temprid hem-self,

And cherliche cheriche hem · as cheff in þe halle,

ffor to ordeyne officeris · and all oper thyngis ; 204

Men shuld wete in a while · þat þe world wolde amende, the world would
So vertue wolde fflowe · whan vicis were ebbid. mend.

But now to þe mater · þat I be-ffore meved, [Fol. 116.]

Of þe gomes so gay · þat grace hadde affendid, 208

And how stille þat steddeffaste stode · amonge þis
reccheles peple,

þat had awilled his wyll · as wisdom him taughte :

ffor he drough him to an herne · at þe halle ende, Wit stood at the
Well homelich yhelid · in an holsume gyse, 212 lower end of the
hall in homely
garb,

Not ouerelonge, but ordeyned · in þe olde schappe,

With grette browis y-bente · and a berde eke,

And y-wounde in his wedis · as þe wedir axith ;

He wondrid in his wittis · as he well myzthe, 216 wondering at the
vast households.

þat þe hie housinge · herborowe ne myghte

Halfdell þe houshold · but haies hem helped ;

But ffor crafte þat he coude · caste þenne or be-penke,

He myzte not wonne in þe wones · ffor witt þat he vsid ;

193. Cf. let *dagge* hus clopes ; C. in l. 219.

203. 143.

194. *scorte* ; so in MS. ; glossed by
scorne.

201. *coude* ; MS. *couude*. So also þi *wones* ; B. 3. 234.

216. *well* ; MS. *will*, altered to *well*.

217. *housinge* ; MS. *houusinge*.

220. Cf. Lorde, who shal *wonye* in

WITT WAS
BANYSSHED
OUTE OF THE
COURTE.

But, aroutyd ffor his ray · and rebuked ofte, 221
He had leue of þe lord · and of ladies alle,
ffor his good gouernaunce · to go or he drank!

As soon as men
knew that his
name was Wit,

þer was non of þe mene · þat þey ne merueillid moche,
How he cam to þe courte · and was not y-knowe; 225
But als sone as þey wiste · þat witt was his name,
And þat þe kyng knewe him not · ne non of his
knyztis,

they bade him
begone!

He was halowid and y-huntid · and y-hote trusse, 228
And his dwellinge ydemed · a bowe-drawte ffrom hem,
And ich man y-charchid · to schoppe at his croune,
ʒif he nyhed hem ony nere · þan þey had him nempned.
þe portir with his pikis · þo put him vttere, 232
And warned him þe wickett · while þe wacche durid:
“Lete sle him!” quod þe sleues · þat slode vppon þe
erthe,

The sleeve-
wearers wanted
to slay him,

and scorned
him for his old
clothes.

And alle þe berdles burnes · bayed on him euere,
And schorned him, ffor his slaueyn · was of þe olde
schappe. 236

Wit threatened
them with
punishment.

þus malaperte was myztffull · and maister of hous,
And euere wandrid wisdom · without þe ʒatis.
“By him þat wrouzte þis world!” · quod wisdom in
wrath,

[Fol. 116 b.]

“But ʒif ʒe woll sumtyme · I walke in amonge ʒou,
I shall fforbede ʒou burnes · þe best on þis erthe, 241
þat is, gouernance of gettinge · and grace þat him
ffollwith;

Thus the foolish
lords lost favour.

ffor these two trewly · twynned ʒet neuere.”
And so it ffell on hem, in ffeith · ffor ffautis þat þey
vsid, 244

þat her grace was a-goo · ffor grucchinge chere,

221. *aroutyd*; MS. *aroutyd*.

228. Cf. Ouer-al houted out · and
yhote trusse; C. 3. 228. For *y-hote*,
MS. has *y-hotte*, with the gloss
bydden above it.

241. *burnes*; MS. *burnesse*, which

is merely a bad spelling of the same
word. Other instances of confusion
between the endings *-es* and *-esse* are
occasionally found in the MS. Thus
we have *rosse* for *ros* in Prol. 13.

244. *ffautis*; MS. *ffauztis*.

- ffor þe wronge þat þey wrouȝte · to wisdom affore.
 ffor tristith, als trewly · as tyllinge us helpeth,
 þat iche rewme vndir roff · of þe reyne-bowe 248 Every kingdom
 Sholde stable and stonde · be þese þre degres: depends on 3
 By gouernaunce of grete · and of good age; 1. Counsellors.
 By styffnesse and strengthe · of steeris well y-yokyd, 2. Warriors.
 þat beth myȝthfull men · of þe mydill age; 252 3. Labourers.
 And be laboreris of lond · þat lyfflode ne ffayle. AGAYNSTE
 Thanne wolde [right dome] reule · if reson were YONGGE
 amongis us, COUNSAYLOURS.
- That ich leode lokide · what longid to his age,
 And neuere ffor to passe more · oo poynt fforþer, 256
 To vsurpe þe service · þat to sages bilongith,
 To be-come conselleris · er þey kunne rede,
 In schenshepe of souereynes · and shame at þe last.
 ffor it ffallith as well to ffodis · of xxiiij ȝeris, 260 Youths of 24
 Or yonge men of yistirday · to ȝeue good redis, years can no
 As be-cometh a kow · to hoppe in a cage! more advise than
 It is not vnknownen · to kunnyng leodis, a cow can hop in
 That rewlars of rewmes · around all þe erthe 264 a cage.
- Were not yffoundid · at þe ffrist tyme
 To leue al at likyng · and lust of þe world,
 But to laboure on þe lawe · as lewde men on plowes, Rulers should
 And to merke meyntenourz · with maces ichonne, 268 uphold the law,
 And to strie strouters · þat sterede aȝeine rithis,
 And alle þe myssedoers · þat þey myȝte ffynde,
 To put hem in preson · a peere þouȝ he were; and imprison
 wrong-doers,

248. Cf. þe richest rewme · þat reyne
 ouer houeth; B. 3. 207.

249. Cf. gan stable and stynte; B.
 1. 120.

250. Before l. 250 is prefixed the
 figure 1; before l. 251, the figure 2;
 and before l. 253, the figure 3. These
 refer to the "thre degres," viz. 1.
Oratores (here Counsellors); 2. *Bella-*
tores (Warriors); and 3. *Laboratores*
 (Labourers); according to the old
 threefold division. In l. 253, *be* =

by.

253. Cf. And lerne to labore with
 londe · lest lyfflode hym faile; C. 9.
 295.

254. We must supply *right dome*,
 i. e. just judgment, or some such
 words. In the margin is written—
 "Agaynste yongge Counsaylours."

260. The abbreviation *xxiiij* is to
 be read *four and twenty*, not *twenty-*
four. Cf. l. 79, above.

not waste money
in wine and
dances.

And [not] to rewle as reremys · and rest on þe daies,
And spende of þe spicerie · more þan it nedid, 273

Bothe wexe and wyn · in wast all aboute,
With deyntes y-doublid · and daunsinge to pipis,
In myrthe with moppis · myrrours of synne. 276

Rejoice in
season.
[Fol. 117.]

3it fforbede I no burne · to be blithe sum while ;
But all thinge hath tyme · ffor to tempre glee :
ffor caste all þe countis · þat þe kyng holdith,
And loke how þese lordis · loggen hem-self, 280

NOTA. NOTA.
NOTA.
OVER-WATCH-
XNGE.

And euere shall þou ffynde · as ffer as þou walkiste,
That wisdom and ouere-wacche · wonneth ffer asundre ;
But whane þe gouernaunce goth þus · with þo þe hous
gie shulde,

Despising of the
law will not long
thrive.

And letith lyghte of þe lawe · and lesse of þe peple,
And herkeneth all to honour · and to ese eke, 285
And þat ich wyght with his witte · waite on him euere,
To do hem reuerence aright · þou3 þe rigge brest,
þis warmnesse in welth · with wy vppon erthe 288
Myzte not longe dure · as doctourz us tellith.

For evil-doers to
come to no mis-
hap would be a
wonder indeed !

ffor ho so þus leued · his lyff to the ende,
Euere wrappid in welle · and with no wo mette,
Myzte seie þat he sawe · þat seie was neuere, 292
þat heuene were vnhonge · out of þe hookis,
And were boun at his bidding · 3if it be myzte !

Clerks find it so
in no books.

But clerkis kne[w] I non zete · þat so coude rede
In bokis y-bونده · þou3 3e brouzte alle 296
þat ony wy welldith · wonnynge vppon erthe ;
ffor in well and in woo · þe werld euere turneth,

KEW-KAW.

3it þer is kew-kaw · þou3 he come late,

274. *aboute*; MS. *aboutte*.

282. *That*; MS. *What*, probably by mistake. In the margin is "nota, nota, nota" in the same hand-writing as the text; another hand has added—"Over-watchynge."

284. *Cf.* And let lyght of þe lawe · and lasse of þe knyght; C. 9. 165.

288. *wy*; glossed by *man*; cor-

rectly. So also in l. 297.

290. *leued*; MS. *leued*, altered to *lyved*.

295. *knew*; MS. *kne*. *coude*; MS. *coude*.

299. In the margin—"kew kaw;" to which substantive *he* obviously refers.

- A new þing þat noyeth · nedy men and oþer, 300 At last comes a reverse of fortune,
 Whanne realles remeveth · and ridith þoru tounes,
 And carieth ouere contre · þer comunes dwelleth,
 To preson þe pillourz · þat ouere þe pore renneth ; and robbers go to prison.
 For þat were euene in her weye · if þey well ride. 304
 But ȝit þer is a ffoule ffaute · þat I ffynde ofte ;
 þey prien affter presentis · or pleyntis ben y-clepid, TAKYNGE OF PRESENTES.
 And abateth all þe billis · of þo þat nouȝth bringith ;
 And ho so grucche or grone · aȝeins her grette willes,
 May lese her lyff lyghtly · and no lesse weddis. 309
 Thus is the lawe louyd · þoru myȝhty lordis willys, Thus is the law brought low.
 þat meyneteyne myssdoers · more þan oþer peple.
 ffor mayntenaunce many day · well more is þe reuthe ! MAYNTENAUNCE.
 Hath y-had mo men · at mete and at melis, 313
 þan ony cristen kynge · þat ȝe knewe euere ; [Fol. 117 b.]
 ffor, as reson and rith · rehersed to me ones,
 Tho ben men of this molde · þat most harme worchen.
 ffor chyders of chester · were chose many daies 317 Chiders from Chester were chosen as pleaders in the law-courts,
 To ben of conceill ffor causis · þat in þe court hangid,
 And pledid pipoudris · alle manere pleyntis.
 þey cared ffor no coyffes · þat men of court vsyn, 320
 But meved many maters · þat man neuer thouȝte,
 And ffeyned ffalshed · till þey a ffyne had,
 And knewe no manere cause · as comunes tolde.
 þei had non oþer signe · to schewe þe lawe 324 They wore head-pieces instead of coifs,
 But a preuy palette · her pannes to kepe,
 To hille here lewde heed · in stede of an houe.
 They constrewed quarellis · to quenche þe peple,
 And pletid with pollaxis · and poyntis of swerdis, 328 They pleaded chiefly with axes and swords.

305. *ffaute* ; MS. *ffauȝte*.

306. In the margin—"Takyng of presentes."

309. Cf. Ich dorst haue leid my lyue · and no lasse wedde ; C. 4. 260.

310. In the margin—"mayntenaunce."

311. Cf. To meyntene mysdoers ·

Mede þei take ; B. 3. 246.

316. Cf. For þise aren men on þis molde · þat moste harme worcheth ; B. 3. 80.

317. *were* ; MS. *where*.

326. *houe*. Mr Wright prints *hone*, but does not explain it. See "*houes* of silke" in C. 1. 159.

| | | |
|---|-----|--------------------|
| His liegis in lawe · and so her loue gette, | 356 | |
| He sente ffor his seruantis · þat sembled many, | | He assembled His |
| Of baronys and baccheleris · with many briȝth helmes, | | servants, barons, |
| With þe comunes [of] þe contres · þey cam all at ones ; | | bachelors, and |
| And as a duke douȝty · in dedis of armes, | 360 | commons ; |
| In full reall aray · he rood vppon hem euere, | | in royal array He |
| Tyll degon and dobyn · þat mennys doris brastyn, | | rode against |
| And were y-dubbid of a duke · ffor her while domes, | | them, |
| Awakyd ffor wecchis · and wast þat þey vsid, | 364 | |
| And ffor her breme blastis · buffettis henten. | | till they received |
| þan gan it to calme · and clere all aboute, | | severe buffets. |
| þat iche man myȝte · ho so mynde hadde, | | Then came a |
| Se, be þe sonne · þat so briȝte schewed, | 368 | peaceful and |
| þe mone at þe mydday · meve, and þe steris, | | clear calm. |
| ffolwinge ffelouns · ffor her ffalse dedis, | | |
| Devourours of vetaile · þat ffouȝten er þei paid. | | |

364. MS. wrongly inserts *And* at the beginning of this line.

366. *aboute* ; MS. *aboutȝte*.

Passus quartus.

Whose household
was ever larger
than Richard's?

For where was euere ony cristen kyng · þat 3e
euere knewe,

Not all his fines,
forfeitures,

þat helde swiche an household · be þe half-delle
As Richard in þis rewme · þoru myserule of oþer,
þat alle his ffynys ffor ffautis · ne his ffee ffermes, 4
Ne ffor-ffeyturis ffele · þat ffelle in his daies,

law-fees,

Ne þe nownagis · þat newed him euere,
As marche and moubray · and many mo oþer,
Ne alle þe issues of court · þat to þe kyng longid, 8
Ne sellynge, þat sowkid · siluer rith ffaste,

and custom of
wools,

Ne alle the prophete of þe lond · þat the prince owed,
Whane þe countis were caste · with þe custum of
wullus,

could repay the
poor for his
exactions.

Myȝte not areche · ne his rent noþer, 12
To paie þe pore peple · þat his puruyours toke,

[Fol. 118 b.]

Withoute preiere at a parlement · a poundage biside,
And a ffiteneth · and a dyme eke,
And with-all þe custum of þe cloþe · þat cometh to
ffayres? 16

But for credit,
he and his would
have been over-
whelmed with
debt.

And ȝet, ne had creaunce Icome · at þe last ende,
With þe comunes curse · þat cleued on hem euere,
þey had be drawe to þe deuyll · ffor dette þat þey
owed.

And whanne þe reot and þe reuell · þe rent þus
passid, 20

And no þing y-lafte · but þe bare baggis,

- þan ffelle it afforse · to fille hem aʒeyne,
 And ffeyned sum ffolie · þat ffailid hem neuer,
 And cast it be colis · with her conceill at euene, 24
 To haue preuy parlement · for profit of hem-self,
 And lete write writtis · all in wex closid,
 ffor peeris and prelatis · þat þei apere shuld, -
 And sente side sondis · to schreuys aboute, 28
 To chese swiche cheualleris · as þe charge wold,
 To schewe ffor þe schire · in company with þe grete.
 And whanne it drowe to þe day · of þe dede-doynge,
 þat souereynes were semblid · and þe schire-knyztis,
 Than, as her fforme is, ffrist · þey begynne to declare
 þe cause of her comynge · and þan þe kyngis will.
 Comliche a clerk þan · comsid þe wordis,
 And pronounceid þe poyntis · aparte to hem alle, 36
 And meved ffor mony · more than ffor out ellis,
 In glosinge of grette · lest greyues arise.
 And whanne þe tale was tolde · anon to þe ende,
 A-morwe thei must, affore mete · mete to-gedir, 40
 þe knyztis of þe comunete · and carpe of þe maters,
 With Citiseyns of shiris · y-sent ffor þe same,
 To reherse þe articlis · and graunte all her askynge.
 But ʒit ffor þe manere · to make men blynde, 44
 Somme argued aʒein rith · þen a good while,
 And said, “we beth seruantis · and sallery ffongen,
 And y-sent ffro þe shiris · to shewe what hem greueth,
 And to parle ffor her prophete · and passe no
 fferthere, 48
 And to graunte of her gold · to þe grett wattis
 By no manere wronge way · but if werre were ;
 And if we ben ffals · to þo us here ffyndyth,
 Euyll be we worthy · to welden oure hire.” 52

When all else
 failed, they
 exacted money
 wrongfully,

and made the
 sheriffs return
 members of par-
 liament who
 could be won
 over.

Then a clerk
 arose and asked
 for money to be
 granted,

and said they
 must meet next
 day to give their
 answer.

The members
 pretended they
 would never
 grant money
 wrongfully ;
 [Fol. 119.]

for they knew
 their duty.

25. *profit*. The spelling in the MS. is indeed odd, being *pproffitt*.

28. *aboute* ; MS. *abouʒte*.

35. Cf. *Corteysliche þe knyzt þen · comsede þese wordes* ; C. 9. 32.

46. MS. *sallere*, altered to *sallery*, with the gloss *wages*. The word meant is *salarye*, for which see C. 8.

39. *ffongen* ; glossed by *taken*.

48. *parle* ; glossed by *speak*.

Some members
were ciphers.

þan satte summe · as siphre doth in awgrym,
þat noteth a place · and no þing availith ;
And some had ysoupid · with Symond ouere euen,
And schewed ffor þe shire · and here schew lost ; 56

Some were tale-
bearers.

And somme were tituleris · and to þe kyng wente,
And fformed him of foos · þat good ffrendis weren,
þat bablid ffor þe best · and no blame serued
Of kynge ne conceyll · ne of þe comunes noþer, 60
Ho so toke good kepe · to þe *culorum*.

Some slumbered.

And somme slombrid and slepte · and said but a lite ;
And somme mafflid with þe mouþ · and nyst what þey
mente ;

Some talked
nonsense.

And somme had hire · and helde þer-with euere, 64
And wolde no fforther affoot · ffor ffer of her maistris ;

Some were so
stupid that they
lost themselves
in the argument.

And some were so soleyne · and sad of her wittis,
þat er they come to þe clos · acombrid þey were,
þat þei þe conclucioun þan · constrewe ne couþe, 68
No burne of þe benche · of borowe noþer ellis,
So blynde and so ballid · and bare was þe reson.

Some were for
dashing on at
full sail.

And somme were so ffers · at þe ffrist come,
þat they bente on a bonet · and bare a topte saile 72
Affor þe wynde ffreshely · to make a good ffare.

But the lords
blamed the
skipper, and
bade him mind
his course.

þan lay þe lordis a-lee · with laste and with charge,
And bare aboute þe barge · and blamed þe maister,
þat knewe not þe kynde cours · þat to þe crafte
longid, 76

And warned him wisely · of þe wedir-side.

The mast bent.

Thanne þe maste in þe myddis · at þe monþe ende,
Bowid ffor brestynge · and brouzte hem to lond ;

Had they not
struck sail,

ffor ne had þei striked a strake · and sterid hem þe
better, 80

And abated a bonet · or þe blast come,

61. For *culorum*, see C. 4. 436.

65. Cf. That I ne myzte *further*
a-foot ; B. 5. 6.

70. Cf. And brynge forth *balled*
resones ; C. 12. 38.

72. *bonet* ; *bouet* in Mr Wright's
edition. It is the name of a small
sail. See l. 81, below.

75. *aboute* ; MS. *aboutte*.

þey had be þrowe ouere þe borde · backewarde they would have
ichonne. been blown over-
board.

And some were acombrid · with þe conceill be-ffore, [Fol. 119 b.]

And wiste well y-now · how it sholde ende, 84 Some knew how
it would end.

Or some of þe semble · shulde repente.

Some helde with þe mo · how it euere wente,

And somme dede rith so · and woldd go no fforþer.

Some parled as perte · as prouyd well after, 88 Some talked
only of the

And clappid more ffor þe coyne · þat þe kyng oweth money which
the king owed
hem them.

Thanne ffor comfforte of þe comyne · þat her cost
paied,

And were be-hote hansell · if þey helpe wold

To be seruyd sekirly · of þe same siluere.

And some dradde dukis · and do-well ffor-soke ; 92 Some feared
the lords, and
forsook Do-well. ¶

* * * * *

89. *oweth* ; MS. *owen*, an obvious error for *oweth* or *owed* ; the true *past* tense, however, would be *ouȝte*.

93. The poem terminates abruptly with the eleventh line on fol. 119 b. The rest of the page is blank.

NOTES TO "RICHARD THE REDELES."

NOTES TO THE PROLOGUE.

THE parallel passages occurring in the "Vision" have been already cited in the foot-notes.

2. *bristow*, Bristol. It was from Bristol that Richard set sail for Ireland, and it was at Bristol that Henry gave one of the first proofs of his power, in the execution of Lord Scrope and others; see note to Pass. ii. l. 152.

3, 4. An allusion to the Church of the Holy Trinity, or Christ Church, described in Barrett's Bristol, p. 464. It was in the very centre of the old town, at one of the corners where the four principal streets, High Street, Broad Street, Corn Street, and Wine Street met. See a plan of Bristol in 1479 in Ricart's Kalendar, edited by Miss Smith for the Camden Society, p. 10.

10. *wilde grisshe*. This was a common phrase, and occurs several times in a poem entitled—"Of the commoditees of Irelande, and policye and keypyng therof, and conqueryng of *wylde Iryshe*." See Political Poems, ed. Wright, ii. 185.

Compare also the following account:—

"For in the county of Hibernia and of Ireland are two races speaking two languages, the one speak bastard English, and dwell in the good towns, &c., the other are a wild people, who speak a strange language, and are called Crichemons, which have neither town, house, castle, nor dwelling, and dwell always in the woods, and on the mountains of the country, and have many chiefs among themselves, of whom the most powerful go barefoot and without breeches, and ride horses without saddles." French Chron. of the Betrayal and Death of Richard II. ed. B. Williams, p. 171. See also Spenser's View of the State of Ireland; and A. Borde's Introduction of Knowledge, ed. Furnivall, pp. 132, 334.

11. *on the est half*, on the Eastern side of England, viz. near Ravenspurg in Yorkshire, where Henry landed on the 4th of July, 1399. A fresh proof, were any needed, of the absurdity of Froissart's statement as to the landing of Henry at Plymouth. Richard returned from Ireland to England about the 25th of July, landing (as it would appear) at Harlech. See note

to Shakespeare's Rich. II., ed. Clark and Wright, Act iii. Sc. 2. The French Chronicle edited by Mr B. Williams gives this date as August 13, which seems far more likely; for else we have to suppose that Henry took several weeks to find Richard, which is improbable.

5. *sourdid*, arose; from O.F. *sourdre*, Lat. *surgere*; it occurs in Chaucer.

8. "So violent (or angry) were the sayings on both sides." No doubt much partisanship was displayed at the time, and great differences of opinion arose; cf. note to l. 2.

14. *serue* commonly means to *deserve*; but here it is, "that he should serve them the same," viz. by righting *their* wrongs.

17. Observe the author's uncertainty as to the end of it all; cf. ll. 24, 27.

19. "Some repented;" i. e. those who had applauded Henry's acts at Bristol began to turn again to Richard. L. 21 means that they expressed their opinion "that it was a pity the king's reason had not enabled him to reform the misrule from which the country suffered."

22. *in endurid*, continued in. The true reading would be *in duredé*; *endurid* is a mere gloss upon *duredé*, and makes the line halt.

33. *preise*, praise. I think *preie* (pray) would be better.

37. "And if it please him to peruse a leaf or two (of this treatise), that is written to amend him."

41. *grame*, be sorry, be vexed.

42. The sense passes on to l. 45, ll. 43 and 44 being parenthetical. "Every prince might learn from my words; yea, every Christian king that wears a crown might do so, if he only could read English."

47. *my beste*, i. e. the best I have.

49. *and I couthe*, i. e. if I could, if I knew how.

53. *3oure*, i. e. the *king's* hand. Sovereigns were addressed as *ye*; equals as *thou*. So *3e* is used below; and hence also the use of the *plural* imperative *redeth*.

54. *revis an hundrid*, a hundred rows or lines.

61. "For at present it is secret, and so it shall remain some time longer, till wiser men have looked it over." The author's intention was to get some friend to correct it before it should be presented to the king. But the course of events defeated his wishes.

66. "To take away their *ennui*, that so often bores them." For young people to be soon "bored" is nothing new.

69. "Since youth always supposes it [i. e. fault-finding, criticism] to be (a proof of) wisdom."

72. *with the culorum*, with the sequel thereof. *Culorum* is short for *seculorum* in the phrase *in secula seculorum*, a common ending of a prayer or sermon; cf. iv. 61.

73. "It would not hurt them a whit." *A peere* means a *pear*, i. e. to the extent of the value of a pear; just as we say not worth a *kerse*, i. e. a blade of grass; for which phrase see B. 10. 17. The expression "not worth a pere" occurs in Morte Arthure, Bk. xv. Cap. vi; Globe edition, p. 377.

80. *be*, the subjunctive or imperative mood; "may it never be my will." So *ho be* is "whosoever may be," in l. 85.

82. Probably a direct allusion to the "Vision;" particularly to the strife between Poverty and the Seven Deadly Sins in C. Pass. xvii.

NOTES TO PASSUS I.

1. *Richard the redeles*, i. e. devoid of counsel. Such is also the true meaning of the title *Unready* as applied to Æthelred; see Freeman, *Old Eng. Hist. for Children*, p. 190. Cf. note above to Prol. l. 53.

2. *leddyn*, for *ledden*, 2 p. pl.; used with a double meaning; viz. *led* your life and *ruled* your people.

4. *y-lyfte*, lifted, removed. Mr Wright prints *y-lyste*, with the explanation "listed, taken;" which I do not understand, unless it means that *listed* is put for *enlisted*. But this would hardly be the language of the fourteenth century.

11. An enumeration of things that do *not* promote allegiance amongst subjects, viz. dread or awe, blows, unjust judgments, bad coinage, pillage of the people, self-will of the king, taxes imposed in time of peace and exacted by ruthless plunderers.

17. Here *preysing* obviously means *appraising*, as in C. 7. 384; *of* means *by means of*; and *polaxis* is put for the men who used them, viz. the king's officers; see Pass. iii. 328. They appraised the goods of the king's subjects at whatever value was most convenient.

18. "Or whether by the debts thou contractest in dice-playing, judge as thou findest it." The verb *deme* governs l. 10 and all that follows. The change from *you* to *thou* is remarkable, and probably due to the mention of dice-playing, which is charged upon the king as being a *personal* vice.

19. "Or by right guidance of the law, justly tempered with love." Cf. l. 24 below.

25. *gostis*, spirits. An allusion to the king's favourites, such as De Vere and De la Pole.

26. "That never wore armour, nor (felt) showers of hail."

30. "They mourned over the pleasures of lordship which they once had; but never let fall one tear for their sins."

42. *y-doutid of*, feared by. See the parallel passages in A. 2. 10—14; B. 2. 10—17; C. 3. 11—16. In l. 44, *yloke* means *locked, joined*.

47. *traylid*, fenced round; cf. *trellis*. *treste*, trust.

51. *nest*, highest. The allusion is probably to the extreme intimacy between the king and his favourites, the "graceless ghosts" mentioned in l. 25 above.

54. *of tiliers*, from husbandmen. See the parallel passage, C. 5 45—65.

57. De Vere was Duke of Ireland, and De la Pole Earl of Suffolk.

58. We find in Hazlitt's *English Proverbs* the four following—"Drumming is not the way to catch a hare;"—"It is a mad hare that will be

caught with a tabor;”—“Men catch not a hare with the sound of a drum;” and—“You may catch a hare with a tabor as soon.” It must have been a common phrase. Strutt gives a drawing of a hare beating a tabor, copied from a MS., and adds that a hare beating a tambourine was actually exhibited at Sadler’s Wells “not many years back.” See Strutt, *Sports and Pastimes*, 2nd ed. 1810, p. 220; and cf. Ben Jonson’s *Bartholomew Fair*, A. v. sc. 3.

66. This saying was attributed to Bede.

“Hwan þu sixst on leode [*seest among the people*]
King þat is wilful,

þral vnbusum, [*disobedient*]
Apelyng brypeling, [*i. e. a noble a wretch*]

Al so seyde Bede,
Wo pere þeode.”—An Old Eng. Miscel. ed. Morris, p. 185.

77. The “murder” was that of the Duke of Gloucester, who was put to death at Calais in 1397, probably by the king’s order. The “mischief” or evil fortune was that of the dukes of Norfolk and Hereford, whom Richard had banished, of the Archbishop of Canterbury (Thomas Arundel), and of the Earls of Arundel and Warwick.

79. *is ynne*; i. e. is already gathered. In other words, “you need not expect further help.”

80. “Blame not your council, but rather yourself for it, viz. for the fact that ill fortune has befallen the faithless.”

90. *hobbis*, clowns. So also *hoball*, a clownish lout, in Roister Doister, iii. 3. 18; *hobbadehoy*, &c. Mr Wright gives the following note on *Hurlewayn*. “The only other instance of this word that I have observed in Early English poetry, occurs in the prologue to the Tale of Beryn, printed at the end of Urry’s Chaucer.

‘As Hurlewaynes meyne in every hegge that rapes.’

“*Hurlewaynes meyné* is the *Maisnie Hellequin* of old French popular superstition, in Latin *familia Harlequini*. The name is spelt in different ways, Hellequin, Herlequin, Henequin, &c. The legend was, that Charles the Fifth of France, and his men, who fell all in a great battle, were condemned for their crimes to wander over the world on horseback, constantly employed in fighting battles. Some derived the name from that of the Emperor; Charles quint, Charlequin, Herlequin, Hellequin. Of course this derivation is wrong, and the legend a fabrication of later date, to explain it. See Grimm’s *Mythologie*, p. 527; Le Roux de Lincy’s *Livre des Legendes*, p. 148—150, 240—245; and Michel’s *Benôit*, vol. ii. p. 336, where in a note is given a most extraordinary story about them. See also Paulin Paris’s *Catalogue of the French Manuscripts of the Bibliothèque du Roi*, vol. i. p. 322—325.”

A similar phrase is *Kaymes kin*, i. e. Cain’s kin, concerning which see Havelok, l. 2045 and the note.

96. “To get a remedy of their own grievances.”

99, 100. *busslinge*, pushing, butting. *colour*, pretence, as in Acts xxvii. 30. *wayve*, remove.

107, 108. *you formed*, instigated you. *fforchis*, gallows.

110. Halliwell gives "*Boinard*, a low person, a term of reproach," with a reference to Wright's *Anecdota Literaria*, p. 9. This merely shews that it occurs in l. 288 of the story called "*Dame Siriz*," which is there printed at length. The line runs—"Be stille, boinard;" which is equivalent to "hold your tongue, stupid!"

113. *belde*, grow strong, wax bold; *to belde vppon sorowe*, to strengthen themselves at the expense of those on whom they brought misery.

NOTES TO PASSUS II.

2. The key to the whole passage at the beginning of this Passus is to observe that the author is inveighing against the king's servants, and in particular against their wearing of badges. *Livery* (*leuerey* in line 2, *leuere* in l. 26) is used here in the particular sense of *uniform*, though it also meant a grant or allowance to servants of a more general kind; as when, for instance, Spenser defines it as an "allowaunce of horse-meate, as they commonly use the woord in stabling, as to keepe horses at liverye;" View of the State of Ireland, Globe edition, p. 623. The author complains that the king had marked his servants (l. 20) with badges or "signes" (l. 21), which were made of silver (l. 45) and which bore the image of a *hart* (l. 4). The whole passage is aptly illustrated by the following remarks. "The *White Hart* was the favourite badge of Richard II. At a tournament held in Smithfield in 1390, in honour of the Count of St Pol, Count of Luxemburg, and the Count of Ostrevant, eldest son of Albert, Count of Holland and Zealand, who had been elected members of the garter, 'all the kynges house were of one sute; theyr cotys, theyr armys, theyr sheldes, and theyr trappours were browdrid all with *whyte hertys*, with crownes of gold about their neck, and cheynes of gold hanging thereon, which *hertys* was the *kynges leverye* that he gaf to *lordes, ladyes, knyghtes, and squyers*, to knowe his household people from others;' Caxton's Chronicle at the end of Polychronicon, lib. ult. chap. vi."—The History of Signboards, by Larwood and Hotten, p. 112. This tournament is described by Froissart, Chron. Bk. iv. c. 23. Richard probably took this badge from the cognisance of his mother, the "fair maid of Kent," which was a white hind. See Mrs Palliser's Historic Devices, p. 363.

Lingard's remarks are also very applicable here. Speaking of the Statutes passed at the beginning of the reign of Henry IV., he says—"A fourth forbade, under the heaviest penalties, any person besides the king to give liveries to his retainers. These badges had long been one of the principal expedients by which the great lords were enabled to increase their power, and to maintain their quarrels. Whoever wore the livery was bound in honour to espouse the cause of the donor; and it was worn not only by those who had received fees, or were engaged in actual services, but by as many as were willing to accept it as an honour, or in token of friendship, or

with a view to future emolument." Lingard's reference is to Rot. Parl. iii. 428, 442; Stat. 1 Hen. IV. c. 10, 14.

Richard's badges or cognisances were the white hart kneeling, collared and chained, Or; the sun in splendour; the pod of the *planta genistæ*, or broom; and branches of rosemary. The white falcon has also been attributed to him, but Mr B. Williams supposes this to have really belonged to Queen Isabel, as it certainly was her device. See Williment's Regal Heraldry, pp. 20, 23.

7. *ffoltheed*, folly. See *folte*, a fool, in Prompt. Parv.

9. *eye*, awe, dread. That the *Eagle* means Bolingbroke is placed beyond all doubt by Pass. iii. l. 69. An eagle was one of the numerous badges of his grandfather Edward III.

12. *ffor mowtynge*, because of the moulting season that was drawing near. The moulting time for a hart is when it sheds its horns, i. e. the spring, as Lord Surrey says, in his well-known sonnet on Spring—

"The hart hath hong his olde hed on the pale."

But the author merely means that the horns were past their prime; the summer was indeed over (l. 14), yet the harts contrived to retain their horns for another half-year (l. 17); i. e. till the next spring.

13. *bauid*, probably only a variation of *batid*, i. e. abated, diminished the courage of. Cf. "Batyn, or abaten of weyte or mesure. *Subtraho*;" Prompt. Parv.

25. The simple correction *Of* for *Or* at once gives good sense. The *Of* became *Or*, because it had *Or* both above and below it. It means "whoever went much about would soon see more than enough of harts and hinds on retainers' breasts, or else the livery of some lord who destroyed the law." *Hassell* I suppose to be some kind of retainer. The only word I can find like it is the Low Lat. *haistaldi*, i. e. "qui in prædiis dominorum mansiones habent et glebæ sunt addicti; idem q. *Coloni, Hospites, Manentes, Rustici, &c.*;"—Du Cange.

28. *servid*, deserved; so also in iv. 59.

32. *plomayle*, plumage.

36. *hertis*, harts, i. e. on the *signes* or badges. But in l. 43, it has both meanings, viz. *harts* and *hearts*. "For every *hart* which you marked on a badge, you lost ten score of loyal *hearts*." I believe there is also a play upon the word *mark*, which sometimes signifies to *hit, succeed in hitting* (as in Pass. iii. 268), and is here opposed to *miss*. This smart saying is attributed to the *townmen*, as being sharper than *countrymen*.

51. *side* may mean *long, large*, or fixed on the side; it is not easy to determine which. These badges "spoilt all the broth, and upset the pot among the coals."

57. *or leverez beganne*, before these liveries came into use.

62. *lymmes*, limbs; i. e. the commons.

78. *meyntenour*, a technical term for one who abets another in wrongdoing, and supports him in defecating justice; see C. 4. 288.

83. *leuyng*, living. *leuyd* be, believed by, trusted by.

89. *He*, such a one; referring to *ho so* in l. 81.

92. *tente*, intent, purpose; but (both here and in l. 97) it is used rather with the sense of *argument, ground, reason*. *to take* and *to zeue*, for granting and giving. Observe that *to take* commonly means *to bestow*, as in C. 2. 52, &c.

93. This line is unconnected with the context. Perhaps for *And* we may read *For*. But, more probably, a line has been lost before it.

94. *gayes*, ornaments; a *gay* signifies anything gaudy or gay, as a highly coloured child's picture, or a fine piece of clothing. See Nares' Glossary, ed. Halliwell and Wright. It here refers to the badges and privileges already spoken of.

96. This means, that Truth has decided whether the ground of giving these badges was good or bad.

107. *quentise*, quaintness of dress, uniform.

113. *greehonde*, greyhound. Mr Wright suggests the Earl of Dorset (John Beaufort), as the badge of the Beauforts was a greyhound. But he was of no great mark, and the usual badge of the Beauforts was a golden port-cullis; see Mrs Palliser's *Historic Devices*, p. 378. My first notion was to suppose that the person meant was no less a person than John Beaufort's father, the celebrated John of Gaunt. This would fit well with the meaning of *lese*, a leash; since a leash signifies three. The three, in this view, would be the Dukes of Lancaster, York, and Gloucester, the only sons of Edward III. who survived him. Though our author certainly wrote the fable of the "cat and rattons" (B. Prol.; C. Pass. i.) against Lancaster, this feeling had long passed away, and his son was now in the highest favour. This guess of mine, unfortunately, receives *no* support from what we know of the badges of John of Gaunt, since the greyhound is not amongst them. In this difficulty, Mr G. E. Adams, Somerset Herald, has kindly suggested the solution—"Why should not the greyhound stand for Ralph Neville, created Earl of Westmoreland by Richard II., and of his Privy Council, Constable of the Tower of London, &c.? He was one of those who greatly contributed to raise Henry to the throne. In Surtees' *Durham*, vol. i. plate 8, are two seals of the Earls of Westmoreland supported by *greyhounds*. The supporters granted to Elizabeth Widville were a lion (of March), and a *greyhound*; which latter Sandford says was in allusion to the supporters of the Nevilles, from whom Edward's mother was descended."

117. *heed-dere*, head-deer, principal deer, i. e. chief men; cf. l. 128

118. "For little, during your life, it pleased you to have pity on the inferior sort of deer." A *rascal* was a lean deer, fit neither for hunting nor eating. So also in l. 129.

123. "But where (to complain) they knew not."

128. *hauntelere dere*, antlered deer; cf. l. 117.

139. "Moderation is a good mean, though men desire a great deal." "Measure is a mery mene" was a proverb, and is quoted by Skelton in his

Magnificence, l. 385. Mr Dyce says—"Heywood in his Epigrammes vpon Prouerbs has ten on 'Measure is a mery meane';" and Mr Hazlitt quotes from Heywood's Proverbs, ed. 1562, the couplet—

"Measure is a merry mean, as this doth shew,
Not too high for the pye, nor too low for the crow."

140. *be the rotus endurid*, lived upon roots.

145. *heyere*, exalter; from *hey*, high. See iii. 74.

147. *ffeedrin*, feathers, a Southern form; but in the next line we find *ffedris*.

148. *y-pynned*, furnished with *pens* or *quills*.

150. "For poison, in the valley, would have suited them ill." Here *venym* probably means merely *close air*; and hence, metaphorically, various slanders and false reports. See the line following.

151. "Till Truth, the remedy (for slander), told her true tales to some."

152—154. A clear allusion to *Bushy, Green, and Scrope*. "Thus this bird battered the *Bushes* around, and gathered up men as they walked on the *Green*, till all the 'scruff' and *Scrope* parted asunder." *Scruff* means *rubbish*, or a very common kind of fuel. Blount gives "*Scruff*, a kind of fuel which poor people, when firing is dear, gather up at ebbing water in the bottom of the Thames at London, and consists of coal, little sticks, cockle-shells, and the like." Halliwell also gives "*Shruff*, light rubbish wood; any short dry stuff used for fuel." *Schroup* is merely a slightly disguised spelling of *Scrope*. The author intimates that *scruff* and *scrope* were much the same thing, and proceeds to say—"He so mixed the metal with the hand-mould, (i. e. so moulded events) that they lost, of their limbs, the dearest that they had," i. e. their heads. Sir John Bushy was speaker of the House of Commons in 1394. Sir Henry Green was son of the Sir Henry Green, who had been Justice of the King's Bench in the reign of Edward III. Bolingbroke had been joined by the Duke of York, whom Richard had left behind as Regent of England during his own absence in Ireland, and their united forces appeared before Bristol on Monday the 28th of July, or, in the words of Holinshed—"the foresayd Dukes with their power, wente towards Bristow, where at their comming, they shewed themselues before the towne and Castell, beeing an huge multitude of people. There were enclosed within the Castell, the Lord Wil. *Scrope* Erle of Wiltshire, and Treasurer of Englande, Sir Henry *Greene*, and Sir John *Bushy* knightes, who prepared to make resistance, but when it would not preuayle, they were taken, and brought forth bound as prisoners into the Campe, before the Duke of Lancaster;" p. 1106. They were tried and beheaded the following day, Tuesday, July 29. See another allusion to Bushy in Pass. iii. 75, and to Green in Pass. iii. 101. And see, in particular, the curious song on King Richard's Ministers, in Mr Wright's edition of "Political Poems," which contains such expressions as—

"There is a *busch* that is forgrowe,
Crop it welle, and holde it lowe,
Or elles hit wolle be wilde;

The long gras that is so *grene*
 Hit most be mowe, and raked clene,
 Forgrowe hit hath the felde." . . .

"Thorw the *busch* a *swan* was selayn." . . .

"The *grene* gras, that was so long,
 Hit hath selayn a *stede* strong." . . .

"The *stedes colt* is ronnon away." . . .

"A *eron* [i. e. *ern*, eagle] is up, and toke his flyt,
 In the no[r]th contre he is list,
 Thus here ȝe alle men saye ;
 The *stede colt* with hym he brynges." . . .

And again, in the same volume—

"Scrope, Bagge, Ver, Dumus, tormentorum parat humus ;" p. 367.

Also, the expression, "*Aquila dux*," descriptive of Henry, p. 368 ; with many other allusions of a similar kind.

157. *foulyd*, went a-fowling, i. e. bird-catching. The *Falcon* here is the same as the *Eagle* (see l. 176), i. e. Henry ; but there may be an allusion to his junction with the Duke of York, whose badge was a *falcon* and *fetterlock*. It was also a badge of Edward III.

159. *robis*, robes, rich clothing.

162. *bated*, strove to fly, fluttered. Nares says—"a term in falconry ; to flutter the wings as preparing for flight, particularly at the sight of prey ; probably for *battre*, Fr.

'That with the wind

Bated, like eagles having newly bathed ;' 1 Hen. IV. 4. i.

[where it means fluttered to shake off the wet]. The true meaning of the word is beautifully exemplified in the following passage of Bacon : 'wherein (viz. in matters of business) I would to God that I were hooded, that I saw less ; or that I could perform more ; for now I am like a hawk that *bates*, when I see occasion of service ; but cannot fly because I am tyed to another's fist ;' *Letter ii.*"

163. *plewome*, to pluck off the feathers of the prey ; see Nares. This the *Eagle* did so fiercely as to sever the poll (or head) from the neck. Cf. note to l. 152.

164. *bler-nyed*, for *blear-eyed*. So also *pink nyz* for small eyes, quoted from Laneham in Nares, s. v. *Pink eyne*. *boynard* ; see i. 110. The line means "the blear-eyed scoundrel who stole his bag ;" where *his* refers to the "pray," i. e. to Scrope, then treasurer of England. There is here an allusion to Sir William Bagot, Sheriff of Leicestershire, 6 and 7 Richard II. The account in the present poem certainly implies that Bagot set out with Lord Scrope and the rest for Bristol, though he saved his life by leaving them and escaping to Ireland before Henry's arrival there ; cf. Shakespeare's Rich. II. Act ii. sc. 2. He was, however, caught at last, and severely reproved. He seems to have diverted attention from himself by accusing the Duke of Aumerle, against whom a "bill" drawn up by Bagot was read in

Parliament on Thursday, Oct. 16. Bagot survived till the year 1407. This furnishes a key to this somewhat difficult passage, in which the author partly reverts to the events *before* Scrope's execution, and of which the general sense is:—"The eagle was striving to seize his prey (Lord Scrope), that he might rend his head off; but the blear-eyed scoundrel (Bagot) who had stolen the treasurer's bag, in which the spoils of the poor were often fastened tightly, made the falcon angry, and anxious that Bagot should be bound. But soon after, this wretch (*lorell*, viz. Bagot) who had led away this looby (Scrope) all the way over forest and ford, fell into the domain belonging to Henry, and was caught and brought before him and publicly reprov'd." In the Political Poems, ed. Wright, are several allusions to Bagot under the name of the "bagge." The animosity of the poor against the four may be gathered from Holinshed, who says (p. 1102)—"The common brute ranne, that the kyng had sette to ferme the realme of England vnto Sir William Scrope Earl of Wiltshire, and then treasurer of Englande, to Sir John Bushy, Syr John Bagot, and sir Henry Greene Knights."

165. "Wherein the very rags of the poor were often penned or fastened." *Purraile-is* is the gen. case of O.Eng. *poraille*, poor people. *Pulter* probably answers to the Swed. *paltor*, rags, and the Scottish *peltrie*; we still use the adjective *paltry*, from the same root.

169. *ffode*, man, person; cf. *ffodis* in Pass. ii. l. 260.

179. *louyd* = *lowyd*, i. e. lowered, put down; as in iii. 313, q. v.

182. *reclayme*, a call to return, a term in falconry. See Strutt's Sports and Pastimes.

186. *lymed leues*, leaves covered with bird-lime.

187. *panteris*, snares for birds; see Prompt. Parv.

188. *grennis*, gins or springes made of fine hair.

NOTES TO PASSUS III.

1. *beu brid*, fine bird; i. e. Henry. *restore* governs *that whi* in l. 3; it means "establish that reason why;" i. e. make good my assertions.

10. *azeins kinde*, contrary to nature's laws.

13. *hertis*, harts; referring back to ii. 4.

17. *Her kynde*, their natural habit. *to keuere*, to recover; i. e. to regain the strength which they had when in their prime. The story of the hart, in the old Bestiaries, is that, when he grows old, he seeks out an adder and swallows it; but, the adder's poison causing him to burn, he rushes to the water and drinks plentifully, so rendering the venom harmless; after which he sheds his horns, and renews his strength. See An Old Eng. Miscellany, ed. Morris, pp. 10 and 205; Wright's Popular Treatises on Science, p. 86; Altenglische Sprachproben, ed. Mätzner, i. 55; and the *Physiologus* of Thetbaldus, in Latin verse, printed among the works of Hildebert (fol. Paris, 1708, p. 1174). Mr Wright quotes, from the prose Latin Bestiarius, the

following. "*De cervo*. Dicuntur etiam nongentos vivere annos, atque cum infirmitate vel senectute deficere senserint, spiritu narium serpentes de cavernis suis extrahunt, et superata eorum pernicie veneni pabulo reparantur;" MS. Reg. 12. C. 19.

The story also occurs in Pliny; see Holland's translation, Book viii. c. 33. Hence the device of a stag, attacked by serpents, fleeing to a fountain; see Mrs. Palliser's *Historic Badges*, p. 46.

23. *peyne*, death. *as his pray asketh*, as his prey (i. e. the necessity of swallowing his prey) requires.

26. "Now this is the nature of learning," i. e. the natural thing for learned men to do. An awkward expression, and I suspect the reading is corrupt; I would read—"This is *clerlie* hir kynde," i. e. this is evidently their natural habit; see note to l. 190 below. At any rate, the sense is that the harts should have attacked venomous adders, and not colts, horses, swans, or bears.

The *horse* is Richard Fitz-alan, earl of Arundel, beheaded on Tower-hill A.D. 1397; the *colt*, his son Thomas, who fled to join Henry, and was one of the small company who landed with him at Ravenspurgh; the *swan*, Thomas, duke of Gloucester, Richard's uncle, so treacherously murdered by his orders at Calais, about the same time that Arundel was beheaded; and the *bear*, Thomas Beauchamp, earl of Warwick, seized with Arundel by Richard's orders, and banished by him for life to the Isle of Man, though afterwards released by Henry. They were named from their badges, the *white horse* being that of Arundel, the *swan* that of the Duke of Gloucester, which he had adopted from his father Edward III., who sometimes used it; and the *black bear* that of the Earl of Warwick. See "*Political Songs*," ed. Wright, vol. i. p. 419.

27. *hurle with haras*, persecute with annoyance.

28. *sholle werre*, shall war, i. e. attack.

38. Mr Wright quotes the story of the partridge from the Latin Bestiary, MS. Reg. 12. C. 19, fol. 53.—"*De perdice*. Phisiologus dicit satis astutum esse perdicem, quia aliena ova diripit. . . . Adeo autem fraudulenta, ut alterius perdisis ova diripiens fovet. Sed fraus fructum non habet. Nam pulli, cum vocem propriæ genitricis audierunt, naturali quodam instinctu hanc quæ eos fovit relinquunt, et ad eam quæ eos genuit revertuntur." See also Wright's *Popular Treatises on Science*, p. 108.* The notion that one partridge will steal and hatch the eggs of another seems to have been known even to the Orientals; hence the expression in Jeremiah xvii. 11—"As the partridge sitteth on eggs, and hatcheth them not."

42. *eiren*, eggs. So in Wyclif's Works, ed. Arnold, iii. 157, and not "heirs," as the editor explains it. See l. 50 below.

45. *congioun*. Mr Wright prints *cougioun*. Halliwell gives "*Conjoun*, a coward," without reference or authority. But in the *Chester Plays*, ed. Wright, we find "thou caitiffe, thou *congeon*!" p. 40; "that vile *counjon*," p. 177; "suche a *congeon*," p. 178; and a soldier appointed to slay the

Innocent's says, "With this speare I thinke to assaie To kille manye a smalle *corgion*," p. 179.

46. *not of his nolle*, smooth (lit. closely cropped) of his head; cf. *notheed* in Chaucer; and see l. 66. *as he the nest made*, as if he had made the nest himself. The forms *his* and *he* should obviously be *hir* and *hue* (she).

50. *hue*, she; *þe hue*, the "she"-bird.

51. *kenne*, generate, come to life; cf. *kindle*.

58. *schrapid*, scraped up the ground (for food for them).

59. *leued*, i. e. they lived.

79. *two and twenty*; from 1377 to 1399.

81. *tymed*, (perhaps) delayed, put off for a time; but this is improbable. It is much more likely to be an error for *tyned*, i. e. lost. *no twynle*, not a jot. Mr Wright cites a passage from the Prol. to Beryn—"So he that payd for all in-feer had not a *twynt*;" Urry's Chaucer, p. 598.

86. *swan*; the Duke of Gloucester, as before. So the *hors* is again the Earl of Arundel, in l. 89.

90. *fferkyd hem forth*, proceeded.

94. *beere*, the Bear, the Earl of Warwick, whom Henry released. "When the Duke of Lancaster had imprisoned him [Richard] and those of his council in the Tower, the first thing he did was to recal the Earl of Warwick from his banishment, and to give him his liberty;" Froissart's Chronicles, bk. iv. c. 114. But it appears that Henry, with his usual promptness, had already taken upon himself to set Warwick at liberty, though he did not obtain the consent of parliament till afterwards. In fact, Warwick met Richard at Newcastle-under-Lyne about the 25th of August; see The French Chronicle, ed. B. Williams, p. 212; note 2.

98. *bosse*, lit. an excrescence, hump. The reason for such an appellation does not appear, unless it merely means "that great one." Cf. *boss*, a large marble; *bocyn*, to swell out, cited in note to l. 121 below.

101. "They cackled or complained against the *green*;" i. e. Sir Henry Green, as before.

105. *monsiede*, cursed; either miswritten for *mansid*, or else another spelling of it.

106. "Who ill knew his business, when he bandaged (lit. clothed) the Steed:" The Earl-marshal was Thomas De Mowbray, duke of Norfolk, son-in-law to the Earl of Arundel. The latter was executed by Richard's orders; and, as Froissart tells us, the Earl-marshal actually bandaged his father-in-law's eyes at the execution; see Froissart, bk. iv. c. 92. Such was, at any rate, the common story, as given also by Walsingham. But Lingard (referring to Rot. Parl. iii. 374-377, 435) shews that it cannot be true, as the Earl-marshal was not present, the lord Morley being his lieutenant on the occasion. This is why the poet says Mowbray knew his craft ill; for the office of a marshal (lit. servant of the horse) is to attend to the wants of a horse, not to bandage its eyes. For *cloped*, Mr Wright prints *cloped*, which he explains by *clipped*. But there is no fault in clipping a horse.

114. *walmed*, boiled up; A.S. *wylm*, a boiling.
 116. *That were*, That would be, indeed! Ironical.
 121. *stroutynge*, exactly the modern "swelling about." Cf. "*Strowetyn*, or bocyn out. *Turgeo*;" Prompt. Parv.
 126. *ffet*; for *fet*, fetched.
 127. *endauntid*, feared, revered.
 128. "And, if you take notice, by nobody else."
 129. "Then observe in more ways how the time goes."
 130. *gery*, changeable, ever-changing, as in Chaucer; see also Dyce's ed. of Skelton, ii. 206. *Iaces*, fringes or ribands. Cf. "*Jace*, a kind of fringe. *Devon*;" Halliwell. A hawk's *jesses* were thin strips of leather, silk, or riband.
 132. *creaunce*, credit. The line probably means—"They go upon credit."
 133. *hied*, sped. Cf. *hie*, haste.
 136. "For they leap as lightly out of the doom-cart, at their long journey, as a wretch that never was successful." The "*longe goynge*" here signifies death upon the gallows.
 139. *chaunchyth*, for *chaungyth*, change; so also *y-charchid* for *y-chargid* in l. 230. *cheynes*, chains of gold, ornaments that are exposed for sale in Cheapside.
 140. *seintis* or *semitis*, perhaps samites. *Samite* was a rich silk, into which silver was sometimes interwoven. The line perhaps means—"And use all their silver for interweaving with samites or for ornamenting drinking-horns."
 141. *for-doth*, spoil, clip. Hence the *pens-lac*, or lack of money, in l. 142.
 145. *Lidford*, in Devon. The proverb, as given by Fuller, is—
 "First hang and draw,
 Then hear the cause by Lydford law."

A curious vindication of this kind of justice, commencing with the lines

"I oft have heard of Lydford law,
 How in the morn they hang and draw,
 And sit in judgment after"—

is ascribed to Wm. Browne, the author of *Britannia's Pastorals*. It is printed entire in Chambers' *Book of Days*, ii. 327, with the explanation that—"Lydford itself is the chief town of the Stannaries, and the proverb probably was levelled at the summary decisions of the Stannary courts which, under a Charter of Edward I., had sole jurisdiction of all cases in which the natives were concerned, that did not affect land, life, or limb."

150. *ffoyne*, marten. *ffelle-ware*, skin-ware, fur.
 152. The whole passage is best illustrated from Chaucer's *Persones Tale*, where we read—"As to the firste synne, that is in superfluite of clotheyng, which that makid is so dere, to harm of the poeple, not oonly the cost of embrowdyng, the deguyse, endentyng or barryng, owndyng, palyng or bendyng, and semblable waste of cloth in vanite; but ther is also costlewe furring in here gownes, so mochil pounsing of chiseles to make holes, so

moche *daggyng* [see l. 193] of scheris; with the superfluite in lengthe of the forsaide gownes, traylinge in the donge and in the myre, on hors and eek on foote, as wel of man as of womman, that al thilke traylyng is verrailly (as in effect) wasted, consumed, thredbare, and rotyn with donge, rather than it is yeven to the pore, &c.;" Chaucer's Works, ed. Morris, iii. 296. See also a note in Dyce's ed. of Skelton, ii. 248.

156. *pernell*, Purnel (short for Petronilla), a common female name, particularly used of a woman of loose character. Another such name was *Felice*, which is used in l. 160; observe the foot-note.

158. *leesinge*, probably gleaning; because the sleeves, trailing on the ground, gleaned all that was on it.

159. *Iette*, another spelling (as Tyrwhitt notes) of *get*, used by Chaucer (Prol. l. 684) to mean *fashion*. Tyrwhitt quotes an apposite passage from Occleve's *De Regimine Principum*—

"Also ther is another *newe gette*,
All foule waste of cloth and excessif."

168. "For they pay for the piecing together of it twenty times the cost of the cloth itself; so dear is the workmanship."

186. *oilles*. The meaning seems uncertain; the word is very plainly written in the MS.

190. "So, as we learn, the cause begins amongst the great," &c. Very awkward; and probably, just as in l. 26 above, *clergie* is miswritten for *clerlie*. We then should have—"So evidently the cause of all evil begins amongst the great;" which is doubtless the sense intended.

200. *coile*, choose, *cull*.

209. *pat steddoffaste*, that steadfast one. The poet does not *at first* say whom he means; but he is really drawing a picture of "Wit," i. e. Wisdom, who is supposed to come to the king's court, and look about him with wonder at all that goes on there. Hence *awilled his wyll* in l. 210 must mean—"controlled his will," or "gained mastery over his will," and could rule himself wisely. The key is given in ll. 226, 238.

217. *housinge*, building. In the next line, *hales* are *tents*; see *Hale* in Halliwell.

221. *aroutyd*, driven out of the assembly. *ray*, array.

223. *halowid*, hallooted at. *yhote trusse*, bidden to pack off.

230. *schoppe*, for *choppe*, i. e. *chop*, hit. Cf.

"And gunne *choppen* al aboute
Every man vpon the *crowne*;"

Chaucer; *Hous of Fame*, iii. 734, 735.

236. *slauelyn*, mantle; see Halliwell.

242. *gouernance of gettinge*, i. e. a just mode of getting money, by imposing moderate taxes; a proceeding which will win *grace*, i. e. favour. In l. 250 it means government, counsel.

259. *schenshepe*, for *schendship*, i. e. ruin.

265. "Were not created (or elected) at the first."

268. "To mark 'maintainers' with maces;" i. e. to beat them; in contradistinction to the marking with badges mentioned above.

272. The word *not* has been dropped, making nonsense of the whole. Restore it, and we have—"And not to rule like bats (awake only at night), and rest all day," &c. See l. 277.

276. *moppis*, fools, apes; cf. *moppe*, foolish; Seven Sages, ed. Weber, l. 1414.

282. *ouere-wacche*, the being awake too late at night.

284. *letith lyghte of*, despises. The nominative is *the king*, understood.

287. "To do them right reverence, though his back break," viz. with stooping. We ought to read *hem* for *him* in l. 286, or else *him* for *hem* here.

288. "This glow of wealth may not last long with any mortal wight."

299. *kew-kaw*, a sudden change, a subversion; see *kew* in Jamieson.

302. *carieth*, another form of *caireth*, wander; see C. l. 31.

303. "To imprison the robbers that over-run the poor."

307. "And put down (refuse) all the complaints."

310. *louyd*, for *lowyd*, i. e. brought low; as in ii. 179. Compare all this with C. 4. 156—319.

315. "For, as reason and justice once told me." The use of *me* here is most important, for the author immediately goes on to cite a line from *Piers the Plowman*, thus directly implying that he wrote that poem also.

317. *chiders of chester*, wranglers from Chester, who took part with the king. Lingard says that the king's body-guard of archers had been "levied in the county of Chester." In fact, one of Richard's titles was *Earl of Chester*, a title which he received from Edward III.; and he afterwards created himself *prince of Chester*. He had the special reason for assuming this title, that he wished to ingratiate himself with the people of that county. This we are expressly told in the following note, printed in *Polit. Poems*, ed. Wright, i. 461. "Anno regis Ricardi xxj. incipiente, rex assumpsit sibi nomen principis Cestriæ, ob amorem populi Cestriæ, in parlamento, ubi novi domini creantur, scilicet Henricus comes Derby in ducem Herefordiæ," &c. In MS. Harl. 1939, a rising of *Cheshire men* in favour of Richard is recorded as taking place immediately after his return from Ireland; see Appendix C to the *Chronique de la Traison et Mort de Richart*, ed. Williams. Walsingham (ed. Riley, ii. 225) refers to the "satis feralis turba Cestrensiū, armata securibus, gladiis, arcubus et sagittis."

319. *pipoudris*, i. e. in the court of Pie-Poudre; the summary court formerly held at fairs, and so called from the dusty feet (*pieds poudreux*) of those present.

320. *coyffes*, coifs such as were worn by the sergeants-at-law; cf. B. prol. 210; and see *houe*, i. e. a hood, in l. 326.

325. *pallette*, a leathern head-piece, which served them instead of a coif or hood, and helped to keep their brain-pans safe; see note in *Way's Prompt. Parv.* p. 378. To *hille* is to cover.

330. "And gave men the free experience of their long staves." To *lend lecerè* is to *deliver blows*; see Wm. of Palerne, ed. Skeat; ll. 1233, 3822.

341. *Iustice*, a justice, i. e. an administrator of justice; but *Iewis* (Lat. *judicium*) is justice itself, i. e. the sentence of the law.

347. Here a line has evidently dropped out; we want one like the one supplied by guess.

350. "Or any apprentice of the court asked to employ his wits."

351. *Degon* is clearly a term of contempt; see note to l. 362 below. The word *endauntid*, feared, has already occurred, l. 127 above.

352. "Till our Lord, in His seat above the seven stars," i. e. the seven stars known as Charles's wain.

354. *meynteyned of him*, upheld or abetted by him. The MS. reading (see foot-note) is an obvious error.

357. *He*, i. e. the Lord. His servants, "the barons and bachelors in bright helms," are the angels, accompanied by whom "He rode in full royal array." A striking and curious passage.

362. *degon and dobyn*, evidently Diggon and Dobbin, both common names for country bumpkins, here used in contempt of the upstarts who used to burst in men's doors and rob them. Spenser introduces *Diggon* and *Hobbinol* into his *Shepherd's Kalender* for September.

363. *while domys*, occasional (or temporary) sentences.

364. *Awakyd*, awoke to a sense of their folly, on account of their night-wakes and wastefulness. *wecches*, wakes, revels.

366. *it*, viz. the sky, the heavens.

NOTES TO PASSUS IV.

Lines 1—16 form one long interrogatory sentence.

6. *nownagis*, nonages, minorities; *newed*, renewed, i. e. renewed his funds. It is clear from this that, when a nobleman succeeded to a title while in his minority, the king had a share of the estate.

7. *marche and mowbray*. Mr Wright says the reference is to—"Roger de Mortimer, fourth Earl of March, who was committed in ward to the Earl of Arundel. John de Mowbray and Thomas de Mowbray both succeeded to the title while in their minority in this reign."

10, 11. *prophete*, profit; as in l. 48. *countis*, accounts. *wullus*, wools.

12. "Might not go far enough, even with the addition of his rent, to repay the poor for that which his purveyors took from them."

15. *fifteneth*, fifteenth. *dyme*, a tenth; Lat. *decima*.

"To paye the *Fiftene* ayenst our ease,

Beside the lordys rente of our londe;

Thus be we shepe shorne, we may not chese," &c.

God Spede the Plough; pr. with Pierce the Ploughmans

Crede, ed. Skeat, p. 70.

The whole of the poem called "God Spede the Plough" illustrates the present poem.

The tenths and fifteenths were granted by distinct classes. See Hallam, *Middle Ages*, iii. 54; 7th ed. Lingard says—"Richard had previously demanded an aid of the commons; and on the fourth day (i. e. Jan. 31, 1398) they voted him, with the assent of the lords, *a tenth and a half, and a fifteenth and a half*; and in addition, as if they sought to make him independent of parliament, granted him the tax on wool, wool-fells, and hides, not for a short and determinate period as usual, but for the whole term of his natural life. (Rot. Parl. iii. 368)." This is clearly the very occasion to which our author is referring.

17. *creaunce*, the credit-system. It means that the court-revellers spent so much that they would have been utterly ruined by debt if they had not paid some of it by promises only.

20. *reot*, riot; the expenses of revelry.

24—30. This probably has a special reference to the compliant parliament which met in Sept. 1397, concerning which Fabyan complains that the king would not be controlled in the election of sheriffs, and that "where before times the king of England used to send commissioners unto burgesses of cities and towns, to choose for their free liberty such knights of the shire as they thought most useful for the common weal of the said shire and land, now King Richard would appoint the persons, and will them for to choose such as then he named." Lines 28—30 particularly refer to these sheriffs.

24. *colis*, falsehoods, deceits, stratagems. Very rare; but it occurs in Gascoigne's *Steel Glas*, l. 1114—

"Nor colour crafte by swearing precious *coles*."

See *Specimens of English*, A.D. 1394—1579; ed. Skeat, p. 323. Cf. *col-fox* crafty fox, in Chaucer; and see note by M. R. in *Notes and Queries*, Fourth Series, iv. 358.

38. "In deceiving the great, lest grievances arise."

45. "Some argued *against* the king's right of taxation; but this was merely a blind."

49. *wattis*, wights, people. In the *Coventry Mysteries* (ed. Halliwell, p. 294), a messenger, speaking of Christ just after His capture, says—

"3e xal fynde hym a strawnye *watt*."

And in the *Towneley Mysteries* (*Surtees Society*), p. 8, Cain's serving lad says of himself—

"Gedlinges, I am a fulle gret *wat*."

53. "Some sat, like a cipher in arithmetic, that marks a place, though of no intrinsic value." So also in *Crowley's Select Works*, ed. J. M. Cowper, p. 73.

"And at the last thou shalt be founde
To occupye a place only
As do in A[u]g[r]ime ziphres rounde,
And to hynder learnyng greatlye."

The old copy of Crowley, having the misspelling *Agime* for *Augrime*, looks hardly explicable at first sight; and Mr Cowper does not explain it.

55. *Symond*, Simon. I have no doubt that "to sup with Simon" means here to sup with ecclesiastics, to share in the revels which some churchmen indulged in. *Simon* means Simon Peter, and is used elsewhere by the author as a general name for the clergy; see C. 10. 257, and cf. Mark xiv. 37.

57. *tituleris*, tattlers, tale-bearers. "These went to the king, and informed him of foes, who were really friends and spoke for the best, and deserved no blame at all."

63. *mafflid*, mumbled, spoke indistinctly.

66. This alludes to the logic-splitters.

72. *bente on a bonet*, spread an extra sail. To *bend* a sail is to fasten it to its yard or stay. A *bonnet* is an addition to a sail, or an additional part laced to the foot of a sail. *topte sail*, a top-sail.

74. *laste*, burden; cf. G. *last*, a load. *charge*, a heavy weight. It seems to refer to the trimming of the vessel.

75. If *bare aboute* is the modern *put about*, it means "altered the course of;" an explanation which suits well with l. 76.

77. This seems to mean that the lords lay comfortably sheltered on the lee-side, and warned the steersman as to what was going on on the weather-side; doing so, probably, by guess. Yet the line is rather obscure. The result was that the mast bent, and nearly broke (l. 79); and if they had not taken in the additional sails in time, they would have fallen overboard owing to the lurching of the vessel.

86. *the mo*, the majority.

89. *clappid*, clattered, spoke loudly. Some, instead of looking after the money due to the commons, asked for what the king owed *themselves*, and so far succeeded that they were promised an earnest of money (*hansell*) if they would help the king; for they should be helped to some of the same silver as he received himself.

93. "And some forsook well-doing, because they feared the great." An obvious allusion to the author's poem of Do-well.

It is reasonable to suppose that the present poem was never finished. The course of events at the time was so rapid as soon to supersede all conjecture and good advice.

The Crowned King.

[THIS piece has been inserted because it is an early specimen of the several poems that have been written in imitation of Piers the Plowman. The first 27 lines were printed by Percy in his "Reliques;" but the *whole* poem is now printed for the first time. As it has no title, I have given it that of *The Crowned King*, because this expression occurs *four* times; see ll. 1, 35, 51, 141; note especially l. 35. Short as it is, we can decide with sufficient accuracy many points in connection with it. The general form of it, especially that part where the dream begins, is enough to shew that it is, as above-said, an imitation of Piers the Plowman; and this will appear more clearly if the passages mentioned in the foot-notes be examined. The language is somewhat simpler and later, and the author has caught the manner of his original but imperfectly, so that the result is, as a whole, weaker and milder. In this respect, it supplies a most useful contrast to the poem of "Richard the Redeless," in which the exact style and spirit of Piers the Plowman is perfectly maintained throughout. The happiest imitations are perhaps to be found in ll. 61—72, 81—83, 86—89, 111, 118, 124, 131, 132, and especially l. 134, which is perfect. Instead of *metels* (a dream) we find the later form *metyng*. In l. 116, the alliteration breaks down badly; the writer had no business to link *speche* with *small* (thus alliterating *sp* with *sm*), and then leave out the chief-letter. The unique copy here printed is to be found in MS. Douce 95, the writing being of the middle of the fifteenth century. The MS. contains several other pieces, and on leaf 12 the date 1439 is mentioned. If we accept the various indications of date afforded by the allusions in it—and we in fairness ought to do so, because otherwise the whole poem becomes meaningless—we may very easily determine all that is necessary to be known about it. It really amounts to a letter of advice addressed to a youthful yet not incompetent king, who can be no other than Henry V. Such a line as l. 77—

Thi peres in parlement · pull hem to-geders—

is quite inapplicable to Henry VI., who succeeded to the throne as a mere infant, and would have been entirely superfluous if addressed to Henry IV.; whilst the language is too late for the first few years of Richard II., and the writing too early for Edward IV. As addressed to Henry V., however, the poem is at once intelligible, and has adequate reasons for existence. I have little hesitation in fixing the date of composition as being probably the month of June, 1415. The author says he had just been with some friends on

Corpus Christi Eve, i. e. on the Wednesday after Trinity Sunday, which answered, in 1415, to the 29th of May. He plainly speaks of an imminent war, to be waged against a foreign country, in which there were castles to be won by adventurers (l. 97). This is an evident allusion to the coming campaign in France, and it is worthy of note that the expedition set sail from Southampton (cf. l. 20) in the month of August. Henry had declared for war some time before. Fabian gives June 18 as the date when Henry rode through London to go to Southampton, and Walsingham gives June 24 as the date when he was expected to arrive there. The "subsidie" mentioned in l. 36 is the very large grant which Henry had obtained (Nov. 19, 1414) of no less than two tenths and two fifteenths; for though no war was then declared, it was doubtless well understood that it was to come. The suggestion in ll. 95 and 96, that all prisoners should be for the benefit of their captors, is exactly parallel to the arrangement that "all prisoners were to belong to their captors," to which Lingard draws special attention, with a reference to Rymer, ix. 223—239, as having been made on this very occasion. The knowledge that the king was coming to Southampton would naturally suggest a poem of the present form to a poet resident there; and its brevity may have been intended to give it a better chance of attention. All who remember the story of Henry and Chief Justice Gascoigne will see the application of l. 53, and those following; whilst l. 75 well expresses the favour in which the young king was held. Neither are the exhortations (ll. 122—124) to a display of personal prowess out of place; for it was now twelve years since the battle of Shrewsbury (July 21, 1403), and there was little to shew that Henry would again display such bravery as he then exhibited. Further points I leave to the reader's consideration, with the remark that, when read in the light thus thrown upon it, the poem is not without interest, and very fairly expresses the public opinion of the time.]

[*Douce MS. 95; leaf 4.*]

Christ, the
Crowned King
of heaven, all
praise be to
Thee!

Christ, crowned kyng · that on cros didest,
And art comfort of all care · þow kynd go out of
cours,

Thou shewest
men, in dreams,
what care or
comfort is to
come.

With thi halwes in heuen · heried mote thu be,
And thy worshipfull werkes · worshiped euere, 4
That suche sondry signes · shewest vnto man,
In dremyng, in dreechyng · & in derk swevenes,
Wherwith that thei ben ware · & witterly knowen
Of care and of comfort · þat comyng is here-after! 8

I dreamt, one
morning, a
strange dream.

This i sey be my-self · (so saue me our lord!)
Be a metyng that y met · in a morowe slepe,
Hevy & hidows · y hight you forsoth,
And the most merveyulous · that y met euere. 12

And ye like to lere · & listen a while,
 As y may in my mynde · this metyng reherce,
 Sekerly and shortly · þe soth y shall you shewe
 Of this dredefull dreme · deme as you likes !

If ye like to
 listen, I will
 describe the
 dream.

16

Ones y me ordeyned · as y haue ofte doon,
 With frendes and felawes · fremde men and other,
 And caught me in a company · on Corpus Christi
 even,

One Corpus
 Christi even, I
 went, with some
 friends, 6 or 7
 miles out of
 Southampton.

Six other vij myle · oute of Suthampton,
 To take melodye and mirthes · among my makes,
 With redyng of romaunces · and reuelyng among.

20

The dym of the derkenesse · drowe into the west,
 And began for to spryng · in the grey day ;

The night re-
 ceded, and dawn
 began.

24

Than lift y vp my lyddes · & loked in the sky,
 And knewe by the kende cours · hit clered in þe Est.

Blyve y busked me down · And to bed went,
 For to comfort my kynde · And cacche a slepe.

28

I hastened to bed,
 to take a nap.

Swythe y swyed in a sweem · þat y swet after,
 So my spirit in a spaas · so sore was y-set.

I fell into a
 trance.

Me thought that y houed · an high on an hill
 And loked down on a dale · deppest of othre ;

32

Methought I
 looked from a
 hill into a deep
 dale, wherein
 were many
 people.

Ther y sawe in my sight · a selcouthe peple,
 The multitude was so moche · it myght not be noum-
 bred.

Me thought y herd a crowned kyng · of his comunes
 axe

A Crowned King
 asked his com-
 mons for a sub-
 sidy for his wars.
 [leaf 4, back]

36

A soleyn subsidie · to susteyne his werres,
 To be rered in the reaume · as reson requyred
 Of suche as were seemly · to suffre the charge ;
 That they that rekened were riche · be reson and
 skyle

Shuld pay a parcell · for here pouere neighborres ; 40

13. *lere*] a better spelling than *is missing*.
 leer, as in the MS.; see l. 113.

18. *fremde men*] written *frende*
 men; but *fremde* must be meant.

31. *an*] the second stroke of the n

31—34. Cf. B. prol. 13—18; C. 1.
 14—20.

34. *noumbred*] written *noumbred*.

35. Cf. B. prol. 112; C. 1. 139.

- This ordenaunce he made · in case of his peple.
 A Clerk kneeled
 down and ad-
 dressed him. With that a Clerke kneled a-down · & carped these
 wordes ;
 “ Liege lord, yif it you like · to listen a while,
 Sum sawes of Salomon · y shall you shew sone, 44
 Besechyng you of *your* souerainte · that y myght be
 suffred
 To shewe you my sentence · in singuler noumbre ;
 To peynte it with pluralitee · my prose wolde faile,
 To pike a thonke with plesaunce · my profit were but
 simple.” 48
 The King bade
 hym rise, and
 say on. Than the kyng of his curtesie · comaunded hym to
 ryse,
 To stonde and sey what hym semed · and knele no
 lenger.
 “ Sir Crowned
 King, Than he seid, “ sir crowned kyng · thou knowest well
 þy-self,
 Thi-self hast lyfe, lyme · and lawes for to keep. 52
 Yif þou be chief Iustice · Iustifie the truthe,
 And rule the be resoun · and vp-right sitte ;
 For that is a poynt principall · preve it who so will,
 To be dred for thy domes · and dowed for thy
 myght. 56
 rule ever with
 reason.
 For every man
 who is wise
 shows his merits
 by his deeds. For ther is neither lered ne lewed · þat lyveth vpon
 erthe,
 That wyssheth after worshiþe · his wit is full feble,
 But yif he wite be his werkes · he hath well deserued,
 And of his well doying his dedes · to deme the same.
 The loue of thi liegemen · that to thi lawe are
 bounde, 61
 Be assured that
 the love of your
 liegemen is a
 treasure. Take hit for a tresour · of hem that are true,
 That may the more avail · in a myle-wey

42. Cf. B. prol. 123, 124 ; C. 1. 147, —139.

148. 56. and dowed] written an dowe.

44. Cf. B. 3. 93, 94 ; C. 4. 121, 61. Cf. B. 4. 148 ; C. 5. 145.
122. liegemen] written liegmen.

53. Cf. B. 4. 136—142 ; C. 5. 133

Thanne moche of thy mukke · þat manhode louep
neuere. 64

The playnt of the pouere peple · put þou not behynde, Never put aside
For they swope and swete · and swynke for thy fode ; their complaints.

Mochē worshiþe they wynne the · in this worlde riche,
Of thy gliteryng gold · and of thy gay wedes, 68 They win for you
Thy proude pelure and palle · with preciose stones, robes ;

Grete Castels and stronge · and styff-walled Townes ; [leaf 5]

And yit the most preciose plente · þat apparail and plenteous
passeth, crops from the
soil.

Thi pouere peple with here ploughe · pike oute of the
erthe. 72

And they yeve here goodes · to gouerne hem euen ;
And yit the peple beñ well a-paid · to plesē þe Allone, Thou art beloved
Suche loue is on the leid · of lordes and of lower, by high and low.

And grete is thi grace · that god hath the lent. 76

Thi peres in parlement · pull hem to-geders, Govern well thy
Worche after wysdom · & worshiþe will folowe. peers.

For as a lord is a lord · and ledeth the peple,
So shuld prowesse in þi persone · passe oþer mennes
wittes ; 80

The wittyest and wylyest · and worthiest in Armes, A lord must
All is but wast wele · and he wronge vse, never deal
wrongfully.

And vnsemely for a souerain · (so saue me our lord !)
And hevy for his name · that hyndren will ever. 84

Sir, þou most be worldly wys · & ware þe be-tymes, Beware of
And kepe the fro glosyng · of gylers mowthes, flatterers,

That speken to the spiritually · with spiritual tonges,
Momelyn with here mouthes moche · and malys in hert, who have malice
And of a mys menyng · maketh a faire tale ; in their hearts. 89

Vnder flateryng and fair speche · falsehede foloweth,
And yif they myght with here moustres · to marre þe
for euere

66. *they*] *miswritten the; but see*
1. 67.

88. Cf. B. 5. 21; C. 6. 124.

91. *moustres*] *moustres or moustres*
in the MS; see C. 7. 260.

With disceit of here derknesse; · þe deuell hem a-
drenche ! 92

Be kind to the
clergy;
cherish thy
warriors.

Be kende to thi clergi · and comfort þe pouere;
Cherissh thy champyons · and chief men of Armes;
And suche as presoners mowe pike · with poyntes of
werre,

Lete hem welde that they wynne · & worþyly hem
þonke. 96

Give thy men
the towns which
they win.

And suche as castels mowe cacche · or eny clos tounes,
Geve hem as gladly · than shalt þou gete hertes.
For god in his gospell · asketh no thyng elles
But oonly loue for love · and let hym be levest. 100

Let thy marshal
be renowned for
strength.

Also he that is stronge · strokes for to dele,
Make hym thy marchall · and maner his maistre,
That for his doughtynesse · men mowe hym drede,
And for his wysdom and witte · the better to be ware.

[leaf 5, back]

Comfort thy
trusty knights.

Knyghtes of thy counseill · connyng in armes, 105
That been seker at asay · and sober to thy frendes,
Suche thou shuldest comfort · be cours of thy kende,
That lede here lyves · in labour for thy loue. 108

A counsellor
who is like a
weathercock
will not amend
thee.

Loke þou haue suche a man · that loueth not to lye,
A faithfull Philosofre · þat flater woll never;
For he that fareth as a faane · folowyng þy wille,
Worche þou well or woo · he woll þe not amende. 112
Lere lettrewre in þy youthe · as a lord befalleth,
Whan þou to parlement shall passe · þere lordes shall
pere;

For to her of thy wysdom · þey woll awayte after,
And though her speche be but small · þe more be here
þoughtes. 116

In parliament,
borrow not ideas
from others.

For yif þou haue no science · to shewe of thy-self,
But as a Brokour to go Borowe · pore mennes wittes,
That were most myscheef · þat myght a lord befall,

96. *welde*] *miswritten* wilde.

97. Cf. C. 4. 251—253.

105. *connyng*] *miswritten* comyng.

118. *Brokour*] *miswritten* Brogour;
see B. 2. 65.

Ther as wyse men haue wrapped · her wittes to-
gidre. 120

Sir, they it come to þe of kynde · a kyng to be called, Exercise thy
knyghthood and
martial valour.
Yit must þou knowe of corage · what knyghthood
befalleþ;

For he þat Armes shall haunte · in youþe he must
begynne,

Of all Artes vnder heven · vse is a maistre. 124

Sir, more-ouere be not gredy · gyftes to grype; Be not greedy
to receive gifts.
Rather þou shalt yeve hem · þat fele hem agreed:

So shall thy hawtesse · highlich be honoured,
And prudence in thy principaltee · y-preised for
euere, 128

For an ensample y shall you shewe · that soth is
knowe.

A kyng shuld not of curtesie · couetouse be holde; A king should
never be covetous
nor let dross
be his master.
For there as couetyse is knowe · in A kynges brest,
Ther is corage out of kende · when mukke is his
maistre. 132

The condicion of a kyng · shuld comfort his peple;
For suche laykes ben to love · þere leedes laghen alle.
My liege lord, of this mater · y meve you no more, I say no more.
But euere in your mynde · haue hym þat you made;
And taketh a siker ensample · þat crist hym-self
sheweth, 137

Of all the seyntes in heven · that for hym deth suffred; [leaf 6]
Remember how
Christ's saints
suffered, and now
dwell with that
Crowned King
for ever."
For his loue thei were so large · her lyves they lost,
And for loue of that lord · a-loft now they dwelle 140
With that crowned kyng · that on cros dyed;

Ther crist in his kyngdom · comfort vs euere,
And of his high grace · graunte vnto vs alle
Prosperite and pees; · pursue we thereafter!" 144

Explicit.

126. Cf. B. 3. 208--211; C. 4. 266--269.

142. Cf. B. prol. 105; C. 1. 133.

GLOSSARIAL INDEX, WITH NOTES,

TO THE POEM OF

THE CROWNED KING.

- A-DOWN, *adv.* down, 42. P. Pl.
- A-drenche, *subj. pr.* drown, 92; be deuell hem a-drenche, i.e. may the devil drown (or overwhelm) them. A.S. *adrencan*, to drown.
- Agreved, *pp.* aggrieved, 126.
- An, *prep.* on, 31. Written without a second stroke to the *n*; cf. *an hiegh* = on high; P. Pl. B. *pr.* 13.
- Allone, *adj.* alone, 74.
- A-loft, *adv.* i.e. in heaven, 140.
- Among, *adv.* at the same time, as well, 22.
- And, *conj.* if, 13, 82.
- A-paid, *pp.* pleased, satisfied, 74. O.Fr. *apaier*, to appease, from Lat. *pacare*. P. Pl.
- Apparaill, *sb.* apparel, rich clothing, 71.
- As gladly, i.e. as gladly as you may, with all readiness, 98.
- Asay, *sb.* assay, trial, 106.
- Awayte, *vb.* wait, 115. P. Pl.
- Axe, *vb.* ask, 35. A.S. *ácsian*, *áxian*. P. Pl.
- Be, by; be cours of thy kende, by course of thy nature, in accordance with thy nature, 107; with reference to, 9, 10.
- Befalle, *vb.* befall, 119; *pr. s.* Befalleth, becomes, is suitable to, 113, 122.
- Be-tymes, *adv.* betimes, early, in good time, 85.
- Blyve, *adv.* quickly, soon, 27. See Bi-liue in Gl. to Will. of Palerne.
- Borowe, *vb.* borrow, 118. See Go.
- Brokour, *sb.* broker, i.e. one that sells other men's things, 118. In the MS. it is miswritten *Brogour*. See footnote.
- Busked, *pt. s.* 1 *p.* got (myself) ready; busked me down, i.e. prepared myself for sleep, and lay down, 27. P. Pl.
- Cacche, *vb.* catch; cacche a slepe = take a nap, 28; take, win, 97.
- Carped, *pt. s.* spoke, 42. P. Pl.
- Charge, *sb.* burden, expense, 38.
- Clered, *pt. s.* grew clear, 26.
- Clos, *adj.* enclosed, walled, 97.
- Comunes, *sb. pl.* commons, 35. P. Pl.
- Connyng, *adj.* cunning, skilled, 105.
- Corage, *sb.* disposition; ther is corage out of kende = there is his

- disposition unnatural, 132; of corage = by your disposition, 122. See *Courage* in Cotgrave.
- Corpus Christi even, the eve of Corpus Christi day, 19. Corpus Christi day is the Thursday after Trinity Sunday. In 1415, Corpus Christi eve fell on Wednesday, May 29; in 1414, on June 6.
- Couetouse, *adj.* covetous, 130.
- Couetyse, *sb.* covetousness, 131. P. Pl.
- Cros, *sb.* cross, 1, 141.
- Crowned, *pp.* crowned, 1, 35, 51.
- Curtesie, *sb.* courtesy; of curtesie, on account of his courtesy, 130. P. Pl.
- Dele, *vb.* deal, give, 101. P. Pl.
- Deme, *vb.* to judge of, 60; *imp.* s. judge, 16. P. Pl.
- Deppest, *adj.* deepest; deppest of othre = deeper than any other, 32.
- Derknesse, *sb.* darkness, mystification, 92.
- Deuell, *sb.* devil, 92.
- Didest, 2 *p. s. pr.* diedest, didst die, 1.
- Disceit, *sb.* deceit, 92.
- Domes, *sb. pl.* judgments, 56. P. Pl.
- Doughtynesse, *sb.* sturdy valour, 103.
- Dowted, *pp.* feared, 56.
- Drecchyng, *sb.* trouble of mind caused by dreams, 6. See Chaucer, Nonne Prestes Tale, 67.
- Dred, *pp.* dreaded, feared, 56.
- Drowe, *pt. s.* drew, 23.
- Dyed, *pt. s.* died, 141.
- Dym, *sb.* dimness, duskiness, 23.
- Ensample, *sb.* example, 129, 137. P. Pl.
- Faane, *sb.* vane, weathercock, 111.
- Falschede, *sb.* falsehood, 90. P. Pl.
- Fareth, *pr. s.* acts, proceeds, conducts himself, 111.
- Felawes, *sb. pl.* fellows, companions, 18. P. Pl.
- Folowyng, *pres. part.* following, 111.
- Fremde, *adj.* lit. foreign; hence, chance acquaintances, companions to whom one is not related, 18. The MS. has *frende*, owing to the previous occurrence of *friendes* in the same line, but the error is obvious. The phrase *fremde oper sibbe* means whether unrelated or related, and is sometimes found; see Stratmann's Glossary.
- Gete, *vb.* get, gain, win, 98.
- Geve, *imp. s.* give, 98. See Yeve.
- Glosyng, *sb.* flattery, 86.
- Go borowe, i.e. go and borrow, 118.
- Grype, *vb.* to grip, seize, grasp, receive greedily, 126. P. Pl.
- Gylers, *sb. pl. gen.* beguilers', of guileful men, 86. P. Pl.
- Halwes, *sb. pl.* saints, 3. Chaucer.
- Haunte, *vb.* exercise constantly, 123.
- Hawtesse, *sb.* loftiness (of character), 127.
- Hem, *pron.* them, 73.
- Here, *pron. poss.* their, 73.
- Heried, *pp.* praised, 3; heried mote thu be, praised mayst thou be. A.S. *hërian*, to praise.
- Hertes, *sb. pl.* hearts; gete hertes, i.e. win hearts, 98.
- Hidows, *adj.* hideous, 11.
- Highlich, *adv.* highly, greatly, 127.

- Hight, 1 *p. s. pr.* I promise, 11.
Cf. "I hete þe for soþe," Will. of Palerne, 572.
- Holde, *pp.* held, esteemed, considered (to be), 130. P. Pl.
- Houed, 1 *p. s. pr.* halted, 31.
Lit. hovered about; it implies motion within a very limited space. P. Pl.
- Iustifie, *imp. s.* uphold with justice, prove to be right, maintain uprightly, 53.
- Kende, *adj.* natural, 26; kind, 93. This form occurs in Will. of Palerne.
- Kende, *sb.* nature; be cours of thy kende, in accordance with thy nature, 107; ther is corage out of kende, there his disposition is turned aside from its true nature, 132.
- Knowe, *pp.* known (to be), 129, 131; Knowen, 7. P. Pl.
- Kynde, *sb.* nature; natural want, 28; of kynde, by thy nature, 121; þow kynd go out of cours, though nature depart from her usual course, 2. P. Pl.
- Laghen, *pr. pl.* laugh, 134.
- Large, *adj.* liberal, 139.
- Laykes, *sb. pl.* games, 134. The line means—"Those games are most liked, in which all the people who join can laugh." P. Pl.
- Leedes, *sb. pl.* people, 134. P. Pl.
- Leid, *pp.* laid, 75.
- Lent, *pp.* given, 76. P. Pl.
- Lere, *vb.* to learn, 13; *imp. s.* Lere, 113; *pp.* Lered, learned, 57. P. Pl.
- Lettrewe, *sb.* letters, learning, 113. P. Pl.
- Levest, *adj.* dearest, 100.
- Lewed, *adj.* ignorant, 57. P. Pl.
- Liegemen, *sb. pl.* lieges, 61.
- Lift, 1 *p. s. pt. s.* lifted, 25.
- Like, *pr. s. subj.* please; if it you like, if it may please you, 43; *pr. s.* Likes, pleases, 16. P. Pl.
- Love; to love (*gerund*), to be loved, 134. See Laykes.
- Lower, *adj. pl. as sb.* lower people, poor people, 75.
- Lyddes, *sb. pl.* eyelids, 25.
- Lyme, *sb.* limb, 52. Probably alluding to the king's power over life and limb.
- Maistre, *sb.* master, 124, 132.
- Makes, *sb. pl.* mates, fellows, comrades, 21. P. Pl.
- Malys, *sb.* malice, 88.
- Maner, *sb.* lit. manner, 102. The line is obscure, but it may mean—"and let use be his master," or, "let habit guide him;" the sense "use," and Lat. *consuetudo* are given in Prompt. Parv.
- Marre, *vb.* mar, ruin, 91.
- Marchall, *sb.* marshal, 102. P. Pl.
- Mater, *sb.* matter, subject, 135. P. Pl.
- Menyng, *sb.* meaning, 89.
- Met, 1 *p. s. pt.* dreamt, 10, 12. P. Pl.
- Metyng, *sb.* dream, 10, 14. In P. Pl. the form is *metels*.
- Meve, 1 *p. s. pr.* move, 135. The line means—"as regards this matter, I invite your attention no further."
- Moche, *adj. as sb.* much, a great deal, 64.
- Momelyn, *pr. pl.* mumble, talk ambiguously, 88. P. Pl.
- Morowe, *sb. as adj.* morowe slepe = morning sleep, sleep in the early time of morning, 10.
- Most, *adj.* the greatest, 119.

- Mote, *pr. s. subj.* 2 *p.* mayest, 3.
- Moustres, *sb. pl.* shewings, false pretences, 91. P. Pl. Cf. the modern word *muster*.
- Mowe, *pr. pl.* may, 97, 103. P. Pl.
- Mukke, *sb.* dirt; *but here used for* dross, wealth, 64, 132. P. Pl.
- Myle-wey, *sb.* the distance of a mile; in a myle-wey, i.e. in the long run, 63. P. Pl.
- Mynde, *sb.* memory, remembrance, 136.
- Mys, *adj.* wrong, 89.
- Myscheef, *sb.* evil fortune, mishap, 119. P. Pl.
- Noumbred, *pp.* numbered, 34.
- Ones, *adv.* once, 17.
- Palle, *sb.* rich cloth, 69.
- Parcell, *sb.* part, portion, 40. P. Pl.
- Passe, *vb.* to surpass, 80; go, 114; *pr. s.* Passeth, surpasses, 71. P. Pl.
- Pelure, *sb.* expensive fur, 69.
- Pere, *vb.* appear, 114.
- Peres, *sb. pl.* peers, 77.
- Peynte, *vb.* paint, describe, 47. P. Pl.
- Philosofre, *sb.* philosopher, adviser, 110.
- Pike, *vb.* to pick; pike a thonke, pick a thank, earn thanks, 48; pike presoners, spoil prisoners, 95; *pr. pl.* pick, i.e. dig, plough up, 72. In l. 95 it clearly means to take spoils from the prisoners whom they capture; see l. 96 following.
- Plesaunce, *sb.* pleasant talk, rhetoric, ornamented discourse, 48.
- Pluralitee, *sb.* variety, 47.
- Pouere, *adj.* poor, 40, 72.
- Preve, *imp. s.* 3 *p.* prove, i.e. test, 55. P. Pl.
- Prose, *sb.* prose, unornamented style of writing, 47.
- Principaltee, *sb.* rule, sovereignty, government, 128.
- Prowesse, *sb.* worthiness, 80.
- Poyntes, *sb.* points; poyntes of werre, martial exploits, 95.
- Reaume, *sb.* kingdom, 37.
- Redyng, *sb.* reading, 22.
- Rekened, *pp.* considered (to be), 39.
- Rered, *pp.* raised, 37.
- Reuelyng, *sb.* revelling, 22.
- Romaunces, *sb. pl.* romances, tales, 22. Bp. Percy draws special attention to this mention of the 'redyng of romaunces.'
- Salomon, Solomon, 44.
- Sawes, *sb. pl.* sayings, proverbs, 44. P. Pl.
- Seemly, *adj.* suitable, fit, 38.
- Seker, *adj.* to be depended upon, trusty, 106; Siker, sure, trustworthy, 137. P. Pl.
- Sekerly, *adv.* truly, 15.
- Selcouthe, *adj.* strange, 33. P. Pl.
- Sey, *vb.* to say, 50; 1 *p. s. pr.* Sey, 9.
- Semed, *pt. s.* appeared right; him semed, i.e. appeared best to him, was his opinion, 50.
- Siker. *See* Seker.
- Singular, *adj.* simple, plain; singular noumbre, simple fashion, 46.
- Skyle, *sb.* right, justice, 39.
- Soleyn, *adj.* customary, usual, 36. Perhaps it means *annual*.

- Soth, *sb.* truth, 15.
- Soth, *adj.* true; soth is knowe, is known to be true, 129.
- Souerain, *sb.* sovereign, 83.
- Souerainte, *sb.* sovereign grace, 45.
- Spaas, *sb.* space, short space of time, 30.
- Spryng, *vb.* rise, dawn, 24. We must understand *it*; the line means—and it began to dawn in the gray east.
- Stonde, *vb.* stand, 50.
- Subsidie, *sb.* subsidy, tax, 36.
- Suthampton, Southampton, 20.
- Sweem, *sb.* swoon, 29. Halliwell gives "*Sweem*, to swoon. Somerset." Cf. *Swym* = swoon, Morte Arthure, 4246.
- Swevenes, *sb. pl.* dreams, 6. P. Pl.
- Swet, 1 *p. s. pt.* sweated, 29.
- Swope, *pr. pl.* sweep, i. e. labour, 66. Cf. *zuope*, to sweep; Ayenbite, p. 109.
- Swyed, 1 *p. s. pt.* fell exhausted, sank down through dizziness, 29. The very phrase *swyes in swoghe* = sink down in a swoon, occurs in Morte Arthure, ed. Brock, 1467. Halliwell gives—"Sweet, a giddiness in the head. North."
- Swynke, *pr. pl.* toil, 66. P. Pl.
- Swythe, *adv.* quickly, soon, 29. P. Pl.
- Taketh, *imp. pl.* take, observe, accept, 137. The plural is used to shew respect, in the royal style.
- The, *pron.* thee, 63.
- Ther, *adv.* where, 142.
- Ther as, *adv.* where that, 120.
- They, *conj.* though, 121.
- Thonke, *sb.* thank, expression of thanks, 48. See Pike.
- Jonke, *imp. s.* thank, 96.
- Tresour, *sb.* treasure, 62. P. Pl.
- Vnsemely, *adj.* unfit, 83. P. Pl.
- Vp-right, *adj.* rigidly just, 54.
- Ware, *adj.* aware, 7, 104. P. Pl.
- Ware, *vb.*; ware þe = (thou must) guard thyself, 85.
- Wast, *adj.* waste, 82.
- Wedes, *sb. pl.* robes, 68. P. Pl.
- Welde, *vb.* wield, have power over, dispose of, enjoy fully, 96. Badly spelt *wilde* in the MS.
- Wele, *sb.* wealth; wast wele = idle prosperity, unprofitable self-success, 82.
- Werres, *sb. pl.* wars, 36.
- Wit, *sb.* wisdom, 58; *pl.* Wittes, wits, 120.
- Wite, *vb.* wit, know, be well aware, be conscious, 59.
- Witterly, *adv.* evidently, 7. P. Pl.
- Worche, *imp. s.* work, 78, 112.
- Wrapped, *pp.* wrapped, 120.
- Wylyest, *adj.* most cunning, cleverest, 81.
- Wynne, *pr. pl.* win, conquer, 96.
- Wyssheth, *pr. s.* wish; wyssheth after, i. e. wish for, desire, 58.
- Yeve, *vb.* to give, 126; *pr. pl.* Yeve, 73.
- Y-preised, *pp.* praised, 128.
- Y-set, *pp.* set, placed, 30.

CORRECTIONS FOR
“PIERCE THE PLOUGHMANS CREDE.”

P. iii. l. 14; *for* 1832 *read* 1842.

P. iii. l. 2 *from bottom*; Mr Wright is mistaken in one point; the British Museum MS. is not on *paper*, but on *vellum*.

P. vi. l. 17; *for* specimens *read* specimens.

P. xx. A better meaning of *mete* is *scanty, insufficient*. The explanation of *hokshynes* has been entirely altered; see below.

P. 2, l. 26. The word indistinctly printed is “holden.”

P. 13, l. 352. Perhaps *trofle* is the better spelling, after all; cf. O.Fr. *trufle*.

P. 14, l. 366; and P. 22, l. 573. *For* God lene *read* God leue [i. e. permit].

P. 29, l. 786. *For* mene-mong corn *read* mene mong-corn.

P. 34, l. 8 *from bottom*. *For* *jongleurs* *read* *jougleurs*.

P. 35, note to l. 65. The Pied Friars (Fratres de Pica) had but one house, viz. at Norwich.

The expression *Freres Pye* occurs in Walsingham, ed. Riley, i. 182. The order was dissolved, and they were obliged to join one of the four principal orders; we may infer that they joined the Carmelites. See Notes and Queries; 4 S. ii. 496.

P. 38, note to l. 180. See also *Ragman* in Halliwell's Dictionary.

P. 40, footnote. *Neres* means *kidneys*; cf. G. *Niere*.

P. 41, line 1. This explanation is quite wrong. L. 230 means, “it was good enough in its ground or texture to bear being dyed in grain,” i. e. of a fast colour. See Smith's Student's Manual of the English Language, p. 55; cf. Collier's Eccl. Hist. i. 612.

P. 46, note to l. 425. *read* “his hose overhung his gaiters (*hokschynes* = *hoskins*), and so got bedaubed with mud.”

P. 46, note to l. 428. *Mete* means *tight, scanty, insufficient*.

CORRECTIONS.

P. 47, *last line but one.* Add ; after "Menours."

P. 48, note to l. 516. Read "næs þær duru," &c. ; also "þyrl" for "thyr."

P. 53, l. 744. The line means—"Now must each cobbler set his son to school." The note is wrong.

P. 54, l. 782. Cf. "But, Jak, thou; thi questions semen to thee wyse,
3et liztly a lewid man maye *leyen hem a water* ;"
Reply of Frier Dawe Topias ; *Pol. Poems*, ii. 43.

GLOSSARY. Cloutede, patched ; without reference to the *cleat* ; see Gloss. to Will. of Palerne.

Hokschyne, gaiters, 426. It is certainly the Ayrshire *hoeshins* or *hushions*, Ross. *hoggers* ; another form of *hoskins*, the dimin. of *hose*. The *hoeshins* are of various sorts ; some are made of old stockings with the feet cut off. For the change of *ks* and *sk*, cf. *axe* with *ask*.

Under "Lene," strike out the references to ll. 366, 753.

Insert—Leue, in *phr.* god leue = may God grant, 366, 753. Cf. G. *erlauben* ; see my article in Notes and Queries, 4 S. ii. 126.

Strike out "Menemong ;" and insert—Mong-corn, mixed corn, 786. See *Muncorn* in Halliwell. Cf. A.S. *mengan*, to mix.

"Mete" means scanty, insufficient ; see the note on p. xx ; and compare the following quotation, sent me by Mr Wedgwood—

"There's no room at my side, Margaret,
My coffin's made so *meet*."

Add—Stareþ, sparkle, shine, 553.

For "Trefle" read "Trofle," as it seems the better spelling.

Tymen, think (them) fit, 742. See *Beteem* in Wedgwood.

Add—Wayten, look out, watch, 469.

P. 73. The poem, with the burden "London," &c., is printed in Reliq. Antiq. i. 205. In l. 30 of God spede the Plough, "a styk of a bough" means a tally ; see note to Piers Plowman, iv. 48 (Clar. Press Series).

English Dialect Society.

THE objects of the "ENGLISH DIALECT SOCIETY" are :—(1) to bring together all those who have made a study of any of the Provincial Dialects of England, or who are interested in the subject of Provincial English; (2) to combine the labours of collectors of Provincial English words by providing a common centre to which they may be sent, so as to gather material for a general record of all such words; (3) to publish (subject to proper revision) such collections of Provincial English words as exist at present only in manuscript; and (4) to supply references to sources of information which may be of material assistance to word-collectors, students, and all who have a general or particular interest in the subject. Much information may be found scattered up and down the pages of such publications as Notes and Queries; many provincial glossaries (especially the smaller ones) are so scarce as to be hardly attainable; and it must have occurred to every one who has studied the subject that the work has materially suffered from the extremely desultory way in which word-lists have been published, at all sorts of times and places, on no uniform plan, and with total irregularity as to size, shape, and arrangement. The chief book of reference is the well-known Dictionary of Archaic and Provincial English by Mr Halliwell, in which the preservation of archaisms was the primary idea, although fortunately the editor "thought the incorporation of a glossary of provincialisms would render the work a more useful guide than one restricted to known archaisms" (5th ed. pref. p. vii); and, accordingly, took great pains to render his book as complete in this respect as was possible.

There are many collateral objects towards which the Society can render good service ; as *e. g.* by publishing a new list, to complete the "Bibliographical List of the works that have been published towards illustrating the Provincial Dialects of England," published by Mr J. Russell Smith in 1839 ; since which time many important glossaries have appeared, such as Atkinson's Glossary of the Cleveland Dialect, Peacock's Glossary of the Dialect of the hundred of Lonsdale, &c. Even Hartshorne's *Salopia Antiqua* was only mentioned in Mr Smith's list as being "in the press." Moreover, some of the county glossaries require verification, amplification, and correction of a thorough and systematic character. Even the words in Halliwell require verification, and that the district to which they belong should be more exactly defined ; in many cases it would be desirable to trace exactly from what authorities the given information was derived.

The first definite suggestion of a Society such as the English Dialect Society was made by Mr Aldis Wright in the number of Notes and Queries for March 12, 1870 (4 S. v. 271) in the following words :—

"It has long been my conviction that some systematic effort ought to be made for the collection and preservation of our provincial words. *In a few years it will be too late.* Railroads and certificated teachers are doing their work. Not a year passes but some words pass beyond the reach of recovery. Much, no doubt, has been done by such glossaries as those of Moor, Forby, and Nall for East Anglia ; by Atkinson, Carr, Hunter, Robinson, and others, for the various dialects of Yorkshire ; by Miss Baker for Northamptonshire, and the like ; but some counties are almost unrepresented, and, so far as I am aware, nothing like a systematic attempt has yet been made to sweep into one complete collection all the provincialisms in England. That such a collection should be made I think every one will admit, but it can only be done by a division of labour. Let each provincial word, and usage of a word, be recorded, with an example of its application if necessary, and a note of the place where it is so used ; but of etymologies let collectors beware. From my experience of most glossaries, my

advice with regard to etymology would be the same that Cæsar gave with regard to an unusual word, that it was to be avoided *tanquam scopulum*.

"While we have our *Early English Text Society*, our *Chaucer Society*, and our *Philological Society*, why should we not have a Society for collecting and preserving provincial words? In such a work I shall be glad to give the best help in my power.

"WILLIAM ALDIS WRIGHT.

"*Trin. Coll., Cambridge.*"

This was followed by a letter from the Rev. W. W. Skeat (4 S. v. 303), containing hints to collectors, but suggesting that perhaps the work could be done without the *immediate* formation of a Society for this express purpose; an opinion which has proved to be incorrect. Next followed a letter of approval from F. C. H. (4 S. v. 303); then one from Mr J. Payne (4 S. v. 363), whose hint "that it would be very desirable that the exact locality, the *habitat* of each word should be noted, and not merely the general area" must on no account be lost sight of. Also a letter from Mr J. C. Atkinson (4 S. v. 363), containing several useful practical hints. A sixth letter came from Mr G. F. Blandford, who suggested the very practical idea of procuring a county glossary, and adding any words to it which it did not contain. "In this way," says Mr Blandford, "I have added not a few words to Mr Akerman's Glossary of the Wiltshire Dialect."* A seventh letter, from Mr L. Jewitt, F.S.A., gave information about a glossary of words used in Derbyshire; and several others followed. Amongst them was one (4 S. v. 442) from Mr A. J. Ellis, now President of the London Philological Society, shortly explaining his Glossic Orthography, which would enable all dialects to be written without any new letters. This is more fully explained in the Introduction to Part III of his "Early English Pronunciation," on p. xii of which, in Feb., 1871, he proposed the formation of an *English Dialect Society*, under this name. This Introduction was afterwards reprinted for distribution, and the names of several supporters

* But query—where are these additional words to be found?

obtained. Unfortunately, however, the idea ultimately dropped through at the time, only to be now revived after a lapse of three valuable years. The words of Mr Aldis Wright, that "in a few years it will be too late," now apply with increased force. All who can do so are now invited to add their names as subscribers to the *English Dialect Society* without delay, as this is, from the nature of the case, the *last* appeal on behalf of the preservation of our provincial words that can ever be made,—the *last* chance of saving the fast-fading relics of those forms of archaic English which have lingered on in country places.

The Society, in addition to its publications, will issue a Report at the commencement of each year, containing a record of all the work done during the year preceeding, with a statement of the work proposed to be accomplished during the year current.

All the publications of the Society will be of a uniform size, *viz.* demy 8vo; to range with the publications of the Early English Text Society, the Chaucer Society, and the Philological Society's Transactions. The publishers are Messrs Trübner & Co. (of 57 and 59, Ludgate Hill, London, E.C.), who are also the publishers for the first two of the above-named Societies. **Every member who has paid his subscription will be entitled to one copy of every publication issued by the Society during the year.**

With the hope of largely increasing the number of the members of the Society, the subscription is limited to half-a-guinea per annum, [or 13s., which includes postage, for subscribers residing in America,] which should be paid, in the present year, at the earliest convenient date, to the Treasurer, the REV. J. W. CARTMELL, Christ's College, Cambridge, either by cheque or by post-office order (made payable at the Cambridge post-office); or to the account at the Society's bankers, J. MORTLOCK AND CO., Cambridge, whose London agents are MESSRS SMITH, PAYNE, AND SMITHS. In 1874 and succeeding years, the subscription will be due, in advance, on the 1st of January.

All other communications should be addressed to the Secretary, the REV. W. W. SKEAT, Cintra Terrace, Cambridge, who

will supply, to all who are desirous of rendering direct help, printed rules of directions as to the way in which words should be collected and recorded. Members may give such help in various ways; either by contributing such uncommon words as they happen to know (written out in accordance with the rules supplied), by making additions to the existing county glossaries, or by making a complete alphabetical list of all words found in a certain district. The Secretary will also be glad to receive the names of such Members as have the means and leisure for assisting in the labour of copying out and making compilations from various printed sources of information.

Many pamphlets and books exhibiting specimens of dialects, although inexpensive, are by no means easily procured. Donations of spare copies will be thankfully accepted, and should be forwarded to the Secretary by Book-post.

One of the earliest publications of the Society will be, as already suggested, a new Bibliographical List of works that in any way illustrate the various dialects, or contain county glossaries. Many of these have been published locally, and sometimes contain only a few pages. In order that the titles of such works may be properly sorted, all Members who communicate information concerning them must adhere strictly to the *indispensable* rule, that every title must be written on one side only of a half-sheet of note-paper of the most common size, *viz.*, about 7 inches by 4½ inches. Not more than *one* title may be written on one piece of paper. This rule has long been adopted by the workers for the London Philological Society's Dictionary, and every departure from it occasions a great deal of trouble, frequently rendering the information useless. Now that five quires of ordinary note-paper can be had for six-pence or nine-pence, this involves no real expense; for five quires will supply enough paper for 240 slips. Three specimens of the manner in which the titles should be written out are here subjoined.

(1) *Lancashire.*

Waugh, Edwin; Lancashire Songs. 12mo, pp. 71.
London; Simpkin, Marshall, and Co., 1865.

(2) *Dorset.*

A Glossary of Provincial Words used in the county of Dorset; pp. 8. London; J. G. Bell, 1851.

(3) *Scotland (Banffshire).*

The dialect of Banffshire, with a Glossary of words not in Jamieson's Scottish Dictionary. By the Rev. Walter Gregor. Demy 8vo, pp. 232. Published for the Philological Society. London and Berlin; Asher & Co., 1866.

The names of the books will be arranged, as far as practicable, under the names of the counties to which they refer; the Lowland-Scotch ones being entered under the heading 'Scotland.'

When several slips have been thus written out, they can easily be tied together and forwarded by post.

The publications of the Society will be of four kinds, to be issued in separate series. Each series will be divided into parts, to be continued from year to year as seems most advisable.

SERIES A. Bibliographical; a list of all the works which illustrate the English provincial dialects. To commence with those which relate to the counties of England; the counties to be arranged in alphabetical order.

SERIES B. Reprints of old glossaries, chiefly from large or scarce volumes.

In this series the following are in course of preparation, and can certainly be issued this year, probably with several additions.

1. A Glossary of North-of-England words, from "A Tour to the Caves," &c. by J. H., 2nd ed.; London, 1781.

2. A Glossary of the Provincialisms of East Yorkshire, from Marshall's Rural Economy of Yorkshire; London, 1796.

3. A Glossary of Mid-England words, from Marshall's Rural Economy of the Midland Counties; London, 1796.

With others of a similar character.

SERIES C. Original Glossography. Glossaries from MSS. hitherto unpublished. Amongst these will be:—

1. A Glossary of Swaledale words, by Captain Harland, of Reeth.

2. A Glossary of Nidderdale words, by Mr C. Clough Robinson.

3. A Glossary of Hampshire words, by the late Sir F. Madden ; to be edited, with additions, by the Rev. W. W. Skeat.

With as many more of a similar character as the funds of the Society can pay for.

SERIES D. Miscellaneous. In this series a first part will be published, containing short glossaries (whether reprinted or communicated) all thrown together under one alphabet. With other miscellaneous information.

The above shows the probable arrangement, but it may be necessary to alter this, and perhaps to substitute other glossaries in place of those here mentioned. The most necessary matter is that all subscribers who have not yet paid should do so, in order that the probable amount of funds may be more clearly known; and that all who have thoughts of subscribing should decide to do so at once.* The amount of material more or less ready for press is already in excess of what the present sum in hand can pay for.

LIST OF SUBSCRIBERS.

[*N.B. This List is complete up to the 1st of September, 1873. The names of Subscribers who join after this date will appear in the Annual Report, to be issued in January, 1874.*]

ADDIS, JOHN, Esq., Jun., Rustington, Littlehampton, Sussex.
ADVOCATE'S LIBRARY, Edinburgh.

ALEXANDER, J., Esq., 79, West Regent Street, Glasgow.

ARMSTRONG, Rev. B. J., East Dereham Vicarage, Norfolk.

ATKINSON, Rev. J. C., Danby-in-Cleveland, Yarm.

AXON, W. E. A., Esq., 4, Victoria Terrace, Rusholme.

BARNES, Rev. W., Came Rectory, Dorchester.

BELL, G., Esq., 6, York Street, Covent Garden, W.C.

BINGHAM, Rev. C. W., Bingham's Melcombe, Dorchester.

* During the month of September in this year, subscriptions should be sent to the Secretary instead of the Treasurer; but not afterwards.

- BINNS, I., Esq., Birstall, Yorkshire.
- BLEASDALE, R. H., Esq., 93, Parliament Street, Derby.
- BLIND, Herr Karl, 3, Winchester Road, South Hampstead,
London, N.W.
- BONAPARTE, PRINCE LOUIS LUCIEN.
- BOSWORTH, Rev. Professor, 20, Beaumont Street, Oxford.
- BRABY, F., Esq., Mount Henley, Sydenham Hill, S.E.
- BRADSHAW, H., Esq., King's College, Cambridge.
- CAIUS COLLEGE Library.
- CARR, Rev. E. T. S., St Catharine's College, Cambridge.
- CARILLON, J. W., Esq., Wormhill, Buxton.
- CARTMELL, Rev. J. W., Christ's College, Cambridge
(*Treasurer*).
- CARTMELL, Rev. Dr, Christ's College, Cambridge.
- CASATELLI, L. C., Esq., Egerton Terrace, Ardwick, Manchester.
- CHICAGO LIBRARY, U.S. (per Mr Trübner).
- CHILD, Prof. F. J., Harvard College, Cambridge, Mass., U.S.
- CHILDS, MESSRS J. & SON, Bungay.
- CHRIST'S College Library, Cambridge.
- CLARK, Rev. J. MEEK, St Stephen's Parsonage, Dulwich, S.E.
- CLARKE, HYDE, Esq., 32, St George's Square, London, S.W.
- COLFOX, T., Esq., Rax, Bridport.
- COWELL, Professor, Fitzwilliam Street, Cambridge.
- COX, C. J., Esq., Hazlewood, Belper, Derbyshire.
- COXE, Rev. H. O., Bodleian Library, Oxford.
- CURTEIS, Miss BESSY C., Leasam, Rye, Sussex.
- CUST, R., Esq., 64, St George's Square, London, S.W.
- DAYMAN, Rev. E. A., Shillingstone Rectory, Dorset.
- DEES, R. R., Esq., The Hall, Wallsend, Newcastle.
- DOWNAM, R., Esq., Shakespeare Street, Stockport Road, Man-
chester.
- DOWNING, Mr W., New Street, Birmingham.
- DOWSON, Rev. R., Dalton Square, Manchester.
- DREW, F., Esq., Claremont Road, Surbiton, S.W.
- ELLIS, ALEX. J., Esq., 25, Argyll Road, Kensington,
London, W.

- ELLIS, Miss C., Belgrave, Leicester.
- EVANS, Rev. D. S., Llanymawddwy Rectory, Dinas Mawddwy, Merioneth.
- EVANS, J. BAGNALL, Esq., Nant yr Eglwys, Whitlands, Caermarthenshire.
- FITZGERALD, E., Esq., Woodbridge, Suffolk.
- FOWLER, Rev. J. T., Bishop Hatfields Hall, Durham.
- FRANCIS, Mrs, Tysoe Vicarage, Kineton, Warwickshire.
- FRENCH, E., Esq., Lead Works, Hull.
- FRY, DANBY P., Esq., Local Government Board, Whitehall.
- FURNIVALL, F. J., Esq., 3, St George's Square, Primrose Hill, London, N.W.
- GIBBS, H. H., Esq., St Dunstan's, Regent's Park, London, N.W.
- GOODCHILD, J. G, Esq., Brougham Street, Penrith.
- GRATRIX, S., Esq., Lead Mills, 25, Alport Town, Deansgate, Manchester.
- GUTCH, Mrs, Holgate Lodge, York.
- H. A. (per Rev. W. W. Skeat).
- HALLIWELL (PHILLIPPS) J. O., Esq., 11, Tregunter Road, West Brompton, S.W. (*Subscribes for two copies.*)
- HALES, J. W., Esq., 1, Oppidans Road, Regent's Park, London, N.W.
- HALKETT, Rev. D. S., Little Bookham Rectory, Leatherhead, Surrey.
- HALKETT, Miss M. K., Hollam, Dulverton, Somerset.
- HARVARD College Library, Cambridge, Mass., U.S.
- HETHERINGTON, J. N., Esq., Clifton, Workington, Cumberland.
- HILL, C., Esq., Rock Hurst, West Hoathley, E. Grinstead, Surrey.
- HOLROYD, Mr A., 36, Victoria Road, Saltaire.
- HYDE, J., Esq., 14, Hesketh Street, Southport.
- JACKSON, Miss, 13, White Frairs, Chester.
- JAMIESON, J. H., Esq., Advocate's Library, Edinburgh.
- JEBB, R. C., Esq., Trinity College, Cambridge.

- JONES, F., Esq., 65, Granville Park, Lewisham, S.E.
 JUDSON, Daniel, Esq., Wolsey House, East Moulsey, Surrey.
 KERSLAKE, Mr, 14, West Park, Bristol.
 LEIGH, Col. Egerton, Jodrell Hall, Holmes Chapel, Cheshire.
 LEWIS, Rev. S. S., Corpus Christi College, Cambridge.
 LINCOLN, Right Rev. the Bishop of, Riseholme, Lincoln.
 LLOYD, Miss E., Hazelcroft, Ripley, Yorkshire.
 LORD, Miss, 9, Carlton Hill, London, N. W.
 LUMBY, Rev. J. R., St Mary's Gate, Cambridge.
 MACLEAB, Rev. Dr, King's College School, Strand, W.C.
 MACMILLAN, Messrs, Cambridge. (*Two copies.*)
 MAGNUSSON, E., Esq., 26, Bateman Street, Cambridge.
 MAYOR, Professor, St John's College, Cambridge.
 MIALL, J. M., Esq., 80, Granville Park, Lewisham, Kent.
 MILDMAI, Capt., 19, Charles Street, Berkeley Square,
 London, W.
 MILNER, G., Esq., The Glen, Moston, Manchester.
 MORRIS, E. R., Esq., Homestay, Newtown, Montgomery.
 MORRIS, J. P., Esq., 17, Sutton Street, Liverpool.
 MOULE, C. W., Esq., Corpus Christi College, Cambridge.
 MOULTON, Professor, Wesleyan Theological College, Richmond,
 Surrey.
 MUNBY, A. J., Esq., 6, Figtree Court, Inner Temple, E.C.
 MURDOCH, J. B., Esq., Hamilton Place, Langside, Glasgow.
 MURRAY, J. A. H., Esq., Mill Hill School, Hendon, N.W.
 NAPIER, Rev. F. P., 8, Richmond Terrace, Richmond, Surrey.
 NAPIER, J. W., Esq., Merchistoun, Alderley Edge, near
 Manchester.
 NETTLESHIP, J., Esq., Mill Hill School, Hendon, N.W.
 NICOL, H., Esq., 52, Thornhill Road, Barnsbury, N.
 NODAL, J. H., Esq., The Grange, Heaton Moor, Stockport.
 OWEN, Rev. E., Caersws, Montgomeryshire.
 PAINE, Cornelius, Esq., Oak Hill, Surbiton, Surrey.
 PALEY, F. A., Esq., 17, Botolph Lane, Cambridge.
 PALMER, H., Esq. (per Rev. J. Meek Clark).
 PARISH, Rev. W. D., Selmeston Vicarage, Lewes.

- PARKER, G., Esq., Kingston Road, Oxford.
- PATTERSON, A. J., Esq., Savile Club, 15, Savile Row, London, W.
- PATTERSON, W. H., Esq., Strandtown, Belfast.
- PAYNE, J., Esq., 4, Kildare Gardens, Bayswater, W.
- PEACOCK, E., Esq., Bottesford Manor, Brigg, Lincolnshire.
- PEILE, J., Esq., Christ's College, Cambridge.
- PICTON, J. A., Esq., Sandyknowe, Wavertree, Liverpool.
- PURTON, Rev. H. B., The Vicarage, Weobley, Herefordshire.
- RAINE, Rev. Canon, York.
- REID, J. S., Esq., Christ's College, Cambridge.
- RICHARDSON, C., Esq., St Hilda's Terrace, Whitby.
- ROBINSON, C. C., Esq., Canonbury Tower, London, N.
- ROBINSON, Mr F. K., Whitby.
- ROOFE, W., Esq., Craven Cottage, Merton Road, Wandsworth, Surrey.
- ROWNTREE, J. S., Esq., Mount Villas, Dringhouses, near York.
- ROYAL LIBRARY, Windsor Castle.
- SANDYS, J. E., Esq., St John's College, Cambridge.
- SATCHELL, Thos., Esq., The Lodge, Oak Village, London, N.W.
- SEARLE, Rev. W. G., Oakington Vicarage, Cambridgeshire.
- SHARP, S., Esq., Tangley-mere, Shalford, Surrey.
- SHAW, J., Esq., (late) 20, Great Knight rider Street, Doctor's Commons.
- SHELLY, J., Esq., Frankfort Chambers, Plymouth.
- SIMMONS, Rev. Canon, Dalton Holme, Beverley.
- SKEAT, Rev. W. W., Cintra Terrace, Cambridge, (*Secretary.*)
- (Subscribes for four copies.)*
- SMILES, S., Esq., 31, Granville Park, Blackheath.
- SMITH, A., Esq., Laurelbank Place, Shawlands, Glasgow.
- SMITH, C. Roach, Esq., Strood-by-Rochester, Kent.
- SMITH, J. RUSSELL, Esq., 36, Soho Square, London, W.C.
- SMITHSON, E. W., Esq., St Mary's Lodge, York.
- SPURRELL, Mr W., Carmarthen.
- STAUNTON, H., Esq., 117, Lansdowne Road, Kensington Park, W.

STEPHENS, Professor, Copenhagen.

STRATMANN, Dr F. H., Krefeld, Germany.

SWEET, H., Esq., 140, Maida Vale, London, W.

TANCOCK, Rev. O. W., King's School, Sherborne.

TIMMINS, S., Esq., Elvetham Lodge, Birmingham.

TRACY, Rev. F. F., Beccles Rectory, Suffolk.

TRAFFORD, J. LEIGH, Esq., Northwich, Cheshire.

VAN SITTART, A. A., Esq., Trinity College, Cambridge.

WEDGWOOD, HENSLEIGH, Esq., 31, Queen Anne Street, London, W.

WEYMOUTH, Dr R. F., Mill Hill School, Hendon, N.

WHEATLEY, H. B., Esq., 1, Chalcot Terrace, Regent's Park Road, N.W.

WHITE, R., Esq., Park Place, Worksop, Notts.

WILLIAMS, S. H., Esq., 18, Kensington Crescent, London, W.

WILSON, T., Esq., Hilary Place, Leeds.

WILSON, E., Esq., 4, Osborne Terrace, Leeds.

WORDSWORTH, Rev. C., St Peter's College, Cambridge.

WRIGHT, T., Esq., 14, Sidney Street, Brompton, London, S.W.

WRIGHT, W. Aldis, Esq., Trinity College, Cambridge.

** * The Hon. Secretary cannot undertake to reply to every communication. A reply will be sent in all cases where one is really required, but a delay of two or three weeks is sometimes inevitable. Contributions of even single dialectal words, or of a few words only, are desired. Each word should be written on a separate half-sheet of note-paper, with its meaning, the place where it is used, and a note of how it is pronounced.*

PR Early English Text
1119 Society
A2 [Publications]
no.54 Original series

PLEASE DO NOT REMOVE
CARDS OR SLIPS FROM THIS POCKET

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY

CIRCULATE AS MONOGRAPH

